

628
Historical Memorials,

CHIEFLY

ECCLESIASTICAL,

And such as concern

RELIGION

And the REFORMATION of It,

And the Progress made therein,

Under the Reign and Influence of

King EDWARD VI.

Containing also

Many new Discoveries of the LIFE, ACTS,
and GOVERNMENT of that Prince.

VOL. II.



LONDON:

Printed for JOHN WYAT at the *Rose* in St. Paul's Churchyard.
M DCC XXI.

Historical Monuments

ECCELESIASTICAL

RELIGION

And the Reformation of it

And the English Church

Under the Influence of



Many new Discoveries of the 17th & 18th
and Government of the Prince

Vol. II.

1711

Printed for J. W. at the Sign of the Gunpowder
in St. Pauls Churchyard

THE CONTENTS

OF THE CHAPTERS

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

THe Birth and Christening of Prince EDWARD. Queen Jane his An. 1537.
Mother's Death and Burial. The young Princes Education.

CHAP. II.

King HENRY's Departure. Young King EDWARD's Governours An. 1546.
and Council. He is Proclaimed, and comes to the Tower. New Com-
missions to the Justices. The Duke of Somerset Protector. The War
with Scotland. And Victory obtained.

CHAP. III.

Protector's Declarations and Letters before and after the War with
Scotland. Sir William Paget's New-Years Gift. King EDWARD's
Coronation. His Piety.

CHAP. IV.

Papists Behaviour towards the King. Lent Sermons.

CHAP. V.

State Books, and others, now Published. The Bishop of Colen's Con- An. 1547.
sultation. Erasmus's Paraphrase in English. The Homilies. Images
defaced. Bishop Gardiner busy. Religion stands, as it did. Pro-
clamations. King Henry's Debts. King Edward's Letter, and the
Lady Mary's, to Queen Katharine.

CHAP. VI.

Dr. Richard Smith recants. Some Account of him and his Writings.
Bell-metal not to be transported.

The CONTENTS

CHAP. VII.

A Royal Visitation. Injunctions and Articles of Enquiry. The Bishop of Winchester's Behaviour towards it. Consultation of entering into League with the Protestants. Pensions. The Lady Mary in a Letter chargeth the Protector about Religion. His Answer. A Plague. Proclamation about it.

CHAP. VIII.

A Parliament. Communion in both Kinds. The Act for Chantries. The Abuse thereof. Other Acts. Letters and Disputations between Bishop Gardiner and Martin Bucer. They and Ales meet together in Germany.

CHAP. IX.

Anabaptists. Bishop Ridley vindicates himself for a Sermon at Pauls Cross. Latymer's Talk with an Anabaptist. Begins to preach. Bishop Gardiner complies with the King's Proceedings. Hancock the Preacher at Pool. His Troubles. Account thereof from himself.

CHAP. X.

Lands, Advowsons and Rectories settled upon certain Churches and Bishoprics, Deans and Chapters. Cheke and Latymer gratified. Treaties with foreign Princes. The King's Gifts. The Strangers Church at Canterbury. Orders to the Archbishop for taking away Images.

CHAP. XI.

Sundry wholesome Orders of the King for Religion. For the Communion: An. 1548. For Lent. Innovation forbid. The Book of Common Prayer appointed to be drawn up; And Enacted. The Psalms in Metre. The good Progress of the Reformation of Religion. The Revenues of the Church struck at. Artillery Company. Office of Ordnance.

CHAP. XII.

Slanders raised of the King. No Preaching without Licence. Rebels in Cornwall pardoned. Commission upon Inclosures. Orders to the Earl of Suffex to raise Men. Exportation of Leather forbidden. Stipendiaries and Chantry Priests.

CHAP. XIII.

A Gift to the Lady Mary. The King minds public Affairs. Points of State-Policy for the King's Study. Consultation about the Coin. The Nation involved in War with France and Scotland. The English Merchants of Antwerp wronged. The English Ambassadors interpose.

CHAP.

of the CHAPTERS.

CHAP. XIV.

The Condition of the Protestants in Germany. Related by the English Ambassador there. The Interim. Discourse between a Spaniard and the English Ambassador about the Elector. A Conjuror reports the King dead: Seized and examined. Underhil one of the Band of Pensioners, a memorable Man in these Times.

CHAP. XV.

Preaching suspended. Pensions. Term put off. Exportation of Corn forbid. The state of the Coin. Philip Melancthon writes to the King. Martin Bucer and Peter Martyr placed in the Universities. Sharrington of the Mint attainted: And the Lord Admiral. His Practises. His ill Life. His Death.

CHAP. XVI.

Of Queen Katharine Par, and her Daughter by the Lord Admiral. That Queen's Books of Devotion. Some Relation of her. Priests allowed Marriage. Private Acts of Parliament. Bills in behalf of the Commons. The King sells Chanceries, Guilds, &c.

CHAP. XVII.

Books published this Year. Archbishop Cranmer's Book of Unwritten Verities. His Notes of Traditions. Dr. Turner against the Mass. Crawlies Book in behalf of the poor Commons, &c.

CHAP. XVIII.

Proclamations for regulation of sundry Abuses in the Realm: As, about Gold and Silver Coin: The Kings Bands of Soldiers not filled: News disparaging the King's Affairs: The Teston: Inclosures, &c. The Lord Protector loses himself with the Nobility. The Lady Mary required to use the Common Prayer, established by Law. Dr. Hopton her Chaplain.

CHAP. XIX.

The Realm in ill Terms with Scotland and France. Paget sent in Embassy to the Emperor. A Match propounded for the Lady Mary, with Don Lewis of Portugal. The Emperor intercedes for that Lady's Liberty in her Religion.

CHAP. XX.

Matters with France. The Duke of Somerset's Letter to Sir Philip Hoby, Ambassador with the Emperor: Shewing France's Dealings with England.

CHAP.

The CONTENTS

CHAP. XXI.

Insurrection of the Commons upon Inclosures. Proclamations and Commissions thereupon. The Rebellion in Norfolk. Ket the Captain. The Lady Mary touched. First Institution of the Lords Lieutenants of the Counties.

CHAP. XXII.

The Success of the French against the English in Bouloignois. Execution of the Rebels. Somerset's Troubles. His Court of Requests. A Sessions of Parliament. The Acts.

CHAP. XXIII.

An Embassy to the Emperor. The Emperor's Requests. The Pope's Death. Peace with France: By the means of Guidot an Italian Merchant: Rewarded.

CHAP. XXIV.

A Fire in the Palace. The Earl of Arundel confined. Books published this Year by Cheke, Hooper, Ochin, William Thomas, Bale, &c. New Book of Ordination: The state of the Realm. Sir Stephen, Curate of Creechurch.

CHAP. XXV.

An. 1550: The good Service of Learned Foreigners in the business of Religion. Disputations in the Universities about Religion. The Use of the Common Prayer pressed. Bishopric of Westminster dissolved.

CHAP. XXVI.

Order for Sermons. Joan of Kent promotes Arianism. One recants. The English Communion Book reformed.

CHAP. XXVII.

Ridley's made Bishop of London. His Exchanges of Lands. Insurrections. A Dearth. Price set upon Viſuals.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Controversy about Ecclesiastical Habits: P. Martyr's, A Lasco's and Bucer's Judgments thereof. Altars taken down. Barlow, Bishop of Bath and Wells. Superstition in Wales. Foreign Matters. Peace with France. Duke of Somerset restored. Grants of the King to the Lord Clyncarty. Earl of Arundel. Lady Elizabeth. Morice. Haddon. Knox. Some Remarks of them.

CHAP.

of the CHAPTERS.

CHAP. XXIX.

Seſtaries. Certain inſcompliant Biſhops puniſhed. Churches of Strangers in London and Glaſtonbury. A Laſco and Pollanus their Paſtors. The Straſburgh Liturgy. Bucer's Death. Anabaptiſts.

CHAP. XXX.

Cecyl becomes Secretary. Gentlemen of the King's Privy Chamber. Sir Thomas Wroth. Earl of Arundel. Bullinger's Counſils to the King. Hoper and Alasco. Biſhop Ridley viſits his Dioceſs : Gives Holy Orders. Ponet made Biſhop of Rocheſter.

CHAP. XXXI.

The ſtate of the Universities. The evil of Improprations. The Revenues of the Monafteries miſuſed. Buying of Parſonages. Abuſes. Bales Votaries and other Books by him ſet forth.

CHAP. XXXII.

The Engliſh Bible, and other Books ſet forth this Year. The Biſhop of Exeter reſigns. Sir Martin Bowes of the Mint gives up his Offices.

CHAP. XXXIII.

The King's good progreſs in Learning and Vertue. The Marquis of Northampton. Commiſſioners for French Matters. French Crowns. A Scotch Ship ſtayed. Earl of Southampton. A Ward: Thomas Lord Howard. Mines found of Iron and Steel. Embaſſy to Denmark. Preparations for Ireland. Parties at Court. Orders about a Dearth.

CHAP. XXXIV.

An Ambaſſador for France. Crofts goes to Ireland. Jerſey fortified. Duke of Somerſet's bare Circumſtances. Grants and Leaſes of Places to ſeveral Countiers. The Earl of Southampton, Denny, and Lord Wentworth die. Lady Mary comes to Court. Offices of Keeper of Windſor, and of the Manour of Aſſcher and Hampton-Court, granted the Marquis of Northampton. A Short Pathway to the right underſtanding of Holy Scripture; By Zuinglius. Translated into Engliſh.

BOOK

The CONTENTS

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

An. 1551. *The Lady MARY's Concern with the King and Council, for retaining Mass in her Family. Dr. Malet her Chaplain. The Councils Letter to her concerning her Chaplains. The Emperor interposes for the Lady Mary to have Mass. Her Resolution. Her Letter to the King. Resolutions of Council hereupon taken.*

CHAP. II.

The King writes to King Sigismund: And the Duke of Florence. Payments of the Army. Lord Darcy created. Merchants of Calais. The King takes up Money. The College of Galway. The Council for Wales. Lords Lieutenants. Forts.

CHAP. III.

Embassies and Busineses Abroad in Scotland and France; and to the Emperor. Dr. Wotton sent Ambassador. His Business. About the Lady Mary's Mass. The Affairs of Ireland. The Match with France. The French Ambassador comes about it. Herman, Archbishop of Colen.

CHAP. IV.

Sir John Gates advanced. Grants to him. Occurrences. The Bishopric of Winton diminished. Regulation of Coin. Coverdale preferred to Exeter. The Sweating Sickness. Henry, Duke of Suffolk, dies. A Dearth. Orders to the Bishops. Bishop Scory's Letter to the King. Duke of Somerset's new Troubles.

CHAP. V.

The Marquis of Dorset advanced. Polydore Virgil. A Lasco. The Army mustered before the King. The Scots Queen entertained. Reports in Germany. Sir James Crofts, Lord Admiral, goes into France. Barnaby Fitz Patric. Guisnes to be surveyed.

CHAP. VI.

England jealous of the Emperor. The Bishop of Ely hath the Great Seal delivered up by the Lord Rich. His Rise and Wealth. Some Account of the Bishop of Ely. Richard Turner, D.D. A Mint at York. Merchants of the Stilyard.

CHAP. VII.

The King's Chaplains. William Thomas his Grants. Thomas Rose, Hugh Goodacre, eminent Divines, preferred. The Kings Deliberations. Annuities for the Chaplains. The Bishopric of Bristol fleeced. Enquiry into the King's Revenue. Commissions.

CHAP.

of the CHAPTERS.

CHAP. VIII.

Dr. Redman dies. Some Account of him. Commissions for making Ecclesiastical Laws. Bullinger's Correspondence in England. Dr. Cox's Letter to him. Conferences about the Sacrament. The Duke of Somerset's End: Brought about by Northumberland, and some others. Somerset's Friends and Dependents. Edward Seymour restored.

CHAP. IX.

The King's Debts. More's Utopia in English. Epistles of Bucer's Death: And other Books printed now. Bible printed in Folio. Bishop Ridley's Ordination of Ministers. A Parliament. Private Acts. A Bill for Apparel. Forms of Wills and Testaments.

CHAP. X.

France and Cesar apply to the King. The King congratulates the Elector An. 1552. of Saxony. Gresham the King's Agent in Antwerp. The French Successes against the Emperor. The English incline to the Emperor. Jealousies of France. Steukley's Intelligence thence. Minutes of Council for breaking with France. Fitz Patric sent for home. Steukley committed. French Commission for Sea Affairs.

CHAP. XI.

An Embassy to the Emperor. Morison's Address to him. The King offers Aid against the Turk.

CHAP. XII.

The King's Military Exercises. A splendid Muster before him in Greenwich Park. The Dearth. Lady Mary comes to Court. The King's Progress. Occurrences. A monstrous Child born. Strange Fishes taken in the Thames. The King consults for the state of Religion; And the Realm. His Device for raising Money.

CHAP. XIII.

Matters of Ireland. The Emperor raises Money in the Low-Countries. Antwerp. The English Merchants there. Buckholt's Process against the King.

CHAP. XIV.

Disturbance in Buckinghamshire. Bishop Hoper Visits. The Bishoprics of Worcester and Gloucester united. The Duke of Somerset's Daughters. The Dutcheys, &c. The King goes a Progress. The Gifts thereof. The Duke of Northumberland goes into the North. Lord Guilford Dudley. The Bishop of Bath's Exchanges. Dr. Walter Haddon, &c. The King's Sales of Church Lands. Merchants of Bristol, &c.

The CONTENTS

CHAP. XV.

A Commission for Enquiry into Heresies. The New Service. The Bishop of Durham's Troubles. Deprived. A Synod. Articles of Religion framed: And a Catechism, confirmed. Articles for Uniformity. Bernard Gilpius's Sermon at Court.

CHAP. XVI.

New Sergeants. Lady Mary Visits the King. The King's Sales. Alasco's Judgment of the Ceremonies. Divers Books printed. Leland the Antiquarian dies.

CHAP. XVII.

Commissioners from France. Corruptions at Court. Paget, Beaumont, and the Earl of Arundel: Their Submissions. The University of Rostocks Letter to the King. The Kings Diligence and good Example. Free Schools by him founded.

CHAP. XVIII.

Popery in Corpus Christi College, Oxon. Dr. Heins dies. Immanuel Tremellius preferred. Bishop Ponet's Book. Knox at Newcastle. Lady Anne of Cleves. Day, late Bishop, his Judgment about Altars. Commissions. Sir William Bowyer. Ordinations of Ministers. Places and Offices bestowed.

CHAP. XIX.

An. 1553. A Parliament. The Bishopric of Durham dissolved. A general Pardon. Certain excepted. The King removes to Greenwich. Knox's last Sermon at Court. Summoned before the Council. Earls of Pembroke, and Westmorland. Sir Andrew Dudley. Sir John Williams. Melancthon. North East Passage. Archbishop Holgate.

CHAP. XX.

A Design to enter into League with the Protestant Princes. The present Condition of the Emperor. The Embassy to him from England. Letters from the English Ambassadors, concerning the state of the Low Countries.

CHAP. XXI.

The King's Ambassadors in France, and to King Ferdinand, and to the Emperor. Their access to his Presence. Instructions sent them for their Proceedings.

CHAP.

of the CHAPTERS.

CHAP. XXII.

Order for Subscription to the Articles of Religion: And for the teaching and learning of the Catechism set forth by the King's Authority. Irish Matters. The Duke of Northumberland. Lady Mary's Letter to the King. Divers great Matches. The King's Gift to London, &c. The King's Death. His Last Will. His Funerals, &c. His Character.

CHAP. XXIII.

A View of the Manners of all sorts of Men in these Times: Nobility, Gentry, Yeomanry, Judges; the Poor, the Clergy.

CHAP. XXIV.

Observations concerning Patrons; the Universities; the City and Court. Taxes in this Reign.

CHAP. XXV.

Creations of Noblemen. The King's Counsellors; Courtiers and great Officers.

CHAP. XXVI.

A Catalogue of the Bishops in this King's Reign; With Remarks upon them.

CHAP. XXVII.

A Catalogue of divers Letters, Orders of Council, Commissions, &c. sent and given out in this Reign.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Animadversions upon the History of the Life and Reign of King Edward VI. written by Sir John Hayward.

CHAP. XXIX.

Commissions and Proclamations, issued out from the King upon divers Occasions, Annis 1550, 1551, 1552, 1553.

CHAP. XXX.

Divers Acts of the King's Grace and Favour, shewed to his Courtiers and others.

CHAP. XXXI.

A Collection of various Letters, Warrants, and Licences from the King; both to Foreigners and his Subjects.

CHAP.

The C O N T E N T S

C H A P. XXXII.

Collations, Presentations, Grants, Indulgences, and Permissions to Churchmen; and Men of the Universities.

C H A P. XXXIII.

A Catalogue of King Edward's Free Grammar Schools, Founded by him. More private Matters concerning the King's Household. The Conclusion.

THe Reader is desired to take notice of divers Alphabetical Letters omitted in these *Memorials* following, that should have stood in the Margin, directing to the same Letters in the *Repository*, where the Records referred to are placed. Where these Omissions are, the following Pages and Lines will direct to: and which will shew where the Letters are to stand.

Pag. 22. line 19. D. pag. 23. l. 22. E. F. p. 29. l. 7. ab imo. G. H. p. 65. l. 4. K. L. p. 104. l. 11. T. V. p. 105. l. 17. X. p. 111. l. 18. Y. p. 123. l. 3. Z. p. 131. l. 6. Z. Z. p. 135. l. 2. ab im. Z. Z. Z.
Book II. p. 280. l. 12. A. p. 282. l. ult. B. p. 326. l. 9. C. p. 366. l. 17. ab im. D. p. 381. l. 11. E. p. ibid. l. 14. F. p. 382. l. 18. G. p. 384. l. 21. H. p. 385. l. ult. I. p. 423. l. 17. K.

All which Letters may soon be set by the Pen in the respective Places in the Margin.

MEMO-

MEMORIALS

Of Matters worthy Remark

ECCLESIASTICAL and CIVIL

In the REIGN of

King EDWARD VI.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

ANNO

1537.

The Birth and Christning of Prince EDWARD.

Queen JANE his Mother's Death and Burial. The Young Prince's Education.

THE incomparable Prince EDWARD (the Subject of our ensuing History) was born on the 12th Day of *Prince Edward born;*
October, in the XXIXth Year of the Reign of his Father King HENRY VIII. at Hampton-Court; and Christened on the Monday following, being the 15th of the said Month, at the Chappel there. And an Heir Male being now happily given to the Realm, after so many a long Years Expectation, the Christening was performed with the greater Solemnity. Which, since our Historians are silent in, I shall set down at length. The Infant Prince was brought forth from his own Lodgings, and conveyed through the Council Chamber into the Gallery, leading through the King's great Chamber, and so through the Hall, and the second Court into the Gallery, that went into the Chappel; Torches all the way born by the King's and other Noblemens Servants; the Way fenced with Barriers (where no Walls were) and richly hung, and underfoot

And Christned.

Ex Offic. Armor. l. 14.

The solemn manner thereof.

VOL. II.

B

derfoot

A N N O 1537. derfoot strewed thick with Rushes. At the Chappel Door was a large Porch made, covered with rich Cloth of Gold, and double hanged with rich Arras, the Floor boarded and covered with Carpets. All the Body of the Chancel hung also with rich Arras; wherein was set a Font of Silver, and Gilt, upon a Mount or Stage four Degrees in height, eight square in compas, enclosed with double Barriers made of Timber, with two or three Entrances, one to come in, another to pass to the Travers, a third to the Altar. The said Barriers were covered with red Say, and tacked with small Latin Nails. The Steps of the said Mount were covered with Carpets; and the Barriers hanged with Cloth of Gold, or Arras. Over the Font a rich Canopy. On the South side, a little from the Mount, was prepared a Traverse of Damask Sarcenet, or Sattin, for making ready the Prince to the Christening; the same Traverse underfoot was covered with Carpets or Cushions; and therein a Firepan of Coals with a good Perfume; and Basins and Chavers of Silver, and Gilt, with Water (whereof the Sayes surely taken) to wash the Prince, if need were. And all that time of the Prince's opening, the Bishops and God-fathers (saving the Lady Godmother) remained under the Canopy, there abiding the coming of the Prince. The Choir hung on both sides with Arras, and the High Altar garnished sumptuously with Stuff and Plate. On the South side of the Altar a Traverse of Cloth of Gold, covered underfoot with Carpets, and furnished with Cushions; and likewise the Space between the Font and the Altar spread with Carpets.

Gentlemen Ushers kept the Door of the Porch, the Chappel Door, the Entrances of the Barriers about the Font, and the Traverse, with Yeomen Ushers to assist them. Sir *John Russel*, Sir *Francis Brian*, Sir *Nicolas Carow*, and Sir *Anthony Brown*, in Aprons and Towels, took the Charge of the Font, and kept the same, till they were discharged thereof by the Lord Steward, or Treasurer of the King's House in his Absence. Other Gentlemen Ushers kept the Choir Door, and the Traverse next the Altar. The Sergeant of the Ewry was ready at the Nursery Door, to deliver the Basins, Cup of Assay, and Towels, and to give his Attendance at the Chappel to receive the same after the Christening was done. The Sergeant of the Chandlery was ready at the said Chamber Door to deliver the Tapers. The Sergeant of the Pantry to deliver the Salt: and they to be ready at the Chappel to receive them again. The Sergeants of the Trumpets, with all the Company of that Office, were ready with their Trumpets, and stood and Sounded as they were appointed by the Lord Chamberlain. Garter Principal King of Arms, and all the other Kings and Officers at Arms gave their Attendance with their Coats of Arms. Also the Dean of the Chappel and the Choir gave their Attendance to such Service as to them appertained. The Sergeant of the Vestry prepared the Font, and all things that to his Office belonged. The Lord Marshal of *England* had his Servants there, with Tipstaves to execute their Office. The Knight Marshal and his Men gave their Attendance, to do as the Lord Steward, or in his Absence, as the Treasurer and Comptroller of the King's Household should appoint. And all Officers of the Household were there, to do their respective Services.

Moreover, all Estates, Knights and Gentlemen, had Warnings by the King's Letters to make their Repair to the Court, to do the Service that to them should be appointed, whose Names shall be set down hereafter.

The

The like Warnings had all Sergeants at Arms ; and such of the King's *ANNO* Chaplains as were thought meet to do Service at that time.

1537.

The Order of going from the Prince's Lodgings to the Christening was thus : First, All Gentlemen, Esquires and Knights went two and two, every of them bearing a Torch in his Hand, not lighted, till the Prince was baptized. After them the Children and Ministers of the King's Chappel, together with the Dean, in their Surplices and Copes, going outward. Next them, the King's Council, with the Great Lords Spiritual and Temporal. Next them, the Comptroller and Treasurer of the Household. Then the Queen's Chamberlain, the King's Chamberlain, and the Lord High Chamberlain of *England* in the midst. Next, Ambassadors, and with them Personages meet to accompany them. Then were carried a Pair of covered Basins, and a Towel thereupon, with a Cup of Assay born by the Earl of *Suffex*, supported by another Lord. Next after, a Taper of Virgins Wax born by the Earl of *Wiltshire*, with a Towel about his Neck. After that, a Salt of Gold richly garnished with Pearl and Stone, born by the Earl of *Effex*, with a Towel about his Neck. The Chrysom richly garnished, born by the Lady *Elizabeth*, the King's Daughter, who, for her tender Age, was carried by the Viscount *Beauchamp*, assisted by the Lord *Morley*. The Prince himself was carried by the Lady Marchioness of *Exeter*, assisted by the Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Lord Marquis her Husband. The Train of the Prince's Robe was born by the Earl of *Arundel*, and sustained by the Lord *William Howard*. The Nurse went equally with him that supported the Train, and with her the Midwife. A rich Canopy was born over the Prince by Sir *Edward Nevyl*, Sir *John Wallop*, Mr. *Richard Long*, Mr. *Thomas Seimer*, Mr. *Henry Knyvet*, and Mr. *Radcliff*, Gentlemen of the King's Privy Chamber. Torches of Virgin Wax were born about the Canopy by Sir *Humfrey Foster*, *Robert Tyrwit*, *George Harper*, and *Richard Southwel*. Next after the Canopy went the Lady *Mary* the King's Daughter, appointed for the Lady Godmother. Her Train was born by the Lady *Kingston*. After the Lady *Mary* all other Ladies of Honour, and Gentlewomen, in order after their Degrees.

When the Prince was Christened all the Torches were lighted, and Garter, Principal King at Arms, proclaimed his Name in this Form following, *God of his infinite Grace and Goodness, give and grant good Life and long, to the Right High, Excellent and Noble Prince, Prince EDWARD, Duke of Cornwall, and Earl of Chester, most dear, and most intyrelly beloved Son to our most Dread and gracious Lord King HENRY VIII. Large, Large.*

The Prince's Name proclaimed by Garter.

This being performed, the Service following was done, while the Prince was making ready in the Traverse. *Te Deum* was sung. Then first to the Lady *Mary* the Lord *Williams* gave the Towel, the Lord *Fitzwater* bare the covered Basins, and the Lord *Mountague* uncovered them. To the Bishop that did administer, the Lord *Butler* bare the Towel, the Lord *Bray* the Basins, and the Lord *Delaware* uncovered them. To the Archbishop of *Canterbury* and the Duke of *Norfolk*, Godfathers to the Prince, the Lord *Stourton* bore the Towel, and the Lord *Wentworth* gave the Water. Item, For the serving the Lady *Mary* and the Lady *Elizabeth* with Spices, Wafers and Wine, the Lord *Hastings* bore the Cup to the Lady *Mary*, and the Lord *Delaware* another Cup

ANNO
1537.

to the Lady *Elizabeth*: The Lord *Dacre* of the South bare the Spice-Plates to them both, the Lord *Cobham* the Wafers, and the Lord *Mountague* uncovered the Spice-Plates. The Bishop that administered was served with Spice, Wine, and Wafers by three of the ancient Knights appointed by the Lord Chamberlain. The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Duke of *Norfolk*, Godfathers at the Font, and the Duke of *Suffolk* Godfather at the Confirmation, were served with like Spices, Wafers, and Wine by three Knights, also by the Lord Chamberlain appointed. All other Estates and Gentlemen within the Church and Court, were served with Spice and *Hypocras*; and all others with Bread and sweet Wine.

The Prince
going home,
the Ceremo-
nies used.

This being done, the Going home with the Prince was in the same manner as the Coming out was, saving that the Taper, the Salt and the Basins were there delivered. The Gifts that were given by the Gossips were carried in Order; A Cope of Gold, given by the Lady *Mary*, was carried by the Earl of *Essex*; three great Bowls and two great Pots, Silver and gilt, given by the Archbishop, were carried by the Earl of *Suffex*: The same Gifts with those of the Archbishop's were carried next by the Earl of *Wiltshire*: The two great Flaggons and two great Pots, Silver and gilt, given by the Duke of *Suffolk*, were carried by the Viscount *Beauchamp*. The Lady *Elizabeth* went with the Lady *Mary* her Sister, and the Lady *Herbert* of *Troy* bore her Train. After the King at Arms had proclaimed the Name of the Prince, the Trumpets set in the utter Court within the Gate continually Sounded, till the Prince was brought into the Queen's Chamber. And all other Minstrels stood with the Trumpets to do their Office when they should be called. At the Going of the Prince the Chappel sang the Service, and performed the Ceremonies belonging, all the way. And this, at length, was the Splendid Procession of our young Prince's Baptism.

The Estates
and Gentle-
men present.

To which I will add the Names of all the Estates and Gentlemen summoned to be present, and give their Attendance at the said Baptism.

The Lord Chancellor.	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Westminster, S. Albans, Waltham, Towerhil, Stratford,
The Duke of <i>Norfolk</i> .	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
The Duke of <i>Suffolk</i> .	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
The Marquis of <i>Exeter</i> .	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
The Lord Privy Seal.	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
The Earls of	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Viscount <i>Beauchamp</i> .	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
The Lords	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Admiral,	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Delaware,	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Sands.	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Bray.	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Mountague.	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Waintworth.	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:
Stourton.	The Lords	The Lords	The Abbots	Knights and Gentlemen:

Peter

Peter Meutas,	Sir Thomas Arundel,	Sir William Drury,	ANNO 1537.
Sir Humfrey Foster,	Sir John Horsay,	Edward Chamberlain,	
George Harper,	Sir John Rogers,	Richard Southwel,	
John Welsborn,	Sir William Poulet,	Sir Henry Parker,	
Roger Ratclif,	John Powlet,	Sir Gryffith Dune,	
Anthony Knyvet,	Sir John Gage,	Sir Philip Butler,	
Robert Tyrwhyt,	Sir William Goryn,	Sir Robert Peyton,	
Sir Humfrey Radclif,	Sir Edward Nevyl,	Sir Giles Alyngton,	
Sir John St. Johns,	Sir John Dudley,	Thomas Meggis,	
Sir Thomas Rotheram,	Sir William Hault,	Thomas Wryottesley,	
John Williams,	Sir Edward Wotton,	Richard Manors.	
Rafe Verney,	Sir William Kemp,		
Sir William Essex,	Sir Thomas Poynings,	Churchmen.	
Sir Anth. Hungerford,	John Norton,		
Sir William Burnden,	Sir Richard Weston,	The Dean of S. Stephens	
Sir Walter Stonar,	Sir Richard Paige,	The Archdeacon of	
Sir John Brown,	Sir Giles Capel,	Richmond.	
Sir John Bourghcbier,	Sir John Rainsforth,	The Deans of { Exeter, Windsor Sarum.	
Sir Edward Bainton,	Sir Thomas Darcy,		
Sir Henry Long,	Sir John St. Leger,		
Sir William Kingston,	Sir John Tyrrel,	Dr. Bell,	
Sir John Bridges,	William Saliard,	Dr. Thurlebe,	
Sir Nicolas Poynts,	Sir Christ. Willoughby,	Dr. Turrit,	
Sir Walter Denys,	Sir Richard Sands,	Mr. Pate,	
Anthony Kingston,	Sir George Somerset,	Dr. Wilson,	
Sir John St. Lo,	Sir Arthur Hopton,	Dr. Skippe,	
Sir Hugh Poulet,	Sir Anthony Wyngfield,	Dr. Day	
Sir Giles Strangwais,			

But all this Joy and Splendor soon received a sad Check by the Death of the Prince's Mother, who deceased about Twelve a Clock on *Wednesday* Night, the 24th Day of the same Month of *October*, that is, twelve Days after the Prince's Birth; as it is expressly set down in one of the Manuscript Volumes belonging to the Heralds Office, where, under the particular Date of each Day are shewn the Ceremonies done to that Queen's Corps, from her Death to her Funerals and last Interment. What Credit is to be given to the aforesaid Manuscript Book I leave to the Readers, specially when in this Particular it disagrees with all our Common Historians, as *Fox*, *Stow*, *Hollingshed*, the Lord *Herbert*, and others, that write she died on *Sunday* the 14th Day of *October*, two Days after her Delivery. But I suspect they borrowed one from another: and the first having mistaken might soon draw on the rest, in a Matter so easily to be slipt over: For some Probability of the Truth of this Manuscript, in dating the Queen's Death ten Days later than we commonly find it, it may be considered, that if she had died the 14th Day, it is not likely there should have been such a great and splendid Court, such Feasting and Triumph, such Trumpets and Musick founding at the Christening of her Son, the very next Day after she was dead, and in the same House where She, the Mother, lay a lifeless Corps; nor is it likely, that after the Ceremonies were performed at the Chappel, that the Prince, with all his Procession, should be brought into the Queen's Cham-

His Mother
dies.

Ex Offic. Ar-
mor. l. ii.

The true
Date of her
Death.

A N N O

1537.

Cott. Libr.
Nero C. 10.
exemplified
in Full. Eccl.
Hist. p. 224.

Chamber, as he is said to be in the former Relation. 'Tis also to be considered, that this Date of her Death agrees well with the Letter of the King's Doctors to the Council, concerning the Queen's declining Condition; and that her Confessor had been with her, and was preparing to minister to her the Holy Unction; which supposes her near the Point of Death. And this Letter was dated on *Wednesday* at Eight in the Morning. On which Day of the Week, at Night, our said Manuscript assigns her Death. Add also the excessive Grief the King took, and the real Sadness that seized on all at her Death, could not consist with the Magnificence of the Christening, as was related before, unless she were at that time alive, and that there were Hopes of her. "Whose Departure (as that Book relates) was as heavy to the King as had been seen or heard tell of many Years; yea, and likewise to all the States of this Realm, and Citizens, with the Commons, great and small, as ever was for any Queen."

And if this Date of her Death be true, it will serve against slanderous *Saunders*, and other Papists, King *Henry VIII.* his mortal Enemies, that labour all they can to bespatter his Name and Memory; I mean, to disarm them of one Instance of his pretended Cruelty, in appointing this his Son to be cut out of his Mother's Womb. For if she lived twelve Days after her Delivery, this will sufficiently confute that spiteful Tale.

The Grief
conceiv'd
therat.

Her Burial.

The Manuscript goes on in way of Diary, beginning at the Day of her Death, that is, *Oct. 24.* as it is there stated, *viz.* That immediately the King retired to a Solitary Place, not to be spoken with, leaving some of his Counsellors to take Order about her Burial. Then she was Embowelled, and Wax-Chaundlers, and Plumbers, and such others, did their Office about her. And this was the Work of *Thursday, Octob. 25.* The next Day, being *Friday 26.* was provided in the Chamber of Presence something in manner of an Herse, with 24 Tapers standing aloft the Majesty, garnished with Pensils and other Decencies. In the same Chamber was an Altar provided for Mass to be said, richly apparralled with Black, garnished with the Cross, Images, Censers and other Ornaments. And daily Masses said by her Chaplains and others. This done, the Corps was conveyed reverently from the Place where she died, under the Herse, covered with a rich Pall of Cloth of Gold, and a Cross set thereupon; Lights burning Night and Day with six Torches, and the Lights afore said upon the Altar, all Divine Service-time. All Ladies and Gentlewomen put off their rich Apparel, doing on them Mourning Habits, and white Kerchiefs hanging over their Heads and Shoulders: there kneeling about the said Herse all the Service-time, in Lamentable-wise, at Mass aforenoon, and at *Dirige* after. There was also a Watch nightly, during the Time that the Corps lay in the same Chamber: and so continued till the last Day of the said Month of *October.*

On which Day, being *Wednesday*, and the Vigil of *All Saints*, the Corps was removed between Three and Four of the Clock in the Afternoon, from the Chamber to the Chappel, in very great State and Solemnity; the Chappel coming up with the Bishop of *Carlile* her Almoner, who did execute in *Pontificalibus*, assisted by the Bishop of *Chichester*, Dean of the King's Chappel, and the Sub-Dean; entring into the Chamber where the Corps lay; and there doing all such Ceremonies therto

thereto appertaining, as Censing, Holy Water, with *De Profundis*. The *ANNO* Solemnity in the Chappel lasted Day by Day, until the 12. Day of Nov. 1537. being *Monday*, which was the Day of removing the Corps towards *Windsor*: Which was don with all the Pomp and Majesty that could be.

The Corps was put in the Chair covered with a rich Pall; and ther-
upon the Representation of the Queen in her Robes of Estate, with a
rich Crown of Gold upon her Head, all in her Hair loose, a Scepter of
Gold in her Right Hand, and on her Fingers Rings set with precious
Stones, and her Neck richly adorn'd with Gold and Stones: and under
the Head a rich Pillow of Cloth of Gold Tissue: Her Shoes of Cloth of
Gold, with Hose and Smock, and all other Ornaments. The said Chair
drawn with Six Chariot Horses trapt with black Velvet: Upon every
Horse four Escutcheons of the Kings Arms and Queens, beaten in fine
Gold upon double Sarcenet: And upon every Horse's Forehead a Shaffron
of the said Arms. The Lady *Mary*, the King's Daughter was chief
Mourner, assisted on either Hand by the Lord *Clifford* and the Lord
Mountague: Her Horse was trapped in black Velvet. These great La-
dies following, (their Horses being trapped in black Cloth) the Lady
Frances, Daughter to the Duke of *Suffolk*; the Countesses of *Oxford*,
Rutland, *Sussex*, *Bath*, *Southampton*, and the Lady *Margaret Howard*;
every of their Footmen in Demi-gowns, bareheaded. Then followed
four other Chairs with Ladies and Gentlewomen sitting in them, and
other Ladies and Gentlewomen riding in order after each. On the 13th
Day she was Interred, and the Solemnities were finished.

The Corps
carried to-
wards *Windsor*

It redounded much to the Praise of King *HENRY VIII.* that he
would have his Childrens Minds well cultivated to Knowledge and Ver-
tue by the best Education. And when this Royal Child was arrived to
fix Years old, great Care was taken to enter him now into Learning, to
qualify him for his High Function to fall to him. A great Point of
which lay upon *Cranmer*, Archbisshop of *Canterbury*, both as he was his
Godfather, and the chief Overseer of the Church: Whose Welfare and
Peace he knew depended so much upon the Wisdom and Religion of the
Prince. And here was a Subject fit, by the Pains and Discretion of able
Masters, to make a most accomplished Man, and an absolute Governour.
For he was of a most towardly, apt and good Disposition, of a ready Wit
and great Industry, as well as of most beautiful external Features.
William Thomas, one of the most Learned Men of these Times, and
afterwards one of the Clerks of the Council, gave this Character of his
Person and Conditions, when he was Young, and scarce yet come to
the Crown: "If ye knew the Towardness of that young Prince, your
Hearts would melt to hear him named, and your Stomach abhor the
Malice of them that would him ill: The beautifullest Creature that
liveth under the Sun; the Wittiest, the most amiable, and the gentlest
Thing of all the World. Such a Spirit of Capacity, learning the
Things taught him by his Schoolmasters, that it is a Wonder to hear
say. And finally, he hath such a Grace of Posture and Gesture in
Gravity, when he comes into a Presence, that it should seem he were
already a Father, and yet passeth he not the Age of Ten Years. A
Thing undoubtedly much rather to be seen than believed.

The Prince's
Education.

His excellent
Parts.

*Thomas's Pil-
grim.*

We

A N N O

1537.

The Prince's
Instructors.Epist. Dedic.
in Ep. ad Ro-
man.

We have seen the Child ; now shew us the Persons chosen out for the Forming of this excellent Piece of Matter. And surely they were happily chosen, being both truly Learned, Sober, Wise, and all Favourers of the Gospel. Sir *Anthony Cook*, Knight, famous for his five Learned Daughters, was one of them : To whom the great Doctor *Peter Martyr*, in an Epistle from *Zuric*, professed, " That ever since he dwelt in *England* he bare a singular Love to him, and no small and vulgar Affection, as for his Piety and Learning, so for that worthy Office which he faithfully and with great Renown executed in the Christian State, in instructing *EDWARD* the most Holy King, and most worthy to be loved." Another of his Masters was Dr. *Richard Cox*, a very Reverend Divine, sometime Moderator of the School of *Eaton*, afterwards Dean of *Christ-Church*, *Oxon*, and Chancellor of that University. Who instructed him in Christian Manners, as well as other Learning. He had also for his Teacher of the *Latin* and *Greek* Tongues that most accomplished Scholar, Sir *John Cheke*, Knight, once Publick Reader of *Greek* in *Cambridge*. Divers pretty Letters of his Writing, in *Latin*, remain, some in Manuscript, and some Printed, which being writ when he was very young, shew what notable Progress he made. One or two of these I shall insert here for a Specimen, and the rather, because never yet printed : The one to the King his Father, and the other to Queen *Katharin Par*, his Mother in Law. That to the King ran in this Tenor :

The Prince's
Latin Epistle
to the King.
E. Biblioth.
C. C. C. C.
D. No. 23.

An. 1545.

*N*on mihi ad Te Literas tam saepe quam vellem, Nobilissime Rex & Pater Charissime, quia audiivi Majestatem tuam perturbari negotiis bellicis contra Regem Franciae. Etenim ante hoc Tempus nolui scribere ad Majestatem tuam, ne illo tempore impediretur puerilibus illis Literis meis. Sed nunc do Literas ad Majestatem tuam, cum propter Officium, tum propter Amorem erga Te meum ; denique quia Deus dicit, Honora Parentem : Postremo, ne ob ullam Causam putares me ingratum. Nullum enim signum, nec ullum aliud tam indicat tibi mentem meam absentis, sed cupientis admodum esse tecum, ac Literae, quae declarant mentem meam tibi, quum alia Signa non declarant. Praeterea, rogo Majestatem Tuam, ut impertias mihi Benedictionem Tuam. Deus, qui praebet omni Carni cibum, tueatur ac servet Majestatem tuam. Vale Rex Nobilissime & Pater Observandissime. *Hunsdoniae 4^{to} Maij.*

Filius Observantissimus

Nobilissimo Regi Patri meo.

Majestatis Tuae

EDOARDUS Princeps.

This which follows seems to have been written the same Month and Year, to Queen *Katharin Par*, his dear Mother in Law, whom it appears he used frequently to address with Epistles.

His Latin Letter
to the
Queen.
Vespasian F.3.

*F*ortasse miraberis me tam saepe ad te scribere, idque tam brevi Tempore, Regina Nobilissima & Mater charissima, sed eadem ratione potes mirari me erga te Officium facere. Hoc autem nunc facio libentius, quia est mihi idoneus Nuntius servus meus, & ideo non potui non dare ad

ad te Literas ad testificandum Studium meum erga te. Optime valeas, A N N O
Regina Nobilissima. Hunsdoniæ vigesimo quarto Maii. 1537.

Illustrissimæ Reginae Matri meæ.

Tibi Obsequentissimus Filius
Majestatis Tuæ,

EDOUARDUS Princeps.

And as other Masters attended on him for other Tongues, so one *John Belmain* for the French: And one of his French Letters coming to hand at present, wrote when he was little above Nine Years old, I will here expose to the view of the Reader. Whereby may be seen to what Ripeness he had attained in that Language also, even in his Childhood, and how handsomely he was able to write his Mind. And being writ to his Sister the Lady *Elizabeth*, then but three Years older, we may collect hence her Proficiency, and her Staidness too, at those Years: Taking upon her then to give her Brother Counsel to ply his Learning; and lastly, his good Nature, promising to make her Exhortation and Example a Spur to him.

He writes in French to his Sister.

Prince EDWARD to his Sister the Lady ELIZABETH.

*P*uisque vous a pleu me rescrire (Treschere & bien aimée Sœur) je vous remercie de bien bon cœur, & non seulement de vostre Lettre, mais aussi de vostre bonne Exhortation & Exemple: Laquelle, ainsy que j'espere, me servira d'esperon pour vous suivre en apprenant. Priant Dieu vous avoir en sa garde. De Titenhanger 18 jour de Decembre, & L'an de nostre Seigneur. 1546.

MSS. D. G. Petyt, Armig.

Vostre Frere,

EDOUARD Prince.

This, by the Date, appears to have been written but the Month before his Father's Death, being now Nine Years and about Two Months old. He was now at *Titenhanger*; where, as also in some other Places, in the pleasant healthful Country of *Hertfordshire*, as *Hunsdon*, *Hatfield*, and *Hertford*, as also at *Amptbil* in *Bedfordshire*, the Prince, for the most part, held his Court, and had his Education.

There be other Epistles of this Prince, that may be found printed in *Fox*, and in *Dr. Fuller's Church History*, and others remaining in *Sir Simonds Dew's Library*, *Manu sua Scripta*, and divers others in private Hands.

Other Letters of the Prince.

His Tutors were latewardly much detained at Court, *Cook* (if I mistake not) being one of the Bedchamber, and *Cox* the King's Chaplain: But *Cheke* did most constantly reside with him. Yet they supplied their Absence by wholesome Counsels and Instructions conveyed to him by their Letters. One from *Cox*, *Dr. Haddon*, a Fellow of *King's College* in *Cambridge*, brought, in his return Home, the Prince being then at *Hertford*. He delivered it to *Cheke*, and *Cheke* to the Prince. Into whose Presence he introduced the said *Haddon*. To whom he spake two or three Words, *Suaviter & perbenignè*, (as *Haddon* reported to

His Tutors. Cook.

Cox.

Cheke,

some

ANNO some of his Friends) *after a sweet and very obliging manner*; such was his mild and affable Address.

1546. And as he had these Learned Men for his Tutors, of the same Endowments were his Chaplains: Of whom were these two, *Giles Aire* and *Tong* in Household with him. The former of whom was afterwards Dean of *Chichester*, and Prebendary of *Winchester*, and *Westminster*, and died *Anno 1551*.

CHAP. II.

King HENRY's Departure. Young King EDWARD's Governours and Council. He is Proclaimed: And comes to the Tower. New Commissions to the Justices. The Duke of Somerset Protector. The War with Scotland: And Victory obtained.

Conferences
between the
Earl of Hert-
ford and Se-
cretary Paget
upon King
Henry's Death.

WHILE King HENRY lay on his Death-bed in his Palace at *Westminster*, Sir *Edward Seimour*, Earl of *Hertford*, and Sir *William Paget*, among others, were at Court; and *Paget* being Secretary of State, was much about his Person. Whom, being a Man Wise and Learned, and well versed in the Affairs of State, both by reason of his Office and his several Embassies abroad, the Earl prudently made choice of for his inward Friend and Counsellor. By the King's desperate Condition the Earl well perceiving the Crown ready to fall upon Prince *Edward* his Nephew's Head, before the Breath was out of his Body, took a Walk with *Paget* in the Gallery: Where he held some serious Conference with him concerning the Government. And immediately after the King was departed they met again, the Earl devising with him concerning the High Place he was to hold, being the next of Kin to the young King. *Paget* at both Meetings freely and at large gave him his Advice, for the safe Managery of himself, and of the mighty Trust likely to be reposed in him. And the Earl then promised him to follow his Counsils in all his Proceedings, more than any other Mans. To his Failure in which Promises the said Secretary attributed those Miseries which afterwards befel the Nation and himself; as he plainly told him in one of his Letters.

King Henry's
Funerals.

The King then departed this World on the *Friday* before *Candlemas* Day, being the 28 Day of *January*: And was buried in a most magnificent manner, *Feb. 15.* at *Windsor*. His Corps remained in his Privy Chamber five Days, covered with a rich Pall of Cloth of Gold, and an Altar set up at his Feet, where Services, Obsequies, and Oraisons were used Night and Day, with thirty Persons of the Gentlemen of his Privy Chamber, besides his Chaplains, always about him. On *Wednesday, Feb. 2.* being *Candlemas* Day, in the Night, the Royal Corps was removed, with great Reverence and Ceremony, into the Chappel. And there it

it abode twelve Days, with Services, Masses, and Dirges said daily Morning and Even. The 14th Day the Corps was conducted in all imaginable solemn State from *Westminster* towards *Windsor*: resting that Night at *Sion*, and the next Day was brought to *Windsor*. A particular Account of all the Solemnity of this Funeral may be found in a Volume in the Heralds Office; And is transcribed thence into the *Repository*. A N N O 1546. *Office. Armor. l. 11.*

The same Day King HENRY expired, the said Earl of *Hertford*, accompanied with Sir *Anthony Brown*, Master of the Horse, and a great Number of Noblemen, with Knights Pensioners, Esquires and Gentlemen, did ride in their best manner, with all speed, to the Court of Prince EDWARD, to attend upon His Grace there, as on their Sovereign Lord, according to the Last Will and Testament of his said Illustrious Father. Which was, That the true Title of the Crown of *England* should appertain, undoubtedly, to his said most dearly Beloved Son, and right Heir Apparent, then Prince EDWARD, now most worthily named, Our Sovereign Lord, &c. and King of *England*, &c. A. The Earl of Hertford repairs to the Prince.

For the precise Hour of King HENRY's Departure, and who they were he entrusted by his last Will with the Care of the Prince his Son, and the Public Affairs, when the new King was Proclaimed; and how the public state of the Kingdom at this *Crisis* stood, I had rather the Reader should take these Things from the Pen of a great Peer then at *London*, I mean *Henry Earl of Sussex*. Who wrote thus to his Countess the last Day of *January*. The present Posture of Affairs.

"These be to signify unto you, that our late Sovereign Lord the King departed at *Westminster* upon *Friday* last, the 28 of this Instant *January*, about Two of the Clock in the Morning; and the King's Majesty that now is, proclaimed King this present last Day of the same Month. And like as for the Departure of the one we may lament, so for the Establishment of the other, to all our Comforts, we may rejoice: The Names of his Executors are the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Lord *Wriothesley*, Lord Chancellor of *England*; the Lord *St. John*, Lord President of the Council, and great Master; the Lord *Russel*, Lord Privy Seal; the Earl of *Hertford*, Lord Great Chamberlain of *England*; the Viscount *Lisle*, Lord Admiral; the Bishop of *Durham*, Mr. Secretary *Paget*, Sir *Anthony Denny*, Sir *Anthony Brown*, Sir *William Herbert*, the Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas; *Bromley*, another Justice there; Sir *Thomas [John] Baker*, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir *Edward North*, and divers others, Aiders to the same, which for lack of Time I pretermitt. The Parliament is clearly dissolved; the Term and all Writs closed. The Court is now at the *Tower*; from whence the King to Morrow shall be received, and conducted to his House, *Durham Place*. His Highness Coronation shall be at *Shrovetide*, &c. From *Ely Place* in *Holbourn*, the last Day of *January*, in the first Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King EDWARD VI. The Earl of Sussex to his Wife concerning the new King. Titus B. 2.

Your Assured Loving Husband,

HENRY SUSSEX.

ANNO
1546.

The Maner of
Proclaiming
the King in
London.
Vol. No. 17.
Intit. Corona-
tion. In Offic.
Armor.

The Ceremonies and Circumstances that attended the Proclaiming of the King were as follow. On *Monday* about Ten of the Clock in the Morning, the Officers of Arms and Trumpets assembled in the Palace of *Westminster*. Where there was a Stage of Boards upon Hogheads; and upon it stood *Garter, York, Richmond, Somerset, and Rouge Croc*, with their Coats of Arms; and all the Trumpeters standing on the Ground in a Range right before the said Officers. And then one of the said Trumpets blew three several Times. Whereat was a great Audience. Then when the Lords were come from the Parliament House to the same Place, *Somerset* Herald gave the Audience Command to keep Silence, and with a loud Voice proclaimed these Words following:

"EDWARD the Sixth, by the Grace of GOD King of *England, France and Ireland*, Defender of the Faith, and of the Church of *England*, and also *Ireland*, in Earth Supreme Head, Greeting: Where it hath pleased Almighty GOD, on *Friday* last past in the Morning, to call to his Infinite Mercy the most Excellent, High and Mighty Prince HENRY VIII. of most Noble and Famous Memory, our most dear and intyrelly beloved Father, (whose Soul God pardon.) Forasmuch as We being his only Son and undoubted Heir, be now thereby invested and established in the Throne Imperial of this Realm, and other his Realms, Dominions and Countries, with all Regalities, Preeminencies, Styles, Names, Titles and Dignities, to the same belonging, or any wise appertaining, WE do by these Presents signify unto all our said most Loving, Faithful, and Obedient Subjects, That like as We for Our Parts shall by GOD's great Grace shew Ourselves a most Gracious and Benign Sovereign Lord to all our good Subjects in their just and lawful Suits and Causes; so We mistrust not but they, and every of them, will again, for their Parts, at all Times and in all Causes shew themselves unto Us, their natural Liege Lord, most faithful and obedient Subjects, according to their bounden Duties and Allegiances. Whereby they shall please GOD, and do the thing that shall tend unto their own Preservation and Sureties: Willing and Commanding all Men, of all Estates, Degrees and Conditions, to see Our Peace and Accord kept, and to be obedient to Our Laws, as they tender Our Favour, and will answer for the Contrary, at their extreme Perils. In Witness whereof We have caused these Our Letters Patents. Witness Our Self at *Westminster* the xxxi *January*, in the first Year of Our Reign.

Also *Clarentieux, Carhyle, Winsor and Chester*, in their Coats of Arms, with one Trumpeter, in Places accustomed of the City, having the like Commission, Sealed with the King's Great Seal, assisted with the Maior, Aldermen, and Sheriffs, proclaimed the same in like manner the same Morning.

And in the
Countries.

The King then was Proclaimed the 31 Day of *January*. The very next Day Warrants were hastned from the King to the Sheriffs of the several Counties, to see him Proclaimed in their several Sherifwicks. That to the Sheriff of *Nottingham* and *Darby*, having come to my Hands, it may not be amiss to specify; especially for some Variation that may be perceived in the Proclamation.

Rex

Rex Vicecomiti Nottingham & Derby Salutem. Præcipimus tibi, quod A N N O statim visis Præsentibus, in singulis Locis infra Ballivas tuas, &c. 1546.

"The King our Sovereign Lord EDWARD the Sixth, by the Grace of
"GOD King of England, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith,
" &c. Of the Church of England, and also of Ireland, in Earth the
"Supream Head, doth give to understand to all his most Loving, and
"Faithful, and Obedient Subjects, and to every of them: That where
"it hath pleased Almighty GOD, on Friday the 28 of January last past
"in the Morning, to call unto his Infinite Mercy the most Excellent,
"High and Mighty Prince HENRY VIII. of most Noble and Famous
"Memory, the Kings Majesty's most entyrelly beloved Father, whose
"Soul GOD Pardon; Forasmuch as the Kings Majesty now being his
"only Son, and undoubted Heir, is now hereby invested and established
"in the Crown Imperial of this Realm, and other His Majesty's Realms,
"Dominions and Countries, with all Regalities, Preeminencies, Styles,
"Names, Titles and Dignities to the same belonging, or in any wise
"appertaining: The same our Sovereign Lord doth signify unto all his
"said most Loving, Faithful, and Obedient Subjects, that like as His
"Majesty for his Part shall by GOD's Grace shew himself a most Gra-
"cious and Benign Sovereign Lord to all his good Subjects, to all their
"just and lawful Suits and Causes: So His Majesty mistrusteth not but
"they, and every of them, will again for their Parts, at all Times, and
"in all Causes, shew themselves unto His Highness, their natural Liege
"Lord, most Loving, Faithful and Obedient Subjects, according to their
"bounden Duties and Allegiances. Wherby they shall please GOD
"and do the Thing that shall tend to their own Preservations and Sure-
"ties. Willing and Commanding all Men, of all States, Degrees
"and Conditions, to see the Peace kept, and to be subject to his Laws,
"as they tender his gracious Favour, and will answer for the contrary
"at their extreme Perils. And GOD save the King. *Et hoc sub peri-
"culo incumbenti, nullatenus omittas, teste meipso apud Westmonasterium,
"primo die Febr. Anno Reg. EDWARDI primo.*

On the same Day the King was Proclaimed in London he was accom-
panied in goodly Order, from his Place of Enfield, to the Tower of Lon-
don; to the which he came about Three of the Clock in the Afternoon.
Where all the Nobility of the Realm were ready to receive him, to their
great Joy and Comfort. At his approaching near to the same was great
shooting of Ordnance in all Places thereabouts, as well from the Tower,
as from the Ships; wherat the King took great Pleasure. Being there
arrived he was welcomed by the Nobles, and conducted by them to his
Lodging within the Tower, being richly hung and garnished with rich
Cloth of Arras, and Cloth of Estate agreeable to such a Royal Guest.
And so were all his Nobles lodged and placed, some in the Tower and
some in the City. His Council lodged for the most part about His
Highness, who every Day kept the Council Chamber for Determination
of main Causes, as well about the Interrment of the King's Father, as for
the Expedition of his own Coronation.

The Morrow after, being Tuesday, all the Lords aforesaid, and most
part of the Nobility of the Realm, as well Spiritual as Temporal, there
assembled about Three of the Clock in the Afternoon, went into the King's
Chamber

The King
comes to the
Tower.
Vol. I. 7.
In Offic. Armor.

The Nobility
kiss the Kings
Hand.

A N N O Chamber of Prefence. And after that the Earl of *Hertford*, the Lord Admiral, and other of the King's Executors had brought the King's Majesty

1546.

The Earl of Hertford accepted Governor of the King's Person. from his Privy Chamber to his Chair of Estate prepared in the Chamber, His Highness there standing, all the said Lords according to their Degrees proceeded in Order one after another : And there kneeling kissed His Majesty's Hand, saying every one of them. *God save your Grace.* And after they had so don, the Lord Chancellor in most eloquent wise declared unto them the Effect of the late Noble King's last Will and Testament, with the Names of the Executors therein contained, being Sixteen in Number, (which are commonly to be seen in our Historians) Adding, that it was condescended and agreed with the whole Assent and Consent of them all, that the Earl of *Hertford* should be Governor of the young King during his Nonage. Whereupon all the said Lords made Answer in one Voice, That there was none so meet for the same in all the Realm as he; and said also, That they were well content withal. Then the Earl gave them hearty Thanks, and said, he trusted in God so to use himself, that it should be to their Contentation, and required them in general, to afford him their Aid and Help in the Right of the Realm. Who made Answer all in one Voice, That they would be ready at all Times with all their Might and Power, both for the Defence of the Realm and of the King. This ended, they cryed altogether with a loud Voice, *God save the Noble King EDWARD.* Then the King's Majesty put off his Cap, and said, *We heartily thank you, My Lords all; And hereafter in all that ye shall have to do with us for any Suit or Causes, ye shall be heartily welcome to us.* Then immediately

The Earl of Hertford accepted Governor of the King's Person.

The Lords Temporal,

And Spiritual, sworn to the King.

The Protectors Prayer.

after, all the Lords Temporal were warned to repair to the *Star Chamber* at *Westminster*, upon the next Morrow, to be sworn to the King : And so they were.

On *Thursday* and *Friday* ensuing were sworn at the same Chamber the Lords Spiritual; and the Master of the Rolls, with the Clerks of the Chancery, in like manner sworn, to Register the Testament and last Will of the late Noble King *HENRY.*

When this High Dignity and Trust was devolved upon the Earl of *Hertford*, he like a considerate Man began to think well what a weighty and ticklish Office lay upon him; and how much Wisdom and Conduct it required to Govern this great People : And therefore, first of all, like a good Christian, solemnly implored the Assistance of the King of Kings, in a very proper devout Prayer, (which I suppose was his constant Form.) Therin professing to *GOD*, how Holy and Sincere his Intentions were, and that his Endeavours should be to promote the Divine Glory, and the Good of *GOD's* Church. And for that End beseeching the Almighty to inspire him with all suitable Qualifications; to grant him Wisdom, and by his Counsil to set forth his Cause; and to give Knowledge to all that should counsil him. And that as *GOD* had begun great Things by his Hand, so to let him be his Minister to defend them. By the whole Prayer may be perceived his Piety and good Intentions. See it in the *Repository.*

B.

Proclamation for Claims at the Coronation. Offic. Armor. l. 7.

On *Friday February 4.* *Chester* Herald, accompanied with Trumpets, proclaimed this Proclamation in three several Places in *London*, "*EDWARD* the Sixth, &c. Where by the Laws and ancient Customs of this Realm of *England*, the Noble Knights and other the Kings Subjects,

“jects, by fundry Tenures of their Lands and Hereditaments, are bounden to attend upon His Majesties Person Royal at the Time and Day of his Graces Coronation; to do, exhibit, and minister to his Highness their several Services, Duties, Ministries, and Offices; and thereupon to receive of his Majesty such Gifts, Fees and Rewards, as to several Services, Offices and Duties of antient Time hath been accustomed and appertained; His Majesty Royal, by his Proclamation, signifieth to all his said Nobility, and other his Subjects, Claiming to do Service at his said Coronation, that his Majesty hath by his Highness Commission, appointed, assigned and authorized his right Trusty and right Welbeloved Cousins and Counsellors *Francis* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, *William* Earl of *Essex*, and *John* Lord Viscount *Lisle*, High Admiral of *England*; and his right Welbeloved Counsellors *Richard* *Lyster*, Kt. Chief Justice of *England*, and *Edward* *Mountague*, Kt. Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, [&c.] And Eight, or Three of them, to be Commissioners for the receiving and Allowance of the said Claims. Who shall begin his Majesties Courts for that Purpose upon *Monday* the 8. of this Month of *February*, within *Whitehal* of his Majesties Palace.”

A N N O

1546.

On *Sunday* following, the King was made Knight by the Lord Protector, his Uncle. And immediately upon the same his Highness made the Maior of *London*, and Justice *Portman* Knights.

The King
Knighted.

Upon *Monday* next after, the Kings Commissioners began the Court of Claims and Services in *Whitehal*.

Court of
Claims.

On *Friday* Feb. 11. [10] the Lord Protector did receive and make Oath, before the Lord Chancellor in *Westminster* Hall, to be a true Treasurer to the King, as of his Treasure, and to deliver it truly, when it should be demanded. And also to his Power to defend his Realm, and to withstand the Power of the Bishop of *Rome* and his Laws.

The Lord
Protector
sworn,

Then *Thursday* Feb. 17. that is, the Day next after the Burial of the late famous King, all the Temporal Lords assembled at the Tower of *London* in their Robes of Estate: where the aforesaid Earl of *Hertford* was created Duke of *Somerset*, together with some other Creations.

And created
Duke.

One of the first Cares of the deceased Kings Executors, and Counsellors to the young King, was to renew Commissions to the Justices of Peace of the Realm: whose former Commissions, immediately upon King *HENRY*'s Death actually ceased. Which was necessary in the first place to be lookt after, that so the Course of Justice and the Order of Laws throughout the Countries, might run as they did before. To these Commissions the Persons subscribed, who by the late Kings Will were made the chief Administrators of the Government, till the King should attain to eighteen Years of Age. And particularly wholesome Politic Directions were given to the said Justices, in order to the preserving of Peace, Righteousness and good Order; and for their Meeting in the several Hundreds every six Weeks, and that no Alteration or Innovation should be made. The Commission to those of the County of *Norfolk* may deserve to be perused. The Original is in the Cotton Library. Which transcribed will be found in the *Repository*.

Commissions
to the Justices
renewed.

C
Cott. Librar.
Titus B. 2.

King *EDWARD* VI. a Child, but of admirable Hopes, being thus come to the Crown, his Uncle created Duke of *Somerset*, (which Honor, they say, was intended him by King *HENRY*) was (as we heard before)

Seimour Go-
vernor and
Protector.

Go-

A N N O Governor of his Person. Who in the beginning of this Reign grew an exceeding great Man, swelling with Titles. And this was his Style, *The most Noble and Victorious Prince EDWARD, Duke of Somerset, Earl of Hertford, Viscount Beauchamp, Lord Seimour, Governor of the Person of the Kings Majesty, and Protector of all his Realms, His Lieutenant General of all his Armies both by Land and by Sea, Lord High Treasurer, and Earl Marshal of England, Governour of the Isles of Guernsey and Jersey, and Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter.*

He is the Peoples Favourite

And because as he was thus Great, so he also was a very Generous and Good Man, and a sincere Favourer of the Gospel, he was intirely beloved of those that professed it, and for the most part by the Populacy: And therefore was commonly called, *The Good Duke.* And indeed died the Peoples Martyr.

Gets a great Victory over the Scots.

It added still further to his Glory and Esteem, that he got a complete Victory over the *Scots* in this first Year of the King in the Month of *September*: And it was the more glorious to him, in that the *Scots* were not only Match and Equal in Force with the Protector's Army, but treble, or at least double in number at the first Onset, as was reported by Strangers. And it was the more glorious still, because it was now given out, that this Success would effect, or bring on two admirable Ends: "The One, the bettering and perfecting the Crown Imperial of *England*, "in reconciling the unnatural and ungodly Hatred between two Members of one Body, viz. *England* and *Scotland*; which of Right and "Office should be as the Right Hand and the Left, in Peace and Amity, "to resist and withstand the Force of all strange and Foreign Assaults. "And the Other, That the old Amity and Friendship might be restored "between the two Kingdoms, that GOD by the Creation of the World "appointed to be in this one Realm and Island, divided from all the "World by the impaking of the Sea, and by natural Parentage and "Blood; One in Language and Speech, in Form and Proportion of Personage; One in Maners and Condition of Living. And that the occasion of all Discord and Hatred banished, the good *Scotish English* Man "might confesse and do the same at home, that he did in foreign Countries, calling an *English* Man always his Countryman, and studious to "do him pleasure before any other Nation of the World. The Breach "of this divine and natural Friendship was the very Work of the Devil "by his wicked Members; that hath not only taught *Scotland* Disobedience unto her natural and lawful Prince and Superior Power, the "Kings Majesty of *England*, but the Contempt of CHRIST and his "most Holy Word: As *John Hoper*, then at *Zuric* (afterward Bishop and Martyr) spake in his Epistle to a Book, which he dedicated to this Duke soon after this Victory.

Declarat. of Christ and his Office.

CHAP. III.

*The Protector's Declarations and Letters before
and after the War with Scotland. Sir W.
Paget's Newyears Gift to the Protector.
King EDWARD's Coronation. His Piety.*

BUT to stay a little at this War with *Scotland*, which might seem to be hardly reconcilable with good Policy, so soon after a young Kings Access to his Crown, to embroil himself in Wars with his next Neighbours, and that only upon the account of a Mistress. Therefore to lay open the Merits of this Cause somewhat more particularly than our printed Histories have don. Before actual entrance into this Hostility, the Lord Protector issued out Proclamations, "Declaring therein to the *Scots*, the justness of the *English* Quarrel with them, and offering them all the Terms of Peace in case they would perform what the States of *Scotland* had before agreed to, in relation to the Marriage with the Daughter of *Scotland*; and Assuring them that they came not with any Design to conquer their Country, or make themselves Masters over the *Scots*, to bring them into any Bondage: But that both Kingdoms might live for time to come in perfect Love and Amity."

The Cause of
entring into
War with
Scotland.

But the *Scotch* Governors and Captains withheld these Proclamations from their Nation, and stifled them for their own particular Wealth and Interest; not regarding the public Good so much as their own private Power and Authority; still abusing the People with Forgeries and Tales concerning the *English* Nation.

The *Scotch*
Officers a-
verse to
England.

As the Lord Protector dealt thus fairly with that Nation before the War, so after his Victory and Return home, he endeavoured by all fair Means and Messages to pursue the same Ends. And indeed a very great Number of the *Scottish* Realm, that more impartially considered the Benefit of the Friendship of *England*, and the Danger of the *French*, who were sending Forces now to *Scotland* to assist them, came over to the Kings side, and were Well-willers to him, and Aiders of his Purpose: There was a very excellent Letter Exhortatory sent to the *Scots*, by the Lord Protector, in the beginning of *February*; which was also printed, I suppose, for this End, that it might not be stifled, as his other former Letters and Proclamations were; but that it might be read of all. Of which notable Letter our Historians make no mention: Herein he wrote, "That it made him to marvel what fatal Chance it was that had so dis-
severed their Hearts, and made them so unmindful of their own Profit,
to heap to themselves most extreme Miseries, which the *English*, whom
they would needs have their Enemies, went about to take away from
them. That tho' they [the *English*] were Superiors in the Field, and
Masters of a great part of their Realm, and so might expect the *Scots*
should seek to them, yet such was their Charity and brotherly Love,

The Lord
Protectors
Letter to
Scotland.

A N N O

1547.

“ that they would not cease to provoke and call upon them to their own
 “ Commodity : And they were content to cry and call upon them, to
 “ have the *English* rather their Brothers than their Enemies, their Coun-
 “ trymen than their Conquerors. And this should be a Witness before
 “ GOD and all Christian People between the two Nations, that the
 “ *English*, professing the Gospel of CHRIST, did not cease to call and
 “ provoke them from the Effusion of their own Blood, and the Destru-
 “ ction of the Realm of *Scotland*, from perpetual Feud and Hatred, and
 “ the final Eradication of their Nation, and from Servitude to Foreign
 “ Nations.

The Protector in his said Letter shewed, “ The great Battels that had
 “ been fought between the two Realms, the Incurfions, Roads and Spoils
 “ made on both Parts ; how the Realm of *Scotland* was five times won
 “ by one King of *England*, and severall of the *Scotish* Kings, some taken
 “ Prisoners, some Slain, and some for very Sorrow Dying. And how
 “ notwithstanding both Nations were united together in one Language,
 “ in one Island, in like Maners, Form and Conditions ; so that it was a
 “ very unmeet, unnatural and unchristian thing, that there should be
 “ such mortal Wars between them.

And then to encline them to allow the Marriage, he proceeded,
 “ That if GOD should grant whatsoever the *Scots* would wish, what
 “ could they wish sooner, than that which now by Fortune chanced,
 “ that these two Kingdoms might be united under one Ruler ? And that
 “ two Successions could not concur and fall into one, by any other Means
 “ than by Marriage, wherby one Bloud, one Lineage, one Parentage, is
 “ made of two, and an indefectible Right given of both to one, without
 “ the Destruction and abolishing of other : Which, he said, he would
 “ have them to think to come of GOD’s own Disposition and Providence.
 “ And that the rather, because the two Sons of the former King, being
 “ in divers Places, both died within four and twenty Hours. Leaving
 “ but one Maiden Child and Princess. What could any Christian Man,
 “ that thought the World governed by GOD’s Providence, think other-
 “ wise, but that it was GOD’s Pleasure it should be so, that these two
 “ Realms should join in Marriage, and therby make a godly and perpe-
 “ tual Unity. He protested, as his Proclamations at the last Wars de-
 “ clared also, that it was the King his Masters Mind, by his [the Prote-
 “ ctors] Advice and Counsil, not to Conquer, but to have in Amity ; not
 “ to win by Force, but to conciliate by Love ; not to spoil and kill, but
 “ to save and keep ; not to dissever and divorce, but to join in Marriage,
 “ from high to low, both the Realms, to make of both one Isle and
 “ Realm, in Love, Amity, Concord and Charity.

He urged further, “ That it could not be denied but they had the
 “ great Seal of *Scotland* granted by the Parliament of *Scotland*, for the
 “ Marriage, with Assurances and Pledges until the Performance, and
 “ that in the Time of the late King HENRY VIII. And in the time
 “ of the same, the *Scotch* Governor that now was, [*viz.* the Earl of
 “ *Arran*] was a great Doer therin : Tho’ after by the Cardinal of St. *An-*
 “ *drews* and others, with certain vain Fears and Hopes, and greediness
 “ of Dignity, perverted, and revolted from his first Agreement. Wher-
 “ by he had put all the Realm to the loss of such Holds and Fortresses
 “ as were lately taken from them, and to the loss of a foughten Field.

He

He said further, "They [the *English*] offered the *Scots*, notwithstanding their Victory, to leave the Name of their Nation, [*England*] and to take the indifferent old Name [common to both Nations] of *Britain* again; Because nothing shall be left of the *English* Part unoffered. That they intended not to disinheret their [the *Scotch* Mens] Queen, but to make her Offspring Heirs and Inheritors to *England*. What meeter Marriage, added he, could be for her, than to match with the King of *England*? That they sought not to take from the *Scots* their Laws nor Customs, but to redress their Oppressions. That if their Queen were married out of the Realm [*viz.* to the *French*, who indeed got her away] the *English* Title remained; and they would be Subjects to a Foreign Prince, of another Country and another Language, and have the *English* their Enemies, even at their Elbow, and their Succors far from them. And if any Foreign Prince or Power should be their Aider, and send any Army, how would they oppress them, fill their Houses, waste their Grounds, spend and consume their Victuals, and hold them in Subjection, and regard them but as Slaves, and take their Queen to bestow as they listed; and at last leave their Realm to be a Prey to the *English*, and a true Conquest?

And lastly, An Invitation was made to those of their Nation, "that favoured Peace, and that profitable Marriage, to enter and come into *England*, and to aid the *English* in this most godly Purpose, and to be Witness of their Doings; to whom they would keep Promises heretofore declared, and see further recompenced. And, which never yet before was granted to *Scotland*, in any League betwixt *England* and *Scotland*, the King considering the multitudes of them which were come to His Majesty's Devotion, had, by the Protectors Advice and Council, granted, That from henceforth all Merchants and other *Scotch* Men, that would enter their Names with one of the Lieutenants or Wardens of the Marches, or any of the Kings Officers having Authority, and there profess to take part with *England*, might lawfully, and without any Trouble or Vexation, enter into any Port or Haven of *England*, and use their Traffic of Merchandize, either by Land or by Sea, and buy, sell, and bring in the Commodities of *Scotland*; and take and carry forth the Commodities of *England*, as freely as *English* Men, and with no other Customs or Payments than were due by *English* Men. This excellent Epistle is preserved in *Grafton's Chronicle*, and taken thence by *Hollingshed* into his, only leaving out a few Words in the Conclusion, shewing the Date; *viz.* "At London the 5th of February, in the second Year of the Reign of the most Noble Prince, and our Sovereign Lord EDWARD VI. by the Grace of GOD of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, King, Defender of the Faith, and in Yearth under CHRIST the Supreme Hedd of the Church of *England* and *Ireland*." The omission of which in the Transcriber occasioned *Hollingshed's* Mistake in placing this Letter under the Year 1549. It appears by *Bale* that this Letter was wrot in *Latin* as well as *English*; that it might be, I suppose, the more universally read, and the justice of the Quarrel, on the side of *England*, might appear to other Countries. The same Author would make this Letter to be of the Protectors own composing. For he saith, his incomparable Wisdom and solid Learning might be understood by his Learned Writings; whereof this he sets down for one,

A N N O

1547.

The Earl of
Shrewsbury
accompanies
the Protector.

and another Letter to the Nobility of *Scotland*, he mentions for another, (tho' I am apt to think, in this *Bale* was mistaken, and that both this and that was but one and the same) besides some other Discourses of his.

The Duke carried a brave Army with him, and was attended with a great many of the Nobility. And in *August*, as he past by *Tork*, *Francis* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, that generous and loyal Peer, and of ancient Nobility, and at that time *President*, if I mistake not, of the *North*, offered to go forward with him and his Army, and to do the King Service with his Person in that present Journey into *Scotland*. The Duke then told him, that he was loth to put him to more Trouble and Disquiet than needs must, out of respect to his Quality, and that he would reserve him till greater Need should require. But being now at *Newcastle*, *Aug.* 28. he sent for the said Earl, praying his Company, considering sithence, as his Letter to him imported, of what Moment it would be to have such a Nobleman as his Lordship with them, as well to have the Charge of some one of the Wards of Footmen, as to foresee for Experience, the Order of Things, which might, *GOD* willing, be worthy of Memory. That he should therefore put himself in Order with his Servants, not passing what Number he brought of them with him; and to be with him at *Barwick* by *Sept.* 6. And the Earl did accordingly accompany the Lord Protector. I do not set down the Managery of the Battel, because our Histories shew us that at large.

King Edwards
Behaviour
upon the
Victory.

But when the good News of this Victory over the *Scots* came to Court, both by an expres Messenger, and by Letters from the Lord Protector, it is not to be past without remark, how becomingly the young King took it. For on the 18. of *September*, being then at his House of *Oatlands*, he wrot an Answer to his Uncle with his own Hand, importing, "That he had understood the good Success it pleased *GOD* to grant, by "his Courage and wise Foresight. And in the first place (most "piously attributing the Mercy to *GOD*) he acknowledged himself most "bounden to yield him most hearty Thanks, and to seek his true Honour by all the means he might. And secondly, he thanked his Uncle, "and prayed him, in his Name, to thank most heartily the Earl of "*Warwic*, and all the other Noblemen, Gentlemen, and the rest that "served in that Journey; and bad them be well assured, that, *GOD* "granting him Life, he would shew himself not unmindful of their "Service, and would be ready to consider the same as any occasion "should serve.

The Dukes
Glory;

As the abovementioned Letters and Writings shewed the Dukes Parts and Abilities, so his Conduct of the Army against *Scotland* and his Success there, shewed his Fortune, and added to his Glory. But his Greatness exposed him to the Envy of the Nobility: Under which the good Man could not long support himself, but fell twice, and the latter time fatally, to the ineffable Grief of godly Men, and the fore Regret of the Commons, to whom he was very dear.

And Fall.

An ill Character of the
Duke. Life
of K. Edward,
p. 15.

Sir *John Hayward* (a Writer of King *Edward's* Life) who was apt to give ill Characters, especially of Protestant Church-men, and others that were chief Favourers of the Reformation, saith of this Duke, That he was a Man little esteemed for Wisdom, or Personage, or Courage in Arms. Yet let the same Author relate some few other Historical Matters concerning

cerning the same Nobleman, and his Reader will scarcely give him Credit in this : For in the same place he saith of him, " That he was in Favour with King Henry [and he would not receive Fools nor Cowards into his Favour] and by him was much employed, [which that King would not have don, had he been so weak a Person.] That he was always observed to be both Faithful and Fortunate, as well in giving Advice, as in managing a Charge." And then concerning his Successes he writes, " That he was Warden of the Marches against Scotland; and that three Years successively he made great Inroads into that Kingdom and got great Victories there : And that in the Marches of Calais, upon the approach of 7000 English he raised an Army of 21000 French encamped before Bulloyn, wan their Ordnance, Carriage, Treasury, Tents, with the loss only of one Man : And in his Return wan the Castel of Outing within Shot of Arde : And the next Year invaded and spoiled Picardy." And this moreover the said Author writes of the Duke, " That notwithstanding his constant Successes, yet did he never hereby rise either into Haughtiness in himself, or Contempt of others ; but remained courteous and affable, choosing a Course least subject to Envy, between stiff Stubbornness and filthy Flattery." These Accounts of the Duke are hardly consistent with that mean Character he had before given him, and which elsewhere he fastneth on him, charging him with a *dull Capacity*, and calling him *Fearful and Suspicious and of feeble Spirit*. A N N O 1547. But unjustly!

For my part I think he deserves a better Commendation to Posterity. He was a Man heartily favouring the Gospel and the Professors of it, and by his Influence the Reformation of Religion in England did so well proceed in the beginning. Nor did he want true Courage and Resolution, until he saw how the greatest Part of the Court, for By-Ends, had entred into Combination against him, and had acquired such Strength and Interest, as should he have opposed, might have endangered a Civil War, the introducing of Popery, and the good Kings Life, as well as his own ; and therefore in that Emergency reckoned it the best Course to submit himself. His Frailties which procured him Enemies, more truly were Hastiness and Passion, snapping up the Counsellors, and taking up too sharply those who had Business with him, nay, his very best Friends ; and affecting too much to have his own Will stand : Which Sir William Paget, Secretary of State, his most Faithful, but Plaindealing Friend, once laid before him ; as we may see hereafter in this Story. His truer Character.

The said Paget, for a Newyears Gift to this Nobleman soon after his high Advancements, sent him a short Scrole, consisting of seasonable Advices for his great Place and Station, enclosed in a Letter. Which Letter and Scrole were as follow : Paget's New Years Gift to the Duke.

BEcause the Determination to renew Gifts of the New Year was sudden, I could not prepare such a New years Gift for your Grace as the fashion of the World required me to present to a Personage of your Estate : And yet considering the favour of your Grace to be special toward me, and my Love is reciproque toward you, Methought it best to send your Grace, though no rich Gift, yet a Token of my Heart, which wisheth both this and all other Years hereafter Happy and Lucky unto you. My Token is this Paget to the L. Protector. Cotton. Librar. Titus F. 3.

ANNO 1547. *this Scedule here enclosed; wherein, as in a Glasse, if your Grace will daily look, and by it make you ready, you shall so well apparel your self as each Man shall delight to behold you. I pray your Grace to accept this Token in good part; which very hartly Love, and great Carefulness of your Graces Weldoing hath moved me to send unto your Grace. To whom I wish as well as to my own Soul.*

Westminster, Jan. 2.

Your, &c.

W. P.

The SCEDULE.

“Deliberate maturely in all things. Execute quickly the Determinations. Do Justice without Respect. Make assured and stayd Men Ministers under you. Maintain the Ministers in their Offices. Punish the Disobedient according to their Deserts. In the Kings Causes give Commission in the Kings Name. Reward the Kings worthy Servants liberally and quickly. Give your own to your own, and the Kings to the Kings, frankly. Dispatch Suitors shortly. Be affable to the Good, and severe to the Evil. Follow Advice in Counsil. Take Fee or Reward of the King only. Keep your Ministers about you uncorrupt. Thus GOD will prosper you, the King favour you, and all Men love you.

W. P.

A notable Instance of the Kings Piety at his Coronation. *Bal. de Viris Illustr.*

At the Kings Coronation, which was *Shrove-Sunday, Feb. 20.* (Sir *John Hayward* writes the 19. *amiss.*) an Author that wrote about those Times, relates that he heard it from credible hands, That when three Swords were brought, Signs of his being King of Three Kingdoms, he said, there was one yet wanting. And when the Nobles about him asked him, what that was, he answered, *The Bible.* “That Book, added he, is the Sword of the Spirit, and to be preferred before these Swords. That ought in all Right to govern Us, who use them for the Peoples Safety by GOD’s appointment. Without that Sword we are nothing, We can do nothing, We have no Power. From That We are what We are this Day. From That we receive whatsoever it is that We at this present do assume. He that Rules without it, is not to be called GOD’s Minister, or a King. Under That we ought to live, to fight, to govern the People, and to perform all our Affairs. From That alone We obtain all Power, Vertue, Grace, Salvation, and whatsoever We have of Divine Strength.” And when the Pious young King had said this, and some other like Words, he commanded the Bible, with the greatest Reverence, to be brought and carried before him.

Knights of the Bath. *Ex Offic. Armor. I. 7.*

The Ceremonies and Solemnities of the Kings Coronation may be read elsewhere. There were then nominated and made Forty Knights of the Bath: Who being created with so great Royalty, were commanded to pay the Duties of Money to the Heralds, double to the same payable by other Knights. And because they are omitted by other Historians, it may be fit to remember them here, for the Honour of their Posterity.

The

The Duke of Suffolk.	The Earl of Oxford.	The Lord Strange.	A N N O 1546.
The Earl of Hertford.	The Earl of Ormond.	The Lord Lisle.	
The Lord Talbot.	The Lord Herbert.	The Lord Hastings.	
The L. Charles Brandon	The Lord Cromwel.	Sir Anth. Cook of Essex.	
The Lord Scropes Son	The Lord Winsores Son	Sir George Norton.	
and Heir.	and Heir.	Sir Robert Lytton.	
Sir Francis Russel.	Sir Richard Devereux.	Sir John Porte of Der-	
Sir Anthony Brown.	Sir Henry Seimour.	byshire.	
Sir John Gates.	Sir Thomas Houffelyn.	Sir Chr. Barker, Garter.	
Sir Alexander Umpton	Sir Edmund Molineux.	Sir James Hales.	
of Oxfordshire.	Sir William Balthrope.	Sir Thomas Brycknal.	
Sir Valentine Knightly.	[Babthorp perhaps.]	Sir Angel Marian.	
Sir G. Vernon of the Peak.	Sir Tho. Nevyl of Hold.	Sir John Cuts of Essex.	
Sir Holcroft,	Sir Henry Tirrel.	Sir William Scarington.	
[Thomas perhaps, that	Sir Wymond Carew.	Sir William Snatbe.	
was Knight Marshal]	The Lord Matravers.		

The Knights of the *Carpet* dubbed by the King on *Shrove Tuesday* in the Morning, and at other times during the *Utas* of the abovesaid noble Solemnization were,

Sir John Radcliff.	Sir Anthony Angier.	Sir John Wyndham.
Sir Thomas Gray.	Sir John Mafon.	Sir John Vaughan, &c.

Fifty five in all.

CHAP. IV.

Papists Behaviour towards the King. Lent Sermons.

THE Papistical Sort were always jealous of this Prince, even before he came to the Crown, as liking neither his Instructors, nor his way of Education. And as the Gospellers had their Eyes upon him always, and placed great Hope in him, so the Papists lookt a squint at him. And no small Fears there were among good Men, lest that Sort should have taken him off from good Principles, by some Means or other, or from Continuance in Life, to proceed in them. One Writer in the latter end of King Henry hath these Words; "Many things I conclude concerning Prince EDWARD, whom I doubt not but the Lord hath sent for the singular Comfort of England. Not that I temerariouſly define any thing to come concerning him; considering it only in the Lords Power. But I desire the same Lord to preserve his bringing up from the contagious Drinks of those false Physicians. And this is to be prayed for of all Men."

The King was but young, which supplied the Papists with Pretences to slight and disobey his Orders, especially about Religious Matters. And indeed they cried out afterwards of his Proceedings, as being don

The Papists
jealous of the
King.

John Bale.

Undervalue
his Orders,
because he
was young.
in

ANNO
1546.

in his Minority, and don by others, the Chief Men about him. They would ordinarily say, "Tush, This Gear will not tarry: It is but my L. Protector's, and my Lord of *Canterbury's* doing. The King is a Child and he knows not of it." But old Father *Latimer* upon this hath these words; "Have we not a Noble King? Was there ever King so Noble, so Godly, brought up with such Noble Counsellors, so excellent and well learned Schoolmasters? I will tell you this, (and I speak it even as I think) His Majesty hath more godly Wit and Understanding, more Learning and Knowledge at this Age, than Twenty of his Progenitors, that I could name, had at any time of their Life.

Some scruple
the Name of
King.

First Sermon
before the K.

Nay, some there were, set up probably by the Papists, that made scruple of the Lawfulness of the very Name of *King*; because it is spoken in *1 Sam. viii.* as a thing displeasing to GOD, when the People of *Israel* would have a King, and that it was a rejecting GOD, *that He should not reign over them.* Which gave occasion to the abovesaid Preacher thus to speak; "There is a great Error risen now a days among many of us, which are vain and newfangled Men, climbing beyond the Limits of our Capacity and Wit, in wrenching this Text of Scripture. They wrench these words awry after their own Fancies, and make much doubt as touching a King, and his godly Name. But it makes no matter by what Names the Rulers be called, if so be they walk ordinarily with GOD, and direct their Steps with Him. For both Patriarch, Judges and Kings, had, and have their Authority of GOD; and therefore Godly.

Bishop of *St. Davids* preaches before the King this Lent.

Winchester offended at his Doctrine.

Boxii MSS.

Lent being come, care was taken to put up good Preachers in the Kings Chapel to preach before the King. And one of these was *Barlow* Bishop of *St. Davids*, who this *February* preached at Court; urging in his Sermon a redress of several Abuses in Religion, and laying some Platform for a Reformation. The Bp. of *Winchester* was then at Court, and was mightily disturbed at it, calling it *His Tattling*; and noting several Points in that Sermon, sent them to the Lord Protector; urging to him, in a Letter from his Place in *Southwark*, the great danger of making any Alterations; and that the Bishop of *St. Davids*, and such as he, laboured to disorder the Realm, it being a time rather to repair what needed Reparation; "That he laid a Platform for Confusion and Disturbances in State; and that the Council, who had so much other Business to do, should not have such inward Disorders added to them. That if his Brother *St. Davids* did, like a Champion, with his Sword in his hand, make enter for the rest, the Door of Licence opened, there would be more by Folly thrust in with him, than His Grace would wish. And that if the Bishop of *St. Davids*, and such other, had their Heads cumbred with any new Platforms, he would wish they were commanded, between this and the Kings full Age, to draw the Platform diligently, to hew the Stones, dig the Sand, and chop the Chalk, while the Time was unseasonable for Building. And when the King came to full Age, to present their Labours to him, and in the mean time not to disturb the state of the Realm.

St. Davids vindicates it.

By these subtil Counsils did *Winchester* study to wean the Protector from entering upon a Reformation of the Corruptions of the Church; or at least to delay it. And to divert his Mind from it, in the same Letter, he threw in before him another plausible Business; namely, to forward a Match

a Match between the young King and the Daughter of the King of the *ANN O*
Romans, if the Emperor would offer her, as he had once before don; *1547.*
 saying, That by this Alliance the Protector's Estimation would increase,
 and the Kings Surety not a little augmented: And this he shewed might
 be a good Check for *France*. But all the effect this Letter of Bishop
Gardiner had upon the Lord Protector was, that he gave to the Bishop
 of *St. Davids* these Notes and Animadversions upon his Sermon, to con-
 sider the same, and vindicate himself and his Discourse, as well as he
 could. Which he did, and called it his *Purgation*. The Protector
 having received it, conveyed it unto *Winchester*, that he might see his
 own Cavilling answered. And he again, like a Champion for the Popish
 Cause, discussed this *Purgation*, and sent it to the Protector. It was
 writ with such a freedom, that he asked the Protector to bear with
 him.

Soon after *Dr. Ridley* preached at Court on a *Wednesday*. His Sermon
 also ran upon the same Subject. *Winton* was then also present. The
 business of his Sermon was to confute the Bishop of *Rome's* pretended
 Authority in Government, and usurped Power, and in Pardons. He
 discoursed also touching the Abuses of Images in Churches, and Cere-
 monies, and especially Holy Water, for the driving away Devils. This
 Learned Man used much Modesty in his Discourse; having such Ex-
 pressions as these, That *he was always desirous to set forth the mere Truth,*
and Unity, and would often add, when he laid down any thing, That
it was as far as he had read; or, If any Man could shew him further,
he would hear him. *Winton*, who was very fond both of Images and
 Holy Water, and could not hear them spoken against, wrote him a large
 Letter in behalf of both these. The Copy whereof he also sent to the
 Protector. The Letter is extant in *Fox's Monuments*. But as the Bp.
 of *S. Davids*, so *Ridley* also answered *Winton*; but the Answers are
 lost.

Dr. Ridley
 also preaches
 before the
 King.

Winchester
 offended a
 gain.

Page 1226.

This *Lent*, in the Month of *April*, *Dr. Hugh Glazier* preached at
St. Paul's Cross, and affirmed there, That "*Lent* was not ordained of
 "God to be fasted, neither the eating of Flesh to be forborn: But
 "that the same was a Politic Ordinance of Man, and might therefore be
 "broken of Men at their pleasure. This *Glazier* was formerly a Friar:
Archbishop Cranmer made him his Commissary for *Calais* and the Parts
 thereabouts.

Dr. Glazier
 preaches at
Paul's Cross
 in *Lent*.
Stow.

The *Complin*, being a Part of the Evening Prayer, was sang in
English in the King's Chappel, before any Act of Parliament enjoined it.

The *Complin*
 said in *English*.

ANNO

1547.

CHAP. V.

State Books, and others, now published. The Bishop of Colen's Consultation. Erasmus's Paraphrase in English. The Homilies. Popish Books set forth. Images defaced. Bishop Gardiner busy. Religion stands as it did. King HENRY's Debts. King EDWARD's Letter; and the Lady MARY's to Queen KATHARINE.

An old Book for the Supremacy translated into English and printed.

THE Book *De Verâ Differentia inter Regiam Potestatem, & Ecclesiasticam*, (called, *The Kings Book*, either because King HENRY was the Author, or rather the Authorizer of it) about this time was reprinted by *Henry Lord Stafford*, with a Preface Dedicatory by him made, and set before it. It was first printed in *Latin* in the Year 1533. when King HENRY thought of shaking off the Foreign Power of *Rome*: And whereas before it was in *Latin*, that it might be communicated unto all Princes, what the extent of Regal Power was; so now it was put into *English*, by the forefaid Lord, to prepare the People the better to bear what the King was now doing in the Reformation of the Church, and to make the Subjects the willinger to let go the Pope and his Religion.

Bp. of Colen's Consultation, printed in English.

And Octob. 30. came forth, translated into *English*, the Book of the Reformation of the Church of *Colen*; wherof *Herman*, the good Archbishop and Elector, was the great Instrument. This Book shewed itself in this Kingdom at this Juncture, undoubtedly, by the means of Archbishop *Cranmer*, and probably of the Protector, as a silent Invitation to the People of the Land to a Reformation, and as a Motive to encline them to be willing to forsake the old Superstition, when they should see the Beauty of a Reformed Church so lively laid before them in this Book. And perhaps it was intended to serve as some Pattern to the Heads and Governors of this Church, wherby to direct their Pains they were now e're long to take about the Emendation of Religious Worship. This Book took so well, that it was printed again the next Year, together with the mention of the Place where it was printed, namely, *London*, and the Persons who printed it, namely, *John Day* and *William Seres*, dwelling then in *Sepulchres* Parish, at the Sign of the Resurrection, a little above *Holborn* Conduit: both which were omitted in the first Edition. The Book was thus intituled, *A simple and Religious Consultation of us Herman, by the Grace of God Archbishop of Colen, and Prince Elector, &c. by what means a Christian Reformation, and founded in Gods Word, of Doctrin, Administration of the divine Sacraments, of Ceremonies, of the whole Cure of Souls, and other Ecclesiastical Ministries, may be begun among Men committed to our Charge, until the Lord grant a better, to be appointed either by a free and Christian Council, General or National, or else by the States of the Empire of the Nation of Germany, gathered together in the Holy*

Holy Ghost. It is an excellent Book, and was compiled, if I mistake not, *ANNO*
by the Pains and Learning of *Melancthon* and *Bucer*, and reviewed, ex- *1547.*
amined, and allowed by the Elector himself. It treated distinctly of all
these Heads following:

That some Lessons might be recited out of the Holy Scripture, before a Sermon, and declared unto the People.	The Exorcism.
That all Sermons might be made to the Magnifying of the Lord Christ.	Of the Administration of Baptism.
Of the Trinity.	How Baptism must be administered at Times and Places prescribed.
Of the Creation and Governance of all Things.	Of Confirmation.
Of the Cause of Sin and Death.	Of the Lords Supper.
Of Original Sin and Mans Weakness before Regeneration.	At what Time the Lords Supper ought to be celebrated.
Of the Old Testament.	Of the Communion of Strangers and sick Folk.
Of the Difference of the Old and New Testament.	How sick Persons must be visited, and how we must celebrate the Communion with them.
Of Preaching peculiar to the New Testament.	Of Communion in private Houses for Men in Health.
Of the Preaching of Repentance.	Of turning from Sin and true Re- pentance.
Of the true and proper use of God's Law.	Of Excommunication.
A short Exposition of the Ten Com- mandments.	Of making of Pastors.
Of Remission of Sins and Justifica- tion.	Of the Blessing of Marriages.
Of good Works.	Of Burying on Holy and Feastful Days.
Of the true and natural signification of the Word, Faith.	Of Fasting Days and Lent.
Of the Cross and Tribulations of the Church of God.	Of the difference of Meats.
Of the Unity and Concord of the Church.	Of certain other Rites and Ceremo- nies of the Church.
Of Christian Prayer.	Of Ecclesiastical Rites upon Work- ing Days.
A short Exposition of the Lords Prayer.	Of peculiar Days of Procession.
Of Abuse in Prayer.	Of Litany.
Of the true and false use of Images.	Of Common Alms.
Of Christian Fast.	Of Schools for Children.
Of Holy Offerings.	Of Schools of Divinity.
A Premonition and Commandment against the Error of the Anabap- tists.	Of Disputation.
Of the Administration of Religion.	By what Means a Christian Refor- mation of Holy Ministry and Cure of Souls, may be begun and pra- ctised in Parishes.
Of Sacraments generally.	Of Reforming of Canonical Colleges.
Of Baptism.	Of the Reformation of Monasteries both of Men and Women.
The Form of a Catechism before Baptism.	Of free and not Monastical Colleges of Virgins.
	Of the Order of Cel-brethren and Lay-brethren.

A N N O

1547.

Declaration
of the Mass;
printed in
English.

And to open the Eyes of the People to see the Irreligion of the Mass, and to prepare them to desire the Abolishing of the same, this same Year 1547. came forth another Book translated into English out of French, written by *Anthony Marcort* of Geneva, intitled, *A Declaration of the Mass: The Fruit thereof, The Cause and the Means; [i.e. the Interim] Wherefore and How it ought to be maintained.* It was printed at *Wittenberg* by *Hans Laft*. In this Book are shewn, certain damnable Abuses that be in the Mass, contrary to the Holy Scripture: And sundry Fruits of the Mass, viz. 1. Multitude of Prebends. 2. Multitude of Priests. 3. Multitude of Temples and Chappels. 4. Multitude of Altars. 5. Divers Oblations and Offerings. 6. Worldly Riches and Pride. 7. Idleness and Truantrise of the Shaven. 8. Multitude of Harlots. 9. Feigned Hours and Prayers. 10. Detestable Hypocrisy. 11. Devouring of Widows, Orphans and the Poor. 12. Renouncing and Destroying of the Death and Passion of Christ.

And the Dis-
closing of the
Canon of the
Mass.

And about the same Season another Book, translated in our Tongue, appeared abroad, of the same Subject, Intitled, *The disclosing of the Canon of the Popish Mass. With a Sermon annexed unto it of the famous Clerk of worthy Memory, Dr. Martin Luther.* In the Preface to the Reader, he is bid, "To lift up his Eyes and behold the abomination of Idolatry so shamefully used in those Days, and not only used, but with force and maine fortified and upholden with Fire and Faggot, Cruelity and Strength; and so fore upholden, that the eternal Word of God is clearly banished." And it is called, "The most shameful Mass and Gazing Stock, the Wicked Mass, the Upspring of Satan, the Invention of the Devil, the fair Fruit of the Romish ravening Antichrist, and the Laderhous of all his shaven Posterity." This Book, for the concealing the Printer, is said to be Imprinted, *Have at all Papists, by me Hans Hitprick.* But to come to some other Books that now were published by the present Authority, and for public use.

The English
Paraphrase of
Erasmus.

The Paraphrase of *Erasmus* upon the Four Gospels and the Acts, was now printed in English (for the other Parts of the New Testament were not yet finished) having been translated by the Procurement and Charge of that pious good Lady, *Katharine Par*, Queen Dowager; for the helping of the ignorant Multitude towards more Knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, and of their Duty towards God and their Neighbours. In this Work she chiefly employed *Nicolas Udal* (who called himself her Servant) an excellent Grammarian and Instructor of Youth, as well as a Learned Divine; afterward a Prebendary of *Winsor*: a Person he was that devoted himself wholly, during his Life, to Writing or Translating Matters that might be of public Profit and Use. This, as he declared in one of his Epistles Dedicatory, he fully minded and intended. Divers select Persons were made use of in this Translation, that it might the more speedily and correctly be don, for the common Benefit. *Udal* translated the Paraphrase upon *S. Luke*: and that which he did besides, was, the Digesting and Placing the Texts throughout all the Gospels and the Acts (except the Gospel of *St. Mark* don by another) to the Intent the Reader might perceive, Where and How the Procefs and Circumstance of the Paraphrase answered to the Text, and how it was joined with it. He was rewarded with a Prebend of *Winsor*, Anno 1551. and the next Year with the Parsonage of *Colborn* in the Isle of *Wight*.

The Transla-
tors;
Udal,

This

This *Udal*, *Leland* the Antiquarian honoured with a Copy of Verses *A N N O* upon a Book that he set forth, Anno 1544. called, *Flores Terentii*, appropriated to the Use of Learners of the *Latin* Tongue, his Scholars; consisting of Phrases taken out of *Terence*, explained and illustrated by him in *English*: Printed by *Berthelet*. Before it are these Verses of *Leland*, in Commendation of the Book and Author: Which I will take leave here to set down.

1547.

Leland's Copy of Verses in Commendation of *Udal*.

Candidus exactam monstrare Terentius artem
Eloquii novit, Roma disertus, tui.
Illius ex hortu flores selegit amenos
UDALLUS cupida Sedulus instar apis.
Quodq; labor pueris studiosis gratior esset,
Transtulit in patrios verba Latina sonos.
Insuper & Scholion facunda munera linguae
Addidit, aeterna vivere digna cedro.
Vos igitur, Juvenes, UDALLUM ornate, Britanni,
Sic fluat e vestro comicus ore lepos.

Thomas Key, Registry of *Oxford*, translated the Paraphrase upon *St. Mark*, by the Motion of *Dr. Owen*, the Kings Physician. He was rewarded afterwards in the Year 1551, with the Mastership of *University College, Oxon*, by Letters recommendatory from the King.

Key.

The Lady *Mary*, upon the Suggestion of *Queen Katharine*, employed herself in the Translation of the Paraphrase upon *St. John*. But being cast into Sickness, partly by overmuch study in this Work, after She had made some Progress therein, She left the doing of the rest to *Dr. Malet* her Chaplain. But certain it is, She took a great deal of Pains in it, and went through a good Part of it: And perhaps this She did, the better to please the King her Father, (for this Translation was taken in hand in his Time) who was of Opinion, That the Knowledge of the Scripture should be communicated to the People. The said *Queen Katharine*, in *September*, in a Letter elegantly penned in *Latin*, had desired the Lady *Mary* to get her said Translation with all Care and Diligence revised, and then with speed to send it to her, calling it, *Her most fair and useful Work*: that so She (the Queen) might with the rest commit it to the Press. Desiring withal to know of her, Whether it should be published in her Name, or concealed under some unknown Author. Yet She added, "That in her Opinion she would seem to do a Wrong to her own Work, if She should refuse to commend it to Posterity under the Advantage of her own Name: In which her accurate Translation She had gone through so much Pains for the Public Good, and would have undertaken more, had her Health permitted. She saw not, She said, why She should reject the Praise which all deservedly would give her. Yet She left all to her own Prudence; as being ready to approve of that most which She thought best to be done. To which I add, *John Old*, who also seems to have been a Teacher of Youth, as well as a Teacher of the Gospel, preferred to the Vicaridge of *Cobington* in *Warwickshire*, by the Dutches of *Somerset*, at the Suit of *Hugh Latimer*, translated the Paraphrase upon all the Canonical Epistles; and dedicated them to the said Dutches, Anno 1549. Besides these, he tran-

The Lady *Mary*.

Queen Katharine's Letter to her, in Commendation of her Pains.

John Old.

ANNO translated also Seven of St. Paul's Epistles thus paraphrased, namely, to the *Ephesians*, the *Philippians*, both to the *Thessalonians*, both to *Timothy*, and to *Philemon*. Which he did at the Solicitation of *Edward Whitchurch*, an eminent Printer of Church Books in this Time. Who came to him and told him, that none were yet appointed to translate those Epistles, and that it was necessary the whole Volume should be finished and printed off by such a Time (which drew on) according to the Kings Injunctions: Which enjoined every Priest, under such a Degree in the Schools, to read them. Before the Epistle to the *Ephesians* the Translator hath a Prologue to the Reader. This Man being a Dr. of Divinity got a Prebend in the Church of *Hereford*; but not before the Year 1552.

Cox.

Leonard Cox, a Schoolmaster also, and Preacher, was the Translator of the Paraphrased Epistle to *Titus*. Which he dedicated to *John Hales*, a Learned and good Man, Clark of the *Hanaper*.

Allen.

The Exposition of the *Revelations* was none of *Erasmus's* (neither did he make any Paraphrase upon that mysterious Book) but was the Work of *Leo Jude*, writ originally in the *German* Language, and translated into *English* by *Edmund Allen*, a Learned Minister of the Gospel, and in Nomination for a Bishopric in the beginning of *Queen Elizabeth*.

Who they were that turned the Paraphrase upon *St. Matthew* and the *Acts*, and who those on the Epistles to the *Romans*, the *Corinthians*, and the *Colossians*, I cannot trace, the Translators chusing rather to lie concealed. But I am apt to think *Queen Katharin* herself might do one at least, and perhaps that upon *St. Matthew*.

This Work in
hand under
King Henry.

The putting of this Paraphrase into *English* was undertaken before King *HENRY's* Death. For in 1545. *Udal* had finished his Translation upon *Luke*, and dedicated it to *Queen Katharin*. Which makes me suppose these Paraphrases were countenanced by that King, and had been set forth by his Order, if he had lived.

The Para-
phrase prin-
ted twice.

The whole Paraphrase upon the New Testament was printed at least twice under King *EDWARD*. The first Edition was, as was said, about 1547. which was only of the Gospels and the *Acts*. The rest of the New Testament was not so ready for the Press, and came not forth till about 1549. The Second Impression was in the Year 1552. Both printed by *Edward Whitchurch*. The Paraphrase upon the Gospels was ushered in with three Epistles; all composed by *Udal*: One to the King, another to *Queen Katharin*, and the third to the Reader. The Paraphrase upon the Epistles, containing the Second Volume, was dedicated also to the King by *Miles Coverdale*.

The good
Contents of
the Para-
phrase.

Of *Erasmus*, in this Paraphrase, thus speaketh the aforesaid *Udal*: He
 "bringeth in, and briefly comprizeth the pith of the Minds and Meanings
 "of all the good Doctors of the Church, that ever writ, in Justification of
 "Faith, in Honouring GOD only, in Repentance and purity of a Chri-
 "stian Mans Life, in detesting of Imagery, and corrupt honouring of
 "Saints, in Opening and Defacing the Tyranny, the Blasphemy, the
 "Hypocrisy, the Ambition and Usurpation of the See of *Rome*; in no-
 "ting the Abuses of all the abominable Sects and Rabbles of Counterfeit
 "Religions, and idle Cloisters; in bewraying the juggling Sleights and
 "fine Practices of Popery, in choice of Meats, in esteeming the diffe-
 "rence

“rence of Days, in manifesting of vain Ceremonies, in the colour and
 “pretence of Holiness, crept into CHRIST’s Church; in reprehending
 “of Pilgrimages with all the Circumstances of Idolatry and Superstition;
 “in Describing of a Princes Office; in Teaching Obedience of the Peo-
 “ple towards their Rulers and Governors; in Declaring of a Pastors
 “Duty; in shewing the part of an Evangelical Preacher, and what and
 “how his Doctrin ought to be out of the Scriptures.” But notwith-
 standing all this good in these Paraphrases, yet would the Bishop of *Win-*
ton fain have suppressd them, and wrot earnestly to the Protector against
 them: Nibbling against some Passages in them.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* had taken care to prepare certain pious
 Homilies, to be made and published, with command to be read by such
 Priests as could not preach. That so the poor People might have some
 means of Instruction. But it is strange to consider, how any thing, be
 it never so beneficial and innocent, oftentimes give Offence. For a great
 many both of the Laity, as well as the Clergy, could not digest these
 Homilies. And therefore sometimes when they were read in the Church,
 if the Parishioners liked them not, there would be such talking and bab-
 bling in the Church, that nothing could be heard. And if the Parish
 were better affected, and the Priest not so, then he would “so hawk it,
 “and chop it, (I use the Words of old *Latimer*) that it were as good for
 “them to be without it, for any Word that could be understood. But
 some Priests would indeed read them very well. This ill Practice the
 Bishops winked at, and suffered in their Dioces. Which was so much
 known and disliked, that the aforesaid Reverend Father complained to
 the King of it, and was a Sutor to him, that he would give the Bishops
 charge, ere they went home, upon their Allegiance, to look better to
 their Flocks, and to see the Kings Injunctions better kept. This Book
 of Homilies was twice printed by *Grafton*, Anno 1547. The latter Im-
 pression had this Advantage, that in some places the *English* was mended,
 and the Stile corrected and much refined, otherwise the same. Doubt-
 less the first Impression was found not sufficient to furnish all the Churches
 and Chappels of the Kingdom, and for the Use of private Persons also:
 And so the Book was soon after revised and printed again. Before the
 Book was a Preface by the King, with the Advice of the Duke of *Somer-*
set and the Privy Council, enjoining these Homilies to be read in all
 Churches every *Sunday*, and the Kings Injunctions once a Quarter.

No sooner were these Homilies composed and sent abroad, but the
 News thereof (and the Book itself, as it seemed, already translated into
Latin) came to *Strasburgh*, among the Protestants there: Where it
 caused great Rejoycing. And *Bucer*, one of the chief Ministers there,
 wrote a Gratulatory Epistle hereupon to the Church of *England*, in
 November 1547. which was printed the Year after. Therin that learn-
 ed and moderate Man shewed, “How these pious Sermons were come
 “among them, wherein the People were so godly and effectually exhor-
 “ted to the reading of the Holy Scriptures; and Faith was so well ex-
 “plained, wherby we become Christians; and Justification, wherby we
 “are saved; and the other chief Heads of Christian Religion so soundly
 “handled. And therefore, as he added, these Foundations being right-
 “ly laid, there could nothing be wanting in our Churches requisite to-
 “wards the building hereupon sound Doctrine and Discipline.” Mean-
 ing

A N N O

1547.

The Homilies
 disliked by
 some.

Latimer con-
 cerning these
 Homilies.

In his second
 Sermon be-
 fore him.

N. Battely.

Bucer's Judg-
 ment con-
 cerning the
 Homilies.

ANN^O ing this as a gentle Admonition to excite the Governors of the Church to a further Reformation. He commended much the Homily of *Faith*: 1547. "the nature and force of which was so clearly and soberly discussed; "and wherein it was so well distinguished from Faith which was dead. "He much approved of the maner of treating concerning the Misery "and Death we are all lapsed into by the Sin of our first Parent, "and how we are rescued from this Perdition only by the Grace of "GOD, and by the Merit and Resurrection of his Son: and how hereby "we are justified in the sight of GOD, and adopted into the number of "his Children and Heirs: And then shewing, what ought to be the study "and work of those that are Justified and Regenerate. So that, he said, "by this full and dextrous Restitution of CHRIST's Doctrine, his King- "dom was so fully explained to the People, that there could no Relicks "of the old Leaven remain long in any parts of our Ceremonies or Di- "scipline. Then he took occasion to stir up the Ecclesiastical Rulers to "go on with the Reformation of the Sacraments: that they might be ad- "ministred according as CHRIST commended and delivered them to "us: that all might partake of CHRIST's Grace and saving Communi- "cation; as conferring very much to the undoubted restoring of Faith "and Godliness." In this Epistle he also praised the *English* Nation, in that GOD had often given it Kings that were great Lovers and Promo- ters of good Letters and Arts, from King *Sigebert*, that founded *Cam- bridge*, and many other Schools throughout the Land; and particularly had brought forth King HENRY VIII. that most prudent and valiant Prince. And that at this day, no Kingdom had more truly Learned and Godly Peers and Bishops, that exceeded both for their Learning and Piety.

The Archbi-
shops Cate-
chism.

To these Church-Books I add a Catechism, set forth not only by the Archbishops Authority, but in his own Name: It bore this Title, *A short Instruction into the Christian Religion; for the syngular Commoditie and Profite of Children and young People. Set forth by the most Reverend Father in God, Thomas, Archbyschoppe of Canterbury.* This Book is but a Translation out of *Latin*, made by a *Lutheran* Author; but there be Additions in the *English*, as accommodated to the *English* Church, which were not in the *Latin*, but put in, as it seems, by the Archbishop: particularly the whole second Sermon (as it is called) on the First Com- mandment (more truly the Second) about *Images*.

Bishop Ridley's
Character of
the Author.
Fox, p. 1298.

This Catechism, towards the latter end of King EDWARD's Reign, was printed again, and had the Approbation of a Convocation. Of this Catechism I have this Commendation to add, which *Ridley*, Bishop of *London*, gave it in the Beginning of Queen *Mary's* Reign, before *Bourn* Secretary of State, *Fecknam* Dean of *St. Pauls*, Mr. *Pope*, Sir *Roger Cholmely* late Lord Chief Justice, and others, that then were with the said *Ridley* in the *Tower*. Who, when they had in a Conference put it to him, that he was the Author of that Catechism, tho' going under the Name of Archbishop *Cranmer*, he told them, "That Book was made by a great "Learned Man, and one that was able to do the like again. And that, "as for himself, he assured them (and bad them not be deceived in him) "that he was never able to do or write any such thing: and that the "Writer passed him, no less than the Learned Master his young Scholar. Meaning, no doubt, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*.

Now

Now did the Papists also send abroad their Books, to uphold their falling Superstitions, and to check, as much as in them lay, the good Effects of other Books. *Richard Smith*, D. D. Reader of the Kings Divinity Lecture in Oxon, published, *A Defence of the Sacrament of the Mass*, Printed by *John Hartford*, 1546. 8vo. Tho', but the next Year on the 15 of May, he made a Retraction at Paul's Cross; and soon after published, *A Declaration of his Retraction*, Printed by *Reinold Wolf*, 8vo.

A N N O

1547.

A Book set forth by Dr. Smith.

Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, put out also his *Declaration of such Articles as Geo. Joy had gon about to confute*, Printed by *Ro. Toy*, 1546. 4to. And his *Declaration of the Devils Sophistry, wherein he robbeth the unlearned People of the true Belief in the Sacrament of the Altar* Printed by *Ro. Toy*, 1546. 8vo.

Two more by Bp. Gardiner.

But in Reply to the former, *Geo. Joy* sent forth his *Refutation of the Bishop of Winchester's Dark Declaration of his false Articles, once before confuted*, 8vo.

Joy's Refutation.

Lastly, *Philip Gerard* wrot an *Invective* against those that stopt the free Passage of the Bible in English. Which was printed by *Richard Grafton*, 8vo.

Gerard's Invective.

And while the Protestants laboured to put the King forward to rectify Abuses, and to promote a Reformation in the Church, the Papists that were about him laboured hard the other way; Representing the Superstitions and Abuses of Religion to him, as fair as possible. As for Images, they told him, "That whereas they had been used to be censured, and to have Candles offered unto them, none were so foolish to do it to the Stock or Stone, or to the Image itself, but it was don to GOD and his Honor before the Image. And in case they had abused, they whispered the King in his Ear, and told him, That this Abuse was but a small Matter; and the same, with all other Abuses in the Church, might easily be reformed. But it should not be taken in hand at the first, for fear of Trouble, or further Inconveniences. That the People would not bear sudden Alterations. An Insurrection might be made after a sudden Mutation, which might be to the great harm and loss of the Realm." These were just *Winchesters* Arguments, which he used now-a-days to brandish, and I suppose *Latimer* glanceth at him: "That therefore all things should be well, but not don presently, for fear of further business." And indeed these Pretences were the Occasion that the Reformation went not forward so fast; and they stopped the Word of GOD, and hindred the true setting forth of the same: "There were so many Put-offs, so many Put-byes, so many respects and Considerations of worldly Wisdom, saith that plain-speaking Preacher. These Men he afterwards took occasion to mention in a Sermon before the King, calling them *Blaunchers*: and exhorted the King to beware of them.

The Papists strive to stop the King.

Latimer's Sermon of the Plow.

The People, in the beginning of the Kings Reign, were very forward in pulling down and defacing Images, even without permission. This was don in *Portsmouth*: Where divers Crucifixes and Saints were plucked down and destroyed. In one Church here the Image of *St. John* the Evangelist, standing in the Chancel by the High Altar, was taken away, and a Table of Alabaster broken, and in it an Image of Christ crucified, contemptuously used; one Eye boared out, and the Side pierced. The

Images defaced at Portsmouth.

A N N O 1547. Report of this was brought to *Gardiner* the Bishop of the Diocess, being then at *Wolvesay*, some great Favourers of Images relating it tragically to him. And he, being a great Patron of Images himself, was much disturbed at it; and writ to Mr. *Vaughan*, Captain of *Portsmouth*, and the Maior, the Kings Chief Officer there, to know the truth of it, and to consult with them for the Reformation of it, out of pretence of discharging his Duty. He desired to know of *Vaughan*, Who were the Doers, and what the Circumstances of it were. And if it were not too far gon with the Multitude, he would send one thither to preach, to stop any further doings of that sort. He said, "That such as were affected with this Principle of breaking down Images, were Hogs, and worse than Hogs, and were ever so taken in *England*, being called *Lollards*. And that the maintenance of this Opinion, of destroying Images, was utterly disliked in *Germany*: And such Men were counted the Dregs cast out by *Luther*, after all his Brewings of *CHRIST's* Religion. And he [*Bishop Gardiner*] himself had seen Images standing in all their Churches. He used also this terrible Argument for Images, viz. "That the destruction of Images contained an Enterprize to subvert Religion, and the state of the World with it; and especially the Nobility: Who, by Images set forth and spread abroad to be read of all Men, their Lineage and Parentage, with remembrance of their State and Actions.

Gardiner
writes thither
about it.

And to the
Protector.

The Protec-
tor's Answer.

In his Zeal also he wrot another Letter to the Lord Protector and Council, for redressing this mighty Insolence. To which the Protector thought fit to make a large Reply: Wherin he told the Bishop, "That neither the Facts nor Words were so heinous as was brought to his Ears. And that those Facts that were punishable were already redressed. He reminded the Bishop of the Times of King *HENRY*, when the Bible was laid aside for a Time, upon pretence that some had abused the Reading thereof, when as the Images were still left to them, who had abused them. And more Gentleness was used towards those Books of Images than to the true and unfeigned Books of *GOD's* Word; both being abused, the one to Idolatry, and the other to Contention. And therefore it seemed meet to him, that what had been abused before might now be abused again, the Advantage of some Priests, the Simplicity of Laymen, and the great Inclination of Mans Nature to Idolatry, giving cause thereto.

He goes to
Portsmouth
himself about
this Matter.

Nor was the writing of these Letters all the Bishop of *Winchester* did, but he went himself in Person to *Portsmouth*, to enquire after this Matter. And because the Soldiers seemed to be the Persons that had been guilty of this Rudeness, upon Captain *Vaughan's* desire the Bishop made an Exhortation to them as they stood there with their Weapons marshalled: And so departed in Amity with the Captains and Soldiers in the Town, the Captain telling him plainly, That he was nothing offended with any thing he said in his Sermon.

His Admoni-
tion to the
Protector.

I have two or three Passages more to relate concerning this Bishop; to shew how bigotted he was to the Pope and his Superstitions, and how exceedingly nettled at the Steps that were now taking in amending corrupt Religion. The Protector had not long before told him, that he would suffer no Innovation. Whereupon the Bishop took the opportunity now about *June* to put him in mind of it from *Winchester*, and advised him,

him, "To leave the Realm to the King at Eighteen Years old, as the ANN Q
"King his Father left it to him. The Act would be honourable and 1547.
"good. And that it were pity to trouble it with any Innovation;
"which would be a Charge to His Grace more than needed, being al-
"ready burthened heavily. That the Matter of the Commonwealth
"under the King was chiefly his, and as it were his alone; and that
"every Man had his Eye directed to him both Here and Abroad, and
"he should shadow other Mens doings, if they were done. Which was
"one Incommodity of high Government.

Bishop *Tonstal*, who was looked upon as one of the Learnedest and His Censure
Gravest Men, and of the most Experience, went along, at first, with the of *Cranmer*
King and the Archbishop in their Proceedings. Wherat the said Bp. of and *Tonstal*.
Winton made this Reflection: "That it was much to be noted, that my
"Lord of *Canterbury*, being the high Bishop of the Realm, and highly
"in Favour with his late Sovereign Lord, [King HENRY] and my
"Lord of *Durham*, a Man of renowned Fame in Learning and Gravity,
"both put by that King in Trust, for their Counsil, in the Order of the
"Realm; should so soon forget their old Knowledge in Scripture, set
"forth by the Kings Majesties Book [*The Erudition of a Christen Man*]
"and give their Advice to bring in such Matters of Alteration in Reli-
"gion, as they had don.

There were now two Books published by *John Bale*, whereat *Win-* Offended with
chester was highly enraged, calling them, *Pernicious*, *Seditious*, and *Slan-* two Books of
derous. *Bales* Pen indeed was sharp and foul enough sometimes, when *Bale*.
he had such foul Subjects to deal with, as the Cruelties and Uncleannef-
ses of many of the Popish Priests, and Prelates, and Cloisterers. But of
these Books our Bishop writes from *Winchester* a long Letter of Complaint
to the Protector. One of these Books was, *An Elucidation of the Mar-*
tyrdom of Anne Ascue: Wherin this Bishop had the chief hand. His Ex-
ceptions he took to this Book were, That *Bale* had made *Anne Ascue* to
die a Martyr. "Wheras she was, saith he, a *Sacramentary*, and so by
"the Law worthy the Death she suffered. And that he had falsly set
"forth her Examination, misreporting it: And that hereby his dead
"Master, King HENRY, was slandered, Religion assaulted, and the Realm
troubled. Such a zealous Advocate was Bishop *Gardiner* for his beloved
Mistress, *Popery*, now by him apprehended to be in great danger.

From the beginning of King EDWARD's Reign, hitherto, the old Religion
way of Worship, and the Rites and Ceremonies, continued as they had stands yet
don in the former Reign, without, or but small Variation. And what- without Alce-
ever Inclination the King and the Protector, the Archbishop of *Canter-* ration.
bury and some other of the Kings Council, had towards a Change of di-
vers Superstitions; yet they thought fit to tarry for a Parliament and a
Convocation, for the more orderly and effectual doing of it. For they
apprehended Danger, and some Resistance and Uproar among the People, if
they should presently attempt it of themselves. So the King proceeded no
farther in a Reformation, as yet, than a Royal Visitation, and in framing A Royal
of some Injunctions in order therunto. But notwithstanding many there Visitation.
were that now whispered, and secretly spread abroad in Markets, Fairs,
Alehouses, and other Places, Reports of Innovations and Changes in
Religion and Ceremonies of the Church; and that they were don by the
King, the Protector, and others of the Privy Council. Therefore for the

A N N O
1547.

A Proclama-
tion against
Flying Reports.

stopping of these false Rumours, *May 24.* a Proclamation was issued out against these Reporters; Assuring the Kings Subjects, That such pretended Innovations were never begun nor attempted by the King and his Council. And besides these Rumours concerning Religion, they also spread bruits of other Things and Facts, sounding to the Dishonour and Slander of the Kings Majesty, the Protector, and others of the Council, and to the disquieting and disturbing of his Subjects. Therefore, for the preventing of these Reports, and discovering the Talebearers, all Justices and other of the Kings Chief Officers in the Realm, were, by the said Proclamation, commanded to search for them, and Imprison them, according to former good Acts and Statutes of the Kings noble Progenitors, made to reform and punish, as leud and vagrant Persons; telling and reporting false News and Tales. And all Persons that heard these Reports were by the same Proclamation commanded to repair to the Court, and declare the Reporter, or to some Justice of the Peace: Who was accordingly to commit the Reporter to Prison, until he had brought forth the Author of the said Tales, or who told the same to him; and to make further search from Person to Person; and so to get out the first Author, or Beginner of the said Tales or News.

Care taken
for payment
of King Hen-
ries Debts.

By Proclama-
tion.

Commendable Care was taken, in the beginning of the Kings Reign to perform that part of the Kings Fathers last Will; wherein he gave Charge for his Debts to be paid. And many things there were that had been taken of the Subjects by that Kings Officers, for the Service of him and his Realm. A Proclamation therefore was issued out, *May 29.* for the payment of the Kings Fathers Debts: Wherin the King willed all his Loving Subjects, to whom in this Case it appertained, to declare in Writing to some certain of his Officers, before the Feast of *St. John Baptist*, what remained due unto them, and wherfore; and He the said Officer to send the said Declarations to the Lord Great Master, before the end of *Trinity Term*: To the Intent, that upon the knowledge of the Certainty of the said Debts, the Lord Protector and other Executors of the late Kings Majesty, might take order for the full contentation of every Debt. Which they intended to do accordingly.

Corn, when
allowed to be
exported.

By Proclama-
tion.

Another Proclamation came forth in this Month of *May*, viz. *May 16.* wherby Leave and Licence was granted to imbarke, ship, and carry over the Seas, into all outward Parts, being in League with the King, all manner of Wheat, and all other kinds of Grain; so long as a Quarter of Wheat should not exceed the Price of Six Shillings and Eight Pence; the Quarter of Barly, Malt, and Rye, Five Shillings: Or unto such time as His Highness, by another Proclamation under his Great Seal should determine the contrary. This liberty of exportation of Corn lasted till *December 7.* when another Proclamation, directed to the Customers, Comptrollers, Searchers, and other Officers and Ministers within the Port of *London*, and all other Ports, prohibited it: That wheras Wheat and Malt, and other Grain exceeded the Prices abovesaid, the Kings Subjects were forbid to transport it from henceforth, without his special Licence under his Great Seal; upon pain to incur all such Statutes and Proclamations as were provided in that behalf; and to be further punished by Imprisonment of Body, and otherwise, to the terrible Example of all others. But this Proclamation did not extend to the prohibiting Grain to be carried over to *Calais* and *Boloign*, and other the Kings Pieces beyond Sea.

In

In this Month of May Queen Katharin Par, an ingenious and learned Lady, being then at St. James's, out of her Affection to the young King, her Son in Law, then, as it seems, at Westminster, writ him a Letter, (and that I suppose in Latin) wherein she professed her true Love towards the late deceased King, and her Kindness towards him; and lastly, added proper Passages taken out of the Holy Scriptures. And then She earnestly desired some Lines from him in Answer. Whereupon the King wrot her this elegant Latin Letter: Which fell into the hands of Archbishop Parker, (a great Collector of curious MSS.) on the top of which he writ these words;

ANNO
1547.

Q. Katharin
writes to K.
Edward.

Epistola scripta manu propria Serenissimi Regis EDWARDI ad Dominam KATHARINAM Reginam, Relictam HENRICI Octavi.

CUM non procul abs Te abessem, & quotidie me Te visurum sperarem, mihi optimum videbatur non omnino ad Te Literas dare. Literæ enim sunt cujusdam & Memoria & Benevolentia longe absentium signa. Sed ego Petitione tua, tandem accensus non potui non ad Te Literas mittere: Primum ut Tibi gratum faciam; Deinde vero, ut tuis Literis respondeream Benevolentia plenius, quas è Sancto Jacobo ad me misisti. In quibus primum ponis ante oculos tuum Amorem erga Patrem meum, nobilissimæ Memoria Regem; Deinde, Benevolentiam erga me; Ac Postremo, Pietatem Scientiam atque Doctrinam in Sacris Literis. Perge igitur in tuo bono Incepto, & prosequere Patrem amore diuturno, & mihi tanta signa Benevolentia, quæ semper hætenas in Te sensi. Et ne desinas amare & legere sacras Literas, sed semper in eis legendis persevera.

His Answer
to Her.
E. Biblioth.
CCCC. Vol.
Intit. Epist.
Vitor. Illustr.

In primo enim indicas Officium bonæ Conjugis & Subjectæ. In secundo ostendis laudem Amicitia tuæ. Et in tertio tuam Pietatem ergo Deum.

Quare cum ames Patrem, non possum non Te vebementer laudare; Cum me ames, non Te iterum diligere: & cum Verbum Dei ames, Te colam & mirabor ex animo. Quare siquid sit quo possum Tibi gratum Facto vel Verbo facere, libenter præstabo. Vale, tricesimo Maii.

Which, in English, is to this Tenor:

A Letter written by King EDWARD the Sixths own Hand, to the Lady KATHARINE, Queen Dowager to King HENRY the Eighth.

" Since I was not far from you, and in hopes every Day to see you,
" I thought it best to write no Letter at all to you. For Letters
" are Tokens of Remembrance and Kindness between such as are at a
" great distance. But being at length moved by your Request, I could
" not forbear to send you a Letter: First, To do somewhat that may be
" acceptable to you; and then, to answer your Letter, full of Kindness,
" which you sent me from St. James's. In which first you set before
" mine Eyes your Love toward my Father the King, of most noble Memory: Then, your Good Will towards me: and lastly, Your Godliness, your Knowledge and Learning in the Scriptures. Go on therefore in your good Enterprize, and continue to love my Father, and to shew so great Tokens of Kindness to me, which I have hitherto ever
" per-

ANNO 1547. "perceived in you. And cease not to love and read the Scriptures:
 "but hold out always in reading them. For in the first you shew the
 "Duty of a good Wife and a good Subject, in the second, the Praise
 "of your Friendship; and in the third, Your Piety towards GOD.
 "Wherefore since you love my Father, I cannot but much commend
 "you: Since you love me, I cannot but love you again; and since you
 "love GOD's Word, I will love and admire you from my Heart.
 "Wherefore if there be any thing wherein I may do you a kindness, either
 "in Deed or Word, I shall do it willingly. Farewel, the 30th of May.

The Lady
 Mary writes
 to Q. Katharin.

Queen Katharins benign and gracious Disposition had reconciled her the Respect and Love of her late Royal Husbands Children: And as the King, her Son in Law, had wrot her a Letter in May, so in August she received one from her Daughter in Law, the Lady Mary: Who made the Marquis of Northampton the Queens Brother, the Bearer, from Beaulieu, the Queen being then with Child by the Lord Admiral, her Husband: Which Letter ran to this Tenor:

Cot. Lib.
 Otto C. 10.

Madam,
 "Altho' I have troubled your Highness with sundry Letters, yet
 "that notwithstanding, seeing my Lord Marquis, who hath taken
 "pains to come unto me at this present, intendeth to see your Grace
 "shortly, I could not be satisfied without writing to the same: And e-
 "specially, because I purpose to Morrow, with the help of GOD, to
 "begin my Journey towards Norfolk; where I shall be farther from
 "your Grace. Which Journey I have intended since Whitsuntide, but
 "lack of Health hath stayed me all this while. Which, altho' it be as
 "yet unstable, nevertheless I am enforced to remove for a time; hop-
 "ing, with GOD's Grace, to return again about Michaelmas. At which
 "time, or shortly after, I trust to hear good Success of your Grace's
 "great Belly. And in the mean while shall desire much to hear of your
 "Health, which I pray Almighty GOD to continue and encrease to his
 "Plesure, as much as your own Heart can desire. And thus, with my
 "most humble Commendations to your Highness, I take my leave of
 "the same; desiring your Grace to take the pains to make my Com-
 "mendation to my Lord Admiral. From Beaulieu this ix of August.

Your Highness humble and assured
 Loving Dowghter,

MARYE.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Dr. Smith recants. Some Account of him and his Writings. Bell-mettal, not to be transported.

IN the Month of *May* Dr. *Richard Smith*, public Professor of Divinity Smith and Perrin recant. in *Oxon*, made a Recantation of his Popish Errors at *St. Paul's Cross*. And in *June* one *Perrin*, a Black Friar, recanted in the Parish Church of *St. Andrew Underhaft, London*; That whereas he had before, viz. on *St. Georges Day*, preached, that it was good to worship the Pictures of Christ and Saints, now he said he had been deceived, and was sorry that he had taught such Doctrin. But in *Queen Maries* Reign they both appeared in the Pulpits open Defenders again of these and the like renounced Doctrins.

The Story of this Dr. *Smith*, his Recantation, Fickleness, Flight, and the Books he wrot against *P. Martyr*, take this particular account of. A Dr. Smith twice recants at Oxon. And why. few Days after he had pronounced his Recantation, or, (as he rather chose to call it) his *Retraction*, at *St. Paul's Cross*, he repaired to *Oxford*, and there, soon after, came up in public and recanted, as he had don at *London*. But it seems it was don by him by halves: For instead of declaring at length, plainly and fully, the Tenor of what he had said at *St. Pauls*, he insisted much in shewing his Auditory, that what he then said was not so much a *Recantation* as a *Retraction*. And then took occasion to fall foul upon some that believed not the *Real*, that is, the Corporeal Prefence. He wrote also Letters to his Friends, denying he had made a Recantation. This occasioned many Persons to talk, that *Smith* still retained his Errors, and trod in his old Steps: And therefore that the Recantation he had publisht, either was not his, or that he was forced to it, and did it unwillingly. Therefore *Smith* came up again publicly in *Oxford*, not in *August*, (as was mistaken in the *Memorials* of Archbishop *Cranmer*, but the 9. of the Calends of *August*, that is, *July* 24. and then read his whole Recantation, *verbatim*, which he had made before at *St. Pauls*: Having first made a large Preface, showing the Reasons of his coming up there again. Therin he acknowledged, " That His Preface to his second Recantation. the Distinction he had lately made, to the Offence of many, between " Recantation and Retraction, was frivolous, both Words signifying " the very same thing; and that the true Reason he had affected the " Word, was to palliate and excuse his own Recantation. That it " troubled him, that by that Obscurity he should deceive any. And " whereas, after his Recantation he had writ and scattered his Letters, " wherein he laboured to excuse himself to his Friends, and dissembled " his doings, seeming more studious to preserve his Name and Credit, " than openly to avouch the true Doctrin, he now declared, that all " he had afterwards writ in Letters, or delivered in his Lectures, he " renounced and revoked as false and erroneous. And then he proceeds to read the whole Recantation, as he had made it before in *London*.

Which

ANNO
1547.

Which began thus, "Men and Brethren, the Holy Prophet *David* left it written, *Every man is a liar*, &c. The Sum of this Recantation may be read in the *Appendix* to *Cranmers* Memorials. The whole of it in *Peter Martyrs* Works. In the conclusion of this his Recantation, as he had prefaced something before it, so he subjoined something. And this it was, "That whereas some had been offended with an Assertion of his about *Justification*, which was that four things were required therein, GOD's Promise, CHRIST's Merits, the Worthiness of the Person, and of the Works: Taking what he said of the Works of a Man already Justified, as spoken by him of a Man in order to his Justifying. But to satisfy all, This he now said, and this he affirmed, That this Doctrin, that we are Justified by Faith in CHRIST alone is not new, nor lately found out, but very ancient, taught by the most ancient Doctors, *Origen*, *Basil*, *Chrysostom*, and others. That they secluded all the Merits of Men, however specious, and ascribed to CHRIST alone the Glory and Merit of our Justification, and to his Sacred Blood and Passion: by which alone we are sanctified, delivered, justified. And that this Doctrin was delivered by them for this end, that all Glorifying might be taken away, and that Men should acknowledge their own Weakness and Infirmary. Yet, that it is not lawful for a Christian to despise good Works, or that the Christian Life should be slothful and destitute of the Fear of GOD, of Hope, Repentance, Amendment, Charity, Prayer, Fasts, Almsdeeds, and other good Works; but truly to acknowledge, that when we have don all we are unprofitable Servants, not worthy to have thanks given us for our Works; but to confess that we are saved by the mere Mercy of GOD, for the Merits of his beloved Son." And this was the Sum of *Smiths* Recantation at *Oxford*.

Smith declares himself about Justification.

Pa. 1642. *Ed.*
Basil. 1581.

He is removed from his Professors Place.

Pa. 199.
Flies to *Lovain*.

And to *Paris*, where he printed his Book against *Martyr*.

But notwithstanding all this that he had don to secure to himself his Place of Professor, not long after he was removed, and *P. Martyr* was sent down by the Kings Authority, and took the Chair. At which *Smith* conceived a secret Indignation, and returned to all the Popish Doctrins that he had revoked. But yet for a while frequented *Martyrs* Lectures, and took Notes, as tho' he had been one of his diligent and glad Auditors. But all this was but Dissimulation: For it was not long after, that he made a great Hubbub in the University, and publicly challenged that grave and learned Man to a Disputation, as hath been related in the *Memorials* of Archbishop *Cranmer*. But before the Day appointed for it came he was fled, first to *Scotland*, as it seems, and soon after to *Lovain*: where he soon printed his Book for the *Celibacy* of Priests, and *Monastic Vows*, against *P. Martyr*; tho' it were at first designed to go forth against *Martin Luther*. Which Book *Martyr* answered learnedly, in a just Treatise extant among his Works. At the end of which Treatise he set down *Smiths* Recantation, and a Narration of his Fickleness divers Years past, when he Read in the behalf of *Justification by Faith alone*, one day, Bishop *Latimer* being his Auditor, and against it the very next. And two submissive Letters writ by him to the Archbishop of *Canterbury* from *Scotland*.

At *Lovain* he could not tarry long, but departed thence to *Paris*, where he professed Divinity. And here, toward the latter end of the Year 1550. he printed a second time his Book of the *Celibacy of Priests*, against

against Martyr, having Gall and Bitterness in the very Title, which ran *A N N O*
 thus, *Defensio Sacri Episcoporum & Sacerdotum Cœlibatus contra impias* 1547.
& indoctas Petri Martyris Vermilii nugas & Calumnias, quæ ille Oxonii
in Anglia duobus retro annis in Sacerdotalium nuptiarum Assertionem te-
mere effutivit, &c. that is, *A Defence of the holy Single Life of Bishops*
and Priests, against the impious and unlearned Trifles and Slanders of
P. Martyr Vermilius, which two Years ago he rashly uttered at Oxford
in England, upon the Assertion of Priests Mariages. By Rich. Smith, an
 English Man, formerly for a great while Professing Divinity at Oxford,
 and now at Paris. Also a short Book by the same Author concerning Mo-
 nastic Vows against the same Martyr, and others of this sort. Both now
 the second time coming forth more correct and exact. And in this second
 Edition also was pretended, by the Title Page, to be a Refutation of
 Ponet, who had writ upon this Argument: Tho' there be nothing in the
 Book against him, unless now and then in the Margin these and such like
 Words, *Huc adverte oculos, Ponete, & errorem agnosce tuum.* This
 Book he dedicated to David Haliburton, the Head of a College in Scot-
 land (who I suppose had entertained him in some of his Flights) calling
 him his best Friend, and to whom he was very much obliged. In this
 Epistle he is ready to die in the Quarrel of the Papal Religion, which
 he stiled *Christs Faith*. And in his Recantation not long before he pro-
 fessed himself ready to die for the contrary Doctrines. Which was a
 sign he meant to die for neither.

*Collegii Methu-
 renensis Præ-
 positus.*

In the said Epistle he cried aloud of the Troubles of *England*, as cau-
 sed by the Religion; "That the Nation was every where afflicted with
 "so great Miseries, shaken with so many differences of Sects, tossed with
 "so many Waves of divers Opinions, as scarcely any Country ever before
 "was. How many and various popular Tumults have Heresies, said he,
 "brought forth in our Land? What miserable Conspiracies have the
 "Sects raised; the End of which hath been bloody? [He means the
 Rebellion in the *West*, and other Countries: Which yet was raised and
 carried on by no other Sect than Papists: but he, being to be read in a
 Foreign Country, would charge, most falsely, these Tumults upon the
 Sects and Heresies, by which he meant the Gospellers.] And then he
 added, "Are not these Evils open Tokens of GOD's Anger? Doth it
 "not appear hence, that the newsprung Religion is displeasing to GOD?
 In this Epistle he ventured his Credit to say, "That there were more
 "by twenty times, nay, by a hundred times, in *England*, that did abhor
 "these Sects, and wished for nothing more, than that all the Heresies
 "were totally overthrown, and that the old Religion of CHRIST, and the
 "antient Rites of Worshipping GOD, might be restored. He added,
 with as much Forehead, and with as little care of Truth, "That, of the
 "more learned and pious sort in *England*, none hitherto joined with the
 "Sects, but all such constantly and with fervent Mind, and strong Re-
 "solution opposed them. Lying notoriously, if in the number of these
 pious and learned Men he reckoned himself and *Chedsey*, and divers o-
 thers, that recanted and complied in this Reign, tho' some of them fell
 off again soon after.

Observations
 out of his E-
 pistle Dedicato-
 ry.

And mentioning with extraordinary Honour the Bishops of *Winton*
 and *London*, *Wigorn* and *Chichester*, and some others who had undergone
 Punishments from the State, he closeth up all with a most malicious ly-
 He calumni-
 ates Hopers
 preaching.

A N N O ing Story of that Reverend Man Mr. *Hoper*, viz. "That after he began
1547. "to preach in *London*, about one or two Years ago [towards the begin-
 "ning of King *EDWARD*] he was so admired by the People, that they
 "held him for a Prophet, nay, they looked upon him as some Deity.
 "But that now he was, by the Impulse of his own Spirit, sunk into
 "the depth of Error and Ignorance, that he was not content to
 "thunder in his Pulpit against all the Doctrines of the Antient and A-
 "postolical Church, and to teach his Disciples the highest contempt of
 "all the Sacraments, to esteem the Holy Eucharist no more than a
 "Wheaten Loaf, and the Holy Wine, but what was prest from the
 "Grape; but he must affirm, that by one Act of Fornication, one desig-
 "nation of Adultery, Mariage was so dissolved, that he who once had
 "to do carnally with another Mans Wife, became thereby the Husband
 "of that Woman; as tho', said he, one unclean Act alone was the cause
 "of Mariage. But as he went on with his Story, "To preach these
 "things was not enough for him, unless he added other things more
 "estranged from Truth. For which he was called, saith he, be-
 "fore the Magistrates, and being brought to the Bar was found guilty,
 "and had Sentence pronounced upon him. But when, *Crucem commisit*,
 "*Heddeserved hanging*, as he charitably said, he was only silenced; being so
 "gently dealt with, because his Judges were of the Sectaries, as he was.
 And then our Author presently roars out against the Injustice of the
 Judges, and how partial they were. So apt was this Man and his Party
 to run away with any silly Stories, if they were but black enough to
 represent Protestant Ministers as very black Men. When as the true
 reason why Mr. *Hoper* was enjoined Silence was nothing else but be-
 cause he had preached against the *Habits*. But *Smith* will tell you
 another Story of him, that he was guilty of a complication of gross
 Heresies. For so he writes somewhere in the Margin of his Book:
Legat hæc Hoperus, &c. Let Hoper read this who at this time is
called into Question, and accused of divers horrid Heresies. For they
report that he defends the Heresies of the Arians, Anabaptists, and Liber-
tines. And all this is the Entertainment he gave to Mr. Haliburton in
his Epistle to him.

Page 60. b.

Observations
 out of his E-
 pistle to the
 Reader.

In his Epistle to the Reader he speaks boastingly of three Books he
 published about four Years before, that in 1546 or 47. viz. 1. His *De-*
fence of the Eucharist against the *Œcolampadians*. 2. *Of the Sacrifice*
of the Mass. And 3. *Of the Traditions of the Church*. But he doth not
 speak a word how he had himself openly recanted the two latter the
 same Year 1547. both at *London* and *Oxon*. No, that he thought fit to
 conceal; only bragged, that now in four Years no Man had answered
 them; only in Pulpits many had ignorantly inveighed against them.
 But what needed they to be answered, when he himself had don it,
 by disclaiming and confuting the two latter of them so publicly: and
 probably he would so have don the first, had he been required. But
Œcolampadius's Doctrin was not countenanced in King *EDWARD's*
 Days.

He tells his Reader, moreover, what he had printed, so what more
 he had ready for the Press, namely, Another Discourse against *P. Martyr*,
 and such as he; and another of the *Holy Eucharist*, and another of *Pur-*
gatory, and another of the *Images of Christ and the Saints*, and another
 of

of Pulling down Churches, and another of Taking away Altars and Wax-candles; besides Theological Topics; with other Things which he promised in a short time to set forth, if his present published Work was not ungrateful to his Reader. But whether these Pieces ever came abroad I cannot tell: and I suppose they did not, notwithstanding this manner of begging the Sale of this Book, by promising more to follow.

ANNO

1547.

As for the Book itself, it consists but of Three Chapters. The first to prove the Celibacy by Scripture, the second by Fathers, and the third to confute the Arguments brought by the Adversaries. The whole Book is levelled against P. Martyr, but that he might take in certain others, who had writ for or approved the Marriage of Priests, as Cranmer, Cox, Ponet, Hoper, he had a very novel way of confuting them, namely, by little short flings at them, ever and anon, in the Margin, after this manner, *Licet aliud impiè doceat Thomas Cantuariensis. Lege hoc, Coxe, & resipisce. Huc adverte oculos, Ponete, & errorem agnosce tuum. Lege, Hopere; Vide Hopere, ut scias quam fœde lapsus sis in enarrando Mandatum Dei septimum*: and many such like. But especially he is plentiful in these Marginal Memento's to P. Martyr: as, *Quid ad hæc muscites, Petre? Damnatur ergo Petrus. Quid ad hæc vel bisces, Petre? Connives ad hæc, Petre? Redde Altissimo Vota tua, O Martyr, &c.*

The Book itself.

I shall take no farther notice of this Book, except that towards the Conclusion there be base and unmannerly Reflexions upon the good Archbishop of Canterbury, relating to his Wife, and his Book: Where speaking of an Article in the Council of Nice, pretended to forbid Marriage to Priests, he thus accosts him; *Cur non lætitas hæc Synodi hujus Sacrosanctæ Verba, Thoma Cantuariensis Præsul, &c.* "Thomas Bishop of Canterbury, why do you not read these Words of the Sacred Council, that you may the sooner and readier acknowledge, how you are detained in an evident Error, while you think a Wife is lawful for you, whom you have so long abused for the fulfilling of your Lust? Do not drive our Countrymen from reading this [my] Book, as lately you have forbid that my Confutation should be read by any, which I lately wrot in English, against that ungodly Book published concerning the Eucharist. Which plainly sheweth, that you distrust your own Cause, and fear lest your Blindness and wicked Ignorance, and theirs by whose Labour that Book was patched up, be by any discovered. But what you did hath more hurt than helped your Purpose. For what wise Man will think your Doctrine true, and well defended and fortified with solid Reasons, when he should see you so earnestly and diligently labouring, and so anxiously providing, that what is writ against it, be not read? Was the Gospel of CHRIST propagated by such Arts as ye now are not ashamed to use? For with you neither Learning nor any Reasons, how ever solid and enforcing, have any weight; with you all the Sacred Councils lie contemned; the Judgments of the Ancients, however Pious and Learned, are thrown by, and the Authority of CHRIST's Church is of no value. Is it not hence, that daily so many abominable Sects arise up among you? Whence, I beseech you, are so many Arians, Anabaptists, Libertines; whose Heresies, the Report goes, John Hoper, our Countryman, defends, who so long hath been esteemed among you little less than a Prophet? Doth it not proceed from the contempt of the Church and

Reflexions in it upon the Archbishop of Canterbury.

A N N O " the Fathers? Take heed that G O D give you not up to a Reprobate
 1547. " Mind; and so by little and little ye fall into most cursed Heresies, and
 " make way for Antichrist.

Smith's Let-
 ters and fair
 Promises to
 the Archbish.

See them in
 P. Mart. De
 Vol. Monast. 2
 p. 1654.

Thus did this Man, without Fear or Wit, let fly at the most Re-
 vrend Prelate, partly to recommend himself the more at *Paris*, where he
 now was, and partly to revenge himself upon the Archbishop, who, it
 seems, had not, at his desire and promise of Submission, procured him
 a Pardon from the King, and a safe Admission into *England* out of *Scot-*
land, whither he had fled. For not long before this, for certain Mis-
 demeanors he seemed to have been committed to the Archbishops Cu-
 stody at *Lambeth*. Where he was, by the gentle Archbishop used with
 all Courtesy, and received from him many Benefits, and particularly Sa-
 tisfaction in the controverted Points. But *Smith* takes his opportunity,
 and on a sudden secretly made his escape, fled beyond Sea, and at length
 comes into *Scotland*. Thence, after some time, weary of that Country,
 or that Country of him, he address to the Archbishop his Letters from
St. Andrews, one writ in *January*, and two more in *February*; " Ac-
 " knowledging his sudden and rash departure from him, and praying that
 " His Grace would forgive the Wrongs he had don him, repenting his
 " evil Deeds, and that he would obtain for him the Kings Pardon in
 " Writing, for the transgression of his Laws in all Points, that he might
 " return home again in safety. And promising, That then he would
 " make a just Satisfaction for what he had wrot against Priests Mariage,
 " by writing a Book in *Latin* for it, and that he would willingly em-
 " brace all other Doctrins lately established. But otherwise, if he con-
 " tinued there where he was, a quarter of a Year longer, he pretended
 " he must be obliged to write against the Archbishops Book of the Sacra-
 " ment, and to compose a Discourse against all King *EDWARD's* Pro-
 " ceedings: which, he said, he could not with a good Conscience do.
 " And then vaingloriously added, That he desired to return home, not
 " so much that he wanted any good Livelihood where he was, as because
 " it would be dishonourable to the King and Realm, if he should tarry
 " there." But I do not find his Return into *England*, nor a Pardon pro-
 cured for him. Whereupon I suppose he was as good as his Word, and
 wrot against the Archbishops Book, and inserted those rude and spiteful
 Lines against him in the Book abovementioned.

Urges Justifi-
 cation by
 Faith, before
 Bp. Latimer;

In fine, to take our leave of this Man, to shew how giddy and un-
 stable he was all along, and of what a profligate Conscience, whom the
 Papists esteem one of their best Champions in those Days, I will relate
 a Passage of him, which *P. Martyr* received from one who was present
 at the Matter. When this publick Reader of Divinity, about the Year
 1537, or 1538. had understood that *Latimer*, Bishop of *Worcester*, was
 the next Day to pass through *Oxford* towards *London*, and was like to
 be present at his Lecture, he laid aside his ordinary Reading, and for that
 day read out of the Fifth Chapter to the *Romans*. And then urged most
 earnestly the Doctrine of Justification by Faith alone, without Works,
 without Merits, and termed the Faith that Justified, *Solissima & Unissi-*
ma. The Bishop, who was then one of his Auditors, after he had don,
 thanked him, and told him, he perceived he had been mistaken in him,
 and promised that he would, as occasion offered, recommend him favou-
 rably to the King. But when the same Day *Dr. Cotes*, and two Abbots
 named

named *King* and *Masse*, and some other of *Bernard* College had argued with him and charged him sharply for reading such a Lecture; the next Day he, in the same place where he had read before, revoked all he had said, and asserted quite the contrary Doctrin; and acknowledged that what he had read the Day before was don out of Fear, being astonish'd at the Presence of so Great a Man, and so unusual a multitude of Auditors, and praying, that they would attribute it to his Youth; at that time plucking off his Cap, wherby every one saw his Gray Hairs, which caused Laughter.

ANNO
1547.

And revokes
it the next
Day.

England had been largely replenisht with Bell-mettal since the Dissolution of the Monasteries: and vast Quantities of it were shipped off for Gain. Nor was the Land yet emptied of it. For now it was thought fit to restrain the Cariage of it abroad; especially having so near an Enemy of *France*, that might make use of it for Great Guns against our selves. Therefore *July 27.* a Proclamation was issued out, forbidding the Exportation of that and other Provisions, lest the Enemy might be supplied, and our own Country and Army want. It ran, "To our Customs, Comptrollers, &c. and other our Officers within the Port of *London*, and in all Creeks and Places to the said Port belonging, for certain Causes and Considerations Us, and our dearest Unkle *Edward* Duke of *Somerset*, Governor of Our Person, and of Our Realms and Dominions and Subjects Protector, and other of Our Privy Council specially moving; We strictly Charge and Command you, that ye permit, nor suffer to be caried, or conveyed out of the said Port, or any other Creeks, any manner of Bell-mettal, Butter, Cheese, Tallow, or Candles; unto such Time as by our Letters Patents sealed, ye shall especially have Our farther Commandment for the same; the Towns of *Calais* and *Boloign* and the Marches of the same, always excepted, &c. And that upon pain of 200*l.* to be levied of your Lands, Goods and Chattels. Dated at *Westminster.*" But this Proclamation would not effect the thing intended, tho' it were founded upon a Statute made in the 33 of *HENRY VIII.* The Inconvenience of having this Mettal transported being then apprehended. Which therefore occasioned another Act of Parliament in the second of this King, *Anno 1548.* That no Person should cary or Ship off beyond Sea, any Brasse, Copper, Latton, Bell-mettal, Pan-mettal, Gun-mettal, &c. whether it were clear or mixed, Tin and Lead only excepted, upon certain Forfeitures there set down.

Bell-mettal
not to be ex-
ported;
nor Butter,
Cheese, &c.

The Procla-
mation.

A N N O

1547.

C H A P. VII.

A Royal Visitation. Injunctions and Articles of Enquiry. The Bishop of Winchester's Behaviour towards it. Consultation of entering into League with the Protestants. Pensions. The Lady MARY chargeth the Protector about Religion. A Plague.

The Kings
Visitation.

Articles of
Enquiry.

N. Battely.
The Injunctions.

A Prayer en-
joined for
Peace with
Scotland.

The Commis-
sioners In-
junctions.

NOW a Royal Visitation was on foot throughout *England*, wherein this Autumn was spent, to look into and regulate the Affairs of the Church, and of Religion. Of which the *Memorials* of Archbishop *Cranmer* and other Historians speak. I shall add some Matters relating to it, omitted by them. The Actual Order for this Visitation was issued out *Sept. 1.* and during the time the Commissioners for the same were employed abroad, the King caused a Parliament to be summoned, *Nov. 4.* They caried along with them the Kings *Injunctions* printed, which are ordinarily to be seen. But these were also accompanied with a Book of Articles, printed at the same time, called, *Articles to be enquired of in the Kings Majesties Visitation.* These Articles were twice printed in the same Year by *Grafton.* They are omitted in Bishop *Sparrows* Collections. My late Reverend Friend, deceased, had one of these Books of *Injunctions* and *Articles*, and which he verily believed did once belong to Archbishop *Cranmer*; wherein are certain Corrections, as he supposed, of the said Archbishops own hand: As *High Mass* changed thus, *The Celebration of the Holy Communion: Masse and Service* changed into *Gods Service.* *Injunction 21.* expunged: The latter part of *Injunction 29.* Also *Injunctions 35. and 36.* marked to be expunged, And at the end of the Form of Bidding the Common Prayers is added a Prayer for the Success of the Duke of *Somersets* Expedition to *Scotland*, in order to the effecting of the Kings Match with the young Queen of *Scotland*; which Prayer is writ by the same Hand, and is as followeth: "Ye shall also make your hearty and effectual Prayer to Almighty GOD for the Peace of all Christian Regions, and especially, that the most joyful and perpetual Peace and Unity of this Reyalme and *Scotland* may shortly be profited and brought to pass, by the most godly and happy Mariage of the Kings Majesty and the young Queen of *Scotland*: And that it wold please Almighty GOD to ayd with Strength, Wisdom, and Power, and with his Holy Defence, all those which favour and set forward the same, and vanquish and confound all those which labour and study to the Lett and Interruption of so godly a Quiet and Unity, wherof these two Realms should take such a Benefyt and Profit: for these and all other, &c.

And besides the Kings *Injunctions*, the Commissioners gave forth particular Injunctions of their own to each Bishop. Those given to *Thomas* Bishop of *Westminster*, as I find them in the first Edition of the *Acts and Monuments*, were to this Import:

Injuncti-

Injunctions given in the Kings Majesties Visitation by us, Sir Antony Cook, Knight; Sir Jhon Godsalve, Knight; Jhon Gosnolde, Esq; Christopher Newinsone, Dr. of Law; and Jhon Madew, Dr. of Divinity, Commissioners specially appointed by the Kings Majesty, to Visit the Churches of Westminster, London, Norwich, and Ely; To the Right Reverend Father in GOD, Thomas, Bysbop of Westminster.

1547.

I*mprimis*, In consideration that above and before all things, such Ways and Means are to be sought for, wherby the People may learn to know their Duties to GOD, their Sovereign Lord, and to one another; you shall cause every Sunday Divine Service to be don and ended in every Parish Church within the City of Westminster, before Nine of the Clock the same Day, to the Intent that the Priests and the Laity of the City may resort to the Sermon to be made in their Cathedral Church; except they have a Sermon made and preached in their own Parish Churches.

Injunctions for the Bishop of Westminster A.D. 1547. first Edit.

Item, That wheras by the Ignorance of the Clergy not only GOD's Glory is greatly obscured, but also the same Clergy much disdained and evil spoken of by some of the Laity, you shall cause that every Parson, Vicar, Chantry Priest, and other Stipendary within the City of Westminster, be present at every Lecture of Divinity, to be made within the College of St. Stephen; except they, or any of them, have some reasonable Let, to be allowed and admitted by your Chancellor, Commissary, or other Officer for that purpose, or the Reader of the said Lecture.

Also you, your Chancellor, Commissary, or other exercising Jurisdiction Ecclesiastical under you, shall proceed in all kinds of Causes, *summariè & de plano, sine Figura & strepitu Judicii*: and shall give Sentence in every Cause within Four Assignations after the Term, *ad audiendum Sententiam finalem*.

All which and singular Injunctions you shall inviolably observe and keep, upon pain of the Kings Majesties Displeasure, and as you will answer for the contrary.

Given at Westminster the III. Day of September, in the fyrst Yere of the Raygne of Our Sovereign Lord EDWARD the Sixth, by the Grace of GOD King of England, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, and in Earth, of the Church of England, and also of Ireland, the Supreme Head.

Antony Coke.

Jhon Godsalve.

Jhon Gosnold.

Christopher Newinson.

Jhon Madew.

But the *Articles of Enquiry* in this Visitation being generally omitted in our Historians, I have thought them worthy to be here inserted and preserved.

ARTI-

A N N O

1547.

ARTICLES to be enquired of in the Kings Majesties Visitation.

For Bishops, Archdeacons, and Ecclesiastical Officers.

Printed by
Grafton,
1547.

First, Whether the Bishop, Archdeacons, and others, having Jurisdiction Ecclesiastical, have caused only to be sung or said the English Procession in their Cathedral Church, and other Churches of their Dioceses.

Item, Whether the Bishop, Chancellor, or Commissary, Archdeacon, or Official, be propence and light in excommunicating of Men for a little Lucre.

Item, Whether they, or any of them, for one Mans Trespasse, have taken away from the People, and the whole Parishioners, their Divine Service: As for violating and suspending the Churchyards, and such like.

Item, Whether they do take excessive Sums of Money for Consecrating again, either of the Churchyards, or of any other Ornaments, for the Use of Altars, or of Bells; where is no need of Consecration: but is Superstitious and Lucrative.

Item, Whether they, or any of them, take any great Exactions for Institutions, Inductions, Assignations of Pensions, or for any other Matter Ecclesiastical.

Item, Whether they do lightly call any Persons before them, *ex Officio*; and put them to their Purgation, without urgent Suspicion, or Infamy proved.

Item, Whether the Bishop have not preached, without Diffimulation, against the Usurped Power of the Bishop of Rome; and set furth the Kings Majesties Jurisdiction to be the only Supreme Power in all his Realms and Dominions.

Item, Whether the Bishop have personally preached in any of the Churches, or any where within his Dioceses: And how often in the Year.

Item, Whether he and his Officers have diligently executed, for their part, our late Kings Injunctions, and his Letters Missives; for a due Order in the Religion of CHRIST: And caused the same Injunctions and Letters to be diligently put in execution through his Dioceses.

Item, Whether he had learned and discreet Officers under him: that do, without any respect of Persons, punish such Crimes as appertaineth to Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction.

Item, Whether he, or any of his Officers, do take any Money, or other Gifts, to hide and cloak Adultery, or any other notorious Vice, that ought by them to be punished.

Item, If any commutation of Penance have been made, to any Pecuniary Sum. To what Purpose the same hath been converted. And what good Deeds have been don with the same. And specify the same indeed.

Item, Whether the Bishop hath such Chaplains about him, as have been able to preach the Word of GOD; and do the same purely and sincerely. And how oft in the Year. And how many they be. What be their Names.

For

For Parsons, Vicars, and Curates.

Item, Whether Persones, Vicars and Curates, and every of them, have justly and truly, without Dissimulation, preached against the usurped Power, and pretended Authority and Jurisdiction of the Bishop of Rome.

Item, Whether they have preached and declared, That the Kings Majesties Power and Authority, and Preeminence, is, within this Realm and the Dominions of the same, the most supreme and highest under GOD.

Item, Whether any Person hath by Writing, CIPHERING, Printing, Preaching or Teaching, Deed or Act, obstinately holden and stand with, to extol, set forth, maintain or defend the Authority, Jurisdiction, or Power of the Bishop of Rome, or of his See; heretofore claimed or usurped: Or by any Pretence, obstinately or maliciously invented any thing for the extolling of the same, or any Part thereof.

Item, Whether they have declared to their Parishioners the Articles concerning the Abrogation of certain superfluous Holydays; and doen their Indeavour to persuade their said Parishioners, to keep and observe the same Articles inviolably. And whether any of those abrogated Days hath sithence the said Abrogation been kept as Holy Days, contrary to the said Articles. And by whose occasion they were so kept.

Item, Whether there do remain, not taken down in their Churches, Chapels, or elsewhere, any misused Images, with Pilgrimages, Cloths, Stones, Shoes, Offerings, Kissings, Candlesticks, Trindals of Wax, and such other like. And whether there do remain, not delayed and destroyed, any Shrines, Coverings of Shrines, or any other Monuments of Idolatry, Superstition, and Hypocrisy.

Item, Whether they have not diligently taught, upon the Sundays and Holydays, their Parishioners; and especially the Youth, their *Pater noster*, the Articles of our Faith, and the Ten Commandments in *Englisb*. And whether they have expounded and declared the understanding of the same.

Item, Whether they have diligently, duely and reverently, ministred the Sacraments in their Cures.

Item, Whether such Beneficed Men, as be lawfully absent from their Dioces, do leave their Cure to a rude and unlearned Person; and not to an honest, well learned Man, and expert Curate.

Item, Whether they have provided and laid, in some convenient Places in the Church, where they have Cure, a Bible of the largest Volume in *Englisb*.

Item, Whether Parsons, Vicars, Curates, Chauntry Priests, and other Stipendaries, be common Haunters and Resorters to Taverns and Alehouses; giving themselves to excessive Drinking and Rioting, and playing at unlawful Games: and apply not themselves chiefly to the Study of Scripture, teaching of Youth, or some other honest and godly Exercise.

Item, Whether they be Resident upon their Benefices, and keep Hospitality, or no. And if they absent, and keep no Hospitality, whether they do make due Distribution among the poor Parishioners, or no.

A N N O

1547.

Item, Whether they that have yearly to dispend in Spiritual Promotions, an 100*l*. do not find competently one Scholar in either University, or at some Grammar-School. And for as many Hundred Pounds as every one of them may dispend, so many Scholars be found likewise. And what be their Names. And they so found.

Item, Whether they keep their Chancels, Rectories, Vicarages, and all other Houses appertaining to them, in due Reparations.

Item, Whether they have, every *Lent*, required their Parishoners in their Confession, to recite their *Pater noster*, the Articles of our Faith, and the Ten Commandments in *English*.

Item, Whether they have counsilled, or moved their Parishoners, rather to pray in a Tongue not known, than in *English*. Or to put their Trust in any prescribed Number of Prayers; as in saying over a Number of Beads, or other like.

Item, Whether they have preached, or caused to be preached, purely and sincerely, the Word of GOD, and the Faith of CHRIST, in every of their Cures, every Quarter of the Year once at the least: Exhorting their Parishoners to the Works commanded by Scripture; and not to Works devised by Mens Fantasies.

Item, Whether in their Sermons they have exhorted the Fathers and Mothers, Masters and Governours of Youth, to bring them up in some vertuous Study, or Occupation.

Item, Whether they have exhorted the People to Obedience to the Kings Majesty, and his Officers; and to Charity and Love one to another.

Item, Whether they have moved the People to read and hear the Scripture in *English*; and have not discouraged them from reading and hearing of the same. Such as be not prohibited so to do.

Item, Whether they have declared to their Parishoners, that they ought to know and understand the *Pater noster*, the Articles of our Faith, and the Ten Commandments in *English*, before they should receive the Blessed Sacrament of the Aulter.

Item, Whether they have taught the People the true Use of Images. Which is only to put them in remembrance of the godly and vertuous Lives of them that they do represent. And that if the People use the Images for any other Purpose, they commit Idolatry; to the great danger of their Souls.

Item, Whether they have declared, and to their Wittes and Powers have perswaded the People, that the maner and kind of Fasting in *Lent*, and other Days in the Year, is but a mere positive Law. And that therefore all Persons, having just Cause of Sicknes, or Necessity, or being Licensed by the Kings Majesty, may temperately eat all kinds of Meat, without Grudge or Scruple of Conscience.

Item, Whether your Parsons, Vicars and Curates have shewed and declared unto you, the true Use of Ceremonies. That is to say, That they be no Workers, or Works of Salvation: but only outward Signs and Tokens, to put us in remembrance of Things of higher Perfection.

Item, Whether they have permitted any Man to preach in their Cures, not being lawfully licensed thereunto: Or have refused or repelled such to preach as have been so Licensed.

Item, Whether they which have spoken and declared any thing for the setting furth of Pilgrimages, feigned Relicks, Images, or any such Superstition, have not openly recanted the same.

Item,

Item, Whether they have one Book, or Register safely kept. Wherein they write the Day of every Wedding, Christening and Burying. A N N O
1547.

Item, Whether the Kings *Injunctions* were Quarterly read, or not.

Item, Whether they have declared to their Parishoners, whether St. Marks Day in the Evens of the abrogated Holydays, should not be fasted.

Item, Whether the Knolling at the *Aves* be used.

Item, Whether they have the *Procession* Book in *English*. And in their Processions use none other Litany, but that which is set furth in the same Book. And whether they omit the same *English* Litany at any Time in their Processions. And whether they have had the same Litany as oft as they were commanded.

Item, Whether they have put out of their Church Books this Word *Papa*; and the Name and Service of *Thomas Becket*: And Prayers having *Rubrics*, containing Pardons or Indulgencies; and all other superstitious Legends and Prayers.

Item, Whether they bid the Beads, according to the Order prescribed by our late Sovereign Lord King *Henry VIII*.

Item, Whether they, or any of them, have been admitted to their Benefices by Simony, or by any other unlawful Means.

Item, Whether in their Masses they use not the Collects made for the King; and make not special mention of His Majesties Name in the same.

Item, Whether they, or any of them do keep mo Benefices, and other Ecclesiastical Promotions, than they ought to do; not having sufficient Licenses and Dispensations therunto. And how many they keep. And their Names.

ARTICLES for the Lay People.

Whether they know any Person that is a letter of the Word of GOD to be read in *English*; so that it be meekly, humbly and reverently doen, and without disturbance of the People: And by them that have Authority thereto.

Item, Whether you know any Persons, Spiritual or Temporal, which do let the Word of GOD to be preached; or that the Kings *Injunctions* should not be duely executed.

Item, Whether any Person hath obstinately and maliciously, without any just and reasonable Cause, broken the laudable Customs of the Church, commanded to be observed; or superstitiously abused the same. As in casting Holy Water upon their Beads, or other Places. And bearing about them Holy Bread; or making Crosses of Wood upon *Palm* Sunday; or Blessing with the Holy Candle: Thinking therby to put away Sins; Drive away Devils, Dreams and Fantasies: or putting Trust or Confidence of Salvation in the same Ceremonies. Whereas they be ordained only to put us in remembrance of the Benefits which we have received by CHRIST.

Item, Whether any Person, Spiritual or Temporal, keep the Church Holy day, and the Dedication Day, at any time, than is appointed by the Ordinance made in that behaulfe by the Kings Majesty.

Item, Whether *Matin* Mass, and *Even* Song be kept in due Hours in the Church.

ANNO *Item*, Whether any be Brawlers, Slaundersers, Chiders, Scoulders, and
1547. Sowers of Discord between one Person and another.

Item, Whether any be common Swearers and Blasphemers of the Name of the Lord.

Item, Whether any use lewd, unchast, dishonest, and filthy Communication, Songs or Ballads.

Item, Whether any do use to common, jangle, or talk in the Church, at the time of Divine Service, Preaching, Reading, or declaring of the Word of GOD.

Item, Whether any do obstinately keep and defend any erroneous Opinion, contrary to the Word of GOD, and Faith of CHRIST.

Item, Whether any commit Adultery, Fornication, or Incest; or be common Bawds, or Receivers of such naughty Persons.

Item, Whether you know any that use Charmes, Sorcery and Inchauntments, Witchcraft, Soothsaying; or any other wicked Craft, invented by the Devil.

Item, Whether you know any to be married within the Degrees prohibited by the Law of GOD; or that be separated and divorced without any just Cause, approved by the Law of GOD. And whether any such have married again.

Item, Whether the Church, Pulpit, and other necessary Things, appertaining to the same, be sufficiently repaired.]

Item, Whether you know any to have made privy Contracts of Matrimony, not calling two or more therunto.

Item, Whether any have married solempnely without Banes asking.

Item, Whether you know any that have taken upon them the Execution of any Mans Testament; or be admitted to the Administration of the Goods of the Dead; which do not duely distribute the same Goods, according to the Trust committed unto them: And especially, such Goods as were given, and bequeathed, and appointed to be distributed among the poor People; repairing of Highways; finding of poor Scholars; or Mariage of poor Maids. To what Uses and Intents all such Gifts and Bequests of Cattayl, Mony or other Things, as in time past were made, for the finding of Tapers, Candles or Lamps; be now imployed. And whether to be embecilled and withholden. And by whom.

Item, Whether there be any Persons commonly infamed of Adultery, Fornication, common Swearing, Blaspheming the Name of GOD, Drunkenness, Symony, or other notorious Crimes; whom the Bishop, Archdeacon, or other the Ordinaries, for Favour, have not corrected accordingly: Altho' they have been sundry times presented, and detected in Visitation, or otherwise lawfully accused.

Item, Whether there be any other *Primers* used by them that do not understand *Latin*, than the *English Primer*, set forth by the Kings Majesty. And whether they that understand *Latin* do use any other than the *Latin Primer*, set forth by like Authority.

Item, Whether there be any other *Grammar*, taught in any School within the Realm, than that which is set forth by the Kings Majesty.

Item, Whether they know any Alienation of Lands, Tenements, Jewels, or Goods, pertaining to the Church.

Whether they be Resident upon their Chauntries.

Item, Whether they be aiding and assisting the Parson or Vicar of the Church that they be of, in the Ministration of the Sacraments and Divine Service accordingly.

Item, Whether they keep and perform all such Doales and Distributions to the Poor, and other Deeds of Charity, as they are bound by their Foundations to do.

Item, Whether they be of ill Name, Fame, or dishonest Conversation: Fighters, Swearers, Drunkards, or Incontinent Livers.

Item, What Benefices, and how many they have, besides their Chauntries. And by what Title they do keep the same.

This Visitation, if we be desirous to know how it was taken, was generally very acceptable to most of the Lay-people, and grievous only to the Clergy: Who could not endure to be unsettled from their old Ways and Courses in the Observances of Religion. One, who went with the Visitors for their Preacher, and was a Visitor himself, and well observed Matters, and Persons in the Parts where he came, perceived how the simple vulgar Sort were glad; and conformably willing to hear the pure Word of GOD, and obediently to receive the Kings Injunctions, training them to the same. And so they were like to continue, in case their ordinary Curates and Ministers had not been Triflers and Hinderers thereof, and not been seduced and taught by Seditious Ear-whisperers. Nor were even the Priests, all of them, these Triflers and Hinderers, or sinister Resisters. For sundry Ministers and Curates, which he knew, were honest, and diligently well-willing towards the Truth, in divers Shires, where he waited upon the Kings Visitors; especially in *Lincolnshire* and other Shires of that Diocese. And he reckoned, that the honest Sort therabouts would more and more encrease by the industrious Ministry, and uniform Concurrence in wholesome Doctrine of the Bishop [*Holbeck*,] and Dean of *Lincoln* [*Dr. Taylor*.] And the rather, by the helping Forwardness of that devout Woman of GOD, the Dutcheſs of *Suffolk*.

How this Visitation was resented.

John Old.
Prologue before his Translation of the Paraphrase to the Epistle to the *Ephesians*.

But there was another sort of Priests now taken notice of, who for the safety of their Pelf and Promotions, employed their Studies, and forecasting Policies, to please all Parties. These were they, by whose Occasion the People halted between two Opinions, not knowing, what was best for them to follow, whether GOD or *Baal*. "These were, "as the beforementioned Person spake, the Messengers of *Laodicea*: "whose Works were neither cold nor hot, but betwixt both, smelling "neither too much of the Gospel, nor too little of Popery. But yet "they affected to be called Favourers of the Truth, and would fain "have GOD's Corn come up; but yet they dared to sow none any longer than the World, as they said, *made fair Weather*.

The Dispositions of some Priests.

But of the Clerical sort, that most spighted this Visitation, *Gardiner*, Bishop of *Winchester*, made the greatest Figure. He wrote a Letter to Sir *John Godsalve*, one of the Visitors, signifying his Resolution not to comply

Bishop of *Winton* refuses to submit to the Orders of the Visitors.

A N N O 1747. comply with their Orders; pretending that he could not do it upon the Account of Honesty and Truth: "Which were more dear to him, he said, than all the Possessions of the Realm: and in which he took such Pleasure and Comfort, that he would never leave them for any Respects. And that if he might play the last Part of his Life well, to depart from the Bishopric without offending GOD's Law, or the Kings Laws, he should think the Tragedy of his Life well spent." The Letter is in the MS. Library of *Benet College*, and is transcribed

P. II. Collect.
p. 112.

Orders certain Proxies to receive the Visitors.

in the Bishop of *Sarums* History.

But notwithstanding this his declared Aversion to the Visitation (which he also laboured by divers Letters to the Protector, to obstruct) whether he slipped away from it voluntarily, or was sent for up by the Council; he comes to *London*, and there he intended to stay. But that he might give as little Offence as might be, he left his Officers as his Proxies, in his Absence, with Command to shew all Submission to the Commissioners in his [the Bishops] Name. So before the Visitation in his Diocese, (which was there, about *October*) he went up from his House at *Walton*: And hearing the Visitation should be kept soon after, willed *John Seton*, one of his Chaplains, to do his Duty in receiving of them, and obediently to do all such Things as by them should be commanded. And he left Order with *John Cook*, his Register, whom he had appointed to appear by Proxy in his Absence, by vertue thereof to go and receive the Visitors at *Chichester*, without the Diocese of *Winton*. Which he did; and conducted and waited on them into the said Diocese; and appeared for the Bishop in the Chapter-House of the Cathedral Church; and there exhibiting the said Proxy, gave an Oath, *In Animam Episcopi*, of Obedience to the Kings Majesty, as Supreme Head of the Church of *England*, and to renounce the Bishop of *Romes* usurped Power and Jurisdiction. The Bishop also required this his Proxy, and commanded his Chancellor, and other his Officers, to attend on the Kings said Visitors, and to see them with all Reverence received and obeyed, and their Commandments executed accordingly. Which things were truly performed. And at *Alton*, when the Bishop was going up to the Council, a Priest of the Diocese repaired to him, to consult what he should do at the Visitation then at hand: Whom the Bishop willed to obey all such things as should be commanded by the said Visitors. And likewise at *Kingston* he gave the like Charge to the Curate there. All this the Bishop, upon his Departure, gave in Charge in his Diocese for Obedience and Submission, how little soever he liked the Visitation. But as for himself, having been before the Council about these Proceedings of the King, which he shewed no good liking to, he was committed to the *Fleet*.

A Poem now set forth, in 1 Poor

Indeed Bishop *Gardiner* was the chief Champion that now appeared for the *Roman Catholic Cause*; who did exceedingly bestir himself against making any Alterations in Religion, both by his Letters and Influence with the Protector and others of the Court, and by certain Books which he wrot, and by this present Opposition that he made to the Proceedings of the King in this Visitation. This Temper of *Gardiner* the Gospellers well enough knew, and he wanted not for their Good Will expressed towards him, in Pamphlets, and especially Ballads and Rhymes which they made against him: Of which he complained to the Protector. Among the rest there was published a very unlucky one, Lampoon-wise, put

put forth somewhat before this Year, not without sharpness of Wit and Fancy, pretending to take the part of the Papists against the Preachers, that now began to preach the Gospel plainly, and to declaim against the the Papal Superstitions. It was intituled, *A Pore Help: The Buckler and Defence of Holy Mother Kyrke*. It began, *Will none in all this Land step forth and take in hand, these Fellows to withstand, &c.* Setting upon those, and seemingly very angry with them that spake against the old Rites of the Church, and specially the Sacrament of the Altar, and that said, "That CHRIST could not all day be kept within a Box, nor yet "set in the Stocks, nor hidden like a Fox, nor be Prisoner under Locks, "nor be cloathed with powdered Ermin, nor breed stinking Vermin, &c. The Poet pretended also to stand up stiffly for the said Bishop, who had lately, it seems, published something in Rhime against the Gospellers, whose Name he veiled under the Denomination of, *An able Clerk of late, and Wortby in Estate*. And described him thus, *He hath been a Pardoner, and also a Gardiner; He hath been a Vitailer, a Lordly Hospitaller, A Noble Teacher, and so so a Preacher. The Germain his Man was hanged, What then?* Germain Gardiner was his Secretary, and executed for High Treason under King HENRY. A Glance is also given in this Ballad upon one *Miles Hogberd*, an Hosier, who had wrot a silly Book in Rhime against the Protestants. But I refer the Reader to the *Repository*, if he be disposed to read this Ballad.

ANNO
1547.

A more serious Book was writ against him by *John Hoper*, and printed in 4to. this Year at *Zurich*, in *English*, Intituled, *An Answer unto my Lord of Winchesters Book*, intituled, "A Detection of the Devils Sophistry, "wherewith he robbeth the unlearned People of the true Belief in the "most B. Sacrament of the Altar. He dedicated his Book to his Adversary, the said Bishop beginning his Epistle thus, "Your Book, my Lord, "intituled, *A Detection*, &c. was delivered to me in *Zurich*, the 30. of "April last: The which I have with leisure and diligence perused, "marked your Intention, and how ye fence a wrong Opinion with many "fair Words, and divers Reasons, &c. It was dated, *Tiguri, Sept. 9. 1547.*

I.
Hoper writeth
against Win-
chester.

In August there was a Consultation about the Expediency of entring into League with the German Protestants. Which I make no doubt the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and other Favourers of the Gospel, did press, there having been some Agents sent thence hither but the last Year. This occasioned Sir *William Paget*, Secretary of State, a Wise Man, and well exercised in the Matters of the *English* State, to draw up his Thoughts, prepared for the Council, to be deliberated upon by them, and for Resolution to be taken in these Affairs. Wherin was shewed, the ill Condition of *England* at the first coming of King EDWARD to the Crown, and the uncertain State his Father left his Kingdoms in. It was as follows, as I found it in a Volume of the *Cotton* Library.

Consultation
about joining
with the Ger-
man Prote-
stants.

"The Cause of this Consultation proceedeth of a Care for the Honor
"and Surety of the Kings Majesty and his Realms, by the Continuance
"and Preservation of his Policy, and of his Victory.
"This Care cometh upon this, that we see apparently the *French* King
"immeasurably desirous to redubb his great Dishonour sustained at the
"Kings hands in the last Wars, by the loss of *Boloign*. And the Bishop of
"Rome with all his Members, ardently inflamed to recover again his u-
"surped

Pagets Con-
sultation.
Titus, B. 2.
p. 91.

ANNO 1547. "surped Power and Tyranny over this Realm : And the Emperor with
 "all his Power ready to serve the Bishops Turn ; partly moved by a
 "corrupt Conscience, and partly by Ambition to reign alone, besides old
 "Grudges and Displeasures.

"For the defence of these two Things, which stand us so much in
 "hand, it is necessary to make us strong both at Home and Abroad.
 "At Home, by an Establishment of an Unanimity among our selves, and
 "by gathering of Riches, as much as may be conveniently, and with
 "doing some things with little charge above use. And Abroad, by
 "knitting unto us the most sincere and surest Friends we can get, to join
 "with us to the effect that we desire.

"For the Working of that which is to be don at Home, We have
 "Commodity enough, and shall have Time sufficient, if it be followed
 "out of hand.

"As for Friendship Abroad, if that either the *French* King might be
 "induced to leave *Boloign* upon some honourable Condition, or the Em-
 "peror to leave the Bishop of *Rome*, by reformation of his Conscience,
 "to be moved therto both by GOD's Word, and by a certain and great
 "Honour and Gain, that should therby grow unto him ; the one of these
 "were best to serve, or turn against the other : But we see either of
 "them so affected in his Opinion : And by daily experience know so
 "little Faith to be given to any of their Promises ; when the breach of
 "the same may serve to their Purpose, as We have cause to be at the
 "Point of Despair, to find any Friendship in either of them longer than
 "they may not chuse.

"The Friendship of the *Venetian* might somewhat serve our turn :
 "For they be very Rich and Strong, both by Sea and by Land, and have
 "Commodity enough to annoy either the *French* King or the Emperor,
 "if any of them would disturb us : And if the fear of the *Turk*, by means
 "of the *French* King, let them not, they are to be thought easy to be
 "moved to enter League with us. For they fear exceedingly the Em-
 "perors desire of a Monarchy. And yet being well enclined, as it is
 "said, to join in League with us, would do no harm to our purpose, if
 "the matter might be mightily advanced.

After the *Venetians*, there resteth only the League of the Protestants :
 "Wherin, beside the *Almains*, we recount *Denmark*, *Norway*, and *Sweden*.
 "These Men being now presently in the War, and We in Peace, if We
 "should join with them, it shall not only somewhat impair our Means
 "to wax Rich, but also of our dissembling Friends, the Emperor and the
 "*French* King, make peradventure our open Enemies, and bearing them
 "both, with the Bishop of *Rome* at once in our Necks, if not now pre-
 "sently, yet when they have, all Three joined together, subdued the
 "Protestants. For it may be thought, that if we do join with the Prote-
 "stants, the *French* King shall find some ready way at the Emperors
 "hand, altho' not effectual in the end, yet for the time, by practice of
 "Mariage, or otherwise, pleasant enough to feed the *French* King with-
 "al. And this Confederation may follow upon the Emperors only dis-
 "pleasure against us ; tho' he be in no extremity, in case we join imme-
 "diately with the Protestants.

"On the other side, If we join not with the Protestants, thence it
 "may be thought, that whether the Emperor have the Gain or the Loss,
 "that

“ that the *French* King will join with the Protestants : Fearing (if the *ANNO*
 “ Emperor have the Gain) the loss of *Savoy* and *Piedmont*, and shall 1547.
 “ well see the Emperors Gain bought with so great a Loss, as there shall
 “ remain little to defend him, being somewhat now refreshed ; the *Turk*
 “ coming in on the other side, peradventure with all that he can make ;
 “ and by these means overtreating the Emperor, and so leaving us little
 “ help at his hands, and none at the Protestants ; but rather an Enmity,
 “ because we forsook being allyed, entred into a certain practice with
 “ them, he shall make himself a strong Enemy for us. If the Emperor
 “ have the Overthrow, then is it like we will the rather join with the
 “ Protestants, and staying the *Turk*, and having little cause to doubt the
 “ Bishop of *Rome*, and no cause to fear us, permitting to us peaceably,
 “ for the time, *Bulloign*, &c. he will convert his whole Power, with all
 “ the Power of *Almain*, and no small help of *Italy*, first upon the State
 “ of *Milain*, (Work surely for the Emperor) and consequently turn up-
 “ on us.

“ So as joyn we, or joyn we not with the Protestants, We see what
 “ is to be looked for at the *French* Kings hands. Win the Emperor,
 “ or Lose he, and joyn we, or joyn we not with the Protestants, We see
 “ what is to be feared of the Emperor, if he win : The worst is, upon
 “ the two Occasions, to have them both at once wonned together to be
 “ our Enemies : Or the one overcoming, the other to be our Enemy
 “ with the Power of both, having first overcome the other. The best
 “ way is both to keep them from agreeing, and from being any of them
 “ any greater. If the Emperor overcome not the *Almains*, he is not like
 “ to be greater.

“ To bring both these to pass, the best way is to agree the Emperor
 “ and the *Almains*, by all the means possible. And this don should be a
 “ great stay to and being don by us should be a great
 “ Surety to our selves.

“ If this cannot be brought to pass, then remain we shall in our for-
 “ mer Fear and Doubt ; that for both these Quereles, for the Pope and
 “ *Boloign*, or for the one of them, we shall have both these Princes at
 “ the last, or the Power of them both at once upon us. And as it shall
 “ be necessary, out of all Question, for the greatest part of our Strength,
 “ to work undelayedly our Strength at Home ; so it is to be considered,
 “ whether it be better to have them both at the end upon us, without any
 “ Friend at all, or both upon us with such Friends as we may make
 “ now with little Charge.

“ For the following of the best way, the first part is generally to open
 “ your Intent with Moderation to the Emperors Embassador, and by him
 “ to learn, as soon as may be, the Emperors Disposition to give Ear to the
 “ same. Which also may be don by our common Embassador with the
 “ Emperor, or to both, if it be thought good. If the Emporor mislike
 “ not the Matter, then shall it be well don, upon knowledge therof, to
 “ send an Expreß Man, not unagreeable to any of both the Parts, with
 “ such Means of Reconciliation, as may best be devised, to move them to
 “ the same, with the preservation of their Honor.

“ In the Consultation, whether it were better to join with the Prote-
 “ stants, and to have of them such a Friend, as we may, rather than
 “ none at all, it is to be considered, with what Power they may, at

ANNO " their worst, serve you withal, and what at their best, both by Land
 1547. " and by Sea; and how far forth also we may be entred already with
 " them.

William Paget.

Order for the
 payment of
 pensions;

By a Procla-
 mation.

In *September* appeared another Point of the Honesty of the Kings Policy, in taking care of the Payment of his Fathers Debts: Unless some will rather look upon it as a Device to come to the knowledge of what Pensioners were alive, and what dead. The 18th of the said Month the King issued a Proclamation to be publiht in every County about the Payment of Pensions, Annuities, and Corrodies, granted by his Father, or by some Abbots or Priors: That wheras before they were used to be paid by the Receivers of the Court of *Augmentations*, the Pensioners were henceforth to receive them yearly at the hand of the Treasurer of the said Court, or of his Deputies. And this Order to take effect at *Michaelmas* next. And it was appointed, for the ease of the Pensionaries and others, of what House or Houses soever they were, to receive their Pensions within the Shire, where they dwelt, at the hand of the said Treasurer or his Deputies. It was also commanded, that all having these Pensions, Annuities, and Corrodies, should appear on such a Day and Place, before the said Treasurers Deputies, who were sent down to take notice of their Patents and Grants, which they were to bring with them, and to exhibit: To the intent the said Treasurer might be the better ascertained of their States, and of the Sums of Money he was to appoint to his said Deputies; for the Contentation of their said Pensions. And they were to repair to the place where the Kings next Audit should be kept within the Shire, for the receipt of their Pensions. And if any appeared not in Person, to send a Certificate in Writing, under the hands of two Justices of Peace, or one Justice and one Gentleman, declaring the same to be living, and in lawful State to receive his or their Pensions.

Respects from
 the Court to
 the Lady
 Mary.

To the Lady *Mary*, the Kings eldest Sister, who was now at *Beaulieu*, all Respects from the Court were shewn. She had lately desired two Knights Rooms in *Winfor*; the one to take place presently, the other the next Audience. Which was granted her by the Lord Protector. And in *October* she sent a Letter to *Paget*, the Comptroler, that one *George Briggs*, whose Wife brought the Letter to him, might be now placed, and have his Fee accordingly. Towards *Christmas* the King invited her most courteously to keep her Holydays with him, together with his other Sister, the Lady *Elizabeth*. Yet if she were indisposed in her Health, as she had lately been, or if it were any otherwise Inconvenient for her to come now, the King very obligingly left it to her Liberty, and invited her at any other Time, when she pleased herself, to resort to him. This Invitation of his by Writing was signed by divers Lords of the Council; as may be seen by this Transcript of it ensuing:

The King to
 the Lady
 Mary, invi-
 ting her to
 Court.
 10th C. 10.

Right dear, and right intirely beloved Sister, We grete you well. And wheras our right dear, and right intirely beloved Sister, the Lady *Elizabeth*, having made Suit to Visit us, hath sithence her coming desired to remain with us during all this Christmas Holydays, like as We cannot but take this her Request in thankful part, so would We be glad, and should

*should think Us very well accompanied, if We might have You also with A N N O
Us the same time. But because the Time is now very short, and We be
not well assured in what state of Health you be, We pray you no otherwise
to take this Journey upon you, but with such consideration of your Health
as is meet. And therefore if for want of the same, you may not conveni-
ently repair hither before these Holydays, We pray you to do that shall best
stand with your Quiet and Health. And at any other Time, when both
the Time and your Health shall better suffer, We will be right glad to see
you.*

1547.

R. Ryche, Canc.
Arundel.

W. Saint John.

J. Russel.

T. Wentworth.

A. Wyngfeld.

Rich. Southwell.

Yet she took upon her to censure the Kings Proceedings, and carried herself with some Haughtiness of Stomac toward the Counsellors for the present Management of Affairs. Indeed the stiff Papists, such as Bishop Gardiner, were very much offended to see the Reformation proceed, as it did, under this good King: And they gave out, that herein the Kings Ministers that forwarded these Proceedings, brake the late King HENRY's Will, and were not faithful to their Trust. And they set on the Lady MARY (who was of her own Nature forward enough to it) to charge these things home to the Counsellors. And to this purpose she wrote somewhat sharply to the Protector: Charging him and the other Executors of King HENRY's last Testament, that they did not faithfully fulfil it by their present Doings and Proceedings. She told him, That the most part of the Realm, through a naughty Liberty and Presumption, were now brought into such a Division, as if they who were the Executors of the Kings last Will, went not about to bring them to that Stay, that the King their late Master left them in, they would forsake all Obedience, unless they had their own Will and Fantasy. And then it would follow, that the King should not be well served; and that other Realms would have them of this Realm in Obloquy and Derision; and that not without just cause, as she said. She added, That there was a godly Order and Quietness left by the King, their late Master and her Father, in this Realm, at the time of his Death; and that the Spirituality and Temporality of the whole Realm did not only, without compulsion, fully assent to his Doings and Proceedings, specially in Matters of Religion; but also in all kind of Talk; wherof she herself could partly witness. The present Proceedings she esteemed nothing but *Fantasy and Newfangledness.*

She censures
the Proceed-
ings.

Writes to the
Protector.

The Protector nettled somewhat with this her Letter, in Answer told her, "That neither he, nor any other of the Executors, as he knew of, would willingly neglect the full execution of every Jot of King Henry's Will, as far as it might stand with the King, their present Masters Honor and Surety. And otherwise he was sure, that her Grace would not have it take place. They doubted not, but that their Doings therin, and in all other Things committed to their Charge, should be such as they should be able to answer to the whole World, both in Honor and Discharge of their Consciences. That her Words sounded so ill, that he could not persuade himself, but she was set on by some

The Prote-
ctors Answer
and Vindica-
tion of the
Kings Coun-
sellors.

ANNO 1547. " uncharitable and malicious Persons: of which sort there were, he
 " said, too many. That they were not so simple to weigh and re-
 " gard the Sayings of evil disposed Persons, nor the Doings of other
 " Countries, as to neglect their Duty to GOD, to their Sovereign and
 " native Country. And that, Thanks be to GOD, such had been the
 " Kings Proceedings, their young Noble Master, that all his faithful
 " Subjects had more cause to render to GOD their hearty Thanks for the
 " manifold Benefits shewed to the King, and to the People and Realm,
 " since the first Day of his Reign to that Hour, than to be offended with
 " it: and to judge and think that GOD was contented and pleased with
 " them, the Kings Ministers; who sought nothing but the true Glory
 " of GOD, and the Surety of the Kings Person, with the Quietness and
 " Wealth of his Subjects.

" That it was so far from a godly and quiet Order, which was left by
 " the late King, and that the Spirituality and Temporality all agreed and
 " assented to that Kings Doings and Proceedings, that, as she might call
 " to remembrance, great were the Labours and Travails that King had,
 " before he could reform some of those stiffnecked *Romanists* and *Papists*,
 " that they caused his Subjects to rise and rebel against him. That some
 " of them, viz. The *Romanists* Sect, within his Realm, as well as with-
 " out, conspired oftentimes His Majesty's Death. Which was manifestly
 " and often proved, to the Confusion of some of their privy Assistants.
 " He appealed then to her, whether all the Spirituality or Temporality
 " did fully consent to his godly Orders. He put it to her, as well
 " knowing it, if that King did not depart this Life before he had fully
 " finished such Orders as he minded to have established among his Peo-
 " ple, if Death had not prevented him. And that it was most true,
 " that no kind of Religion was perfected at his Death, but left all un-
 " certain; most likely to have brought in Parties and Divisions, if GOD
 " had not helped. He and others could witness, what Regret and Sor-
 " row their late Master had at the time of his Departure, for that he
 " knew Religion was not established, as he purposed to have done: And
 " a great many knew, and so did he, what that King would have done
 " further in it, if he had lived". The Letter is of that Import, and
 " openeth so much the Conclusion of that Princes Reign, and his mature
 " and last Mind in Religion, that it deserves to stand upon Record to Po-
 " sterity; and I had entred it here from a *Cotton* Volume, but find it don
 " already by the Right Reverend Author of the *History of the Reformation*,
 " among the *Collections*.

Page 115.

A Plague.

A Proclama-
 tion about it.

The Plague was this Year in sundry Places, and among others in the
 City of *Westminster*, where the King now was, and a great Resort of the
 Nobility and Gentry, a Parliament being now sitting. Therefore, that
 as much Care as could be might be taken, against the spreading of it,
 and that Infected Houses might be known, and so avoided, the King
 therefore, Nov. 18. set forth by Proclamation, a Charge and Command to
 all Persons, inhabiting as well within the said City, as in other Places
 adjoining to the same, in whose Houses the said Infection reigned, or
 hereafter should reign, that they forthwith set forth a Cross upon their
 Street Doorst Whereby the Kings Subjects might know that the Infection
 was, or had been in their Houses: And moreover, That no manner of
 Person, in whose Houses the said Infection was, or hath been, or had
 resorted

resorted to any such infected Person, by the space of three Months last past, should from thenceforth repair to the Court, or suffer any of the Attendants of the said Court, or other Gentlemens Servants, whose Masters attended the said Court, to enter their House where the said Infection of the Plague had been; upon pain of his high Indignation and Displeasure, and farther to be punished, &c.

ANNO

1547.

CHAP. VIII.

A Parliament. Communion in both Kinds enacted. The Act for Chauntries. The Abuse thereof. Other Acts. Letters and Disputations between Bishop Gardiner and Martin Bucer. They and Ales meet together in Germany.

THIS first Parliament of King EDWARD sat November 4. and continued sitting till December 24. following. When among other memorable Things which they did, viz. when they had enjoined the Sacrament to be received in both Kinds, and that the Priests should give notice to the People as often as it should be celebrated, and some such Things mentioned in the Act; the King had certain Bishops, and other learned Divines sitting, to draw an Office in *English*, to be used for that purpose: Which being finished was called, *The Communion*; and is printed in Bishop Sparrows Collections. This Communion Book was set abroad the beginning of March, with the Kings Proclamation before it, dated March 8. And the Privy Council sent their Letters missive to all the Bishops, together with the said Communion Book, to be distributed to them for their use against Easter next. Which Letters were dated March 13. and Signed by the Archbishop of Canterbury, Rich L. Chancellor, L. St. Johns, L. Russel, L. Arundel, Sir Ant. Wyngfeld, Sir W. Petre, Sir Edw. North, Sir Edw. Wotton. Therin it was said, "How the King, upon that Act of Parliament had caused divers grave and learned Prelates, and other Men learned in the Scriptures, to assemble together; and that they, after long Conference, with deliberate Advice, agreed upon that Order to be used in all Places, in the Distribution of the Holy Sacrament." But the Issue of this was, That there arose a marvellous Schism and variety of Factions, in celebrating the Communion Service: Some followed the Kings Proceedings; others admitted them, but did patchingly use but some part of the Book. But many carelessly contemned all, and would exercise their old wonted Popish Mass.

The Communion in both Kinds established.

The Communion Book.

Fox p. 1184.

How observed.

The Words of this Law for Communicating in both Kinds, being so properly and well expressed, and the penning thereof seeming to me to have been don by the Archbishop himself, it may not be amiss to take some particular notice of it here. The whole Act was made for three

An Act procured by Cranmer for the Sacrament.

Intents,

A N N O 1547. Intents, 1. For the checking and restraint of many, who, because the Sacrament had been so abused in former Times, to Superstition and Idolatry, began now to speak very Irreverently of the Sacred Ordinance, giving it many rude and ridiculous Names. Such, upon Information, were to be punished by Fine and Imprisonment. 2. To bring in a due use of this Sacrament among the People, empowering them to receive the Cup as well as the Wafer, according to the Institution of Scripture. 3. To break off that unwarrantable Practice brought into the Church in the corrupt Times of it, for the Priest to communicate by himself. And it is to be noted of this Act, that it was made before the Law for the abolishing of the Mass. This remarkable Act, both of *Cranmer's* procuring and drawing up too, as I conjecture, began thus:

"The King, perceiving that many arrogant and ignorant Men do pervert many things, well and godly Instituted; and namely in the most comfortable Sacrament of the Body and Blood of our Saviour *JESUS CHRIST*, commonly called, *The Sacrament of the Altar*, and in Scripture, *The Supper and Table of the Lord*, *The Communion and Partaking of the Body and Blood of Christ*. Which Sacrament was instituted of no less Author than our Saviour, both *GOD* and Man, when at his Last Supper among his Apostles, he did take the Bread into his Holy Hands, and did say, *Take you and Eat: This is my Body, which is given and broken for you*. And taking up the Chalice, or Cup, did give Thanks and say, *This is my Blood of the New Testament, which is shed for you and for many, for the remission of Sins*. That whensoever we should do the same, we should do it *In the remembrance of him, and to declare and set forth his Death*, and most glorious Passion, *until his Coming*. Of which Bread whosoever eateth, or, of the which Cup whosoever drinketh, unworthily, eateth and drinketh condemnation and judgment unto himself, making no difference of the Lords Body. The Institution of which Sacrament being ordained by *CHRIST*, as is aforesaid, and the said Words spoken of it here before rehearsed, being of eternal, infallible, and undoubted Truth; yet the said Sacrament hath been of late marvailously abused by the said Persons, contemning the whole Thing for certain Abuses heretofore committed therein; reviling it, and disputing ungodly of that most Holy Mystery, and calling it by vile and unseemly words: For reformation wherof, be it enacted, &c.

"And forasmuch as it is more agreeable, both to the first Institution of the said Sacrament of the most precious Body and Blood of our Saviour *JESUS CHRIST*, and also more conformable to the common use and practice both of the Apostles and of the Primitive Church, by the space of five hundred Years and more, after *CHRIST's* Ascension, that the said Holy Sacrament should be ministred to all Christian People, under both kinds of Bread and Wine, than under the Form of Bread only;

"And also, it is more agreeable to the first Institution of *CHRIST*, and to the Usage of the Apostle, and the Primitive Church; that the People, being present, should receive the same with the Priest, than that the Priest should receive it alone;

"Therefore be it enacted by our Sovereign Lord the King, with the consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons of
"this

“ this present Parliament assembled, and by the Authority of the same, A N N O
 “ That the said most blessed Sacrament be hereafter commonly delivered 1547.
 “ and ministred unto the People, within this Church of *England* and
 “ *Ireland*, and other the Kings Dominions, under both the Kinds, that is
 “ to say, of Bread and Wine, except Necessity otherwise require: And also,
 “ That the Priest which shall minister the same, shall at the least one
 “ Day before, exhort all Persons which shall be present, likewise to re-
 “ fort and prepare themselves to receive the same : And when the Day
 “ prefixed cometh, after a godly Exhortation by the Minister made,
 “ (wherin shall be further expressed the Benefit and Comfort promised
 “ to them, which worthily receive the said Holy Sacrament, and danger
 “ and Indignation of God threaten’d to them, which shall presume to
 “ receive the same unworthily; to the end, that every Man may try
 “ and examine his own Conscience, before he shall receive the same)
 “ the said Minister shall not, without a lawful Cause, deny the same to
 “ any Person, that will devoutly and humbly desire it, &c.

Another Act in this Sessions that related to Religion, was that which gave the King all the Colleges, Free Chappels, Chauntries, Hospitals, Fraternities or Guilds, which were not in the actual and real Possession of the late King HENRY VIII. to whom the Parliament in the 37th Year of his Reign, had made a Grant of such like Colleges, Free Chauntries, &c. nor in the Possession of the present King. By vertue of which Act, there accrued to the King all the Lands, Tenements, Rents, and other Hereditaments, which had been imployed for the finding or maintenance of any Aniversary or *Obit*, or any Light or Lamp in any Church or Chappel. And there were two good Causes assigned for this Gift to the King. The one was, for the dissolving of Superstition, which these Colleges and Chauntries were found to be great occasions of. The other, for the founding of Schools of Learning, and providing for the Poor; For so the Preamble of the Act gives us to understand, “ That
 “ a great part of Superstition and Errors in Christian Religion had been
 “ brought into the Minds and Estimation of Men, by reason of the Ig-
 “ norance of their very true and perfect Salvation, through the Death of
 “ JESUS CHRIST, and by devising and fantasizing vain Opinions of Pur-
 “ gatory and Masses Satisfactory, to be don for them that were departed.
 “ The which Doctrin and vain Opinion, by nothing more was main-
 “ tained and upholden than by the Abuse of Trentals, Chaunteries, and
 “ other Provisions made for the Continuance of the said Blindness and
 “ Ignorance. And secondly, That the Alteration and Amendment of the
 “ same, and the converting them to good and godly Uses; (as in erect-
 “ ing Grammar Schools for the Education of Youth in Vertue and God-
 “ liness, and for augmenting of the Universities, and better Provision
 “ for the Poor and Needy) could not in that present Parliament be pro-
 “ vided and conveniently don; nor could not, nor ought to be commit-
 “ ted to any other Persons than to the Kings Highness.

“ But this Act was soon after grossly Abused, as the Act in the former Kings Reign for dissolving Religious Houses was. For tho’ the Public Good was pretended thereby (and intended too, I hope) yet private Men, in truth, had most of the Benefit, and the King and Commonwealth, the state of Learning, and the Condition of the Poor, left as they were before, or worse. Of this great Complaints were made by honest Men.

And

The Act for
Chauntries to
be dissolved.

The Abuse of
this Act ther-
by.

ANNO
1547.

And some of the best and most conscientious Preachers reprov'd it in the greatest Auditories, as at *Pauls Cross*, and before the King himself. *Thomas Lever*, a Fellow, and afterwards Master of *St. Johns College* in *Cambridge*, in a Sermon before the King, in the Year 1550. shew'd, "How those that pretended, that (beside the abolishing of Superstition) with the Lands of Abbies, Colleges, and Chauntries, the King should be enriched, Learning maintained, Poverty relieved, and the Commonwealth eased, purposely had enriched themselves: Setting abroad encloistered Papists, to give them Livings by giving them Pensions, yea, and thrusting them into Benefices, to poison the whole Commonwealth, for the Resignation of those Pensions: and so craftily conveying much from the King, from Learning, from Poverty, and from all the Commonwealth, unto their own private Advantage. Thus he.

Schools
wronged.

And bringing in Grammar Schools, which these dissolved Chantries were also to serve for the Founding of, he told the King plainly, "Your Majesty hath given and received, by Act of Parliament, Colleges, Chauntries, and Guilds, for many good Considerations, and especially, as appears in the same Act, for erecting of Grammar Schools, to the education of Youth in Vertue and Godliness, to the further augmenting of the Universities, and better Provision of the Poor and Needy. But now many Grammar Schools, and much charitable Provision for the Poor, be taken, sold, and made away: To the great Slander of you and your Laws, to the utter Discomfort of the Poor, to the grievous Offence of the People, to the most miserable drowning of Youth in Ignorance, and sore decay of the Universities." And then, for Instance, he mentioned a Grammar School founded in the North Country among the rude People there (who yet were most ready to spend their Lives and Goods in serving the King at the burning of a Beacon) having in the University of *Cambridge* of the same Foundation, eight Scholarships and two Fellowships, ever replenish'd with the Scholars of that School. Which School was now sold, decayed and lost. And more there were of the like sort so handled. But this, he said, he recited, because the Sale of it was once stay'd for Charity sake, and yet afterwards brought to pass by Bribery, as he heard say, and believed it, because it was only Bribery that customably overcometh Charity. "For GOD sake, as he concluded, you that be in Authority look upon it. For if you wink at such Matters, GOD will scoule upon you.

And the Poores
Condition
made worse.

And whereas also another charitable End of the Dissolution of these Colleges and Chantries, was for the better Succour of the Needy, it was turned much to their Damage and Prejudice also. Whereof the same Reverend Man gave one particular Instance: namely, That there were in some Towns six, in some eight, and in some a dozen Kine given unto a Stock for the Relief of the Poor; and used in such wise, that the ordinary Cottagers, which could make any Provision for Fodder, had the Milk for a very small Hire; and then the number of the Stock reserved, all maner of Vails beside, both the Hire of the Milk, and the Prices of the young Veals, and old fat Wares were disposed to the Relief of the Poor. "These, he said, were all sold, taken, and made away. The King bore the Slauder, the Poor felt the lack. But who had the Profit of such Things, he could not tell. But he knew well, and all the World saw, that the Act made by the Kings Majesty and his Lords

"and

“and Commons of his Parliament, for Maintenance of Learning and Relief of the Poor; had served some as a fit Instrument to rob Learning, and to spoil the Poor. All this I have said by Occasion of the Act made this Sessions of Parliament for Chantries. A N N O
1547.

The rest of the public Acts made this first Session I forbear to mention; the Statute Books ready at hand to every Man will shew them. But the private Acts being not so commonly known, because unprinted, and to be found only in the Clark of the Parliaments Office, were these: Private Acts.

An Act assuring Lands [which once belonged to the Church] to the Lord Rich, and others.

An Act for the Establishment of a Deanry at Wells: the old Deanry, as it seems, having been swallowed up.

An Act for the Restitution of the Lord Henry Stafford.

An Act for the Restitution of John Lumley, Esq; And another for the Restitution of Griffith Ryce, Esq;

The King by this time had made a good Step in the Reformation of Religion. For besides the Injunctions and the Royal Visitation, and an English Communion Book, and the Communion to be received in both Kinds, the Holy Bible in the Vulgar Tongue, the Homilies, and the excellent Paraphrase of that great Scholar Erasmus, were all now by the Kings Command brought in, for the common Use of his Subjects. Which made the Gospellers most highly to extol him, and set forth his deserved Praises. Thus one of them stiled him, “The High and Chief Admirall of the great Navy of the Lord of Hosts, Principal Captain and Governor of us all under him: The most Noble Ruler of his Ship, even our most comfortable Noah, whom the Eternal GOD hath chosen to be the bringer of us unto Rest and Quietness in him. The King extolled by the Gospellers.

“That he had set up his Sail already, and was so well forward of his most godly Journey, the gracious Wind of the Holy Ghost serving him, that it made many a faithful Subject of his, according as his Calling required, to come after a good Pace. ——— That he was most godly occupied, and continued in stopping up the Gapps, that Antichrist and his false Doctrine had made in the Vinyard of the Lord, and in building again the Walls of his House, which through Idolatry, Superstition, evil Example, and horrible Abuses, had been broken down. That his noble Acts and Statutes, his Proclamations and Injunctions testified the same. ——— And that his godly Homilies, and notable Work of Erasmus Paraphrase upon the Holy Evangelists, were worthy to be compared to the rich Jewels that Moses used to the pleasant Garnishing of the Temple. And as for the Sacred Bible, and Volume of GOD’s Holy Book, set forth by His Majesty’s Appointment, to be duly practised in all Holy Exercises within his Churches, as it was the fairest Flower of his Garden, and the most precious Pearl of GOD’s Jewel-house, so because His Majesty had graciously made them Partakers therof, they acknowledged themselves no less bounden to His Majesty, than the Israelites were first to their Sovereign Moses; for bringing them up out of Egypt, and for setting up the Tabernacle; and afterwards to Noble King Josias, for restoring them again the Book of the Law. Mil. Coverdale Ep. Dedic. before the Engl. Paraphrase of the Epist.

In the latter Days of King HENRY VIII. Stephen Bishop of Winton wrot two reproachful Letters (Convitiatrices, as Bucer calls them) against Bishop Gardiner writes against Bucer.

ANNO a certain Book of the said *Bucer*, Disproving the Necessity of *Single*
1547. *Life*, imposed upon Priests and Monks. Which Book he wrot against
 one *Latomus*. Wherin *Bucer* endeavoured to prove, from the Word of
 GOD, and the Consent of the true Apostolical Church, that the Doctrin
 that *Latomus* endeavoured to defend, as the Law of the Church, wher-
 by Priests were denied Mariage, was not a Law of the Church of GOD,
 but rather the Pest of Laws: Wherby all true Sanctity, as well of the
 Clergy as the Laity (following the Chastity of Priests) was in an horrid
 maner laid waste. He shewed, what Mariage was of it self, an Holy state
 of Life, and had that in it, wherby the Priestly Function was not a little
 helped. And for that cause the Holy Ghost, among the Endowments
 and Vertues of a Bishop, set it in the first place, That he should be an
 Husband, and a pious Father of a Family. Against this Book *Winche-*
ster wrot his two Letters. His way of answering this Book was not
 by solid Answers (as *Bucer* complained) taken from the Authority of
 GOD, and of the whole Apostolical Church, but by nibbling at little
 Words, and snatching some places that might allow of a dubious and
 uncertain Interpretation, wherby to shew how acute and sharp he was
 in perverting things well spoken, and speaking evil of those that de-
 served it not.

Bucer answers
Gardiner,

Gratulat. Bu-
ceri ad Eccles.
Anglic.

It was somewhat long before *Bucer* published an Answer to Bishop
Gardiner, delaying it till the Year 1547. For when he had prepared
 his Answer, by enlarging what he wrot against *Latomus*, consisting of
 Proofs out of the Scriptures, and Sentences of Fathers, before he put
 it forth he signified his purpose to King HENRY. Who returned *Bu-*
cer this Answer, "That he had rather he would defer the publishing it
 "a little longer: For that he hoped he should with a more quiet and se-
 "date Mind discourse with *Winchester*, and other Learned Men of his
 "Kingdom, concerning this and other Controversies of Religion, to find
 "out some godly Reconciliation, and restoration of the Church. Which
 "purpose the King feared might be somewhat obstructed, if *Winchester*,
 "whose sharpness in Writing, as he told *Bucer*, he liked not, should be
 "provoked to write further against him." With this pious and wise
 Answer of the King, *Bucer* laid aside his purpose of sending abroad the
 things he had writ in his own Vindication.

But at length, in the Year 1547. in an Epistle to the Church of *Eng-*
land, he put forth his Answers to *Wintons* Letters aforesaid, under these
 Four Heads:

- I. That he did piously and truly affirm, in his former Book, That
 many Men were so called to Wedlock by GOD, that they could
 not receive the truly godly Single Life for the Kingdom of Hea-
 vens sake.
- II. That altho it were true, that every one could receive this Order
 of Holy Single Life, if he would, as *Winchester* contended they
 could, yet what was now required of all that take Priesthood, or
 the Monastic Life, was against the Authority of the antient Church.
- III. He justified himself, not to have spoke that which was false, as was
 imputed to him by *Winchester*.
- IV. Concerning the genuine Interpretation of that place, *He that stand-*
eth firm in his Heart, having no necessity, but bath power over his
own Will, and bath decreed in his Heart that he will keep his Virgin,
doth

doth well. And of some other places, as that, *It is not good for A N N O*
Man to be alone. And that, *It is good for a Man not to touch a* 1547.
Woman. And that, *Because of Fornication, let every Man have his*
own Wife, &c.

It was about three Years before the abovesaid Bishop wrote his Letters to *Bucer*, that they both happened to meet together : Where, in consequence of Discourse, they fell into a Dispute about this Argument. For *Bucer* and *Alexander Ales*, the Scot, coming, whether on purpose, or by chance, where Bishop *Gardiner* was, being then the Kings Ambassador in *Germany*, the Bishop began to discourse concerning some common Principles and Means, whereby every Man might be convinced of the Controverted Points of Religion. Then the Bishop denied that there were any Principles and certain way, by which the true Doctrines of our Religion might be demonstrated, and the contrary refuted. Which *Bucer* asserted, and then brought this place of Scripture, *2 Tim. iii.* concluding hence, That the Scripture divinely Inspired, was abundantly sufficient to both; as the Holy Ghost there, by *St. Paul*, testified. But *Winchester* said, Every one fixed the Sense he pleased upon the Scriptures; and refused to stand to the Interpretation of the Antients. *Bucer* answered, That to those to whom the Faith of CHRIST, and a desire of following the Word of GOD, was not wanting, was easily shewn from the Scriptures, what was to be followed in Religion, and what avoided. And concerning the sense of Scripture in Doctrines necessary to our Salvation, Agreement might with no great pains be made among such, who, by Prayer, and a study of Godliness, and such like ways, enquired the true sense of Scripture, as enquiry is wont to be made into other Authors for their Sense. But the Bishop would not bring the Matter into that narrow compass, but asserted, That every one ought to follow that which Princes did decree and appoint concerning Religion. Then they descended into a Dispute of the Power of Princes in Matters relating to Religion. And herein this took up a good part of their Discourse, that the Bishop endeavoured to maintain, That Princes did well in punishing the transgression of their own Laws more severely than that of GOD's: Which *Bucer* had laid to the charge of Princes : As likewise that it was held Capital to eat Flesh a *Fridays*, whether it were of Beasts, Fowl, or Fish; or if a Priest or a Monk married a Wife, while in the mean time they made a Sport to commit Adultery and Fornication, and to kill themselves and others with their Cups. This gave occasion of falling into Disputation of that Law whereby Mariage was forbid to Priests. For the retaining of which Law, and the punishing the Breach of it, the Bishop said, the Prince had as much Power over his Subject, as the Father had over his Daughter. And the Father, if he pleased, might keep his Daughter unmarried. And so it was in the Power of Princes to command Celibacy to Priests. Here *Bucer* urged the restraint of this Power, which the Holy Ghost expressed in those Words, *Having no necessity, and having power over his own Will.* For since none could have Power over any other, unless to the Edification of Godliness, he said, A Father had not Power from GOD to keep his Daughter unmarried, unless he considered it would be to his Daughters Profit, and that he should confer something to her hereby, namely, to

A meeting of
 Bishop Gardi-
 ner, and Bucer,
 and Ales
 in Germany.
Gratulat. Bu-
ceri, p. 55.
Edit. 1548.

A N N O 1747. her serving of GOD more readily. But a Father was so far from having a Power over his own Will in this Matter, to keep his Daughter a Virgin that he had rather a Necessity of giving her in Mariage. Here *Winchester* denied, that any Necessity was given the Father of marrying his Daughter from the Daughter herself. But *Bucer* stuck to this Principle of Scripture, That a Father had not Power of keeping his Daughter, unless he knew it would be for her Spiritual Benefit; and if he feared it would fall out otherwise, he must bestow her in Mariage. These things were argued more at large in the Bishops foresaid Letters.

In this Disputation (because the Bishop in his Letter denied that he used any Contending in his Discourse with *Bucer*) *Bucer* could not but take notice of the Heat and Passion of the Bishop, and as a sign therof, * "How the Veins in his Hands, the like to which he never saw in any before, did leap and tremble, as often as *Bucer* said any thing that gave him Offence; specially if he heard any such thing spoken by that Learned and truly Pious Divine *Alexander Ales*, whom *Bucer* brought with him to Bishop *Gardiner* at this Conference.

* Ut vena in manibus, quod in nullo unquam homine vidi, subsilirent, & tremere, quoties audiret à nobis quod offendebat, &c. Gratulat. ad Eccl. Angl. p. 53.

C H A P. IX.

Anabaptists. Bishop Ridley vindicated. Latimer's Talk with an Anabaptist. Begins to preach. Bishop Gardiner complies with the Kings Proceedings. Hancock the Preacher. His Troubles.

Bishop Gardiner set at liberty.

THIS busy Bishop who had been Imprisoned in the *Fleet* the last Day of *June*, by the Council, was, the latter end of this Year, by the Kings General Pardon, set at Liberty: But the Council asked him, whether he and all his Diocess would receive the Injunctions and Homilies lately made. He said, he would conform to all, and enjoin his Diocess so to do; but he boggled at the Homily of *Justification*, which was set forth to be by *Faith*, and not by *Works*. And concerning that he desired some Days to consider. And to satisfy and persuade him in this Point, Bishop *Ridley* was sent to him.

Ridley misrepresented by Gardiner.

At this time he and *Ridley* were appointed to deal with two *Anabaptists* of *Kent*: For divers of that Sect had lately fled from *Germany* hither; and began to infect the Realm with odd and heretical Opinions; and particularly spake contemptibly of the H. Sacrament of the Lords Supper. So at the same time that *Ridley* exhorted *Gardiner* to receive the true Doctrin of *Justification*, against which he was very refractory, he prayed him to be very diligent in Confounding the *Anabaptists* in his Diocese; and that he would be steddy in Defence of the Sacrament against them. This some Papist did pervert to such a sense, as tho' *Ridley* had spoken of, and approved a Carnal Prefence. And so Bishop *Gardiner*

ner

ner reported to some in his House, after *Ridley* was departed. But tho' *A N N O* *Ridley* were not for that gross, Corporeal, Popish Presence in the Sacrament, yet he approved of treating that Holy Myſtery with all Devotion and Honor; becauſe there were many in thoſe Times, who, that they might run the farther from Popery, gave it little or no reſpect at all. Wherefore, he, in a Sermon at *St. Pauls Croſs*, preached earneſtly for giving great Reverence to the Sacrament: Rebuking the unreverend Behaviour of many towards it: For there had been fixed upon the Cathedral Church Doors and other Places, railing Bills againſt the Sacrament, terming it, *Jack in a Box*, *The Sacrament of the Halter*, *Round Robin*, and ſuch like unſeemly Terms. Tho' they meant not theſe contemptible Expreſſions, I ſuppoſe, againſt the Holy Supper of our Lord, but only againſt the Papal Maſs. But upon this occaſion Biſhop *Ridley* declared what eſtimation and reverence ought to be given to this Holy Inſtitution; what Danger enſued the miſhandling therof: and affirmed, that in it there was truly and verily the Body and Blood of CHRIST effectually by Grace and Spirit. This ſome then underſtood again in the groſs ſenſe of the Papists, tho' he ſo meant it not.

1547.

And the more to expoſe *Ridley*, when Biſhop of *London*, and to take off his Credit, being one of the Commiſſioners in the Year 1550. to examine Biſhop *Gardiner*, the ſaid Biſhop got leave for certain of the Clergy to be depoſed on his behalf; to ſhew, that Biſhop *Ridley* declared himſelf once for the Corporal Preſence, and afterwards declared againſt the ſame Doctrin. And what if he had ſo don? Is it ſuch a Crime to forſake an Error, after a Man hath found it to be ſo? But let us ſee the Depoſitions. The firſt Witneſs was, *Maurice Griffith*, Archdeacon of *Rocheſter*: Who depoſed, That *Ridley*, Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, the firſt Year of the King, at *Pauls Croſs*, treated earneſtly and vehemently of the Sacrament; and did ſet forth the Preſence of CHRIST's Body there; and called them Hogs and Dogs, that did irreverently behave themſelves touching the ſame. His ſecond Witneſs was, *Thomas Watſon* his Chaplain; and he depoſed, "That he called them worſe than Dogs and Hogs, that would aſſert the Queſtion, How he was there preſent. And noting the Dignity of the Sacrament ſaid, That in the Primitive Times three ſorts of People were excluded from the Communion, *Catechumeni*, *Energumeni*, and *Pœnitentes*. And this, he ſaid, he preached the firſt Year of the King, in *November*. And then was *George* Biſhop of *Chicheſter* depoſed, "That in the Parliament at *Weſtminſter* 1549. the ſame Biſhop *Ridley* did openly impugn the Verity of CHRIST's Body and Blood in the Sacrament. But ſo yet, all this came to no more, but that he held a Preſence, but not after the groſs Popiſh way. So that theſe Depoſitions could not ariſe to a Proof, that *Ridley* varied in his Opinions about the Sacrament.

Depoſitions againſt him.

Aſs and Mon. firſt Edit.

But this ſlanderoſ Report got ſuch a Vogue among the Papists, that *Ridley* could never after get himſelf clear of it. And in the beginning of Queen *MARY's* Reign, *Fecknam* Dean of *St. Pauls*, had the Confidence to relate it publicly in his Sermon at *S. Pauls Croſs*, That *Ridley* once declared himſelf in that place for a Subſtantial Change of the Bread in the Sacrament. But if we would know indeed what *Ridley* preached, we may have it from himſelf, vindicating himſelf in this Matter to Secretary *Bourn* and *Fecknam*, in a Conference with them in the

Ridleys Vindication of what he had ſaid at Pauls Croſs.

Foxs Aſs. p. 1298.

ANNO
1547.

the *Tower*, shewing them how unjustly and untruly reported he had been, he said, That what he then delivered at *Pauls Cross* was, "That in-
"veighing against them that esteemed the Sacrament no better than a
"piece of Bread, he told his Auditors of the *Pœnitentes*, *Audientes*, *Ca-*
"techumeni and *Energumeni* in the Primitive Times, who were bid to
"depart when the Sacrament was to be Administred; and I, said *Rid-*
"ley, bid them depart, as unworthy to hear the Myſtery; and then
"said to those that were the *Sancti*, that *Cyprian* the Martyr should
"tell them, how it was that CHRIST called it, saying, *Panis est Cor-*
"pus, *Cibus*, *Potus*, *Caro*, &c. Bread was the Body, Meat, Drink, Flesh
of CHRIST: Because unto this Material Substance is given the Pro-
"perty of the Thing wherof it beareth the Name. And this [Common]
"Place saith *Ridley*, I then took to utter as the Time would then
"suffice, That the Material Substance of Bread did remain." *Fecknam*
heard all this Talk of *Ridley*, as red as Scarlet in his Face, and said not
a Word. Yet notwithstanding, *Fecknam* would afterwards, as occasion
served, mention *Ridley*, as serving his Popish Purpose. So he told Mr.
Hawks the Martyr in his Conference with him, that *Ridley* in a Ser-
mon at *Pauls Cross* had preached, "That the Devil believed better than
"some among them; for he believed that CHRIST was able of Stones
"to make Bread, but they would not believe that CHRIST's Body was
"in the Sacrament.

The effect of
an Anabapti-
stical Error.

Serm. before
the King.

Among other dangerous Errors vented now a days by the *Anabaptists*,
before spoken of, and believed by many honest meaning People, they
held, that after an Apostacy from the Truth, there was no Salvation:
And that this was the Sin against the Holy Ghost. This put one, about
these Times, into Despair: For he had fallen from the Truth known,
and after fell to mocking and scorning it. At length, upon some me-
lancholick Thoughts he fell into the hideous Condition of Desperation,
reckoning verily that he had sinned the Sin against the Holy Ghost.
He repaired unto *Latimer* the great Divine and Casuist at this time, and
told him, that he should be damned, and that it was not possible for him
to be saved, for that he had sinned the Sin against the Holy Ghost. *La-*
timer did think, that falling away from the Truth was indeed the Sin
meant, of which the Scripture said, *It should never be forgiven*. But he
told the Man, "That it was a vehement maner of speaking in the Scri-
"pture, but was not spoken universally, as tho' GOD did never forgive
"it, but it was commonly called Unforgivable, because GOD seldom
"forgiveth it. Yet that there was no Sin so great but that GOD may
"forgive it, and doth forgive it to the repentant Heart. And when no
Argument he could use had any force upon the Man, this best quieted
him, and took some place with him. But the said good Father made
this Observation hereupon, How seldom this Sin is forgiven, in that he
knew no more, but that one Man that fell from the Truth, and after
repented, and came to Grace again, tho' he had, as he said, known ma-
ny, that knew more than he, and some whom he honoured, that after
they had fallen from the Truth, never, this Man excepted, returned to
Grace, and the Truth again.

Robert Cook,
Anabaptist.

The *Anabaptists* of these Days were generally infected also with *Pela-*
gianism, and other Heresies; they were also very Confident and Dispu-
tacious. One of this sort was now crept into the Court, namely, *Robert*
Cook.

Cooke. He was a Person of a very courteous fair Deportment, of some Learning, and particularly well skilled in Music. When *Parkhurst* (he that afterwards was Bishop of *Norwich*) was Preacher to Queen *Katharin Par* at the Court, he was Keeper of the Wine-Cellar. Here he came acquainted with the said *Parkhurst*, and also with *Coverdale* and *Dr. Turner*, and other Learned Men in their Attendances at the Court. This Man, besides that he was against the Brptism of Infants, denied Original Sin, and concerning the Lords Supper he dispersed divers odd things. The said *Dr. Turner* wrot a Book against him, in which he confuted his Opinion of Original Sin. He often created trouble to *Parkhurst* and *Coverdale* about these Controversies, so that they were tired with him; for he was a Man full of Words. When *Jewel*, and other Learned Men, his Friends, came sometimes to Court to visit *Parkhurst*, *Cooke* would presently begin a Dispute with them, and would never make an end. This Man seems to have been among the Exiles under Queen *Mary*, and became then known to the Learned *Rodulph Gualter* at *Zuric*. Who afterwards in his Correspondence with the said *Parkhurst*, then Bishop of *Norwich*, enquired after him: Which was in the Year 1573. He was then alive, and still in the Court, being one of the Gentlemen of the Queens Chapel. And for his Opinions, which he still retained, had some time before been like to have been discharged of his Place. But he made a Recantation, and so continued still in his Room at the Chapel.

A N N O
1547.

His Opinions.

January 1. *Dr. Latymer* began to preach his first Sermon at *S. Pauls* Crosse, and so continued for three *Sundays* successively at the same place. And on *March 7.* being *Wednesday*, he preached his first Sermon before the King, in a Pulpit set up in the Kings Privy Garden, for the Convenience of the Auditors.

Latimers first
Sermon.

Second.

Bishop *Gardiner* being now set at Liberty, was ordered to go down to *Winchester*, to instruct his Diocess. Which he did; himself Receiving and Obeying the Book of Service and Orders for Religion; and all the Proclamations, Statutes and Injunctions that were then set forth by the Kings Authority, were observed duely, and quietly kept and obeyed by the said Bishop, and his Ministers of the Diocess; as it was deposed afterwards by *Seton*. His Servant *Basset* also testified, that when the Bishop came down to *Winton* (when *Basset* came also along with him) he lived quietly, and did with all diligence execute all such Laws, Proclamations and Orders as were set forth by the King; as the little Book of the *Communion* set forth before *Easter*. Which Book the Bishop caused to be sent abroad within his Diocess, with such diligence and haste as he possibly could. And lastly, When he came first down into his Diocess, after his Delivery out of the *Fleet*, he preached two Sermons, one at *Farnham* and another at *Winton*, wherein he exhorted his Audience to be Obedient to the Kings Majesty as their Sovereign Lord and Supreme Head; alledging divers Texts of Scripture for the same.

Bishop Gardi-
ner complies
with the Kings
Proceedings.

There was now great Care taken, that the Vulgar sort might arrive to some understanding of Religion, which they were for the most part most barbarously ignorant of before. And for this purpose, provision was made, that the People might learn in *English* the Lords Prayer, the Creed, and the *Ave*, that used always to be said before in *Latin*; but especially the Lords Prayer, commonly called, *The Pater noster*.

The Vulgar
sort to learn
the Pater no-
ster in English.

And

ANNO And therefore the better to inculcate it into the Memories of the People,
1547. *Latimer* used to say this Prayer constantly both before and after Sermon,
 in the Country where he was. And when any poor People came to
 him to ask an Alms, he would oppose them with the Lords Prayer,
 and bad them say it; and cause his Servants sometimes to require them
 to say it. Many would tell him, they could say the *Latin Pater noster*,
 and others, that they could say their *Old Pater noster*, (as they termed
 the Lords Prayer in *Latin*) but not the *New*, meaning that in *English*.

Troubles of
Hancock the
 Preacher.

*Cranmers Me-
 mor.* p. 174.

His Relation
 therof.
Foxii Mss.

I will now insert a Narration of the Troubles of one *Thomas Hancock*,
 a Preacher; who in the latter time of King *HENRY*, and the Reign of
 King *EDWARD*, did much good in *Wiltshire* and *Hantsire*, by his dili-
 gent preaching the Gospel, of whom somewhat was said in another Book.
 In the beginning of King *EDWARD*'s Reign, for preaching against the
 Mass, at *Salisbury*, *Dr. Steward*, and *Dr. Oking*, Chancellors to Bishop
Gardiner and Bishop *Capon*, being present, he was required of the Maior
 to find Sureties to answer for his Sermon the next Assizes; because he
 pretended *Hancock* had spoke contemptuously of the Sacrament, contrary to
 a late Proclamation, (which we shall hear more of by and by) viz. That no
 Nick-names should be given to the Sacrament; tho' he said for himself,
 that that which he spake against was not the Sacrament, but an Idol.
 But seeing no way but to find Sureties, or to go to Jail, six honest Men
 were bound for his Appearance. What followed upon this, I had ra-
 ther you should have it from his own full Relation; which was in these
 words:

"When I came to the Assizes, Sir *Michael Lyster*, being Lord Chief
 Justice, wyll'd me to have certayn to be bound for me, that I shold
 not be before the Kyng in his Proceedings. I making no haste to get
 my Securities, my Lord Chief Justice called upon me very earnestly,
 that I should get some to be bound for me. The Bishop sitting at the
 Bench, I requested him, that forsomuch as my Trouble was for the
 Word of GOD, that he and his Chaplain, one Mr. *Reeve*, wold be
 bound for me. My Lord Chief Justice rebuked me, bycause I chose
 my Sureties out of the Bench; saying, That yf he wold be my Sure-
 ty, he would not take hym. So I stode styl, not seking any to be
 bound for me. Wherat my Lord was not very well pleased, and said
 unto me, Why seke ye not some to be bownd for you? I aunsweryd,
 that I knew not to whom to speak. There was present a Woolen
 Draper, one *Harry Dymoke*, who asked my Lord, what the Band was;
 who awnsweryd, One hundred Pounds. He sayd again, That an
 Hundred of them wold be bownd in an hundred Pounds for me. An-
 other sayd, That a Thousand of them wold be bownd in a Thousand
 Pounds for me. Wherat my Lord rebuked me, saying, See what an
 Uproar you make among the People. I sayd unto him, I pray you,
 my Lord, Lay no such thing to my charge. I stand before you and
 stir not. It ys GOD that moveth ther Harts thus to speak: I prayse
 his Name for y^t. Then did my Lord again enter talk with the a-
 bovenamed *Harry Dymoke*, and asked hym, Whether Ten of them
 wold be bownd in an hundred Pounds, for yf one hundred Persons
 should be bownd in an hundred Pounds, the Names then wold occupy
 more Ink and Paper than the Obligation. *Harry Dymoke* answered,
 That

" That I had no Rule of my self in that place [*i. e.* the Pulpit] and that
 " they thought, that I wold break the Band. Which yf I shold, that
 " wold greve them to forfeit X pounds a piece. But in that quarrel to
 " forfeit XX pound a piece yt wold never greve them. So was the first
 " Band discharged; and my Lord bownd Ten of them in X pound, and
 " I my self was bownd in XC pound.

ANNO

1547.

" This don I ryd from *Salisbury* unto my L. of *Somerset* hys Grace,
 " who lay at that tyme at *Syon*. I requested hys Grace, that I mowght
 " have his Letter for the discharge of them that were bownd for me.
 " He cawfed my L. Treasurer hys Honor, that now is, * (who than was
 " Master of the *Requests*) to write to my L. Chiefe Justice for the dis-
 " charge of the Band. Which Letter, whilst I was with my Lord at
 " *Hampton* † to deliver, the Bel rong to the Sermon. My Lord asked †
 " me, whether I mynded to preach. I awnswered, Yea. My Lord
 " said unto me, that *Hampton* was a Haven-Town, and that yf I shold
 " teach such Doctrin as I taught at *Sarum*, the Town wold be divided;
 " and so shold that be a Way or a Gap for the Enemy to enter in. And
 " therfore he commaunded me that I shold not preach. I awnswered,
 " That I wold not take that for a forbydding, but that forsomuch as
 " the People resorted to the Church at the rynging of the Bel, to hear
 " the Word of GOD, they shold not return home agayn voyd of GOD's
 " Word. My Lord sayd agayn unto me, That I shold not preach;
 " and that there was one in the Tower, (meaning Bishop *Gardiner*) that
 " he would beleve before 400 such as I was. I awnswered, That he
 " spake those Words betwyxt him and me, but yf I had record of them
 " he wold not speak them. So my Lord sent for the Maior and his
 " Brethren. Mr. Maior asked me, whether I cold be content, that ano-
 " ther shold supply the room for me. I awnswered, Yea; and that I
 " was as willing to hear the Word, as to preach my self. So did Mr.
 " Maior send to one Mr. *Gryffeth*, who did preach: And my Lord be-
 " ing present, he challenged him, that he being Chief Justice of the
 " Land, did suffer Images in the Church, the Idol hanging in a String
 " over the Altar, Candlesticks, and Tapers on them, upon the Altar,
 " and the People honouring the Idol contrary to the Law; with much
 " other good Doctrin. I prayfed GOD for yt. And thus were my
 " Friends of *Sarum*, that were bound for me, discharged ther Band.

* Sir W. Cecyl,
L. Burghley.

† Southampton

Sarum.

" This Trouble being overcome, another followeth. For after thys,
 " I was called the same Year, (which was the first Year of King ED-
 " WARD) to be the Minister of GOD's Word at the Town of *Pole* in
 " Comt. *Dorset*. Which Town was at that tyme wealthy. For they
 " embraced GOD's Word; they were in favour with the Rulers and
 " Governors of the Realm: They were the first that in that part of
 " *England* were called *Protestants*: They did love one another, and
 " every one glad of the company of the others: and so GOD powred
 " his Blessings plentifully upon them. But now, I have sorow to set my
 " Pen to write yt, they are become poor, they have no love to GOD's
 " Word; they lack the favour and friendship of the Godly Rulers and
 " Governors to defend them. They fell from their Profession: they
 " hate one another; one cannot abyde the company of another; but
 " they are divided amongst themselves. But, O Lord God, Heavenly
 " Father, which worketh all things for the best unto thine Elect and Cho-

The Town of
Pole, Backshi-
ders.

The Affection
of a loving
Pastor.

ANNO

1547.

His Sermon
at Pool

“sen, and art a God of Mercy vnd Long-suffering, suffer not that Town
“of POLE, if it be thy Good Will, to come to Desolation; but, Merciful
“God, who hast the harts of all men in thine hands, and dost turn
“them whom thou wilt turn, give them harts to repent, and pour thy
“Blessings upon them, that they may embrace thy Word, that they may be
“not only Hearers, but obedient Followers and Doers of the same: and that
“they may love one another. And so pour upon them thy Blessings,
“that they may come, not to a worse, but to a better state, for thy Dear
“Son Christ Jesus sake, our only Mediator and Advocate.

“I being the Minister of GOD’s Word in Poole, preaching the Word up-
“on some Sunday in the Month of July, inveyed against Idolatry and
“Covetousness, taking my place out of the sixth of the first of Timothy,
“*Deus immortalis est, & lucem habitat inaccessibilem, quem nemo homi-*
“*num videt, sed nec videre potest.* The Brightness of the Godhead is
“such, that yt passeth the brightness of the Sun, of Angels, and all
“Creatures; so that yt cannot be seen with our bodily Eyes. For no
“man hath seen God at any time and liveth; the Priest at that time
“being at Mass. Yf that be so, that no Man hath seen GOD, nor
“can see GOD with these bodily Eyes, then that which the Priest lift-
“eth over his Head is not GOD; for you do see yt with your bodily
“Eyes. Yf yt be not GOD, you may not honour yt as GOD, nether
“for GOD. Wherat old Thomas Whight, a gret rych Merchant, and
“a ring-leader of the Papists, rose out of his Seat, and went out of the
“Church, saying, *Come from hym, Good People, He came from the De-*
“*vil, and teacheth unto you Devilish Doctrin.* John Notbrel, alias John
“Spicer following hym, saying, *It shall be God, when thou shalt be but*
“*a Knave.*

What hap-
pened to him
there on All
Saints Day.

“The same Year in the Day of All Saints, as they call yt, after that
“I came from expounding some place of the Scripture at Evening Prayer,
“the abovenamed Thomas Whight, John Notbrel, and William Haviland
“came to the Priest, commanding hym that he shold say *Dirige* for all
“Souls, I commanding hym the contrary; they sayd they wold make
“me to say *Dirige*. I awnswered, Not whyle they lived. Than did
“all Three with one Mouth cal me *Knave*, and my Wiff *Strompet*:
“Some of them threatning me, that they wold make me draw my gutts
“after me. The Mayor being an honest good Man, Morgan Reed by
“Name, thrust me into the Quire, and pulled the Quire Dore fast to
“me, Commanding them to keep the Kings Peace. But they spared
“not to call the Mayor Knave. The Mayor had much work to stop
“this Hurly Burly, untill he had got the Chiefe of them out of the
“Church. So was I driven again to be a Sutor to my Lord of Somerset
“his Grace. Who willed me to resort to Mr. Cecyl, then Master of
“Requests, but now L. Treasurer of England. Of whom I had also
“another Letter for my Quyetnes in Preaching of GOD’s Word in the
“Town of Pool. From that tyme I contynued in Pool untill the Death
“of good King EDWARD.

CHAP. X.

Lands, Advowsons and Rectories settled upon certain Churches and Bishoprics, Deans and Chapters. Cheeke and Latymer gratified. Treaties with Foreign Princes. The Kings Gifts. The Strangers Church at Canterbury. Orders to the Archbishop for taking away Images.

IN the first Year of the King he took Care for the Settlement of Re-
venues upon divers Churches and Colleges; from which either his
Father had taken their Lands, and had not made them recompence by
others equivalent, (which he yet by his last Will required to be don,)
or he himself to satisfy his Courtiers: that so he might maintain Religi-
on and Learning, by maintaining the Estate of the Church. Here fol-
low then the Manors and Lands granted by the King, with the Consi-
derations why, as I took them from his *Book of Sales*.

May 22. To the Dean and Chapter of *Wigorn*, in consideration of
the Lordships and Rectories of *Grimley* and *Halowe*, and the Manor of
Hymwyke and *Woodhal* in the County of *Wigorn*, and others; and in
Performance of King HENRY's Will; was granced the Rectory of *Kem-
sey* in the County of *Wigorn*, with the Appurtenances, lately parcel of
the Possessions of *Rafe Sadleyr*, Kt. and granted to the said King HENRY;
and divers other Manors, Rectories, Lands and Tenements in the Coun-
ties of *Wigorn*, *Glocester*, *Lancaster*, *Hereford*, and *Bedford*. The yearly
Value wherof was 180*l.* 1*s.* 8*ob.* Certain Rents reserved.

June 3. To *Nicolas* Bishop of *Wigorn*, for the fulfilling King HENRY's
last Will, were granted the Advowsons and Rectories of the Churches of
Grimley and *Halowe*, late parcel of the Possessions of the Cathedral Church
of *Wigorn*, Value 14*l.* 1*s.* 11*ob.*

The same June 3. to the same *Nicolas*, in consideration of the Ex-
change of the Lordships of *Stoke Episcopi* and *Hernbury* in the Salt
Marsh in the County of *Glocester*, and other Possessions in *Glocester*,
Middlesex and *London*; and for the fulfilling of King HENRY's Will,
were granted the Manors of *Grimley* and *Halowe*, parcel of the Possessi-
ons of the Cathedral Church of *Wigorn*, and divers other Lands and
Tenements in *Surrey* and *London*. The yearly Value 135*l.* 6*s.* 9*ob.*

Aug. 20. To *Richard* Bishop of *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, in Considera-
tion of the Manors of *Longdon*, *Bewdesert*, *Rugeley*, *Heywood*, *Barkeswich*,
and *Cannok*, and divers other Lands and Tenements in *Staffordshire*; and
for fulfilling King HENRY's Will, were granted the Advowson of the
Rectory of *Wolstaunton* in the County of *Stafford*, and the Rectory
of *Belgrave* in the County of *Leicester*, and of the Rectories of
Pigbtlesly, *Buckby*, and *Towceter* in *Northamptonshire*; and divers other
Advowsons and Prebends in the County aforesaid, and within the Bi-

A N N O shopric of *Bangor*. The yearly Value wherof was 183*l.* 8*s.* 10*h*q. with considerable Rent reserved.

1547.

To the Dean
and Chapter
of *Winton*.

Aug. 21. To the Dean and Chapter of the Holy Trinity *Winton*, in Consideration of the Exchange of the Manors of *Overton*, *Alton*, *Stockton*, and *Patney*, and of the Rectories of the two former, in *Wilts*; were granted the Advowson of the Rectory of *Gresford*, within the Bishopric of *S. Asaph*, and of the Rectory of *Crockborn* in the County of *Somerset*, and the Advowson of the Rectory of *Laugherne* in the County of *Cardigan*, and the Rectories and Churches of the same.

Aug. 30. To the Provost and College of *S. Mary* at *Eaton*, for 25*l.* 6*s.* 3*d.* and in performance of King *HENRY*'s last Will, and in consideration of the Exchange of the Manors of *Milborn Beck*, *Lutton*, and *Ponyngton* in the County of *Dorset*, and divers other Lands and Tenements; were granted the Revenues of *Great Compton* in the County of *Warwick*, lately parcel of the Possessions of *Thomas Cromwel*, Kt. late Earl of *Essex*, attainted of High Treason, and of *Bloxham* in the County of *Oxon*, late parcel of the Possessions of the late Monastery of *Godslow* in the same County, and divers other Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Oxford*, *Bedford*, *Lincoln*, and *Warwick*.

To the Arch-
bishop of
Canterbury.

Aug. 31. To *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, in Consideration of King *HENRY*'s Promises, and in Performance of his last Will, and for the Exchange of the Manor and Park of *Mayfeld*, &c. were granted the Rectories of *Whalley*, *Blackborn*, and *Rochdale*, &c. as is more at large related elsewhere.

Memorials of
Cranmer.

To the Bishop
of *Lincoln*.

Sept. 2. To *Henry* Bishop of *Lincoln*, in Consideration of the Exchange of the Manor of *Dorchester*, *Cropredy*, *Wardington*, *Cotes*, *Newthorp*, *Cethorp*, and *Burton*, in the County of *Oxon*, and divers other Manors, Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Rutland*, *Leicester*, *Northampton*, *Huntingdon*, *Bedford*, *Nottingham*, and *Lincoln*; were granted him the Capital Mansion and outward Gate of the College of *Thornton* in the County of *Lincoln*; and divers other Manors, Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Lincoln*, *Leicester*, *Sussex*, *Nottingham*, *Carmarden*, with considerable Rent reserved.

To the Bishop
of *Oxon*.

About this time, To *Robert* Bishop of *Oxon*, for the fulfilling King *HENRY*'s last Will, were granted the Rectories of *Welsford*, *Sibbertoft*, and *Overton*, with the Appurtenances in the Counties of *Northampton* and *Leicester*, and the Manors of *Medley*, *Hokenorton*, and *Watlington*, in the County of *Oxon*, and divers other Lands and Tenements in *Oxon*, *Bucks*, *London*, and *Berks*, to the yearly Value of 391*l.* 1*s.* 5*ob.* Rent reserved. 37*l.* 14*s.* 9*ob.* to commence from the Feast of the *Annunciation*, An. 38 *Hen. VIII.*

To the Dean
and Chapter
of *St. Pauls*.

Sept. 27. To the Dean and Chapter of *St. Pauls*, *London*, in Consideration of the Manor of *Roumwel* in *Essex*, and of the Manor of *Drayton* in *Middlesex*, and divers other Lands, Tenements, and Rents, and in full Execution of King *HENRY*'s last Will; was granted the Advowson of the Rectory of *Charing* in *Kent*, and the Chappel of *Egerton* in the same County, and the Manor of *Mockyng* in *Essex*; lately parcel of the Possessions of the late Monastery of *Berkyng* in the said County, and divers other Lands and Tenements in *Kent* and *Essex*. Rent reserved, 12*l.* 1*s.* 3*d.*

Octob.

Octob. 7. To the Dean and Canons of the Kings Free Chapel of St. *ANNO*
George within the Castle of *Windsor*, as well for the fulfilling King *1547.*
HENRY's last Will, as for Exchange of the Manor and Rectory of
Iwer, and of the Manor of *Damary Court*, and divers other Lands and
 Tenements, to the said King *HENRY* given and made over, and divers
 others surrendred by the said Dean and Chapter; were granted the Re-
 ctories and Churches of *Bradynch*, *Northam*, *Iplepen*, *Affington*, and
South Molton in the County of *Devon*, and divers other Manors, Recto-
 ries, Lands and Tenements in *Devon*, *London*, *Wilts*, *Glocester*, *Kent*,
Surrey, *Cornwal*, *Middlesex*, *Oxon*, *Bucks*, *South Wales*, *Brecon*, *Carmar-*
then. Rent reserved 4. 2. 8. And 18. 7. 9.

To the Dean
and Chapter
of *Windsor*.

The same Date, To the Dean and Chapter of the Collegiate Church
 of *Thornton* in *Lincolnshire*, in Consideration of the Manor of *Carleton*
 in the *Moor Land*, in the County of *Lincoln*, and divers other Lands
 and Tenements in the same County; were granted the Advowson of the
 Rectory of *Flamsted* in the County of *Hertford*, and the Advowson of the
 Rectory of *Holme* in *Spalding* in the County of *York*.

To the Dean
and Chapter
of *Thornton*.

Nov. 5. For the Erection or Founding of the Deanry and Chapter of
Norwich, was granted the Scite of the late Cathedral Church of *Norwich*,
 with all its antient Privileges, and all the Jewels and Implements of the
 said Chrch.

The Church
of *Norwich*
new Founded.

Nov. 9. To the Dean and Chapter of the Church of the Holy Trinity
 in *Norwich*, were granted in perpetual Alms the Manors of *Hindolston*,
Newton, *Catton*, *Pookethorp*, *Eaton*, *Taverham*, *Aldeby*, *Ambringale*, *Wor-*
sted, *Dyllabam*, and divers other Manors, Lands and Tenements, in the
 Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *York*, *Lincoln*, *Norwich*, *Kent*. And the
 time of the Issues was from the time of the Dissolution of the Cathedral
 Church of *Norwich*. Rent reserved was 89l. 11s. 3ob.

To the Dean
and Chapter
of *Norwich*.

For it may be here marked, that this Church of *Norwich* continued a
 Monastery of Prior and Monks to the second Day of May, *An. Reg.*
Henrici 8. xxx°. At which time the said King *HENRY* translated them
 from a Prior and Convent into a Dean and Chapter, as by his Letters
 Patents appear. By vertue of which Letters Patents they continued a
 Dean and Chapter, and held all the Lands to the late Prior and Con-
 vent belonging, till the 3 of June, *Anno* 1 *Reg. Edw. VI.* At which
 Day and Time the said Dean and Chapter, for certain Causes them mo-
 ving, did surrender into the hands of the said King *EDWARD*, all their
 said Church, and all and singular their Lands and Rights whatsoever.
 Whereupon the said King, in the Month of *November* aforesaid, did anew
 Erect and Found the said Church, by the Name of *Ecclesia Sancta & in-*
dividua Trinitatis Norwici ex Fundatione Reg. EDWARD VI. and did
 endow it with all and singular the Lands, &c. aforesaid; Reserving to
 himself the Rent abovementioned. Which Queen *ELIZABETH*, by
 Letters Patents remitted, saving 50l. by Year. The Reason the Dean
 and Chapter thus surrendred their Church, seemed to have been, because
 they doubted of the Title of their Settlement by King *HENRY*; the
 Bishop of the Diocess, who was the Founder of the Priory in Succession,
 not having given his Consent to the Translation of the said Priory into a
 Dean and Chapter. Which Flaw afterwards caused great Trouble to
 this Church under Queen *ELIZABETH*.

How this
Church came
to be Found-
ed by King
Edward.

A N N O

1547:

The Lord Ad-
mi.al gratifies
Cheke.The King
gives 20 l. to
Latimer.Treaty con-
cluded with
France ;And the Em-
peror.The Kings
Gift this first
Year.

Book of Sales.

The Begin-
ning of the
Strangers
Church at
Canterbury.

At *Christmas* I find the Kings Uncle, Sir *Thomas Seimour*, Lord Admiral, the Queen *Katharin Par* being at *Enfield*, gratified Mr. *Cheke*, the Kings careful Instructor, with a Gratuity of Twenty Pounds, giving him also Twenty more for the King, to dispose among his Servants that good Time. Tho' *Cheke* knowing probably the ambitious and designing Nature of the Admiral, was very loth to take his Gift, but he prest it upon him.

The *Lent* following *Latimer* preached before the King, and His Majesty, being minded to bestow some Royal Gift upon the Preacher, sent to his said Uncle for Mony, and for his Direction what he should give him. Whereupon he sent the King Forty Pounds, with Advice to bestow half therof upon *Latimer*, and the other half as Gratuities among his Servants.

That which was don abroad this Year was the securing of a good Understanding with the Kings Neighbours. Thus a Treaty was entred between King *EDWARD* and *K. FRANCIS* of *France*, for taking away all Occasions of Strife and Contention about the Limits of the New Conquests of *Boloign* and *Boloignois*. Which Treaty was Agreed, Sealed and Delivered by the Commissioners on both Sides. And immediately after, that King died. And *HENRY II.* his Son, succeeded; Who soon violated that Treaty; as shall be seen hereafter.

There was also a Treaty of Peace, sealed *Jan. ult.* between King *EDWARD* and *CHARLES V.* Emperor of *Rome*: To whose Care and Friendship King *HENRY* his Father, on his Deathbed, recommended his Son, the said King *EDWARD*.

In this first Year of the King, the Courtiers got away from him a great Number of fair Lordships and Manors, on pretence either of Services, or for making good King *HENRY* his Fathers last Will; or by way of Purchase for disproportionable Sums of Money, made in Consideration of former Services, and in Complement of the deceased Kings Will. These Lands thus given and granted, were for the most part such as had belonged to Monasteries and Religious Foundations, or Bishopricks. In this maner were these Persons following Gratified; *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Duke of *Somerset*, the Earl of *Warwic*, the Lord *Rich*, Marquis of *Northampton*, Earl of *Southampton*, Lord *S. John*, Lord *Russel*, Lord *Clynton* and *Say*, the Lord *Seimour*, *Gertrude* Lady *Courtney*, Sir *William Paget*, Sir *William Herbert*, Sir *Thomas Pope*, Sir *John Bridges*, Sir *Rafe Sadleir*, Sir *Thomas Carwarden*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Richard Lee*, Sir *Rafe Fane*, Sir *Richard Mannours*, Sir *Thomas Palmer*, Sir *Francis Brian*, Sir *Anthony Denny*, Sir *Anthony Brown*, Sir *Philip Hoby*, Knights, *Thomas Denton*, *John Harrington*, *Richard Cotton*, *Edward Waldgrave*, *Tho. Paston*, *Henry Thompson*, *Ger. Harmond*, *Richard Cecyl*, Esquires, and others. It would be too long to set down what Lands and Estates were past over to each of them particularly. Which otherwise might be don.

I find divers Outlandish Learned and Godly Men this Year at *Canterbury*: Among the rest there was *John Utenhovius*, a Person of Honorable Rank and Quality, afterwards Elder and Assistant to *John a Lasco's* Church in *London*. Here was also *Valerandus Pollanus*, and one *Franciscus*; and the Year after *Bucer* was here. Now, I conjecture, were the Beginnings of the Foreigners Church planted in *Canterbury*, by the Coun-

Countenance and Influence of Archbishop Crammer. There was a loving A N N O
Correspondence held between the said *Utenhovius* here, and *P. Martyr* 1547.
now at *Lambeth*. In one of his Letters, wrote to him this Year, he had
desired *Martyr* to let him know the state of Religion, how it stood at
that time in the Land; about which, in the Winter of the Year 1547.
there being then a Parliament and a Convocation, both were mainly em-
ployed. *Martyr* wrote him an Answer, by a Letter dated Jan. 15. and
superfcribed *Nobili Viro D. Utenhovio*, "That as yet he knew nothing
"determined, but that all the most knowing Men bid us be of good
"Heart, and give hopes that the Matter will succeed very well. GOD
"grant, added he, that it may so happen speedily and quietly. *Reve-*
"*rendissimus noster & strenue & maxima cum laude bonorum, pugnat* :
that is, "Our most Reverend Friend and Father the Archbishop contends
"for it strenuously, and with the greatest Praise of Good Men. And
wheras *Utenhovius* had writ to *Martyr*, that they had at *Canterbury*,
Conciones intra parietes, & Conventus pios : i. e. Sermons and godly Meet-
ings within their own Walls; *Martyr* makes only this Remark thereupon,
That he doubted not, the Devil envied these Beginnings.

*E Biblioth.
Eccl. Belg.
Lond.*

In the Year after this, viz. 1548. *P. Martyr* wrote another Letter, da-
ted Sept. 21. from Oxford to *Utenhovius* at *Canterbury*, with the Arch-
bishop there, removed thither for the Plague that then was in or about
London. In this Letter there was not much besides a Friendly Corre-
spondence, and the signification that he had wrote a Letter to *Dr. Ponet*
the Archbishops Chaplain, about the Business *Utenhovius* had desired
him. With this Letter *Martyr* told him he had sent three French
Crowns in Gold borrowed of him: (which I suppose he did upon his
first coming to *Canterbury* after his Arrival in *England*.) And con-
cluded, Wishing him and all the Holy Brethren with him, Health and
Welfare in the Lord.

Images in Churches had been so grossly abused; and such Idolatry and
Superstition committed by the means of them, that it was in the Kings
Injunctions commanded to the Visitors to remove them every where,
wheresoever they had been abused by Pilgrimages, Censings and Offer-
ings. Which was yet not so fully don, but that still they remained in
many places, there being great Strife and Contention about them. For
the old Priests were loth to part with these their Figures painted and
drest: and many were desirous to retain all, how grossly soever they
had been abused. In some places where they were taken down, they
were set up again, after the Visitors were gon away. The great pre-
sence of those that were so tender of these Images, was, That some of
them had not been abused, and that such and such had not been Offered
unto, nor Censured. And such Stir was made about them, that Tumults
were likely to arise. And it was observed, where Images were left,
there was most Contest, and most Peace where they were all sheer pul-
led down, as they were in some places. Therefore in the Month of Fe-
bruary the Council wrote to the Archbishop, "That the lively Images of
"CHRIST might not contend for dead Images, which were Things not
"necessary, and without which the Church of CHRIST continued most
"godly many Years. Therefore they signified to him, That it was the
Kings Pleasure, with the Consent and Advice of his Council, that all
Images should be removed out of Churches and Chappels in his Diocesis;
and

The Council
to the Arch-
bishop, for
taking away
Images.

ANNO 1547. and that he should signify the same to be done, unto all the Bishops within his Province. This was dated from *Somerset Place*, and Signed by the Lord Protector, the Lord *Russel*, the Lord *Arundel*, Sir *Thomas Seimour*, Sir *Anthony Wyngfeld*, and Sir *William Paget*. And accordingly the Archbishop (who no question moved for it) sent a Copy of this Letter, with his own Command therupon, speedily issued out, to *Edmund Bishop of London*. I do not here transcribe the Councils Letter, as it is in *Cranmers Register*, because it is don already in *Bishop Burnets History*.

CHAP. XI.

Sundry wholsome Orders of the King for Religion. For the Communion. For Lent: Innovation forbid. The Book of Common Prayer drawn up: Enacted. The Psalms in Metre. The good Progreß of the Reformation. The Revenues of the Church struck at.

ANNO 1548. **W**E shall now shew some farther Cares of the young King and his Uncle, the Protector, for the good Estate of Religion, and for keeping the heady People of both Persuasions from running into Exorbitances.

Unseemly
Talk and Dis-
pute of the
Sacrament
forbid.

There were not a few, who, towards the declining of this Year, did more openly and commonly than before, speak of the Holy Sacrament with much contempt. Which, to speak the truth, the former Idolatrous and Superstitious Doctrins therof had given great occasion to: So that Men condemned in their Hearts and Speech the whole Thing, and reasoned unreverently of that high Myſtery: And in their Sermons, or Readings, or Communication, called it by vile and unseemly Terms. They made Rhimes, and Plays, and Jestes of it. And this occasioned chiefly by the misuse of it: As it is expressed in the Act of Parliament of the first of *Edw. VI. cap. 1.* Therefore was that Act of Parliament made, being the very first Act of this King. And to back this Act, especially when these contemptuous Dealings with the Sacrament continued still, and ceased not, the King sent forth a severe Proclamation, *Decemb. 27.* against these irreverent Talkers of the Sacrament. Which I believe Archbishop *Cranmer* and Dr. *Ridley* between them were the Composers of. This Proclamation mentions the foresaid Act, calling it, *A good and godly Act*, and that it most prudently declared, by the Words and Terms of Scripture, what is to be believed and spoken of the said Sacrament. With which Words and Phrases of Scripture the King required all his Subjects to acquiesce. And to put a stop to those frequent and common Disputes and Wranglings concerning the Maner, Nature, or Ways, the Possibility or Impossibility of those Matters, and those super-

superfluous Questions and Enquiries that many made; as, "Whether the Body and Blood of CHRIST was there Really or Figuratively, Locally or Circumscriptly, and having Quantity and Greatness, or but Substantial and by Substance only, or else but in a Figure and maner of Speaking? Whether his blessed Body be there, Head, Legs, Arms, Toes, Nails, or in any other Shape or Maner, Naked or Clothed? Whether he be broken or chewed, or he be always whole? Whether the Bread be there, as we see, or how it Departeth? Whether the Flesh be there alone and the Blood, or part, or each in other, or in the one both, in the other but only Bloud; and what Bloud? that only which did flow out of his Side, or that which remained? Being not contented Reverently to accept and believe the said Sacrament, according to the Saying of St. Paul, *The Bread is the Communion*, or Partaking, of the Body of Christ, and the Wine, likewise, the Partaking of the Bloud of Christ: And that the Body and Bloud of CHRIST is there. Which is our Comfort, Thanksgiving, and Love-token of CHRIST's Love towards us.

Therefore the King, by this Proclamation, did strictly forbid any such contemptuous Talking of this Mystery, or openly to argue, preach, or affirm any more Terms of the Sacrament than be expressed in the Holy Scriptures, and mentioned in the foresaid Act; until the King, with the Advice of his Council and Clergy of the Realm, should set forth an open Doctrin therof, and what Terms and Words may justly be spoken thereby. But that in the mean time his Subjects should take the Holy Bread to be CHRIST's Body, and the Cup, the Cup of his Bloud, according to the Purport of the Holy Scripture. And yet the King declared, that he allowed the Ignorant to learn quietly and privately, and to demand of such as knew more, farther Instruction in the said Blessed Sacrament: So it were don not in Contention, nor in open Audience, nor with a Company gathered together. Nor, did he prohibit any Man hereby quietly, devoutly and reverently to Teach and Instruct the Weak and Unlearned, according to the better Talent by GOD given to him.

And finally, The Justices were to apprehend and take all such as did contentiously and tumultuously, with Companies or Routs, Dispute, Argue or Reason, Maintain or Define the Questions beforementioned. This is the Sum of this notable Proclamation. *Vide the Repository.*

This sort of Men, that thus disrespectfully caried themselves towards the Sacrament, had as little Opinion of *Lent*, and the Keeping of it, supposing it to be a Papal Incroachment upon the Liberty of Christians, to whom all Meats were lawful. But the King, as he required the strict Observation of this Antient Ecclesiastical Custom, and other Fasting Times, by a Proclamation dated Jan. 16. So therin to satisfy all Persons, was shewed the Lawfulness and Conveniency therof to be observed in his Realm. It is well drawn up, and by the Pen, I suppose, of the Archbishop, or some of his Divines. In the Preface it is expressed, "How the King had the only Cure and Charge of his Realms, not only as a King, but as a Christian King, and was Supreme Head of the Church of *England* and *Ireland*. That he had a Desire and Will to lead his People in such Rites, Ways and Customs, as might be acceptable to GOD, and the farther increase of good Living. That his Subjects now had a more perfect and clear Light of the Gospel, through the infinite Clemency and Mercy of GOD, by the Means of his Ma-

A N NO

1547.

“ jesty and his most Noble Father : And should therefore in all Good
 “ Works increase, and be more forward, as in Fasting, Prayer, and
 “ Almsheds, in Love, Charity and Obedience, and such like good
 “ Works, commanded in Scripture : But that alate, more than before,
 “ a great part of his Subjects did break and contemn that Abstinence,
 “ which of long time had been used in this Realm upon *Fridays* and
 “ *Saturdays*, and the Time of *Lent* and other accustomed Times. That
 “ the King therefore was constrained to see a convenient Order therein.
 “ He minded not that his Subjects should think there were any diffe-
 “ rence in Days, or Meats, or that the one should be to God more holy
 “ and pure than the other. For all Days and Meats were of equal Pu-
 “ rity : And in and by them we should live to the Glory of God.
 “ That for all Times and Meats we should give Glory to Him : Of
 “ which none can defile us at any time, or make us unclean, being Chri-
 “ stian Men. To whom all things be holy and pure : So that they be
 “ not used in Disobedience and Vice. But notwithstanding the King
 “ allowed and approved these Days and Times before accustomed, to be
 “ still kept in the Church of *England*, that Men should on these Days
 “ abstain from their Pleasure and Meats wherein they had more delight,
 “ to subdue the Body unto the Soul and Spirit. And also for worldly
 “ and civil Policy, to spare Flesh and use Fish, for the Benefit of the
 “ Commonwealth ; where many be Fishers, and use the Trade of Liv-
 “ ing. And that the Nourishment of the Land might be increased by
 “ saving Flesh ; and especially at Spring time, when *Lent* doth common-
 “ ly fall, and when the most common plenteous Breeding of Flesh is. And
 “ that divers of the Kings Subjects had good Livings and Riches in ut-
 “ tering and selling such Meat as the Sea and Waters did minister to us.
 “ And that therefore the Realm had more Plenty of Ships and Boats for
 “ the following that Trade of Living. Besides, that Men of their own
 “ Minds did not give themselves so oft as they should do, to Fasting and
 “ Abstinence. And upon these Considerations, the King commanded
 “ all Persons, of whatsoever State and Degree, to observe and keep from
 “ henceforth such Fasting-days, and the Time of *Lent*, as had been
 “ heretofore used in the Realm. But the King, as the King his Father had
 “ don, did upon weighty Considerations give Licence to his Subjects,
 “ to eat white Meats in the Time of *Lent*, that is, Butter, Eggs, Cheese,
 “ &c. The Parliament that sat the next Year converted this Order for
 “ Observation of the Fasting-days into a Law, which contains the very
 “ Words of this Proclamation. Which is inserted in the *Repository*.

Large Licen-
 ces dispensing
 with *Lent*.

But notwithstanding these Orders for the keeping of *Lent*, I cannot
 but take notice what extravagant Licences were granted sometimes by
 the King's Patents, for dispensing with the Observation of it. As in
 the Year 1551. *Jan. 10.* A Licence was granted to the Lord Admiral
Clinton to eat Flesh, *Cum quibuscunque cum eo ad suam mensam conve-*
scantibus, omnibus diebus jejunalibus quibuscunque : And all others that
 should eat at his Table with him, on all Fasting days whatsoever. Ano-
 ther Licence under the King's Seal, dated *Feb. 24. 1551.* was
 granted to *John Samford* of the City of *Gloucester*, Draper, That he
 with two of his Guests at his Table might eat Flesh and white Meats,
 during all the *Lent*, and all other Fasting days in the Year ; and this
 Licence was during his Life. And the next *Lent*, viz. In the Year,

1552

1552. A Patent was granted to *Gregory Railton*, one of the Clerks of *A N N O* the Signet, to eat Flesh with four in his Company during his Life. Another Licence for the Lord Treasurer, the Marquis of *Winchester*, and *Elizabeth*, his Wife, and to their Family and Friends, coming to the said Lord Marquis his House, not exceeding the Number of twelve Guests, during his and his Wives natural Lives in the Times of *Lent*, and other Fasting Days; to eat Flesh or white Meats, notwithstanding the Statute of Abstinence from Flesh; as the Licence ran, dated *March* the 19th. And another dated *March* 11. was granted to *John A Lasco*, Superintendent of the Church of Strangers within the City of *London*, and to every one else whom he should invite to his Table for Society Sake; that to him and every of them, during his Life, in *Lent* and other Fasting Times, it might be lawful to eat Flesh and white Meats freely, and without Punishment, at their own Will, any Statute to the contrary notwithstanding.

1547.

Now several Preachers and Laymen, Lovers of the Gospel, and Labourers after a Reformation of the old Superstitions, had of themselves begun Changes in their Parish Churches; laying aside the old Rites and Orders, and had brought in new Ones, according to their own Judgments and Opinions, conformable I suppose to the Practise of the Foreign Reformed Churches; but different from, and beyond the Injunctions lately sent abroad from the King. He therefore issued out a Proclamation, dated *Feb. 6.* therein charging these Men with Pride and Arrogancy, and commanding that no Person should omit or change, or innovate any Orders or Ceremonies commonly used in the Church of *England*, and not commanded to be left off in his Father King *Henry's* Reign; or than such as the present King, by his Visitors and Injunctions, had already, or hereafter should command to be omitted. And this he was moved to enjoin upon this Consideration, as the said Proclamation imports, that nothing tended so much to the disquieting of the Realm as Diversity of Opinions, and Variety of Rites and Ceremonies in Religion and the Worship of GOD: Declaring, how he had studied all Ways and Means to direct the Church, and Cure committed to his Charge in one most true Doctrine and Usage. And by Virtue of the same Proclamation none were to preach without Licence from the King, or his Visitors, or the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, or the Bishop of the Diocese, (except it were a Bishop, a Parson, a Vicar, a Curat, a Dean or a Provost in their own Cure) upon Pain of Imprisonment, and other Punishments. This Proclamation also will be found in the *Repository*.

Innovation and Preaching without Licence forbid.

Likewise, *March* 8. following when the Communion Book was published, the King in his Proclamation before it, to satisfy those that thirsted so much for a Reformation, "Advised them to stay and quiet themselves with the King's Directions, as Men content to follow Authority, and not enterprising to run afore: And so by that Rashness become the greatest Hinderers of such Things, as they, more arrogantly than godly, would seem by their own private Authority, most hotly to set forward. And by these means he might be encouraged from Time to Time further to travail for the Reformation, and setting forth such godly Orders, as might be to GOD's Glory, and the edifying of his Subjects, and Advancement of true Religion. Nor would he have his Subjects so much to dislike his Judgment, nor mistrust his

Forbid again: And the King promises a Reformation.

ANNO " Zeal, as tho' he could not discern what were to be don, or would not
1548. " do all Things in due Time.

Notwith-
standing vari-
ous Forms are
used.

An. 2. Ed. 6.
ca. 1.

But notwithstanding these Proclamations, and that he had divers other Times before and since endeavoured to stop the Use of other Forms and Rites in the Worship of GOD; yet these his Commands and Endeavours would not prevail, but even in Cathedral, as well as other Parish Churches, various different Ways of Service were Used, as well in the Morning and Evening Prayers, as in the Office of the Communion, and in the Administration of the other Sacraments. At length the King bore with this which he could not well remedy; Calling it, *The Frailty and Weakness of his Subjects*: And he abstained from punishing those that offended in that behalf. Because his Highness took, (as is exprest in his Act of *Uniformity*) that they did it of a good Zeal. But for the preventing the Evil that might ensue, of these Varieties he appointed the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and certain other Bishops and Learned Men to consider the Premises, and with respect to the Scriptures and to the Usages of the Primitive Church, to draw out a convenient Order, Rite and Fashion of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments. Which was accordingly don by them at *Windsor*, and prepared to be Confirmed and Enacted by the Parliament that sat, *November 24. 1548.* When the Use of it was by Law Enjoyed, and to Commence at *Whitsuntide* following, which was in the Year *1549.* And by that Act all those who had of their own Wills used other Forms or Innovations, were Pardoned.

The Papists
regret the
Common
Prayer.

Yet it past not without some Strugling and Opposition made against it by the old *Papalins*. How illy they Digested it may be seen by this Passage: While in the Days of Queen MARY, *George Marlb* of the *North* (afterwards Martyred for the Gospel) was in Examination before the Earl of *Darby* and divers others, and having said that as he had Ministered under King EDWARD, so if the Laws would have suffered him to Minister after that sort, (that is by the Book of Common Prayer) he would Minister again; presently one who was the Parson of *Gramp-nal* in *Lancashire*, threw in this Word, "*This last Communion was the most Devilish thing that ever was Devised.*"

Fox. p. 1419.

Four Lords
Protested a-
gainst it.

To the Establishment of this Book but four Lords Protested. Of which I have this Passage to relate. When the said *Marlb* had told the Earl of *Darby*, that he hoped he would not condemn him for that Reformation, which he was one of the Makers and Establishers of under King EDWARD, saying, "That his Trust was of that his Lordship, being one of the Honorable Council of the Late King EDWARD, and agreeing to his Actions concerning Faith towards GOD and Religion, would not so soon after consent to put poor Men to Death for Embracing the same; he answered, "That he with the Lord *Winsor* and the Lord *Dacres* and one more did not consent to those Actions, and that the *Nay* of them Four would be to be seen as long as the Parliament House stood.

The Commu-
nion Book.

This Act, being the greatest Stroke struck against Popery, and for throwing out the Mass, may deserve some particular Observation. It was called, *An Act for the Uniformity of Service, and Administration of the Sacraments throughout the Realm.* The Book confirmed by this Act was the Second Office in *English* that came forth in this Reign, the

Communi-

Communion Book being the first. Which was Compos'd in pursuance A N N O
1548. of an Act in the Year 1547. Enjoyn'g the Receiv'g of the Lords Supper in both kinds, and that the People should Receive with the Priest, as most agreeable to the first Institution of the Lords Supper, and more conformable to the Practise of the Church for the first five hundred Years. For the drawing up of the Exhortations, and other Prayers to be us'd on that Occasion, the King appointed certain Bishops and other Learned Divines with the Archbishop of Canterbury. And this being finish'd in *English* was call'd the *Communion Book*. Which was Printed by *Grafton*, and Published 1547. as was shewn before.

The same Bishops and Divines, as it seems, were soon after appointed by the King to draw up a general Public Office in *English*, in the room of the *Latin* MasBook. Who accordingly met in May, 1548. and in the latter end of the Year it was confirm'd by Parliament, as above was said. Being Intitl'd, *The Book of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments, and other Rites and Ceremonies of the Church of England*. From the Act which was made for the Use of it; I gather divers Matters Historical concerning it.

First, That before this Book came forth there was no Uniform Service in this Church, but a great Variety of Forms of Prayer and Communion; some of older date, and some more lately followed. For example, there was a Form according to the Use of *Sarum*, which some Churches followed; and another Form according to the Use of *York*, which other Churches followed; and another according to the Use of *Bangor*, and another of *Lincoln*, followed by other Churches. And those that lik'd not any of these Popish Forms, and *Latin* Prayers, us'd other *English* Forms, according as their own Fancies led them.

Secondly, That those who us'd these latter Forms (the old Ones yet remaining in force) the King and the Protector forbid; Calling them *Innovations* and *New Rites*, and divers times assayed to stay the using of them, but could not. Wherefore afterwards they thought fit to Con-
The Book of
Common
Prayer.

Thirdly, For the preventing of this Different serving of God (for by it great Divisions and Contentions happen'd) the King resolv'd to have one Form of Prayer Compos'd to be only us'd, and none other, throughout his Realm. And that this might be drawn up after the best maner, He, the Protector, and divers of his Council, Nominated and Culled out certain Bishops and other Learned Men, to be employ'd in this Business: Men of that Eminency in Learning and Piety, that they were call'd in the Act, *The most Learned and Discrete Bishops and Divines*. Whereof the Archbishop of *Canterbury* is mention'd, but none else. But the rest of them (if we may give Credit to *Fullers Church History*, and what is commonly taken up, and report'd in our Histories) were *Day*, Bishop of *Chichester*, *Goodrich*, Bishop of *Ely*, *Skyp*, of *Hereford*, *Holbeach*, of *Lincoln*, *Ridley*, of *Rochester*, *Thirleby*, of *Westminster*, *May*, Dean of *St. Pauls*, *Taylor*, Dean of *Lincoln*, *Haines*, Dean of *Exeter*, *Robertson*, Archdeacon of *Leicester*, and Prebendary of *Sarum*, *Redman*, Master of *Trinity College*, *Cambridge*, and Prebendary of *Westminster*, and *Cox*, Almoner to the King, and Dean of *Westminster* and *Christchurch*, *Oxon*. Tho I conjecture the main of the Work went through some few of these Men's Hands. For three of
those

A N N O those Bishops, *Thirleby, Skyp* and *Day*, protested against the Bill for this
 1548. Liturgy, when it past their House. And I believe *Robertson* and *Red-*
man liked it as little.

Fourthly, The Rules they went by in this Work was, the having an eye and respect unto the most sincere and pure Christian Religion taught by the holy Scriptures, and also to the Usage of the Primitive Church.

Fifthly, The Book being finished, they delivered it to the King, which is said to be *To the great comfort and quietness of his Mind.*

Sixthly, As for the Work it self, as it is said to be don, by one Uniform Agreement, so also *By the Aid of the Holy Ghost*: Such was the high and venerable Esteem then had of it,

Lastly, The Parliament, both Lords and Commons, the Representatives of the whole Kingdom, had such a value for the whole Composure, "That they gave unto the King most hearty and lowly Thanks for it, and for his most Godly Travail in Collecting and gathering together the said Archbishop, Bishops and Learned Men, and for the Godly Prayers, Orders, Rites and Ceremonies in the said Book; and considered the Honour of GOD and the great Quietness, which by the Grace of GOD would ensue upon it: and finally, concluded the Book such, that it would give occasion to every honest Man most willingly to embrace it.

Singing of the
 Psalms Au-
 thorized.

Let me moreover take notice of a *Proviso* in this Act concerning Singing of Psalms in Public, used then customarily, and probably some good while before this, by the Gospellers, according as the Reformed in other Countries used to do; yet without any Authority. This Practise was now Authorized by vertue of the said *Proviso*, which ran in this Tenor; "Provided also, That it shal be lawful for al Men as well in Churches, Chapels, Oratories, or other Places, to use openly any Psalm or Prayer taken out of the Bible, at any due time; not letting or omitting therby the Service, or any part thereof mentioned in the said Book. From hence it is that the Title Page of our present Books, the Hymns and Psalms in Metre cary these Words "Set forth and allowed to be sung in all Churches of all the People together, before and after Morning and Evening Prayer, and also before and after Sermons; and moreover in Private Houses, for their Godly Solace and Comfort. Which may serve to explain to us what the ordinary Times of their Singing together these Psalms were: Namely, before they began the Morning Service, and after it was don. Likewise, when there was a Sermon, before it began, and after it was finished. As for the Psalms or Hymns thus allowed, they seem to be those that are yet set before and after our present Singing Psalms, done by *Dr. Cox*, *W. Whittingham*, *Robert Wisdom*, Eminent Divines in those Times, and others; and some of *Dauids* Psalms, don by *Sternbold*, *Hopkins* and others. It is certain that *Sternbold* Composed several at first for his own Solace. For he Set and Sung them to his Organ. Which Musick King EDWARD VI. sometime hearing (for he was a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber) was much delighted with them. Which occasioned his Publication and Dedication of them to the said King. After, when the whole Book of Psalms (with some other Hymns) were completely finished in Verse (don as it seems by *Hopkins* and certain other Exiles

Exiles in Queen MARY'S Reign) this Clause in the aforesaid Act gave A N N O them their Authority for their Public Use in the Church hitherto.

1548.

This Book of Common Prayer was Printed first in the Month of June. And a Second Edition therof came forth, March 8. following, with very little Difference; only that in the first Edition the Litany was put between the Communion Service and the Office for Baptism: In the Second, it was set at the End of the Book.

The first E. c
ditions of th
Book.

And thus by the Help and Concurrence of the Three Estates, Religion became happily planted in this Island, reformed from Abuses and Corruptions of long Time introduced into it. But the Papists were very angry to see their old Superstitious Ceremonies thus laid aside; and those that came after, laboured all they could to Asperse and Enervate it, by calling the Religion, a *Parlamentary Religion*, (so Dr. Hill,) and the Church of *England* thus reformed, a *Parlament Church*, so Dr. Briflow.) As tho' it were forged and framed in Parliament by secular Men; and that Ecclesiastics, whose chief Business it had been, had not been consulted herein. But in Truth and Reality it was not so. For the Consideration and Preparation of this Book of Common Prayer, together with other Matters in Religion, was committed first of all to divers Learned Divines, as was shewn before. And what they had Concluded upon was offered the Convocation. And after all this, the Parliament approved it, and gave it its Ratification. The which is more fully shewed and declared by the Pen of a very Knowing and Learned Mn. Viz.

The Papists
asperse this
Reformation.

"The Religion which was then and is now Established in *England*, is drawn out of the Fountains of the Word of GOD, and from the purest Orders of the Primitive Church. Which for the ordinary Exercise therof, when it had been collected into the Book of Common Prayer, by the Pains and Labour of many Learned Men, and of mature Judgment, it was afterwards confirmed by the upper and lower House. Yet not so, but that the more Material Points were disputed and debated in the Convocation House by Men of both Parties: and might further have been discussed, so long as any Popish Divine had ought reasonably to say.-----And then it being intended to add to Ecclesiastical Decision the Corroboration of secular Government, according to the Antient Custom of this Kingdom, (as appeareth by Record from the Time of King EDWARD the Third) the Parliament, which is the most Honorable Court of Christendom, did Ratify the same. That so all of all Orders and Degrees might be bound to serve the LORD of Heaven; not after their own Fancies, but as himself had prescribed. And that this Order hath been the Custom of good Princes, to cal their Nobles and their People to joyn with them for the Establishing of GOD'S Service, every Man may know, who wil but look into the Stories of the Bible. *Joshua*, Josh. xxiii. 22. *David*, 1 Chron. xxviii. 1. *Aza*, 2 Chron. xv. 9.

But falsely;
Dr. Geo. Abbot
ag. Hill. p. 104.

So that the Reformation went well forward: And by the latter End of this Year Religion and Divine Worship became pretty well purged from Error and Superstition; wherat all good Men took great Satisfaction. But notwithstanding this great Evil accompanied this great Good, that many Self-ended Men took this Occasion to labour the diminishing the Revenues of the Church, and the taking away a great Part of the Lands and Livings of the Bishops, the Deans and the Prebendaries; suggesting,

The Revenues
of the Church
injured.

ANNO
1548.

Hobbies Letter
to that Pur-
pose.
Galba. B. 12.

gesting, that the Wealth and Dignities of the former Prelats made them such Hinderers of the Gospel, and Obstructors of the Word of GOD; And that the Prebends might be far better bestowed upon other secular Men and politick Uses. One of these Welwillers to the Clergies Revenues, Sir *Philip Hobby* seems to have been: Who, being this Year Ambassador with the Emperor, had this lucky Occasion offered to vent his Mind plainly to the Protector in this Matter. For hearing how some of the *German* Protestants laid the Blame of their Wars and Miseries upon their *Papish* Bishops: Who were Princes, and Men of great and high Estate, and had their Dependences chiefly upon the Pope; and so did the more vigorously oppose the Reformation there; and observing what great Enemies therefore they were to the flourishing State of the Bishops, thinking it irreconcilable with the Gospel; the said Ambassador made this Relation of it to the Protector, with the Addition of his own Judgment and Wishes: which I chuse to set down in his own Words, in his Letter written *Jan. 19.* "Of our Proceedings in *England* in Matters of Religion, are sundry Discourses here made. The Protestants have good Hopes, and pray earnestly therefore, that the King's Majesty being warned by the late Ruin of *Germany*, happening by the Bishops Princely and Lordly Estates, will take order for the Redress thereof in his Dominions: and appoint unto the good Bishops an honest and competent Living, sufficient for their Maintenance, taking from them the rest of their worldly Possessions and Dignities; and thereby avoid the vain Glory that letteth them truly and sincerely to do their Duty, and preach the Gospel and Word of CHRIST. They on the other side doubt not, but my Lords the Bishops, being a great Number, Stout and well Learned Men, will well enough weigh against their Adversaries, and maintain still their Estate, which coming to pass, they have good Hope in time these Princely Pillars shall well enough quiet this Fury, and bring all Things again to the old Order. Thus these Men, having their sole Expectation converted to the Success hereof, cease not to talk their Minds diversly. Thus *Hoby.*

And to shew his Mind for taking away at one Clap all the *Prebends* in *England*, he took his Occasion from some News he had to impart. Yesterday as he related in the same Letter, was mustered here [i. e. at *Brussels*] five Bands of Horsemen, being in Number about 1500. which shall go towards *Spires*, to meet the Prince of *Spain*. Among whom, by all Mens Reports that saw them, there were so many toward and handsome Gentlemen, so well horsed and armed, and in all Points so well in Order, as hath few Times in so small a Company been seen. Which when I heard, remembring what great Service such a Number of chosen Men were able to do, specially in our Country, wherein is so much lack of good Horsemen, it caused me to declare under your Graces Correction, what I thought, earnestly to wish with all my Heart, that standing so with the King's Majesties Pleasure, and your Prudence, all the *Prebends* within *England* were converted to the like Use, for the Defence of our Country, and Maintenance of honest poor Gentlemen. Wherin, if I wish amiss, or shall seem unto your Grace over-presumptuous in the Declaration thereof, I shall most humble beseech your Goodness to pardon my Boldness, and interpret

"interpret my true meaning to the best Part. What Harm the sug-
 "gesting of such Counsils as these did, sufficiently appeared in this
 "Reign. A N N O
1548.

But perhaps *Hoby's* Partiality towards martial Men, who was a war-
 like Man himself, may make some Excuse for his Judgment. King
 HENRY VIII. towards the Latter End of his flourishing Reign, moved
 by his Zeal to see his Subjects Profit in vertuous Qualities, wherby
 they might the better do him Service; Established an Order for the
 Maintenance of Artillery; appointing a certain Corporation, unto
 which for this Respect he gave certain Privileges by a Patent. This,
 how much it served for the framing of Men meet for Service, both
 for the Harquebus and great Ordnance, was easily perceived, in that a
 Number of this Corporation in a small Time became perfect Masters in
 this military Skill. But this Corporation decayed, and became now
 much neglected. A great Reason wherof was, because it was not
 confirmed by this King: Now about the Month of *January*, one *Anthony*,
 an Artillery Man it seems, and his Company, took upon them to
 sollicite this Busines; and Sir *Philip Hoby*, who was Master of the Ord-
 nance, tho' now, as was said above, Ambassador abroad, wrot to the L.
 Protector, earnestly putting him in remembrance of this Suit, and to
 take such Order in it as might be Expedient. And being informed how
 unfurnished of Necessary Munition his Office was, he remembered the
 Protector also of making timely Provision there, lest Negligence might
 be imputed to those, as he wrot, that ought to sollicite the same. And
 he prayed him also to consider and take some Order for the Payments
 of the Debts of the same Office of the Ordnance, being about 7000 l,
 which caused the Officers to lose their Credit, and be unable upon their
 Word to make any further Provisions, before this were cleared.

The Artillery
Corporation.

The Office of
the Ordnance.

The Plenty of this present Season made Corn so cheap, that it was
 thought necessary to have it Transported. For Allowance and Encourage-
 ment wherof the King's Proclamation went forth, Dated from *Leighs, March*
 30. to this Tenor; "That where the King's most Royal Majesty by his
 "Proclamation, bearing Date at *Westminster* the 7th. of *December* last,
 "had straitly charged and commanded his Subjects, that after the pub-
 "lishing of the same, they should not transport, or carry over the Seas
 "into any other Parts any maner of Grain, &c. And forasmuch as
 "(Thanks be unto Almighty GOD) there was at that Present great
 "Plenty and Abundance of Wheat and other Corn within the Realm,
 "wherby the Farmers and others, which used Tilling and Manuring of
 "their Lands, might not sell their Wheat and other Grain, but at very
 "low Prizes, to their utter undoing; unless that some Remedy might
 "be provided in that Behalf; The King's most Excellent Majesty with
 "the Advice, &c. granted, and by that present Proclamation gave free
 "Liberty and Licence to all and singular his Loving Subjects to im-
 "bark, ship and cary over the Seas all maner of Wheat and other
 "Kinds of Grain, Oats only excepted; so long as a Quarter of Wheat
 "should be under the Price of Six Shillings and Eight Pence the
 "Quarter; Barly, Malt and Ry Five Shillings the Quarter; Pease and
 "Beans Four Shillings the Quarter, at the Time of Imbarking, &c.

A Licence to
carry over
Corn.
Noble Man's
Seat in Essex.

ANNO

1548.

C H A P. XII.

Slanders raised of the King. No Preaching without Licence. Rebels in Cornwall. Pardoned. Commission upon Inclosures. Order to the Earl of Suffex to raise Men. Exportation of Leather forbid. Stipendiaries, and Chantry Priests.

Slanders of
the King's
Proceedings

THE King's *Proceedings*, (as his Steps in the Reforming and Ordering of this Church were called) however pious his Intent was thereby, namely, that one good Uniformity might be had throughout all his Realms; yet gave Displeasure to many Preachers and Priests of the Popish Sort; who took occasion in Confession, and otherwise to move the King's Subjects to Disobedience and Stubbornness against his Orders. And other light Persons sowed abroad false Rumours against him: Telling out that they heard say, that the King should take and set upon them new and strange Exactions: As on every one that married, Half a Crown; Likewise the same Duty upon every Christning and Burial, and such other lying Surmizes. And hereby many were seduced and brought into such Disorder of late, and in some Parts in a manner to Insurrection and Rebellion, as we shall hear by and by.

Preaching
forbid with-
out Licence.

Much Harm also was now don in disaffecting the People by seditious and contentious Preaching. To prevent the further Hurt thereof the King by a Proclamation, *April 24.* charged and commanded that no Man hereafter should be permitted to preach, (however they might read the Homilies) except he were licenced by the King, the Lord Protector, or the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, under their Seals. And the same Licence to be shewed to the Parson or Curat, and two Honest Men of the Parish beside, before his Preaching, upon Pain of Imprisonment, both of the Preacher and of the Curat that suffered him to preach without Licence. And a Charge was given to all Justices to look to this diligently. So that now no Bishop (except the Archbishop of *Canterbury*) might licence any to preach in his own Diocese, nay, nor might preach himself without Licence: So I have seen Licences to preach granted to the Bishop of *Exeter*, *An. 1551.* and to the Bishops of *Lincoln* and *Chichester*, *An. 1552.*

Some have
two Wives.

There were also other unlearned and ill-disposed People, who whispered now into Mens Ears ill Opinions against God's Laws and the good Order of the Realm; As some taught, that a Man might forsake his Wife and marry another, his first Wife yet living, and likewise that the Wife might do so to the Husband. Others taught, that a Man might have two Wives, or more at once; And that these were prohibited not by God's Law, but by the Bishops of *Rome*. And so by these phantastical Opinions some did marry, and kept two Wives: The King understanding

derstanding this, charged by the Proclamation aforesaid, all Archbishops and Bishops, and others that had Spiritual Jurisdiction, to proceed against such as had, or should hereafter have two Wives, or any that should put away his Wife, and marry another: And to punish such Offenders according to the Ecclesiastical Laws, that others might be afraid to fall into such insolent and unlawful Acts. And Lastly, it was required that all the King's Officers should detect such to the Archbishops or Bishops, or others that exercised Spiritual Jurisdiction, and aid the same to the Punishment of such evil Doers.

A N N O
1548.

The Judges and Justices of the Peace, (namely such as were then within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, or Suburbs) were required by Proclamation, dated at *Westminster*, April 30. to appear before the King's Council in the Star Chamber on Friday by Eight of the Clock in the Morning: there to know further of his Majesty's Will and Pleasure. The Reason of this Summons, I make no doubt, was because of the Suspicion of some Disturbances and Mutinyings in the Country, which soon after brake out more openly. And this appeared from the Charge (extant in *Fox's History*) which the Lord Chancellor *Rich* gave them, when they met in the Star Chamber: Which was, among other Things, "That they should go down into their several Countries, and there see good Order kept, and the King's Laws obeyed: And that if there should chance any lewd or light Fellows to make any Routs, Riots, or unlawful Assemblies, or seditious Meetings, or Uproars, by the Motion of some private Traitors, to appease them at the first, and apprehend the first Authors. Not (said he, concealing however their Jealousies at Court) as if we feared any such Thing, or that there is any such Thing likely to chance: but we give you warning, lest it might. And for the same Purpose he required them to see in their several Countries, that Horse and Harness and other Furniture of Weapons were ready, according to the Laws of the Land.

The Judges
and Justices
cited to the
Star Cham-
ber.

And indeed they were already up in *Cornwal*, and the Parts thereabouts, even in the Month of *April*, where, by the Means of some Popishly affected Persons, many idle lying Insinuations of the King's Doings or Intentions were buzzed about into the Heads of the People, to blow them up into Discontents: chiefly as it seems upon the King's Proceedings. Which the Ignorant People refusing to obey, it came at last to that Pass, that they got together in great Numbers and made an open Rebellion. And in this Confusion, one *William Body*, Gentleman, one on the King's Side, was slain. But at length they were quelled, and begged the King's Mercy, and obtained it: Yet the chief Ringleaders were excepted and reserved for Execution. This general Pardon was dated at *Westminster*, May 17. in the Second Year of the King. And it ran to this Purport:

A Rebellion
in *Cornwal*.

"Albeit that many of the King's Highness Subjects and Commons, Dwelling and Inhabiting in that Shire of *Cornwal*, or in any other Place or Isle, being reputed, or taken for any Part, Parcel or Member of the same Shire, and such other the King's Subjects inhabiting in other Places; have now of late attempted and committed manifest and open Rebellion against his Majesty within the said Shire, or the Limits of the same: Wherby was like to have ensued the utter Ruin and Destruction of that whole Shire; And to the high Displeasure of Almighty God, who straitly commandeth you to obey your

Pardoned.

A N N O

1548.

“Sovereign Lord and King in all things, and not with Violence to Resist his Wil and Command for any Cause whatsoever it be: Nevertheless the Kings most Royal Majesty perceiving by Credible Reports, that your said Offences proceeded of Ignorance and Evil Inticements, and by occasion of sundry false Tales, never purposed, minded, nor intended by his Highness, nor any of his Council; but most Craftily contrived and most spitefully set abroad among you by certain Malicious and Seditious Persons. And thereupon his Highness inclined to extend his most gracious Pity and Mercy towards you, having the chief Charge over you under God, both of your Souls and Bodies; and desiring rather the Preservation of the same, and your Reconciliation by his Merciful Means, than by the Order of Rigor of Justice to punish you according to your Demerits; Of his inestimable Goodness, replenisht with most Godly Pity and Mercy; and at your most humble Pitions and Submissions made unto him; Is contented and pleased to give and grant, and by this present Proclamation doth give and grant unto you all, and unto all and every of your Confederates, whersoever they dwell, of whatsoever Estate, Degree or Condition soever, &c. His General and free Pardon for all Maner of Treasons, Rebellions, Insurrections, &c. And for all Maner of unlawful Assemblies, unlawful Conventicles, unlawful Speaking of Words, &c. From the Time of the beginning of the said Rebellion, when it was, until the first Day of May last past, &c. Provided that this general and free Pardon shall not extend unto *John Williams, William Kilter, John Kilter, John Kelion, Richard Trewela, &c.* And about 26 or 27 Persons more.

A Proclamation
against Inclo-
sures.

And that these Insurrections might be prevented for the future, occasioned in a great measure by the Poverty and Discontent that reigned in the Country by reason of the Decay of Tillage, and the inclosing of Land for Pasturage; therefore a Commission was granted, to inquire into these Abuses. And on the 1. of June there went out a notable Proclamation against Inclosures, Letting Houses fall to decay, and unlawful Converting of Arable Ground into Pastures which Accompanied the Commissioners. It set forth, “That the King, the Lord Protectors Grace, and the rest of the Privy Council were Advertised and put in remembrance, as wel by divers Supplications and pitiful Complaints of the Kings poor Subjects, as also by other wise and discrete Men, having Care of the good Order of the Realm; That of late, by the inclosing of Lands and Arable Grounds in divers and sundry Places of the Realm, many had been driven to extreme Poverty, and compelled to leave the Places where they were Born, and to seek them Beings in other Countries with great Misery and Poverty: Insomuch as in Time past ten, twenty, yea, in some Places an 100 or 200 Christen People have been inhabiting, and kept Households to the bringing up and nourishing of Youth, and to the replenishing and fulfilling of his Majesties Realm with faithful Subjects; who might serve both Almighty God, and the Kings Majesty to the Defence of this Realm; now there is nothing kept but Sheep or Bullocks. All that Land which heretofore was tilled and occupied with so many Men, and did bring forth not only divers Families in Work and Labour, but also Capons, Hens, Chickens, Piggs, and other such Furniture of the Markets, is now gotten by unsatiable Greediness of Mind into one or two Mens Hands,

" Hands, and scarcely dwelt upon with one poor Shepherd. So that *ANNO*
" the Realm thereby was brought to a Marvellous Desolation, Houses *1548.*
" decayed, Parishes diminished, the Force of the Realm weakned, and
" Christen People, by the greedy Covetousness of some Men, eaten up
" and devoured of Brute Beasts, and driven from their Houses by Sheep
" and Bullocks. And that altho of the same thing many sundry Complaints
" and Lamentations have been heretofore made, and by the most Wise
" and Discrete Princes, his Majesties Father and Grandfather, &c. with
" the Consent and Assent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal in di-
" vers Parlements Assembled, divers and sundry Laws and Acts of Par-
" lament, and most Godly Ordinances in their severall Times, have been
" made for the Remedy thereof: Yet the insatiable Covetousness of Men
" doth not cease dayly to encroach hereupon, and more and more to
" waite the Realm after this sort, bringing Arable Grounds into Pasture,
" and letting Houses, whole Families and Copyholds to fall down, de-
" cay and be waite:

" Wherefore his Highness is greatly moved both with a pitiful and
" tender Zele to his most Loving Subjects; especially to the Poor which
" are minded to Labour and Travail for their Livings, and forced to
" live an idle and loitering Life; and of a most necessary regard to the
" Surety and Defence of his Realm, which must be defended against the
" Enemy with Force of Men and the Multitude of true Subjects, not
" with Flocks of Sheep, and Drovers of Beasts.

" And further, it is Advertised, that by the ungodly and uncharitable
" means aforesaid, the said Sheep and Oxen being brought into a few
" Mens Hands, a great Multitude of them being together, and so made
" great Drovers and Flocks, as wel by natural Reason, as also, as it may
" be justly thought, by the due Punishment of GOD for such Unchari-
" tableness, great Rotts and Murryns, both of Sheep and Bullocks,
" have lately been sent of GOD, and seen in the Realm: the which
" should not by al Reason so soon fall, if the same were Dispersed into
" divers Mens Hands. And the said Cattel also by all likelihood of
" Truth should be more cheap, being in many Mens Hands as they be
" now in few, who may hold them dear, and tary their Advantage of
" the Market.

" And therefore, He, by thea dvice of his most intirely Beloved Uncle,
" the Duke of *Somerset*, &c. and the rest of his Majesties Privy Coun-
" cil, hath weighed most deeply all the said things, and upon the afore-
" said Considerations; and of Princely Desire and Zele, to se that Godly
" Laws made with great Travail, and approved by Experience, and by
" the wise Heads in the Time of the said most prudent Princes, should
" not be made in vain, but put in Ure and Execution; Hath appointed,
" according to the said Acts and Proclamations, a View and Enquiry
" to be made of all such as contrary to the said Acts and Godly Ord-
" nances, have made Enclosures and Pastures of that which was Arable
" Ground, or let any House, Tenement or Mease decay and fall down;
" or otherwise committed, or don any thing to the Contrary of the
" good and wholsome Articles contained in the said Acts. And ther-
" fore, Willeth and Commandeth all his Loving Subjects, who know
" any such Defaults and Offences contrary to the Wealth and Profit of
" this Realm of *England*, and the said Godly Laws and Acts of Parla-
" ment

ANNO 1548. "ment don and committed by any Person, whosoever he or they be, to
 "insinuate and give Information of the Offence to the Kings Majesties
 "Commissioners, who be appointed to hear the same, so truly and
 "faithfully, that neither for Favour nor Fear they omit to tel the
 "Truth of any; nor for Displeasure name any Man who is not guilty
 "therof: That a convenient and speedy Reformation might be made
 "herein, to the Honor of God and the Kings Majesty, and the Wealth
 "and Benefit of the whole Realm.

Commissioners appointed for Enquiry therinto.

So that, that these Abuses and hard Pressures upon the poor Commons might be the more effectually remedied, Commissions were now given out to divers Persons of Quality and Integrity, for Enquiry into these Misdemeanors, throughout *England*. For the Counties of *Oxon*, *Berks*, *Warwic*, *Leicester*, *Bedford*, *Bucks* and *Northampton*, were appointed Sir *Francis Russel*, Sir *Foulk Grevil*, Knts. *John Hales*, *John Marsh*, *William Pynnock*, *Roger Amys*. And at their Meeting for Executing this Commission, *John Hales* made an Excellent Exhortation or Charge to the People, who were sworn to make Presentments. Wherein he first explained to them the good Laws made against these Corruptions. Wherof one was, that no Man should keep above the number of two Thousand Sheep: another, that those that had the Scites of any Monasteries suppressed, should keep continual Household upon the same, and occupy as much of the Demeans in Tillage as had been occupied within twenty Years before. Which notwithstanding were not regarded nor obeyed. Wherby Towns, Villages and Parishes decayed daily in great numbers; Houses of Husbandry, and poor Mens Habitations utterly destroyed every where: Husbandry the very Nourishment of the whole Body of the Realm, greatly abated, and the Kings Subjects wonderfully Diminished; as appeared by the new Books of the Musters compared with the old, and with the *Chronicles*. And how all this grew through the great Dropsy of the Realm, that is, the Covetousness of many Men, given to their own private Profit, but passed nothing of the Commonwealth. He shewed, how the former King *HENRY VIII.* and the present King *EDWARD*, for want of their own natural Subjects to serve them in their Wars, were forced to hire *Almains*, *Italians* and *Spaniards*. And that this was the Cause the King was fain to build so many Castles and Bulwarks by the Sea-side. And the Charges by these means waxing daily greater and greater, he was of necessity driven to ask so great Subsidies as he did. He went on, and shewed how these Covetous Men were disappointed. For they reckoned to leave great Possessions to their Children, and to make their Families Noble: Whereas many times their Children, before their Fathers were laid in their Graves, consumed and wasted all away upon Harlots, Gaming and leud Company. And so, evil got, worse spent. But the whole Charge is well drawn up, and containeth in it so many Matters proper to give Light into these Times and Affairs that I have put both it and the Commission into the *Repository*. These Commissioners went down into the Countries and spent the Summer in this necessary Business.

The Commons notwithstanding ready to rise.

But these Commissions could not be so carefully and diligently executed, but the Commons were ready to Right themselves; and began to talk boldly, that if Remedy were not presently had for reducing of Farms and Copyholds to their wonted State, that they would not fail among themselves to attempt the Reformation thereof. And some of them

them were ready to pull down Inclosures, the Commissioners still sitting. *A N N O*
 But where the Commissioners were discrete, as those were that were ap- *1548.*
 pointed for *Oxon, Bucks, Berks, &c.* Stayed them by their good Ma-
 nagement from their Attempts.

Such Bruits as these came plentifully to Court. This occasioned Let-
 ters from the Protector and Council written in *August*, to the Commis-
 sioners. Advising them in their return homeward to pass by all the good
 Towns and other notable Places, where they had sitten before in Com-
 mission, and to declare that the King had sent them on purpose to take
 Notice of these Grievances, in Order to reform them, (which he would
 do in time convenient for it,) and to assure them of the Good Wil of
 the King and Council to them for their Benefit, as much as they could
 wish; exhorting them therefore to remain good and quiet Subjects. But
 the Answer which *Hales* gave to the Protector dated from *Coventry, Aug.*
25. shewed, That his Enemies, whom this Commission chiefly touched,
 did rather give out these Rumours, than that there was much Truth in
 them. For he assured the Protector the People were in good Quiet,
 and daily resorted to him to take his Advice in making their Presentments.
 So that he concluded this to be don to dash the Commission, or to put to
 shame the Commissioners. And therefore that there would not lack Tales,
 Surmises and Practises for that purpose. And that the Hand of the Pa-
 pists was in this, perceiving the Execution of the Commission would be
 an Establishment to Christs Religion in the Peoples Hearts. For they
 could not but love it, when they saw it brought forth such good Fruit.
 He prayed the Protector therefore, that when such Rumours again came
 to him, he would learn the Names of the Offenders and the Accusers:
 and then the Matter would soon be tried, where Punishment was re-
 quired. But that according to the Charge given them, the Commis-
 sioners, they intended to do at their Return, and what Transgressors
 they should find, to commit to Ward, til his Majesties pleasure were
 further known concerning them. He shewed the Protector moreover
 what Practices were used, and Threatnings and Revilings towards
 those honest Men, that were sworn to present the Offenders. And in
 fine, he put the Protector in hope, that they should find the Commo-
 nalty in their Circuit (at least) quiet, and some of them better disposed to
 Religion and the Kings Proceedings than they were before.

The Kings
 and Protectors
 kind Message
 to them.

Such Reports also came to the Earl of *Warwic's* Ears, being then at
Warwic; Insomuch that he grew much displeased with *Hales*, who
 acted very honestly in this Commission, and favourably to the Com-
 mons. Which occasioned him to write at large to the said Earl, answer-
 ing the two Causes of his Displeasure against him, (according as he had
 taken it from *Hales's* Enemies, that were secret Papists.) The One
 was, that he should sue out the Commission against Inclosures in that
 troublesome Time. The Other, That in the Execution of it by his
 Charge to the People, he stirred up the Commons against the Nobility
 and Gentry. But *Hales* in a Letter to him dated from *Fladbury, August*
12. as to the former, profest he thought upon nothing less than Inclo-
 sures, when he was appointed to be a Commissioner, and willed to
 prepare to see the same executed. But he thought it not his Part, he
 said, to deny to serve, nor to let that that the King and his Council
 minded to set forward: The Sore, he added, was brought to such an
 Extremity

Displeasure a-
 gainst *Hales*
 for his Com-
 mission.

ANNO
1548.

Extremity, that if it were not remedied, all the Realm would rue. And besides, that this was no new Motion, for as long as he had Knowledge of Things, all Men had cryed out against Inclosures. He meant not, he said, hedging in Lands, but decaying Tillage and Husbandry. Some had complained to the Parliament, some in their Sermons, some in Books. And as to the Second, that he should by his Hortation set the Commons against the Nobility and Gentlemen, he said, that he never spake any Word, but some of the Commissioners were present; who he doubted not would testify for him in this Part to his Accuser's Shame. And then he declared unto the Earl the chief Points of the Charge he gave at that Time, which had not one Word that tended that Way as was surmized. And therein he was sure that he offended neither GOD nor the King, nor gave occasion to any honest Man to be offended; Saying, that whosoever that reported any otherwise to his Lordship, he trusted, should be found the Child of the Devil, and not of GOD. For he is true, and his Children will not ly. He concluded, praying his Lordship for GOD's Sake (tho' he trusted he should not need to put him in Remembrance) to remember the Poor, to have Mercy and Compassion on them, and that he would not go about to hinder them. That the hindring of them, if we considered it well, should be our own Hindrance at length. That GOD had as much Respect to the Poor as to the Rich, to the poor Man as to the Gentleman, and to every Man indifferently. It grieved him much, he said, that those that seemed to favour GOD's Word should go about to hinder or speak evil of this Thing: wherby the End and Fruit of GOD's Word, that is Love and Charity to our poor Neighbours, should be so set forth and published to the World. In a Word, he exhorted to take Example by the *Germans*, who because they were Bablers, and no Doers of GOD's Word, were then and worthily punished and brought to extreme Misery and Servitude, praying GOD the like happened not to them.

The Gospel-
lers, Friends
to this Com-
mission.

It appears hence, that the Favourers of the Gospel did especially further and promote this Commission, and laboured to remedy those Oppressions towards the Poor: Knowing what Lessons of Compassion and Benignity true Religion required; and reckoning, that hereby the Gospel would receive the better Countenance in the Country, when they saw how it produced Love and Charity towards the poor Neighbours, when others oppressed and vexed them.

Hath not its
desired effect.

But tho' the good Duke of *Somerset* took all this Pains, and employed many honest Men (such as Mr. *Hales*) in this charitable Work, to put a Stop to the impoverishing and dispiriting of the Poor; and to heal their Discontents, which he foresaw also a great Danger in; yet such was the greedy Avarice of the Gentry, that all these Endeavours proved unsuccessful; many great Men at the Court, and the Earl of *Warwic*, it seems, among the rest, backing them, being themselves probably guilty in that Behalf. The severe Effects of which appeared, as was feared, the next Year, in Insurrections almost throughout the Kingdom. The Jealousies of which were at present so great, that besides these gentler Methods, it was thought necessary to summon all the Realm to be ready to arm, upon the Fears of intestine Turmoils, as well as upon the present Hostility with *France* and *Scotland*. Such an Order I find now sent in *May* to the Earl of *Suffex*, dwelling in *Norfolk*, as no Question, the

the like were sent to others of the Nobility and Gentry : This to that A N N O
Nobleman was as follows.

1548.

By the KING.

EDWARD.

Right Trusty and Right welbeloved, We greet you wel. And being credibly informed that there is a great Aid put in a Readiness to be sent shortly by the Seas into Scotland : in the which there shall be, as we be also certainly advertised a Number of Men at Arms sent for Defence of the Scots Impeachment of our Affairs, and further Annoyance of our Dominions and Subjects ; Like as we have already, with the Advice and Consent of our dearest Uncle the Duke of Somerset, Governor of our Person, and Protector of our Realms, Dominions and Subjects, and the rest of our Privy Council, both foreseen this Matter and prepared for the same in all other Parts in such sort, as if any thing shall upon Courage of this Aid be Attempted against any our Ports, Pieces or Subjects, the same shall be with help of Almighty God so met withal, as they shall have smal Cause to boast themselves of their Doings : So being no less careful to provide also for the surety of our most Loving Subjects in all other Events, Wee have thought good and necessary to have out of hand put in Order a Sufficient Number of Horsemen of sundry sorts, to be employed for defence and safeguard of our said Subjects, Dominions and Countries, as occasion shall serve. And for this it is, knowing your accustomed Towardness and Good Wil toward the Advancement of our Service, We have, with the Advice and Consent aforesaid, thought meet to pray and require you among others of that our County of Norfolk to have in ful Areadiness by the 10th of June next ensuing, two good and hable Horses or Geldings meet to serve in the Field for Demilances with two Demilances to be employed upon the same, harnessed, Weaponed and Furnished in all things, as appertaineth : Putting the same in such Order and Arreadiness, as upon one hours Warning after the said 10th of June, they may be in ful readiness to set forward to any such Place, as by Us or our said dearest Uncle and Council shal be appointed unto you. Wherof We require you not to fail, as ye tender the Advancement of our Service. Teven under our Signet at our Palace of Westminster the 16th of May, in the Second Tear of Our Reign.

To the Earl
of Suffex to
provide
Horse
Titus B. 2.

E. SOMERSET.

There was now so great Exportation of Leather, that there became a mighty scarcity and lack thereof at home for the necessary Use of the People : and the Prizes of that Commodity rose to great, high and unsupportable Rates, which caused a Proclamation dated from Westminster, June 1. That no maner of Person should carry or export out of the Realm any maner of Leather or Salt Hides unto any strange Nation without expresse Licence.

Exporting of
Leather pro-
hibited.

By Vertue of the Act made last Year, wherby Chauntries was given to the King, the Commissioners appointed for Execution of the same, were empowered to assign to the Stipendiary Priests that attended those Chaun-

Care taken a-
bout the Pen-
sions of Sti-
pendiary and
Chauntry
Priests.

A N N O tries whose Salaries the King was intituled to, and to every Fellow and
 1548. poor Person that was wont to have Yearly Relief out of any of those
 Colleges, free Chappels or Chauntries, such Yearly Annuities, Pensions
 or other Recompences, during their Lives, as by them should be
 thought convenient : And therupon to make Assignments and Orders for
 the Payment to the said Priests or other. This occasioned vast numbers
 of Stipendiaries and other poor People that claimed these Pensions to
 flock to *London*, for getting them assigned to them. So that the Court,
 the Lord Protectors House, the Court of Augmentations, and other
 Courts and Places, were extremely pestered with them. Whereupon to
 satisfy these Men, and to deliver the Town of such Confluxes of unneces-
 sary People, a Proclamation was issued forth, dated at *Westminster*, May
 14. To this Tenor; " That the Kings Majesty of his tender Zele and
 " Love which he bore to his Loving Subjects, understanding that di-
 " vers Chauntry Priests, poor Men and other Men, of late dissolved Colle-
 " ges, Chauntries, free Chappels, &c. Which by the last Act of Par-
 " liament were come to his Hands, daily repaired to *London* to him, and
 " to the Protector, the Chancellor of the Augmentations and other
 " Courts for Assurance of their Pensions, to their great Cost and Charges
 " and no small Travail: By the Advice of his intyrelly beloved Un-
 " cle the Duke of *Somerset* and the rest of his Council, for the
 " avoiding of the same, had taken Order, that Commissioners should re-
 " pair down shortly to every Shire, and there should declare unto
 " them the Maner of the Payment of their said Pensions, so by the said
 " Act due, and to be appointed, and also for their said Patents of their
 " Pensions; in such fort and maner, and to the Proportion as they
 " should be therewith right wel contented. Wherefore his Highness
 " Willed and Commanded all manner of Chauntry Priests, Prebenda-
 " ries, Guild-priests, or any other who had repaired thither for that Pur-
 " pose, to return immediately down into their Countries.



CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

A Gift to the Lady MARY. The King minds the Public Affairs. Points of State Polity for the Kings Exercise. Consultation about the Coin. The Case of the Nation involved in War with France and Scotland. The Merchants of Antwerp wronged. The English Ambassadors interpose.

THIS Second Year of the King, to oblige his Sister the Lady MARY, and in Accomplishment of his Fathers last Testament, on May 17. He granted to Her the Lordship and Manor of *Kenningbal*, alias *Kenningale*, and the Rectory Improprate therof with the Appurtinances, in the County of *Norfolk*; and divers other Lordships, Manors, Lands, Tenements and Possessions in the Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Hertford*, *Essex*, *Bucks*, *Chester* and *Middlesex*. To the Yearly value of 3489-18-6 q. di. q. Rent reserved 99-18-6 q. di. The Time of the Issues of this Estate so granted was to Commence from the Feast of *St. Michael*, Anno 38 Hen. VIII.

Lands by the King granted to the Lady Mary. Book of Sales.

The young King tho' but Eleven Years of Age, did now seriously set himself to mind the Public Affairs of his Kingdom, and to Study to understand the State and Condition of it, and to provide for the safety and peace of himself and his People. And for this purpose he began to bethink himself how he might make use of the present Time with Advantage to himself and his Realm, and likewise to inspect more narrowly into his own Affairs, abroad and at home. And as to the former, how a great Point of his Security and Strength consisted in a good Understanding with his Neighbours. And as to his own Realm at Home, This also he saw required a great deal of Diligence, for the wel understanding, Regulation and Government therof. And for the better furnishing himself with Knowledge and Insight into these things, he delighted to hear and read Learned Men, and learn their Judgments. Among those he made great use of *William Thomas*, Esq; a Person (however unfortunate, being afterwards executed for Treason in Queen MARIES rough Reign) excellently qualified to instruct the King in these and such like Politic Matters, by his Travails Abroad, and his thorow Acquaintance with the *Roman* and other Histories, joyned with an accurate skill of dexterity in drawing proper and useful Inferences and Conclusions from former Accidents and Transactions.

The King sets himself to mind Public Affairs.

This *Thomas* drew up proper Questions of *State Polity*, devised for the Exercise of the young Kings Contemplations: Upon which the said

Thomas draws up Questions of *State Polity* for the King.

A N N O 1548. Learned Man purposed at his Leisure to compose distinct Discourses. He intitled them *Common Places of State*. Which together with his Prefatory Letter to the King, when he presented them may deserve a Place here.

To the KING's Highness,

Cott. Libr.
Titus B. 2.

Pleaseth your Excellent Majesty. Albeit that my greſſ Knowledge be utterly unapt to enterprize the Instruction of any Thing unto your Highness, whose Erudition I know to be such as every faithful Heart ought to rejoice at; yet imagining with my self, that hitherto your Majesty hath more applied your Study of the Tongues, than any Matter either of History or of Policy, (the Holy Scriptures excepted,) and considering, that since your Highness is by the Providence of GOD already grown to the Administration of that great and famous Charge, that hath been left unto you by your most noble Progenitors; there is no earthly Thing more necessary than the Knowledge of such Examples, as in this and other Regiments heretofore have happened: Methinks, of my bounden Duty I could no less do, than present unto your Majesty the Notes of those Discourses, that are now my principal Study, which I have gathered out of divers Authors; intending with Leisure to write the Circumstances of those Reasons that I can find to make most for the Purpose. And because there is nothing better learned than that which Man laboureth for himself, therefore I determined at this present to give unto your Highness this little Abstract only; Trusting, that like as in all kinds of vertuous Living and Exercise, ye have always shewed your self diligent; Even so in this Part, which concerneth the chief Maintenance of your high Estate, and Preservation of your Commonwealth, your Majesty would shew no less Industry than the Matter deserveth. For tho' these be but Questions, yet there is not so small an one among them, as will not administer matter of much Discourse, worthy the Argument and debating. Which your Highness may either for Pastime, or in Earnest, propound to the wisest Man. And whensoever there shall appear any Difficulty, that your Majesty would have discussed, if it shall stand with your Pleasure, I shall most gladly write the Circumstance of the best Discourses that I can gather touching that Part, and accordingly present it unto your Highness: Most humbly beseeching the same to accept my good Will in as good Part, as if I were of Ability to offer unto your Majesty a more worthy Thing.

Your Majesty's Most Humble Servant,

WILLIAM THOMAS.

Politic Questions.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p>1. Wherof hath grown the Authority of Aſtates; and how many Kinds of Aſtates there be?</p> <p>2. Which of all Aſtates is most commendable and necessary?</p> <p>3. Whether a Multitude without Head may prosper?</p> | <p>4. Whether is wiser and most constant, the Multitude or the Prince?</p> <p>5. Whether it is better for the Commonwealth, that the Power be in the Nobility, or in the People?</p> <p>6. Whether</p> |
|---|--|

6. Whether a mean Estate may bear a great Subject?
7. What Laws are necessary, and how they ought to be maintained?
8. How easily a weak Prince with good Order may long be maintained: And how soon a mighty Prince with little Disorder may be destroyed?
9. What causeth an Inheriter King to loose his Realm?
10. Whether Religion, beside the Honour of GOD, be not also the greatest Stay of Civil Order; and whether the Unity therof be not to be preserved with the Sword and Rigor?
11. Whether of the two is the more unkind, the People or the Prince?
12. How Unkindness may be eschewed.
13. What is the Occasion of Conspiracies?
14. Whether the People commonly desire the Destruction of him that is in Authority; and what moveth them so to do?
15. What a Man of Authority may do in the Multitude?
16. What is to be observed in chusing of Officers?
17. How Flatterers are to be known and despised?
18. How Mens Opinions in great Matters are to be pondered?
19. Whether in Judgments the mean Way ought to be observed?
20. Whether a Man of Authority ought to contemn his Inferiors?
21. How dangerous it is to leap from Humility unto Pride, and from Pity unto Cruelty?
22. Whether Men may easily be corrupted?
23. How much good Ministers are to be rewarded, and the Evil punished?
24. How dangerous it is to be Author of a new Matter?
25. Whether Accusations are necessary, and whether evil Reports are condemnable?
26. Whether evil Report lighteth not most commonly upon the Reporter?
27. Whether ambitious Men mounting from one Ambition to another, do first seek not to be offended, and afterward to offend?
28. Whether it be dangerous to make him an Officer, that once hath been misused?
29. Whether they be not often deceived, that think with Humility to overcome Pride?
30. What Force the Princes Example hath among the Subjects?
31. How a Prince ought to govern himself to attain Reputation?
32. What Things deserve either Praise or Reproach?
33. What is Liberality and Misery?
34. What is Cruelty and Clemency?
35. Whether Hate and Dispraise ought to be eschewed?
36. What is Fortune?
37. How Men be oftentimes blinded with Fortune?
38. Whether it be not necessary for him that would have continually good Fortune, to vary with the Time?
39. What Princes Amity is good?
40. Whether a puissant Prince ought to purchase Amity with Money, or with Vertue and Stoutness?
41. What Trust ought to be had in Leagues?
42. What is the Cause of War?
43. How many kinds of War there be?
44. How many kinds of Soldiers?
45. Whether they that fight for their own Glory are good and faithful Soldiers?
46. Why do Men over-run strange Countries?
47. How

ANNO
1548.

ANNO
1548.

47. How should a Prince measure his Force; and how rule himself in War?
48. Whether a manifest War towards, ought to be begun upon the Enemy, or abidden till the Enemy begin?
49. Whether it is better to assault or to defend?
50. Whether Money be the Substance of War, or not?
51. Whether weak Estates are ever doubtfully determining; and whether much Deliberation doth rather hurt than help?
52. Whether is greater in Conquest, Vertue or Fortune?
53. Whether prevaileth more in Fortune, Policy or Force?
54. What is Policy in War?
55. Whether Conquests are not sometimes more noysome than profitable?
56. Whether it be Wisdom to venture much?
57. What Means ought to be used in Defence?
58. Whether the Country ought not always to be defended, the Quarrel being right or wrong?
59. Whether Inconveniences ought rather to be qualified and overcome with Leisure; or at the first plainly repressed?
60. What Danger it is to a Prince, not to be revenged of an open Injury?
61. What Discommodity it is to a Prince to lack Armour?
62. How much ought Artillery to be esteemed?
63. Whether ought more to be esteemed, Footmen or Horsemen?
64. Whether it be dangerous to be served of strange Soldiers?
65. Whether is an Army better governed of one absolute Head, or of divers?
66. What ought the General of an Army to be?
67. Whether is more to be esteemed a good Captain with a weak Army, or a strong Army with a weak Captain?
68. Whether it be necessary, that General Captains have large Commissions?
69. What Advantage is it to foresee the Enemies Purpose?
70. Whether a Captain in the Field may forsake the Fight, if the Enemy will needs Fight?
71. What is it to be quick of Invention in time of Battle?
72. What Sufferance and Time is in Fight?
73. Whether it be necessary to assure the Army before the Fight?
74. Whether it be not necessary sometimes to feign Folly?
75. How to beware of Craft, when the Enemy seems to have committed a Folly?
76. What Advantage it is for a Captain to know the Ground?
77. Whether Skirmishes be good?
78. Whether Fortresses are not many Times more noysome than profitable?
79. Whether an excellent Man doth alter his Courage for any Adversity?
80. Whether Princes ought to be contented with reasonable Victories, and so to leave?
81. Whether Fury and Bravery be any Times necessary to obtain Purposes?
82. Whether Promises made by Force ought to be observed?
83. Whether it becomes not a Prince to pretend Liberality, when Necessity constraineth him to depart with Things?
84. What is Vertue; and when it is most esteemed?
85. What destroyeth the Memory of Things?

It becometh a Prince for his Wisdom to be had in Admiration, as well of his chiefeſt Counſillors, as of his other Subjects. And ſince nothing ſerveth more to that, than to keep the principal things of Wiſdom ſecret, till Occaſion require the Utterance, I would wiſh them to be kept ſecret; referring it nevertheleſs to your Maſteſty's good Will and Pleaſure. And ſo Mr. *Thomas* concluded his Paper above, of Queſtions of State and Government.

A N NO
1548.

Theſe uſeful Queſtions the King no doubt ſpent ſome Thoughts upon: And ſoon wanted to ſee *Thomas's* Diſcourſes upon the ſame.

To him therefore did the King now ſend certain Notes by Sir *Nicolas Throgmorton*, one of his Bedchamber, concerning ſuch particular Matters of State as he would hear his Thoughts of; and to draw up ſome diſtinct Diſcourſes for his Study and Meditation, namely, of the things beforementioned. This Task this ingenious Gentlemen cheerfully undertook.

Thus he compiled for the Kings Uſe a more general Diſcourſe, Whether it were expedient to vary with Time. Which he determined to be exceeding neceſſary for a Prince to do: that is, that they ſhould not always obſerve one direct and obſtinate Proceeding, if the Time ſet out that would require the contrary. For then it would follow inevitably, that their Proceedings muſt periſh. He meant not as he wrot, that Men ſhould vary in Amity, or turn from Vertue to Vice, or to alter in any ſuch things as required Conſtancy; but touching other private or public Doings he judged it neceſſary to humour the Time. For which he gave many apt Examples out of Antient *Greek* and *Roman* Hiſtory. He drew up alſo for the King, and by his Command, another general Diſcourſe, to inſtruct him concerning the different Natures of the Nobility and Commonalty, of which two ranks of People his whole Realm conſiſted, and of the Danger of the latter above the former. This Diſcourſe he proſecuted under this Queſtion, Whether it be better for a Commonwealth, that the Power be in the Nobility or in the Commonalty. Then as to his Maſteſties Amity with Princes abroad, and how to make profitable Leagues with them, the ſaid *Thomas* compoſed for the Kings Study another Treatiſe; Diſcourſing, What Princes Amity is beſt. Wherein he ſhewed the Uſe and Benefit of Leagues with other States. Which he made to conſiſt in two Things, *viz.* in giving Aid to reſiſt an Enemy, and in relieving his Friends Country with the Commodities that it wanted. The neceſſity of this Friendſhip, he ſhewed, to appear, in that few Princes were able to maintain their own, if they wanted the Friendſhip of other Princes. And for the better inſtructing the King, what Princes Friendſhip were rather to be choſen, he propounded four Things worthy Conſideration; *viz.* The Propinquity, The Anticuty of Friendſhip, The Religion and the Nature of the Prince whoſe Amity was ſought. Again, the ſame Perſon yielded the King another Diſcourſe, and this more particular, Concerning the Kings outward Affairs at that Juncture: ſhewing in what ill caſe things then were. Letting him underſtand, how the Caſe was altered in the Kingdom from its Condition under his Father, when it was dreaded of all its Neighbours, and needed not to eſteem any of them more than they eſteemed it: but how it was now hated and condemned of them all. Whereupon it was neceſſary for the Nation now, for lack of its own

Political Diſ-
courſes com-
poſed for the
King.

Eſtimation,

ANNO
1548.

R. S.

Consultation
about the
Coin.

Estimation, either to esteem them, or redeem its own Estimation, or Perish. He let him see how War threatned on every hand; and therefore Friendship was to be gotten from Abroad: which yet he saw not, how it was to be gotten without either extreme Disadvantage, or the denying of our Faith: Neither of which was tolerable. That the King had two puissant Enemies to deal withal, the *French* King, a doubtful Friend, and the Emperor, a dissembling Foe. Then the Writer deliberated, how either was to be dealt withal. And then stated the Matters as to *Scotland* and *Ireland*. From which excellent Discourse may be seen the present State of the Kingdom at that Time. All these curious Discourses are preserved in the *Repository*.

At home the Coin was much debased since King HENRY's Time, and much Complaint was made of it, and many Inconveniences foreseen to follow, if it so continued: And therefore great Deliberation began to be concerning it at the Council Board. This occasioned the Writing a fifth Discourse by the King's especial, (but secret) Order to the said *Thomas*. This indeed seemed to be writ first of all before any of the rest, for this Matter lying before the Council suddenly to be considered, the young King, having a Mind to be prepared to speak upon that Argument, privately sent *Throgmorton* to him, who, as he brought the King's Notes, signifying his Will to *Thomas*, that he should draw up the Discourses abovementioned, so particularly and immediately to give him his Thoughts upon the Coin; but secretly. Accordingly he shewed the King his Judgment, That by all means the Coin should be reformed, and that without delay. Because the badness of it bred multitudes of Bargains, that People might get rid of it, to the utter impoverishing of the Needy. That they indeed had silver Coin, but in such kind, as that neither they esteemed it for Silver, nor could without great Loss use it as Silver. And as the Value of Money daily decayed, so he shewed, that Gold increased to that Value, that lying still it amounted above the Revenues of any Lands: And that the Value of Gold was likely to advance unmeasurably; so that he that lived a Twelvemonth should see an old Angel worth Twelve Shillings of the current Money. Therefore in his Discourse upon this Argument, he advised, That Twelve Pence should be exacted in the Pound for the Redress of Money. This Discourse he sent very privately to the King, sealed up as if it were a thing for the Council, assuring His Majesty, that no Creature living was, or should be privy either to it, or any the rest of his Discourses. One Reason whereof was, That so the King might utter these matters as of his own, whereby they might gain greater Credit with the Council, than if it were known to have proceeded from *Thomas*, or any one else. This Discourse, it would be pity, it should be wanting. See it among the rest of his Discourses, in the *Repository*; as they are found in a *Cotton MS*.

W.

Aphorisms for
War, for the
Kings Use.

And to exercise his Princely Mind in the great Matter of War, the last and onely Remedy oftentimes left for Princes to maintain or recover their Rights, among the rest of the Rules of Policy, provided for the King by *Thomas*, I know not to whom to attribute certain Aphorisms of War, which came forth about this time, so well as to the said *Thomas*; nor for whose Use drawn up, as for the young Kings, being fitted for his Study, by recommending to his Reading several Instances of the *Roman History*.

History. It was Intituled, *A necessary Order which a Prince in Battel must observe and keep, if he intend to subdue or pass through his Enemies Country: Also the Maner of besieging a Fortress; And how a Prince besieged should order himself: And how to Pacify a Sedition of Soldiers.* This Writing, which, I suppose, was penned originally for the Kings Use and Study, was soon after printed, that it might be of more common Benefit for such as were, or should be, Captains and Officers in the Kings Army.

1548.
In Biblioth.
Reverend.
Patr. D. Joh.
Episc. Elien.

This I saw among the excellent Collections of the late Right Reverend Bishop of Ely.

But as to Thomas's late Discourse concerning the Coin, the King in answer signified to him, notwithstanding the Vehemency he exprest for the Reformation of it, what Dangers and Inconveniencies were urged by others, if any Alteration should be made. And that therefore some were of Opinion, that Sentence should take place here, *Malum bene conditum ne moveas.* But Thomas in another private Letter to the King gave his Sense of this Objection against the Reformation of the Coin, in these Words:

The Kings
Objection a-
bout the Coin

— “ And where indeed I was somewhat earnest for the Reformation of the Coin, wherein it pleased your Majesty to command my Opinion, truly my Zeal to my Country did so prick me, that I could not forbear to exclaim against the Fault. Like as for the Redress, I am not yet persuaded from my Device. For tho' I understand there be other Arguments, perchance better than mine, yet I like not his Opinion, that in this Case groundeth himself on *Malum bene conditum ne moveas.* For *malum* it is indeed, but *conditum* it is not, and *bene* it will never be: Wherefore *necesse est moveri.* And this I dare stand to in Argument, that where I devised an Exaction of Twelve Pence in the Pound, if the Mony thus continue, your Majesty by Reason of the Mints shall exact above Six Shillings of the Pound, and yet be undone your self at length, unless ye purchase Land withal.
“ And whether it hath made your Majesty rich or no, I cannot tell, but I am sure this Coinage, since the first Beginning hath exacted upon your Subjects already above Eight Shillings in the Pound.
“ As for their frivole Reasons that allege three Parts of the four through the Realm, to fare the better for it, I will not say, that either they understand little of Policy, or else they would be glad to become Commoners themselves. But this I dare avow, that there is not one of Hundred, no, not one of Thousand, that is contented with this Coin.

Thomas his
Answer.
Cott. Libr.
Vespasian D.
18.

Helas! Can we suffer neither Fault nor Remedy? Neither War, nor Peace?

Your Majesty's Most Humble Servant,

WILLIAM THOMAS.

And we shall hear not long after, what effectual Care the King took for the bettering the Estate of the Coin of the Nation.

The Wars with Scotland and the keeping and defending of Boloign, and other Pieces on that Side, against the French, created the King much Trouble and Charge of Men and Treasure. This Summer, Sir Thomas Chamberlain

Soldiers raised for the King in the Low Countries.

ANN O and Dr. *Thomas Smith*, being Ambassadors with the Emperor, were raised Two Thousand Men in the *Low Countries* for the Service of the Wars, the Emperor granting Licence to levy them, and for their safe Passage into *England*. And in *January* following, Mr. *John Dymock* the King's Servant was sent over by the Protector and Council, secretly to repair to Sir *Philip Hoby* the King's Ambassador now with the Emperor, to raise Two Thousand Men more. And Sir *Philip* had Command to acquaint the Emperor, that a great Part of the former 2000 Men were dead and spent in the Wars of the last Year, and the number being grown very small, the King, desiring to have 2000 Foot Men more to be Levied about the Parts of *Freezland*, prayed the Emperors good Permission therof in respect of the Treaty of Amity between them. And it seemed to be granted.

Prayers appointed upon the Tidings of War.

Upon the War likely to be with *France*, which looked severely upon the State of the Kingdom at this troublesome Time at home; it was piously ordered by the Privy Council, that Prayers should be made in all Churches in the Diocels of *Westminster*, to Almighty GOD, for Success of the Kings Arms, and for the restoring of Peace. The Councils Letter to *Thirleby*, Bishop of *Westminster*, was as followeth,

The Councils Letters to the Bishop of Westminster. Regist. Thirlb.

"After our harty Commendations to their good Lordship, Hearing tell of great Preparation made of Foreign Princes, and otherwise; being inforced for the Procurement and Continuance of Peace to make Preparation for War; Forasmuch as all Power and Aid available cometh of GOD; the which he granteth as he hath promised by his holy Word, by nothing so much as by harty Prayer of good Men: The which is also of more Efficacy, made of a whole Congregation together, gathered in his holy Name:

"Therefore this is to will and require you to give Advertisement and Commandment to all the Curates in your Diocels, that every Sunday and Holy Day in their Common Prayer, they make devout and harty Intercession to Almighty GOD, for Victory and Peace. And to the Intent you should not be in doubt, what sort and manner we do like, We have sent unto you one: the which we would, that you and they should follow, and read it, instead of one Collect of the Kings Majesties Procefs. Thus we pray you not to fail to do with all speed, and bid you Farewel from *Westminster*, the 6th of May, 1548.

Your Loving Friends,

E. Somerset. R. Rich, Canc. W. Seint John. J. Russel. T. Cbeine.

The Dane offers a Mediation to England.

Christopher Mount was the Kings Agent, as he had been his Fathers, among the Protestant Princes of *Germany*. And being Resident at *Strasbourg*, He happening in Discourse with the *Danish* Ambassadors there about *English* Matters, they shewed more than once their Masters great Concern for the Differences between *England* and *France*, and how ready he would be to be a Mediator for a right Understanding between both Princes. And so they had declared before to *Thirleby* Bishop of *Westminster*, and Sir *Phil. Hoby* Ambassador with the Emperor. This *Mount* writing to the Court, the *English* were willing to hearken unto

unto the Motion; and the rather because that being now in War with *Scotland*, the Amity of the King of *Denmark*, whose Country adjoyned near therunto, would be no little Advantage to *England*. Upon this occasion therefore, *Octob. 4.* The Protector wrote to *Hoby* in a Letter from *Sion*. That this was not to be refused being so gently offered, and that he should take some occasion to talk, hereupon with the *Danish* Ambassador, and in Discourse that he should declare the wrong the *English* had received from *France*, and how unjustly the *French* had handled them. As, in not paying the Pension, by the Treaty at the last Conclusion of Peace due unto us, in Place and Time there expressed; Fortifying against the Treaty; Keeping away from the Kings Majesty, Fines and other Things there in *Boloignois*. Besides, that upon every Pretence when they would, they Robbed and Killed our Men, and said their King had Commanded them so to do, by way of Revenge; and that if one Bullock were taken [by the *English* in *Boloignois*, where they bordered upon the *French* Territories, and so might sometimes steal from one another] to take twenty, if one were killed, to kill forty: and that upon only surmise, and no proof of Justice. And under pretence of *Scots*, if there were but one *Scot* in their Ships, yea, and sometimes none, they robbed and spoiled the Kings Subjects on the Seas, and then sold their Goods openly in their Havens and other Places: and then, when they listed, said, they were *Scots*. And so *Petro Strozzi* both going and coming, and tarrying, being the *French* Kings Lieutenant, yet pilld and took our Men, and burnt our Ships so many as he could get, so that the *English* were enforced somewhat also to do against him.

ANNO
1548

The Prote-
ctors Letter
hereupon.
Galba B. 12.

The Injuries
of the *French*;

And for *Scotland* the Ambassador was Commanded to set out the Right that the King had to that Kingdom, which he knew wel enough, and to shew that yet, for a quiet Amity between the Realms, the Kings Father was content that the King that now is should Marry the young Queen of *Scots*. And that hereunto the *Scots* condescended by the whole Parliament of the Three Estates, and under the Great Seal of *Scotland*, which was then to shew. And that the *French* King notwithstanding all this, not only had aided the *Scots* against the Kings Majesty their Sovereign Lord with Mony and Men, but also now lastly, had taken away the Young Queen; and by that means taken away the best and most quiet way of Concord betwixt these two Realms, and defrauded the Kings Majesty of his Lawful and Promised Wife. And now the *French* King had said, that he would marry her to the *Dauphin*. The which things, as the Ambassador was Instructed to say, was not sufferable to any mean Lord or Prince, much less to a King as he was. And tho' his Majesty was young, yet that his Power was able enough to see redress and revenge in these Matters: As this last Year it had appeared. When notwithstanding *French* Powers there sent, the King had not only defended his Realm against the *French*, but against all *Scotland* too. But how far this Mediation by the *Danish* King was carried, I cannot ascertain, finding no more of this Matter. To be sure the Hostility still continued between both Nations till the end of the next Year.

And *Scotch*.

And to be prepared with Ammunition against any Insults from *Scotland*, an Order came May 16. from the Protector and Privy Council,

Ammunition
for *Newcastle*.

ANNO 1548. to deliver out of the Tower, for *Newcastle*, for supply of the Stores there, Hand-guns complete 800. fine Cornpowder, three Last, Serpentine Powder, ten Last, Matches 800 weight, Salt Petre in Roche half a Last, Brimstone two Barrels, Bows of Yough a thousand, Bowstrings forty Gros, Demy Lances 400. Northern Staves 200. Morice-pikes 2700. Horse Harnes 20.

Wrongs done
to the Mer-
chants of An-
twerp.

Debates ther-
upon.

Secretary
Smith Amba-
sador his Dis-
course.

April the 10. had a Treaty been agreed to for the Continuation of the Price of Wool, between the Emperor and the King, during his Minority. But notwithstanding this and other Treaties, our Merchants at *Antwerp* met now lately with much unfair Dealings from the Government there, by laying heavier Taxes and Duties upon them than they ought to have done by Vertue of Privileges granted the *English* Traders, ratified by Pacts and Covenants: Which were now grievously violated. Whereat the *English* complaining and finding no Redress, the Governour of the Merchants residing in the said Town, made a Decree that they should Trade no more there. And accordingly they withdrew their Effects. Which was no small Detriment to the Place, and to the Emperor in his Revenues. This gave great Offence at that Court; and it was urged as an Infringement of the Intercourse of Treaties. Secretary *Smith*, together with Sir *Thomas Chamberlain*, who were at this Court this Summer, and came partly to adjust and settle the Matter, had several Meetings with the President of the Council, and others that were Commissioners, who shewed great Passion and much Disturbance at this withdrawing of the *English* and their Trade. The said President affirmed, the Officers of *Antwerp* had don no Injury to our Merchants. He asked them, how the Emperor would be satisfied, that a Governor of Merchants in his Dominions should make Statutes to forbid the Traffic from his Town of *Antwerp*, and cause the Merchants to depart thence so tumultuously as they did. And so aggravated the Matter, saying, That the Emperor both would and should punish the same.

Smith the *English* Ambassador, on the other hand, who liked well enough what the Merchants had don, said more calmly, that there had nothing been don, but what might be don by the Intercourse and Privileges, and upon just occasion. But the Emperors Commissioners looked that, on the *English* Ambassadors Parts, they should have yielded in somewhat and consented to some of these unjust Impositions what they did not.

At a fourth Meeting, when it was expected that they should come to some Conclusion, the President, who had been answered over and over, was still as hot as he was before. But Secretary *Smith* being by him required to speak what he had to say, answered gravely, That he wondered to see them now so far off, when he took the Conclusion rather to be at hand, seeing that afore they had so fully answered, as it seemed, they themselves could not but allow their Answers. Notwithstanding he said, If they would be so precise, and that Reason might not serve, and seeing the Kings Majesty had purposely sent them to pacify the Differences between the *English* Merchants and them of *Antwerp*, meaning none other but Continuance of Amity betwixt both Princes and their Subjects, the Kings Majesty he said, would not forsake his Subjects. Whereat the President began again to startle, and asked, Whether the King did more regard a Governour of Merchants

chants and his Fact, than the Amity of an Emperor. But he was answered so reasonably and fully, as reason required. Then the said President cast them in the Teeth with the Continuance of the Merchants still from *Antwerp*; and that three of them, of late should say to some of the Citizens of *Antwerp*, that they durst buy no Wares of them for danger of their Statute.

But however such was the Covetousness of the Merchants, that tho' they were thus withdrawn, and their Trade suspended for a while, for their general Benefit; yet some of them did under-hand bring over Cloths to *Bruges*, notwithstanding the Protector's Prohibition and stay of their Ships; and also did buy at *Antwerp*, contrary to their own Statute and Ordinance. Whereby they had forfeited large Sums, out of which the King was to have a Third part. At which Sir *Tho. Chamberlain*, Ledger Ambassador at *Brussels*, was highly offended, and affirmed, as he wrote to Sir *William Paget*, that til the King did take the same Forfeiture and made them smart, they would never keep Order, but for their private Lucre undo, if they might, the Commonwealth. And that it was their Fashion, even when they made their Statutes, and swore to observe the same, even forthwith to seek by Collusion and Colour to break the same: Generally saying, that every Man transgressing shall cause a General Pardon among them. And thus, he said, they mocked with God and the World, and were perjured daily. For these and other Misdemeanours of these Merchants, the said *Chamberlain* protested, that after this time for his part, he would never wish the King to be at more Charge and Trouble with Merchants Affairs than other Princes were, seeing his Majesty did for them that which none other Prince that he knew of, did for their Merchants; and yet took off the greater Customs, and cared not whether they sunk or swum, whosoever they went with their Merchandize. He professed that he was sorry that ever the Kings Majesty entred into this Matter, and should be troubled with such rude Folks, that esteemed not their own Weals, nor who did for them. Wherefore in Conclusion he prayed *Paget*, that till he heard of their, with the other Commissioners Agreement, it would not be ill in his Opinion, to stay them of Shipping thither; Which should be the only way to bring them to a Conclusion with Honour. For that he had Intelligence by good and substantial Advice, that they of *Antwerp* would fain the Commissioners on both sides were at a Point: and also they that set the greatest Brag thereupon said, that they wot not how to frame it, to redubb all with their Honour. This Letter was writ July 24. And thus it stood now with the Merchants of *Antwerp*.

ANNO
1548.

The Merchants blamed for breaking their own Orders.

Chamberlain offended thereat. Galba B. 12.

The Kings care of his Merchants.

ANNO

1548.

C H A P. XIV.

The Condition of the Protestants in Germany related by the English Ambassador there. The Interim. The Elector of Saxony. Allen a Conjuror reports the King Dead. Seized and Examined. Underhil a Memorable Man in these Times.

The Emperor
enjoins the
Interim.

Several
Towns refuse
it. *Linda*.

UPON Occasion of an *English* Ambassador now residing in *Germany*, we have an opportunity of seeing how the Protestant Affairs went in those Parts. *Thurleby*, the Bishop of *Westminster* lately went home, and in his room Sir *Philip Hoby* was now the Kings Ambassador to the Emperor *Charles*, then at a Diet at *Ausburgh*. Thence in the Month of *July*, the said Ambassador wrote a Letter to the Duke of *Somerset*, the Protector, of the News then stirring, chiefly in reference to the Religion. "That the Emperor at the Conclusion of the Diet was bent to cause the Protestants to observe the *Interim*. That he had used both fair means and foul to bring his Purpose to pass. And that by the latter means divers were brought to submit to it against their Wills. That the Towns of *Constance*, *Argentine* and *Linda* refused it. The last wherof sent their Secretary to the Emperor to *Ausburgh* with this Message, that they had all met together, and found the *Interim* so disagreeable to God's Word (whose Laws they were bound upon pain of Damnation to observe) that they were resolved not to accept of it; Fearing more of God's Threatnings, and his just Indignation against such as neglected his Will and the Scriptures, then the loss of Goods, Life, or any other Temporal Thing. But that the Emperors Majesty should not think it was done out of Obstinacy or Disobedience, (whom they acknowledge for their Prince) they would not refuse or resist him, howsoever he should dispose of them. Nor should their Gates be shut to any of his Soldiers, whether *Spanish* or *Italians*; yea, Content that he should take their Goods or Lives from them. And that he should not need to go about this with a strong hand: For it should suffice but to command them, and they would gladly offer their Heads to the Blocks. Upon this Message *Grandvel*, the Emperors great Counsellor threatned them desperately.

The Duke of
Wittemburg
taxes such as
heard Mass.

The Duke of *Wittemburg*, having received the *Interim* from the Emperor, with Commandment to see it take place throughout his Country, did not then make a Shew of disobeying the Emperor, but received his Commission reverently. But shortly after, without taking any Notice of the Reception of the *Interim*, caused Proclamation to be made, that each Person, for every Time he heard Mass, should pay Eight Ducats of Gold. Wherby he forbad not the Mass to be said, but required

"quired a Tribute of such as heard it. He was aged, and sometimes merry-conceited. A N N O 1548.

"Granduel also required in the Emperor's Name, that the Duke of Saxony at that Time the Emperor's Prisoner, should promote this his Desire for the Peace of Germany, considering how well his Majesty had deserved at his Hands by rendring his Imprisonment easy. He piously answered, that his Body was in the Emperor's Hands, and he might use his Carcass as it liked him, but he prayed his Majesty not to press him to yield to this, which was against the Word of GOD. Upon this the Emperor being offended, clapt upon him a Guard of Three Hundred Spaniards more than he had before, and disarmed his Servants of all their Arms, and dismissed his Servants, being seventy in Number, reducing them to twenty seven. His Preacher was also sent away upon Pain of Burning, if he stayed any longer. And his Cooks and Officers upon the same Pain were commanded to dress no Flesh for him on *Fridays* and *Saturdays*, and other Fasting Days. Yet herewith the Duke seemed so little moved, as there was no Alteration perceived in him. These and other Things may be read more at large in the Ambassador's Letter in the Cotton Library. Duke of Saxony will not promote the Interim. Titus B. 2.

About the 11th or 12th of July, Hobby the said Ambassador was visited by Don Alonso Vides, a Spaniard, who was Master of the Camp to the Emperor, and had the Custody of the Duke of Saxony. This Man upon occasion of Talk as Hobby related it in another Letter to the Duke) began to set forth the Duke's Patience and Wisdom; Lamenting that his Case was not so ordered as by Policy he might be won to the Emperor's Devotion: Which he said in his Mind was easy enough to bring to pass. For he said, he had talked and discoursed with him sundry Times, and did very well perceive his stiff sticking to his Opinion to procede of no Ignorance or lack of Knowledge: For he was witty, and even as well seen in the Scripture, and knew as much by that he had read in his Mother Tongue, as all the whole Heap of Learned Men of Germany could tell him. And how is it possible, added he, that a Man of such Wisdom and Knowledge remaining in Captivity, having lost such and so many Possessions, and deprived of the Electorship, a Dignity of no small Estimation, should be brought to grant to a Thing so far disagreeable to that Doctrin, wherof he was and had been the chiefest Stay and Head. Was it like, demanded he, that he having nothing left him but the Estimation, that those Men had him in, would by granting to that *Interim* lose that also, without Assurance therby to be restored to his former Estate and Dignity? He assured the Ambassador he should not take him to be a Man of that Wit that he hitherto had judged him of, if he would upon so slender a Ground and small Hope yield to that Thing, the utter Blemish and defacing of this Estimation, that was alone without any other Comfort left him. But were not his Majesty, as he went on, guided in this Case by such as regarded not so much his Honour and Quietness, as their own Affection and Profit, he assured the Ambassador, the Elector might easily have been won. And by the small Practice he had of his Nature and Disposition, he would jeopard his Head to be lost, if he did not, and that within a short Space, win him to yield to the Emperor's Request, so that his Majesty would therein be content to follow his Advice and Counsil. "For I pray you, said he, " what A Spaniard's Communication with Hobby about the Elector. Titus B. 2.

ANNO 1548. " what may all this strait keeping and threatning Words avail to fear him, whose manly Heart is so far past all Dread, that he seemeth to contemn, as setting nothing by, whatsoever shall happen unto him. Such is his valiant Stomach and Princely Courage. No, no, said he, it must be Gentleness shall win him: And not gentle Words only, but answerable Deeds also. That he may perceive an unfeignedly good Will burn towards him. Let him be again restored to his Electorship, placed in his Dukedom, at his Liberty and perceive himself to be favoured of his Majesty, and then my Life on it, he will be so conformable, and shew himself as true and a faithful as Prince toward his Majesty, as the best of them that now make the proudest Brags: And what Good this Gentleman being reconcil'd may do; how much he may serve for the setting forth of his Majesty's Service, and for the Stay and Quietness of Germany, may of all Wisemen be easily gathered. And therefore ought with the greater Study to be travailed.

Hoby's
Thoughts
therof.

Unto all this Discourse Hoby made no Answer, neither discommending, nor approving of it: but only gave him the hearing. But in relating it to the Protector, he shewed him, how he might perceive the Opinions of Men there, and how this Gentleman's Patience and Constancy was by worldly Persons judged to proceed of worldly Wisdom and Policy, like as others affirmed it to be the Grace and Assistance of GOD that did aid and strengthen him.

Articles of
the Interim,
disallowed by
the Prote-
stants.

Hoby did also at this Time send to the Protector a Note of certain Articles of the Interim, to which the Protestants would not agree. Which were as follow:

<i>De Autoritate & Potestate Ecclesie.</i>	<i>Intercessione inibi expetita; Et obiter</i>
<i>De Confirmatione.</i>	
<i>De Sacramento Pœnitentie.</i>	<i>De Sanctorum Invocatione.</i>
<i>De Ceremoniis & Usu Sacramentorum.</i>	<i>De sacra Unctione.</i>
<i>De Memoria Defunctorum in Christo.</i>	<i>De Sacramento Eucharistie.</i>
<i>De Memoria Sanctorum in Altaris sacrificio fieri consueta, & eorum</i>	<i>De Sacramentis in genere.</i>
	<i>De Pontifice summo, & Episcopis.</i>

Of Auspurg.

With these the People of the Town of *Auspurg*, where the Ambassador now was, were not satisfied: And against them certain Learned Men there protested, and would not agree to; as the same Ambassador signified: adding, that the Emperor seemed to desire to appease and allure them by Gentleness and fair Means. And therefore had caused on a certain Sunday in July a certain Exhortation of his to be read to the People in each Church: Wherby he did desire them, seeing he had travailed so much about their Quietness, and set forth this Thing for the Establishment of the same (wherin he had in many Things yielded to their own Desire and Request) that they also, shewing themselves loving and obedient Subjects, would for their Part be content to bear with the rest, and grant to his Request. But Hoby signified, how that those of that Town had not as yet answered hereunto: neither had they hitherto altered their Religion, but used the same as they had been accustomed. The Papists had good Hope it should not long continue in that State. The Protestants on the other side trusted it should not be altered. But

Com-

Commandment in the mean Time was given to the Men of this Town *ANNO* in the Emperor's Name, that from henceforth they should eat no Flesh *1548.* on the *Frydays, Saturdays*, nor on any Fasting Days. Duke *Maurice* his Subjects being by him required to accept the *Interim*, made Answer, *And Duke Maurice's Dominions.* that they had both the Emperor's Hand and Seal, wherby he promised not to meddle with Matters of Religion, but with Reformation of the Commonwealth. Which they doubted not, they said, but his Majesty would hold, and not press them against his Promise, to grant to this Thing, which they would not agree to. And they exhorted the said Duke to solicit this their Suit to His Majesty, which if he would not do they plainly told him, they would not fail to find such a Prince and Head as should see his Subjects take no Wrong. How this Answer would be liked of the Emperor, the Ambassador told the Protector, to whom he wrote all this, his Grace would easily judge.

Here at home about the Month of *July* a sudden Report flew through *London*, that King EDWARD was dead. Which arriving to the Court troubled them. The Occasion wherof was this. There was one *Allen*, whom People called *the Prophefier*, that pretended by casting Figures to tell Things to come, and to prognosticate of the Length of Men's Lives. This Fellow was much courted by the Papists to calculate the Life of King EDWARD. Who did so, and giving assured Belief to his own Art, confidently gave out about this Time, that the King was dead. This spread like Lightning. The Court hearing the Rumour at Midnight sent to Sir *John Gresham*, the Maior, to apprehend the Persons if he could find them, that raised this false Report, the King being alive and well. *Edward Underbil* one of the Guard of Gentlemen Pensioners, the next Morning came to the Maior, requiring of him some Officers to apprehend the Raiser of this Lye, having learned where he had a Chamber. The Maior sent two Officers with him, who found *Allen* in *St. Pauls*. These carried him away to his own Chamber; where they saw Figures set to take the Nativity of the King, and a Judgment given of his Death, (I use the Words of *Underbil's* own Narration;) wherof *Foxii MSS.* this foolish Wretch thought himself so sure, that he and his Counsellors, the Papists, bruted it all over, as was said before. The King lay at *Hampton Court* the same Time, and the Lord Protector at *Sion*. To him *Allen* was brought with his Books of Conjurations, Circles, and many things belonging to that Devilish Art. He affirmed before the Protector, that it was a lawful Science, and that the Statute against such was repealed. "Thou foolish Knave, said my Lord, if thou, and all that be of thy Science, tell me what I shall do to Morrow, I will give thee all that I have."

He was committed to the Tower; and the Protector wrot a Letter to *Sir John Markham*, then being Lieutenant, to cause him to be examined by such as were learned. Mr. *Markham*, as he was both wise and zealous in the Lord, talked with him: Unto whom he did affirm, that he knew more in the Science of Astronomy than all the University of *Oxford*, and *Cambridge*. Wherupon he sent for one Mr. *Record*, a Dr. of Physick, and very learned in Divinity also; who examined him and found that he knew not the Rules of Astronomy, but proved a very unlearned Man and a Sorcerer. For the which, said *Record*, he was worthy hanging.

ANNO
1548.

Morgan seized.

Allen's Chambers.

Gascon seized.

Allen examined before the Kings Visitors.

Some account of Underbil.

For further matter with him, the Lieutenant and Mr. Underbil, who brought him to the Tower, sent for *Thomas Robins*, alias *Morgan*, commonly called *Little Morgan*, Brother unto *Great Morgan* of *Salisbury Court*, the great Dicer. For he had formerly told *Underbil* many stories of *Allen*, what a cunning Man he was, and what things he could do, as to make a Woman Love a Man; to teach Men how to win at the Dice: What should become of this Realm; nothing but he could do it. When this *Morgan* and *Allen* were brought together, *Morgan* utterly denied, that ever he had seen him, or known him. Yes, said *Allen*, you know me, and I know you. For he had confessed that, before his coming. Upon this the Lieutenant stayed *Little Morgan* also Prisoner in the Tower.

Allen had his Chambers in divers places of the City, whether reforted many Women for things stolen or lost, and to know their Fortunes, and their Childrens Fortunes: and where the rufeling Roisters, the Dicers, made their Matches.

Underbil caused also to be apprehended *Gascon*, the Lawyer; at whose House this *Allen* was much, and had a Chamber, a great Dicer also: Where were many things practised too. Here Citizens Wives had Meetings of Debauchery, their Husbands innocently letting them resort thither, upon pretence the Women made of going there to enquire for things lost or stolen; which they hid for the nonce to blear their Husband, eyes. By this means *Gascon*, a Panders had choise for himself, and for his Friends, the young Lawyers of the Temple.

This *Allen*, a *Norfolk* Man born, was called, *The God of Norfolk*, before they received in those Parts the Light of the Gospel; and was a great Doer in Judgments in divers Matters there. This Man was had before the Kings Commissioners, and being before them, he required to talk with one of the Council, saying, if he were unburthened of that, which he would then say, he cared not what came of him. He said also before the Commissioners, that he could make the great *Elixir*. Also he stood earnestly before them, that he could say more concerning Astrology, and Astronomy, than all the Learned Men within the University of *Oxford* and *Cambridge*; tho' he understood no part of the *Latin Tongue*.

Sir *John Godsalve*, one of the Commissioners for the Royal Visitation, 1547. required the other Commissioners to demand of *Allen*, whether he did not say unto two Men, yet living, ten days before the Apprehension of the Lord *Crumwel*, that the said Lord *Crumwel* should be in the Tower within fourteen days following. This Question being demanded of him, he denied not, that he said so; but said, that he speak it not of his own Knowledge, but of others. But *Allen*, and the others mentioned before, after a Years Imprisonment were by Friendship delivered. But *Underbil*, the Proctor and Discoverer of this Pack, they endeavoured to take away by Sorcery.

Of this Gentleman I shall here add a few Things, being one that deserves to have his Name preserved in History, tho' nothing hitherto in any Ecclesiastical Commentaries of our Nation be said of him. For he was a Man zealous for pure Religion against Superstition and Impieties of all Sorts, and made a Figure in King *Edward VI.* his Days. I will first relate, what his Quality was, and then make report of certain of his Actions.

He

He was of a good Family, (Son of *Thomas Underbil* of *Honington* in *Warwickshire*, Esquire) and first bred a Soldier under Sir *Richard Cromwel* in the Journey to *Laundresey*. The next Year, when King *HENRY VIII.* made an Expedition against *Bulloign*, being a stout and performable Man, Sir *Richard* put him unto his Majesty in the Room of a Man at Arms. In this Band, there were two hundred, all mounted upon barded Horse in one Suit of red and yellow Damask, (the Bards of their Horses and Plumes of Feathers being of the same Colour,) to attend upon his Majesty for the Defence of his Person. Afterwards for his deserts, he served the King in the Band of Gentlemen Pensioners, as he did after to King *EDWARD* and Queen *MARY*. In the days of King *EDWARD*, he was of such good esteem, and so well known, and beloved by the Nobility, that having a Son born, during the short Reign of Queen *JANE*, She was Godmother, and named him after her Husbands name *Guilford*, Sir *Nicolas Throgmortons* Lady being her Deputy, the Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Earl of *Pembroke*, Godfathers. Immediately after the Christning was don, Queen *MARY* was Proclaimed in *Cheapside*, the Deputy-Godmother returning to the Tower to wait upon her Lady, found the Cloth of State taken down, and all things defaced belonging to *JANE* as Queen, and she as well as her Mistresses made Prisoners.

1548.
His Quality.

At first *Underbil* followed loose Company, Gamsters and Ruffians. Some of them were these Dicers, Great *Morgan* of *Salisbury* Court, Sir *John Palmer*, called *Buskin Palmer*, Sir *Miles Partridge*, lusty young *Rafe Bagnal*, Men infamous in King *EDWARD's* Days: Yet in favour among the Magistrates, and were advanced, tho' they were the sowers of Sedition, and Destroyers of the two Dukes. These were the Court-flatterers, and knew well the old Proverb;

Follows bad Company.

*He that will in Court abide
Must curry Fault both back and side,*

To these was *Allen* the Conjurer joyned, of whom we have spoken before. But *Underbil* soon forsook them by reading the Scriptures, and hearing the Preachers. And then as some Satisfaction to the World, he put forth a Satyre against the Wickedness of these Men, revealing the falsehood and knavery, that he was made privy to. For this they hated him mortally. They called him *The hot Gospeller*, jesting and mocking him; and would say of him, *He is all of the Spirit*. It was their common custome at their Tables to jest and scoff the Preachers, and earnest Followers of the Gospel. Even among the Magistrates and Lords they would spend the time in wanton and ribald Talk. Which when they fell into, one or other would look through the board, saying, take heed that *Underbil* be not here. And these Persons, those of them that survived (for *Palmer* and *Partridge* dyed by the hand of Justice) at the change of Prince, readily complied with Queen *MARIES* Religion; and then became Infamous.

But leaves them.

Of *Underbil* they raised Scandals, and false Brutes, saying, He was a spy for the Duke of *Northumberland*; and called him *Hopers Champion*. He was so indeed. For *Hoper*, being a zealous Reformer, drew upon himself great envy: insomuch that he was abused with railing

They hate and raise scandals of him.

ANNO 1548. Libels cast into Pulpits against him, and by other ways. But *Underbil*, who was a very witty Man, set up a Bill upon *St. Pauls* door in defence of *Hoper*, and another at *St. Magnus* Church, where especially such ignominious Lampoons had been divulged against that Reverend Man. For the fixing up these sort of Bills was common in these Times.

His Actions.

Cranm. Memorials.

Takes away Pix out of the Bow Church.

Frees Day the Printer.

How this *Underbil* apprehended a Vicar of *Stepney* for hindring the Preaching of the Gospel in his own Church in King *HENRY*'s Reign, and bringing him before the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, was told in another Book. These following are Acts which he did in the Reign of King *EDWARD*.

At *Stratford* on the *Bow*, he took the Pix from the Alter of Copper, stored with Copper Gods, the Curate being present, and a Popish Justice dwelling in the Town, called *Justice Tawe*. There had been an Injunction, that the Pix should no more hang in a string over the Altar, the meaning wherof was, that it should be taken wholly away. But the Papists thought to obey the Injunction, and withal to preserve their Pix, and so they set it upon the Altar. This stirred the Zeal of *Underbil* to observe how the Orders of the Government were illuded by such Shifts as these: Which made him, living not far off, viz. At *Limehouse*, to go himself and put it away. For this Act the Justices Wife with the Women of the Town, conspired to have Murdered him. Wherof one of the Parties gave him warning, whose good Will to the Gospel was unknown to the rest. And by that means, being aware of them, he took care and preserved himself from them.

There was one *Luke* a Physician in *London*, who wrot divers Books against the Papists, in the end of King *HENRY*'s Reign: For which he had been imprisoned in the Fleet. In the first Year of King *EDWARD*, he Published one Book, for which he was heavily cryed out upon by the Papists to Sir *John Gresham* the Lord Maior. It was a Dialogue between *John Boon* and Master *Parson*. Which two Persons were brought in reasoning together of the natural Prefence in the Sacrament. But the Author had concealed himself. It was writ very facetiously and sprinkled with Wit, severely biting now and then at the Priests. The Book took much at the Court, and the Courtiers wore it in their pockets. But the Maior had the Book so illy represented unto him, that he was very angry, and sent for *Day* the Printer of it, intending to make him discover the Author, and to lay him in prison for Printing the same. *Underbil* chanced to come in at this time, to desire aid of the Maior to take *Allen* before spoken of, who reported the Kings Death. The Maior made *Underbil* dine with him, and speaking to him at Dinner concerning this Book, the Maker wherof he told him he intended to search for, that so, as it seems *Underbil* might declare at Court, the diligence of the Maior in his Office; He presently replied to him, That that Book was a good Book, adding, That he had himself one of them about him, and that there were many of them in the Court. With that the Maior desired to see it, and took it and read a little, and laughed therat, as it was both pithy and merry. And by this seasonable interposition of *Underbil*, *John Day* the Printer sitting at a side-board, after Dinner was bidden to go home, who had else gone to Prison.

The

The Woodmongers in this King's Reign had wronged the City in their *ANN O*
1548.
 Firing extremely, by setting false Marks upon their Billets. Underbil
 being moved with this Piece of Dishonesty to the Injury of the Publick,
 complained of them, presenting them; and had a long Conflict with
 them. For which he drew a great deal of Spight upon himself from
 them, which they uttered in the next Reign. When being put into
Newgate, they required the Keeper to shew him no Favour, and to lay
 Irons upon him, declaring that he was the greatest Heretick in *London*.

Prosecutes
the Wood-
mongers.

He was of so active a Spirit, and so inquisitive into wicked and super-
 stitious Practices, that he made himself the Mark of evil Mens Rancor
 and Violence. Loose Lords and Ladies, Priests and Lawyers, Wizzards,
 Knaves, Whores, Bawds, Thieves and Gamesters so hated him, that, as
 he writ in his Narrative, *he walked as dangerously as Daniel among*
the Lions; and yet from them all, the Lord delivered him, notwith-
standing their often Devices and Confederacies by Violence to have
shed his Blood, or with Sorcery destroyed him. But tho' he escaped in
 King EDWARD's Time, having the Countenance of Authority, yet he
 had his Share of Sorrow and Persecution in the Reign of Queen MARY;
 as we may see when we come to that Time.

His great
Dangers.

CHAP. XV.

Preaching suspended. Pensions. Term put off.
Exportation of Corn forbid. The State of
the Coin. Melancthon writes to the King.
Bucer and Martyr placed in the Universities.
Sharington of the Mint attainted: And the
Lord Admiral. His Practices. His ill Life.
His Death.

NOTWITHSTANDING the Care used in licensing fit Preach-
 ers, the Sermons now preached gave much Offence. For several
 who had Preaching Licences, either from the King, the Lord Protector,
 or the Archbishop, (for none else might give them out) and who at the
 receiving those Licences had good Advice given them for their discrete
 Using them, yet had abused this their Authority, and behaved them-
 selves irreverently, and without good Order in their Preaching, contra-
 ry to such good Instructions and Advertisements as were suggested to them.
 Whereby much Contention and Disorder was in Danger of arising in the
 Realm. Wherefore the King by a Proclamation, *Sept. 23.* inhibited all
 Preachers for a Time, and gave notice of a Publiek Form of Divine
 Service e're long to be expected. He told his Subjects, " That minding
 " to

Notice given
of the fra-
ming an uni-
form Order of
Prayer.

A N N O

1548.

All Preachers
inhibited.

“ to see very shortly one uniform Order throughout his Realm, and to
 “ put an End to all Controversies in Religion ; so far as G O D should
 “ give Grace, (For which Cause at that Time, as he added, certain Bi-
 “ shops and notable Learned Men by his Commandment were congreg-
 “ gate) he thought fit to inhibit for a Time, till that Order should be
 “ set forth, as well the said Preachers so before Licenced, as all manner
 “ of Persons whosoever they were, to preach in open Audience in the
 “ Pulpit, or elsewhere. To the End that the whole Clergy in this mean
 “ Space might apply themselves to Prayer to Almighty G O D for the
 “ better atchieving of the said most godly Intent and Purpose. Not
 “ doubting, but his loving Subjects in the mean Time would occupy them-
 “ selves to G O D's Honour, with due Prayer in the Church, and patient
 “ Hearing of godly Homilies, hertofore set forth by his Injunctions. And
 “ so endeavour themselves, that they might be the more ready with
 “ thankful Obedience to receive a most quiet, godly and uniform Order,
 “ to be had throughout all his Realms and Dominions. And to see the
 “ Infringers of this Commandment to be imprisoned, he gave Charge to
 “ all Justices, Maiors, Sherifs, Bailifs and Constables.

The King
takes care for
paying his
Pensions.

When Chauntries and such like Foundations were by a Statute given
 to the King in his Parliament, the Incumbents therof being discharged,
 for their Livelihood had Pensions allowed them, during their Lives. For
 the King being minded to provide for those late Incumbents of Colleges,
 Chauntries, Fraternities, Guildes and such other, convenient and reasonable
 Recompences and Pensions according to the said Statute, had commanded
 several Letters Patents to be made under the great Seal of the Court of
 Augmentations, and the Revenue of his Crown, for the Pensions and
 Recompence of the said Incumbents. But those that were appointed
 to pay these poor Men were suspected to deal hardly with them by making
 Delays, or requiring Bribes, and Deductions out of the Pensions, or Fees
 for writing Receipts ; as it appeared afterwards they did, which occasioned
 an Act of Parliament in behalf of these Pensioners. Therefore by a Pro-
 clamation dated the last Day of *October*, published in every Shire, the
 King signified, that these Pensions should presently be sent to the Hands
 of the Auditors, Receivers and Surveyers of the respective Counties,
 with strait Commandment to believe the same Patents immediately, and
 to make Payment unto the Parties when it concerned them, and hereafter
 yearly Frank and Free, without Fee, Duty, or Sum of Mony to be de-
 manded or taken of the said Pensioners. And willed those Persons who
 had to do herin to resort to his Highness's *Audit* presently, to be held
 within the County, or elsewhere the Officers should be, and there receive
 their Pensions accordingly.

An. 2. and 3.
Reg. Edw. 6.
ca. 6.

A Plague.

Towards the declining of the Summer the King kept his Court in the
 Country. In the Beginning of *September* he was at *Hatfield* ; and at
Legbes the Month after : Occasioned as it seems by the Plague, which
 now afflicted the City and other Places. The Danger of which Infection
 made it advisable to put off the Term for about a Month. Which was
 therefore don by a Proclamation dated at *Hatfield* aforesaid, *Sept. 6.* to
 this Import : “ That the King's Majesty was credibly informed that the
 “ Infection of the Plague reigned in sundry Places of the Realm, and
 “ especially within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and in other
 “ Places near adjoining to the same. And that, whereas, by the Continu-
 “ ance

“ance of the same through the great Repair and Refort of his loving
 “Subjects, greater Peril and Danger might not only ensue unto his most
 “Royal Person, but also unto his most loving Subjects repairing thither
 “for their Suits and Causes: His Majesty therefore minding the Prefer-
 “vation of his loving Subjects, and being in Hope that the same Infection
 “would, by the Help of Almighty GOD, and through the Coldness of
 “the Year, the rather cease by the Adjournment of the next Term of
 “St. Michael, from the *Utas* of the same till the Morrow after the Feast
 “of *All Saints* next coming: Of His special Favour and Benignity was
 “pleased and contented to adjourn the said Term of St. Michael from
 “the *Utas* therof unto *Craftine Animarum* next coming; And willed
 “and commanded his Subjects to observe and keep their Assembly and
 “Appearances, with all their Returns and Certificates in his Courts at
 “Westminster, to be holden in like Manner, Form and Condition, as
 “they should or ought to have been don, if this present Proclamation
 “of Adjournment had not been had, made and proclaimed.

ANNO
1548.

The Prizes of Corn and other Victuals now encrease, and rose in divers
 Places within the Realm, and the Marches and Confines of the same.
 Wherefore the King thought it meet, weighing most especially (as it ran
 in the Proclamation) the Wealth and Commodity of his poor Subjects,
 to have a Restraint for a Season of all Manner of Grain, Tallow and
 Victuals in all Places within his Realm. And therefore straitly charged
 and commanded all Manner of Persons as well Denizons as Strangers,
 that they should not transport any Manner of Grain, Butter, Cheese,
 Tallow, or any kind of Victual without his special Licence under his
 great Seal of England, upon pain to forfeit the Grain, Tallow, &c. and
 to be farther punished by Imprisonment, &c. This bore date at *Leighes*,
Octob. 8. An. secundo Reg.

Restraint of
Exportation
of Corn.

This Prohibition seemed to be relaxed again not long after. But in
 the Month of *January* ensuing, the King being to equip and furnish out
 a Navy and an Army, put a Stop again to the Exportation of Provisions,
 till himself were first served. For a Proclamation went forth, dated from
Westminster, Jan. 18. That forasmuch as the King's Highness at that
 present should occupy great Provisions, he by the Advice of his most
 intirely beloved Uncle, &c. straitly charged and commanded, that no
 manner of Person, whosoever he were, should ship or lade, to the Intent to
 carry out of the Realm, any Wheat, Malt, Oats, Barley, Butter, Cheese,
 Bacon, Cask or Tallow, any Licence or Grant hertofore made notwith-
 standing; until such Time as his Majesty's Provision be fully certified
 and restored; upon pain that whosoever should after the 22^d of *Janua-*
ry this present Year, and before the 20th of *April*, transport or carry in-
 to the Parts beyond Seas any of the foresaid Things, or Provisions, con-
 trary to this present Proclamation, &c.

A Prohibition
again for the
King's Occasi-
ons.

The State of the Coin of the Nation at this present stood thus. The
 King had lately called in the Testons, a coarse Sort of Mony that went for
 12 *d* the Piece, tho' not worth half so much, as to the Intrinsic Value.
 Which occasioned vast Numbers of false Testons to be coined by Stealth,
 and to pass about. Many therefore brought in these Pieces to the King's
 Mints. The smaller Pieces of good Coin, such as Groats and half Groats,
 were now also for the most Part so bent and battered, that they were
 hardly passable, and great Boggle was made in the receiving them. By
 which

The State of
the Coin.

A N N O

1548.

which means there was a great Want of Mony to pass in ordinary Exchange of Buying and Selling. This the King was sensible of: And for the speedy Help and Relief of his loving Subjects, and to the Intent that Mony and Coin might be more plentiful hereafter in the Realm, had caused several Pieces of Gold and Silver of various Values to be coined, and commanded the other Pieces of Silver to go current. The Pieces of Gold which were now coined were of four Sorts, wherof the first was called *The Sovereign of Gold*, and was appointed to be current for twenty Shillings in lawful Mony of *England*. Another Piece was called, *The Half Sovereign*, or *Edward's Royal*, running for ten Shillings of the lawful Mony aforesaid. One other Piece of Gold called, *The Crown*, running for five Shillings. And the fourth Piece was called, *The Half Crown*, for two Shillings and Sixpence. The Pieces of Silver newly coined were, First a Piece called, *A Shilling*, running for Twelve Pence of the lawful Monies of *England*. One other Piece or Coin which should be called *The Half Shilling*, running for Six Pence. All which Pieces or Coins, as well of Gold, as also of Silver, the King by his Proclamation signified it to be his Pleasure and Commandment, from henceforth to be current within his Realms and Dominions, according to their several Rates and Valuations before expressed. And moreover, he straitly charged and commanded, that from henceforth all Manner of Groats, Half Groats, Pence and Half Pence of his Coins, being not Counterfeits, current within his Realms, not clipt nor fully broken, albeit, they might be much crooked, should be taken, received and paid throughout the said Realm, without any manner of Refusal or Denyal. Wherefore he straitly charged and commanded all Maiors, Justices of Peace, Sherifs, Bailifs, Constaibles, and other his Officers and Subjects, that if any Person or Persons of whatsoever State, &c. should refuse or deny to take and receive the said Monies of Gold, being weight, or any of the Monies of Silver before expressed, be it for Merchandizes, Victuals, Change, or Rechange, or other Cause whatsoever; forthwith to take and arrest the same Persons so making Refusal or Denyal, and to put them in Ward or Prison, there to remain and further to be punished at the King's Pleasure.

Melancthon
writesto King
Edward.

The great Learned German Divine, *Philip Melancthon*, addressed King EDWARD with a Letter, dated the 13th of *January*: Which one *Francis Dryander*, a Learned Protestant, brought and presented, who fled hither, as many other Professors of Religion out of foreign Parts, had don for avoiding the Persecution, which the *Interim* occasioned. By which Letter it appeared, that great Consultations were now held here at home by the King and some of his Learned Divines, not only concerning the Reformation of this Church, but of the other foreign Churches too in *Germany*, *Switzerland*, and *France*, *Italy* and *Spain*, and for the Uniting them together in one uniform Doctrin; a Matter thought fit for a Royal Breast. Wherin the Archbishop of *Canterbury* was the great Mover. *Melancthon* in his Letter commended the King for this, and told him, "That he followed his Royal Father's Example, whom he "stiled *Sapientissimum Regem*, *A very wise King*; and that many in *Europe* well knew, how he in the Controversies of Religion then moved, "had it a great while in his serious Thoughts, that Care should be taken "for the Churches every where, by applying a due Moderation to the "different

“ different Opinions of Men in matters of Religion ; and that he liked
 “ not of oppressing Truth with Arms. And wished heartily that other
 “ Kings had been of his mind. For, as he added, whereas some thought
 “ the Concord of the Church might be restored by Arms, they judged
 “ amiss: and that the unjust Counsils of Oppressing Truth were neither
 “ pleasing to GOD, nor were long successful. That the wise King his
 “ Father saw great Diseases, and they of ancient date, in the Church ;
 “ to which there was high need of applying true and wholesome Reme-
 “ dies. He beseeched GOD the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ to over-
 “ rule the Kings Mind, and to amend the Churches in his Kingdom and
 “ elsewhere. That his Glory might be truly set forth, and many might
 “ be truly converted to him, and at last made Consorts with the Son of
 “ GOD for ever. But he advised him to take heed in this Reformation,
 “ that Men of ill Principles mixed not Corruptions. And that he
 “ would therefore do well, prudently to consider the Senses and Opi-
 “ nions as well of his own People, as of the Strangers, the Guests of
 “ his Kingdoms. And lastly, he commended to the King the Bearer
 “ *Dryander*, as well learned, and long known to him ; that he was
 “ a Man that judged aright of the Controversies of Religion, and withal
 “ his Heart abhorred wild and seditious Opinions. And therefore judged
 “ him a Person that would be of good use, as to the Church of GOD, if he
 “ were placed in the University, or elsewhere in his Kingdom. To these
 Letters of Foreign Learned Men, the King paid a great Reference, and
 they had a great Influence with him.

ANN O
1548

The King was beforehand with *Melancthon* in these Motions, and had provided the two Universities of the Land with two Learned Foreign-
 ers, *Peter Martyr* to read Divinity at *Oxford*, and *Martin Bucer* at
Cambridge, both coming from *Strasburgh*, but *Martyr* first. These
 grave and learned Doctors were placed there, the Lord Protector and
 the Archbishop judging them the fittest Persons to inform the Students
 in their Notions and Doctrins concerning Religion. Because as they
 were very learned in other Sciences, so in Divinity they took the holy
 Scripture for their Guide, and gathered their Tenets from no other Au-
 thority but from thence, according to the constant Principle of that
 great and good Archbishop. It was especially thought necessary, that
 the corrupt Opinions about the *Eucharist* should be rectified in the
 Universities as well as elsewhere. And both these Foreigners thought
 aright in this great Point, tho' differing in their Judgments in the
 Expressions to be used about them. *Bucer* thought, that for avoiding
 contention, and for maintaining of Peace and Quietness in the Church,
 somewhat more ambiguous Words should be used, that might have a
 respect to both Persuasions concerning the *Presence*. But *Martyr* was
 of another Judgment, and affected to speak of the Sacrament with all
 Plainness and Perspicuity. Of this *Bucer* and he had some Dispute at
Strasburg, before they set foot in *England*, as we are informed by *Sim-*
ler in his Account of *P. Martyr's Life*. By which it appears how
 much misrepresented these two Persons have been by Papists, and
 namely by two, *Fecknam* and *Parsons*. The former in Queen MA-
 RIE'S Days affirmed to *Bartlet Green*, a Prisoner for the Cause of Re-
 ligion, and after a Martyr, “ That *Peter Martyr* was a Papist at his first
 “ coming to *Oxford*, but perceiving the *Wicked Tenets* (as he stiled them)
 “ of the Kings Council [that is to bring in another Doctrin about the

Martyr and
Bucer at the
Universities.

Misrepresent-
ed by Papists.

A N N O 1548. *Wardwood. ca. 4. Vindicated.* "Sacrament against the Carnal Prefence] was content to please them, "and to forsake the true Catholic Faith. The other with much Face and little Shame faith, both of *Martyr* and *Bucer*, that at their first coming into *England*, they were conditioned with to teach the Religion whatsoever it were, that should be Established in the Parliament approaching.

But first, as for *Fecknams* Assertion concerning *Martyr*, it was undoubtedly a Slander, since it appears by the Writer of his Life, that his Opinion in that Point of the Sacrament was not according to the *Roman* Doctrin, while he lived at *Strasburgh*. And the aforesaid *Green* who had been a Scholar at *Oxford*, while *P. Martyr* was Professor there, and the hearer of him, told *Fecknam*, that he had himself heard the said Professor say often, that he had not, while he was a Papist, read *Chrysostom* upon the tenth Chapter of the first Epistle to the *Corinthians*, nor many other Places of the Doctors; but when he had read and well considered them, he was contented to yield to those Doctors, having first humbled himself in Prayer, desiring God to illuminate him, and bring him to the true Understanding of the Scripture. Which was in all Probability before he left *Italy*, or while he remained in *Germany* among those that professed the true Doctrin. So that we may conclude him settled in that Point of the Sacrament before his Arrival in *England*.

Abbot ag. Hil. p. 103. 105.

And as to what *Parsons* hath said, I leave the Reader to Dr. *George Abbot*, afterwards Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who gives this Account of the Matter: "*Parsons* may have the Name of a Slanderer, who can close "and invent any thing which may serve for his Purpose: As that *Peter Martyr* and *Martin Bucer* were indented withal, to teach as the Parliament should decree: implying, that whatsoever it had been, they "must have condescended unto it. This lying *Jesuit* can shew no "Letter, no Act of Record, no Testimony of semblance of Truth, "to aver this his Calumniation. But the Matter indeed was, that the "Reformers of Religion here, intending to level all by the Line of "God's Word, knew that those two worthy Men were so affected in all "their Teachings. And therefore, as also for their admirable Learning "and Judgment they made choise of them before all the great Clarks "which were in *Europe*. And that those who called them hither were "not deceived in them, the excellent Monuments which they left in Writing behind them do testify to the World.

Sharingtons Frauds in the Mint.

Toward the latter end of this Year the great and shameful Frauds of *Sir William Sharington*, Knt. a chief Officer of the Kings Mint, were discovered. He had in 1547. coined Testons (a sort of Money embossed and under Standard) to a great Sum, without Warrant, and contrary to a Prohibition sent unto him. Also, he defrauded the King of Clippings and Shearings to the Sum of 4000 *l.* and above: And to make up the Sum in his Accounts, made the Kings Coin the lighter. And when the Monthly Books shewing the Doings of the Mint, were brought to him, he used to strike out as much as he thought good. And that he might do this without being discovered, he falsified the Indentures and Writings, which might have charged him. His gain by this means amounted to an unknown Sum. For these Causes he was clapt up in the Tower: And in *February* made a free Confession of all, acknowledging himself worthy of Death, and grievous Punishment, and upon his knees with a most woeful Heart prayed for Mercy. The

Original

Original of this Confession, drawn up by the Hand of Sir *Thomas Smith* A N N O Secretary, and signed by *Sbarington* himself, and attested by certain Privy Counsellors, having been sent to him in the Tower, I have ^{1548.} seen.

In the Month of *February* aforesaid, he was Attainted by Parliament, ^{Attainted.} and all his Estate and Lands given to the King. But the King pardoned him, as to Life. This *Sbarington* to assist and abet the Treason of the *L. Seimour* of *Sudely*, granted the Mint at *Bristow* to be at his Commandment. Out of which the said Lord designed to receive 10000 l. a Month, for the Payment of ten thousand Men of his Tenants, and Servants, and others, which were to be put in Arms for his Treasonous Purpose.

Sbarington's Wealth may be guessed at by a Purchase he made of the King in this Second year of his Reign for the Sum of 2808-4-10 ob. ^{His Wealth. King Edwards Book of Sales.} and in Consideration of the Exchange of Woods, Land and Tenements in the County of *Essex*, and in performance of King *HENRY* the Eighth's Will. The Purchase was all the Manors of *Awbery Winterbourn* and *Charlton* in the County of *Wilts*, with the Appurtenances, lately Parcel of the Possessions and Revenues of the College of *St. Mary*, and *All Saints* of *Fotheringab*, in the County of *Northampton*; and the whole Farm called *Barbury Leer*, lying in *Okeburn*; and divers other Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Northamptonshire*, *Wilts* and *Gloucester*. Nay, and notwithstanding his Forfeiture of all he had by his Attaint, yet it seems he was not so undone, but was able soon after to make a great Purchase again. For in the fourth year of this King, for two great Sums of Money, viz. 4866-2-2. And 8000 l. the said King granted him the Lordships and Manors of *Lacock*, *Beaulieu*, *Natton*, *Woodreiv*, *Send*, *Sendrew*, *Winterbourn*, *Charlton*, *Awbery*, *Avebury*, *Catcomb*, *Ladington*, *Cote* and *Medburn*; and the Rectory of *Lacock*, in the County of *Wilts*, with the Appurtenances, lately the said Sir *W. Sbarington's*; and divers other Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments in the Counties of *Wilts*, *Gloucester*, *Berks*, *Devon*, *Somerset*, and in *Bristol*; which also lately were the said *Sbarington's*. It seems he had Money enough still left to buy again what he had forfeited to the Crown by his Treason.

Indeed his Repentance was looked upon to be sincere: insomuch that ^{Restored to Favour.} *Latymer* in one of his Sermons at Court took occasion to commend *Sbarington* for his honest Confession of his Fault. And as he was pardoned and restored in Bloud by the Parliament in 1549. So he seems to have been soon restored to his Offices again. For I find that in *April* 1550. He with Sir *John Davies* was appointed to receive the first payment from the *French*, according to the Articles of Peace lately made, and to give their Acquittance for it. And soon after he went over to *Calais*, and there received it.

Near the Conclusion of this Year Sir *Thomas Seimour*, *L. Seimour* of *Sudley*, (a Manor and Castle in *Gloucestershire*, formerly belonging to the Abby of *Winchelcomb*) Uncle to the King, and Lord High Admiral of *England*, was beheaded on *Tower-hill*, for affecting the Kingdom. But whereas it was wont to be much laid to the Charge of the Duke of *Somerset* his Brother, as a point of his Weakness, to yield to the taking him off, by whose Life he might have been the stronger to have with-

A N N O

1548.

stood his Enemies : and that the Quarrel between the Brothers, was occasioned by the strife of the two Great Ladies, their Wives, for Precedency, in which the Men themselves became concerned : I think they are no better to be esteemed than Stories raised by the giddy Multitude, or by the Dukes Enemies to impair his Credit and Reputation. For if we may believe the Act of Attainder, this Lord was so ill a Man, and his Nature so utterly spoiled and corrupted by Insolence and Ambition, that it was not fit he should Live in the State. For in the first Year of the Kings Reign, he laboured by Craft and Slight to get the Government of the Kings Person from his Brother, to whom it was granted by the Consent of all the Nobles, and himself among the rest. And when that would not do, soon after he proceeded to more open Practises of Tumults and Stirs, thinking to make the King and Parliament serve his turn. For he had the Confidence to go to the young King, and moved him to write a Letter to the Parliament with his own hand ; wherein he should desire them to be good to the Lord *Seimour* in such Suits and Matters as he should declare unto them. And to incline the King to do it, he had several about the Kings Person, his Instruments to help it forward. And this Letter he intended himself to carry to the Lower House, and open the same in the Upper ; and had procured Parties in either House to forward his Purposes ; to make a Tumult and Sedition both in the Court and the whole Realm. And he was heard to say, *That he would make the Blackest Parliament that ever was seen in England.* He did also prepare a great number of Men, and of Weapons ; and he travailed with the most part of the Council to help him to the Government of the Kings Person. And in the Parliament by himself, his Friends and Servants, he ever laboured to obstruct every thing that tended to the Honour, Surety and Benefit of the King and his Realms. He spread abroad sundry Slanders touching the Kings Person, the Lord Protector and the whole State of the Council ; and they so vile as not fit to be repeated.

The Protector's gentleness towards him.

When all this was discovered and come to Light, the good Duke his Brother was heartily grieved at it, and according to his gentle Nature endeavoured by sober Counsels to reclaim and save him, and to bring him to a better Consideration of his Duty to God and the King : And laboured with the whole Council, and otherwise, to reconcile and reform him, who presently else must have perished in his Folly. And tho' the Protector then had perfect Knowledge of all his Attempts and Misbehaviour ; and tho' the Admiral had said that he would not come at the Lord Protector or Council, if they sent for him, or that he would not be committed to any Ward for his Doings by the best of them ; yet the Protector used still all good means according to his Clemency, by Persuasion of certain of the Council, and otherwise, to frame him to Amendment of his ill Courses. And upon consideration of the State of Things in the Realm about the beginning of the Kings Reign, it was thought most meet for the King to pass his Doings over with silence ; and to Bridle him with his Liberality ; and so gave him Lands to the Yearly value of eight hundred pounds. And by King EDWARD'S *Book of Sales* ; I observe this favour shewn him herein, that tho' his Patent bore date the 19. of August, yet the time of the Issues was reckoned from the *Michaelmas* before. This Gift of the King is thus set down ; " The Lord-

“ Lordship, Manor and Castle, and Park of *Sudeley*, in the County of *ANN O*
 “ *Gloucester*, with the Appurtinences, lately belonging to the Monaste- 1548.
 “ ry of *Winchelcomb*, in the same County, dissolved; and divers other
 “ Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Gloucester*, *Wilt*s, *Wigorn*,
 “ *Berks*, *Oxon*, *Kent*, *Suffex*, *Middlesex*, *Southampton*, *Stafford*, *Salop*,
 “ *Denbigh*, (where *Holt* Castle stood, of which by and by) *Bricon*,
 “ *Radnor*, *Essex*, *Bedford*, *Somerſet*, and *Karnarvan*.

It was not long he continued quiet, notwithstanding these Favours, Practiseth a-
 but began to make a Party and Confederation, whereof himself would gain.
 be Head: and got Rules and Offices into his Hands, and retained many
 Gentlemen and Yeomen in his Service. Infomuch that he told some of
 his Familiars, that he was able to raise Ten thousand Men. For whose
 Wages he devised Ten thousand pounds by the Month; which Monies by
 dealing with Sir *William Sharrington*, he was to have out of the Kings Mint
 at *Bristol*, as was shewn before. He took up Money, and ran in Debt, owing
 to the said *Sharrington* almost Three thousand pounds. Into that strong
 Castle of *Holt*, he put a great Quantity of Wheat, Malt, Beef, and a
 great Mas of Money, for the feeding and entertainment of a number of
 Men. And for the blinding of his Doings there, he caused it to be
 bruted as tho' the King were Dead. He laboured also with sundry No-
 blemen and others, to joyn with him: Devising with them, how and by
 what Policy they should make themselves strong in their Countries,
 and how they should win the Head-Yeomen, and Ring-leaders of the
 Common People. He promised Favours and Benefits very liberally,
 nay, and gave a Promise of the King himself in Marriage to a Noble-
 mans Daughter in the Realm. Moreover, he perswaded the King to
 take upon him the Rule and Order of himself, intending thereby to
 take the King into his own Hands and Government, and so to Rule the
 Affairs of the Realm; and endeavoured to engender a hatred in the
 Kings Heart again his Unkle the Protector. But the King, tho' at that
 Age, had the Wisdom to resist that Motion, and without any Advice
 or Counsil refused his ill persuasion. He corrupted sundry of the Pri-
 vy Chamber to move the King to write Letters according to his and
 their Devices, and to put into his Head a singular Favour and Affe-
 ction toward him, and a Disposition to follow whatsoever the Admi-
 ral would have wrought towards others, the better to compass his
 Traiterous Purpose.

And for further Token of his Ambition, immediatly after King Courts the La-
 HENRY's Death he bore an Affection towards the Lady *Elizabeth*, the dy *Elizabeth*.
 King's Daughter, second Person in remainder of the Succession to the
 Crown, and would have married her, if he could by any means. But
 he was stayed by the Lord Protector and other of the Council. Then
 he married the Relict of King HENRY, Queen *Katharin Par*, whom Marries Queen
 he married privately first, and after sued to the King and the Lord Pro- Katharine.
 tector and the Council, for his Preferment to the Match with her. Whom
 nevertheless it was credibly spoken, he holp to her End, to hasten his
 other Purpose, which was still to marry the Lady *Elizabeth*. In which
 Resolution he continued in his said Wifes Time, while she was alive;
 and by sundry secret and crafty Means endeavoured the atchieving, since
 her Death. And when the Protector and Council dissuaded him from
 this, and to forbear his pretended Purpose, he would defend himself by
 asking,

ANNO asking, why he should not continue his Suit towards the Lady *Elizabeth*,
 1548. and did secretly and earnestly follow it, and did what he could to have married her.

Judged by
 the Parliament
 to aspire to
 the Crown.
 More of his
 ill Deeds.

And all this the Parliament judged to be a traiterous Aspiring to the Crown of the Realm, and to be King of the same, and an open Deed and Act, and a false and traiterous Compass and Imagination to depose and deprive His Majesty. For more of his Doings still; he abetted, assisted and maintained *Sharrington* in his traiterous Frauds. When *Sharrington* brought in his false Indentures, Books and Reckonings, he took them into his Hands and Custody, and affirmed that he had wrong to be committed to Prison, and endeavoured by all means he could to deliver him. So that one may conclude him privy to his Cheats, if not a *Sharrer* therein. The Admiral was also guilty of much Oppression and Extortion of the King's Subjects, using *Island*, and other Voiages by Sea; and resolved upon Revenge towards all with whom he was offended, which his own Letters and other Testimonies made appear.

His ill Life.

If we were minded to rake farther into his Life, he lived dissolutely from his very Youth. In the Reign of King *HENRY VIII.* about the Year 1539. or 1540. a lewd Woman that had lived an unclean Life, and was condemned with some of her Comerades for a Robbery, as she went to Execution, declared that Sir *Thomas Seymour*, had first of all debauched her. And afterward she took to that unlawful Course of Life that led her to consort with Rogues; and that brought her to her shameful End. Of which *Latimer*, then Bishop of *Worcester*, hearing, looked ever what would be come of him, and feared that he would come to some bad End. And so this Man fell from Evil to Worse, and from Worse to Worst of all, till at length he was made a Spectacle to all the World. It was commonly reported of him that he disbelieved the Immortality of the Soul. And the little Devotion that appeared in him at his Death, which we shall speak of presently, made this Report the more probable. The Probability wherof appeared also too much in his general Neglect of Prayer and Serving GOD. For when the good Queen *Katharine* his Wife had daily Prayers before and after Noon in her House, the Admiral would get him out of the Way, and was a Contemner of the Common Prayer. So that the grave Father *Latimer* in one of his Sermons before King *EDWARD*, said, that he was a Man the furthest from the Fear of GOD that ever he knew or heard of in *England*. When he was upon the Scaffold, and ready to be executed, a Passage hapned which shewed him still of the same turbulent and malicious Mind he was of before, and that he had not yet subdued his Spirit, and brought it to that charitable Frame that was proper for dying Persons, that believe they are going into another World. He had a great mind to be revenged of his Brother, the Lord Protector. And though he should be dead, and so could not practise himself his Ruin, yet he endeavoured to kindle such Coals as might afterwards cause others to do it. For when he was ready to lay his Head upon the Block, he turned to the Lieutenant's Servant, and said to him, that he should bid his Servant *Speed the Thing that he wot of*. And so immediately he laid down and died, having received two Strokes of the Ax. But the Words he spake happened to be overheard. The Admiral's Servant hereupon was taken into Examination, who confessed that they were two Letters which his Master had written

His Practice
 against the
 Protector his
 Brother, a
 little before
 his Death.

in

in the Tower to the Lady *Mary* and the Lady *Elizabeth*, which he had *ANNO*
enjoined him to take his Opportunity to deliver. And that he had made *1548.*
his Pen of the Aglet of a Point that he plucked from his Hose; and
made his Ink some other Way as craftily, and then had caused these *His Private*
two Papers (which were but of a small Quantity) to be sewed between *Letters.*
the Sole of a Velvet Shoe of his. And by this means these Letters came
to Light, and fell into the Hands of the Protector and Council. The
Contents of them tended to this End, that the two Sisters should con-
spire against the Protector, enforcing many Matters against him, to make
these Royal Ladies jealous of him, as tho' he had, it may be, practised to
estrangle the King their Brother from them, or to deprive them of the
Right of their Succession. Both these Papers *Latimer* himself saw and
reported publickly in his fourth Sermon before the King, tho' in the last Edi-
tion of his Sermons the Passage be left out. This retaining of his Ma-
lice and Revenge to the last, made that good old Father to say, "That
"he dyed *very dangerously, irksomely, horribly*; and to conclude, that
"GOD had him left to himself, and had clean forsaken him. And then
"asked the Question, what would he have don, if he had lived still that
"went about that Geere, when he had laid his Head on the Block? And a-
"gain, Whether he be saved or no, I leave it to GOD, but surely he
"was a wicked Man, and the Realm is well rid of him. And this that
Reverend Man said, to justify the Protector and Parliament in taking
off this seditious Man, and to shew, what a Necessity there was of it,
which some had thought very strange, considering his Quality and Re-
lation both to the King and the Protector. And therefore thought he
was too rigorously dealt with. And some, because he seemed to die
boldly, were apt to suppose him to die innocently.

He that would see more of this Man may have recourse to the *Arti-* Vol. II. p. 158
cles, drawn up against him in the Collections to the Bishop of *Sarum's*
History of the *Reformation*.

The Admiral being condemned to die, the Council dealt gently with *Orders for his*
him, and sent to him the Bishop of *Ely* to instruct and comfort him. By *Execution.*
whom the said Admiral made certain Requests to the Council. Which
what they were, and the Method of his Execution, take from an *Authentic*
MS. extracted as it seems out of the Council Book.

"This Day, the 17th of *March*, the Lord Chancellor, and the rest
"of the King's Majesty's Council, meeting in his Highness's Palace of
"*Westminster*, heard the Report of the Bishop of *Ely*; who, by the said
"Lords, and other of the Council, was sent to instruct and comfort the
"Lord Admiral. After the Hearing wherof, consulting and deliberating
"within themselves of the Time most convenient for the Execution of
"said Lord Admiral, now attainted and condemned by the Parliament,
"they did condescend and agree, that the said Lord Admiral should be
"executed the *Wednesday* next following, between the Hours of Nine
"in the Forenoon, and Twelve the same Day, upon the *Towerhil*, his
"Body and Head to be buried within the *Tower*; the King's Writ, as
"in such Cases heretofore hath been accustomed, being first directed,
"and sent forth for that Purpose and Effect.

"Upon this, calling into the Council Chamber the Bishop of *Ely*,
"they willed him to declare this their Determination to the said Lord
"Admiral, and instruct and teach him the best he could to the quiet and
"patient

ANNO 1548. "patient Suffering of Justice, and to prepare himself to Almighty
 "GOD.
 "The said Bishop, after he had been with the said Lord Admiral,
 "repairing again to the Court, made report to Mr. Comptroller and Se-
 "cretary *Smith* of the Lord Admiral's Requests. The which were
 "that he required Mr. *Latimer* to come to him; the Day of Execution
 "to be deferred: Certain of his Servants to be with him; his Daughter
 "to be with my Lady Dutches of *Suffolk* to be brought up, and such
 "like. Touching which Requests, the said Lords and the rest of the
 "Council declared their Minds to Mr. Secretary *Smith*: Willing him
 "to write their Answer in a Letter to the Lieutenant of the Tower,
 "who should shew in all those Requests their resolute Answer to the
 "said Lord Admiral. The which was don accordingly.

C H A P. XVI.

*Of Queen Katharin Parr, and her Daughter by
 the Lord Admiral. That Queen's Books of
 Devotions. Some Relation of her. Priests
 allowed Marriage. Private Acts of Parla-
 ment. Bills in behalf of the Commons. The
 King sells Chantries, Guilds, &c.*

The Lady
Mary born of
 Queen *Ka-
 tharin*.

Committed to
 the keeping
 of the
 Dutches of
Suffolk.

HIS Wife, Queen *Katharin*, saw not this heavy Hour, dying in
 Childbed of a Daughter named *Mary*, but a little before. This
 high born Infant Lady, destitute already both of Father and Mother,
 remained a little while at her Uncle the Duke of *Somerset's* House at
Sion, and then, according to her Fathers dying Request, was conveyed to
Grimsthorp in *Lincolnshire*, where the Dutches of *Suffolk* lived. There
 She had her Governess, who was one Mrs. *Aglionby*, her Nurse, two
 Maids, and other Servants agreeable to her high Quality, attending on
 her. The Duke upon her going away promised a Pension to be settled
 on her, for the Maintenance of her and her Servants, and that a certain
 Parcel of Plate of Silver and Household Stuff, which belonged to her
 former Nursery at the Dukes, should be applied to her Service, when
 she went to live with the Dutches: And so Mr. *Bartue* her Servant
 brought her Word from the Dutches of *Somerset*. The said Plate and
 Stuff were, two Pots, three Goblets, one Salt, Parcel gilt, a Maser with
 a Band of Silver and Parcel Gilt, and eleven Spoons; A Quilt for the
 Cradle, three Pillows, three Feather Beds, three Quilts, a Testor of
 Scarlet embroidered with a Counterpoint of Silksay belonging to the
 same, and Curtains of Crimson Taffata, two Counterpoints of Imagery
 for the Nurses Bed, six pair of Sheets, six fair pieces of Hangings with-
 in

in the inner Chamber, four Carpets for Windows, Ten pieces of Hangings of the twelve Months within the utter Chamber, two Quilthions of Cloth of Gold, one Chair of Cloth of Gold, two wrought Stools, a Bedsted gilt, with a Testor and Counterpoint with Curtains, belonging to the same. But several Months were past, and neither was this Plate and Furniture as yet sent, nor the promised Pension settled, nor care taken for Payment of the Governess and Servants, the whole Burden and Charge all this while lying upon the Dutcheſs of *Suffolk*, without any Satisfaction, which pressing her so hard, and she was none of the Wealthiest, made her send in the latter end of *August*, to the Dutcheſs of *Somerſet*, to urge the Performance of what was promised, and to Mr. *Cecyl* then a Servant in the Dukes Family, and Master of his Requests, complaining heavily at the constant Charge she was at in maintaining the said Lady *Mary* and all her Retinue, without any consideration hitherto. "Praying him to help her at a pinch (as she expressed it,) all that he might help: That both Governess and all the Servants called upon her for their Wages: Whose Voices her Ears, she said, might hardly bear, but her Coffers much worse.

A N N O
1548.

This neglect no question was occasioned by the Cares of the weightier Affairs of State incumbent on the Duke: for I will not Attribute it to his want of concern for his Deceased Brothers Child, however undeserving he had been. But it was an hard Case to put all this Trouble upon the Dutcheſs of *Suffolk*, who altho' she were an Excellent Woman, a great Professor and Patroness of true Religion, (entertaining *Latimer* at *Grimesthorpe* to Preach to her Family) of High Quality, the Second Wife and Relict of *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*, by whom she had two Sons; yet her Incomes were much too scanty for her Quality, as appears by the foresaid Letter to *Cecyl*, dated *Aug. 27.* which she began in this ingenious Maner.

The Quality
and Condition
of the said
Dutcheſs.

"It is said, that the best mean of Remedy to the Sick, is first plainly to confess, and to disclose the Disease. Wherefore both for Remedy, and again for that my Disease is so strong that it will not be hidden, I will discover me unto you. First, I will, as it were under *Benedicite*, and in high Secresie, declare unto you, that all the World knoweth, tho' I go never so covertly in my Net, what a very Beggar I am. This Sicknes, as I have said, I Promise you, increaseth mightily upon me, amongst other the Causes thereof, if you will understand not the least, the Queens Child hath layn and yet doth lye at my House with her Company, wholly at my Charges, &c. Wherefore I cease, and commit me and my Sicknes to your diligent care, with my hearty Commendations to your Wife. At my Manor of *Grimesthorpe*, the xxvii of *August*.

The Dutcheſs
to *Cecyl*.

Your assured Loving Friend,

K. SUFFOLK.

I conclude, Care was soon after taken about this Infant Ladies Family, and the Dutcheſs Charges, as there was to restore her in Bloud: Which was done by Act of Parliament, 1549: under the Name of *Mary Seimour*, Daughter of Sir *Thomas Seimour*, late Lord *Seimour* of *Sudley*.

This Lady
Mary restored
in bloud.

ANNO
1548.

Subleie: When she was restored and enabled in Bloud, as Daughter and Heir, and Heiress to the said *Thomas Lord Seimour*, and might Demand, Ask, Have, Hold, and Enjoy all and every such Honors, Castles, Manors, Lordships, &c. which at any time hereafter should come, remain, descend, or revert from any Collateral Ancestor, &c. And to use and have any Action or Suit, and make her Pedegree and Conveyance in Bloud, as Heir, as well to and from her said Father, as also to any other Person in like Maner, Form and Degree, to all Intents, Constructions and Purposes, as if the said *Thomas Lord Seimour* had never been Attainted. I have no more to say of this Child, but that she dyed not long after.

Queen Kath.
Parr her Character.

Ep. Dedic. bef.
the Engl.
Paraphrase of
Erasmus upon
St. Luke.

But I have more to add of that Illustrious Woman and Queen, her Mother. She was a right Noble Lady, and had done abundance of good things, but yet cared not that they should be known, or spoken of. Such was her Modesty, that she sought nothing less than the Fame of her good Deeds to be blown abroad. She was of vertuous Living from her tender Years. She was endued with a Pregnant Wittiness, joyned with right wonderful Grace of Eloquence: Studiously diligent in acquiring Knowledge, as well of other Humane Disciplines, as also of the Holy Scriptures. Of incomparable Chastity, which she kept not only from all Spot, but from all Suspicion, by avoiding all Occasions of Idleness, and contemning Provocations of vain Pastimes. Her Modesty was coupled with great Integrity and Innocency in all her Behaviour. She was mighty studious to promote the Glory of GOD, and of the Holy Gospel. These Qualities moved King HENRY to judge her a meet Spouse for his Majesty, and to pick her out to be his Lawful Wife of so many Women of Nobility and Honour, and high Worth. When she was Queen, she employed her self Days and Nights in *Psalms* and Contemplative Meditations, in lieu of vain Courtly Pastimes and Gaming. And these, she her self set forth in Print; for the Example of all Noble Women, and to the ghostly Consolation, and Edifying of all that read them. By her Godly bestowing her time, it appeared she little set by the World; thirsted much after Righteousness, carefully sought the Kingdom of GOD, in the midst of a Thousand Occasions, which otherwise might have withdrawn her high Esteem therefrom. As *N. Udal* writes in his Epistle Dedicatory to her, while she was King HENRY's Queen, before his Translation of *Erasmus* Paraphrase upon St. Luke. She caused, out of her Zeal to the Scripture, and her desire to bring in the Knowledge of it among the Common People, that divers, at her great Cost and Charges, should be employed in Translating *Erasmus* Paraphrase into English. This she did in King HENRY the Eighth's Time, and it seems it was in a Maner finished in that Kings Days, and to which he was Privy. For *Udal* writ, "He doubted not but that it was so acceptable to the King, that he would not suffer it to lay buried in Silence, but would one day cause the said Paraphrase thus Englished, to be Published and set abroad in Print. The Translation of the Paraphrase upon St. Luke, was finished in 1545. For in that Year the Epistle Dedicatory was Writ.

Those

Those Devotions of this Queen's before mentioned, (wherby appeared *ANNO* what little Opinion she had of her princely State, in Comparison with *1548.* her Enjoyment of GOD, and Desire of Spiritual Things) consisted of *Her Psalms.* Psalms and Prayers. The Psalms were in Number fifteen, of good

Length each, made in Imitation of *David's* Psalms; being digested into Versicles. Wherof many were Excerptions out of the Book of Psalms, and other Places of Scripture. Each Psalm had its proper Subject. The first was, for obtaining *Remission* of Sins: Beginning, "O Lord of

"Lords, GOD Almighty, great and dreadful; which by thy Word

"hast made Heaven, Earth, the Sea, and all Things contained in them.

"Nothing is able to resist thy Power: Thy Mercy is over all thy

"Works.

"All Things be under thy Dominion and Rule, both Man and Beast,

"and all living Creatures.

"Thou art merciful to whom thou wilt, and hast Compassion on

"whom it pleaseth Thee, &c.

The second Psalm also was for *Remission* of Sins; beginning, "O

"most mighty GOD of Angels and Men; whose Judgments be un-

"searchable, and whose Wisdom is profound and deep:

"Hear the Prayers of thy Servant, and cast not away the humble

"Suit of thy poor Creature and handy Work, &c.

The third Psalm was for *Remission* of Sins also. The fourth, A

Complaint of a penitent Sinner, which is sore troubled, and overcome

with Sins. The fifth, For obtaining of godly Wisdom. The sixth,

A Christian Man prayeth, that he may be healed of GOD. The seventh,

For an Order and Direction of good Living. The eighth, A Christian

Man prayeth that he may be defended from his Enemies. The ninth,

Against Enemies. The tenth, When the Enemies be so cruel, that he

cannot suffer them. The eleventh, Of Confidence and Trust in GOD.

The twelfth, If GOD defer to help long Time. The thirteenth, In

which he giveth Thanks to GOD, that his Enemies have not gotten the

over-Hand of him. The fourteenth, In which the Goodness of GOD

is praised. The fifteenth, Of the Benefits of GOD, with Thanks for

the same. To which were subjoined the twenty first Psalm, intitled,

The Complaint of Christ on the Cross, and a Psalm of Thanksgiving.

Then followed the Book of Prayers: Intitled, *Prayers or Meditations*, And Prayers.

wherin the Mind is stirred patiently to suffer all Afflictions here; to set at

nought the vain Prosperity of this World; and always to long for the

everlasting Felicity. Collected out of holy Works by the most vertuous

and gracious Princeſſe KATHARINE, Queen of England, France, and

Ireland, An. Dom. 1545. These Prayers were all digested, as were the

Psalms abovesaid into Versicles, or Sentences, and contained a great

Strain of true Piety and Devotion, Sense of GOD, and Dependance on

him; And many of them excellently suited to the Queen's own Condi-

tion. A Part of one of these her devout Exercises, I remember to have

read in the excellent Collections of Dr. Sampson, a London Physician, de-

ceased; Shewing the Devout Spirit of this Lady.

Then follow two Prayers, For the King, and for Men to say entring

into Battail. Which Latter I make no doubt the Queen composed upon

the King's Expedition into France with a great Army, when she was

left Regent at home. In the said Prayer she had this truly pious Petiti-

ANNO
1548.

on, " Our Cause being now just, and being enforced to enter into War
" and Battle, we most humbly beseech thee, O Lord God of Hosts, so
" to turn the Hearts of our Enemies to the Desire of Peace, that no
" Christian Blood be spilt; or else, grant, O Lord, that with small
" Effusion of Blood, and to the little Hurt and Damage of Innocents,
" we may to thy Glory obtain Victory. And that the Wars being soon
" ended, we may all with one Heart and Mind knit together in Concord
" and Unity, laud and praise thee, &c. The next is a devout Prayer to
be daily said, together with one or two Prayers more.

And her Ex-
position on
Psalm LI.

There was also printed another Piece of the devout Studies of this
good Queen, Intituled, *A goodly Exposition, after the Manner of a Con-
templation, upon the fifty first Psalm*, which Hierom of Ferrary, made at
at the latter End of his Days. The which I suppose this godly Woman
translated into *English*, beginning, " Wretch that I am, comfortless and
" forsaken of all Men, which have offended both Heaven and Earth,
" &c. Then follow in Conclusion, Other proper Things very neces-
sary to edify the Congregation of Christ, As, Of Faith: The Power
of Faith: The Work of Faith: Good Works: The Prayer of the
Prophet Daniel.

She was fore-
told to be
born to a
Crown.

† Dr. Sampson
of London,
now decea-
sed.

I have met with a Passage concerning this Queen, in the Margin of
Bales Centuries in the Possession of a late Friend of mine, † noted against
her Name by an uncertain Hand: Which shewed the Greatness of her
Mind, and the Quickness of her Wit, while she was but a Child. Some
body skilled in Prognostication, casting her Nativity, told her, That she
was born to sit in the highest Seat of Imperial Majesty; Having all the
eminent Stars and Planets in her House. Which she took such notice of,
that when her Mother used sometimes to call her to Work, she would
say, my Hands are ordained to touch Crowns and Sceptres, not Needles
and Spindles.

She had long
loved the
Lord Admi-
ral.

The Admirals marrying of this Queen was laid to his Charge as a
Point of his high Ambition, as was said before, tho' it seems by a Let-
ter of her own Writing from *Chelsey*, soon after her Marriage, that she
rather courted him, than he her: Professing, that she loved him, when she
was the Lord *Latimer's* Widow, and before King HENRY made her his
Wife; and therefore being at first very little towards that Royal Match.

She writes to
King Henry in
his Expediti-
on.

But to stay a little longer before we part with this excellent Lady.
The King when he undertook in the Year 1544. an Expedition in
Person to *France*, made her General Regent in his Absence. In his Ab-
sence she wrot him a very well penned Letter, declaring her great Love
and high Honour towards him, and expressing her earnest Desire to know
of his Welfare since his Departing; and her mighty Concern for his Pro-
sperity and Health, which she professed, she preferred before her own.
" She knew, she said, that his Majesty's Absence was never without great
" Respects of Things; yet it was her Love and Affection compelled her
" to desire his Presence: And again, The same Zeal and Love forced
" her to be best content with that which was his Will and Pleasure.
" And thus Love made her in all things to set apart her own Commodity
" and Pleasure, to embrace most joyfully his Will and Pleasure, whom
" she loved. And so she proceeded throughout her Letter with profound
Reverence towards him; as well knowing his lofty Humour to require
it, that she might keep her self in his Favour, who had been so fickle
towards his former Queens.

In the Year 1545. the University of Cambridge addressed their Letters to Her by Dr. Smith, (he that was afterwards Sir Thomas, the Learned Secretary of State to King EDWARD) upon a late Act made, That all Colleges, Chauntries and free Chappels should be in the King's Disposition. Which put the University in a great Fright: and they prayed her to intercede with the King for their Colleges; which she effectually performed. Infomuch that she writ to them in Answer, "That she had attempted the King for the Stay of their Possessions: And that notwithstanding His Majesty's Property and Interest to them, by Vertue of that Act of Parliament, he was, she said, such a Patron to good Learning that he would rather advance and erect new Occasion thereof, than confound those their Colleges. So that Learning hereafter might ascribe her very Original, as well as Conservation and Stay unto him. And then in the same Letter, she exhorted them not to hunger after profane Learning, and forget Christianity in the mean time; as though the Greek University of Athens were transposed into England. Since their Excellency did only attain to Moral and Natural Things. But she admonished them so to study those Doctrins, that they might serve as means towards the attaining, and better setting forth of Christ's most Sacred Doctrin. That it might not be laid against them at the Tribunal Seat of GOD, how they were ashamed of Christ's Doctrin. That she trusted, that in their several Vocations they would apply themselves to the sincere setting it forth; and that they would conform their sundry Gifts, Arts and Studies to such End, that Cambridge might be accounted rather an University of Divine Philosophy, than Natural or Moral.

ANNO 1548.

She interceeds with the King for the University.

Her good Advice to the University.

King EDWARD in his invaluable Journal, preserved in the Cotton Library, and lately published by the Bishop of Sarum, noteth, that the Protector was much offended with this Marriage of his Brother to the Queen. But however displeased he was, the King his Nephew was pleased well enough: Willing perhaps, that he that was so nearly related to him being a King, should be advanced to the Bed of a Queen. And therefore he both wooed for his Uncle, recommending him unto the Queen, and after the Marriage wrote her a congratulatory Letter, which was in answer to one that she had sent unto him by the Hands of the Lord Admiral her new Husband.

The King woos the Queen for his Uncle.

To Queen Katharine Par, the King's Letter Congratulatory;
Upon her Marriage with the Lord Admiral.

WE thank you hartely, not onlie for your gentle Acceptation of our Suite moved unto you, but also for your lovinge Accomplishing of the same wherein you have declared not onlie a Desire to gratifie us, but also moved us to declare the good Will likewise that wee bear to you in all your Requests. Wherefore yee shall not nede to feare any Griefe to come, or to suspect lake of Ayde in nede; Seeing that he, being mine Uncle, is of so good a Nature that he will not be troublesome on the means unto you; and I of that Minde, that of divers just Causes I must favor you. But even as without Cause you merrily require help against him, Whom you have put in trust with the Cariage of these Lettens; so maye I merrily retourne the same Request unto you, to provide that he maye live with you also without Griefe, which hath given him boely unto you.

MSS. Penmen.

And

A N N O And I will so provide for you both, that hereafter if any Greafe befall, I
1548. shall be a sufficient Socor in your godlie and praisable Enterprises. Fare yeu
 well, with much Encrease of Honour and Vertue in Christ. From Saincte
 James, the Five and Twenty Day of June. EDWARD.

Another of
 his Letters to
 her.
 B. VII. p. 423.

There is another ingenious Letter written in *Latin* by this King to this Queen, when he was Prince, (wherin he called her *Mother*) upon occasion of a Newyear's Gift sent by her to him at *Hertford*; Which was the King's Picture and Hers. Which Letter is extant in *Fuller's History*.

An Act for
 Priests Marri-
 age.

John Rogers
 in his intend-
 ed Speech to
 the Lord
 Chancellor.

After this Digression concerning Queen KATHARIN; Let us return again to the Parliament now sitting, which we heard had attained two eminent Persons. I will briefly touch at one thing more don this Session, relating to the Clergy. Which was the making an Act for the Lawfulness of Priests Marriage. But before the Bill passed in the House, it was debated earnestly, and sifted thoroughly in the Convocation. And however the Clergy was supposed to be prejudiced for the Celibacy of Priests, yet, (as we learn from one, who seems to have been a Member in that Convocation, or at least well acquainted with the Transactions of it,) there was in the lower House, of Deans, Archdeacons, Doctors, Heads of Colleges, to the Number of Seventy, that set their Hands in Allowance of the Marriage of Priests, (as in the Convocation the last Year were fifty three Voices for it.) And most of the Bishops in the upper House set their Hands to the taking away the positive Laws that prohibited such Marriage. And hence it became enacted in Parliament. There was a Bill sent from the Convocation the last Year, that married Men might be Priests, and have Benefices. Which was read thrice in two Days in the Parliament, and agreed to, and sent up to the Lords House. Where it lay undispatched, by Reason that Sessions ended within two or three Days after it came before them.

The Parla-
 ments second
 Session.

This being the second Sessions of the Parliament, it began *Novem. 24.* and ended not before *March 14.* ensuing. Besides the public Acts then made, there were these private Ones.

Private Acts.

An Act concerning Gavelkind Lands in *Kent*.
 Acts for the Restitution of Sir *George Darcy*, *Francis Carew*, *Edward Charleton*, Sir *Ralph Bulmer*, *Henry Weston*, *Ralph Bygot*, *Thomas Percy*.
 An Act for the Uniting of Churches in the City of *Lincoln*. And another Act for the Uniting of Churches in *Stamford*.
 An Act for the Erecting a School at *St. Albans*.
 An Act for the Uniting the Churches of *Ongar* and *Greensted* in *Essex*.
 An Act for the Founding of a School at *Barkhamsted*. And another for a School at *Stamford*.

Bills put into
 this Parla-
 ment for the
 Benefit of the
 poor Com-
 mons.

There was one thing debated in this Parliament, which may deserve to be here related. For the Pacifying of the People, and making the Condition of the Poor easier against Grasiers and Gentlemen, who enclosed Commons, and neglected Tillage, *John Hales*, (that had been lately in a Commission to enquire into Enclosures, and then saw and pitied the Oppression of the Poor Country People) devised three Bills to be put into Parliament. Unto which he first made many wise Men privy. The one was for the Re-edifying of Houses decayed, and for the Maintenance of Tillage and Husbandry. The other, for Regrating of Victuals and other Things, wherein one principal Point was, that nei-
 ther

ther Graſiers, nor none elſe ſhould buy any Cattell, and ſell the ſame again within a certain Time. For, as the ſaid *Hales* had learned, and knew of Certainty, divers Graſiers and Sheep Maſters brought both Cattell and Mony to the Market, and if they could not ſell their own as dear as they liſted, they carried them home again, and bought all the reſt. Theſe two Bills were firſt put to the Lords. The firſt being read was not liked. The ſecond they allowed and augmented, and ſent down to the Lower Houſe. Where it was ſo debated, and toſſed up and down, and at laſt committed to ſuch Men, and there ſo much deferred, that Mens Affections might there have been notably diſcovered. And perhaps, (ſaid *Hales*, relating this Matter in a Writing of his) he that had ſeen all this would have ſaid, that the Lamb had been committed to the Wolfe's Cuſtody. The third Bill was ſet forth firſt in the Lower Houſe, and tended to this End, that every Man that kept in ſeveral Paſture Sheep or Beaſts, ſhould keep, for every hundred Sheep that he had above Sixſcore, two Kine; and for every of theſe two Kine, ſhould rear one Calf. And for every two Kine that he kept beſide, more than Ten, he ſhould rear one Calf. By this means he thought and believed, that the Nation ſhould not only have plenty of Beaſts, whereof there was wonderful great Decay, but alſo thereby the Markets ſhould be replenished with Milk, Butter and Cheeſe, the Common and Principal Suſtinance of the Poor. The ſaid *Hales* had ſuch an Opinion of this Bill, that he durſt have laid his Life on it, that if it had proceeded, there would have been within five Years after the Execution thereof, ſuch Plenty of Victuals, and ſo good cheap, as never was in *England*; and beſides, a great many good Things enſue, very neceſſary and profitable for the Commonwealth of the Country. Which neither by the Execution of the late Commiſſion, nor yet by any Poſitive Law then in being, could be holpen. But, ſaid *Hales*, *Demetrius* and his Fellows ſoon ſpyed whereunto this Thing tended. There was then, *bold with me, and I will bold with thee*: Some alledged the Opinion of their Fathers in time paſt (but theſe had been great Sheep-maſters) who when the like Bill had been propounded, would never conſent unto it, but ſaid that when any Scarcity of Cattell was, a Proclamation was made that no Calves ſhould be killed for a time. Some alledged, that Men then eat more Fleſh than they did in Time paſt, and that in *Lent* and other Fasting Days heretofore, the People eat neither Butter, Milk, nor Cheeſe, and would have them do ſo again for Policy ſake. And thus theſe rich Incloſers got the better of this good Bill intended for the Benefit of the Poor.

The King ſells Chaurtries.

The King having the Guilds or Fraternities, Chaurtries, Colleges, Hospitals, &c. given him the laſt Year, haſtened to Sell them, to make up the Defects of his Treafury, and to get ready Money for neceſſary Uſes. He began to Sell the laſt Year, and ſo continued this and the next Year, which brought in vaſt Sums. What Chaurtries, Free-Chappels, Colleges, &c. were ſold this Second Year of the King, and to whom, and for what Sums, and laſtly, of what Value they were reſpectively, I could ſet down, having extracted them from an Authentic MS. of the Kings Sales; but for avoiding Prolixity I omit them.

ANNO

1548.

CHAP. XVII.

Books Published this Year. Archbishop Cranmers Book of Unwritten Verities. His Notes of Traditions. Dr. Turner against the Mass. Crowlies Book in behalf of the poor Commons, &c.

*Cranmers
Book of Un-
written Veri-
ties.*

FOR the Conclusion of this Year, I shall glance at some Books of Remark that issued abroad within the compass of the same. One was a small Tract, Intituled, *Unwritten Verities*. It was Printed at London, in St. Andrews Parish in the *Wardrobe*, By Thomas Reynold, *Cum Privilegio*. This Book I make no doubt was that very Book which Archbishop Cranmer had before Penned and Printed, if I mistake not, in *Latin*; which Dr. Richard Smith of Oxford, in the beginning of this Reign Attempted to Confute, and was vindicated by the Archbishop. This Year for more Common Use it came forth in *English*. The Drift of it was to prove and shew, the Divine Authority of the Holy Scriptures, and the difference between them and Traditions, called *Unwritten Verities*; and to Enervate these, by declaring the first Rise and Original of them. That as for the Holy Scriptures, "It was not lawful to deny any thing they affirmed, nor to affirm any thing which they denied. And that because they were received in the Primitive Times by Assent of People and Clergy; when the People were newly Converted to the Faith, and were full of Grace and Devotion, and when there were blessed Bishops, and blessed Priests, and others blessed of the Clergy. And the Time of the Authorizing of the New Testament, and gathering it together was the time, he supposed, of the most High and Gracious shedding out of the Mercy of GOD into the World, that ever was from the beginning of the World to this Day. That after this, by a common speaking among the People; the Bishops and others of the Clergy were called, *The Church*, and under Colour of the Name *Church*, in Process of Time, Pretended that they might make Expositions of Scripture, as the Universal Church of Christ. And thereupon when Covetousness and Pride increased among the Clergy, they expounded, very favourably, divers Texts of Scripture, to found to the maintenance of their Honour, and Power, and Riches: And took upon them to affirm, that they were the Church, and might not Err; and that Christ and his Apostles had spoken and taught many Things that were not expressly in Scripture; but nevertheless that the People were as much bound to believe them, as the Scripture. Then he proceeded to Specify many of these Traditions, which the Clergy called, *Unwritten Verities*, pretending they were left to the World by Tradition and Revelation of the Apostles.

" Then

" Then he briefly confuted the Arguments commonly used in behalf of *ANNO*
 " their Authority: And reckoned it concerned Princes to look upon *1548.*
 " these *Unwritten Verities*, and upon the Clergies making Laws, and upon
 " their intruding Things upon the People to be believed upon Pain of
 " Damnation. This short but excellent Treatise, which is by this
 " Time almost wholly lost and extinct, I have thought fit to take this
 " Notice of. The whole Tract may be found in the *Repository*.

Having met with a Volume of Archbishop *Cranmers* Common Places, *Cranmers*
 I will here transcribe thence what he wrote and collected of these *Traditions*.
Traditions: especially because what is there written is different from the
 forefaid Book, and contains other Things.

" *Traditions not written recited by Tertullian*: That Children should *MSS. D. Hen-*
 " be Christned but two times in the Year, at *Easter* and *Whitsontide*. *ici D. Ep.*
 " That the Bishops should Christen them. They that should be *London.*
 " Christned, should be Three times put in the Water, the whole Body.
 " That by and by after, they should eat Milk and Honey mixed toge-
 " ther. That the whole Week after, they should not be washed. To
 " offer Yearly, the Day of Mens Death, and of their Birth. Upon
 " the Sunday neither to Fast, nor to kneel in Prayer: And likewise
 " from *Easter* to *Whitsontide*. To make a Cross upon our Fore-
 " heads.

" *Traditions recited by Basilus*. Making a Cross upon them that be
 " Christned. To turn our Faces to the *East*, when we Pray. Consecra-
 " ting of Oyl and Water in Baptism. Unction with Oyl. To put them
 " that be Baptized Three times in the Water. To renounce the Devil
 " and his Angels in Baptism.

" Other Authors rehearse a great number of *Traditions*. The Fast of
 " *Lent*. To Fast *Wednesday* and *Friday*. Not to Fast *Saturday* nor
 " *Sunday*. That a Bishop should be Consecrated of two or three Bishops,
 " and Priests of one. A Bishop, Priest and Deacon shall not meddle
 " with the Business and Care of worldly Things: And if he do, let
 " him be Deposed. If a Bishop give Orders in another Bishops Diocess
 " without his Licence, he shall be Deposed, and also he that taketh Or-
 " ders of him. Giving of *Pax* after Mass. Consecrating of *Religious*
 " Men. And a Thousand mo *Traditions* Apostolic there be, if we give
 " Credence to St. *Denys De Ecclesiast. Hierarch. Ignatius*, the Canons of
 " the Apostles, *Ecclesiastica & Tripartita Historia*, *Cyprian*, *Tertullian*,
 " *Irenæus*, with other old Antient Authors. And yet an Infinite num-
 " ber mo, we shall be constrained to receive, if we admit this Rule,
 " which St. *Augustine* many times repeats, that whatsoever is Universal-
 " ly observed, and not written in the Scripture, nor Ordained by Ge-
 " neral Councils, is a Tradition coming from the Apostles. As that
 " Bishops have Authority to Excommunicate all Persons that be mani-
 " fest and obstinate Sinners: To admit or reject other Bishops and Cu-
 " rates presented by Princes or Patrons: To ordain Ceremonies to be ob-
 " served in the Church: To make Laws, how to proceed in Excom-
 " munication, and other Laws Ecclesiastical: And what Punishment is
 " to be given to Offenders; and all People being within their Juris-
 " diction of what State or Condition soever they be, be bound to obey
 " them.

ANNO

1548.

" *Reasons. Idem.* If Traditions Apostolic have the force of God's Word, so that every one is bound to the Observation of them, the Bishop of Rome hath a great Advantage thereby to establish his Primacy: Not such a Primacy as he hath lately Usurped, but such a Primacy as he hath had by Prerogative from the beginning; that is to say, to be one of the four Patriarchs of Christendom, and the Chief of all Four. And the Traditions be the chief Authors, wherupon Pighius stayeth himself. And furthermore, if we admit Traditions to be of such Authority, it is to be feared that we must resort to the Church of Rome to fetch there our Traditions, as of the oldest, and the Mother Church. Irenæus, *Ad hanc*, &c. Cyprian calls Rome, *Petri Cathedralam & Ecclesiam principalem*. Julius writing for Athanasius, &c. Melchisedech, and other Quotations he there mentioneth.

" The Old Testament was sufficient for the Jews: And is not both the Old and the New sufficient for us?

" What things came by Traditions from the Apostles, no Man can tell certainly: And if we be bound to receive them as Articles of our Faith, then is our Faith uncertain. For we be bound to believe we know not what.

" Faith must needs be grounded upon God's Word. For St. Paul saith, *Fides ex auditu: Auditus autem per Verbum Dei. Omnis Scriptura divinitus inspirata*. This Text St. John Chrysost. Theophylact, Thomas, with many other Authors, both old and new, do expound plainly as the Words be, That whatsoever Truth is necessary to be taught for our Salvation, or the contrary to be reprov'd, Whatsoever is necessary for us to do, and what to forbear and not to do; All is compleatly contained in the Scripture. So that a Man thereby may be perfectly instructed unto all manner of Goodness. This was Archbishop Cranmers Judgment.

A Book of
Dr. Turner
agt. the Mass.

As the last year appeared abroad a Declaration of the Mass, so about this time, still for the further Humiliation of that Popish Service, came forth an Examination of the Mass, made by Dr. William Turner, a Physitian, about this time living in the Duke of Somersets Family, afterwards Dean of Wells, a witty as well as Learned Man. This Book was intituled, *A new Dialogue, wherein is conteyned the Examination of the Messe, and of that kind of Priesthood which is ordeyned to say Messe, and to offer up for Remission of Sin, the Body and Blood of Christ agayne*. The Names of the Speakers in this Dialogue are, Maistress Missa, Master Knowledge, Master Fremouth, Master Justice of Peace, Peter Preco, the Cryer, Palemon, the Judge, Dr. Porphyry, Sir Philip Philargyry. Of which two last the former represented a Dr. of the Canon Law, and the Latter a Dr. of Divinity and Priest, Missa's great Friends and Patrons. Mr. Knowledge describes her Abuses, Fremouth accuses her. Mr. Justice of Peace is hasty to execute the Law upon Fremouth, for speaking against her. Afterwards all apply to Palemon a wise Judge for his Decision. And he having at good length fully heard all Parties, in the end finds Mistres Missa Guilty, and pronounceth his Judgment against her in these Words: " These Men, thy Accusers have brought forth sufficient Evidence and Witness, that thou art not of God, that thou art contrary and an Enemy unto the Holy Scriptures, and an Idolatress, making a God of Consecrated Bread and Wine, and that to the great Injury of Christs Passion, thou offerest up Christ again, " and

"and as much as lyeth in thee, kyllest hym a Thousand tymes in *ANNO*
 "one Year. Wherefore thou hast deserved Death, and art worthy to *1548.*
 "he Burned. But least thy Fathers Generation, the Papists, should
 "say, that we are as desyrous of Bloud-sheddyng, as they were,
 "when they bare the Swynge, I Commaund thee in the payne of Burn-
 "yng to pack thee out of this Realm withal thy Bag and Baggage
 "within these eight Days, and go to thy Father the Pope withal the
 "speed that thou canst, and say, that here is in *England* no more
 "place for hym, neyther for any of hys Generation. And so the
 Book concludes with these Words of the *Mass*, wherein she laments her
 Case to her Friends the Priests; and prays them to look out some place
 in the Bible for her; which was so extremely difficult to find.

*Help and Defend, my good Brethren all,
 Which Love Doctrine Cathedral,
 And do believe unwritten Veritie,
 To be as good as Scriptures Sincerite.
 Because in the Bible I cannot be found,
 The Hereticks would Bury me under the Ground.
 I pray you hartily, yf it be possible,
 To get me a place in the great Bible.
 Or else, as I do understand,
 I shall be banished out of this Land;
 And shall be compelled with Sorrow and Payne,
 To return to Rome, to my Father again.*

Robert Crowley, a Stationer, in *Ely Rents*, but a Man of Letters, and A Book re-
 bred up in *Oxford*, an earnest Professor of Religion, and who a year commended
 or two after this, received Orders from Bishop *Ridley*; wrote a Book ment, in be-
 now complaining of the Abuses put upon the poor People, both by the half of the
 Clergy and Laity; Recommending their Cause to the Parliament now poor Com-
 sitting. It was Intitled, *An Information and Petition against the Op- mons,*
 pressors of the poor Commons of this Realm. Compiled and Imprinted
 for this only purpose, that among them that have to do in the Parliament,
 some Godly minded Men may hereat taken occaston to speak more in the
 Matter than the Author was able to write. Imprinted at London, by
John Day. Because this Book will shew much of the State of this Na-
 tion at present, and how the People stood affected, and what most ag-
 grieved them, and the Covetousness and Oppressions of the Wealthier
 sort, I shall in some larger Maner represent the Contents of it. It be-
 gan, "To the most Honourable Lords of the Parliament, with the
 "Commons of the same, their most humble and daily Orator, *Robert*
 "*Crowly*, wisheth the Assistance of God's Holy Spirit.
 "Among the manifold and most weighty Matters, Most worthy
 "Counsellors, to be Debated and Commoted of in this present Parlia-
 "ment, and by the Advice, Assent and Consent thereof speedily to be
 "redressed, I think there is no one thing more needful to be spoken
 "of, than the grievous Oppression of the Poor by the Possessioners,
 "as well of the Clergy as of the Laity.

A N N O

1548

Abuses to be
rectified in
the Clergy.

Orders.

M. 1.

The Sacra-
ments.

" No doubt it is needful, and there ought to be a Redress of many
 " Matters of Religion. As are these, the Use of the Sacraments and
 " Ceremonies, the usurping of Tenths to private Commodity, the su-
 " perfluous, unlearned and undiscree, and vitious Ministers of the Church,
 " and their superstitious and idolatrous Administration. Of these Things,
 " I say, ought there to be a speedy Reformation. For they are now
 " most like, hastily to bring upon this noble Realm the inevitable Ven-
 " geance of GOD, if they be not shortly reformed. Forasmuch as it hath
 " pleased the Almighty and Living GOD to open unto us those Abho-
 " minations, which have hertofore been kept secret and hidden from us.
 " These Things, I say, are yet far out of Joynt, and have great Need
 " to be Reformed. For, notwithstanding the King's Majesty's late Visi-
 " tation, the ignorant People, who have long been fostered and brought
 " up in the Superstition, and wrong Belief of these Things, and are yet
 " no doubt secretly instructed by their blind Guides, and by them holden
 " still in Blindness, will not be perswaded that their Forefathers Supersti-
 " tion was not the true Faith of Christ; till such as they have continuing
 " among them, such Preachers as shall be able, and will by the manifest
 " Scripture, prove unto them, that both they and their Fathers were
 " deceived, and knew not how to worship GOD aright; but shamefully
 " seduced by the Covetise of the Shepherds and Guides, sought him,
 " where he is not; And when they thought they had been most high
 " in his Favour by doing him so much Honour as they thought most ac-
 " ceptable in his Sight, then committed they most detestable Blasphemy,
 " and were abominable before him, &c. He spake next of the Abuse
 " of Orders. That they who received them were not Shepherds, but
 " Butchers, and came not to feed, but to be fed. That it was not pos-
 " sible to amend this great Enormity otherwise, than by reducing the
 " Order of chusing of Ministers, unto the Order that was in the Primi-
 " tive Church, wherof is mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles.—Idle
 " Bellies may come to the Bishop, and be smeared for Money.—They
 " applied themselves to Priesting, because they liked well the Idleness
 " of the Life. He recommended to the Parliament the Consideration of
 " this Matter at the full; which he doubted not the King's Majesty's Vi-
 " sitors knew more of, than he could be able to write.

Then he proceeded to speak of the *Sacraments*, How they were still
 " abused; using them as Matters of Merchandize, and chiefly the most
 " worthy Memory of our Redemption. For that they sell both to the
 " Quick and the Dead, to the Rich and to the Poor. None shall re-
 " ceive at their Hands without he will pay the ordinary Shot. And so
 " are they ready to serve every Man. They looked upon the Money
 " only, and nothing upon the Mind. Whether it were taken to Com-
 " fort of Conscience, or Judgment, they passed not. They told the
 " Money, they look'd for no more. If they would deny this to be true,
 " let them say, why they suffered the Poor to beg to pay for their
 " Houfel, as they called it. Perchance they would say, that the Money
 " was not paid for the Sacrament, but for the four offering Days. Then
 " ask I, said he, this Question, why they appointed not another Tyme
 " to receive it in, than that which was too little to be occupied in de-
 " claring to the People the right Use and Profit of the Sacraments, and
 " to instruct them so, that they did not receive it to their Judgment,
 " but

“but to their Comfort and Quietness of Conscience; for which Purpose *ANNO*
 “it was first instituted. Undoubtedly they could not deny, but that *1548.*
 “they appointed to receive it then, because they would be sure of it.
 “Their Doing would declare it, tho’ they should deny it. For none
 “might receive the Sacrament, unless he did first pay the Mony. And
 “then, with how little Reverence it was ministred and received, every
 “Christen there saw and lamented:—Wherefore he was certain, he said,
 “they had Occasion, and could do no less but seek a further Redress
 “hereof in this present Parliament.

“And as for the *Oppression* of the Poor, which was no less needful *The Oppres-*
 “to be commoned of and reformed, than the other; he feared it would *sion of Posses-*
 “be past over with Silence. Or if it were commoned of, he could scarcely *sioners.*
 “trust, that any Reformation could be had, unless God did now work
 “in the Hearts of the *Possessors* of this Realm, as he did in the Primi-
 “tive Church, when the *Possessors* were contented, and very willing
 “to sell their Possessions, and give the Price thereof to be common to all
 “the faithful Believers. He would not have any to take him, as tho’
 “he went about by these Words to persuade Men to make all things
 “common. But he would wish, that the *Possessors* would consider
 “who gave them their Possessions, and how they ought to bestow them;
 “and then he doubted not, it should not need to have all Things made
 “common.

“He protested unto them all, that the same Spirit that sent *Jonas* to
 “the *Ninevites*, *Daniel* to the *Babylonians*, *Nathan* to King *David*,
 “*Abior* unto *Holofernes*, *Judith* unto the Priests and Elders of the
 “*Jews*, the Prophet to *Jehoahaz* in *Bethel*, *John* the *Baptist* unto *He-*
 “*rod*, and Christ unto the *Jews*; Witnessed with his Conscience, that he
 “knew not unseent. For even the same Spirit that said unto *Esay*, *Cry*
 “*and cease not, and declare unto my People their Wickedness*, cried also
 “in his Conscience, bidding him not to spare to tell the *Possessors* of
 “this Realm, that unless they repented the *Oppressions* wherewith they
 “vexed the poor Commons, and shewed themselves through Love to be
 “Brothers of one Father, and Members of one Body with them,—and
 “would repent the Violence don to the poor and needy Members of
 “Christ, and become as Hands ministring unto every Member his Ne-
 “cessities; they should at the Day of their Account be bound Hand and
 “Foot, and cast into utter Darkness, where should be Weeping, &c.

“He cried out also against *Leasemongers*, as he called them, that took *Leasemongers*
 “Grounds by Lease, to the Intent to let them out again for double and
 “treble the Rent; And against Surveyors of Lands, that of Ten Pounds
 “Land could make Twenty. That they should not be forgotten in the
 “Effusion of God’s Plague. For that, when they had multiplied their
 “Rents to the highest, so that they had made all their Tenants their
 “Slaves, to labour and toil, and bring to them all that might be plowed
 “and digged out of their Grounds, then should Death suddenly strike
 “them; then should God withdraw his comfortable Grace from them;
 “then should their Consciences prick them, &c. Oh! Noble Coun-
 “sellors, as he added, be merciful to yourselves, destroy not your own
 “Souls, to enrich your Heirs. Enlarge not your earthly Possessions
 “with the Loss of the eternal Inheritance. Learn to know the Estate
 “that God hath called you unto, and to live according to your Pro-
 fession.

ANNO

1548.

“ fession. Know, that ye are all Members in the Commonweal, and
 “ that the Portion which you are born unto, or that your Prince gives
 “ you, is your Estate. Know, that your Office is to distribute, and not
 “ to scrape together on Heaps. GOD hath not set you to survey his
 “ Lands, but to play the Stewards in his Household of this World, and
 “ to see that your poor Fellow Servants lack not their Necessaries.
 “ Consider, that you are but Ministers and Servants unto the Lord our
 “ GOD, and that you shall render a strait Account of your Administra-
 “ tion. Stand not too much in your own Conceit, glorying in the
 “ Worthiness of your Blood: For we are all one Man’s Children, and
 “ have by Nature like right to the Riches and Treasures of this World,
 “ wherof our natural Father *Adam* was made Lord and King.——That
 “ you are Lords and Governours therfore cometh not by Nature, but
 “ by the Ordinance and Appointment of GOD. Know then, that he
 “ had not called you to the Wealth and Glory of this World, but hath
 “ charged you with the great and rude Multitude. And if any of them
 “ perish through your Default, know then for certainty, that the Blood
 “ of them shall be required at your Hands. If the impotent Creatures
 “ perish for lack of Necessaries, you are the Murderers: For you have
 “ their Inheritance, and do not minister unto them, &c.

The sad Ef-
 fects of Op-
 pression.

“ Do not therfore, as he went on, neglect this principal Part of your
 “ Duty, to seek in this Parliament a Redress of this great Oppression,
 “ wherewith the poor Members of this noble Realm are most unmercifully
 “ vexed on every side. The Landlords for their Parts survey and take
 “ the utmost Penny of all their Grounds; beside the unreasonable Fines
 “ and Incomes. And he that will not, or cannot give all that they de-
 “ mand, shall not enter, be he never so honest, or stand he in never so
 “ great Need; yea, though he hath been an honest, true, faithful and
 “ quiet Tenant many Years. Yet at the Vacation of his Copy or Inden-
 “ ture, he must pay welmost as much as would purchase so much Ground,
 “ or else void in hast, tho’ he, his Wife and Children should perish for
 “ lack of Harbour. What a Sea of Mischief hath flowed hence? Ho-
 “ nest Householders have been made Followers of others. And so ho-
 “ nest Mens Tables and honest Matrons brought to the needy Rock and
 “ Cards. Mens Children of good Hopes in the Liberal Sciences and
 “ other honest Qualities, (wherof this Realm hath great lack) compel-
 “ led to fall to some handy Crafts, as some to Day Labour to sustain
 “ their Parents decrepit Age, and miserable Poverty. Froward and
 “ stubborn Children have hereby shaken off the Yoke of godly Chastise-
 “ ment, running headlong into all Kinds of Wickedness, and finally,
 “ garnished Gallow Trees. Modest, chaste and womanly Virgins, for
 “ lack of Dowry, have been compelled to pass over the Days of their
 “ Youth under great Service, or else to marry to perpetual, miserable
 “ Poverty. Immodest and wanton Girls have hereby been made Sisters
 “ of the Bank, [*i. e.* The *Bank side* where the Stews were] the stum-
 “ bling Stocks of all frail Youth, and finally most miserable Creatures,
 “ lying and dying in the Streets, full of all Plagues and Penury, &c.

Raising Fines
 upon Leases
 another Op-
 pression.

“ On the other side, there be certain Tenants, not able to be
 “ Landlords, and yet after a Sort they counterfeit Landlords by
 “ obtaining Leases, and upon Grounds and Tenements, and
 “ to raise Fines, Incomes and Rents: and by such Pillage pike out a
 Portion

" Portion to maintain a proud Port; and by pilling and polling the poor
 " Commons, that must of Necessity seek Habitations at their Hands, &c.
 " For the Truth of this he reported him to the Lord Maior, and other
 " Head Officers of London; who could witness with him, that the most
 " Part, yea, he thought nine of the ten Parts of the Houses in London,
 " were let and let by them that had them by Lease, and not by the
 " Owners. How they polled the poor Tenants would be tried, if their
 " Leases were conferred with their Rent Rolls.

A N N O

1548.

Usual in London.

He went afterward to the great Extortion and Usury that reigned in
 the Realm, and seemed to be authorized by Parliament within these three
 Years last past. " The Clergy of the City of London, had for their
 " Parts obtained by Parliament Authority to Over-tenths, ever after the
 " Example of the Landlords and Leasemongers, and might by Virtue of
 " the Act require for double Rents, double Tenths. If the Rent of a-
 ny kind of Housing or Ground within the City of London were raised,
 as there was indeed very much from ten Shillings to twenty Shillings;
 then might the Parson, who had before but 16 *d ob.* by Vertue of
 " this Act demaund 2 *s. 9 d.* the double. Besides this, the Exactions
 " they took of the poor Commons was so much beyond all Reason and
 " Conscience. No Couple could be married, but these Men must have
 " a Duty, as they called it. No Woman might be purified, but they
 " and their idle Ministers must have some Duties of her. None could
 " be buried, but they would have a Fleece. An Instance of which he
 brings in, that it was not three Months before the beginning of the
 present Parliament, he had just Occasion to be at the Payment of this
 Duty, for the burying of an honest poor Man, whose Friends were wil-
 ling to have his Body reverently laid in the Ground, and according to
 the Custom he gave warning to the Curate, that they should bring the
 dead Body to the Church, desiring him that he would do his Duty, and
 to be there to receive it, and according to the Custom to lay it in the
 Ground. " But this Raven, said he, smelling the Carrion, could not but
 " reveal it to the other Carrion Birds of the same Church, and so would
 " needs come altogether in a Flock to fetch their Prey, with Crosse and
 " Holy Water as they were wont to do, notwithstanding the Kings In-
 junctions, and late Visitation. The Friends of the Dead refused all
 this, and required to have no more but the common Coffin to put the
 " Body in; Agreeing to pay to the Keeper thereof his accustomed Duty,
 " and in like manner to the Grave-maker, and the four poor Men to
 " carry the Body. So that the whole Charges had been but seven pence.
 " But when the Corps was buried without either Crosse or Holy Water;
 " Styck, Dirige or Mass, with Prayers of as small Devotion as any poor
 " Curate could say, yet must we needs pay seven pence more; that is
 " to say, one peny to the Curate; which he called an *Head-peny*, and Six
 " pence to three Clerks that we had no need of. This was done in *Sepul-*
 " chres Parish in the City of London. " This he wrote, as he said, Ad-
 dressing to the worthy Counsellors of Parliament, to give them an
 occasion to set such an Order in this and such other Things, that ei-
 ther they might have Ministers found upon the Tenths that they paid
 Yearly to the Churches; or else that it might be lawful for them to do
 such Ministries themselves: And not to be thus constrained to feed a

Extortion.

The Clergy had Over-tenths.

" fort

ANN O " sort of Carrion-Crows, which were never so merry, as when other
1548. " lamented the loss of their Friends.

Usury.

This for the Extortion of the Clergy. Then he passed " to the intolerable Usury, which at that day reigned freely in the Realm over all; and especially in London. That it was taken for most lawful Gain: yea, that it was almost Heresy to reprove it. For Men said, it was allowed by Parliament. Well, said he, the most part, I am sure, of this most Godly Assembly and Parliament do know, that the Occasion of the Act that past here concerning Usury, was the insatiable desires of the Usurers. Who could not be contented with Usury, unless it were unreasonable much. To restrain this greedy Desire of theirs therefore, it was Commoned and Agreed upon, and by the Authority of Parliament decreed, that none should take above 10 l. by Year for the Loan of a 100 l. Alas! that ever any Christian Assembly should be so void of God's Holy Spirit, that they should allow for lawful, any thing, that God's Word forbiddeth. Be not abashed, most worthy Counsellors, to call this Act into Question again. Scan the Words of the Psalmist concerning this Matter, *Who shall enter into thy Tabernacle, &c. He that hath not given his Money unto Usury.*—How can you suffer this Act to stand, which shall be a Witness against you in the latter Day, that you allow that which God's Spirit forbiddeth, *Luke vi. Do ye lend, looking for no gain thereof, and your reward shall be plenteous, &c.*

The Conclusion of the Book.

" And so wishing them, in the Conclusion, the same Spirit that in the Primitive Church gave unto the Multitude of Believers, one Heart, and one Mind, to esteem nothing of this World their own; Ministering unto every one according to his necessities.—And this Reformation had, no doubt the Majesty of God should so appear in all their Decrees, that none so wicked a Creature should be found so bold as once to open his Mouth against the Order they should take in all Matters of Religion.—But if they let these Things pass and regarded them not, he bad them be sure the Lord should confound their Wisdom: Invent, Decree, Establish and Authorize what they could, all should come to nought. The ways that they should invent to Establish Unity and Concord, should be the Occasions of Discord: The Things whereby they should think to win Praise through all the World, should turn to their utter shame, and the ways they should invent to Establish a Kingdom, should be the utter Subversion of the same.

Another Discourse of the Praise of such as sought Commonwealths, comes forth.

Another small Treatise came forth, and writ, (as it seems to me) for the Use of the same Parliament, and for the same Intent with the former, It was Intituled, *The Praise and Commendation of such as sought Commonwealth, And to the Contrary, The End and Discommendation of such as sought Private Wealths, Gathered both out of the Scriptures and Philosophers.* It was Printed by Anth. Scoloker, dwelling in the Savoy Rents. This Discourse is chiefly levelled against the Covetousness and Self-seeking of the Age, which then so much prevailed. In the forefront of this Discourse is set a Moral saying of Epicurus, *If a Man having Goods in abundance, do not repute it sufficient, he is but a Wretch and a Catif, altho' he were Lord over the whole World.* Then followed this Sentence, *Four Things follow Covetousness. I. Unfatiableness, being*

ing never contented. II. Scarceness of all Things among the Commons. A N N O
 III. Deceit among the People. And IV. The Desire of Worldly Honour. 1548.

The Book begins thus.

"Aristotle in the first Book of *Politics*, the Tenth Chapter, saith,
 "How that divers Men esteem Riches to be nothing but only a heap
 "or Quantity of Gold and Silver. And it is great folly either to
 "think or say the same. For the Philosopher saith, That and if the
 "Course of Gold and Silver were restrained, that then it should no
 "more be profitable to Commonwealths, neither yet to those Things
 "that are needful to Man's Life. For many times it may chance to
 "him, which hath abundance of Gold and Silver, to perish for lack of
 "Food. And after some lines, "We see in these Days, Men so given
 "to unsatiable Covetousness in procuring their own private Wealths,
 "that the Commonwealth decayeth, and no Man looketh to it. We
 "are commanded to love GOD above all, and our Neighbour as our
 "selves. But how do we love our Neighbours as our selves, when we
 "put them out of their Houses, and lay their Goods in the Streets?
 And then soon after, reproving the Professors of the Gospel for this Fault,
 "adds, "Who in these Days are such Oppressors, such Graziers [turn-
 "ing Arable Land into Pasture] such Shepherds [keeping Sheep instead
 "of Plowing for the setting poor Men on Work] such Enhauncers of
 "Rents, such Takers of Incomes, as are those which profess the Go-
 "spel? What is this but to speak evil of that good Name of Christ,
 "after whom we are named *Christians*?-----Would to GOD that in
 "these Days Men would be as careful for their poor Brethren, as they
 "are for their Dogs. We see the City of London can of the Chamber-
 "lains Cost provide an House, to keep twenty or thirty Dogs, and to London negli-
gent of the
Poor.
 "give ten Pounds a Year for one to keep them. But they will not
 "allow ten pence by Year out of the Chamber towards the finding
 "of the Poor. But the poor Artificers must bear part and part alike
 "to the most Extremity, that can be invented, as lately appeared by
 "the Common Council. By hearfay, there is a good Sum yearly co-
 "ming into the Chamber of London: And no Man knoweth, how it
 "is spent, but the gray Cloaks, [Servants to the Court of Aldermen, and
 "such like.] Yet can there not be a poor Spring fet two flight shot out
 "of the City [to supply the City with Water] but the poor Commons
 "must bear part thereof. I trust within twenty Years, Men will
 "make Suit to be Maiors of the City, &c. [Glancing at the Benefits
 "and Advantages the Maiors in those Times lookt at to make of
 "that Office.]

"We have now no *Samuels*, which will ask the Commons, saying, Bribery too
Common.
 "Have I taken any Mans Ox or Ass? If I have done any Man Violence
 "or Wrong, if I have oppressed any Man, if I have received a Gift of
 "any Mans hand, and kept it secret, I will restore it you again. And
 "the People said, No. We have none of these. Neither *Daniels* nor
 "*Elizeus*'s, to deny Gifts. But we have plenty of *Gebazies* in all
 "Places to receive, GOD defend them from their Leprosies.---I dare
 "not write for offending, but this dare I write, that if divers Officers
 "within this Realm, should shew their Accounts from Year to Year,
 "how they have gotten their Goods, as Merchants may do, it should
 "be found that there were no mervail, tho' the Kings Majesty lacked
 "Money,

ANNO 1548. "Money, and the poor Commons complain. Hereby may plainly be seen the great Vice of this Age, an immeasurable Affectation of Wealth in the Superior sort of Men, which led them to divers ill Practises, to the impoverishing of the Commons, and, I may add, of the King too.

Crowley's Confutation of Shaxtons Articles.

I will mention yet another Book that came abroad this Year; and this was in the behalf of Religion, set forth by *Crowley* aforesaid. It was a Confutation of the Thirteen Articles whereunto *Nic. Shaxton*, late Bishop of *Salisbury* subscribed, and caused to be set forth in Print in the Year 1546. when he Recanted in *Smithfield*, at the Burning of Mrs. *Anne Ascue*. Printed by *Day* and *Seres*. In this Book were contained these several Pieces. I. Certain Matters sent by Mr. *Shaxton* to his Wife: They were Counsels to her for Chastity, now he was to be divorced from her. II. A Letter sent him by the Inhabitants of *Hadley*, where he had been Minister: Whence he had been sent for up. At what time he told his People upon his parting, his Resolution to persist in the acknowledgment of the Truth, whatever became of him. His Parishioners in this Letter severely charge him for his Inconstancy. III. His Submission to King *HENRY*, when he Recanted. IV. His Opinion in the Sacrament before his Recantation, which was Right and Orthodox. Writ by himself, to the Popish Bishops. V. His Thirteen Articles, containing the Sum of the Popish Doctrine, by him Confessed, Subscribed and put in Print; Together, with the Confutation of them by *Crowley*: Which makes the Bulk of the Book. And before all these is the said *Crowley's* Epistle to *Shaxton*.

Bale de Viris Illustribus.

The first Edition of *John Bales* most elaborate and highly valuable Book of the Writers of *Britain* came forth this Year in *Quarto*. Printed at *Ipswich*, by *John Overton*, pridie Cal. Augusti. The Author Dedicated his Book to King *EDWARD*: Who in the Title Page is represented sitting on his Throne, and *Bale* upon his Knees offering him his Book, his Tutor *Cheke* standing by at a Curtain.

Æpinus de Purgatorio, &c.

To this I add, another Book in *Quarto* of a Foreigner. Dedicated this Year, also to the King, in a long Epistle dated from *Hamburg*. The Author was *Johannes Æpinus*. The Subjects of his Book were, *De Purgatorio, Satisfactionibus, Remissione Culparum & Pœna, &c.* This *Æpinus* was chief Minister of the Church of *Hamburg*, and was sent twelve Years before as Envoy from *Hamburg* into *England* to King *HENRY* upon Matters of Religion.

Buceri Gratulatio.

And lastly, *Gratulatio Buceri ad Ecclesiam Anglicanam de Religionis Christi Restitutione. Et Ejusdem Responsio ad duas Stephani Vintoniensis Episcopi Epistolas*, 4to. Which answer of *Bucer* to *Winchester* was also this Year put into *English*. And *Bradford* mentioneth it in a Letter to *Traves*. 1548.

Lady Elizabeth's Book.

The Lady *Elizabeth's* Translation of a Meditation of the Soul concerning Love towards God and his Christ, must not here be forgotten: Compiled in *French* by the late *Margaret Queen of Navar*. Printed in 8vo. and afterwards reprinted by *H. Denham*.

Bonner's Book.

Richard Bonner Priest, a Man of the same Name with that bloody Bishop, but of better Principles, set forth a Treatise this Year of the right Worshipping of Christ in the Sacrament of Bread and Wine, when it is Ministred with Thanksgiving in the Holy Supper. Printed for *Gualter Lyn*, 8vo.

CHAP. XVIII.

Proclamations for Regulation of sundry Abuses in the Realm: As, about Gold and Silver Coins: The Kings Bands of Soldiers not filled: News, disparaging the Kings Affairs. The Teston: Inclosures, &c. The Lord Protector loses himself with the Nobility. The Lady Mary required to use the Common Prayer, Established by Law. Dr. Hopton her Chaplain.

THE Kings Gold was now much conveyed out of the Kingdom, occasioned, it may be, by the Wars in *Bulloyn*; and especially the old Coins of *Rials*, (as they were called) Angels, Half Angels, Crowns of the Rose, and others of that or like Standard; and also Sovereigns, Half Sovereigns, and other of the Kings new Coin of Gold. The Kings Gold was carried away in such Quantities, that it was sensibly felt, to the great disfurnishing of the Realm. Which obliged the King to send forth a Proclamation bearing date *April. 3.* forbidding that any Man should convey it away, whole or broken, upon Pain of Imprisonment, and other Pains and Forfeitures, as were by the Law appointed. By vertue of this Proclamation other Abuses, concerning the Kings Gold and other Coins, were provided against. As, a charge was given that none should buy or sell the abovesaid Gold for other price, than according as they were valued and appointed by the Proclamation, *Viz.*

Orders about the gold Coin;

The Angel of Gold	} at	{	0-9-8	The new Sovereign	} at	{	1-0-0
The Half Angel			0-4-10	The Half Sovereign			0-10-0
The old Rial			0-13-6	The Crown			0-5-0

And if any should buy or sell the said Pieces at above that Price, he should forfeit the said Coins so bought or sold, and besides ten times the Value thereof, and suffer Imprisonment.

And a Practice of Goldsmiths and Merchants was also by this Proclamation forbid. Which was to buy and sell the Kings Coin at higher Prizes than it was by the Kings Proclamation rated and valued at. And so to cull and try out the finest and heaviest, and melt them down, or otherwise make gain upon them; leaving the lightest and less fine only to be current: to the impairing the Kings Money, defrauding the Subjects, and disfurnishing and slandering the Mints. For the prevention of this, it was the Kings Will and Pleasure, that the old Law, Statutes and Customs of the Realm in this case should be put in Ure and Execution.

And other Coin.

ANNO This Proclamation also took notice, how Persons beyond Sea had of
1548. late attempted to Counterfeit Testons, Shillings, Groats and other the
 Kings Coin of Silver, and in great Multitudes brought them into the
 Realm. Such Counterfeiters were to forfeit their Lives and Lands,
 Goods and Chattels.

Abuses in the
 Kings Army;

By the Cap-
 tains;

By the Soldi-
 ers.

Redress ther-
 of by Procla-
 mation.

A gross Deceit was now discovered among the Kings Military Officers and Soldiers, which he kept in constant Pay, the numbers of the Bands not being filled, tho' the Kings full Pay was allowed. And this Abuse was especially in the Counties of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland* and *Westmorland*, and other Places of the Borders. The Captains of the light Horsemen were chiefly guilty of this Fraud; who had not so much before their Eyes, their Duty towards their Sovereign Lord and Country, nor yet their own surety, as a vile mind and filthy respect of their own gain. For they not only polled their Soldiers without shame or dread, but diminished their numbers appointed to serve under them; saving that for a Colour at the Muster-day, they procured some to supply the void Places. And by Pattishment with unmeet and unserviceable Men for less Wages than the King allowed, they did in such sort disguise their numbers, as in a Manner the third part of the numbers, which the King appointed and paid for, was not ready, able or sufficiently furnished to do that Service that was looked for; to the deceit of his Majesty, and the no less danger of the Kings true Subjects and Soldiers, as upon the Confidence of the aid of such light Horsemen, to joyn with them at any encounter with the Enemy, should find themselves deceived and abandoned. And as the Captains did thus, so the Soldiers taking example and boldness from them, provided not themselves of Horse or Harness meet to serve withal; and when they were commanded to set forth towards any Place of Service, repaired not thither together, but sometimes more than the half part remained behind. And if they went, stuck not to return home by small Companies, without leave, with several Preys and Booties, more by them sought, than doing Service. And which was worse, at any Approach or Affronture of the Enemy, without order or respect of abiding by the Standard, they used commonly upon every little Moment, or causeless, to begin the Flight, betraying their Fellows; who through such their Flying lost oftentimes that assured Advantage of Victory, which with their tarrying they might have been parrakers of. And if so be they tarried, they did it not so much for discharge of their Profession of Service, as only for desire of Spoil and Pillage. And this Pillage they sought not so much upon their Enemies, as rather upon the Kings own Subjects or Friends, namely, the assured *Scotchmen*: Whose Goods and Cattle divers of those light Horsemen of *Northumberland* and others of the Borders had lately spoiled and robbed; as by sundry Complaints of such *assured Men* was well known. This gross want of good Discipline was in the Kings *Militia*.

For the Remedyng of which the King, *April 6.* issued out a strict Proclamation. The Captains were commanded henceforth not to fail to have in Readiness their whole and intire Number without Diminishment in any Part, and without Defalcation of any Part of the Wages so allowed to every Light Horse; and that they failed not to have their Bands compleat always, as in an Hour's Warning to be given them by the

the

The Commissioners: and that none of the Captains, or any Light Horsemen of the Bands, at any Road or other Invasion of the Enemies Grounds, or Defence of the Borders, should dare to depart from the Standard, or otherwise forsake, or scatter from the rest of the Army or Company; nor to forsake or depart from any Fortrefs, to the Guard wherof they should be appointed, unless they should have expresse Commandment. And finally, to forbear henceforth to commit any Spoils or Pillages upon any of the *affured Scotchmen*, their Goods, Lands or Cattle: which had been received into his Majesty's Protection. And likewise, that they forbore from the imbezziling or pilfering of Horses, Geldings, Harness, Weapons, or any other Thing, pertaining to any other Soldier serving his Majesty in the Wars; wherby the Service of the Party robbed might be hindered. And that no Captain, or Soldier sell, give, or exchange, or by any Fraud find means to set out on Purpose, any Horses to be taken and come into the Possession of any *Scotchman*, or other Stranger, being his Majesty's Enemy. And if any Soldier placed in Garrison with any of his Majesty's Pieces, shall, before Discharge of the Captain, leave his Watch or Ward to the Danger of the Loss of the Piece, his Majesty doth and will order, that the Offender shall incur the Danger and Pain of Death.

ANNO

1549.

About this very Time did many disaffected Persons raise malicious Reports of great Overthrows and Losses, to the Disparagement of the King, his Fortresses, Captains and Soldiers in the North Parts, and beyond the Seas; and of Dangers relating to his Majesty's other Affairs. Wherby they gave occasion to Strangers to write into distant Countries such Tales for News, to the great Dishonour of the King: being most false and untrue. This caused the King to set forth a Proclamation, bearing date April 29. to all Justices, and other Officers to give all Diligence to seize all such Sowers and Tellers abroad of vain and forged Tales and Lyes. And every such Author or Maker of false Tales or News, to be committed into the Gallies, there to row in Chains, as a Slave or Forsary, during the King's Pleasure.

Disparaging
News told of
the King's Af-
fairs: but
false.

The *Tetton* was a very common Piece of current Coin under King HENRY VIII. and in these Times of King EDWARD. It was a sort of coarse Mony, or under Standard, coined at first by the said King HENRY with his Face and Stamp, and went for Twelve Pence. Vast Quantities of them were coined abroad, and brought into *England*; and they more than other Peices for the Greatness and Facillity of Counterfeiting them. The Counterfeiters were for the most Part Strangers, dwelling in foreign Parts, who found means to convey hither privily, and disperse the said counterfeit Pieces abroad in the King's Dominions. But all Tettons were by a Proclamation the last Year put down, so that none should be taken after the last of *December* in the second Year of the King, but as Bullion. But by another Proclamation in *January*, they were prolonged for some Time, by reason of the great Numbers of these Tettons dispersed in so many Hands; besides, many in Policy, hard upon the Day, made whole Payments in the said Coin; and especially for that, those that had Plenty of other Mony took unreasonable Allowance of the poorer Sort, (which were most to be relieved) for the Exchange of their Tettons. So that much Detriment might ensue to the Possessors of them, unless a Remedy, by prolonging of the Term then appointed for

The Tetton
Mony.

ANNO for their calling in, were provided. Upon which Considerations the King thought good to prolong the Term to the first of *May*: And so the Teston to continue till then, for current Mony.

They are
cried down.

On *May* 22. Another Proclamation came forth for the Annihilating of Testons: Importing, That the King had prolonged the Term of allowing them for current Mony, as was shewed before, upon Trust that in that space, every Man helping in their Way, all Maner of the said Testons of the Stamp of the late King should have been brought into the Mint and exchanged. But that many had kept them still in their Hands, abusing his Majesty's Clemency, and fewer sithence that Time, till of late had been brought into the *Mint*. Which Testons, if they should remain only mere Bullion, would be great Loss and Hindrance to the Subject; and if they should still remain, would be greatest Loss and Hindrance to the Realm. Therefore they were now to be cried down, and never hereafter taken for current Mony. Yet the King of his princely Clemency and Liberality was content, that such Sums of Mony as should be due to him, as well for Relief granted in the last Session of Parliament, as for all other Rents and Debts, might be paid in good and lawful Testons before the first of *June* next, and so received of his Treasurers after the Rate and Value of Twelve Pence: And after that for the Space and Time of two Months, that is, until the last of *July*, the King was content to receive these Testons at the *Mint* for Bullion, after the Rate of Twelve Pence the Piece. And moreover, it should be Jawful for any Person to buy Testons, with Intent to bring them to the *Mint*; so that he buy them for no less Price than Eleven Pence Half Penny the Piece. Upon pain that whosoever should buy any such Pieces for his own greedy Lucre, under that Value, to the Damage of the poor Men, who should sell the same, should forfeit those Testons, and ten Times the Value. And for that Price the *Mints* were ordered to receive them.

Inclosures
and Decay of
Houses forbid.

About the Month of *May* the King, to prevent the Disgusts that might arise amongst his Commons, and to stop Insurrections now foreseen, issued out his Proclamation against Decay of Houses, (for Husbandmen, Plowmen, and such like) of Commons and lawful Inclosures contrary to good and wholesome Laws heretofore made. The King did therefore command such Offences to be amended, and to redress all Faults committed against those Acts, and against the Benefit of the Commonwealth. And for the better Performance of the same, that all his Offices to whom it did appertain to see the same redressed, should receive Informations, make Enquiry, and earnestly endeavour to see Redress and Punishment of all such Offenders.

Routs and
Uproars a-
gainst Inclo-
sures.

But many of the King's Subjects took occasion hence to run into great Disorder, or pretended to take occasion so to do. For they riotously with Routs and Companies, with Sword and Violence, of their own Heads and Authority assembled themselves in many Places, plucked down Mens Hedges, disparked their Parks; and being led by furious and light Guides of Uproars, taking upon them the Direction of Things, the King's Royal Power and Sword not regarded, committed such Enormities and Offences, as they justly merited the Loss of Life, Lands and Goods. But at length they were brought humbly to submit themselves, and beg Pardon. Whereupon the King by a Proclamation dated *June* the 12th. Pardoned

Pardoned them: Looking upon this Outrage (as the said Proclamation *A M N O* set forth) as don rather of Folly, and mistaking of his former Proclama- 1549. tion, and at the Instigation and Motion of certain leud and seditious Persons, than of any Malice or ill Will that they bare to the King or Quiet of the Realm: Excepting such Persons as were apprehended and already in Prison, as Heads of the said Outrage and Routs. But this Rage of the Commons had gotten too great a Head to be allayed by this Clemency of the Prince, as it proved not long afterwards in many Parts of England, as may be read at large in our Historians.

All Provisions this Summer grew very dear, and the Prizes of Victuals so enhaunced above the accustomed Value, and this without ground or reasonable Cause, as thereby great Loss and Danger, without speedy Remedy, must happen to the Subject. Therefore the King resolved to take some Remedy herein; and especially being backed with the Authority of former good Statutes, and particularly two made in 25 of HENRY VIII, The Effect of the latter wherof was, That the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Chancellor, and divers others of the Kings great Officers there mentioned, should have Power and Authority from Time to Time, to set and tax reasonable Prices on all kind of Victuals, how they should be sold in Gros or by Retail, for Relief of the King's Subjects. And that after such Prices be set, Proclamation should be made under the Great Seal of the said Prices. And that all Farmers and other Victuallers should sell all kind of Victuals according as they should be taxed by the said Proclamation, upon certain Pains and Penalties. In pursuance of this and other Acts, the Lord Treasurer, and Lord Chancellor, and others, set and taxed Reasonable Prices upon all kinds of Victuals; and the King confirmed the same with his Proclamation dated July 2. Which Taxation was after this Manner.

A great
Dearth of
Provision.

From Midsummer to Hallowmas.

Every Ox being primed and well stricken of the largest Bone	—	38 s.
Of a meaner Sort	—	28 s.
An Ox fat, and of the largest Bone	—	45 s.
Of the meaner Sort being fat	—	38 s.
Steers or Runts being primed or well stricken and large of Bone	—	20 s.
Of a meaner Sort	—	16 s.
Being fat of the largest Bone	—	25 s.
Being fat of a meaner Sort	—	21 s.
Heifers and Kine being primed and well stricken and large of Bone	—	16 s.
Of a meaner Sort	—	13 s. 4 d.
Being fat and large of Bone	—	22 s.
Being fat and of a meaner Sort	—	18 s.

From Hallowmas to Christmas.

Every Ox being fat and large of Bone	—	46 s. 8 d.
Being fat of a meaner Sort	—	39 s. 8 d.
Steers and Runts being fat and large of Bone	—	26 s. 8 d.
Being fat of a meaner Sort	—	22 s. 8 d.

Heifers

A N N O

1549.

Heifers and Kine being fat and large of Bone	—	—	23 s.
Of a meaner Sort	—	—	19 s.

From Christmas to Shrovetide.

Every Ox being fat and large of Bone	—	—	48 s. 4 d.
Of a meaner Sort	—	—	41 s. 4 d.
Steers and Runts being fat and large of Bone	—	—	28 s. 4 d.
Of a meaner Sort	—	—	24 s. 4 d.

From Sheering Time to Michaelmas.

Every Weather being a Shear-sheep, lean and large of Bone	—	—	3 s.
Of a meaner Sort	—	—	2 s. 4 d.
Being fat and large of Bone	—	—	4 s.
Being fat of a meaner Sort	—	—	3 s.
Ewes being lean and large of Bone	—	—	2 s.
Being lean of a meaner Sort	—	—	20 d.
Being fat and large of Bone	—	—	2 s.

From Michaelmas to Shrovetide.

Every Weather being a Shear-sheep, lean and large of Bone	—	—	3 s.
Being lean of a meaner Sort	—	—	2 s. 4 d.
Being fat and large of Bone	—	—	4 s. 4 d.
Being fat of meaner Sort	—	—	3 s. 4 d.

And besides these, Bacon, Butter, Cheefe were rated: And all Farmers, Graziers and others that had Cattel or Corn, were bound to bring a certain Number and Quantity of them to the Market.

The Prote-
ctor loses
himself with
the Nobility.

The Lord Protector had by this Time much lost himself among the Nobility and Gentry. For, being of a gentle and good Nature, he loved and pitied the poorer Sort, too much oppressed by the Rich, and particularly by that covetous Practice of Inclosures; whereby the Cattel of the poor were shut out of their antient Benefit of feeding in Commons; By means of which their Children and Families were half maintained. Which made the Protector somewhat sharp upon those of the higher Rank and Quality. He began also to grow too big for the rest of the Nobles: So that there now was but a thin Court, and a thin Council Table. Of this his Friend Sir William Paget took notice, and wrot him Letters of good Counsil concerning it last *Christmas*, telling him the Evil that would follow. And so indeed it fell out this Summer, as we shall see in due place. This Behaviour of the Protector was so well observed, that a *Spaniard* being now in *England*, made this witty, but malicious Relation of it, when he came home, That he saw the Protector ride upon a fair goodly Horse, but he trembled. And that he was so strong and big made, that he carried both his Grace, and all the King's Council at once upon his Back: Meaning, That there was no King's Council in Effect but himself only. So that the Protector had now procured himself many formidable Enemies, as we shall hear e're long.

In

In *June*, the Protector and Council sent to the Lady *Mary* (knowing how averſe ſhe was therunto) to conform to King EDWARD's Laws, and to obſerve in her Family the new Book of Common Prayer, now by Parliament commanded, the Uſe wherof to commence at and from *Pentecoſt*; and alſo to ſend unto them her Comptroller, and Dr. *Hopton* her Chaplain. But ſhe in her answer, dated *June 22.* from *Kenninghall*, reſuſed to do either, ſaying, "She could not ſpare her Comptroller, and her Chaplain had been Sick. She told them, moreover, that the Law made by Parliament, [meaning the Law lately made for Ratifying and Enjoyning the Common Prayer Book] was not worthy the Name of a Law. That King HENRIE's Executors were ſworn to his Laws. That her Houſe was her Flock. That ſhe deferred her Obedience to the Kings Laws, till he were of ſufficient Years. That ſhe was Subject to none of the Council, and the like, which gave great Offence.

Dr. *Hopton* at length came before the Council. And to them he profeſſed he allowed the Communion Book. And diſpatching him back to the Lady *Mary*, they bad him declare this his Conſcience to her; and giving at large their Answers to the ſeveral Parts of her Letter, to deliver them to her, (which Answers of the Council are preſerved in *Fox*) they ſent him away. And this was the Order they ſent with him.

"After due Commendations unto your Grace, the ſame may by theſe Preſents underſtand, that we have heard your Chaplain Dr. *Hopton*, and in like manner, informed him for the Declaration of ſuch Things as we have inſtructed him to utter unto you, whom we require your Grace to credit therein accordingly. Thus we pray GOD conſerve your Grace in Health. From *Richmond*, *July 7.* 1549.

E. Somerſet. T. Cant. R. Ryche Canc. W. S. John. J. Warwyck.
A. Wyngfield. W. Petre S. A. Denny. E. North. R. Sadleyr.

Se more of theſe Matters between the Council and the Lady *Mary* under the next Year.

CHAP. XIX.

The Realm in ill Terms with Scotland and France. Pagets Ambaſſy to the Emperor. A Match propounded for the Lady Mary. The Emperor intercedes for her Liberty in Religion.

THE *Engliſh* Nation continued ſtill in Hoſtility with *Scotland*, and in little better underſtanding with *France*. And *France*, according to her Cuſtom, backed *Scotland*. Where *Monſ. de Termes* arrived this Summer from the *French* King, bringing with him the number

VOL. II.

X

ber

A N N O
1549.The Council
require the
Lady Mary to
uſe the Com-
mon Prayer.
Her Answer.Dr. Hopton
her Chaplain
before the
Council.All and Mon.
p. 1212.The Council
to Lady Mary
MSS. G. Petyt
Armig.The French
ſend Forces
to Scotland.

A N N O ber of Five hundred Footmen, and an hundred Horsmen : No great
1549. Force ; especially, considering that far greater Forces were expected to
 have been sent this Year ; for these were like to go but a little way in
 resisting the Power of *England*. But the Truth was, the *French* were
 loth to spare Men at this Time, the Emperor his Enemy being Sick
 and like to die. And the *French*, who came now over with *De Termes*,
 had plainly confessed, upon question asked, wherfore no greater Aid was
 sent, seeing such Preparation for the War was reported to be made in
France ; that it was true the *French* King had greater numbers in readi-
 ness, but because the Emperor was sickly, and unlike to continue long
 in Life (being laid up with a great Fit of the Gout ; out of which yet he
 escaped) that King kept his Forces together ; thinking that whenso-
 ever *G O D* should dispose of the Emperor, he should be able to do
 great Feats, and almost what he listed that Way.

Inchequeth taken from the *Scots* ; The *English* took from the *Scots* this Year, the Island of *Inchequeth*,
 by the Conduct of *Cotton* ; and being in great towardness for the Forti-
 fication therof, it so chanced that our Ships, and in them many of the
 Soldiers appointed to attend the said *Cotton* at *Inchequeth*, were depart-
 ed from the Island for the doing of another Exploit ; when the *Scots*
 and *Frenchmen*, having notice of the Departure of our Ships with the
 Men in them, taking the Advantage of some negligence used on our be-
 half, and having also prepared for this Matter before, came with their
 And retaken. Gallies, and as many other Ships and Boats as they could make, and
 approached the Island, and after some Resistance, in the end, distressed
 our Men, and took the Island, with such Ordnance as was planted up-
 on the same.

The *English* inform the Emperor of *French* Practi-
 ces. During the Emperors Sickness mentioned before, there was great Pra-
 ctising in the beginning of this Year, between the *French* and the Ger-
 mans. Which the *English* Court understanding, out of Friendship and
 Gratitude to the Emperor, who had before sent Informations hither of
 Practises against us, thought fit to give him notice of it by *Hoby* Amba-
 sador Ledgier there. Which the Council thus expressed in their Let-
 ters to him, dated from *Greenwich*, May 5. " That forasmuch as the
 " Emperor divers Times had very gently and friendly Advertised the
 " Kings Majesty of such Practises as had been attempted against his Coun-
 " try, or any of his Fortresses or Pieces, wherein the Kings Majesty had
 " taken great Pleasure and Comfort ; they thought it to be their Parts,
 " and the Duty of mutual Amity, to signify all such Things to his Ma-
 " jesty, which might Peradventure be any Danger to his Person, or to
 " the Surety of the Prince of *Spain* [his Son] and the House of *Burgun-*
 " *dy* : with whom the Kings Majesty and his Ancestors had so long sure
 " Amity. And therefore, where they were certainly Advertised, that
 " the *French* King had great Intelligence and Conference with Princes
 " and Noblemen about the River of *Elve* and the *Wefer Holste* and the
 " Country there adjoining about the Sea ; insomuch that where the
 " Kings Majesty had intended to have transported by that Country a cer-
 " tain number of Footmen and some Horsmen by the Sea, there had
 " been such Practices partly by the *Rhinegrave*, and by others, that not
 " only they had been let of coming that way, but that they did per-
 " ceive to be almost continual posting and riding to and fro of *French*
 " Gentlemen. Who did practise with such Captains and Noblemen as
 were

"were thereabouts, to draw them to be not content with the Emperor. *ANNO*
 "Infomuch that it was not kept secret, that they had gotten to the num- *1549.*
 "ber of 22000 Foot, and 3000 Horse. Which were ready at all Times,
 "expecting but the Warning, to be amassed for the *French* Attempt,
 "the which the *French* King intended to put forth, if any thing should
 "chance otherwise but well to the Emperor; daily expecting and look-
 "ing for his Death. Upon which opportunity he would give the
 "Attempt.

This Advice the Council required the Ambassador, "Taking conveni-
 "ent Time and Opportunity, to shew and report to the Emperor, or
 "Monsieur *Arras*, [one of his chief Counsellors] with gentle Decla-
 "ration of the good Will of the King and his Council towards his Ma-
 "jesty; to the intent he might not be ignorant thereof, and might or-
 "der that such Practises and Dangers might be occurred and met withal
 "in convenient Time. After this friendly Manner did *England* behave
 it self towards the Emperor, to keep him the faster to her, while she
 had *France* and *Scotland* her Enemies.

Considering therefore the present State of *England*, with respect to
 her Enemies both before and behind her, the King and his Council *Paget sent*
 thought it their Interest to court the Emperor. To him they sent this *Ambassador*
 Summer (besides *Hoby*, Resident at the Court) Sir *William Paget*, Comp- *to the Empe-*
 troller of the Kings Household, a Man who, as he was well Learned, so *ror.*
 as well exercised in Embassies, and well seen in Matters of State. Whose
 Business was to renew and make fast the Amity with the Emperor,
 which had been made formerly between him and the Kings Father.
 And to make a Proposition of Marriage for the Lady *Mary*, the Kings
 Sister with the Infant of *Portugal*, Nephew I think to the Emperor:
 A thing common in these Times in all Treaties almost, to strengthen
 them with Matches. By this Embassy with the Emperor, the *English*
 Court intended to learn perfectly, how he stood affected to this Nation,
 and to get him to assist it in the Defence of *Boloign*, now severely
 threatened by the *French*, and, if possible, to engage him into War with
France. And it was a part of the Ambassadors Instructions to offer
 to joyn with the Emperor in a common Invasion of that King-
 dom.

The said Ambassador arrived at *Brussels*, June 19. And two days *The Causes*
 after sent to *Granvela*, the Emperors antient and chief Counsellor; fig- *of his Em-*
 nifying that he was come from the King of *England*, desiring to know *bassey.*
 when he should wait upon the Emperor, to open, on his Majesties be-
 half, certain things unto him. With which Message, in many obliging
 Words, he promised to acquaint the Emperor presently. And the same
 day in the Afternoon, Monsieur *Chattony*, *Granvels* Son came to visit
 him on the Emperors and his Fathers behalf. *Paget* at his Admission
 to the Emperor (together with *Hoby* the other Ambassador) acquainted
 his Majesty, that he was sent to Travail to establish and confirm the
 Amity between him and the King his Master, by such means as should
 be thought good for both Parties; and the rather at this Time when the
 Prince his Son was there in those Countries, to whom, as they thought,
 he meant to leave his Countries and Dominions, so they doubted not
 he would make him Inheritor of his Amity and Alliance. A second
 Cause of his Coming was to Communicate unto him the Estate of the

ANNO 1549. Kings Affairs with the Scots, their common Enemies; and also the French, the Emperors dissembled Friend, and their Enemies. And a third Cause was to Treat, if he so thought good, upon a Matter of Marriage, which chanced to come in Communication, as the Ambassador said, upon occasion of devising Ways for the Encrease and Augmentation of this Amity.

The Emperors Subjects had Traffic with Scotland at this Time, who conveyed over Commodities thither, and the Emperor had granted safe Conduct to them. The Ambassador on this occasion desired the Emperor to give Order to stay the safe Conducts that were given out to his Subjects to Traffic thither; and also to grant his Consent, that his Subjects taken beyond Berwic in their Voyage towards Scotland might be lawfully stayed by the English, and their Goods taken as Forfeits. Whereby the Scots wanting this continual Relief and Assistance might be sooner brought to some Reason.

The Ambassadors shews the Emperor the Cause between the French and English.

"And, Sir, said the Ambassador to the Emperor, whereas in the Wars with the Scots, the French have by sundry means endeavoured to impeach our Proceedings there, and also dealt on this side very unfriendly and unneighbourly towards us, the Kings Majesty loth to continue in this faint sort of Friendship, and desirous to know their Meaning herein, sent lately a Gentleman of his to the French King, desiring to know what he intended by this unfriendly sort of Dealing. For if he thought, as by the Proceedings of his Ministers he seemed to mean, to break with his Majesty, and to enter into open Hostility, albeit he was not desirous of War, he required that, like a Prince of Honour, he would notify unto us the same, and he should be answered accordingly. For after this sort to be used, his Majesty neither could nor would endure. And that he looked by the same Messenger to receive resolute answer. Whereupon the French King alleged, that these Piques had been ministred by Ministers upon the Frontiers; and affirmed that he meant nothing less than to break with us, but rather to continue Peace and Amity, yea, and to Augment it: And also offered unto the said Gentleman to appoint Commissioners to meet with my Master's, both for the Relief of these Quarrels, and the Establishment, if need were, of a further Friendship, or to do any other reasonable thing that might serve for that purpose. Which Offer, being so aptly moved on the French part, his Grace the Lord Protector (as the Ambassador proceeded in his Speech to the Emperor) with the Advice of the rest of the Council, remembring, that the English had now this eight Years, and four of them, alone without other help, continued in Wars both against Scotland and the French King, (who was a Prince of great Power, having to do no where else) had thought good not to refuse; And hereupon had appointed Commissioners to meet with the French. But that they should not conclude any thing prejudicial to the Treaties that were or should be past between the Emperor and the King his Master. Neither should they proceed to any resolute Conclusion, but the Emperor should have knowledge thereof.

The Emperors Answer,

The Emperor made a very courteous, obliging Answer in general, in agreeableness to the Ambassadors Message: and particularly spake favourably of the Protector; saying, "I know, I cannot want my Lord
"Protectors

Protector's good Furtherance; who is my Friend and old Acquaintance, and hath heretofore been with me, when I have right well perceived his good Affection towards mine Estate and Proceedings. Which I shall not forget to requite as I may. A N N O
1549.

Granvela spake more particularly, and at large to the Ambassador, of the good Affection the Emperor bore to King EDWARD: and that he was moved the rather to owe the King's Majesty this Fatherly Love, not only for the Amity that he always found in King HENRY until his latter Day, but also, because it liked him at the Hour of his Death to will the King his Son to follow his Friendship, and join with the same, who, he affirmed in very deed, should find him a Father, whenever Cause should require. Then speaking of the Infant of Portugal, said, he was about forty Years of Age, Brother to the King of Portugal. As for his Personage, good Wit and Qualities he assured the Ambassador, he was a Gentleman worthy to be matched with any Great Princess; beside the good Will the Emperor bare to him, whom he esteemed as his Son: and affirming, that there was not in Christendom so meet a Match as would be between these twain. "And I promise you," said the Ambassador, for our Part, that the Lady Mary is, as I suppose "you know well enough, in Beauty, Vertue and honest Qualities, nothing inferior to that Worthiness ye report this Gentleman Don Louis of Portugal to be of. And on the other side, she is Sister to a King of England, and near kin to the Emperor, and one whom I guess his Majesty favoureth as a Daughter of his. When *Granvela* asked, What think ye to bestow on her? For I would be loth to come empty handed to the Emperor: And therefore I pray you descend to some Particulars: The Ambassador said, she had a goodly yearly Revenue left to her by the King deceased. Which *Granvela* making light of, the Ambassador told him, that the King her Father, at what Time he was of very great Riches, married his two Sisters, the one to the French King with 200000 Crowns, and the other to the Scotch King with an 100000 Crowns. And I pray you, added the Ambassador, what did the King of Romans offer with his Daughter for the King my Master? Yea, said he, King Ferdinando is but a poor Prince. But the King your Master being so rich and puissant cannot but distribute liberally with his Sister, and according to his Honour. For his Father did offer once with her to this same Man 40000 l. Sterling. Yea Sir, replied the Ambassador, my Master is, as you know, and hath been long Time in Wars, and hath had occasion to be at great Charges and Expences of Money. However in case the Infant may assure this Lady a covenable Dower, we will not let to stretch our selves to twice as much as her Father left her by his Testament, peradventure to an 100000 Crowns. All this I extract from *Paget's* Letter to the Protector. And *Granvela's*.

The Lady
Mary's Match.

Galba. B. 12.

As to this Match with Portugal, the Council had beforehand sent to the Lady Mary for her Consent to move it; and she had sent them a Letter signifying her Allowance of it. She had also sent the Council a Letter, by her drawn up, to be presented to the Emperor. Which the Council in their next Letters sent open to *Paget* to peruse, and after to seal, endorse and deliver. Consented to
by her.

This mutual League against France it seemed the Emperor would stand well disposed to, because France had lately invaded his Countries, and made Deliberation
about Invasi-
on of France.

ANNO
1549.

Galba B. 12.

BB. CC.

Boloign a Bur-
den.

The Emperor
delays the
Ambassador.

Who is of-
fended therat.

made great Spoil there. And therefore upon *Paget's* Motion in his late Letters, it was deliberated in the Council, whether it should be an Article in this Amity to invade *France* joyntly (as indeed it was put in his Instructions) seeing it was probable the Emperor would and must do it the next Year; or rather wholly to omit the mention thereof; it seeming best to leave themselves at Liberty, and not to intangle the Nation in Wars, whence it might be difficult to get out again, when it should be weary of them. Of this and other Things now in hand with the Emperor, more Light may be let in by a Letter of the said Ambassador, dated the last Day of *June*, to the Lord Protector; and the Answer given by the Council. The former may be found in the *Cotton Library*, and both that and the other in the *Repository*. Whereby also appears, That the Council varied also in another Particular of their Instructions given to *Paget*, namely, about *Boloign*: for the Defence of which, together with the rest of the King's Forts, the Emperor's Assistance was required. Which Article the Council was now determined to omit, having considered the vast Trouble and Charges that Place, with the Members thereof, had cost the King, and still was like to do; the Benefit not answerable. And therefore the King was now minded to relinquish it to the *French* upon reasonable Recompence. Yet I find it was urged afterward by the Ambassador.

Whether the Propositions of the *English* Ambassador were of that Import, that they required much Time to deliberate on them, or some other Matter were the Cause, but the Emperor was slow in giving his Answer. For it was not before *July 22.* that *D'Arras* came to *Paget's* Lodgings, and excused himself that he came not before to him with the Emperor's Answer, having been busied, as he said, in swearing the Towns of *Brabant* to the Prince of *Spain*. But he prayed the Ambassador to take Patience (seeing him somewhat hot at this Delay) until his coming to *Bruges*, where he said he should be dispatched without fail. But *Paget* at this seeing himself only fed with fair Words, could not keep Patience, but entering somewhat into Choler, answered him, "I am here now at the Emperor's Will and Commandment, and he may stay me as long as it liketh him, and dispatch me when he list; but were I once at home, I know that neither the King's Majesty would send me hither, nor I for my Part, to win an 100000 Crowns, would come again about any like Matter, considering how coldly ye have hitherto proceeded. And surely I am sorry, that either you should judge me so void of Wit, that I could not perceive wherunto this childish Excuse tendeth, or occasion me to suppose you so much without Consideration as to think I would be brought to believe, that the Swearing of the Prince and his Receiving into these Towns, could be any Delay to the answering of those Things that I am now come hither for. A Matter easy enough to be perceived of such as never had any Experience of the World. For who can think that the Emperor would have brought his Son hither to be sworn and received of his Subjects, without having before concluded and determined the whole Circumstance thereof with the Estates here? Or, can the Occupation therein be such, and so continual, as he hath no Time to answer to four or five Points proponed to him almost now five Weeks past? Hereunto *D'Arras* very coldly answered, That in truth the Cause of his [the Embassadors] Stay,

Stay, whatsoever he thought was only such as he had shewed him: And *ANNO*
therefore prayed him not to conceive any other Opinion. "For I assure *1549.*
"you, added he, the Emperor beareth the King his good Brother, as
"much Affection as if he were his Son; and would gladly aid and assist
"him in all Things to the uttermost that he may conveniently. But,
"said he, these Matters are weighty, and require to be answered unto
"with Deliberation.

A few Days after *Monf. D'Arras* accompanied with two Presidents of *Emperor's*
the Emperor's Council, *S. Maurice* and *Viglius*, gave this Answer to our *Answer.*
Ambassadors, "That albeit the Emperor thought, the King, being under
"Age, could not himself, by the Order of the Law, conclude upon any
"thing now in his Minority, that should be of due Strength and Force,
"able to bind him and his Country, when he should come to his perfect
"Age; yet taking, that his Tutors being authorized thereto by the com-
"mon Consent of the Parliament, might go through and conclude upon
"these, or like Things, in his Name, he thought it would do well, when
"his, [the Emperor's] Subjects should be recompenced for the Wrongs
"they had hitherto sustained: And that some Order might be devised
"for the Administration of Justice hereafter in like Cases.

"That as touching the Confirmation of the Treaty that was first made
"between the Emperor and King *HENRY VIII.* and not ratified by the
"present King, the Emperor thought that he had most cause to require
"the same. Wherefore, because he thought that what the King himself
"should conclude upon, during his Minority, could not be of sufficient
"Force, but if his Tutors should be by Authority of Parliament enabled
"thereto, the Emperor was content the Treaty should be confirmed by
"them in the King's Name, and by the Prince of *Spain* in such Form as
"should be thought best by both Parties.

"As to the Comprehension of *Boloign*, that they had a Treaty with
"France, as well as with *England*; which the Emperor could not, with-
"out some Touch of his Honour, break without just Ground. And al-
"beit his Majesty would be loth to see the King, his good Brother,
"forgoe either that Piece, or any Jot of his Right, yet could he not en-
"ter this Defence, unless he should break with *France* out of hand, which
"in respect of his other Affairs he could not yet do. Howbeit he would
"gladly assist his good Brother in any other thing the best he might:
"and would not fail to shew him all the Pleasure he could with regard
"to his Honour. But with *Boloign* he could not meddle at that Time.

Here *D'Arras* staying, *Paget* asked him, whether that were the Em- *To which the*
peror's resolute and full Answer? Which when *D'Arras* had affirmed, *Ambassador*
Paget proceeded, "That albeit he had no Commission to make any Re- *replies.*
ply, because it was not known to the Lord Protector, what the Empe-
ror's Resolution should be, yet in way of Talk he would be bold to say
"his Mind herein. We have, *Monf. D'Arras*, said he, always esteemed
"the Emperor's Friendship, and desired the Observation of the Treaties,
"and the Entertainment of Amity, as a thing necessary and common to
"both the Parties, for the better Establishment thereof; and that now,
"and in this Time some good Fruit, to the Benefit of both, might appear
"to the World to follow of the same, I was sent hither, which was
"the chiefest Cause of my coming. And because the Amity betwixt
"both Princes might be the firmer, and that all Doubts being taken away,
"no

ANNO 1549. "no Cause of Quarrel should be left, we thought best to put you in mind
 "of the Confirmation and Revivification of the Treaty, to the Intent that
 "by the one the World might see an Establishment of our Friendship by
 "overt Deed; and that by the other, one of us might understand ano-
 "ther, and consider, whether any thing were to be added for the Com-
 "modity of both Parties. Which I suppose standeth you as much upon
 "to desire, as it doth us.

The power of
 the King in
 his Minority,
 shewed.

"And whereas you say, that the King's Majesty, because he is under
 "Age, cannot conclude, or go through with any thing that shall be of
 "sufficient Force, I must needs tell you plainly, that you touch his Ma-
 "jesty's Honour over near herein. For we think that the Majesty of a
 "King is of such Efficacy, that he hath even the same Authority and
 "full Power at the first Hour of his Birth that he hath thirty Years af-
 "ter. And what your Laws are I know not, but sure I am, that by our
 "Laws, whatsoever is don by the King in his Minority, or by his Mi-
 "nisters in his Name, is of no less Force and Strength, than if it had
 "been don in Time of his full Age and Years. If once the Great Seal of
 "the Realm hath passed, there is no Remedy but need must he stand
 "therto. Marry, let the Ministers take heed what they do, and look that
 "they be able to discharge themselves towards him of their Doings, if he
 "shall require Account of them, when he cometh to Age. For it is they
 "must answer him, but he must stand to whatsoever they have coun-
 "silled him to agree unto, during his Minority. And to prove that
 "our Laws give him the same Authority now, that he shall have
 "when he cometh to his perfect Age, if any Man, either for the In-
 "struction of Learning, or any other Cause, should presume to lay
 "Hands upon, or touch His Majesty, in way of Correction, he should
 "by the Law be taken as a Traitor. And if the Matter were as ye take
 "it, we should be then in a strange and evil Case. For neither might
 "we conclude Peace, League or Treaty, nor make Laws, Acts or Sta-
 "tutes, during the King's Minority, which should be of sufficient Force
 "to bind him and his to the Observation of the same. But ye mistake
 "the Matter much. And therefore, if the Emperor mindeth to procede to
 "to Confirmation, he may, or otherwise do, as it shall please him.

Then did the Ambassador descend to the other Matters. As to answer
 a Complaint of the Emperor for lack of Justice in his Subject's Causes.
 To which he said, "That there had not any Man complained in our
 "Country, and required Justice, to whom the same had been denied.
 "And that altho' some Men, abiding the Order of the *English* Laws, or
 "having some Sentence that pleased them not, complained thither of
 "Delay or Lack of Justice, they were not therefore by and by to
 "judge that they said true, or that there was not Uprightness or Equi-
 "ty used in our Country. For as the Emperor had in those his
 "Countries, so the *English* had in theirs, Ministers that were wise and
 "well learned in the Laws, and Men of Honesty and good Conscience,
 "who dealt and proceeded justly, as the Order of the Laws led them,
 "without respect to Favour or Friendship of any Man.

The Case of
 pretended
 Wrong don
 to a Jeweller,
 the Empe-
 ror's Subject.

But the Complaints of one of the Emperors Subjects was particular-
 ly incumbent upon the Ambassador now to answer. Whose Case *D'Ar-*
ras had especially urged. It was concerning a Jeweller, that had got-
 ten a safe Conduct of King HENRY VIII. to bring into *England*
 certain

certain Jewels. For which he had the said Kings Hand and Seal: But because he had it not Sealed also with the Great Seal of *England*, his Jewels were taken from him: And he not present, (altho' it were so named in his Sentence being then dead) was Condemned to lose them by Order of our Law. Which Sentence *D'Arras* had aggravated to have been contrary to all Equity and Justice. And that it seemed very strange to him, that when the Kings Hand and Seal appeared to be sufficient for greater Matters, it sufficed not for a less: And when the Treaties provided, that the Subjects of one Prince might frankly without Impediment Traffic and Occupy in the other Princes Country. But to shade the matter, one, he could not tell who, had been agreed withal, and so the poor Man and his Heirs put from their Right. Therefore said *D'Arras*, the Emperor thought it were meet, or ever any further Order should be concluded upon, that his Subjects were first recompenced of those Wrongs they had sustained, and the Matter brought to some end, and the Emperors People put in as good Case, as the Kings were. For he assured him their Wrongs were many. As to the Matter of the Jeweller thus did the Ambassador answer, "That as they
 "there had Laws in their Country for the direction of their *Common-wealth*, so we had also in Ours: whereby among the rest were forbidden, for good respects, the bringing or transporting forth certain Things without the Kings safe Conduct and Licence. And altho' the Treaty gave liberty to the Subjects of either Prince to traffic into the others Country, it was not, for all that, meant hereby, that they should not be bound to observe the Laws or Orders of the Country whereunto they Traffiqued. For this Liberty was only granted for the Security of their Persons to go and come without Impeachment, and made not Men, for all that, Lawless. And whereas further it was provided by our Law, that in certain things to be granted by the King the same Grant must pass under the Great Seal, if any of those things pass under any other Seal, they be not of due force until they have also past the Great Seal of *England*. Wherefore, added he, if the Jeweller, either by Negligence or Covetousness, of himself, or those he put in trust, did not observe this Order, but, for sparing a little Cost, did presume to bring in his Jewels before his Licence came to the Broad Seal, methinks, neither he nor any other can have just cause to say, that he was wronged, if according to our Laws he were censured to lose the same. And yet after he was thus condemned, the Ambassador proceeded, more to gratifie the Emperor, than for that I took it to be reasonable, I my self was a Suitor to my Lord Protectors Grace for some Recompence, to be made the Jewellers Wife, whom we knew, and none other, to be party. For she followed the Suit; she presented the Petitions; in her Name were they made, and finally she, and none other, was by the Emperors Ambassador commended unto us. *D'Arras* said, he had seen the Sentence, and did mislike nothing so much therein, as that the Man was Condemned, and named to have been present, at the Time of his Condemnation, when indeed he was Dead a good while before. He was present, said the Ambassador, in the Person of his Wife, who was his Procurator, and represented himself.

Answered by
the Ambassa-
dor.

ANNO.
1549.

The Empe-
rors danger
if *Boloign*
were lost.

Paget gets
Reputation
in the Empe-
rors Court.

The Emperor
intercedes for
the Lady *Mary*
for Liberty
of her Reli-
gion.

And continuing his Speech the more to clear this Matter, "He knew, he said, that those before whom this Matter past were Men both Learned and of good Conscience, and such as would not have done herein any thing against Right and Order of the Law. And finally, that the Sentences given in our Country by the Justice and Ministers there, were just and true. And that therefore they neither could nor would revoke them for any Mans Pleasure, after they had once past the higher Courts, from whence there was no further Appellation, no more than they there would call back such final Order, as had been in any Case taken by their High Court of *Brabant*.

And whereas the Emperor had declined comprehending *Boloign* into the Treaty, the Ambassador said, "That if the same should happen to be taken from the King by Force, which he trusted it should not, the loss would be common, and touch the Emperor almost as neer as Us. And therefore it was that he thought good, for the better surety therof to move this Comprehension: which was as necessary for the Emperor, as it was for the King. And whereas, as he added, they stuck so much upon their Honours in breaking their Treaties with the *French*, he remembred, he said, *Monfieur Granvela*, at his late being with him did not let to say, that he had his Sleeve full of Quarrels against the *French*, whensoever the Emperor list to break with them. *D'Arras* replied, they had so indeed; but the Time was not yet come; and that they must Temporize their things in this Case, as the rest of their Affairs led them.

With this faint Answer *Paget* came home from his Embassy, leaving Sir *Philip Hoby* behind, Resident, as he was before. But tho' he succeeded not, he got great Reputation in the Emperors Court, and was spoken of very honourably, being gone. And *Hoby* wrote to the Protector, that he was grateful generally to all that Court, a few of *Englands* back Friends only excepted, who mistrusted much, lest he had compassed somewhat to their Disadvantage. And the rather they were driven to conceive this Opinion, because his Entertainment had been such, and so respectful, as well with the Emperor as his Council. And he was so generally commended and well reported of by all, and the Fame of his prudent handling himself so spread abroad every where, as they could not but think, but that of such toward likelihood some great Effect must needs follow. *Hoby* added, that should he not perhaps be suspected of Adulation, he might find sufficient Matter to consume a long time in discoursing of his Gravity and Prudence, used as well in setting forth and well handling his Charge towards the Emperor and his Counsellors, as in his Behaviour generally towards all others. Wherby he had purchased to himself Love and Credit with all Men, and not a little for the Kings Majesties Honour and Estimation in those Parts.

It must not be omitted, because Reference will be made to it hereafter, that upon *Pagets* last Audience of the Emperor, the Emperor recommended the Case of his Cousin, the Lady *Mary*: Praying the King that she might be favoured, and permitted to have her Antient Manner of Religion. Whereunto the Ambassador considering he had no Commission to treat of that Matter, answered, with the Advice of Sir *Philip Hoby*, that he would make report of his Request unto his Master and the

the Protector, and to the rest of the Council, and doubted not but she *ANNO*
 should have that favour that was convenient for her, being the Kings *1549*
 Sister, and the Emperors Cousin. Of which Request and Answer at his
 coming home he made Report accordingly.

CHAP. XX.

Matters with France. The Duke of Somerset's Letters to Sir Philip Hoby, Ambassador with the Emperor: Shewing France's Dealings with England.

THE Answer of the Emperors Commissioners mentioned above *The English Treat with France.*
 was somewhat cold, and not according to the desire and expectation of the *English* Court, tho' it were interlaced with plenty of good Words: And as great plenty of the like had the *English* Ambassador requited them with. The Effect whereof (perceiving how little *England* was to expect from the Emperor) was, that the King and his Council did more seriously set themselves to make some Conclusion with the *French*. For at this time, Dr. Wotton was Ambassador at that Court, being sent there to make Complaints, and to argue Matters of difference between the *English* and them; and to know the reason of those great Preparations for War that were making there: when the Commissioners appointed to Treat with Wotton, were Monsieur De Rochepot, Monsieur De Chastilion, and one Monsieur de Mortier, one of the Masters of the Requests, all three of the Council. At the naming of whom the Constable Montmorancy gave our Ambassador very good Words: Yet for that the two chief of these Men were Officers upon their Frontiers, fierce and haughty in their Dispositions, and named by them contrary to the request made on the *English* behalf, it was doubted much, what would ensue of this Meeting, notwithstanding all their fair Words, of which they gave plenty. And indeed it proved of little effect, as we shall perceive presently.

Sir Philip Hoby was still at *Brussels*, to prosecute the *English* Affairs *Open Hostility with the Realm.*
 with the Emperor. And in the Month of *August*, the King and Council brake into open Hostility with the *French* King, whose Abuses and Wrongs were intolerable. And now without warning attacking *England* by Sea and Land, himself appearing at the Head of an Army against *Boloign*: To keep the Emperor fast, Hoby had Instructions from *England* to acquaint him herewith, and withal to shew him the whole State of our Causes with *France*. Therefore at large, thus did the Duke of *Somerset* in the foresaid Month inform the Ambassador with these Matters: Which I the rather set down, because it will so elucidate the Quarrel between *England* and *France*.

A N N O

1548.

The Reasons
thereof.
The Protector
to Hoby.
Galba B. 12.

“ After our harty Commendations: Albeit we think that the World, after so many Examples, and so long Experience, be in all Places well acquainted with the *French* Practices and crafty Proceedings. Who, having respect only to the Satisfaction of their own insatiable Ambition, cease not, without respect to former Leagues and Confederations, yea, or without Warnings, or any Intimations, suddenly to declare Hostility, and by that means to take by stealth the Advantage of the Time, and unlookt for, to Attempt all the Displeasure they may against their Neighbours and Confederates: Albeit we say this be well enough known to the World; yet for that we be the last with whom they have renewed this Feat; knowing that they use to Travail to colour with Braggs and fair Words all their doings, be they never so foul and dishonourable: To the intent you may be truly informed of the occasion of these Wars, which the *French* King hath now begun against the Kings Majesty, we have thought good to make some declaration unto you of the very Troth of theirs and our doings, since the Death of the Kings Majesty, our late Master.

“ First, where for taking away of all occasions of Strifes or Contention for the Limits of *Bolognois*, there were Commissioners appointed by our said late Master and the late *French* King, to Treat upon those and certain other Differences, and to bring the same to some good appointment; the said Differences being almost agreed upon, it pleased GOD to call our said late Master to his mercy. After whose Death new Commissioners were made by the late *French* King and the Kings Majesty, by the Advice of Us, the Lord Protector and the Council: By force of which Commission all those Differences were well and reasonably agreed upon: The Treaties drawn, Sealed and Delivered by the Commissioners on both sides, and immediately after dyed the late *French* King. The *French* King that now is not only refused to stand to this Treaty, but also seeking all occasions to encroach upon the Kings Majesties Ground, would never (altho’ it hath been many times required) assent to have any certain Order taken for Declaration of the Limits. Upon occasion therof, albeit the Treaty of perpetual Peace, made at the End of the last Wars, doth to every Mans Judgment set forth the said Limits plain enough; yet the *French* Men cavilling with Words, and pretending now this, now that, have at one time claimed this piece of Ground, and at another time another, being Parcel of his Majesties new Conquests. And among all other, they have taken an old Castle, called *Fiennes*, expressly within the Kings Territories: and not only taken it, but fortified the same, contrary to the expresse Words of the Treaty, both in claiming of it, and in fortifying. Forasmuch as the Treaty provideth, That neither Prince should make any new Fortification within *Boloignois*, during the said Term in the said Treaty specified. They have also, directly, both against the Treaty, and other special Agreement, Fortified the Point of the Hill at the Mouth of *Boloign* Haven, for the Annoyance of our Ships passing and repassing into the same.

“ Besides this, the *French* King demaundeth from his Highness the Pension due to be paid yearly, and especially provided for in the said Treaty. And with Injuries not contented, they have, as all the World knoweth, of late attempted the suppressing of the King’s Majesty’s Fort of

“ *Boloig-*

" *Boloignberg* at one time: at another, the taking of the Mole in *Boloign* A N N O
" Haven, besides others their outrageous Spoils, Robberies, and killing 1549.
" of his Highness Subjects on that side. Which proceeded to such Ex-
" tremity, and so far out of Reason, that the *French* King's great Offi-
" cers being spoken withal for Redress, instead of Justice, answered, that
" for every of their Men killed by ours, they would kill twenty; and
" for one Ox or Bullock taken, fourty, yea, an hundred should be taken
" of ours.

" So as after many Requests to have things considered according to
" Justice, his Majesty, having none other means to see his Subjects re-
" compenced, was forced, for want of other Remedy, to grant them Let-
" ters of Mart, to get therby Recompence of their Losses upon the
" *French* King's Merchants Trafficking the Seas. And yet before the
" granting therof, we caused all those to whom the same was granted,
" to be first bound with good Sureties, that all Goods to be by them
" taken, should be truly shewed before the Officers of the next Port, and
" valued by indifferent Men. So as either the said Wares which were
" taken, or the just Value of them, should always be ready to be resto-
" red, if Justice might have been had for the King's Majesty's Subjects
" in *France*.

" To all these Wrongs the *French* King hath heaped the taking away
" the *Scotch* Queen; who, as you know, by Parliament and common
" Agreement of the Three Estates of that Realm, was before promised to
" the King's Majesty. And besides that, both before and sithence also
" hath aided the said *Scotch*, being the King's Majesty's Vassals, with
" Men, Munition, Victuals, and all other Necessaries, to the uttermost
" of his Power, contrary not only to the Treaties, but also to all Friend-
" ship and Honour.

" These Things considered, and seeing also Preparation for the War made
" in *France*, We sent an expresse Messenger to the *French* King to learn
" his Meaning; and required him in case he meant to break with us, he
" would openly declare the same, using such means of ending the War,
" as betwixt Princes of Honour hath been accustomed. Wherunto he
" answered, that he minded no such thing. But whensoever he should
" by any Occasion be provoked thereunto, he would give us Warning,
" after such honourable Sort as appertaineth. But for the present, he
" said, he was so far from any such meaning, as he desired the Continu-
" ance of the Amity with the King's Majesty, as much as with any
" Prince Christian; Affirming, that he would omit no Occasion that
" might conduce therunto, and to the good Encrease of the same. And
" hereupon ensued the appointing of Commissioners on both sides, for
" the considering and appeasing of all things in Controversy; and to en-
" treat of some good means of Agreement betwixt both Parties. Which
" Promise of sending Commissioners depending, and the Commissioners
" named on both sides, with the Matters whereof they should treat, all
" the former fair Words notwithstanding, the *French* King having sud-
" denly set forth an Army to the Sea, and with the same attempted the
" Annoyance and Invasion of the King's Majesty's Isles of *Jersey*, and
" *Garnsey*, to the utmost of their Power, and having taken an Island there,
" (taking the Advantage of the young Years of the King's Majesty, and
" some Seditions and Tumults in the Realm) is presently descended in
" Person

ANNO 1549. " Person towards his Highness Confines with an Army Royal by Land ;
 " and as it were with the Sword in his Hand hath at last revoked his
 Ambassadors, and opened the Wars.

" These things we have thought good to open unto you the more fully, because we know the *French*, how false soever their Doings be, will not let to colour the same, and seem to put the Fault and Occasion of this Breach in us: Requiring you at the time of the Delivery of the King's Majesty's Letters, which ye shall receive herewith, to the Emperor, not only to declare the Premises unto him, but also to shew him, that as the King's Majesty is forced for Defence of his Dominions and Subjects, and Preservation of his Honour, to enter upon Wars now against *France*, and to take them for Enemies; so he hath willed you to declare the same unto him: Nothing doubting his Highness shall find at his Hands, whensoever any Occasion shall so require, all that Friendship and Aid, that the Treaties and old antient Amity requireth. And thus we bid you well to fare, 13. Aug. 1549.

CHAP. XXI.

*Insurrections of the Commons upon Inclosures.
 Proclamations and Commissions thereupon.
 The Rebellion in Norfolk. Ket the Captain.
 Lady Mary touched. First Institution of Lords
 Lieutenants of the Counties.*

The Places of
 the Risings,
 and Causes
 thereof.

THE Commons began now to grow malecontent, and to go apart into Conspiracies, and betake themselves to Arms, the Priests and Popish Zealots blowing the Coals. The first Insurrection appeared in *Hertfordshire* for the Commons at *North Hall* and *Chestbunt*. After this, a greater Rising appeared in *Somersetshire*. From *Somersetshire* it proceeded into *Glocestershire*, *Wilts*, *Hampshire*, *Sussex*, *Surrey*, *Worcester*, *Essex*, *Kent*, and divers other Places, as *Oxon* and *Berks*, and in the Westermost Parts, and in the *Northern* also, as in *Yorkshire*, and especially in *Norfolk*. The Causes of these Disturbances were divers and sundry. Some were Papists, and required the Restoration of their old Religion. Some were Anabaptists and Libertines, and would have all things common. And a third Sort of these Mutineers were certain poor Men that sought to have their Commons again, by Force and Power taken from them; and that a Regulation might be made according to Law of Arable Lands turned into Pasture; and desired a Redress of the great Dearth and Abatement of the Price of Victuals. And some about the Lady *Mary* were not innocent. Which occasioned some Letters between her and the Lord Protector, concerning some of her Servants charged to be privy to the Rebellion. Of which we shall hear more by and by.

And

And yet in truth the Dearth, as was suggested, was more GOD'S *ANNO* Hand than Man's. For Victuals were extremely dear in foreign Parts, 1549. as well as in *England*. And Sir *William Paget* being now abroad in Embassy in *France*, protested to the Protector, that he then spent twice as much as he did at his last being in the same Place; and yet kept no greater Retinue. And as for Inclosures, they were not now newly begun, but threescore Years before, Pastures were enclosed: and they and their Fathers hitherto had lived quietly under them, as the said *Paget* wrot to the Protector. But *Paget* indeed was a Favourer of these Inclosures, and 'tis likely was one himself. These were great Graziers and Sheepmasters, that ceased tilling the Ground and sowing of Corn: Pulling down Houses, and destroying whole Towns, that so they might have the more Land for grazing, and the less Charge of poor Tenants, who had Dependence on them, as their Plowmen and Husbandmen. Whereby the poor Country Men being driven to great Poverty, began thus to shew their Discontents.

The Dearth
God's Hand,
not Man's.

How little at first the Council made of these popular Commotions, may appear by the Account they gave to the said *Paget*, to whom thus they wrot concerning it: "Where some light Persons before your Departing solicited some others like themselves, and a Multitude of simple Persons, to assemble themselves, for plucking down of Pales and Inclosures, and such like Matters; you shall understand, that since your departing hence the like Stirs have been renewed in *Essex*, *Kent*, *Hampshire* and *Devonshire*. Whereof Part be already quietly appeased, and the rest in Towardness also to return peaceably to their Houses. So as there is no Likelihood of any great Matter to ensue thereof. And yet having Experience how slanderously these small Tumults shall be divulged and spread by the *French* Men, we have thought good to advertise you by these and other Letters, of the full Truth of these Matters. Upon knowledge whereof you may answer their untrue and vain Bruits, as you shall think good. But how little soever the Thing were dreaded now, it proved of more dangerous Consequence in the Process of the Year.

Light made
of these Stirs
at first.

For it was not long after, that the King and his Council having more and more Jealousies of this, to ripen into a formidable Rising, laboured at first what they could to restrain and smother it before it brake out further; and that by all gentle means, as by appointing Commissioners to ease the Grievance of Inclosures, and by giving Pardon by Proclamation to Routs and Uproars raised about in the Countries, and by taking order for abating the excessive Prizes of Provisions, as was shewn before.

Means used
to quell the
Insurrections.

Yet some there were that did not approve this Way of Proceeding with the discontented mutinous People, neither would have them so gratified, having broken the Peace, and raised Tumults, as they had done: And judged it far better Policy, that they should have first been made Examples, and more Rigors used toward them: Which might have terrified others, and been a means of preventing those Insurrections that hapned in other Parts soon after. Of this Mind was Sir *William Paget*, a Man of an austerer Temper. Who soon after these Pardons were granted, and the Prices of Victuals moderated, thus wrot to the Protector: "He wished to God, that at the first Stir, he [the Protector] had caused Justice to have been ministred in solemn Fashion to the Terror of others:

Censured by
some as too
mild Courses.

"thers:

A N N O 1549. "others: and then to have granted a Pardon. But to have granted Pardons out of course did as much good, he said, to the Purpose the Protector meant, as the Bishop of Rome's Pardons were wont to do; which rather upon Hopes of a Pardon gave Men Occasion and Courage to sin, than to amend their Faults. And so have your Pardons, added he, given evil Men a Boldness to enterprize as they do, and caused them to think you dare not meddle with them. Victuals, they say, Wool, Cloth, and every thing is dear. They must have a new Price at their Pleasure. The Commons must be pleased, you must take Pity upon the poor Mens Children, &c. Thus were these milder Courses of the Protector censured.

The Lord Privy Seal goes down to the West.

Licences for Preachers in the West.

A Licence.
MSS. G. P.
Armig.

But besides this, the Lord *Russel*, Lord Privy Seal, having the Government of the *West*, was sent down thither to watch these dangerous Motions. And Care was taken to provide some able Men to preach good Doctrine and Obedience to the People, and to inform them aright of the King's Proceedings, and to rectify the ignorant Sort, who were misled into these dangerous Courses by their *Popish* Guides. For the King's Council thought Preaching a good Expedient to quell these Stirs, as well as Force, and that sober Exhortations grounded upon GOD's Word, which they had been little acquainted withal, would tend much to incline the People to Obedience, and to keep them in their Duty towards their Prince. Wherefore Licences were now again given out from the Privy Council to certain Preachers; Authorizing them to preach and teach from Place to Place, in such Auditories and Congregations as the Lord Privy Seal should appoint them, and where he conceived most need. And for this they had Salaries paid them by the Council. Accordingly I find a Licence sent to one *Gregory*, which ran in this Tenour following.

"After our hartly Commendations. Forasmuch as it is acceptable to GOD to have the People lead their Lives in the Fear and Knowledge of him; and thereupon also followeth, as by good Order, quiet and due Obedience of all People to their Princes and Heads: The which no wise so conveniently can be brought to pass, as to have frequent and discreet Preaching of the holy Word and Commandments: We have thought it meet, since our very good Lord, the Lord Privy Seal is appointed under the King's Majesty to have the Governance of the West Parts of the Realm, during his Majesty's Pleasure, that they should both be Licenced and commanded by us on the King's Majesty's Behalf, to preach and openly declare with Sincerity the Word of GOD in such publick Place and Auditory, as the same Lord Privy Seal shall sollicite you, whose Discretion and grave Wisdom the King's Majesty and we so well esteem, that without his Order and certain Knowledge, we will ye take no Labour upon you. And for your Diligence and Study herein, altho' the same be your Duty and of GOD prescribed, yet we will have it in good Remembrance, and reward it to your Contentation. And so we bid you farewell from *Richmond*, 23 June, 1549.

Your Loving Friends, &c.

It was Signed by the Duke of *Somerset*, L. Rich Chancellor, *Francis* Earl of *Shrewsbury*. L. St. *Johns*. Earl of *Arundel*, Sir *Ant. Wingfield*. *Edward* Lord *Mountague*.

Another

Another Letter varying in the Words, but of the same Import, was *A N N O* at the same time, and by that same Counsellors sent to Dr. *Raynolds*, to *1549.* Preach in those Parts, according to the appointment of the Lord Privy Seal. *Miles Coverdale* was now also here employed in the said Function, and particularly made the Thanksgiving Sermon after the Victory.

The King and Council used also another means to break and disperse these Hurly Burlies. There was now a sort of leud idle Fellows, the most part whereof had neither place to inhabit, nor sought any stay to live by, Persons many of them condemned of Felony, or Prison-breakers, run from the Wars, and Sea-rovers departed from the Kings Garrisons, and Loiterers; These Persons ran from Place to Place, from County to County, from Town to Town, to stir up Rumours, raise up Tales, imagin News, whereby to stir and gather together the Kings Subjects, of simplicity and ignorance deceived. And by that pretence such leud Ruffians and unruly Vagabonds became Ringleaders and Masters of the Kings People; seeking to spoil, rob and ravin where, or whom they listed, or might: And so lived, waxed rich, and fed on other Mens Labour, Mony and Food. And when the Poor of one part of the Country raised up by these Fellons, repented and saw their Folly, acknowledged their Faults, and returned themselves to their Duty, and received the Kings Pardon; the said Runnagates escaped from the Places of their first Attempts, and daily resorted to new Places; and so from Place to Place, Shire to Shire, never quieting themselves, but devising slanderous Tales, and divulging to the People such kind of News as they thought might most readily move them to Uproars and Tumults; and pretending the same time they sought the redress of the *Commonwealth*. The King sent a Proclamation after these, dated *July 8.* Charging all Justices, Sheriffs, Bailiffs, and other his Officers, to be diligent to take some good special Order for the Apprehension and Attaching of such Persons, whether as Vagabonds, Wayfaring Men, Straglers or otherwise. And that whosoever should discover any of them should have the Kings hearty Thanks, and 20 Crowns for a Reward.

Ruffians kindle Disturbances in the Kingdom.

But notwithstanding these means used for prevention, a Rebellion broke out in the West, in *July*, which cost the King and his Council much Work, and the Protector particularly many Fears and Cares.

The Rebellion breaks out.

For upon a Pardon, that had been indulgently Granted to these Mutiniers, they came so easily by it, that they soon ran into Disturbances again. Upon this the Protector, (whose doing this was) for his too easy Forgiveness of such Criminals, was blamed generally by the Council, who were against that Pardon, and were for making some Examples first, and Publishing a Pardon for the rest after. This the Protectors Friend, Sir *William Paget*, did declare to him his Disapprobation of. He advised him by his Letter, that the Rebellion being now up, he should do all things like a King, Governing for a King, during his imperfect Age: That he should send for all the Council that remained unsent abroad, and six other of the gravest and most experienced Men in the Realm, and Consult what was best to be done. His own Opinion was, to send for the *Almain* Horse from *Calais*, which were about 4000 brave Accoutred Men. To appoint the Lord *Ferrers* and Sir *William Herbert* to bring as many Horsemen out of *Wales* as they dared trust. That the Earl of *Shrewsbury* should bring the like out of the Counties of *Darby*, *Salop*,

The Protector blamed about it.

Pagets Advice to him how to proceed against the Rebels.

ANNO
1549.

Salop, Stafford, and Nottingham, of his Servants, Keepers of Forreits and Parks. And that he, the Protector, should send for all his trusty Servants to come to him. Then, that he should appoint the King to lye at *Windsor*, accompanied with all his Officers and Servants of the Houshold, the Pensioners, the Men at Arms and the Guard. Then, that he should go himself in Person, attended with the *Almain Horse*, and all the rest which were sent for, first, into *Barkshire*; Commanding all the Gentlemen to attend upon him by such a Day, at such a Place, with what Friends and Servants they could make. That the Chief Justices, with some of the Judges, should resort with Commission of *Oyer and Terminer* to the Town next to the Place where the Protector should remain. That there should be also certain Justices of the Peace of the same Shire attending; to whom he should give Order to attach him and him, to the number of Twenty or Thirty of the rankest Knaves of the Shire, and to hang six of the ripest of them in sundry Places: the rest to remain in Prison. That the Justices should take Sureties of the good abearing of the richer sort concerned here, and for their Appearance in the Starchamber the next Term. That the Horsemen should lie in such Towns as were busiest, taking enough for their Mony, that Rebels might feel the smart of their Villany. To take away the Freedom of some of the offending Towns; which he might restore again at his pleasure. And to send some of the doers away from their Wives to the North, or to *Boloign*, to be Soldiers or Pioneers. To give them no good Words, and to make no Promise in any wise. And thus from one Shire to another, to make a Progress, till he had visited all the Shires that offended, since their Pardons. Thus did *Page* Advise. In the mean time the Protector and Council issued out divers Proclamations, relating to the present Emergence.

Proclamati-
ons occasion-
ed thereby.
Rebels Estates
given away.

And first of all, a Proclamation dated *July 11.* for the Punishment of the Rebels in *Devonshire* and *Cornwal*. The Import of which was, That whosoever came not in within so many days, and submitted and yielded themselves unto the Lord *Ruffel*, the Kings Lieutenant in those Parts, should be deemed, accepted and taken for Rebels and Traitors. And for the more terror to those who stood out rebelliously; and for the encouragement and advancement of his Loving and Obedient Subjects, that should withdraw themselves from the said rebellious Traitors, the King was contented that all and singular the Forfeitures of all the Goods, Chattels, Offices, Pensions, Manors, Lands, Tenements, Farms, Copyholds, and other Hereditaments of the said Rebels and Traitors, should grow, come and be, unto all and every such Person and Persons as should first have, take, possess and attain the said Goods and Chattels, or should first enter into the said Manors, Lands, Tenements, &c. And the same should have, hold, possess and enjoy to his and their own proper Use, commodity and behalf, in as large and ample manner as the King, by mean and right of the said Forfeiture and Confiscation, ought and might dispose the same; and should have assurance thereof by his Letters Patents.

None pardon-
ed to be mo-
lest.

The day after, *viz. July 12.* came forth another Proclamation, concerning the effect of the Kings Pardon given to the Rebels. In this he willed and commanded all his Subjects, who of late by their humble submission and sorrowful Repentance of their Offences committed in sun-
dry

dry unlawful and riotous Assemblies, obtained his Pardon, that from *ANNO* henceforth they be of such good Behaviour in the Peace of GOD and *1549.* the Kings Majesty, and in all their Actions and Deeds so Quiet, Peaceable and well ordered, that the Kings Majesty might think his Grace and Pardon bestowed upon them with effect. And his Majesty willed and commanded all his other Subjects, having suffered any manner of Grief, Damage or Loss by the Act of any the abovesaid Kings Subjects, while they offended, and before they received his Pardon, that they should not by Act, Sute, Violence or Compulsion, force, punish, avenge or correct any manner of Offence or Trespas committed by the abovesaid Offenders, having been Pardoned for the same.

Another Proclamation followed, *July 16.* Wherein the King prohibited any of his Subjects, that neither by Drum, Tabret, Pipe, or any other Instrument striking or sounding, Bell or Bells ringing, opening, crying, posting, riding, running, or by any News, Rumours or Tales divulging or spreading, or by any other Device or Token whatsoever, [which had been the Rebels practices] to call together or muster, or attempt to assemble or muster any number of People; either to pluck down any Hedge, Pale, Fence, Wall, or any manner of Inclosures, or to hunt, waste, spoil, desolate, or deface any Park, Chase, Warren, House, Lodge, Pond, Waters; or do any other unlawful Act, which is forbidden; or to redress any thing, which should or might be by the Kings Majesties Commission reformed, redressed or amended. And that upon Pain of Death presently to be executed by the Authority and Order of Law Martial. Wherin no delay or differring of time should be permitted, as in other Causes, being indeed of less importance. And therefore the King commanded all Sheriffs, Justices, Ministers and Officers, upon Knowledge of any Offender against the Tenor of this Proclamation, forthwith withal Expedition, and with such Power as should be requisite, to apprehend and attach the same Offenders, and them to commit to safe Jail. And thereupon indelayedly to certify the Lord Protector and the Council, to the intent most speedy order may be given for the execution of the said Offenders.

For Execution of Law Martial.

About this time, for the redress of unlawful Inclosures, and such like Enormities, the King had directed several Commissions, with large Instructions for the same, into every County; not only Authorizing his Commissioners to reform all manner of things, so far forth as the Laws could any wise be construed or expounded, but also by special Letters missive, he charged the same Commissioners upon great pain, in the same Letters contained, to redress and amend their own proper Faults. Which Commissions were partly put in Execution, while the rising in the West happened, and partly ready to be executed, and delayed only by the folly of the People, seeking their own redress unlawfully. And of this, Information was given in the abovesaid Proclamation.

Commissioners for Inclosures.

And here let us digress for a while, and consider these Commissions. The Gentlemen concerned in these Inclosures were highly offended, when the King and his Council had sent forth Commissioners for examining Inclosures, wherby poor Mens Commons and Livings were thus taken away. They pretended that these things were Innovations; and that no Alterations ought to be made. And they took great Offence against those that put the King and Protector upon these Proceedings:

The Gentry and Nobility disgusted at it.

ANN And particularly this charge they laid to *John Hales*, Clark of the
1549. Hanaper, a good and public spirited Man ; and one of these Commissio-
 ~~~~~ ners; him they accused to have sued out the Commission. They urged,  
 that now it was no time to send forth such Commissions. That *Hales* had  
 stirred and encouraged the Commonalty against the Nobility ; and in  
 fine, made him guilty of the present Sedition ; and that he procured  
 them to be Redressers of their own Injuries, and to be Executors of the  
 Law, and to repine and grudge at the Nobility, and that he would have  
*Liberty, Liberty* : And now it was come to a Licentious Liberty, as  
 they said.

Their ways  
 to evade it.

These Inclosers used all the means they could to stop and hinder  
 the coming forth of this Commission. But when they could not do  
 that, they laboured to invalidate, and make it fail of the good Ends in-  
 tended by it. Some of them got means for their Servants to be sworn of  
 the Juries ; That they might be more favourable to them. And in some  
 Parts where the Commissioners went, such were the numbers of Retain-  
 ers to the Great Men, (who were the chief Inclosers) that it was not  
 possible to make Juries without them. Some were threatned to be put  
 by their Holds, if they presented, and others had no certainty of their  
 Holds, which were wont to be let by Copy for Lives, or otherwise,  
 for Years: So that their Landlords might have them upon thehank, at no-  
 time, nor in any thing to offend them. And some were indicted, be-  
 cause they presented the Truth. And many shameful Slights were used to  
 blind the Commissioners and the Presenters, and to baffle the good Work  
 they were upon. But notwithstanding these Ways and Courses to stifle  
 the Presentments, yet many things were presented. But the Commis-  
 sioners were so favourable to those that were Presented, that they made  
 the Parties privy therunto, to hear if they could justly purge themselves.  
 The Commission extended only to enquire, not to hear and determine.  
 And it was chiefly set forth, that the Protector and Council might  
 know in part the whole State of the Realm : And so to proceed to the  
 redress of all.

The Offenders  
 herein par-  
 doned.

*John Hales*, after he had sat upon the Commission, prayed the King,  
 that a general Pardon might be sent out. Which he sued for, and obtain-  
 ed for the benefit of the Rich Inclosers as well as the Poor Sufferers :  
 Hoping the Rich would have reformed their doings, as the Poor Men  
 did. But some of these rich Men, as soon as they had their Pardon,  
 returned to their old Practice, and began immediately to enclose, and  
 to take away the Poor Mens Commons, and became more greedy than  
 ever they were before : Looking upon this Commission but as a Storm  
 for a time, that would soon pass over.

A Command-  
 ment for Con-  
 stables.

Yet another Proclamation was occasioned by this Tumult, namely,  
 for the Office of Constables, dated *July 22*. Who were too forward  
 themselves in this Rebellion : That whereas the Office of Constables,  
 Bailiffs or Headboroughs was most politickly ordained, as well to be the  
 stay in every City, Town or Village of Quiet and Peace, according to  
 the Kings Majesties Laws, as also to put in Execution whatsoever by  
 the said Laws ; or the higher Ministers of the same should be appointed  
 and limited ; Contrary to which the Bailiffs, Constables or Headbo-  
 roughs, in the Places where these Risings were, had been the very  
 Ring-leaders and Procurers, by their Example and Exhortation, to the  
 rest



rest of their neighbours, to Levy themselves (as they had don) in his *ANNO* Majesty's Name; Abusing the Authority of the same, contrary to their *1549.* Duty of Allegiance: The King therefore commanded that they henceforth forbore and abstained from Raising and Assembling of any the Kings Subjects, for any Act or Purpose, other than such as by the Law and Statutes of the Realm is limited for them to execute and do, as incident to their Office: Under pain to be deemed, accepted or taken as Traitors, and suffer loss of Life, Lands and Goods for ever.

To these let me subjoin one Proclamation more, and as it seems relating to these Tumults. It came forth *August 6.* for stopping of Players to Act any Play or Enterlude. The Preface assigned the Reason, *viz.* That such Players within the City of *London*, as well as elsewhere, did for the most part Play such Enterludes as contained matter tending to Sedition, and contemning of sundry good Orders and Laws: Whereupon were grown such Disquiet, Divisions, Tumults and Uproars in the Realm.

When this Rebellion was pretty well allayed, it was remembred, how the Bells in the Churches served, by Ringing to Summon and Call in the Disaffected unto their Arms. Therefore, in *September*, an Order was sent down from the Council to the Lord *Russel*, to execute a Work; that proved no doubt highly disgustful unto the People; *viz.* To take away all the Bells in *Devonshire* and *Cornwal*, leaving one only in each Steeple, which was to call the People to Church. And this partly to prevent the like Infurrection for the future, and partly to help to defray the Charges the King had been at among them: And thus the Lord Protector and Council writ to the Lord Privy Seal in this Matter, *Viz.*

"After our harty Commendations to your Lordship. Where the Bells of the Country of *Devonshire* and *Cornwel* have used the Bells in every Parish, as an Instrument to stir the Multitude, and call them together; thinking good to have this occasion of attempting the like hereafter to be taken from them; and remembring withal, that by taking down of them, the Kings Majesty may have some Commodity towards his great Charge that way: We have thought good to pray your good Lordship to give order for the taking down the said Bells in all the Churches within those two Counties: Leaving in every Church one Bell, the least of the Ring that now is in the same: Which may serve to call the Parishioners together to the Sermons and Divine Service. In the doing wherof, We require your Lordship to use such Moderation, as the same may be done with as much quietness, and as little offence of the common People as may be. And thus we bid your Lordship most hartily Farewel. From *Westminster*, 12 Sept. 1549.

Your good Lordships assured Loving Friends,

*E. Somerset. T. Cant. W. S. John. W. Paget. W. Petre.*  
*Ed. North. E. Wotton. R. Sadleir.*

Two Gentlemen of those Parts *Champion* and *Chichester*, Assistant per-haps against the Rebels, took this opportunity to get themselves rewarded, The Clappers granted away.



**A** N N O ed, by begging not the Bells, but the Bell-clappers only. Which was granted them with the Ironwork and Furniture thereunto belonging. And no question they made good Benefit therof.

1549.  
The Rebelli-  
on in Norfolk  
appeased.  
Ket the chief  
Rebel, his  
Possessions.

And as this Rebellion in the West was now put to a Conclusion, so also was that in *Norfolk* about the same time dispersed, *Robert Ket* the chief Captain of the Rebels being taken and executed. This Man, tho' said to be a Tanner, was wealthy and well Landed. For I find these several Manors to have belonged to him, and forfeited to the King; viz. The Manor of *Melior's Hall*, the Manors of *Lethers Hall*, and *Gunwils Manor*, in the County of *Norfolk*. Which in King *Edward's* Book of Sales, is said to be Parcel of the Possessions of *Robert Ket* lately Attainted of High Treason. These, with several other Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments in *Norfolk*, and all his Goods, and Chattels, worth 40 Marks, were given to *Thomas Audely*, for, and in Consideration of his good Service against the Rebels in *Norfolk*. The Patent bore date, May 16. An. 4. Reg. *Edwardi*.

Ket's Treasons.

This *Ket* was a proper Person to be a Ringleader of Mischief. For he was of a bold haughty Spirit, and of a cankered Mind against the Government. He would be Stiled the *Master*, nay, the *King of Norfolk and Suffolk*. He forced all Persons whatsoever to follow his Camp, and laid many in Chains, that made any Opposition; a great waster and spoiler, especially to the Women of Quality, whom he spared not to rob and spoil.

Lord Sheffield  
Slain.

The Marquis of *Nottingham* first went against him; but was unsuccessful in a Battle fought with these Rebels in *Norwich*: Where among others fell a brave Nobleman, *Edmund Lord Sheffield*, who voluntarily and with considerable Expence went along with the Marquis. Which Lord falling from his Horse, was knocked on the Head by a Butcher. He left a Son under Age, named *John Lord Sheffield*, being a Ward to the King. Who, to shew some particular Mark of his Favour upon him for his Fathers Merits, granted him by Patent, dated in *November, 1550.* to bestow himself in Marriage at his own free Election and Choice, without any Fine or Payment to be required in the Court of Wards and Liveries, or elsewhere, to the Kings Use; for the value of his Marriage, being in his Minority; In Consideration (as it ran in the Grant) of the great Charges that his said Father sustained in the Kings War at *Norwich*.

The King in-  
tends to send  
*Somerset* his  
General.

The King then intended to send his Uncle, the Duke of *Somerset*, with a strong Army into *Norfolk*, which was to Rendezvous at *Walden* in *Essex*. For there the Gentry of that County were appointed, with their Men and Arms, to meet the said Duke, on the 17 Day of *August*. And such an Order one of the Gentlemen of the said County received (by which we may judge of the rest) which was as followeth. (And I the rather exemplify it, because therein is some Account given of *Ket* and his Doings.)

#### EDWARD.

The Kings  
Letter to the  
Gentry of *Es-*  
*sex.*  
*Vespasian. F. 3.*

**T**RUSTY and well Beloved, We greet you well. And whereas one Ket a Tanner, supported by a great many of vile and idle Persons, hath taken upon him our Royal Power and Dignity, and calleth himself Master and King of *Norfolk and Suffolk*, in Derogation of our Impe-



Imperial Crown and Majesty: And not content to perswade our ANN  
Subjects, whom we were content to receive to our Mercy, to refuse 1549. O  
our most gracious Pardon, but causeth also a great Number of our  
honest and good Subjects by Force to follow and aid him; And so continueth  
the Rebellion in most vile sort; Killing, Spoiling and keeping in Fetters  
and Chains, Gentlemen, Serving Men, Yeomen, Farmers and other ho-  
nest Men, who have regard of their Faith and Duty unto us; robbing  
Ladies and Widows Houses; seeking nothing but spoil and subversion of  
Us, and the good Estate of the Realm: WE have appointed our most  
intirely beloved Uncle the Duke of Somerset Governour of our Person, and  
Protector of our Realms, Dominion and Subjects, with an Army Royal  
to go against them, and, by GOD's help, to subdue them to the Terror of  
all others. Whom like as we have appointed to march forwards with all  
speed possible, so having reposed a special Trust and Confidence in your  
good Towardness and Readiness to serve Us, we have appointed you to  
give your Attendance upon our said Uncle. And therefore do Will and re-  
quire you immediately upon the sight hereof with all speed to put yourself  
in a readiness with an hundred hable Men, or so many mo as you are ha-  
ble to make and trust unto, of your Servants, Tenants and Friends, well  
furnished with Armour and Weapon: Wherof so many to be Demilances,  
or Light Horsemen, as ye can furnish with hable and good Horses, and o-  
ther convenient Furniture, to be at our Town of Walden in our County  
of Essex, the 17 day of this present Month at the furthest. At which  
Time and Place Order shall be given, for the bringing of them thither to  
your Contentation. Requiring you not to fail, as ye tender Our Pleasure,  
and will answer for the contrary at your Perils. Teaven under Our Sig-  
net at our Palace of Westminster, the 6th of August, the Thind Year  
of our Reign.

E. SOMERSET.

But the Kings Resolution soon changed, perhaps being loth to part  
with his Uncle; And the Earl of Warwick was dispatched in his room.

Upon occasion of this Tumult, somewhat a severe Execution happen- One hanged  
ed to the Bailiff of Ramford in Essex. Who chancing to come to Lon- unjustly by  
don just upon the noise of it; when one Sir Stephen, a Curate of Cree- Martial Law.  
Church, meeting him, and asking him what News out of the Country, Stows Survey.  
the other replied, that they were up in Arms in Norfolk, Suffolk and  
Essex; yet adding, that Thanks to GOD, they were all quiet about their  
Parts; a Suspicion these Words of his begat, that he was privy to these  
Mutinies; Sir Stephen, a zealous Man, informs against him. And im-  
mediately by a Court Martial he was tryed, and condemned to be hang-  
ed; and so he was upon a Gibbet by the Well within Algate, which was  
afterwards turned to a Pump, there still remaining. Tho' upon the  
Ladder he profest he was no farther guilty than those bare Words could  
make him.

But to speak a little more particularly of this Stir in Norfolk, which The Gentle-  
seemed as troublesome to the State to provide against and to quell, as men of Essex,  
that in the West. Therefore the Earl of Warwick was sent against them; Suffolk and  
and the Gentry in the three Counties of Norfolk, Suffolk and Essex were Norfolk to re-  
required to go down to their several Dwellings, by a Proclamation, da- pair home.  
ted August 16. which ran to this Tenor: "That the Kings Majesty  
" by



ANNO

1549.

“by the Advice of his most intirely beloved Uncle, &c. Straitly charged, and commanded all Gentlemen of what Estate, Degree or Condition soever they were, who had their Habitations and Dwellings in *Essex*, to depart from the Court, the City of *London*, and other Places near unto them, into their several Habitations in the said County, with all convenient speed; there to remain till they should know further of the Kings Majesties Pleasure. Likewise such Gentlemen as dwelt in *Suffolk*, to depart also to their Habitations there; and there to remain unto such time as they should have Command from the King, or the Earl of *Warwick*. And further, that all Gentlemen, Inhabitants of *Norfolk* should repair to the said Earl: To be with him, to attend upon him in the Kings Army in his Conduct and Leading, for his Highnesses better Service, upon *Saturday* next following, or *Sunday* at the farthest. And his Majesty by the Advice aforesaid did most strictly charge all Persons to whom it might appertain, to follow and execute the said Earls Commands, with all convenient speed and diligence, upon pain of his Highnesses Indignation and Displeasure. Yet provided, that such Gentlemen, as were of the Kings Chamber or Household, should still give their Attendance upon his Highness as heretofore.

Lyn Loyal.

A great Appearance of these Rebellious *Norfolcians* were got together near *Lyn*. But the Magistrates and People of that Town did not side with them, but kept themselves Loyal to the King. One of this Seditious Rout was Sir *John Claundeler*, Parson of *Alswyththorp*, a Parish near *Lyn*. Another was called Captain *Bunting*. Who it seems mistrusting his Doings, was resolved to get away secretly into *Lyn*. And to do it so obscurely that none should know it, or suspect he was gone thither, he took his opportunity, and laid his Hat down by a Well side, to make the rest of his Comrades think that he was drowned there. And so they did.

*Claundeler*  
one of the  
Rebels comes  
to *Colchester*.

And he at the same time fled into *Lyn*. At whose coming those in the Town shot off a Volley. But *Claundeler* was truer to the Cause; and seemed to have been a Person employed by the Rout to pass from Place to Place in the Counties of *Essex* and *Suffolk*, to blow the Coals, and to excite the People in those Counties to rise. For in the midst of these Broils he rode to *Bury*, and *Hadley*, and *Lavenham*, and came to *Colchester*. Where he met with several of that City, his Confidants, as it seemed, who were to promote the Cause there: Namely, *Will. Brown*, Draper and Taylor, Sir *Roger Peerson* of *Colchester*, Priest, Sir *John Robynson* Priest, Parson of *Tadston* in *Suffolk*, *Richard Kent* of *Sturton*, in *Suffolk*, Weaver. These were all at Supper together at *Browns* House; where *Claundeler* did relate, how Things stood with the Rebels. And to provoke them the more against the Government, he told them, how there had been six Posts sent from their Camp unto the Kings Council, and not one of them could come to the said Council; and that the Gentlemens Servants at *Lyn*, went abroad and killed poor Men in their Harveft Work, and also killed Women with Child. And to encourage them to enter into the Conjuraton, he said, that the number of their Men at *Norwich* Camp was sixscore Thousand: and that he met at *Bury* to the number as he thought of seventy Thousand, consisting of the Towns of *Bury*, *Hadly*, *Lanham*, *Brantby*, [*Branktree* perhaps] and other Towns thereabouts



bouts. And as for the Town of *Lyn*, and all the Gentlemen there, *ANNO*  
he wished them all on fire. And whereas there was one Man among *1549.*  
them, he wish'd there were Ten. And all this was deposed against  
*Chaundeler* afterwards, *Aug. 7.* by *Brown* and others that supped with  
him then at *Colchester*, before *Benjamin Clere* and *Robert Flyngant*, Bai-  
liffs of *Colchester*.

After these dangerous Tumults were dispersed and vanquished, and  
the Heads punished, the King granted a special Pardon to the Inhabitants  
of *Norfolk* for the Rebellion there; which bore date, *Sept. 4.* And the  
like was bestowed upon the Inhabitants of *Suffolk* and *Essex*. Pardons to  
the three  
Counties.

These Rebellions touched upon the Lady *Mary's* Reputation. For the  
Lord Protector and Council had Information brought them, that several  
of her Servants were chief Stirrers, Procurers and Doers in those Com-  
motions. As namely, a Priest and Chaplain of hers of *Sampford Court-*  
*ney* in *Devon*; and *Pooly* one of her Receivers, and one *Lyonel*. Concern-  
ing these Reports they thought fit to send her Word by Letter dated  
*July 17.* wherein they likewise charged her, to give countenance herself  
to these Disturbances by her obstinate Incompliance with the Religion,  
and Persistence in the Use of the old Mass. She was now at her House  
at *Kenninghal* in High *Suffolk*, not far off of the Rebels; which might  
give some Umbrage to these Jealousies against her. But she presently  
vindicated her self and her Servants, and declared her Dislike of these  
Practices by an earnest Letter writ *July 20.* being the same Day she re-  
ceived the Councils. For first, as to her Servants, she shewed, "How  
"she had not one Chaplain in those Parts; that *Pooly* remained continu-  
"ally in her House, and was never Doer among the Commons, nor  
"came into their Company. 'Tis true, she had another Servant of that  
"Name dwelling in *Suffolk*: and whether the Commons had taken him  
"or no, she could not tell: But by Report they had taken by Force many  
"Gentlemen in those Quarters, and used them very cruelly, and per-  
"haps so he might be served. That as for the third, she could not but  
"mervail at the Bruit of him; especially because he dwelt within two  
"Miles of *London*, and was not acquainted with the Shires of *Suffolk* or  
"Norfolk, nor at any time came into those Parts, but when he waited  
"upon her at her House; and was then at *London* about her Business;  
"being also a Man not at all apt or meet for such Purposes, but given to  
"as much Quietness as any within her House. She added, it troubled  
"her to hear such Reports of any of hers; and especially where no  
"Cause was given: Trusting, that her Household should try themselves  
"true Subjects to the King's Majesty, and honest, quiet Persons, or else  
"she would be loth. The Lady  
Mary and her  
Servants,  
charged.  
  
E. MSS. Rev.  
Patr. D. Jo-  
han. Episcop.  
Ellen.

"And as for her self, she assured the Protector, that these Stirs did  
"not less offend her than him, and the rest of the Council. And for  
"Devonshire, no indifferent Person could lay their Doings to her Charge,  
"for she had neither Land nor Acquaintance in that Country. And  
"whereas they charged her, that her Proceedings in Matters of Religion  
"should have given no small Courage to many of those Men to require  
"and to do as they did; that, she said, appeared to be most untrue, for  
"that all the Rising about the Parts where she was, was touching no  
"Part of Religion. But even as they ungently and without Desert  
"charged her, so she omitted so fully to answer it as the Cause required,



ANNO

1549.

State Letters  
relating to  
this Rebellion.  
Galba. B. 12.

DD. EE. FF.

The Charges  
of this Rebel-  
lion.  
Osbo E. 11.

“and would pray GOD that their new Alterations, and unlawful Li-  
berties were not rather the Occasions of these Assemblies than her  
“Doings, who was, GOD she took to witness, inquieted therewith.

Besides all this that I have already writ on this Subject, I reckon it  
will not be unworthy any Man's Pains that is studious of the History of  
these Times, to read three Letters concerning these intestine Disturbani-  
ces. The one written from the Lord Privy Seal to the Lords of the  
Council, and by his Son Sir Francis Russel, brought to them, Aug. 22.  
Another writ Aug. 24. from the Protector to *Hoby*, Ambassador abroad.  
The third from the same to the same, dated Sept. 1. For these consult  
the *Repository*: taken from the *Cotton* Library.

But this Rebellion in *Norfolk*, in *Devon* and *Cornwal* cost the King a  
vast Sum; which rendred him the more necessitous of Mbnny all the  
Time of his Reign after. The Charges are set down in one of the *Cotton*  
Volumes; viz.

|                                                                                                         |   |   |   |             |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---|---|---|-------------|
| For Coat and Conduct                                                                                    | — | — | — | £446-12-2   |
| In Debts and Wages                                                                                      | — | — | — | —18827-19-6 |
| Emptions of Necessaries                                                                                 | — | — | — | —047-11-8   |
| Divers and sundry necessary Charges and Expences, as breaking down<br>of Bridges, Carriages and Rewards | — | — | — | —2800-4-3   |

Sum Total — 27330-7-7

But the whole Charges of King EDWARD's Wars and Fortifications  
to the Year 1549. amounted to — — — 1356887-18-5½

First Institur-  
tion of Lord  
Lieutenants  
of the Shires.

This Year began the making of the Lord Lieutenants of the Counties,  
Whose Commissions bare date July 24. 3 Ed. 6. as I find it in a Clark  
of the Crown's Book in the *Cotton* Library. Whose Office undoubtedly  
was first instituted upon occasion of these Routs and Uproars in most of  
the Counties of *England*. They were called the King's Justices in their  
Commissions, as well as his Lieutenants. Which Commissions ran to  
enquire of all Treasons, Misprisions of Treason, Insurrections, Rebelli-  
ons, unlawful Assemblies and Conventicles, unlawful speaking of Words,  
Confederacies, Conspiracies, false Allegations, Contempts, Falshoods,  
Negligences, Concelements, Oppressions, Riots, Routs, Murders, Felo-  
nies and other ill Deeds whatsoever, and also all Accessaries of the same.  
And to appoint certain Days and Places for the Enquiry therof. And to  
be the King's Lieutenants within the respective Counties for levying of  
Men, and to fight against the King's Enemies and Rebels, and to execute  
upon them Martial Law; and to subdue all Invasions, Insurrections, &c.  
These Commissions were renewed yearly.

CHAP.



CHAP. XXII.

*The French's Success against the English in Boloignois. Execution of the Rebels. Somerset's Troubles. The Causes thereof. His Court of Requests. A Sessions of Parliament. The Acts.*

THESE at length were the Successes against the Seditions at home; But from the other side of the Seas came not so good News. For the French King, taking now his Time, and laying hold of this Rebellion within the Realm, came in August unto Boloignois with a great Number of Horse and Foot, himself in Person; and on the 24th of the said Month the Almain Camp, or Almain Hill, a Piece appertaining to Ambleture or Newhaven, was delivered to the French by traitorous Consent of the Captain of the Camp there, Variance falling or feigned, between the Captain and his Soldiers. So that now they were besieged very near, and in manner round. Howbeit the English at this very Time wrot thence to the King and Council, that they trusted the Piece itself, [viz. Newhaven] would be well enough defended, God assisting them, who were in as good and stout a Courage as any Men might be, and as desirous to win Honour, and give a good Account of their Charge.

A Piece near Newhaven lost to the French.

But soon after, by Treachery the main Fort of Newhaven was also lost, and another strong Place called Blackness; and the French proceeded to lay Siege to Boloign itself. And all this Loss caused by the Mutinies at home; the Suppressing of which hindred the sending sufficient Aid thither. This the Protector unfolded to Hoby the Ambassador with the Emperor, in his Letter dated Sept. 1. in these Words;

Newhaven itself lost.

"We cannot omit to advertise you, that the French King, by means of this dangerous Business at home, hath taken Courage to invade the King's Majesty's Possessions on the other side of the Seas. And albeit it was so foreseen, as Order was taken for his Encountering in the Field, yet the Outragiousness of the People was such within ourselves, as attending first to the pacifying Things at home as Reason required, we could not in Time provide for Things abroad. Which the French King perceiving, and having before corrupted two of the King's Majesty's Ministers, taking also Advantage of our Seditions and Tumults at home, descended in Person with an Army Royal, and by Treason of the Captain and Master Governour of a little Fortres, which stood upon a Hill, named The Almain Camp, near the main Fort of Newhaven, and was a Key to the same, abandoned it. After the getting wherof by means of the same, and of such secret Intelligence as they had with the said Traitors, did after in short Time win the main Fort of Newhaven. Which by these corrupt and false Means they now possess. And beside the Fort of Newhaven, one other small Piece of his Majesty's, named Blackness, and mindeth to do the uttermost he may against

The Protector to Hoby, giving a Relation thereof.



**A NNO.** "gainst *Boloign*. And because we doubt not but the *French Men*, according to their accustomed Fashion, will brave much of this their sudden Enterprize, tho' it be not great, we have thought good to write the whole of these Matters unto you, to be used as ye shall see cause. And considering, how dishonourably the *French King* hath begun these Wars, whereof we have more at large heretofore written unto you, we trust in the End he shall have small Cause to boast himself of any Gain.

1549.

We leave the *French* besieging *Boloign*: Which nevertheless withal their Strength they were not able to prevail against, so bravely did the *English* acquit themselves, till afterwatds it was delivered up for *Mony*; the Keeping whereof being not thought worth the Expence. And turn we again to home Matters.

The Chiefs of the Rebellion in the West.

The Heads and Captains of the Rebellion in the *West* were, some few of them, Gentlemen inflamed with an ignorant Zeal to the old Religion, but the most of them the Dregs of the People, and not a few of them Priests. But these, or most of them when their Heards by the Valour and Conduct of the Lord *Russel* were routed, suffered the Pains of Death. Their Names were *Arundel*, *Pomeroy*, *Coffin*, *Winslade*, *Rosogan*, *Holmes*, *Bury*, *Underbil*, *Soleman*, *Segar*, *Boyer*, *Lee*, two Mayors, *Pain*, *Maunder*, *Albridge*, *Thompson*, *Baret*, *Bocham*, *Wolcock*, *Alsa*, *Morton*, *Welsh*, *Barrow*, *Benet*. Which last recited nine, were Priests. There was another

*Paget* one of them.

which our Histories make no mention of, named *Paget*, whether he was Captain, or some other great Assistant in this Disobedience; who as it seems might be related unto Sir *William Paget*. Upon which Account, or some other Reason, the Lord Privy Seal was not so forward to put him to Death. But being a Person of such Note in these Broils, the Protector and the Lords sent down a particular Letter for his Execution. And Execution being still deferred, it was seconded with another from the Protector alone; and that because People began to clamour against him, as tho' he were the Cause of the Delay of it, and that it reflected upon his Honour, as tho' he were not now such an impartial Distributer of Justice upon Malefactors as he was before, now to wink at *Paget*, when formerly he had consented to the Death even of his own Brother. But I must crave leave to insert his Letter.

The Protector to the Lord *Russel* for Execution of *Paget*. MSS. G. P. Armig.

"After our very hartly Commendations unto your good Lordship: Wheras we with divers others of the King's Majesty's Council heretofore addressed our Letters to you for due Execution to be don, and had upon *Paget* for his worthy Deserts; which as we be informed is not don, but respected [respited] upon what Occasion we know not, whereat we cannot a little mervail, the Thing so much touching our Honour; For, as we have been credibly informed, divers have not left unspoken, that we should consent to the Death of our own Brother, and now would wink at him! Wherefore we hartily pray you, as you tender our Honour, to see him suffer that he hath deserved, according to the Tenor of our former Letters; and that without Delay. Thus Fare ye well. From *Syon* 18. Sept. 1549.

Your Loving Friend,

E: SOMERSET.

But



But while the Duke of *Somerset* was thus diligent in quelling and punishing this Conspiracy against the King and Kingdom, a Plot was hatching against himself; and almost ripe. For no longer than the Beginning of the next Month it brake out and took effect; when he was taken from the King at *Winsor*, and carried openly through the City of *London* to the Tower. Seeing the Storm approaching him, he endeavoured to make all the Friends he could by Messages and Applications. And the Lord Privy Seal being now strong in the West, he wrot a Letter to him, *Octob. 6.* giving him Account of the Conspiracy made against him, beginning, *Here hath of late risen such a Conspiracy, &c.* And by the Postscript may be seen, what Calumnies were now bruited abroad to blacken him and make him odious among the People. "They are not ashamed, writes he, to send Posts abroad to tell, that we are already committed to the Tower: That we would deliver the Bishops of *Winchester* and *London* out of Prison, and bring in again the old Mass. And in the Letter it appears, they gave out that he had sold *Boloign*, and withheld the Soldiers Wages. But I refer the Reader to our Historians, to know more of these Troubles that beset that Duke, under which at last he sunk. The foresaid Letter of the Duke, but without the Postscript, together with the Lord *Russel's* Answer, may be found in *Fox*.

1549.

The Protector falls into Troubles.

Yet to inform ourselves a little in this Place concerning the Occasions of his Misfortunes. It must be reckoned among his Failures, and a thing wherby he procured Enemies to himself, the Havock he made of sacred Edifices, and whatsoever was contained in them. It was too barbarous indeed, what was practised by him, namely, the Defacing antient Monuments, and rooting out hereby the Memory of Men of Note and Quality in former Times, of which Posterity is wont to be very tender. For he pulled down in *Pauls Church Yard*, and other Places, many Churches and religious Fabrics, for the Building of *Somerset House*. And not only were the Tombs of the Dead razed, but their Bones carried away in Cartloads, and buried in *Blomesbury*. Yet this Notice of former Superstitions was gained by this Barbarity, used by him and others under the Reigns of King *HENRY* and King *EDWARD*, that among a great Number of rotten Carcasses were found Caskets full of Pardons safely folded and lapt together in the Bottom of their Graves. Which *Dr. Haddon* himself had observed, when they digged dead Men out of their Graves, and carried away their Bones, occasioned by pulling down many Churches and Convents, as he wrot in his Answer to *Oforius*. But this was but a little Part of what created the Duke his Misfortunes.

Pag. 1244.

The Occasions therof.

By certain secret Letters of Sir *William Paget*, Secretary of State, wrot to the Protector, we learn, that he was somewhat elated with his Prosperity, and affected to be arbitrary in the Court, and to have his own Will take Place, and would seldom follow Advice. Whereby he procured to himself ill Will among the Nobility and Gentry: with whom also he would sometimes be very sharp in Words. Nay, even the Privy Counsellors did not escape him, when they chanced in Council to speak contrary to his Will or Judgment. A Knight once having some Business with him, was so nipped by him and rebuked, and that for no great Matter, that he could not forbear repairing to *Paget's* Chamber, there complaining to him with Tears, how he had been used a little before by the Protector. Nay, and his great Friend *Paget* himself escaped not, but was often

He is Arbitrary.



ANNO  
1549.

Reproved by  
his Friend,  
Paget.

Courts the  
Populacy.

Paget's Re-  
buke of him  
for this.

Would op-  
pose the  
whole Coun-  
cil.

often by him taken up very short at the Council Board, where he used to speak freely: Infomuch that he told the Protector that he had been discouraged at his Grace's Hands in open Council to say his Opinion, as much as ever Man was. Which Usage made, that neither he, nor others of the Council cared to speak much afterwards. These Matters provoked the said *Paget* (who loved to speak his Mind freely to his Friend, and perhaps had Liberty given him by the Protector so to do towards him) to write a Letter to him *May* 8. wherein he took the Liberty to tell him, "That unless his Grace would more quietly shew his Pleasure in Things, wherein he debated with other Men, and would hear them again graciously, to say their Opinions, what would ensue thereof he would be right sorry for, and his Grace would have Cause to repent. For no Man would dare to speak to him what he thought, tho' it were never so necessary. And that would be dangerous for himself in the End. And that a King, that should give occasion of Discouragement to his Counsellors to say their Opinions frankly, received thereby great Hurt and Peril to his Realm. But a Subject in great Authority, as his Grace was, using such cholerick Fashion, was like to fall into great Danger and Peril of his own Person, besides that of the Commonwealth. The Duke seemed but lately to have taken up this passionate Way, perhaps in Imitation of, or too much Converse with his Master King *HENRY*, who did use in very hasty Manner to treat those that were about him.

And as this Roughness to the Gentry was one of the Duke's Errors, so it was thought another, that he so much courted the Populacy, and used himself with so much Condescension towards them, that they stood in no fear of him. For this the said Secretary blamed him in a Letter wrot to him in *July*, when the Rebellion was now broke out, and Men opened their Mouths broadly against the Government. It was a long expostulatory Letter full of Freedom and as great Wisdom. He protested that he wrot it in such Perplexity as he knew not what to do, and that his Heart bled, and his Eyes distilled down with Weeping. For he saw at hand that coming, as he said, which he feared of long Time, *viz.* the Destruction of that good young Child his Sovereign Lord, the Subversion of his noble Realm, and the Ruin of his Grace. And hence he took occasion to tell him at large of his Imperfections in Government, and particularly his too much Gentleness and his too good Nature, and his Kindness to the common Sort, which had animated them to Disobedience: "His Lenity, his Softness, his Opinion to be good to the Poor, and Affectation of the good Word of the Commons, who cryed out, Oh! Sir, there was never a Man had the Hearts of the Commons as you have. The Commons pray for you, and say, God save your Life. To which *Paget* subjoins, "that he knew right well the Duke's gentle Heart, and that his meaning was good and godly. Tho' some there were, he said, that prated otherwise, and that he had some greater Enterprize in his Head, who leaned so much to the Multitude. But he knew his Grace's Meaning an honest Vertue. But still he insisted, that that Evil then happening in the Land, had been occasioned by his too much Gentleness to the Vulgar.

And then as to his disobliging Behaviour towards the Counsellors, he shewed him, how he would sometimes oppose himself to the whole

Council,



Counsil, and when they joined all in a Matter, he would out-reason them, and think by his Authority to make them bow to his Opinion. And again, how he would first deliver his Opinion in a Matter, and then ask theirs. Which the Aw they had of him would make them incline to allow of, however inwardly they disliked it.

A N N O  
1549.

The Protector also raised against himself much hard Speech for that Court of *Requests*, he set up within his own House: The good Intent whereof was to hear poor Mens Petitions and Suits. And here oftentimes upon Examination of their Cases, and upon the Compassion he took of their Oppressions, if he ended not their Busineses, he would send his Letters to the Chancery in their Favour. Which some judged to be a stopping the Course of the Courts, and endeavouring to warp the Judges, with whom his Letters, they said, would be apt to weigh much. In the Cotton Library there be two Letters of *Paget*, whence these Things above related are taken: wherein much of the true State of Affairs at this Juncture may be seen, and the Slips of the Protector, and likewise the Temper, Wisdom and great Abilities of that Statesman the Writer. See them in the *Repository*.

His Court of Requests disliked.

Titus F. 3.

GG. HH.

Yet *Paget's* Temper naturally disposed to Severity, and confirmed therein by the Methods he had observed in Bishop *Gardiner*, under whom he had been bred, led him to Principles of Government perhaps too rigorous, and by some wise Men in those Days disliked; as thinking it not safe to hold such a strict Hand over the Commons, and to press and keep them under, in a kind of Slavery: which *English* Spirits would not, nor could digest. And therefore *Somerset's* milder Courses in his Managery of publick Affairs were not to be thought so impolitic, however condemned by the said *Paget*, and some other of the lofty domineering Nobles, and Gentlemen, whose Covetousness made them afflict and oppress the inferior Sort. And as for his Court of *Requests*, surely it deserved no such hard Censure: serving as some Check to the rigorous and unjust Dealings of the Rich and the Mighty exercised upon the Poor, who were not able to contend with them at Law, by Reason of their Countenance and Wealth, whatsoever great Wrongs were done them. Which at this Court might easily and cheaply be shewn and complained of by way of Request and Petition. Here many Controversies were made up, and Restraints laid upon the destructive Designs of the Rich against the Poor, and according to the Cognizance of the Causes brought before the Duke, he would sometimes send his Letters to the Judges that were to hear them, not to warp their Judgments, but to incline them to do Justice impartially, and not to favour the Great in their Extortions upon those of meaner Rank and Degree: sometimes he would appoint intelligent and honest Men as Arbitrators, to consider the Complaints preferred to him, and with Speed to make a just Determination and Conclusion between Party and Party, without the long expensive Formality of Law. Such an Order, for Example sake, did the Protector send to *Francis None*, and *Owen Hopton* Esquires, the last Year. His Letter I will insert for the giving the more Light to this Court.

The Duke's mild Government vindicated;

And his Court of Requests.

"After our hartie Commendations: We send unto you the Supplication here inclosed: Wherin we minding Direction by Right; wherefore, (knowing your Wisdoms and upright Dexterities) we will and require you by Vertue hereof, calling all such Parties before you, as you shall think mete for the better Knowledge of the Truth therein, to hear and examine

MSS. penes me.

His Letter from that Court.



ANNO 1549. " examine the same. And upon due Knowledge of the Case, to proceed,  
 " without further Tract of Time, unto the final Determination thereof, as to  
 " Right, Equity and Conscience shall apperteyne. So as the Party com-  
 " plainant may receive and enjoy th'ole that in Conscience he ought to  
 " have by your Order; being you, by the Tenor hereof, authorized there-  
 " unto, without further Cause hereafter cffones to molest us in this Be-  
 " half with Complaint. Thus not doubting that you will not frustrate  
 " this the good Opinion we have conceyved in you, we bidde you Fare-  
 " wel. From *Somerset Place* the 11. of *March*, An. 1548.

Your Louing Freende,

E. SOMERSET.

The Lords  
 the Dukes  
 Enemies,  
 summon the  
 Counties to  
 send up For-  
 ces.

I need not enter into any further Relation of these Troubles raised a-  
 gainst the Duke; our Histories discover them at large. Yet to shew in  
 Part the Course the Lords, the Duke's Enemies, took against him. They  
 summoned armed Men, Horse and Foot, to repair to them from every  
 County, to oppose the Duke and his Men: Giving out to the  
 Gentry the great Dangers the King's Person was in, and the Necessity  
 of rescuing him out of the Duke's Hands: Whose Doings they called  
*Traiterous and false*, and his Proceedings, *Devilish*. But upon the Duke's  
 Submission and Surrendring the King's Person, the Lords dispatched ano-  
 ther Letter, dated from *London*, *Octob.* 11. to forbear the sending up of  
 the Forces they required in their last. Whose Letter ran in this Strain:

Their Letter.  
*Titus B.*

" After our harty Commendations. Where we have heretofore ad-  
 " dressed our Letters unto sundry Gentlemen, of that the King's Maje-  
 " sty's County of \_\_\_\_\_ for their Coming, or sending towards us such,  
 " and as great Numbers of hable Men, both Horsemen and Footmen,  
 " as they might furnish, to join with us, for the Deliverance of the King's  
 " Majesty's most Royal Person from the imminent Danger the same was  
 " in, through the traiterous Doings and false Practices of the Duke of  
 " *Somerset*: Forasmuch as it hath now pleased Almighty God of his in-  
 " finite Goodness and Mercy so to provide, that his Majesty is delivered  
 " from those Dangers: And the Forces also assembled by the said Duke  
 " for Maintenance of his naughty and devilish Proceedings, clearly also  
 " disperfed; We have thought good both to advertise both of this great  
 " Goodness of God, requiring you to give him humble Thanks for the  
 " same: And also to pray you, to give notice by Proclamation and other-  
 " wise, as you shall think good, to all such Gentlemen of that County,  
 " to whom any such Letters have been addressed from us, as is aforefaid,  
 " to stay themselves with their Men at home; taking good heed to the  
 " common Peace, quiet and good Order of the Shire, according to the  
 " King's Majesty's Laws: Giving them his Majesty's most harty Thanks  
 " for their Readiness to serve at this Time. And so we bid you right  
 " hartily farewell. From *London*, this 11. of *Octob.* 1549.

Your Loving Friends.



Two Days after, viz. Octob. 13. a Revocation was made by Letters *ANNO* Patent, of the Authority of Governour of the King's Person, and Pro- 1549. tectorship granted to the Duke of Somerset, Decemb. 24. Anno 1. Edw. VI. for the ill Government, Rule and Direction of his Person: "Wherby "it was brought in great Danger; the Subjects by civil Dissension much "annoyed, and the Laws subverted, and his Realms and Dominions brought "to great Peril of utter Ruin; as the Instrument ran.

The Duke's Authority of Governor and Protector revoked.

The Parliament that had been prorogued, began to set this Year Nov. 4. and continued sitting till Feb. 1. following. In this Session some further considerable Steps were made in the Reformation of Religion, and abandoning the old Superstitions out of the Church, which stuck still full close to it. For as yet Images in many Churches, set up for Religious Worship, remained, or else were in the keeping of private Men, Priests and others. And the old *Popish* Service Books were still preserved and used by Curates, as they stood affected. Of which there were divers and sundry Sorts, according to the various religious Offices; such as *Antiphonals, Missals, Grails, Processionals, Manuals, Legends, Pies, Portuassess, Primers, Couchers, Journals, Ordinals.* As to these, both Books and Images, it was decreed, that they should be abolished totally, and kept no longer in the Kingdom. The Images to be broken and defaced; and the Books to be brought to the Maior, or other Officer in each Parish, before the End of 30. of June next. And this under a Penalty of Mony first, and then of Imprisonment. And such Officers were upon Pain of 40*l.* to bring those Books which they received, within three Months to the Bishop of the Diocess, his Chancellor or Commissary. And he was to cause them openly to be burnt, or otherwise to be defaced or destroyed, upon Pain likewise of 40*l.* But King HENRY's Primer was particularly excepted; which indeed contained many good and wholesome Instructions and Devotions; that Book therefore might be retained, only striking out the Sentences of Invocation and Prayer to Saints. Neither were Images and Pictures belonging to Tombs and Monuments to be meddled withal, but to remain and stand, if the Persons for whom those Monuments were erected, were not reputed for Saints, and so their Pictures in Danger to be abused to Idolatry.

The Parliament constituted Laws for Religion.

The Act for taking away *Popish* Service Books.

The Evil and Inconvenience of the Books aforesaid, hitherto not called in, but remaining in Churches, or otherwise preserved, was, that it was found to frustrate the good Ends intended by the Book of Common Prayer lately set forth; which was, *For an uniform, quiet and godly Order of common and open Prayer.* "The Use of which Book, as the Preamble "set forth, was agreeable to the Order of the Primitive Church, and "much more comfortable unto the King's Subjects, than other Diversity of Service, as heretofore of long Time had been used; Nothing being ordered in the same Book to be read but the very pure Word of GOD, or which was evidently grounded upon the same. Whereas in the other were Things corrupt, untrue, vain and superstitious, and as it were a Preparation for Superstition. And which still remaining gave occasion to divers Persons, as impugned the Order and good Meaning of the King's said Book of Common Prayer, to continue in their old accustomed superstitious Service, and also ministred Occasion to Diversity of Opinions, Rites, Ceremonies and Services. Many of these Books upon this Act were brought in; but very many more were

which frustrated the good Ends of the Common Prayer Book.



**ANNO** not, but carefully concealed by those that affected them, in secret Places. Which were produced again and came to Light under Queen MARY.

1549.

An Act for making Ecclesiastical Laws.

Another good Law made this Parliament for amending the corrupt State of the Church, was that whereby the King was empowered to appoint Thirty two Learned Men, to peruse and examine the old Ecclesiastical Laws; and to gather, order and compile such Laws Ecclesiastical, as should be thought to the King and his Council, convenient to be used, practised and set forth within the Realm, in all Spiritual or Ecclesiastical Courts. And that such Laws so made should be taken and put in Ure for the Kings Ecclesiastical Laws.

An Act for Authorizing a new Book of Ordination.

Also, the old *Ordinal* being full of Superstition, a new Office of Ordination of Archbishops, Bishops, Priests, Deacons and other Ministers, was allowed of; which had been, or should be suddenly framed and devised by six Prelates, and six other Learned in GOD's Law, to be appointed by the King, or the greatest number of them; and by them to be set forth before the first day of *April* next. And this was Enacted to be exercised and used, and none else.

An Act of Pardon.

This Sessions of Parliament ended with an Act of Grace and General Pardon, designed as well for the ease of such as had been concerned in the late Rebellion, as other Offenders against the Laws. There was in this Act a Proviso, whereby Persons that held certain Opinions were excluded the benefit of this Pardon. Which are set down expressly; viz. That Infants were not to be Baptized; And if they were Baptized, that they ought to be rebaptized, when they came to lawful Age. That it was not lawful for a Christian Man to bear Office, or Rule in the *Commonwealth*. That no Mens Laws ought to be obeyed. That it was not lawful for a Christian Man to take an Oath before any Judge. That CHRIST took no Bodily Substance of our Blessed Lady. That Sinners after Baptism could not be restored by Repentance. That all things be, or ought to be Common, and nothing several. The Persons that held these Doctrins might well have a Note set upon them, being not consistent with a Christian *Commonweal*. For if these should be believed and practised, it were not able to subsist. And they who held these Tenets, were those they called *Anabaptists*; wherof several were now in Prison. Who were not thought fit to have the Benefit of this Act. But some of them were brought to Recant. Two suffered Death, viz. *Van Paris*, and *Joan of Kent*.

Anabaptists excepted out of it.

Private Acts.

In this Parliament, besides the Public Acts, which may be seen in the ordinary printed Statute Books, were made several Private Acts, never Printed. Which may not be unuseful nor unacceptable to mention, viz.

An Act for Dividends and Quotidians in Wells.

Lord de la War

An Act for Disinheriting *William West*, during his Life. The Reason wherof was, for designing to kill his Uncle, the Lord *La Ware*, by Poison, that he might the sooner enjoy his Estate, and succeed to the Honour of Baron *La Ware*. This *William*, whom Queen ELIZABETH afterwards had Created a Baron anew, lived throughout the best part of that Queens Reign. And his Son *Thomas* was called to a Parliament sitting in the Year 1597. and was presented to the Antient Place of his Forefathers, Lords *La Ware*, taking Precedency, as his Ancestors had done,



done, which his Father, by reason of his late Creation, had not enjoyed. A N N O  
1549.

An Act for the Restitution of *Thomas Islely*, Esq;

An Act for the Restitution of *Sir William Hussey*, Knight.

An Act touching the Fine and Ransom of the Duke of *Somerset*. That is, for the Punishment of his late Misdemeanours, he was fined 2000 l. a Year, of Land, and lost all his Goods and Offices. The Duke of  
*Somerset*.

### CHAP. XXIII.

*An Ambassy to the Emperor. The Emperors Requests. The Popes Death. Peace with France. By the means of Guidot, an Italian Merchant. Rewarded.*

IN the Month of *November*, the King and Lords of his Council (after the Duke was deposed of the Protectorship) sent again an Ambassador to the Emperor, viz. *Sir Thomas Cheyne*, Treasurer of the Kings Chamber; to continue the good understanding between him and the Emperor, and to acquaint him with the present State of *England*, with particular respect to the late Disorders about *Somerset*; but chiefly, to levy more Soldiers out of his Dominions, for the Kings Wars. He arrived at *Brussels*, Nov. 6. The Morrow after his Arrival, the Emperor sent a Gentleman of his Chamber, *Don John Manrique*, Brother to the Duke of *Naiara*, to welcome him: Which *Manrique* was one of the chief Officers of the Emperors Household, and in right good Estimation with him. *Cheyne*, having admission to the Emperors Presence, signified to him, that a great end of his coming was to inform him of the late Disorders in the Kingdom about the Duke of *Somerset*. And some Alterations touching the Order of the Government, having lately happened, that the Lords of the Council thought good to give him in Commandment to declare the Truth and Ground thereof, unto his Majesty. And here *Cheyne* rehearsed unto him, from Point to Point, the whole Discourse of the Duke of *Somerset*'s Proceedings, until the time of his Apprehension, following therein as near as he could the very Substance in effect of their Lordships Instructions. He subjoyned, "That albeit the Kings Majesties Affairs, as well at home as abroad, were presently, by reason of the said Dukes wilful and evil Government, in some Declination, yet would the Lords. as much as in them lay, travayl by all means possible to redub and restore the same again to their former Estate and Estimation. For the furtherance wherof, he said, they doubted nothing of his Majesties wonted good Will and Affection. And that seeing *Boloign* remained presently, by the forenamed occasion, in such strait Terms, there was now no other way to preserve it, but the Repulse of the Enemy, from the Siege, by Force of Men. That the Lord *Clinton*, the Kings Deputy there, had made a Motion

*Cheyne goes  
Ambassador  
to the Empe-  
ror.*



ANNO

1549.

Desires leave  
to raise Men.

“ to *Monf. Chastillon* the *French* King's Lieutenant, to bring Things to  
 “ some Composition. But that they refused to stand to the former Trea-  
 “ ties, and seemed in the rest to be over meagre, and little conformable  
 “ to Reason. And therefore that Matter was broken off again; and no  
 “ Hope of any Appointment that Ways, unless some other Occasion  
 “ should be ministred on their Part. Which if it should be offered, they  
 “ would communicate to his Majesty.

“ And that therefore seeing there was now no other Means to save  
 “ that Piece, but only by Force of Men, the King, as it was his Will  
 “ these Matters should be discoursed at length unto him, [the Emperor]  
 “ as to his most loving Father and very Friend, so, by the Advice of  
 “ his Lords, did most heartily pray him to grant him for his Mony  
 “ the Number of 2000 Horsemen, and 4000 Foot, to be levied within  
 “ his Countries, with such Furniture of Armour, and other Ammunition,  
 “ as should be necessary.

The Empe-  
rors Answer.

The Emperor made this Answer, “ *Monf. L'Ambassador*, I must con-  
 “ fess to have had both now, and at sundry other Times, large Experi-  
 “ ence of the faithful Love and friendly Affiance, that the King my good  
 “ Brother, and his Council have reposed in me, as well by sundry other  
 “ Arguments; as by their particular Communicating unto me from Time  
 “ to Time the Estate of their Affairs. And like as I am sorry to hear of  
 “ the Trouble and Business that hath been lately among them, so am I  
 “ very glad to perceive it is at the last grown to so good and quiet an  
 “ End, and in so good likelihood of Continuance, which I hope through  
 “ the good and prudent Governance of those grave and wise Counsellors,  
 “ the King my good Brother, his Estate and Person shall henceforth be  
 “ in good Surety, his Realms quietlier governed, and his Enemies better  
 “ encountred, than they have been hitherto. Wherto, for my good  
 “ Brother's Sake, I wish as good Success, as I would to mine own proper  
 “ Affairs.

“ As to the Estate of *Boloign*, Albeit it standeth, as ye say, in very  
 “ weak Terms, yet am I of Opinion, that the *French* are able for this  
 “ Winter Time to work no manner of Displeasure that Way. Wherein,  
 “ and in the rest of my good Brother's Affairs, I have heretofore at good  
 “ length declared mine Advice and Counsil unto *Monf. L'Ambassador*  
 “ here then. To which I have not presently any other Thing to add.  
 “ But as to the Numbers of Men that my good Brother requireth at my  
 “ Hands, In good Faith, as well because his Father was, during his Life  
 “ Time, my very Friend, and almost another Father, as also because  
 “ his Majesty, being yet under Years, hath therefore need of his Friend's  
 “ Assistance, I would even, with all my Heart shew him as much Ple-  
 “ sure as in me lyeth, and do for him as much as for my own Child,  
 “ my Honour reserved: but yet can I not, without some Touch of my  
 “ Estimation, and Breach of my League with *France*, satisfy the Request  
 “ herein presently. And if I were disposed, or might agree therto, yet  
 “ to speak plainly as I think, I assure you it should in my mind rather  
 “ hinder than further my Good Brothers Affairs, for divers Respects;  
 “ and namely, because the *French*, how closely soever the Matter were  
 “ gon about, might have Commodity enough also to levy such numbers  
 “ of Men as they should think good. Glad would I be to shew my

“ Good



" Good Brother pleasure, and very loth either to do any thing against *ANNO*  
 " mine own Honour, or hinder my Good Brothers Affairs. On the 1549.  
 " other side, I remember I am bound to observe my Treaties with *France*,  
 " which I cannot violate without some Touch of mine Honour." And  
 so he concluded, praying the Ambassador to common with *Mons. D' Arras*,  
 who should further declare unto him his Mind, and devise such Means  
 herein as should be thought most indifferent and meetest for both Parts.  
 And so, after leave taken, they departed.

Yet was not this Embassy wholly ineffectual, as obtaining nothing but Some Foot  
and Horse  
granted.  
 good Words. For in *Cheyne* and *Hobies* Conference with *D' Arras*, he  
 told them, that the Emperor was willing to grant the levying of five or  
 six Thousand Footmen, so as they had them from about *Freezland*, and  
 the Sea Coasts therabouts, where they had at other Times been accusto-  
 med to levy their Men; and with Condition only, that they were con-  
 veyed thence by Sea, and none otherwise. He said further, that for  
 the Horsemen which they demanded, the Emperor thought they should  
 not have Occasion to make any such great Preparation against the *French*,  
 as well because they were presently, for Want of Provision of Victuals  
 and other Necessaries, unable to bring down toward *Boloign* any great  
 Number of Men of Arms, as also for that the Time of the Year was now  
 very late. Yet to satisfy as much as he might the King his good Brother,  
 he could be content they should have out of the Country of *Cleves* five  
 or six hundred Horsemen to pass by Land, by ten and twenty File a  
 File. But as for the Carriage, Provision and Victuals they required,  
 the Emperor could in no wise grant therto: As well because the Matter  
 would be over manifest to the World, and quite against the Treaties with  
*France*: as also for that his Subjects in like Case had been at other Times  
 ill entreated by the *English*, wherof they had heretofore made sundry  
 Complaints, and rested so ill satisfied, that they could never be brought  
 to serve herein, without they were by the Emperor's expresse Command,  
 yea, and with Threatning of Punishment, compelled thereto. Which  
 should too much open the Matter to the World, and be almost a plain  
 Publication of War with *France*. And lastly, the Scarcity of Victuals  
 in those Parts, presently was such, that he could not, without his Sub-  
 jects great Prejudice and Hindrance, grant Liberty for the Conveyance  
 of any away.

This Business of King EDWARD with the Emperor being thus an- Certain Re-  
quests of the  
Emperor to  
the King.  
 swered, the Emperor had some Business also with King EDWARD.  
 Which *D' Arras* at this Meeting reported to the Ambassadors, *Cheyne* and  
*Hoby*. Wherof one was this. Certain *French* Letters were lately in-  
 tercepted by the *English* near about *Boloign*, which treated concerning  
 certain Practices of *Nece* and *Dragute Rayes*, two Infidels, Sea Com- The French  
calls in the  
Turk.  
 manders, that governed a Fleet of Ships belonging to the *Turk*; which  
 the *French* King had procured of the Great *Turk*, for his Service against  
 the Emperor. A Duplicate of these Letters the King had sent to *Hoby*  
 to deliver to the Emperor, for his Behoof and Service. *D' Arras* shewed  
 that it was his Master's Desire, that the King would communicate to him  
 the Original Letters, in case it might not turn to the Hindrance of the  
 King's Proceedings, for the better Proof and Trial therof: which might,  
 he said, stand the Emperor in good stead, and would be an acceptable  
 Pleasure to him.

Secondly,



A N N O

1549.

Sebastian Cabote.

Secondly, He desired, that whereas one *Sebastian Gabote* or *Cabote*, Grand Pilot of the Emperor's *Indias*, was then in *England*, forasmuch as he could not stand the King in any great Stead, seeing he had but small Practice in these Seas, and was a very necessary Man for the Emperor, whose Servant he was, and had a Pension of him; that some Order might be taken for his sending over in such Sort as the Emperor should at better length declare unto the King's Council. Notwithstanding I suspect *Gabote* still abode in *England* at *Brislow*, (for there he lived); having two or three Years after set on foot a famous Voyage hence, as we shall mention in due Place.

A Bulwark built upon the Emperor's Territories.

Thirdly, There was a Bulwark lately made by the *English*, as it seems, in *Boloignois*, towards the Emperor's Frontiers, and built, as they asserted, upon Part of his Territories; This had been sundry Times declared unto the King's Ambassadors, and Redress required. Wherefore now the Emperor desired Commissioners to be appointed on either Party for the Determination thereof, as soon as might be. For he thought he had great Wrong don herein. But to this Sir *Philip Hoby* answered, that he was informed the Ground whereon this Bulwark was built, was indeed within the King's Territories, and so proved by the Confession of one of the Emperors own Subjects. But *D'Arras* said, some of the Officers there denied it.

The Match between the Lady Mary and the Infant of Portugal moved.

Lastly, Whereas at *Paget's* being Ambassador there, *Somerset* being then Lord Protector, Motion was made on the King's Behalf for a Marriage between the Infant of *Portugal* and the Lady *Mary*, because the Matter rested then upon the Knowledge of the Infant's Estate, and what Dower he could be able to assure unto the said Lady, with certain other Points desired to be cleared; the Emperor had since sent into *Portugal*, to treat upon this Matter, and to know the Certainty hereof. And therefore he would gladly know, whether upon Answer received from thence, the King and his Council minded to proceed any further herein, and stand to the Motion made in the Protector's Time.

The Emperor recommends Religion to the King.

When *Cheyne* took his Leave of the Emperor in Order to his Return home, the Emperor used these Words to him at parting, "I shall pray you, said he, after my most hearty Commendations to the King and his Council, to desire both him and his Council to have Matters of Religion first recommended; to the End we may be at the length all of one Opinion. Till when, to speak plain unto you as I think, I can neither so earnestly, nor so thorowly assist my good Brother, as my Desire is."

The Pope dies.

The *Pope* dying in this Month of *November*, while these two Ambassadors were at *Brussels*, they gave the Court the News of it, and of the Canvassing that followed for a Successor. And because an *English* Cardinal was nominated among the rest as likely to wear the Triple Crown, I will set down this Part of their Letter. "The Bishop of *Rome* being dead, about the 9th of this Instant, the Cardinal *Farneze* sent word shortly after to the Emperor, that he would get him, if it were his Pleasure, one and twenty Voices with his own, for whomsoever he would have *Pope*. The Emperor made Answer, that he would do herein as God should put in his Head; and, as it is said, he counselled him to do the like. Here are sundry Opinions about the new Bishop Elect. For some think the Emperor himself will be *Pope*, if he may. Others think he will procure his Brother *Ferdinando* to be *Pope*; and some

suppose



"suppose the Duke of Savoy: Others name the Cardinal Pole; others, *ANN O*  
 "the Cardinal of Trent, and many, the Cardinal Carpi or Veruli, who *1549.*  
 "are good Imperials. On the other Side, there are also said to be in the  
 "Election the Cardinal Salviati, and the Cardinal Ridolphi; Who are both  
 "good French.

The Year declining, and Martial Atchievements being hindred by the long Nights and ill Weather, it became a proper Season for Treaty between England and France. Which began upon a pretty strange Occasion. One Anthony Guidot, a foreign Merchant residing here, of his own Head, for ought appeared, (tho' he pretended he had his Order from France,) made several Journeys in the Month of December to and fro, to propound a Treaty: which at last by his Industry had the intended Effect, tho' at first there was but little Appearance therof. The Inkling thereof soon came to the Emperor's Court; who hearing of it desired by Hoby the English Ambassador to know the Truth. By a Letter of the 13. Decemb. the said Ambassador advertized it over into England to the Council, with his Advice thereupon. They, Decemb. 31. wrot back to him their Thanks, and "How they perceived the Bruit that was in the Emperor's Court, concerning the Communication of Peace between the two Realms. But that he might be assured they had not forgotten what they had before written to him; namely, that in Case they proceeded towards a Conclusion of Peace with the French, they would cause the Emperor to be made privy to it. And that so they intended to do indeed. But that as for the Practice entred by Anthony Guidot, it was a Thing begun of his own Mind. And that because as yet there was no great Likelihood it should take any Effect; seeing there was neither Time, Place nor Meeting of Commissioners appointed thereunto; Therefore they thought it not necessary to write of a Thing as yet so uncertain and doubtful. But that if they perceived, if by that means or any other, there should be any Towardness of a Meeting for that Purpose like to take any good Effect, they would certify him of it, to the Intent the Emperor might by him be made privy to it. And that one thing he might be assured of, that in case they entred into any such Communication with France, yet nevertheless they would do nothing, that should by any means be prejudicial to the Treaty between the King's Highness, and the Emperor his good Brother.

But in January, by the Pains of Guidot, the Matter began to ripen, and come to some further Effect. For now, in good Earnest, Commissioners were appointed on both sides, to treat. For, as the Council wrot to the said Ambassador, Jan. 16. Anthony Guidot came out of France, and brought Word, that the French King desired to have a Meeting to treat upon a Peace, and for that Purpose had named for his Part Mons. De Rochepot, Mons. De Chastilion, Mons. De Mortier, and Mons. De Saffie, otherwise called the Secretary Boucheter. And perceiving the good Inclination to Peace, which the French shewed to have, they thought it not unmeet for the Publick Wealth and Quietness of Christendom, that the King's Highness for his Part should give ear unto it. And so he had appointed the Lord Privy Seal, the Lord Paget, Sir William Peters and Sir John Mason, as Commissioners for his Majesty, to meet with the said French Commissioners upon the Frontiers, about the twenty fifth, or twenty sixth, of this present. And they gave the Ambassador to know, moreover, that if



**A NNO** if upon their Conference there appeared any towardness of a good Conclusion, he should be certified of it, to the Intent he might advertise the Emperor.

**1549.**

The French's  
Offers and  
Braggs.

II.

See the Rep-  
sitary.

The Business, now lying before the *English* Commissioners, was to demand Payment of an Annual Pension due to *England*, as a Debt owned by the former *French* King; and to hear what the *French* Commissioners would offer concerning *Boloign*. But to know how Matters went between the Commissioners, and how intolerably insolent and insulting the *French* were, and lastly, to understand the present Condition of Things at home, a Letter from the Lord *Paget*, one of the Commissioners on the *English* side, to the Earl of *Warwick*, Lord great Master, will abundantly show. Wherby it appeared, that the *French* carried themselves loftily in all their Proceedings. And the Knowledge of the present Juncture encreased their Courage. They told our Commissioners, they would have *Boloign* by fair Means or by foul. And as for the Pension, they would, they said, be no longer Tributaries. They extolled the Power of their King, and spake but meanly of ours, with such bragging and braving Terms and Countenances, (which especially appeared in *Rocheport*) that one would have judged him a Man, said the Lord *Paget*, more fit to make of Peace a War, than of War a Peace. They would recognize no Debts. For, they said, the *English* had made them spend, and had taken upon the Seas, ten Times as much as the Debt came to. They said, the Pension was granted; but the Times were turned. That it was granted by the *French* King that was dead, to a King of *England* that was dead. And that the King of *France* could not by his simple Grant without Confirmation of Parliament, bind his Successors. That King *HENRY* made his Bargain at that Time, when he had the Cages in his Hand, namely, the *French* King and the Emperor at one time; and so might make his Bargain himself, as he listed. But his Ministers took not heed to knit it surely up by Parliament. They said therefore, they would use Time as King *HENRY* did, when his Time served. For they said, they knew their State, and that the *English* were not able to war with them. And in fine, all that they offered was, that the *English* Commissioners should wipe away all Pretences that they made to *France*, and ask a reasonable Sum for *Boloign*, and they would make a reasonable Answer. Or if they would not, in respect of their Master's young Age, acquit his Pretence, they required *Boloign*, and they would agree with them for a Sum; And they might reserve to their Master his *Droits*, that he pretended to; and to them [the *French*] their Defences for the same. But *Rocheport* said, they would have *Boloign*; Whosoever said, Nay; and that the *English* were in Poverty and Mutiny at home, beset all about with Enemies, having no Friend to succour them, destitute of Mony to furnish them, and so far in Debt as hardly they could find any Creditors. This Language angered the *English* extremely, but they could not well tell how to help themselves.

A Peace con-  
cluded.

In short, it was thought the best Way to sell *Boloign*, a very chargeable Place, and in Danger to be lost, on the best Terms they could. In *March* this produced a Peace, and *Boloign* was sold. For what and the Conditions, let other Historians relate.

The Emperor  
acquainted  
with it by the  
Ambassador.

This the Lord *Russel*, Earl of *Bedford*, the Lord *Paget*, and the other Commissioners signified to the Ambassador at the Emperor's Court, with Commission to him to open the same, on the King and Council's Behalf,

to



to the Emperor. Upon the Receit whereof he demanded Audience, when A. N. N. O.  
 at his coming to the Emperor's Prefence, which was *March 22.* he said, 1549.  
 "That whereas the Kings Highness, by Advice of his Lords, had lately,  
 "for the better Quietness of Christendom, and such other Grounds and  
 "Considerations as had been heretofore by him, the Ambassador, decla-  
 "red to him and his Ministers, entred to Treat of Peace with *France* :  
 "And having now at length, after some Time spent in debating the  
 "Matter, grown finally to an End, and concluded a Peace with the  
 "*French King*; the King his Master had commanded him to open and  
 "declare the same unto him. The Sum whereof, he said, was, That  
 "for a certain Sum of Mony to be paid to the King's Majesty, partly  
 "in Hand, and partly at Days, *Boloign*, with the Members therto ad-  
 "joining, and the other Pieces of the new Conquest, were to be restored  
 "to the *French King*; and certain Pieces which the King had fortified  
 "in the Midst of *Scotland*, to the *Scots*, who were comprehended with  
 "the *French King* in this Treaty, in such Sort as the Form of their Com-  
 "prehension should appear to his Majesty.

"And this, Sir, (as He proceeded) is the Effect of this Agreement.  
 "Wherein such Consideration and Respect hath been had to your Ma-  
 "jesty's Amity and Friendship, as to the strait League that is between  
 "you and the King my Master appertaineth; as by this Copy of those  
 "Parts of the Treaty that concern this Matter, may more plainly appear  
 "to your Majesty. And here he delivered unto the Emperor a Note  
 containing two or three Clauses of the Treaty sent him by the Earl of  
*Bedford* and his Collegues. Which the Emperor received, and said, he  
 would cause it to be overlookt. The Ambassador went on, shewing the  
 Emperor, "That the King trusted to find at his Hands no less Continu-  
 "ance of Friendship, than he and his Council minded towards him;  
 "wherein he should find no lack in them to the uttermost that by the  
 "Treaty could be required: Not doubting but his Majesty, as a Prince  
 "of such Wisdom and Experience, and knowing as he did the State of  
 "the King his Master's Realm, and what great Charges *Boloign* did put  
 "his Highness and Realm unto, did well enough remember, that after  
 "eight Years Wars with the *Scots*, and six Years Wars with the *French*  
 "King, wanting the Assistance of either Friend, Neighbour, or Ally,  
 "the *French* and the *Scots* being in the mean time joined together, and  
 "having to do no where else with any other; it was more than necessary  
 "for his Highness to grow to Agreement and Peace, as he had don. Ne-  
 "vertheless he remained, as he had don always, his Majesties assured  
 "Friend, in any thing that he could or ought to do him pleasure in:  
 "In hope, assuredly, to receive the semblable Correspondence of  
 "Friendship at his hands, whom he reputed his best Brother and per-  
 "petual Ally.

The Emperor perceiving the Ambassador to come to an end of his  
 Talk, after a little Pause, and having with sundry Words of Ceremony The Empe-  
ror's Answer.  
 willed the Ambassador to render his most hearty Commendations unto  
 the King's Majesty, with like Thanks unto his Majesty, and the Lords  
 for this Respect that they shewed him, said, "*Mons. L'Ambassador*, I am  
 "right glad, and do rejoyce even withal my Heart to understand, that the  
 "King my good Brother is now at the last fallen to Agreement and Peace  
 "with *France*. And surely, I have long coveted to see him in these



ANNO

1549.

“ his tender Years at quiet, and at Concord with his Neighbours.  
 “ Which being now come to pass, I mistrust not, but both he for his  
 “ own Commodity, and we his Friends for his Sake, shall have cause to  
 “ rejoice therat. For the Regard that my good Brother, and the Lords  
 “ of his Council have had, in this their Conclusion with *France*, to-  
 “ wards me, and the Amity and League that is between us, I pray you  
 “ render unto them my most hearty Thanks; Assuring the King my  
 “ good Brother, that like as I have always hitherto lookt for no less at  
 “ his Hands, so shall he be sure to find the Reciproque therof at mine,  
 “ in the sure Observation of the League that is between us to the uttermost  
 “ Jot, or in any other thing that I may shew him Pleasure in, to the  
 “ best of my Power. And truly, I cannot but confesse to have perceived  
 “ the earnest Affection and good Will, that the King my good Brother  
 “ and his Council have born always towards me, in the communicating  
 “ to me from Time to Time the Estate of his Affairs. Whereby indeed  
 “ I have perceived, as ye say, how necessary it hath been for them to  
 “ grow to Peace: especially in respect of my good Brother's younger Years.  
 “ And like as they have not hitherto wanted (altho' in Respect of their  
 “ Wisdom they have had little need therof) such friendly Advice and  
 “ Counsil, when they have required it at my Hands, as I could give  
 “ them; no more shall my good Brother find me unready to continue  
 “ and encrease the Amity and Friendship that hath thus long continued  
 “ between us and our Houses, to the uttermost that I may. The Reci-  
 “ proque whereof I doubt not to find at his and his Minister's Hands,  
 “ whensoever Opportunity shall be therto administred. And to this Te-  
 “ nour the Emperor most obligingly concluded.

*Guidot re-  
warded.*

*Warr. Book.*

*Anthony Guidot* was well rewarded for his Pains. For whatsoever Favours he received from *France* for this Service, King *EDWARD* soon after the Peace gratified him with a thousand Crowns, and a thousand Crowns Pension, and made him a Knight, and his Son had a Pension of two hundred and fifty Crowns, as the King makes a Memorial of it in his Journal. But this was not all; for as I find elsewhere, the King, about a Year after, seemed to make him his Merchant, and granted him a Licence, under the Name of Sir *Anthony Guidot*, his Factors and Attorneys, to transport and carry over beyond Seas Woolen Cloths and Kerfies, Lead, Tin, and all other Merchandizes of this Realm, being not of the Staple of *Calais*, neither prohibited by the Laws of the Land: And also to bring in Velvet, Cloth of Gold, and other Merchandizes, as sweet Wines, and Oyles, paying for the Customs and Subsidies as the Merchants of *England* did. The Grant also of 250 *l.* yearly, (answering to the thousand Crowns mentioned in the Journal) during Life, is also here set down; to be received by the King's Order of the Duke of *Florence*, who owed to the King and his Successors 500 *l.* a Year for certain Years.



## CHAP. XXIV.

*A Fire in the Palace. Earl of Arundel confined. Books published this Year: by Cheke, P. Martyr, Hooper, Ochyn, Will. Thomas. The Holy Bible. Beck, Bale, &c. New Book of Ordination. The State of the Realm. Sir Stephen, Curate of Creechurch.*

NOW from more publick Affairs of State, let us descend to more private Matters. At *Christmas* a Fire happened at the King's Palace at *Westminster*; the Effect, as it seems, of the great Feasting there. For it fell chiefly in the Kitchen and Office adjoining, as the Scullery. Wherby, beside other Damage, much of the King's Plate was spoilt and consumed. So that the Charge only of recruiting his Plate, partly occasioned by this Fire, cost a good round Sum. As appears in the Warrant Book, where a Warrant is mentioned to the Exchequer, to pay to certain Persons for Plate bought of them for the King's Use, and for new making and gilding certain Vessels burnt there at the Feast of *Christmas*, together with mending of Plate, the Sum of ———— 1687-16-11q.

A Fire at Court.

In *January* was the Earl of *Arundel* for certain Misdemeanors sequestred to his House; As likewise, for certain Considerations, were *Thomas Arundel*, and Mr. *Rogers* of the Privy Chamber. Rumours likewise blew about, that the Earl of *Southampton* also was sequestred to his House. Which indeed was not so. But he might go at his Pleasure whether him listed. This News the Council imparted in their Letters to *Hoby* their Ambassador. What those Misdemeanors of the Earl of *Arundel* were, King EDWARD in his Journal relates; viz. Plucking down Locks and Bolts at *Westminster*, and giving away the King's Stuff, &c. Whence arose great Suspicion of him. And he was fined 12000*l*. Of which yet he was afterwards pardoned. We shall hear of him again under the next Year.

The Earl of Arundel confined: And others.

I have little more to add concerning this Year; only to mention some Books that were now published, and to give some Prospect of the State of the Nation at this Juncture.

This Year Mr. *Cheke*, the King's Schoolmaster, and one of his Bed-chamber (but retired this Summer to his old Mother *Cambridge*), put forth a Book against the Rebellion, intituled, *The Hurt of Sedition, how grievous it is to a Commonwealth*. On the Reverse of the Title Page is the Picture of *Absalom* hanging in the Tree, thrust through by *Joab* with this Motto, *The Reward of Absalom the Rebel*. The running Title is, *The true Subject to the Rebel*. It was printed by *John Day* dwelling at *Aldersgate*, and *William Seres* dwelling in *Peter College*, and were to be sold at the new Shop in the little Conduit in *Cheapside*. This Discourse carried an admirable Strain of Rhetoric and Persuasion, and was

Cheke's Book against the Rebellion.



ANNO 1549. close and piercing, like an Oration of *Demosthenes*, with whom *Cheke* was very conversant, and of whom he was Master. It began,

“ Among so many and notable Benefits, wherewith GOD hath already so plentifully endued us, there is nothing more beneficial, than that we have by his Grace kept us quiet from Rebellion at this Time. For we see such Miseries hang over the whole State of the Commonwealth through the great Misorder of your Sedition, that it maketh us much to rejoyce, that we have been neither Partakers of your Doings, nor Conspirers of your Counsils. For even as the *Lacedemonians*, for the avoiding of Drunkenness, did cause their Sons to behold their Servants when they were drunk, that by beholding their Beastliness, they might avoid the like Vice; Even so hath GOD like a merciful Father stayed us from your Wickedness, that by beholding the Filth of your Fault, we may justly for Offence abhor the like Rebels, whom else by Nature we love like *Englishmen*. And so for ourselves, we have great Cause to thank GOD, by whose Religion and holy Word daily taught us, we learn not only to fear him truly, but also to obey our King faithfully, and to serve in our own Vocation honestly. And as for you we have surely just Cause to lament you as Brethren, and yet juster Cause to rise against you as Enemies, and most just Cause to overthrow you as Rebels. And a little after, “ How do ye take in hand to reform? Be ye Kings? By what Authority? Or by what Occasion? Be ye the King’s Officers? By what Commission? Be ye called of GOD? By what Token declare ye that? GOD’s Word teacheth us, that no Man should take in Hand any Office, but he that is called of GOD, like *Aaron*.—Ye rise for Religion. What Religion taught that? If ye were offered Persecution for Religion, ye ought to fly. So Christ teacheth you, and yet you intend to fight.—Why rise ye for Religion? Have ye any thing contrary to GOD’s Book? Yea, have you not all things agreeable to GOD’s Word? Thus went he on, answering all their Objections and Demands, with an easy Plainness, and convincing Evidence. This whole Treatise is transcribed and preserved in *Hollingshed’s History*.

Page. 1042.

P. Martyr’s  
Book of the  
Eucharist.

Now also came forth the Readings of *Peter Martyr*, public Professor of Divinity in Oxford, about the Sacrament of the Lord’s Supper, in Quarto, Intituled, *Traſtatio de Sacramento Eucharistiæ; Habita publicè Oxonii, per D. Petrum Martyrem Vermilium Florentinum, in ea Academia sacre Theologiæ publicum & Regium Professore: cum jam absolvisset interpretationem xi. Capituli prioris Epistolæ ad Corinthios*. This Book the learned Professor dedicated to Archbishop *Cranmer* in a large Epistle. The Reason wherof he gave, was, “ Since he could not find a Defender both of Evangelical Truth, and also of this Eucharistical Sacrament, “ *sanctior, doctior, & firmitior*; i. e. more holy, more learned and more steddy, than he. And that his Grace had so great Knowledge concerning this Controversy, as he, [P. Martyr] well knew, that it was hard to find the like in any one beside. That there was none of the Fathers, whom he had not very diligently made his Observations of; nor any Book either of antient or modern Writers, which I have not my self, (as *Martyr* told him) with these Eyes seen, noted with his own Hand, whatever belonged to that whole Disputation. He went on in his Character of this great Archbishop and *Martyr*: “ That Councils, “ Canons,



“ Canons, Popes, Decrees, which pertained thereunto, he had digested, *ANNO*  
 “ with so great Labour into particular distinct Heads, that, unless he *1549.*  
 “ [P. Martyr] had not been an Eye Witness himself, he should scarcely  
 “ ever have believed it upon the Relation of others: Nor had he [the  
 “ Archbishop] taken such Pains, study and labour in this Subject only,  
 “ of the Eucharist, but that he had observed, how he [the said Arch-  
 “ bishop] had don the same almost in all other Doctrines, which were  
 “ chiefly controverted in that Age.---That he had both publickly and  
 “ privatly conflicted with the Adversaries; and with admirable Strength  
 “ of Learning, Sharpness of Wit, and Dexterity of Performance, asserted  
 “ what he knew to be true, from the thorny and intricate Cavils of So-  
 “ phisters; ---That he [P. Martyr] saw it necessary to fly to the Au-  
 “ thority of his Name, since he had need of some powerful *παρρησιας*,  
 “ [Defender] under whom he might be protected from those, who had  
 “ been detracting, tearing and traducing his Name every where, with  
 “ most shameless Lyes: and such Men as he thought could never have  
 “ been, had he not found them.

In this Work he disposed the Order and Method of his Discourse under these four Heads. First, of that Conjunction, wherby it is commonly said, the Bread and Wine is transubstantiated into the Body and Blood of Christ. Next, to examine another Opinion which makes the Bread and Wine indeed, as to their intyre and true Natures, to be retained in the Sacrament; and so to be retained, that they have *adjoinedly, naturally*, (as they speak) *corporally and really*, the true Body and Blood of Christ. In the third Place, should be weighed what others also said, that they are not at all joined together any other Way, than *Sacramental*; that is, by Signification and Representation. And then, lastly, it should be shewn, how the second and third Opinions, and what belongeth to them, do more tend to Piety in this sacramental Affair.

This Book was printed again at *Zuric*, in the Year 1552. by *Johannes Wolphius*: a learned Minister there: and dedicated by him to one *John Butler*, a Gentleman of a considerable Family in *England*, and a great Friend and Benefactor to the said *Wolphius*. With whom he became acquainted, assisting him in his Studies; now settled at *Zuric*, after his Travails into *Germany, France and Italy*. At the Beginning of this second Edition of this Book of *Peter Martyr's* are added, (for the fuller Understanding the different Opinions of the Sacrament) I. *Papæ de Eucharistiâ quæ sit Sententia*. II. *Martini Lutheri de Eucharistiæ Sacramento, quæ Sententia*. III. *Huldreichi Zuinglii Sententia de Christi in sacra cœna Præsentia*.

*John Hoper* did this Year publish a funeral Oration made *Jan. 14.* *Hoper's Orati-*  
 against *Purgatory* upon that Text, *I heard a Voice from Heaven, saying* *on against*  
*unto me, Write, Blessed are the Dead that die in the Lord, straightway,* *Purgatory.*  
*so saith the Sprite, &c.* Beginning with this Preface, “ The Death of a  
 “ Man's Friend is paynful for two Consyderations. The one, because  
 “ he that lyveth is forsaken and destytute of the Famylyarity and Friend-  
 “ ship of him that is dead. The other, that the Lyving doubteth where  
 “ the Soul of his Friend departed is become. Whether it be in Heaven  
 “ or in Hell. Both these Ills may be redressed with one Good, that is,  
 “ to wit, If he that lyveth be assured by the Word of GOD, that his  
 “ Friend departed is by mortal Death entred in Christ into eternal Lyfe.  
 “ But now in this standeth all the Doubt, How the Living may know  
 “ in



A N N O  
1549.

“in what State the Souls departed stand. This Doubt cannot the *Gentile*  
“dissolve, the Wisemen of the World, nor the common Sort of foche as  
“beareth the Name of Christianity. Namely, for this, that they ymagin  
“their Friends Souls to be broiled and roasted in the Fyre of Purgatory.  
“Wherefore even as they fear they wotte not what, so seek they their  
“Remedy they know not how. Wyth Masse, *Dirige*, and such other:  
“These Pains by the Lyving presupposed of the Dead. Who can justly  
“reprehend the mysbelyving Lyving for the State of the Dead, that  
“more than nede is, payneth themselves, and more than Profyt is, re-  
“demeth the Prayers of other?

“But what may the Trueth conclude? Is there any Certaynty that  
“puttyth all out of dowte, our Friends Souls to depart from the Earth  
“straight unto eternal Lyfe? Truly, after the Judgment of the Flesh,  
“there is no such Knowledge. For the Flesh in thys Case either wyl  
“playnly dispayre for the Horreur and Gretnefs of Synne, or else dowte  
“of the means, how it may be remedied. Only therfore the Certaynty  
“is known by the Scripture of GOD. Gyve therefore hede what in thy  
“Case the Word of GOD certifieth us of the Dead. *I heard a Voice*  
“from Heaven, saying unto me, *Write, Blessed are the Dead that die in*  
*the Lord, straightway, &c.* This Sermon was printed by *Edward Whit-*  
*church* at the Sign of the *Sun* in *Fleetstreet*.

*Ochin's Dia-*  
*logues against*  
*the Pope's*  
*Primacy.*

Now came forth a Book in *Quarto*, writ against the *Pope* by *Barnardin*  
*Ochin*, a learned *Italian*, and Companion of *Peter Martyr* into this Land:  
Both which were received with much Respect by Archbishop *Cranmer*  
into his Family. This Book was writ in Latin by the Author, but said  
to be translated into *Englisch* by Mr. *John Ponet*, D. D. and never printed  
before in any Language, and was dedicated by the said *Ochin* to King  
EDWARD VI. beginning thus, “Altho’ GOD of his mere Goodness  
“hath given to your Majesty rich Treasures, most large Kingdoms, spe-  
“cial Grace and Love of all People, most high Nobility of Blood, most  
“singular Ornaments both of the Body and of the Mind; partly coming  
“only of GOD, and partly through his Favour obtained also by your  
“Industry: besides other innumerable Graces, which it hath pleased GOD  
“to endue your Highness withal: Yet notwithstanding, all these Things  
“ought not, or cannot be compared to that Benefit which he hath shewed  
“unto you, in giving you in such a dark World and so tender Age, such  
“clear Light of Christ, &c. It was called *A Tragedy, or Dialogue of*  
*the unjust usurped Primacy of the Bishop of Rome, and of all the just Abol-*  
*ishing of the same.* This Book consisted of nine Dialogues. And the  
Parties that spake in each of them were, in the First, *Lucifer* and *Beel-*  
*zebub*. In the Second, *Boniface III.* and Dr. *Sapience* Secretary to the  
Emperor. In the Third, The People of *Rome*, and the Church of *Rome*.  
In the Fourth, The *Pope* and Man’s Judgment, and the People of *Rome*.  
In the Fifth, *Thomas Massuccius*, the Master of his Horse, and *Lepidus*  
the *Pope’s* Chamberlain. In the Sixth, *Lucifer* and *Beelzebub*. In the  
Seventh, Christ, and *Michael* and *Gabriel*, Archangels. In the Eighth,  
King HENRY VIII. and *Papista*, and *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*.  
And in the Ninth, King EDWARD VI. and the Lord Protector. This  
Book was printed at *London* for *Gualter Lynne*, dwelling on *Summer*  
Key by *Billingsgate*.



To which is subjoined another Book, and of the same subject, and *ANNO* printed by the same Stationer, which therefore I conclude came out also *1549.* this Year, Intituled, *The Beginning and End of all Popery, and Popish Kingdoms*. The Epistle is writ by *Gualter Lynn*, the Printer to King *EDWARD VI.* *A Book of Prophecies of the Pope.* "It is said, to be taken out of all Prophecies for more than three hundred years ago, ——— to the Amendment of this "present World. Set forth out of high *Almayn*, by *Gualter Lynne*. It hath a great many Figures and Pictures of the Pope and the Beasts, and sometimes of *Beelzebub*, resembling the Visions in the *Revelation*. Of which thus in the Epistle. "Because it is so secret a Myſtery, that can- "not well be opened without plain Demonſtration, the Author of this "Book hath moſt plainly ſet forth by Figures, the State that this Anti- "chriſt is in, hath been in, or ſhall be in, even to the day of his utter "Deſtruction. He added alſo, that theſe Figures were not of the Au- "thors own Invention, but they were found in Antient Libraries above "300 Years ſince: And that there was at that preſent day remaining "in the Abby of *St. Laurence* in *Luyke*, a Table of great Antiquity, "containing Pourtraiture of like matter. Wherby, he ſaid, it was "maniſeſt, that the Fathers of Antient Time ſaw in the Papacy the "Things that they durſt not utter, either by Word or Writing, but "truſting that the time would come, when Men might be bold to ſpeak "it, They did in the mean time keep it in Painting and Pour- "traiture.

About *September*, came forth an ingenious Book, made by *William Thomas* his *Book of Italy.* *Thomas*, Clark of the Council. It was, *An Hiſtory of Italy*, in *Engliſh*; Treating of the Eſtate of many and divers *Commonwealths*, how they had been, and at that preſent were Governed. Here he gave, firſt, a Deſcription of *Italy*; Then, of the Eſtate of it in general: Then, an Abridgement of the State thereof from the beginning, until the *Roman* Empire was utterly divided. Next, The Deſcription of *Rome*, and the Marvellous Antiquities there. Then, of the preſent Eſtate of *Rome*. An Abridgement of the Lives of the *Roman* Biſhops. The *Venetian* Eſtate, and the Order of their *Commonwealth*. The Deſcription of *Naples*, and the Hiſtory thereof. The Deſcription of *Florence*, and its Eſtate. The Deſcription of *Genoa*, and the Eſtate thereof. The Deſcription of *Milain*, and its Eſtate. Alſo, the Eſtates of *Mantua*, *Ferrara*, *Placentia*, *Parma* and *Urbino*. In writing this, the Author was much aſſiſted from his own Experience and long Travels in thoſe Parts. He Dedicated his Book to the Earl of *Warwic*, Viſcount *Liſle*, Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, Lord Chamberlain, and High Admiral of *Eng- land*. In his Epistle he ſhewed the profit he deſigned by his Book, *viz.* "That ſetting forth in our Mother Tongue the doings of Strangers, and "eſpecially the *Italian* Nation, which ſeemed to flouriſh in Civility, "moſt of all other at this day, his own Countrymen might ſee upon "what little beginnings many great Eſtates have riſen; and how they "that have had the Power to Rule, by uſing their Authorities well and "prudently, have Merited immortal Fame of Honour and Praise; and "uſing Tyranny and Evil Government, have contrariwiſe born eternal "Slander and Shame. Likewise to ſhow, how mutable Fortune is, and "how that which hath been gotten with extreme Pains, unmeaſurable Ex- "pences, and unreaſonable effuſion of Bloud hath been loſt in a moment. " And



ANNO  
1549.

“ And that commonly he that hath conquered most in War, at the best  
“ is yet a loser. And finally, how by Division either among the No-  
“ bility or the Commons, there ensueth utter Destruction of Realms,  
“ and Subversion of *Commonwealths*. Wherunto there is none so great  
“ a Minister as the Alteration of Antient Laws and Customs.

“ These and infinite more such like things, being set forth to the eyes  
“ of Princes, their Hearts would be more enclined with Peace and Justice  
“ to enrich their Subjects, and thereby procure themselves Glory, than  
“ by Murthering of Innocents, Ravishing of honest Wives and Maidens,  
“ Burning, Spoiling and Destruction of Countries, (which are the effects of  
“ War) to make themselves Conquerors of that they cannot long enjoy.  
“ For surely said he, more praise shall the Prince deserve that leaveth his  
“ Realm quiet and wealthy unto his Successors, than he that for the Conquest  
“ of other Countries, impoverisheth and disturbeth his own. He wished  
“ all Noblemen therefore to read his Book, to the end they might therof  
“ take occasion so honorably to spend their Life-time, that after their  
“ Death they might shine in Fame for ever. The reason he assigned of  
“ the Dedication of this his Travail to this great Lord, was for his ex-  
“ cellent Feats of Chivaldry, both by Sea and Land; and being such  
“ an one as he was, able to judge whether his [the Authors] Opinion  
“ were good or not. As his wonderful Knowledge in civil Orders made  
“ him worthy to be no less esteemed excellent in Council, as he had  
“ been tryed a most excellent Captain in the Wars. This Dedication  
“ was Sept. 20.

The Bible.  
printed this  
year.

Now also, came forth the Holy Bible of *Tindals* Translation, Revised  
by *Coverdale*. It bore this Title, *The Bible, that is to say, All the holy  
Scripture In which are contained the Old and New Testament, truly and  
purely translated into English: And now lately with great industry and Di-  
ligence recognized.* Es. I. Hearken O Heavens, and thou Earth give Ear:  
For the Lord speaketh. Imprinted at London by John Day, Dwelling  
at Aldersgate, and William Seres, Dwelling in Peter College. Cum gratia  
& privilegio ad imprimendum solum. xvii. day of Aug. M<sup>o</sup> XLIX. These  
things ensuing, are joyned with the present Volume of the Bible. I. A  
Kalendar with an Almanac. II. A Description and Succession of the Kings  
of *Judab* and *Jerusalem*: declaring, when, and under what Kings every  
Prophet lived, and what notable Things happened in their Times. III. An  
Exhortation to the Study of the Holy Scripture, both of the Old and  
New Testament. IV. A Table to find many of the chief and principal  
Matters contained in the Bible. V. A Supputation of the Years from  
*Adam* to *Christ*, Collected by *Edm. Beck*. VI. A Prologue, shewing the  
Use of the Scripture. VII. The Names of all the Books of the Bible,  
and the Contents of the Chapters of every Book. VIII. A Register, or  
brief Rehearsal of the Names of the most Famous and Notable Persons  
mentioned in the Bible. There be also Prologues to the five Books of  
*Moses*, and before the Prophet *Jonas*, and to every of the four Evange-  
lists, and before every Epistle of the New Testament, and after every  
Chapter of the Book, are added many plain Annotations and Expositi-  
ons of such Places as unto the simple and unlearned seem hard to under-  
stand: Which were done by *Coverdale*.

The



The same Edmund Beck, who was Ordained Deacon by Bishop Ridley, An. 1551. either this Year, or not far from it, Published two Dialogues, written in Latin by the famous Clerk, D. Erasmus of Rotterdam. One called Polyphemus, or the Gospeller; The other, Disposing of Things, and Names Translated into English. Printed at Canterbury, in St. Paul's Churchyard, by John Michel.

ANNO

1549.

Mr. Bale also, this Year, 1549. set forth the *Newyears Gift* of John Leland to King HENRY VIII. Being some Account of his Journey in the search of England's Antiquities: Setting a Dedication before it to King EDWARD VI. And his own Declaration upon it, Paragraph by Paragraph. In his Epistle to the Young King, he excited him, "to the Love of English History: hinting to him the profit that arose "by reading of Antient Stories, (after the necessary search of the Bible) "which that Treatise of Leland, he said, would plenteously declare. "They would teach him what is in each *Commonwealth* to be followed, "and what to be eschewed; What caused a Realm to flourish, and what "diminished the State therof. He took this occasion to reprehend Papists, who dissuaded Christen Princes from the Study of the Scriptures, and Chronicles. Both which sorts of Knowledge he exhorted "the Prince to: But especially to know the Laws of GOD. He shewed "him from Solomon, that the Honor of a King stood not in Strength and "Riches, but in the search of wholesome Doctrin, to divide the Dross "from the Silver, and to follow GOD's holy Commandments. Then he armed the King against some Sayings, that were then bruted abroad, as Maxims for Princes: as "That the Doctrin of CHRIST was the Cause "of the Decay of the *Commonwealth*. Which he shewed was a Saying, "1130 Years ago, when Paulus Orosius was a Writer; against which "Saying the Author wrote seven notable Books, as a Confutation of that "pernicious Error. Yet, said Bale, is that unhappy and devilish Opinion now raised up again from Hell; and brought here into England "by a great number of Papists. Another ordinary Saying, among them "was, that if any Plague or Punishment for Sin happened upon the Nation, then was the Gospel wrongfully abused and noted, and to be the "chief Cause and stirrer up therof, when indeed it was rather their own "Fornication, Bribery, and a thousand evils more. He observed also "to the King, how they would usually say, *It was never good World, "since this new Learning came in, neither are we like to have it, till it "be banished again.* The true Reason of which Speech, he said, "CHRIST shewed, namely, *Every one that worketh wickedness doth "abhor the Light, because they will not their mischiefs thereby to be known.* "For that Light manifesteth to the World their foul and naughty Doings.

Bale publishes  
Leland's  
Newyears  
Gift. Dedi-  
cates it to  
King Edward.

He added, "That these and other detestable Abuses, whose Reformation chiefly belonged to a King, might, as in a clear Miroir, be seen "in Scripture and Chronicles. In them it might be seen, wherof they "arose, and how they might well by good order be Abolished. And "therefore he reckoned, as he said, the continual search of them to "a Christen Governor most necessary.

He proceeded to praise the King, "That in his Princely beginning he "appeared unto his People a very *Josias*, both in his tender Youth and "vertuous Education; and how their special hope was, that in his



A N N O " daily Proceedings he would still persevere in the same : And that the  
 1549. " Likelihoods were very apparent. For by his Commandment had been  
 " taken away the Abominations of the Ungodly : Which was a plain  
 " Token, he said, that the King had directed his noble Heart to the Li-  
 " ving Lord, intending to set up his true Worship ; that being delivered  
 " out of the cruel Hands of their Enemies, they might serve him from  
 " henceforth without Fear all the Days of their Life. That these god-  
 " ly Principles refreshed his Christen Subjects, and so greatly delighted  
 " their obedient Hearts, that the only Remembrance of his Majesty's  
 " Name was to them more pleasant, sweet and delicious, than any other  
 " worldly Pleasures, like as was the Name of the first *Josias* to the Peo-  
 " ple of that Age. Thus by frequent Inculcation of good Counsil, En-  
 " couragement and Commendation, good Men, in Books dedicated to him,  
 " spurred him on in the Courses of good Literature and pure Religion.

Ecclus 49.

Hoper's Decla-  
 ration of the  
 Ten Com-  
 mandments.

In November 1549. *John Hoper* set forth an Exposition of the Deca-  
 logue, (tho' printed as it seems beyond Sea the Year before) Intituled, *A*  
*Declaration of the Ten Holy Commandments of Almighty God, written*  
*Exod. xx. Deut. v. Collected out of the Scripture Canonical.* In Octavo.  
 Before it was a Preface to the Reader, made by the Author ; Wherin he  
 treated concerning the Covenant (which he called the *Alliaunce* and *Con-*  
*federacy*) between G O D and Man, in *Adam* and in *Christ*. Whence I  
 shall excerp some Passages, shewing that Reverend Man's Way of explain-  
 ing certain abstruse and controverted Points in Divinity, somewhat diffe-  
 rent from other Divines. He writ, " That as G O D accounted in *Adam's*  
 " Sin, all Mankind, being in his Loins, worthy Death, so he counted in  
 " *Christ* all to be saved from Death ; as *Adam* declared by the Name of  
 " his Wife, called *Hewa*, the *Mother of the Living*, and not of the  
 " Dead.---And as far extendeth the Vertue and Strength of G O D's Pro-  
 " mise to save Men, as the Rigor and Justice of the Law for Sin to damni-  
 " Men.---And that the Promise of Grace appertaineth to every Sort of  
 " Men in the World, and comprehendeth them all ; howbeit, within  
 " certain Limits and Bounds ; the which if Men neglect or pass over,  
 " they exclude themselves from the Promise in *Christ*. As *Cain* was no  
 " more excluded, till he excluded himself, than *Abel*, *Saul* than *David*,  
 " *Judas* than *Peter*, *Esau* than *Jacob* ; tho' by *Mal. II.* and *Rom. IX.*  
 " it seemeth that the Sentence of G O D was given to save the one, and  
 " to damn the other, before the one loved G O D, or the other hated  
 " G O D. Howbeit these Threatnings of G O D against *Esau*, if he had  
 " not of his wilful Malice excluded himself from the Promise of Grace,  
 " should no more have hindred his Salvation, than G O D's Threatnings  
 " against *Nineveh*, *Jon. i.* Which, notwithstanding that G O D had said  
 " should be destroyed within fourty Days, stood a great Time after, and  
 " did Penance. *Esau* was Circumcised, and presented unto the Church  
 " of G O D by his Father *Isaac*, in all external Ceremonies as well as  
 " *Jacob*. And that his Life and Conversation was not as agreeable un-  
 " to Justice and Equity as *Jacob's*, the Sentence of G O D unto *Rebecca*,  
 " *Gen. 25.* was not in the Fault, but his own Malice. For there is men-  
 " tioned nothing at all in that Place, *Gen. 25.* that *Esau* was disinherited of  
 " eternal Life ; but that he should be inferior unto his Brother *Jacob* in  
 " this World. Which Prophecie was fulfilled in their Posterities, and not  
 in the Persons themselves, &c.

And



And again, "St. Paul, *Rom. ix.* useth this Example of *Jacob* and *Esau* for none other Purpose, but to take away from the *Jews* the Thing that they most put their Trust in, *viz.* the vain Hope they had in the carnal Linage and natural Descent from the Family and Household of *Abraham*; and likewise their false Confidence that they had in the keeping of the Law of *Moses*. Paul's whole Purpose is in that Epistle, to bring Man unto the Knowledge of his Sin, and to shew him how it may be remitted; and with many Testimonies and Examples of Scripture, he proveth Man to be saved only by Mercy, for the Merits of Christ; which is apprehended and received by Faith. And a little after, "It is our Office therefore to see we exclude not our selves from the general Grace promised to all Men. It is not a Christian's Part to attribute his Salvation to his own Freewill with the *Pelagian*, and extenuate Original Sin, nor to make GOD the Author of Evil, or our Damnation, with the *Maniche*: Nor yet to say, GOD hath wrote fatal Laws, as the *Stoics*, and with Necessity of Destiny violently pulleth one by the Hair into Heaven, and thrusteth the other Headlong into Hell. But ascertain thy self by Scripture, what be the Causes of Reprobation, and what of Election. The Cause of Rejection or Damnation is Sin in Man; which will not hear nor receive the Promise of the Gospel; or else, after he hath received it, by accustomed doing of Evil, he falleth either in a Contempt of the Gospel, will not study to live thereafter; or else hateth the Gospel, because it condemneth his ungodly Life, and would there were neither GOD, nor Gospel to punish him for doing of Evil.

ANNO  
1549.

"This Sentence is true, howsoever Men judge of *Predestination*; GOD is not the Cause of Sin, nor would not have Men sin, &c. The Cause of our Election is the Mercy of GOD in Christ. Howbeit, he that will be Partaker of this Election must receive the Promise in Christ by Faith. For therefore we be elected, because afterward we are made the Members of Christ, &c. So we judge of Election by the Event or Success that happeneth in the Life of Man. This was the Sum of the Preface.

His Method propounded in the Declaration of the Commandments, was, I. To shew what this Word, *Law*, or *Commandment* meaneth. II. How the Law should be used. III. To prepare the Reader's Mind, that he may always read and hear these Commandments with Fruit and Commodity. IV. To interpret every Commandment severally, that the Reader may perceive what GOD the Giver of the Law requireth of every Man, that professeth his Name. V. To answer certain Objections that keep Men from the Obedience of GOD's Law.

*Jacobus Omphalius* dedicated a Book to King EDWARD, printed at *Basil*, 1550. but the Dedication bears Date, *Cal. Jul. 1549. Colonia Agrippina*. The Title of the Book was, *De Usurpatione Legum, & eorum Studiis, qui Jurisprudentia Professionem sibi sumunt*. This *Omphalius* was a learned Civilian and Dependent upon *Herman*, the late pious Archbishop and Elector of *Colen*; and who was sent his Agent into *England*.

*Omphalius de  
Usurpatione  
Legum.*

Let me add, lastly, to the rest, that now first came forth the Reformed Order for Ordination, intitled, *The Form and Manner of making and consecrating Archbishops, Bishops, Priests and Deacons*. Where I observe this Difference in the Ordination of Bishops. That the Archbishop laid the Bible upon the Neck of the ordained Bishop, using these Words, Give

The new  
Book of Or-  
dination.



*ANNO* beed to Reading, &c. Whereas now the Book is only delivered to him with those Words. And then the Archbishop put the Pastoral Staff into his Hand, saying, *Be thou to the Flock of Christ a Shepherd*, &c. Which are Words still in Use, but the Ceremony of the Staff laid aside.

The ill State  
of the Realm.

And now to turn back our Eyes, and take a Prospect of this Year, we may perceive the Condition of this Land to have now been very ill, by Reason of the Rebellions, the Imprisonment of the good Duke, and the Courtiers, that sought themselves more than they took care of the Public: Beset with Enemies abroad, and the King young: Idleness and Grudging among the People, who talked high, and were disposed to imagine and invent Novelties, and devised mending this and that: Base Money was fain to go current; for the Nation wanted Money extremely, and Provisions very dear at home, occasioned by the Wars abroad in France, for the keeping of *Bullbign*. Of which Place the Lord *Clynton* was Deputy; as the Lord *John Grey* was of *Newhaven*, and the Lord *Cobham* of *Calais*.

The French  
boast.

The French knew well enough the present Condition of England, and boasted excessively to the Lord *Paget*, and the other English Commissioners, as was shewn before.

Priests com-  
ply outward-  
ly only.

And to the rest of the Calamities of the Nation at this Time we add the Popish Clergy; who were great Underminers of the Gospel. For they outwardly conformed themselves unto the King's Proceedings, unto the English Communion Book, and the King's Injunctions; but inwardly preserved their good Will to their Superstitions. There was one of the Bishops that said, *Laws must be obeyed, and civil Ordinances I will follow; but my Heart in Religion is free to think as I will.* And the State thought convenient now to wink at them and their Doings, and to continue them still in their Places, lest they should remain void for want of better to supply their Rooms. But many that favoured the Gospel were for putting them out, as many as the Visitors should find Negligent and Faulty in their Duties, and to ordain sober Laymen to succeed into their Livings. "Out with them, said *Latimer* to the King: I require it in God's Behalf. Make them *Quondams*, all the Pack of them. He then told the King, that his Majesty had divers of his Chaplains well learned Men, and of good Knowledge to put in their Rooms. And in case they were not enough to fill all the Vacancies, and that neither his Chaplains, nor the Protector's sufficed, to furnish their Places, he advised, that since there were a great Sight of Laymen well learned in the Scripture, and of a vertuous and godly Conversation, better learned than a great many of the Clergy, them he would have to be placed in the Church. And he said he knew a great Number, that were, and would be glad, he dared to say, to minister the Function, if called. He told the King, he moved it to him in Conscience. Let them, said he, be called to it orderly. Let them have Institution; and give them the Name of the Clergy. But this belongs rather to the Year before.

*Latimer's* se-  
cond Sermon  
before the  
King.

Laymen to  
be ordainrd  
Ministers.

An ignorant  
Preacher at  
*Paul's Cross*,  
called *Sir*  
*Stephen*.  
*Stow's* Survey.

And on the other Hand, there were some great Pretenders to the Gospel, whose Mixture of Zeal and Ignorance did true Religion no Service at all: Which two Things would betray themselves in their public Sermons, even at *Paul's Cross*. For what ever Care was taken, that that Place should be supplied with able Men, yet the Realm was not yet so well furnished with good Preachers, but that sometimes weak Men got

Turns



Turns there. There was one more bold and hot than wife and learned, *ANNO*  
 named Sir Stephen, Curate at Creechurche, London, came up at the Cross *1549*  
 this Year; Who in his Sermon fell foul upon the Name of that Parish  
 Church dedicated to St. Andrew, because it was Surnamed *Undershaft*.  
 So called, by reason of a vast long Shaft or Pole that formerly used to  
 be erected on *May Days* in the Street before the South Door of that  
 Church, which reached higher than the Steeple. And so St. Andrew  
 was *Under the Shaft*. But the Preacher perhaps ignorant of this Cause of  
 St. Andrews being thus called, cryed out, that this Shaft was made an  
 Idol of, as tho' it were preferred before St. Andrew himself. Hence he  
 proceeded to advise, that the Names of Churches should be altered. And  
 further, that the Names of the Days of the Week might be changed.  
 And that there might be a thorow Reformation indeed, he was for having  
 the *Fifth Days* kept any Days but *Fridays* and *Saturdays*; and the *Lent*  
 any Time in the Year, save only between *Shrove-tide* and *Easter*. To  
 give some further Account of this Reformer; He would often forsake his  
 Pulpit, and go into the Churchyard, and preach out of an high Elme  
 that grew there. And then entring the Church to perform the rest of  
 Service, as was appointed in the *English Communion Book*, he would  
 not go to the Altar, where it was ever said, but would go and sing it up-  
 on a certain Tomb of the Dead that stood toward the North. And so we  
 are told by one that lived at that Time, and neer the Place.

## CHAP. XXV.

### *The good Service of learned Foreigners in the Business of Religion. Disputations in the Universities about Religion.*

BUT it forwarded Religion not a little, the Help that divers very *Divers learn-*  
 learned and godly Foreigners, now in the Realm, brought by their *ed Foreigners*  
 Readings and Studies. For many leading Professors and Defenders of *in England.*  
 true Religion were cherished here, chiefly by Cranmer, Archbishop of  
 Canterbury, who, as he encouraged them to come over, so was their  
 great Patron and Harbourer. The Chief of these were Peter Martyr,  
 Peter Alexander, Bernardin Ochin, Immanuel Tremellius, Italians; Bucer  
 and Fagius, Germans. All whom he made serviceable, by the Direction  
 of their Learnings, some Way or other to the Furtherance of Religion.

And first, as for Alexander he was much about the Archbishop, and *Peter Alex-*  
 his clear Head, and great Industry withal, made him dear unto him. He *ander.*  
 was entertained in his Family from the Year 1547. and so forward for  
 some Years, until he became a Prebendary of Canterbury, and had also  
 the Living of *Albhallows Lombardstreet* conferred upon him by the said  
 Archbishop. By whose Advice and Exhortation he diligently read over  
 the most antient Fathers, and faithfully collected thence Plenty of proper  
 Sentences, expressive of their Sense concerning the various Doctrins of  
 Religion;



**A N N O** Religion; and particularly such as wherein consisted the modern Controversies. One *Folio* Volume of these Collections, taken out of *Dionysius, Ignatius, Irenæus, Tertullian* and *Cyprian*, he presented this Year to the Archbishop. Which he took in very good Part at his Hands, approving and commending his Diligence therein, as tending to the Profit of the Church, and the Benefit of the Studious. Which encouraged the said *Peter* to go on in the same Method with the Ecclesiastical Writers, next in Order of Time to them. So that by *April 1550.* he presented the Archbishop with another great *Folio* of Notes extracted out of the Works of *Origen, Athanasius, and Epiphanius*: before which he set an Epistle Dedicatory to the same, dated from *Lambeth*; which hath this Conclusion, *Accipe igitur, Reverendissime Præsul, nostri Originis Adamantii, Athanasii & Epiphaniæ sincera Theologia Compendium; & hunc nostrum quencunque Laborem aquì bonique consule, nostrumque conatum grato animo persequere.* Lambethi 28. Aprilis, 1550.

E. MSS. Rev.  
Patr. D. Joh.  
Ep. Elien.

T. C. deditissimus Petrus Alexander.

Which Volume is among the rare Collection of MSS. belonging to the Right Reverend Dr. *More*, late Bishop of *Ely*.

Becomes Minister of the French Church at Strasburgh.

If any would know what became of this Man afterwards: Being married, in the Beginning of Queen *MARY*'s hard Times he was unwillingly divorced from his Wife by certain of that Queen's Commissioners, and soon after fled over to *Strasburgh*. Of whom *Peter Martyr* in a Letter to *Utenbovius*, dated from *Strasburgh*, *June* the 7th 1556. writ, that he succeeded *Garnerius* in the French Church there, and boldly taught the pure Doctrine of the Sacrament, which *Martyr* and others of his Mind professed.

Fagius dies at Cambridge.

We have seen how the Archbishop employed and rewarded him. All the rest had their Employments in order to the Promoting of Truth and Learning, some in the Church, others in the Universities. *Ochin* wrote and published some Books. The two learned Germans were this Year at *Cambridge*, *Bucer*, the King's Reader of Divinity, and *Fagius*. But *Fagius* died there but a few Weeks after his Coming; Who being appointed the King's Reader of *Hebrew*, by his deep Skill and Ability therein, might have vastly improved the Students of Divinity there in the Knowledge of the Sacred Writings of the Old Testament; which are so necessary for the Understanding of the New: A Sort of Learning then hardly known in *England*.

Tremellius succeeds him.

But upon his Death *Tremellius* succeeded him in the same Place. He fled from *Italy* when *Peter Martyr* his Countryman did, and was one of those the Archbishop gave Lodging and Board unto. His Father being a Jew, he was brought up in Jewish Learning, and had attained to great Perfection in it. *Tremellius* now solicited at the Court, (I suppose, for his Patent or Salary;) *Cecyl* saw him, and took particular friendly Notice of him, and undertook the Care of his Business. He was at this Time mightily intent upon his Study, employed therein from Morning till Night, to prepare for his Readings. And therefore lest his Affairs might not be dispatched by his not attending them himself, he wrote a Letter to *Cecyl* to remember them, in these Words:

Et si



*Etsi non dubitem, Clarissime Domine, ac Patrone humanissime, te semper A N N O  
gravissimis Negotiis occupari ac pæne obrui, confusus nihilominus Charitati tuae, quia totum te perpetuo Fidelibus Christi impendis, ac singulari tuae  
erga me Benevolentiae, quam nuper mihi in Aula demonstrasti, hoc mihi Tremellius to  
nunc sumpsi, ut te rogarem, ne mei ob alia Negotia curam remittas. Quin the Secre-  
potius, quo me major premit Necessitas, quoque minus valeo Peregrinus, a MSS. penes me.  
mane ad Vesperem, Museo inclusis, mea in Aula curare, eo te magis te-  
neat Memoria mei. Dominus, qui omnia videt, tibi cumulatissime repledet.  
Quem oro, ut diutissime tuam Humanitatem cum tota Familia felicissime  
conservet.*

*Tuae Humanitati addictissimus Famulus*

*Clarissimo Domino Dno. Siclio  
Serenissimi Regis Angliae  
Secretario & Patrono meo  
humanissimo. in Aula,*

*Immanuel Tremellius.*

*Rafe Cavelarius, or Cavalier, another Stranger, Native of France (to Cavelarius  
lay these Matters together) in the Year 1552. (if not before) did not so reads Hebrew  
much succeed, as assist Tremellius in reading Hebrew in that University. in Cambridge.  
For which he was gratified by the State, in a Grant to be Free Denizon,  
and in the same Patent to enjoy the Advowson of a Prebend in Canterbury, Warr. Book.  
in Consideration of reading the Hebrew Lecture freely in Camaridge.  
This was dated in August, 1552.*

*In October the same Year, I find a Grant to the said Tremellius, under A Prebend to  
the Name of John Emanuel Tremellio, Professor of the Hebrew Tongue, Tremellius.  
of the Prebend of Carlisle, which William Perry deceased, late had. And Warr. Book.  
the same Month another Grant of a Free Denizenship for Emanuel Italo  
[as Tremellius is there stiled] and Elizabeth, his Wife.*

*The Italian Stranger, Peter Martyr, was designed to read Divinity in Peter Martyr  
Oxford: Whither he repaired from the Archbishop's, fortified by the at Oxon.  
King's Authority. But after a little Time very rudely treated and op-  
posed there by a Popish Party.*

*Yet notwithstanding these Oppositions and Discouragements of Peter Martyr's Ser-  
Martyr, the King's learned Professor here at Oxford, he steddily went on mon of Fa-  
in the Business committed to his Trust. And besides his public Lectures, sting.  
he sometimes preached at St. Maries, and had his private Lectures, and  
his private Sermons in Italian at his House. Whereunto resorted many  
Auditors, and Harding one of the Chief, however he revolted in Queen  
MARY's Days. On one Aswednesday he preached a public and season- Vic. Juell.  
able Sermon concerning Fasting. Wherin he first defined a Fast. Then  
divided it into his Parts; Distinguished all the kinds of Fasting; Shewed  
the Necessity of it; Unfolded the Causes, Taught the Effects and Bene-  
fits of it. And then excited the Auditors most earnestly " to the keeping  
" a true Christian Fast; And accused and blamed in many Respects the  
" Pharisaical and Papistical Fasting. Wherby God was but superstiti-  
" ously worshipped, a Snare cast upon the Consciences of the Weak, and  
" Death, Damnation and the Torments of Hell denounced, if any did  
" not observe their frigid and pitiful Constitutions; And if without their  
" Leave and Licence any ate Flesh and Milk-meats, God's clean Crea-  
" tures, however moderately they did it, and soberly with Thanksgiving,  
" and Sanctification of God's Word according to the Apostles Rule.  
" Then he prayed and beseeched them to stand fast in the Liberty to  
" which*



ANNO  
1549.

“ which Christ had called them ; and that none should judge others in  
“ Meats and Drinks ; that being redeemed from the weak and beggerly Ele-  
“ ments of the World, they became not the Servants of Men. And then in a  
“ sad Voice he cried out, *Parcite Sanguini Christi, Parcite Animabus*  
“ *Vestris*, i. e. O! Spare the Blood of Christ, spare your own Souls. And  
so came off with great Applause and Admiration of many, and among  
the rest of Dr. Henry Cole of New College, that was almost in an Extasy  
at the Hearing : Yet one of the Starters aside afterwards.

Parkhurst, a  
Friend of  
Martyr.

Parkhurst, a Fellow of Merton, and an earnest Professor of the Gospel,  
(afterwards Bishop of Norwich) was one of Martyr's great Friends and  
Acquaintance, and whom Parkhurst loved, as his Father. He, being re-  
moved from the University to the rich Rectory of Cleve in Gloucestershire,  
often invited him to come to his House to refresh himself : But Martyr  
could never find Time to do it. There was a certain Liquor made of  
rough Pears, called Perry, used much in the Counties of Gloucester and  
Worcester, which the Reverend Man loved to drink when he was hot or  
feaverish. This his Friend Parkhurst used to supply him with.

Martyr and  
Bucer how  
they differed  
in the Sacra-  
ment.

Upon a Challenge rudely given this Professor, he entered the public  
Lifts in St. Maries. The Account whereof let other Histories relate.  
But Martyr, June 15. wrote to Bucer concerning this his public Disputa-  
tion. Bucer five Days after wrote again to him a Letter in Answer, dated  
from Canterbury, where he was with the Archbishop, I suppose. By  
which Letter may be judged, that there was some Difference between  
Martyr's and Bucer's Opinion in the Matter of the Eucharist ; and what  
that Difference was. For Martyr gave his Questions thus :

I. In Sacramento Eucharistiae non est Panis & Vini Transsubstantiatio  
in Corpus & Sanguinem Christi.

II. Corpus & Sanguis Christi non est carnaliter aut corporaliter in Pane  
& Vino ; nec, ut alii dicunt, sub speciebus Panis & Vini.

III. Corpus & Sanguis Christi uniantur Pani & Vino Sacramentaliter.

Now Bucer in his Letter signified that he could have been glad Martyr  
had proposed his second Question thus,

*Corpus Christi non continetur localiter in Pane & Vino, nec iis rebus  
affixum aut adjunctum est ulla mundi ratione.*

And to the Third, Bucer wisht had been added,

*Ita ut credentibus Christus hic vere exhibeatur ; Fide tamen, nullo vel  
sensu, vel ratione hujus Seculi, intuendus.*

A Disputati-  
on in Christ's  
Church, Oxon.

And as thus in the public Schools, so privately in the Colleges, Dispu-  
tations were held. This same Year 1549. at Christ's Church happened a  
solemn Disputation concerning Purgatory, and Praying for the Dead.  
Then Chrysostom was produced, and some other Fathers and learned Wri-  
ters, to assert, that this Doctrine was upheld by the Authority of the A-  
postles ; and that it ought therefore to be sacred to pious Men, and piously  
believed and observed by all Christians. But Dr. Cox, Dean of that  
College and Church, replied, *Haud temerè subscribendum est iis, &c. i. e.*  
“ That we were not too hastily to subscribe to such Things which even  
“ the learnedest and most antient Authors deliver to us, to have proceeded  
“ from the Apostles : Nor therefore to believe Purgatory, because the A-  
“ postles taught, that we should pray for the Souls of the Dead. And  
“ he proved it thus ; The Apostles, said he, delivered that the Souls of  
“ the Dead might be helped by our Prayers, and were to be helped.

“ Ther-

Ex libr. De  
Calib. per  
Ric. Smith :  
Lut. Paris.  
1550. p. 45.



" Therefore there is a Purgatory, or we must believe, that the Prayers ANNO  
 " of the Living are profitable unto the Dead. The Conclusion is weak, 1549.  
 " since the Apostles, added *Cox*, enjoined the *Gentiles* to abstain from  
 " Blood, and strangled, as their Acts do shew. And yet that Decree of  
 " theirs doth not bind us, who are *Gentiles*, to abstain from these. This  
 is produced as *Cox*'s Argument, as it is crudely, and I suppose, disadvan-  
 tagiously and falsely set down by Dr. *Richard Smith*, the fickle Papist.  
 Wherat he cries out, O! that Man's blind Mind, who yet would be ac-  
 counted an Asserter of true Doctrin, and a Vindicator of Godliness. But  
 how unworthy is he to be the chief of that University? For he was the  
 Chancellor there.

*Bucer* also this Year took his Share of Responding in a public Disputa- Bucer disputes  
 tion in *Cambridge*, in Behalf of the Truth, as *Peter Martyr* had don at publicly at  
*Oxford*. His Questions were, concerning the Sufficiency of the Holy Scri- Cambridge.  
 ptures, Of the Fallibility of Churches, and of Justification by Faith.  
 But *Tong*, one of *Bucer*'s Opponents, drew out the Matter to a greater  
 Length; and a particular Dispute was instituted between them afterwards,  
 by a kind of Challenge on *Tong*'s Side, as *Smith* of *Oxford* had don  
 with *Peter Martyr*.

The Controversy between *Bucer* and *Tong* was thus. One of *Bucer*'s The Contro-  
 Questions was, That the good Works which any seem to do before Justi- versy be-  
 cation have the Nature of Sin. Hereat *Tong* took great Offence, and com- tween Bucer  
 plained to the Senate of the University against him, saying, that *Bucer* and Tong.  
 was in a grievous Error. But in *Bucer*'s Presence *Tong* spake not so much, Buceri Scrip.  
 but more mildly after this Sort, that he, for his Part agreed not with Anglic.  
*Bucer*, because the Scripture and Fathers spake otherwise. But *Bucer* on  
 the other hand said, That he confessed and believed what the King's  
 Homilies taught of good Works. The Issue was, that *Tong* entred the  
 Lists of Disputation with the Reverend Man against his Tenent. When  
 the Disputation was over, *Tong* and his Party laboured to make as bad  
 Representations of *Bucer* as they could, to run the Stranger down. Both  
 of them penned their Disputations. But *Tong*'s Paper, as *Bucer* affirmed,  
 contained many Falsties; and when *Bucer* desired to have it, it was de-  
 nied him. Wheras he offered his to all Men to read and examine. The  
 truth is, he was in some Concern and Fear, that Misreports might be  
 carried to the Court and elsewhere to his Disadvantage. Therefore he  
 sent a Copy of his Disputation to *Cheke* to communicate to *Ridley*, now  
 Bishop of *London*: And in *August*, 1550. wrot to Mr. *Grindal*, Presi-  
 dent of *Pembroke Hall*, and Chaplain to the Bishop of *London*, " Desiring  
 " him to acquaint the Bishop diligently with the Truth of the Case, as  
 " he had wrot it, in the Controversy between him and *Tong*; and having  
 " read himself what he [*Bucer*] had writ, to convey it safely to his Lord-  
 " ship. He appealed to several his gravest Auditors, and namely Dr.  
 " *Parker*, Dr. *Sands*; (who afterwards were both of them Bishops) Men  
 " that would deal faithfully [in their Reports of his Disputation,] in like  
 " Manner Dr. *Bushe*, the Vice-chancellor. He applied himself to him,  
 " [*Grindal*] who was, he said, a chief Member of Christ, and his Col-  
 " league in the most Sacred Office of ministring the Word of GOD: En-  
 " treating him to write to the Bishop of *London* in his Matter, being  
 " Visitor of the University, a Doctor, a Divine, and one of their College;  
 " and to obtain of him his Advice, what he [*Bucer*] should do: Telling  
 Vol. II. E c Grindal,



A N N O

1549.

“Grindal, that he feared he might be misrepresented by the Papists. For, he said, they did with mervailous Art strive to derogate from his Ministry, whersoever they could do it. And do it they could, said he, with not a few, both Gentlemen and others. *Tong* and his Party could not but acknowledge, that they were pressed hard with the King's Homilies; and so in Effect, they confessed, they made for *Bucer* against them. And yet these very Homilies they had subscribed to. Wherat the pious Man cried out, *O Hominum Religionem! O incogitantes divini Judicii Animos! O the Religion of these Men! O Minds little mindful of GOD's Judgment!* that will severely light upon such as lye and dissemble with him.

Disputation  
at Cambridge  
before the  
Visitors.

N. Battely.

Besides these Disputations of *Bucer*, the King's Commissioners being at this University in a Visitation, had the Matter of *Transubstantiation* largely discussed there before them by divers learned Men on both sides. And after all, it was learnedly determined by *Ridley*, Bishop of *Rocheſter*, one of the Visitors. *Alban Langdale* was one of the Disputants in Favour of the *Papiſt* Opinion; who, for his Zeal became Archdeacon of *Chicheſter* under Queen *Mary*. This Man composed a pretended Confutation of Bishop *Ridley*'s Determination; and printed it at *Paris*. The *Privilegium Regium* to authorize the Printing of it, was dated the VII. of the *Ides* (that is the seventh Day) of *February* 1553. But it was not printed till three Years after, when *Langdale* was secure that *Ridley* could make no Reply. His Method was, that first *Ridley*'s Determination was set down, and then *Langdale*'s Confutation followed. The Epistle Dedicatory was to Sir *Anthony Brown*, wherein he pretended to give a particular Account of the menaging of this Dispute. But *Pilkington*, then of *St. John's*, who was another of these Disputants (afterwards Bishop of *Durham*) in a printed Book of his, shewed, How *Ridley*'s Determination at that Time gave great Satisfaction to the Students. Where giving Account of this Matter, he writes, “That Dr. *Ridley*, Bishop of *Rocheſter* came in Visitation to *Cambridge*; and because the Doctrin of the Sacrament seemed then strange to many, he propounded this Proposition at that Time to the whole University to dispute upon, *That it could not be proved by any antient Writer Greek or Latin, which lived a thousand Years since, or within five Hundred Years after Christ, that the Substance of the Bread was changed in the Sacrament to the Substance of Christ's Body.* Disputation being ended, the Bishop made all Things so clear in his Determination, that they were so convinced, that some of them would have turned Archbishop *Cranmer*'s Book of that Subject into *Latin*, &c.

The King's  
Letters, for  
Use of the  
Common  
Prayer.

Registr. Thirl.

The Use of the Common Prayer in *English*, lately enacted by Parliament, was twice this Year 1549. pressed by special Letters of the King and his Council, upon the Governors of the Church; to see it duely observed in all their Churches. For it was not performed so universally, nor regularly, as it should have been. In the Month of *July* this Command was issued from the King, then at his Manour of *Richmond*, to *Thirleby* Bishop of *Westminster*. Importing, “That after great and serious Debating and long Conference of fundry the Bishops, and other grave and well learned Men in the Holy Scriptures, one uniform Order for Common Prayers and Administration of the Sacraments, had been, and was most godly set forth, not only by the common Agreement



“ment and full Assent of his Nobility and Commons in the late Parliament; *ANNO*  
 “but also by the like Assent of the Bishops in the same Parliament; and *1549.*  
 “by all other Learned Men of this Realm in their Synods and Convo-  
 “cations Provincial: Like as it was much to his Comfort to understand  
 “the godly Travail then diligently and willingly taken, for the true  
 “Opening of things mentioned in the said Book; wherby the true Ser-  
 “vice and Honour of Almighty GOD, the right Administration of the  
 “Sacraments, being well and truly set forth according to the Scriptures,  
 “and Use of the Primitive Church; much Idolatry and vain Superstition  
 “was taken away: So it was no small Occasion of Sorrow to him to  
 “understand by the complaints and Informations of many; that Our  
 “said Book, so much travailed for, and so sincerely set forth, &c. re-  
 “mained in many Places of his Realm, either not known at all, or not  
 “used; or at least very seldom, and in irreverent Sort. As the People  
 “in many Places either had heard nothing, or if they heard, they nei-  
 “ther understood, or had that Spiritual Delectation in the same, as to  
 “good Christians appertained.

And then the King proceeded to lay the Fault of all this upon them,  
 the Bishops and Priests, or some of them. And then, “That consider-  
 “ing that by that and such like Occasions his loving Subjects remained  
 “in their old Blindness and superstitious Errors; and in some Places in  
 “an irreligious Forgetfulness of GOD; wherby his Wrath might be  
 “provoked against him and them: and remembring withal, that among  
 “other Cures committed to his Princely Charge, he thought this the  
 “greatest to see his Glory and true Service of him maintained and ex-  
 “tolled; By whose Clemency he acknowledged himself to have all that  
 “he had: That he could not therefore, but by the Consent and Advice  
 “of his Uncle, *Edward*, Duke of *Somerset*, Governor of his Person,  
 “and Protector of his Realms, &c. and the rest of his Privy Council, ad-  
 “monish him [the Bishop] of the Premises: Wherin, as it had been their  
 “Offices to have used an earnest Diligence, and to have reformed the same in  
 “all Places within his Diocess, as the Case required; so had he [the  
 “King] thought good to pray and require him; and nevertheless  
 “straightly to charge and command him, that from henceforth he should  
 “have an earnest and special Regard to the Redoube of these Things: So  
 “as the Curats might do their Duty oftener, and in more reverend Sort;  
 “and the People be occasioned by the good Advices and Examples of  
 “them, their Chancellors, Archdeacons, and other inferior Ministers, to  
 “come with oftener and more Devotion to their said Common Prayer;  
 “to give Thanks to GOD, and be Partakers of the most Holy Commu-  
 “nion. Wherin, shewing themselves diligent, and giving good Example  
 “in their own Persons, they should both discharge their Duties to the  
 “Great Pastor, (to whom we must all have to Account,) and also do  
 “him [the King] good Service.

“And of the other side, if he should hereafter, these his Letters and  
 “Commandments notwithstanding, have eftsones Complaint, and find  
 “like Faults in his Diocess, he should have just Cause to impute therof,  
 “and of all that should ensue therof, unto him: and consequently be  
 “occasioned therby to see otherwise to the Redress of these Things:  
 “Wherof We would be sorry. And therefore We do eftsones charge and  
 “command you, upon your Allegiance, to look well upon your Duty



ANNO " herein, as ye tender Our Pleasure. Yeven under our Signet at our  
1549. " Manour at *Richmond*, the 23<sup>d</sup> of *July*, the 3<sup>d</sup> Year of our Reign.

This Letter was directed, " To Right Reverend Father in G O D, our  
" Right Trusty and Welbeloved, The Bishop of *Westminster*. Mr. Fox  
in his *Martyrology* supposed this Letter was writ only to Bishop *Boner*,  
reprimanding him for his Negligence; but meeting with it in the Re-  
gister of another Bishop, I conclude it was a common Letter to them all.  
In the same Register it appears, how obedient he was to the King's said  
Will and Pleasure.

For accordingly he executed the said Letters to his Brother, the Arch-  
deacon of *Middlesex*, and to his Official, &c. Certifying them of the said  
Letters, and the Import of them: " And that he was right well willing and  
" desiring, that the said Letters of the King should in all Points be duely ex-  
" ecuted, according to the Tenor and Import of the same;--Therefore charged  
" him diligently, considering the Effect and Words of the same Letters, that  
" from henceforth, withal Diligence, Wisdom and Dexterity, to travaill  
" earnestly as well in his own Person, for and concerning the due ob-  
" serving and accomplishing of the said Letters; as also with like Dili-  
" gence, Wisdom and Dexterity to monish and command all Persons,  
" Vicars, Curats, Churchwardens, to observe and accomplish the same  
" from Time to Time. And charging them to make Certificate therein  
" to him, or his Chancellor; and also of the Persons, or Names of such  
" as henceforth should be found negligent in doing their Duties in the  
" Premises. Given at his House at *Henden*, the 28. of *July*, 1549.

The said Bishop of *Westminster* also appointed *George Cragges* his Appa-  
rator; " That whereas he, the Bishop, had received the King's Letters  
" concerning the due Observation and uniform Order of Common Prayer,  
" and Ministration of the Sacraments, now of late most godly set forth:  
" and desiring the said Letters should in all Things be executed: Ther-  
" fore to monish and command all Persons and Vicars and Churchwardens,  
" to appear personally before him, or his Chancellor, or his Deputy, in  
" the Cathedral Church of *St. Peters Westminster*, and in the Consistory  
" Place there, on the first of *August* next; to see and hear the Contents  
" and Purposes of the said Letter; to be further opened, and effectually  
" declared unto them. And further to do and receive, for the due Ac-  
" complishing and observing of the same. Thus did Bishop *Thirleby* go  
along with the Reformation in King *EDWARD's* Reign.

Again five Months after, in the Month of *December* the King sent his  
Letters to this Bishop, as well as to the rest; urging again the strict Ob-  
servation of the Common Prayer. And that upon a particular Occasion.  
The Troubles that now the good Duke of *Somerset*, the Protector fell in-  
to, gave great Hopes to the *Papishly* affected Subjects, that the old Mass  
would come into Use again, and the Common Prayer be cast off; as de-  
pending chiefly (as they supposed) upon the Authority and Sway of the  
Protector, the main ruling Cause of bringing it into the Church. Therefore  
the King in his Letter thought fit to take Notice of it: Namely, " How  
" some Persons, upon the Apprehension of the Duke, had noised and bruited  
" abroad, that they should have again their old *Latin* Service, their con-  
" jured Bread and Water, with such like vain and superstitious Ceremonies:  
" As tho' the Setting forth of the latter Book of Common Prayer had  
" been the only Act of the forenamed Duke:

" Therefore

The Bishop's  
Order to his  
Archdeacon  
upon the  
King's Letters.

His Order to  
his Appari-  
tor.  
*Regist. Thirleby.*

The King a-  
gain to the  
Bishops for  
the Use of  
the Common  
Prayer.



" Therefore by the Advice of the Body and State of his Privy Council, *A N N O*  
 " not only considering the said Book to be his own Act, and the Act of *1549.*  
 " the whole State of the Realm; but also the same to be grounded upon  
 " Holy Scripture, according to the Order of the Primitive Church, and  
 " tending much to the Edifying of his Subjects; To put away all such  
 " vain Expectation of having the publick Service, &c. in the *Latin*  
 " Tongue, which were a Preferring of Ignorance to Knowledge, and  
 " Darknes to Light, &c. He [the King] thought good to require him  
 " [the Bishop] and nevertheless to charge him, immediately upon the Re-  
 " ceipt hereof, to command the Dean and Prebendaries of his Cathedral  
 " Church, and the Parson, Vicar and Curat, and Churchwarden of every  
 " Parish, to deliver to him, or his Deputy, all Antiphoners, Missals,  
 " Grails, Processionals, Manuals, &c. after the Use of *Sarum, Lincoln,*  
 " *Tork, Bangor, Hereford*; and all other Books of Service; the Keeping  
 " whereof should be a Let to the Usage of the Book of Common Prayer;  
 " And those Books to deface and abolish: that they never after might  
 " serve to any such Use, as they were at first provided; and be at any  
 " Time a Let to the godly uniform Order. And that if he [the Bishop]  
 " should find any Person stubborn and disobedient in not bringing in the  
 " said Books, to commit them to Ward, — unto such Time as he should  
 " have certified him [the King] of his Misbehaviour. He commanded  
 " further, that Search should be made from Time to Time, whether any  
 " such Books were withdrawn or hid, contrary to the Tenor of these  
 " Letters.

" And whereas divers froward and obstinate Persons had refused to pay  
 " for the finding of Bread and Wine for the Holy Communion; by Reason  
 " whereof the Holy Communion was many Times omitted upon the *Sun-*  
 " *day*; these Letters willed and commanded him, the Bishop, to convent  
 " such obstinate Persons before him; and them to admonish to keep the  
 " Order prescribed: And, that if any refused, to punish them by Suspen-  
 " sion, Excommunication, or other Censures of the Church. And not  
 " to fail thus to do, as he would avoid his [the King's] Displeasure. Yeven  
 " under our Signet at our Palace of *Westminster*, the third Year of our  
 " Reign. It was signed by *Thomas*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *R. Rich*,  
 " Lord Chancellor, and four others.

These Letters I have shortned, because I find there is a Copy of them  
 taken out of another Register, and entred into the History of the Refor-  
 mation.

Hist. Ref. Vol.  
 II. Coll. p.  
 191.

Here again, the Bishop of *Westminster*, to whom these Letters were  
 given, accordingly duely executed them by his Letter to his Archdea-  
 con of *Middlesex*, *Richard Eden*. And further commanded all his Cler-  
 gy to meet him or his Chancellor, at the Cathedral Church of *St. Peter*,  
 to receive his Commandment in that Behalf. Dated the 28th of Decemb.

The Bishop's  
 Orders here-  
 upon.

1549.

The Conclusion of the Registry of this Bishop is, "*Notandum est*, the  
 " first Day of *April*, 1550. and the Fourth of the King, the Episcopal See  
 " of *Westminster* was dissolved; and restored, and united to the See of  
 " *London*.

Bishopric of  
*Westminster*  
 dissolved.



A N N O

1550.

## C H A P. XXVI.

*Order for Sermons. Joan of Kent promotes Arianism. The English Communion Book reformed.*

Sermons appointed at Court.

**I**N the Month of *April*, 1550. it was ordered, that whosoever should have Ecclesiastical Benefices granted them by the King, should preach before him in, or out of *Lent*: And that every *Sunday* there should be a Sermon made at Court.

Joan of Kent's Condemnation;

Counc. Book.

*Arianism* now shewed it self so openly, and was in such Danger of spreading farther, that it was thought necessary to suppress it by using more rugged Methods than seemed agreeable to the merciful Principles of the Professors of the Gospel. One *Joan Bocher* or *Knel*, commonly called *Joan of Kent*, being condemned for this Herefy the latter End of the last Year, a Warrant dated *April 27.* was issued by Order of Council to the Lord Chancellor, to make out a Writ to the Sheriff of *London* for her Execution, [to be burned] for certain detestable Opinions of Herefy. These are the Words of the Council Book. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* was not then present at the Council Board, the Bishop of *Ely* was. After her Condemnation she was kept a great while, in hope to reclaim her. *April 30.* the Bishops of *London* and *Ely* were with her to persuade her, but she withstood them. And even at her Execution which was *May 2.* she reviled him that then preached, (who was *Dr. Scory*) as the King writes in his Journal.

And Execution.

Some Account of this Woman.

Ward Word p. 16.

If any be minded to hear more of this Woman, he may be informed by *Parsons*, that she was at first a great Disperser of *Tindal's* New Testaments, translated by him into *English*, and printed at *Colen*, and was a great Reader of Scripture herself. Which Books she also dispersed in the Court, and so became known to certain Women of Quality, and was more particularly acquainted with *Mrs. Anne Ascue*. She used for the more Secresy to tie the Books in Strings under her Apparel, and so pass with them into the Court. The said Author writes, that she was openly reported to have been dishonest of her Body with base Fellows. Which I charitably suppose might be but a Calumny, too common with *Parsons*.

Her Words to her Judges.

When she was condemned to die for her Denyal of Christ's taking Flesh of the Blessed Virgin, she said to the Judges, "It is a goodly Matter to consider your Ignorance. It was not long ago since you burned *Anne Ascue* for a Piece of Bread: and yet came yourselves soon after to believe and profess the same Doctrin for which you burned her. And now forsooth you will needs burn me for a Piece of Flesh, and in the End you will come to believe this also, when you have read the Scriptures and understand them. When she came to die in *Smithfield*, and *Dr. Scory* endeavoured to convert her, she scoffed at him, and said, he lyed like a Rogue, and bad him Go, read the Scriptures.

Putto does Penance.

The Day after this Woman's Condemnation, was one *Putto*, a Tanner of *Colchester*, brought before the King's Commissioners. He was either



ther of her Opinion, or an *Anabaptist*. For these Commissioners were appointed to sit upon Enquiry after these Sectaries chiefly. But *Putto* 1550. recanted; and bare a Faggot at *Paul's Cross*, and after that at *Colchester*.

For some Remembrance of the Book of Public and Common Prayer, which about this Time underwent a diligent Inspection and Reformation by some of the Bishops, take these short Hints of it. In the Kalendar for the Lessons were no proper Lessons for *Sundays* and Holydays, but only proper Psalms for the four great Festivals, *viz.* *Christmas*, *Easter*, *Ascension* and *Whitsunday*. The Book began with the Lord's Prayer, ushered in with this Rubric, "The Priest being in the Quire, shall begin with a loud Voice the Lord's Prayer, or the *Pater noster*. The *Confession* and *Absolution* were first added in the revised Edition; As the *German Protestant Churches* had their *Confession* and *Absolution*. At the End of the former Book were inserted several Rules with this Title, "Certain Notes for the more plain Explication and decent Ministration of Things contained in this Book. One of these Rules and Notes is this, "If there be a Sermon, or for other great Cause, the Curate by his Discretion may leave out the Litany, *Gloria in Excelsis*, the Creed, *Thomily*, and the Exhortation to the Communion. Another Rule is, "That whensoever the Bishop shall celebrate the Holy Communion in the Church, or execute any other public Ministration, he shall have upon him, beside his Rochet, a Surplice or Albe, and a Cope or Vestment, and also his Pastoral Staff in his Hand, or else born or holden by his Chaplain. Another Rule was, "As touching Kneeling, Crossing, Holding up of Hands, Knocking upon the Breast, and other Gestures, they may be left or used, as every Man's Devotion seemeth, without Blame. The last Note is this, "And altho' it be read in antient Writers, that the People many Years past received at the Priest's Hands the Sacrament of the Body of Christ in their own Hands, and no Commandment of Christ to the contrary; yet forasmuch as they many times conveyed the same secretly away, kept it with them, and diversly abused it to Superstition and Wickedness; lest any such thing hereafter should be attempted; and that an Uniformity might be used throughout the whole Realm; it is thought convenient the People commonly receive the Sacrament of Christ's Body in their Mouths at the Priest's Hand. But this last, and other things were thought fit to be altered afterwards.

The Papists imagined they had a mighty Advantage over the Protestants, for this reviewing, purging and correcting the *English Book*; Upbraiding them with that which the good Reformers took so much Satisfaction in having don; that is, laying aside some needless Ceremonies that escaped them before, and retrenching the Book of such Things as lookt too like Superstition, and which the Times would not bear to be wholly taken away at once, or which perhaps at first were not so well perceived. And our Reformers lookt upon themselves as fallible Men. Tho' even the first Communion Service and the first Book of public Prayers struck off Abundance of Superstitions, and reduced the Service of God to the Primitive Pattern, and the Rule of God's Word: Yet they never lookt upon it so perfect, but that it might admit of Amendment and Improvement. But in this, the *Papists* vainly triumphed, as tho' hereby they were inconsistent to themselves, and contradicted what they

Alterations  
made in the  
*English Book*.

For which  
the *Papists*  
upbraid the  
Protestants.



ANNO

1550.

Proof. fo. 117  
b.

they approved before. Thus *Dorman*, in his Book, wrot towards the Beginning of Queen ELIZABETH's Reign, fondly bespeaks Bishop *Jewel*,  
 "Call to your Remembrance the changing, and turning in and out of  
 "your Communion Book: How the first was prest for Uniformity, to be  
 "agreeable to Christ's Institution, and the Usage of the Primitive Church.  
 "And yet in how short a Space, that being taken away, you brought in  
 "a New, to the first in the principal Points clean contrary: To Christ's  
 "Institution, and the Order nevertheless of the Primitive Church as a  
 "greeable just, as was the First. And yet that, whether it be in all  
 "Points as ye mind to have it squared and trimmed, yourselves and your  
 "Companions perhaps can tell. Wise Men, that know the Nature of He-  
 "resy, and have observed the Practice and Order of your Proceedings,  
 think verily, No.

Communion  
in Paul's used  
with the Su-  
perstition of  
the Mass.

This Book by such great Wisdom and Learning devised and im-  
 proved, and so intelligible and edifying, in Comparison with the former  
*Latin Mass*, yet could not as yet down every where. For even the  
 old Superstitions of the Sacrament were much used in the Administration  
 of it. And even in *St. Paul's London*, the Communion was used as the  
*Mass*. Wherof Information and Complaint was made to the Council.  
 And one Impediment, why this godly Office took not place more u-  
 niversally was, because the old Office Books still remained. There were  
 still the *Missals*, *Manuals*, *Pies*, *Portuiffes*, *Primers*, *Proceffionals*,  
*Couchers*, *Journals*, and I cannot tell what other Names of the old *Papish*  
 Services remaining. And where the Priests stood affected that Way, the  
 Books and Offices being so near at hand, he would make Use of them,  
 and understanding perhaps better to mumble over that *Latin*, than to  
 read the *English* Book. Of which so much Notice was taken, and so  
 much Offence given, that in the third and fourth of King EDWARD's  
 Reign, an Act of Parliament commanded them all to be abolished and  
 extinguished for Ever: And accordingly were called in, as was shewed  
 before:

## CHAP. XXVII.

*Ridley made Bishop of London. His Exchange  
 of Lands with the King. Insurrections. A  
 Dearth. Prizes set upon Victuals.*

Ridley tran-  
 slated to Lon-  
 don. Registr.  
 Ridley.

RIDLEY, Bishop of *Rocheſter* was in the Month of *April*, this  
 Year translated to the See of *London*, by the King's Letters Patents;  
 mentioning an Act of Parliament, taking away the *Conge delire*, and em-  
 powering the King to nominate any Bishop by his Letters Patents to any  
 See. In this Letter is mentioned at large the Dissolution of the Bishopric  
 of *Westminster*.

Installed.

*Saturday, April* the 12th, the said Bishop was installed and inthronized  
 by Proxy. His Proxy was *Richard Wilkes*, Clerk: Before *William May*,  
 Dean



Dean of St. Paul's; *John Cardmaker*, alias *Taylor*, present, now Vicar *ANNO*  
 of St. *Brigits, Fleetstreet*; one of the Commissaries for the Expedition of *1550.*  
 the Business of the Installation. After the Installation, was sung the  
*Te Deum* in *English*, with Organs playing, and the Choir singing. Then  
 Dean *May* sung some Versicles, and then said this Prayer in *English*:  
 "O! Lord, Almighty GOD, we beseech thee, grant to thy Servant  
 "NICOLAS, our Bishop, that by preaching and doing those Things  
 "which be godly, he may both instruct the Minds of his Diocesans with  
 "true Faith, and Example of good Works: And, finally, receive of  
 "the most merciful Pastor the Reward of Eternal Life: Who liveth  
 "with thee and the Holy Ghost, world without End. Amen.

In this fourth Year of the King, *Ridley*, Bishop of *London*, April 12. An Exchange  
 (that is but nine Days after he had taken his Oath for the Bishoprick) of Lands be-  
 was fain to alienate, to the King divers Lands and Manors, belonging to tween the  
 his See, in Exchange for others of the like Value, which the King made King and the  
 over to him and his Successors, by Letters Patents bearing date the same Bishop of  
 Day and Year. The Lands which the said Bishop conveyed to the King London.  
 were the Manors of *Branktree* and *Southminster*, and the Advouson and  
 Right of Patronage of the Vicarage of *Coggeshal*, in the County of *Essex*:  
 And the Manors of *Stebunbeath* and *Hackney*, and the Marsh of *Stebun-*  
*beath* in the County of *Middlesex*. The Lands which the King passed  
 away to the Bishop in lieu hereof, were the Manors of *Greenford*, *Han-*  
*wel*, and *Drayton* in the County of *Middlesex*, lately Parcels of the Pos-  
 sessions of the Bishopric of *Westminster* dissolved; and all the Lands, Te-  
 nements and Hereditaments in *Uxbridge* in the said County, Parcels of  
 the said Bishoprick: And all and singular the Messuages, Houses, Edifices,  
 Tenements, Gardens, Shops and Hereditaments in the Parishes of St.  
*Leonard Foster Lane*, St. *Michael* in the *Querne*, and St. *Dunstons* in  
 the East, late Parcels of the aforesaid Possessions: and the Manors of  
*Ashwel*, *Stevenage*, *Holwel*, *Todwel*, and *Dacheworth*, and the Rectory  
 and Church of *Ashwel*, in the County of *Hertford*; all Parcels of the  
 foresaid Bishopric: And the Manors of *Fering*, *Kelvedon* and *Fawnton*:  
 And the Rectories and Churches of *Fering* and *Kelvedon*, in the County  
 of *Essex*, late Parcels of the said Bishopric: The Manor of *Knowl* in the  
 County of *Warwick*, Parcel of the said Bishopric: The Manor, Rectory  
 and Church of *Rickmansworth*, in the County of *Hertford*, lately be-  
 longing to the Monastery of St. *Albans*: The Manor of *Paddington*, in  
 the County of *Middlesex*, lately belonging to the Monastery of *Westmin-*  
*ster*: The House commonly called, *The Conviēt Prison* of *Westminster*;  
 the Advousons, Donations and Presentations of *Hanwel*, and the Chappel  
 of *Brainford*, and the Vicarage of the Church of St. *Martins* near  
*Charing Cross*; and of divers other Churches. Churches and Lands  
 being in *Middlesex*, *London*, *Hertford*, *Essex*, *Warwick*, *Lincoln*, *Rut-*  
*land*, *Oxon*, *Northampton*, *Huntingdon*, *Surrey*, *Glocester*, *Berks* and  
*Wigorn*. All which extended to the clear yearly Value of 526-19-9q.

But the King made this Exchange not for himself, but to gratify cer-  
 tain of his Courtiers. For April 16. that is four Days after the Bishop  
 had granted his Lands to the King, he again granted by his Patents,



ANNO

1550.

To Sir *Thomas Darcy*, Vicechamberlain of his Household, the Manor of *Southminster* of the Value of

—§194-12-2

To *Richard*, Lord *Rich*, Lord Chancellor of *England*, the Manor of *Branktree*, and the Advouson of *Coggeshal*, of the Value of

—§39-13-4

To *Thomas*, Lord *Wentworth*, Lord Chamberlain of the Household, the Manors of *Stebunheath* and *Hackney*, of the Value of

—§245-18-3 obq.]

486 3 9. obq.

Confirmation  
of them by  
Act of Parla-  
ment.

And in the first Year of QUEEN ELIZABETH, the aforesaid Assurance, made by the Bishop to the King, was confirmed by Act of Parliament; and also those Lands by the said Act were assured to the Lord *Wentworth*, the Lord *Rich*, and Sir *Thomas Darcy*, and their Heirs. In this Act it is expressed, "That the King being seized of the foresaid Manors, Lands and Tenements, in Consideration of the said Gift, and for a full Recompence, did give by his Letters Patents unto the Bishop of *London* and his Successors for ever, other Manors, Lands and Tenements, to the yearly Value thereof and more. And indeed the King's Lands made over to the Bishop exceeded the Lands made over by the Bishop to the King in forty six Pounds odd Mony. This may serve to stop their Mouths that are apt to blame Bishop *Ridley* for parting with such fair Manors as *Stepney* and *Hackney* from the See. And *Stow*, or some of his Enlargers after him, to aggravate this Gift, and make all People that read it the more ready to blame him, do set down all the particular Streets, Lanes, Townships and Places within these Manors, to make his Gift seem the greater, and the Wrong done to the Bishopric, the more hainous. Whereas neither the King nor the Bishop were to be blamed for this, the Advantage of the Exchange being considerably on the Bishop's Side. And therefore to make an Equivalent, certain Rents to the Value of an Hundred Pounds were reserved to the King.

Weekly Ser-  
mons forbid,

In the further Parts of *Essex* were many earnest Gospellers. And for their better Edification they procured Preachers sometimes to preach to them on the Week Days. The Report wherof came to the Court; and that, as it appears, by the Information of the Lord *Rich*, Lord Chancellor, not so well affected to the Religion then settled, however politically he complied with the Time; Whose Seats were at *Lees* and *Rockford*, and his Estate lying thereabouts. These weekly Meetings to hear Sermons, the Council, (upon some Suggestions,) 'tis likely of his, of the Inconvenience thereof, as being an Hindrance of the common Peoples necessary Labours, did forbid. And in Order to that, a Letter was addrest to the Bishop of *London*, to cause the same Practices to cease, and that the People should content themselves with hearing Sermons on *Sundays* and *Holy Days* only. The Letter was, as follows.

By the Coun-  
cils Letter to  
the Bishop.

To our very good Lord, the Bishop of *London*. "After our right hartly Commendations unto your Lordship. Being advertised from the Lord Chancellor, that divers Preachers within your Diocess, in the County of *Essex*, do preach, as well the worky Days, as the Holy Days; Wherof some Inconveniences may grow: Thinking it not convenient,



"venient, that the Preachers should have Liberty so to do: Because at *ANNO*  
 "this present it may encrease the People's Idleness, who of themselves *1550.*  
 "are so much disposed to it, as all the Ways that may be divised are  
 "little enough to draw them to work: We therefore pray you to take  
 "Order, that they preach the Holy Days only, as they have been accu-  
 "stomed to do. And the Work Days to use those Prayers, that are  
 "prescribed unto them. Thus we bid your good Lordship most hartely  
 "farewel. From *Greenwich*, the 23<sup>d</sup> of *June*, 1550.

Your Loving Friends,

*E. Somerset. W. Northampton. E. Clynton. G. Cobham.*  
*W. Paget. W. Harbart. W. Petre.*

Accordingly, the Bishop sent his Executory Letters to the Archdeacon *The Bishop*  
 of *Colchester*; To will him with convenient Expedition, not only to *of London's*  
 give Warning to all Curats within his Archdeaconry, that they suffer *Order there-*  
 not Preaching on Work Days in their Churches, but also to send for all *upon.*  
 and singular Preachers, authorized within the said Archdeaconry, and *Regist. Ridl.*  
 admonish them of the same: Charging them in the King's Highness's  
 Name, that from henceforth they do not preach, but only upon *Sundays*  
 and *Holydays*, and none other Days, except it be at any Burial or Mar-  
 riage. And thus fare you hartily well. From *London*, the 25<sup>th</sup> of *June*,  
 1550.

Your Loving Friend,

*Nic. Lond.*

A perpetual Peace made with *France* was declared by Proclamation, *May* *Peace with*  
 28. In which Peace was the Emperor and the *Q. of Scots* comprehended. *France.*

As the last Year a formidable Rebellion happened in the *A Tumult in-*  
*Western Parts*, so in *April* this Year an Insurrection was setting on Foot *tended in*  
 in *Kent*, by a Priest of that County. Which Insurrection was to have *Kent.*  
 begun on *May Day*. For the *Popish* Priests in Zeal to their old Super- *King Edward's*  
 stitions, were generally the Movers of Sedition and Tumults in King *Journal.*  
 HENRY's and King EDWARD's Reigns. So that the Commotions last  
 Year in *Devonshire*, *Norfolk* and *Torkshire*, were not so well allayed, but  
 they had like to have broke out this Year in *Kent*. But the Matter was  
 discovered timely, and several of the Seditious were taken, and the Priest  
 fled into *Essex*: but was there laid for. Nor did this Design of Rising  
 yet cease, with the taking off some of the Parties. For the next Month,  
*viz.* in that of *May*, upon pretence of a Wedding, the People were to as-  
 semble, and take that Opportunity of appearing in Arms: But the  
 Gentlemen of *Kent* took the Party that was the Inventor of this: and  
 afterwards he suffered Punishment.

Were it not for the great Watchfulness that was now in the Magistrates *Insurrection*  
 every where, a Rising would have about this Time appeared in *Essex* *intended in*  
 also. For in *June* certain were taken about *Rumford*, who intended an *Essex.*  
 Insurrection: And so it was stopped there.

Others also of the said County of *Essex* gave at this very Time a *Jea-* *Sermons on*  
 lousy to the Council for their too unseasonable Meetings in Numbers on *Work Days*  
*Week* *forbid in Es-*  
*Week* *for.*



**ANNO** Week Days for hearing of Sermons. What Dangers might lie, and what  
**1550.** Evil be hatched under Colour of these Assemblies of the People was somewhat suspected. Which made the Council send a Letter to the Bishop of London to suppress them; as was shewn before.

No Commendams allowed.

And Order of Council happening just about this Time concerning Bishops, I will here insert it; Which was that none henceforth should hold *Commendams*, excepting one granted at the same Time by them to Bishop Poinet. "June 29. Upon Consideration, that Mr. Poynt now elected Bishop of Rochester, hath no House to dwell upon, it is agreed that he shall enjoy his Benefice in *Commendam*. But henceforth it is decreed, that no Bishop shall keep other Benefice than his Bishopric only."

Searches to be made in Sussex.

As the Commons were upon these dangerous Points in Kent and Essex, as was said before, so there were some Jealousies of Tumults in Sussex also. So that there was a privy Search appointed to be made through that County for Vagabonds, Gypsies, Conspirators, Prophesiers and Players, and such like. Who probably under such Disguises met together, laid their Plots, and inticed the People to Novelties.

A Proclamation against seditious Persons.

And this was but in pursuance of a Proclamation set forth, May 17. last past: Shewing how several ill disposed Persons had lately attempted and gon about in Conventicles and secret Places in the Realm, where they durst speak their Pleasure, and determined and conspired sundry evil Facts, Enterprizes and Disorders, tending to Rebellion, Murder and unlawful Assemblies: But the said Determinations had come to the King's Knowledge, to the Subduing and Destruction of such Persons, and as many as willingly took part with them. Wherefore for the Discovery of the Remainders of these seditious Persons, the King promised the Reward of twenty Pounds, and Thanks to any that should make Discovery of any such Attempts, and make the same known to him, or his Privy Council, or to the Lieutenant of the County, where any such thing should be intended, moved or determined. And any Person was to have the said Reward, tho' he were before one of the Conspiracy.

Duke of Somerset goes into the West. King Edw. Journal.

In July the Duke of Somerset, (who the beginning of this Year got over his Troubles, but with great Loss of his Offices and Estate) was sent down into Oxfordshire, Sussex, Wiltshire and Hampshire, to secure those Places from Rising; and so to take Order for the Keeping of Peace. And in August he went to Reding for the same Purpose. The Reason of most of these present Jealousies were upon Account of the Lady Mary, who was privately to be conveyed out of England from some Creek in Essex, by Shipperius, Admiral of the Navy, belonging to the Emperor. And then an open War was to be begun, and an intestine Conspiracy to be at home, as Sir Thomas Chamberlain, Ambassador with the Queen of Hungary in the Low Countries, had learned at that Court, and advertised hither.

A great Dearth.

The Dearth before mentioned continued all along this Year, all Provisions being at high rates; Which lay very heavy upon the poorer Sort. Which gives me Occasion to conjecture, that this was the Year wherein happened a great Drought, that made great Fears of a Famine. Whereupon a publick Fasting Day was appointed, and a Prayer was composed, and ordered to be used in the Churches at that Time, that God would



would send Rain: and the rather, because the Enemies of the Reformation were apt to lay the Cause of this Judgment upon the Reformation. See it in the *Repository*, as I found it in *Fax's MSS.*

ANNO  
1550.

The King and his Council took especial Care for the removing of this Calamity now laying upon the Nation. And first, for the Ease of the City of *London* in this dear Time, it was thought expedient to clear it of as many poor, needy Persons as could be. Therefore the King by Proclamation, dated *May 4.* Commanded all Persons of what State or Degree soever, being the King's natural Subjects, not born within the City or Borough of *Southwark*, or the Liberties, nor being Householdiers, nor having sufficient to live by, nor that had lived there by the Space of three Years together now last past, nor retained in any Service with any Person, nor applying themselves to any bodily Labour, and taking Wages for the same; should forthwith depart out of the City, Borough and Liberties, and return to their native Countries, or the Places where they last dwelt, by the Space of three Years together, according to the Tenor of a Statute in that Behalf, concerning the Order of aged impotent People, and for punishing Vagabonds and idle Persons.

K K.  
Idle Persons  
to depart  
from *London*.

And for the easing of the City still of more of her unnecessary Guests, on *20. July*, the King by his Proclamation commanded all Captains, Officers of Bands and Soldiers, as well *English*, as Strangers of what Nation soever, which were not presently entertained in the King's Wages, and had been payed for their Service by Treasurers therunto appointed, according to their Capitulations, until the Day of their Casting and Dismission; that they failed not to depart and avoid the City, the Suburbs and the Members of the same, within three Days after the Proclamation published, upon Pain of suffering strait Imprisonment, with further Punishment at the King's Pleasure.

And Soldiers  
disbanded.

And to stop the Conveying of Provisions out of the Land, (which was another Cause of the high Prizes set upon them, a Proclamation came forth, *May the 7.* Commanding, that none upon Pain of Imprisonment, and of other Forfeitures according to the Laws of the Land, should carry and convey into the Parts beyond Seas, any kind of Beefs, Muttons, Veals, Lamb, Pork, Butter, Cheese, Corn, Grain, Wood, Coals, Ale, Beer, Tallow, Hides, or any other kind of Victual; except only to the Town of *Calais*, and the Castles of *Guifnes* and *Hammes*. And charge was given to all the King's Customers, Comptrollers, Searchers, &c. to make diligent Search for the better Furtherance of the King's most high and dreadful Commandment, as the Phrase was. And this Proclamation to continue till the Feast of *All Saints*.

Provisions not  
to be export-  
ed.

Within two Months after (the former Commandment, through the Covetousness of some Merchants and others, not being sufficiently obeyed) another Proclamation dated *July 3.* was issued forth, charging that no Sort of Victual, Corn, Beer, Wools, Fells, Lether, Hides, Tallow, Helmettal, Wood or Coal, should be shipped or transported into foreign Parts out of the Realm, (the Town of *Calais* only excepted) until the King should hereafter allow the same; Upon Pain of Confiscation of the Goods and Forfeiture of the Ship. And the Reason hereof was given, because of late Years the said Commodities had been reduced to a great Scarcity, and to an unwanted excessive Price. The Cause whereof to no one thing might sooner be imputed, than that now commonly those Commodities which ought especially to serve the Turn, and be employed to

Forbad again.

the



A N NO  
1550.

Further Or-  
ders for aba-  
ting the Pri-  
zes of Victu-  
als.

the Use and Sustentation of the Subject, were in over-large Measures conveyed into foreign Regions, as well by Colour of Licences unlawfully used, as by Stealth and Covert. And in the Preface the King shewed his Princely Compassion to his People, " Calling to Remembrance how, according to the Regal Power and State to him committed by Almighty GOD over his Realm, nothing could better declare his Zeal and Affection born toward the Commonwealth, than when by all good means such Orders proceeded from his Majesty as might best tend to the general Plenty of things needful, for the commodious Living of his natural Subjects; and namely, such Things as were brought forth, and given us of GOD, as the peculiar Commodities of this Realm, might be enjoyed by the Subjects of the same, to their Utility and mutual Benefit among themselves, in plentiful Sort and Cheapness of Price, before others, according as in ancient Time had been accustomed.

But this Dearth still continuing in the Realm, (notwithstanding all these former Endeavours) partly by Reason of Conveyance of Commodities beyond Sea, and partly by Mens buying up of Corn in the Markets, to be sold again; and also by not bringing any Quantities to the Market, the King issued out yet another Proclamation dated *Sept. 24.* Signifying in the Preface therof, " How the insatiable Greediness of divers ill-natured People, neither minding the due Observation of good Laws, nor any Preservation of natural Societies within their own Country, and contrary to the Provision of divers good Laws and Statutes, by frequent unlawful Exportation of Victuals, and by many detestable Frauds and Covins, had occasioned great Scarcity and unreasonable Prizes of Victuals: And therefore he first commanded, " That no Person should after eight Days ensuing the Proclamation, transport into *Scotland*, or elsewhere, " Wheat, Malt, Ry, Barly, Pease, Beans, Oats, or any kind of Grain, or " the Meals of any of the same, Beefs, Muttons, Veals, Cheefe, Butter, " Tallow, Candles, Beer, Ale, Bisket, Leather, Salt, Hides, Wood, " Wool, Fells. But if at any Time of shipping or transporting the Premises, Corn were of such a particular Price, then it should be lawful for " the King's Subjects to carry over Grain at Pleasure: that is,

|                        | s. d. |              |
|------------------------|-------|--------------|
| Wheat,                 | 6-8   | the Quarter. |
| Malt of the best Sort, | 5-0   |              |
| Beans and Pease,       | 4-0   |              |
| Oats,                  | 3-4   |              |
| Rye,                   | 5-0   |              |

*Item*, That no Person after eight Days should buy in open Market, or otherwise, to be sold again, any Wheat, Malt, Barly, Ry, Pease, Oats, Beans, or any kind of Meals, upon Pain of Forfeiture of the same Grain, and the Moyety of their Goods, Chattels, Leases and Farms for Term of Life; excepting Brewers and Bakers, Inkeepers and Inholders.

*Item*, That Justices of Peace in every Shire should divide themselves into Hundreds, Rapes, Wards and Wapentakes, according as heretofore in other the King's Business they had don. And they or two of them within the Limits of their Division were to repair to all Farms, Barns, Stacks and Garners; and there to view and try out, as well by the Verdict



dict of honest Men, as by all other good and lawful Means, what Quantity and Kind of Grain every Person had within their respective Division. And after the Certainty thereof known, as near as could be, they were to allot and appoint to the Owners of the Corn and Grain, sufficient and competent for the Finding and Maintenance of their Houses, and Payment of their Rent-corns, and Performance of any Bargains for the King's Majesty's House, or to any Nobleman, Gentleman or others, for the only Maintenance of his or their Household, until the 20th of September next coming; and also for necessary Seed-corn. And the Overplus of the said Grain the Justices shall have Authority to charge and command them in the King's Name to bring to the Markets next adjoining; and that, in such Portions as the Justices shall think fit.

And then the Justices were to signify unto the chief Officer or Officers of the respective Markets, what Quantity of Grain is appointed to every Man within their Limits to bring to Market. And if the Owner of such Corn shall refuse to bring to the Market his Corn, he should forfeit for every such Default, ten Pounds, and suffer Imprisonment for three Months. But notwithstanding, there came but little Corn to the Markets: Whereupon Letters were sent down to the Gentlemen of every Shire for the better observing the last Proclamation, and to punish the Offenders.

And as the King had taken this Care for stocking the Markets, and keeping Victuals, that God sent the People of England, within the Realm, so he proceeded to set a moderate Price upon them by another Proclamation Octob. 20. Building upon that Statute of 25 Hen. 8. whereby the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord President of the King's Privy Council, the Lord Privy Seal, the Lord Steward, the Lord Chamberlain, and all other Lords of the Council, the Treasurer and Comptroller of the King's House, the Chancellor of the Duchy, the King's Justices of either Bench, the Chancellor, Chamberlain, Undertreasurer and Barons of the Exchequer, or Seven of them at the least, should have Power from Time to Time, as the Case should require, to set and tax reasonable Prizes of all kinds of Cheese, Butter, Capons, Hens, Chickens and other kind of Victuals necessary for Man's Sustenance; how they should be sold in Gros, or by Retail, for the Relief of the King's Subjects. And that after such Tax, Proclamation should be made in the King's Name under his Seal, of the said Prizes. According to which Statute the Prizes were by certain of the King's great Officers now set as follow, viz. From the Feast of All Saints next ensuing.

| The Quarter                                                                                           | The Quarter                              |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| White Wheat of the best Sort — — — } 0-13-4                                                           | Ry of the best and cleanest — 0-7-0      |
| White Wheat of the second Sort, and red Wheat of the best Sort. — — — } 0-11-0                        | Ry of the second Sort. — 0-6-0           |
| All other Wheat, as well white, red and grey, of the meanest Sort, not clean or tayled. — — — } 0-8-0 | Barly of the best Sort. — 0-9-0          |
| Malt clean and sweet of the best Sort. — — — } 0-10-0                                                 | Of the second Sort. — 0-7-0              |
| Malt of the second Sort. — 0-8-0                                                                      | Beans or Pease of the best Sort. 0-5-0   |
|                                                                                                       | Of the second Sort. — 0-3-0              |
|                                                                                                       | Oats of the best Sort, — } 0-4-0         |
|                                                                                                       | clean and sweet. — }                     |
|                                                                                                       | Accounting eight Bushels to the Quarter. |

The



ANNO

1550.

|                                                                                        | The Pound. |                                                                | The Pound. |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|----------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| A Pound of sweet Butter not above —                                                    | 1 d.ob.    | Cheese of <i>Essex</i> to be sold from <i>Hallowmas</i> till — | ob. di. q. |
| Barelled Butter of <i>Essex</i> , not to be sold to any of the King's Subjects above — | ob. di. q. | Newyears Crop —                                                |            |
| And Barelled Butter of any other Parts —                                               | ob. q.     | Cheese of other Parts not above —                              | ob. q.     |

## CHAP. XXVIII.

*Controversy about the Ecclesiastical Habits. Peter Martyr's, A Lasco's and Bucer's Judgments thereof. Altars taken down. Barlow, Bishop of Bath and Wells. Superstition in Wales. Foreign Matters. Duke of Somerset restored. Grants of the King. Lady Elizabeth. Morice. Haddon. Knox.*

Hoper's Contest.

Cap and Surplice.

Peter Martyr's Judgment thereof.

A Lasco and Bucer's Judgment.

**B**UT to return to Ecclesiastical Matters. This Year also happened the great Controversy with *Hoper*, who, being to be Consecrated Bishop, refused to wear the ordinary Episcopal Habits, because they had been used by *Papistical* Idolaters. But before this Contest happened with *Hoper*, it seems the Dispute of the Cap and Surplice, and other pretended *Popish* Habits, grew very warm. For there is a Letter of *Peter Martyr* extant to a certain Friend nameless, dated *July 1*. Wherin by Occasion of his Friend's writing to him upon this Argument, he said, "That being indifferent Things of themselves, they make no Man either godly or ungodly. Yet he judged it more expedient, that that Garment and divers other Things were taken away, when it might conveniently be : Wherby Ecclesiastical Things might be don in a more plain Manner. For when Signs are defended and retained with so obstinate a Mind, which are not underpropt with GOD's Word, there Men are oftentimes less desirous of the things themselves signified therby. And where Shew most prevails, there commonly that which is serious is much neglected."

*John A Lasco*, Superintendent of the *Dutch Church, London*, seemed to encourage *Hoper* in his Incompliance ; that noble and learned Foreigner's Judgment standing at present rather against the Use of such Garments for the Ministers of the Gospel, however not come to full Resolution. *Bucer* and *Peter Martyr* aforesaid, the two learned King's Professors of Divinity in each University, were for wearing them in this Case, when the



the Laws of the Land were so constituted, that a Minister might not *ANNO* officiate, or exercise his Office, except he were so apparelled, Habits *1550.* being things in their own Nature indifferent; and which might have a tendency to Edification. An Account of *Martyr's* Letter in this Point, which he wrot to the said *Hoper*, may be seen in Archbishop *Cranmer's* Memorials. *Bucer* wrot two Letters on this Argument, one to *A Lasco*, who had propounded Reasons to him against the Habits; and another to *Hoper*. The Sum of both which shall here be shewn, especially being so well replenished with Learning, Temper and Wisdom.

In his Letter to the former, he first prayed, "That they in those trouble- *Bucer to*  
" some Times of the Church, might begin and finish things, that Offences and *A Lasco shew-*  
" Dangers were not encreased. Then going on, he said, that the more dili- *ing his Judg-*  
" gently he weighed, what Fruit Men gathered by this Controversy of *ment.*  
" Vestures, and what Satan went about hereby to work, he could have  
" wished that it had never once been spoken of. But that all of their  
" Function had stoutly and unanimously gon forward in teaching true  
" Repentance, and the wholsome Use of all things, and in commending  
" the putting on of the Apparel of Salvation. That by helping for-  
" ward this Strife (and he knew some that did so) the most necessary  
" Points were neglected, that is, of removing sacrilegious Persons from  
" spoiling Churches, of providing fit Ministers for every Parish, and re-  
" storing of Disciplin. As to *Hoper's* Business, he did acknowledge if it  
" were his own Case, if he thought Ceremonies and Vestures were im-  
" pure of themselves, [*i. e.* in their own Natures,] he would not in any  
" wise take upon him the Office of a Bishop, till they were taken away  
" by Authority. But he thought it not impertinent, that Men should  
" be admonished to take heed of Satan's accustomed Sights, to lead  
" Men away, from the Care of Necessary Things, to Carefulness about  
" things that might be let pass, and to a Zeal to purge away things that  
" are without us, thereby to neglect inward Deformities. He told *A Lasco*;  
" That according to his Talent he had weighed his Reasons, and yet he  
" could perceive no other, but that the Use of all external Things, as  
" well in Ceremonies as private Matters, ought to be left free to the  
" Churches of GOD. He acknowledged, as he had confessed before to  
" *A Lasco*, and declared unto his own Countrymen, that he had rather  
" no kind of Vestures, used by *Papists*, were retained; and that for two  
" or three Reasons, *viz.* For shewing more full Detestation of the An-  
" tichristian Priesthood; for the plainer Avouching of Christian Liberty,  
" and for Avoiding dangerous Contentions among Brethren. Yet that  
" he was for Ministers using a grave Habit, to be discerned from other  
" Men. But as far as he saw as yet, he could not be brought by any  
" Scriptures to deny, that the true Ministers of GOD might use with-  
" out Superstition, and to a certain Edification, any of those Vestures  
" which the Antichristian Church used. Thence descending to Particu-  
" lars, he spent the remaining Part of his Letter in great Perspicuity,  
" Learning and Moderation. The whole Letter was translated into *En-*  
" glish, and set forth not far from the Beginning of Queen ELIZABETH'S  
" Reign, for the Use of the Church, that then was exercised afresh with  
" the same Controversy. And may be found in the *Repository*.

L. L.



ANNO

1550.

Bucer to Ho-  
per.

The same Reverend Man having received a Letter from *Hoper*, and a Paper enclosed: Wherin were contained the Reasons of his present Trouble, and why in his Judgment the Habits ought not to be worn, and to which, if he approved them, he desired *Bucer* to subscribe his Name; he gave him this Answer; "That he was exceeding sorry for this Controversy, which so grievously hindred his Ministry, that he could have been willing to have given a great deal, that either it had not been moved at all, or speedily removed. That Satan by these Lets prolonged his full Banishment from among the People of God. That it was his Desire to have all Things reduced to Apostolic Simplicity in external Things, and to full and perfect Religion. That he never procured to have any special kind of Apparel in the Administration of the Sacrament, in the Places where he had preached, as at *Argentine, Ulm, Ausburgh, Casel*. And that the Abuse that he had seen of the Garments in many Places in *England*, he could be willing to suffer Torment in his Flesh, that they were taken away. But yet that which weighed most with him, was, that the Sinews of Antichrist bore such Sway: He meant, that Church Robbers did still hold and spoil the chief Parish Churches; and that commonly one Man had four or six of them, or more; And that many Patrons bestowed two or three upon their Stewards or Huntsmen; and that upon Condition that a good Portion of the Profits should be reserved to themselves. And any were hired for Vicars, that would serve cheapest. That the Universities were miserably troubled by many, either *Papists* or *Epicures*. Whence it came to pass, that there were so few Gospel Preachers, that many Churches had no Sermons in five or six Years or more: That Divine Service was coldly and disorderly uttered, and so pronounced that it could no more be understood than if it were *Afric* or *Indian* Tongue. That Baptism was ministred in the Presence of a few light Women. When Marriage was solemnized, they prattled and played. The Lord's Supper in many Places celebrated like a Mass. No Regard had of Christ's Flock. No Conference of Catechism with the ignorant Sort. No public or private Admonition given to them that were slack in their Duties, or otherwise offended. These and divers other Abuses, Neglects and Impieties, he said, were the chief Members of Antichrist, his Bones, Flesh and Sinews. Which therefore the Members of Christ should with mutual Force and continual Travail seek to overthrow. And then the Abuse of Apparel, and of all other Things, would utterly be abandoned, and all the Badges and Shadows of Antichrist would vanish away. But that if these principal Members of Antichrist, his Substance and whole Body were not cut off, and the Kingdom of Christ thorowly established, by restoring the pure Doctrine of Christ and good Disciplin, in vain should they labour to put the Marks and Shadows of Antichrist to flight. That if any Church should give ear to him, they should not retain any Garments which the *Papists* had used in their superstitious Service, and that for these Causes, that it might the more plainly declare that they had renounced all Fellowship with the *Romish* Antichrist, that they acknowledged the Liberty of external Things, and that the greatest Care was to restore chiefly those things wherein the Disciplin of Christ did especially consist, and that no Occasion of

" Strife



“ Strife might remain among the weaker Sort. But to say that these *ANN O*  
 “ Garments were so defiled by the Abuse of Antichrist, that no Church *1550.*  
 “ might use them, he dared not be so bold. Neither did he see any  
 “ Place of Scripture wherby he might defend this condemning of the good  
 “ Creature of GOD. That any Ceremony is wickedly *Aaronical* or  
 “ Antichristian, stood not in any Creature of GOD, in any Figure, in  
 “ any Colour, but in the Mind and Profession of those that abused God’s  
 “ good Creature to wicked Signification. — And if any Church by the  
 “ Liberty of Christ would have their Ministers wear some special Ap-  
 “ parel in their Ministry, to this End to edify the Flock of Christ,  
 “ setting apart all Superstition, all Lightness and Dissension, he could  
 “ not see, who could justly condemn such Churches of any Sin, nor of  
 “ any Fellowship with Antichrist. And in the Conclusion, he prayed  
 “ GOD so to moderate or remove this Controversy, that it hindred not  
 “ the necessary cleansing of the Church. *Hoper’s* Letter to this Reve-  
 rend Man, and his to *Hoper*, (whereof this is some brief Account) may *MM. NN.*  
 be consulted in the *Repository*.

Now did *Ridley*, Bishop of *London*, by his Injunctions, order the Al- *Orders for*  
 tars in his Diocess to be taken down, as Occasions of great Superstition *taking down*  
 and Error, and Tables to be set in their Rooms in some convenient *Altars.*  
 Places of the Chancel or Choir. And so far did the King’s Council fa-  
 vour him herein, that in the Month of *June*, Sir *John Rates*, or *Gates*, *King Edw.*  
 the high Sheriff, went down with Letters into *Essex*, to see the Bishop *Journal.*  
 of *London*’s Injunctions put in Force, for the plucking down Altars, Su-  
 peraltaries, and other Corruptions in Religion. This when it was urged  
 against *Ridley* by the Commissioners a little before his Burning, he said,  
 it was done upon this Consideration, among others, for that Altars seemed  
 to come nigh the *Jews* Usage. But the *Papists* now called the Commu-  
 nion Table, most irreverently an *Oyster Board*. So did *Dr. Weston* and  
*White*, afterward Bishop of *Lincoln*. But as *Ridley* began this Reforma-  
 tion of the Lord’s Table, so by the Council’s Letter to him, and Orders  
 sent to all the Bishops in the Month of *November*, Altars were generally  
 every where taken away.

But great Contest there happened hereupon, in what precise Part of *Contest about*  
 the Chancel the Table should be placed, and how it should stand, whe- *the standing*  
 ther East or North. And some placed it one Way and some another. *of the Tables.*  
 Which made *White*, before mentioned, scoffingly tell *Ridley*, “ When *As’s and Mon.*  
 “ your Table was constituted, you could never be content, in placing *p. 1062.*  
 “ the same, now East, now North, now one Way, now another, until  
 “ it pleased GOD of his Goodness to place it clean out of the Church.  
 But *Ridley* told him more gravely concerning the Reformation that was  
 made in Relation to the Holy Communion, “ That the Supper of the  
 “ Lord was not at any time better ministred, nor more duly received,  
 “ than in these latter Days, when all things were brought to the Rites  
 “ and Usage of the Primitive Church.

But Altars gave them such Disgust, that before these public Orders for *Some Altars*  
 the taking them away, many well disposed Persons had changed them *taken away*  
 for Tables. Thus *George Constantine*, Archdeacon of *Carmarthen*, in *before Order.*  
 the Year 1549. pulled down the Altar there, and set up a Table in the  
 middle of the Church; which however made a great Murmur among the  
 People. And the Bishop of *St. David’s*, thinking this a dangerous Mat-



A N N O

1550.

The Case be-  
tween the  
Bishop of  
Bath and  
Wells and the  
Dean.

MSS. D. Epif.  
Lond.

Just. Brook's  
Abridgm. Tit.  
Præmunire No.  
21.  
Goodman de-  
prived of the  
Deanry ap-  
pealeth.  
Cok. Instit.  
Part 4. p. 340.

ter at this time, when there was a Rebellion in divers Parts of the Nation, and fearing it might provoke the *Welsh* Men to rise, and not liking the Archdeacon's doing this of his own Head, without consulting the Bishop, and without any Authority from above, commanded the Vicar to set up the Communion Table for the present Time near the Place where it was before, that is, where the Altar stood. And this was made one of the Articles against this Bishop by *Constantine*, and the rest of his Enemies.

*Barlow*, Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells* had deprived the Dean, named *John Goodman*, for some Fault, which I do not at present find. For this Act the common Lawyers directed the Dean to sue the Bishop upon a *Præmunire*, because that Deanry was a Donative of the King's. And so he brought a Writ of *Præmunire*, *Octob. 11.* against the Bishop. Upon this the Bishop applied himself to the Council, that if the Law would permit, he might be excused personal Appearance until the Parliament, and yet to answer by Attorney. The Bishop also obtained a Pardon, dated *November 13.* of all Manner of Contempts and Prejudices, and of all Manner of Judgments; and further, of all his Goods, Lands and Tenements. But notwithstanding, the Justices proceeded in the Cause. So that *November* the 22<sup>d</sup> Justice *Lyster*, *Bromley* and *Portman* appeared before the Council, and being demanded, why they proceeded in the Bishop of *Bath*'s Matter of *Præmunire*, contrary to their Letters of Restraint addrest unto them in that Behalf, they answered, that they were sworn to suffer the Laws to have their due Course: So that without violating their Oaths, they could stay no Process. Other Excuses they made but of small Moment. Wherefore in the End, this Question was proposed to them: "If a spiritual Office be surrendered to the King; and after the King by Parliament newly erecteth the same Office, whether the same Office be a spiritual Office, or no. *November 26.* they gave in their Answer with the Advice of the rest of the Justices; Which was this: *Resp.* "A spiritual Office surrendered to the King, notwithstanding the new Erection of the same by any Act of Parliament, remaineth still a spiritual Office as it was before.

These Things seeming to go against the Bishop, he appealed from the Common Law and the Judges to the Privy Council. *February 12.* the Dean for his Disobedience and evil Behaviour to the Bishop, was committed to the Fleet, *Febr. 15.* the Council ordered the the King's Attorney and Solicitor to confer with some of his Majesty's Justices touching the *Præmunire* between the Bishop and Dean; and upon the Resolution of the same to repair to their Lordships with the Proceedings of the same. *Febr. 18.* the Archbishop had a Letter sent to him by the Council to proceed in the Appeal between the Bishop and the Dean. For *Goodman* after his Deprivation had made a formal Appeal unto the King. But whether that Appeal was to be allowed, since the King had left *Goodman*'s Case unto the Decision of his Commissioners Delegate for that Purpose, and they had judged and deprived him, was a Case much argued by the Judges. And this was the Opinion of most of them; *viz.* Where a Sentence is given by Commissioners Delegate by the Prince, the Party grieved appealing, such Appeal is out of the Order prescribed by the said Statute. And the Prince in that Case may grant a new Commission to others, to determine that Appeal. And this was done. The Issue was, *Goodman*'s Deprivation stood, but the Bishop was constrained to sue for a Pardon.

As



As to the Success of the Reformation, it went on but slowly in the *A N N O* Parts farther distant from *London*. In *Wales* the People ordinarily carried their Beads about with them to Church, and used them in Prayer. *1549.* And even at the Church of *Carmarthen*, while the Bishop was at the Communion Table bare-headed, doing his Devotions, the People kneeled there and knocked their Breasts at the Sight of the Communion, using the same superstitious Ceremonies, as they had used in Times past before the Mass. They brought there Corpses to be buried with Songs and Candles lighted up about them. And one *Dr. Hughes* ministring the Communion in the Cathedral Church of *St. Davids*, did after the *Popish Manner* break the Host into three Pieces, putting one of the Parts into the Cup, and giving an whole Cake to the Communicants without breaking the same. Also, this Country was very infamous for Concubinage, Adultery and Incest. Some kept four Concubines together. It was common for married Men to keep Concubines, and other Mens Wives. Some put away their own lawful Wives, and married their Concubines. One had two Children by his own Sister. One kept two Sisters, wherof one was married to another Man. One kept his own Sister. And many of these Sinners were Priests.

But to look out a little upon our Nations Concerns abroad. When Matters were adjusted between *England* and *France*, and *Boloign* was to be restored to the *French*, which was agreed upon about the beginning of this Year 1550. Hostages on each Side were to be given, and a great Sum of Mony to be paid to King *EDWARD*. Account of this Affair is given in the History of the Reformation. To which I add a few Things relating hereunto out of the Council-book. "April 20. Sir *Thomas Cheney*, Lord Warden of the *Cinque Ports* was ordered to repair to *Dover*, to meet three of the *French* Hostages, viz. *Mons. D'Enguien*, *Le Marq. Du Main*, and *Mons. Monmorancy*, eldest Son to the Constable of *France*; who were to remain here on the *French* Part, for Surety of the first Payment. And for Surety of the second Payment, were three other Hostages, *Mons. Tremoyl*, *Vidame De Chartres*, and *Mons. Hannibal D'Oy*, the Admiral's only Son. And because these *French* Hostages were of the principal Nobility of *France*, it was agreed, that the Lord Marques of *Northampton*, High Chamberlain of *England*, with an honorable Company, viz. the Earl of *Rutland*, Lord *Lisle*, Lord *Russel*, Lord *Grey*, Lord *William Howard*, Lord *Bray*, Sir *Anthony St. Leger*, Sir *William Stafford*, Sir *John Cutts*, Sir *Peter Mewtas*, with certain other Gentlemen should meet them between *Dover* and *London*, to conduct them the more honorably, according to their Estates.

"Sir *Maurice Denys* and Sir *William Sherington*, Commissioners to receive the first Payment, now to be made by the *French*, are ordered to give, if *Mons. Gondy*, Master of the *French* King's Finances doth bring the first Payment, 2000 Crowns in Reward from his Majesty: and if another brings it, to give 2000 Crowns, or so much as their Discretion shall think fit. The Reward was ordered to *Mons. Gondy*, because he was the first Motioner and Procurer of the Peace.

Also April 20. "Sir *John Mason*, the Ambassador, made a Motion to the Council, to know how he should use the Bishop of *Rome's Nuncio*, when they happened to meet in the *French* Court. Wherin he was referred

1549.

Superstitions  
and Wicked-  
ness in Wales.The French  
Hostages ho-  
nourably con-  
ducted to Lon-  
don.Commissi-  
oners for re-  
ceiving the  
French Mony.Mason, Am-  
bassador for  
France.



ANNO 1550. "referred to his own Discretion, considering the Trust committed to him, being the King's Majesty's Ambassador there.

Orders upon the Peace with France. "Ordered the same Day to dismiss the Army in the North, to send the Almaines home by Ships from Newcastle, to send the Irish home by Ships from Chester; and to keep up two hundred Men more than were usually in Pay, in the Town of Barwick. And forasmuch as the French had got the Queen of Scots into their Hands, it was resolved to send a Governor to the East and Middle Marches, one of great Wisdom and Ability and Courage: And that the Earl of Warwick was thought the most fit for so important an Employment. That he should have a 1000 l. per Annum Fee, and an hundred Horsemen: with Liberty, when things were established there, to return to the Court, or remain in the Country, as he shall please.

An Embassy from Brandenburg.

To lay in here also some other Matters from the same MS. "April 24. The Marquess of Brandenburg's Ambassador made these two Requests to the Council. 1. His Master offered the King his Service with Aid of Men of War. 2. He desired the Lady Mary in Marriage. The Answer was, The King took the first Offer in good Part, and returned him Thanks. To the second, that his Highness, by the Advice of his Council had already treated with the Emperor about it: Which, being not yet determined, allowed them not in honour to begin any new Practice for the same. He was prayed to take this for Answer, with most hearty Thanks for his good Will, and so dispatched.

A Message to Sir Robert Bowes in the North.

"May 2. The King sent Notice to Sir Robert Bowes, [Warden of the Marches] that he resolved to place the Earl of Warwick in the North; and for the good Service of Sir Robert Bowes, he would settle a Pension on him, and further reward him.

The Commissioners return from Boloign.

"May 4. The Lord Clinton, with the rest of the Commissioners from Boloign, were received by the Council, and thanked for their good Service beyond Sea. The Lord Clinton by the whole Council was conducted to the King's Presence; who thanked him, and declared that he should be made Admiral, and one of his Privy Council. And full Peace was made this Month with the French King. In whose Oath for the Peace he confessed the King's Stiles, of Supreme Head of the Church of England, and King of Ireland.

Lord Clinton rewarded.

"May 11. The Lord Clinton's Estate not being able to maintain the Port and Dignity of Lord High Admiral, to which he had been lately advanced, upon Surrender of the Earl of Warwick's Patent, and in consideration of his great Service at Boloign (of which he was Captain) it was determined to give him 200 l. Land, and to make him one of the Privy Chamber.

Manors and Lands given him. Book of Sales.

And accordingly by a Patent bearing date the 14th of May, he, by the Name of Edward Lord Clynton and Say, had granted to him the Office of Great Admiral of England, Ireland, Wales, and the Dominions and Isles of the same, the Town of Calais, and the Marches of the same, of Normandy, Gascoin and Aquitaine, as it ran in the Patent. And this to hold for the Term of his Life with the Fee of 200 Marks per annum. And by another Patent granted to him, June 10. following, the King gave him the Manors of Westinbunger and Satewood, [alias Saltwood] in Kent, and the Manors of Folkston and Walton, and divers other Manors, Lands and Tenements, in Kent, Cornwall, York, Lincoln, Devon and Sussex,



*Suffex*, to the Value of 227-19-5. And 18-5-10 ob. Yet with some ANNO  
Rent reserved. And (to take in together in this Place other Royal 1550.  
Bounties enjoyed by this Lord) in the first Year of King EDWARD's  
Reign, for his good Service against the *Scots*, the said King gave him  
the Manor of *Braunceton* in the County of *Lincoln*, with the Appurtenances, late Parcel of the Possessions of *John Lord Hufsey*; and the Manor of *Clifford* in the County of *Hereford*, Parcel of the Possessions of the late Earl of *March*, and divers other Lands and Tenements: and the same Year the King gave him besides, the Manor of *Folkingham* in *Lincolnshire*, late Parcel of the Possessions of the Duke of *Norfolk* attainted of Treason and divers other Manors, Lands and Tenements.

In November 1550. he had the Grant of the Office of High Steward, More Grants  
of the Manors of *Westborough*, *Caltborp*, *Riskington*, *Hekington* and to him.  
*Welborn* in *Lincolnshire*; and of all other Lands, Tenements, &c. which Warr. Book.  
were the Demains of *Thomas*, late Duke of *Norfolk*, for Life, with the Fee of five Pounds by Year, for the High Stewardship, and four Pounds by Year for the Keeper of the Courts. In Jan. 17. he obtained of the King a Licence, that where of late he had enclosed a several Ground in *Aflabr*, alias *Aflakby*, and *Kirkby Underwood* in the County of *Lincoln*, for a Park, that from henceforth it should be a free and lawful Park for keeping and feeding of Deer. The next Day, viz. Jan. 18. he had of the King the Reversion of the Office of Steward of the Honour of *Bullingbroke* in *Lincolnshire*, and of all the Manors Lands, &c. in the Parties of *Kesteven*, Parcel of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, for Life, after the Death of Sir *William Hufsey*, Knight, and all Fees, Profits, &c. This was lately given to the Lord *Clinton* in Possession; for that Sir *William Hufsey* was supposed to be dead: Now new signed and granted in Reversion. In the very next Month he obtained the Gift of all the Lordship's Manors, Lands, &c. lying in the Town of *St. Botolph*, alias *Boston*, in *Lincolnshire*, belonging to the late Chantry of *Corpus Christi*, founded within the said Town, The Value not expressed, To be holden by Fealty. And to take the Profits from Easter, An. 2. EDWARD VI. The next Month, viz. March 7. An Indenture passed between the King and Edward, Lord *Clinton*: Witnessing that the Lord *Clinton* had bargained and sold unto his Highness all his Lordships and Manors in *Folkingham*, *Aflackby*, &c. And the King had bargained and sold unto the said Lord, the Lordships and Manors of *Wy*, and the Rectory of *Wy* in the County of *Kent*, with divers other Lands, &c. And a Gift of the same Date of the Lordship and Manor of *Wy*, and other Lands, to the yearly Value of 358-15-8. Again, March 16. he had the Office of keeping the Castle of *Bullingbroke*, and the Office of Porter there. March 20. he had the Office of Steward of the Lordship of *Newark* upon *Trent*, and of all the Lands, Tenements, &c. whatsoever in *Newark*, and the Office of the Constable of the Castle there, and of the Bailiff of the same, for Life with Fee.

Anno 1551. March 25. He had a Lease of the King for sixty Years Still more.  
of the Manors of *Folkingham*, *Aflabe*, and *Temple Aflaby*, in the County of *Lincoln*, with divers other Lands. In April he was made Knight of the Garter, at the same Time when the French King was elected into the same Order. And the King gave him a *George*, set with eight small Diamonds, which had been the Earl of *Southampton's*, late deceased.  
The



**ANNO** The same Month he had the Office of Steward and Keeper of the Courts of all the Lordships and Manors in the County of *Lincoln*, Parcel of the Possessions of the late Monasteries of *Valday Newbo*, *Swinshed*, &c. and divers other Lands, &c. (as appear by his Letters Patents) in the same County, for Life, with several Fees amounting to 100 Mark.

1550.

*Anno 1552.* In recompence of his Journey to *France*, for the baptizing of *Edward Alexander*, the Son of the *French King*, in the Name and Place of King *EDWARD* his Godfather; the said King by Patent, dated *April 15.* gave him the Manor of *Kingstown* in *Somersetshire* with the Advouson, and the Manor of *Chisilbourn* in the County of *York*, with the Advouson. Which were lately Parcel of the Possessions of Sir *Thomas Arundel*, and came to the King's Hands by his Attaindor. To hold to him and his Heirs, with some Rent reserved to the King. And the same Year a Patent of Licence, dated *Nov. 1.* was granted to the Bishop of *Carlisle*, to sell to the said Lord Admiral his Soke or Lordship of *Horncastle* in the County of *Lincoln*, together with all the Appurtenances and Hereditaments in the Villages, Field, Parishes of *Horncastle*, *Overcompton*, *Nethercompton*, *Ashby*, *Marning*, *Wilsby*, *Haltam*, *Conesby*, *Boughton*, *Thimelby*, *Morby*, *Maram*, and *Enderby* in the same County, with the Advousons therunto appertaining: Licencing also the Dean and Chapter to confirm and ratifie the same: And granting Licence to the said Lord to pay a yearly Rent of 28-6-8. to the said Bishop and his Successors for ever, out of the Premises. And to have these Letters Patents with Discharge of the Fees of the Seal. In *December*, a Lease for two Hundred Years was granted him by the King of the Bishop of *Hereford's* House in *London*.

The Duke of Somerset restored.

The Duke of *Somerset*, now after his Imprisonment, Submission and Pardon, was called *April 10.* to the Privy Council: Who sued for himself to be again admitted to the Privy Chamber. And was so the 14th of the next Month. And his Estate being forfeited and given to the Crown by Parliament, *An. 3* and 4 *Reg.* the King of his special Favour, and at the humble Petition of the Lords of his Council, by Patent sealed *June 4.* gave him back of that, it seems, which had been his before, the Castle of *Marleborough*, and all his Lordships and Manors of *Barton*, *Ludgarshal*, *Alborn*, and *Old Wotton*, and his Parks of *Ludgarshal*, great *Vastern*, little *Vastern*, *Alborn Chase*, and *Alborn Warren*, and the Forests and the Liberties of the Forests of *Bradon*, and *Savernake*, with the Appurtenances in the County of *Wilts*; and divers other Lordships Manors, Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Wilts*, *Southampton*, *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Middlesex*, *Berks* and *Bucks*. And *June* the 14th. In Consideration of the Castle and Lordship of *Sleford*, and other Lands and Manors in the County of *Lincoln*, the King, by Patent of the same Date, gave him all and singular the Messuages, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments with the Appurtenances in the Town of *Glastenbury* in the County of *Somerset*, and other Lands and Tenements in *Kingston upon Hull*. The which were valued at 214-14-5 obq. per annum.

And Lands given him. King *Edw.* Book of Sales.

Message from the Council to the Lord *Arundel*.

The Earl of *Arundel*, one of antient Nobility, but to whom the Earl of *Warwick* bare no good Will, for certain pretended Faults had been fined very deep, wherof he was remitted afterward by the King's Clemency. To him had the Lord *Cobham* and Mr. Comptroler been sent. And " *July 13.* they were with him, [with their Message, which was

to



“to go with a Force into *Suffex* for the Prevention of Stirs, there likely  
 “to arise:] But they found him not disposed to go, [taking his late Pu-  
 “nishment in no small Indignation.] He pretended Sicknefs, Poverty,  
 “and lack of Provision. And that since his Fine was set, he thought  
 “himself restored to Favour with tthe King’s Council also, which he  
 “had dearly bought; considering that in his own Conscience he had  
 “never offended. Wherefore it seemed strange to him now to be com-  
 “manded into *Suffex*. Whereupon the Council resolved, that the Lord  
 “Admiral, the Lord *Cobham* should go again unto him, and require  
 “him to send back the Pardon that he had sued and obtained of the  
 “King, and telling him that he would find means that they should come  
 “to the Trial of this Justification of himself, and to be used according  
 “to Justice. And as to his going into *Suffex*, he was commanded no  
 “otherwise than as all other Noblemen are in the whole Realm, for  
 “the preserving the Peace of the Country between this and *Michaelmas*,  
 “in eschewing such Inconveniencies as happened last Year. To this his  
 “direct Answer was required.” By the sequel it appears he went not  
 into *Suffex*, for the Duke of *Somerset*, as was hinted before, was dis-  
 patched thither.

“*July 19.* It was not thought convenient for the Earl of *Warwick* to go  
 “into the *North*, as was before ordered; but rather, for many urgent  
 “Occasions, to attend the King’s Person; and Sir *R. Bowes* to remain  
 “Warden of the Marches, as he was before. For the Courtiers did not  
 “care to give their Enemies the advantage of their Absence in the present  
 “Factions at Court.

“*January 13.* Mr. *Chamberlain*, Ambassador with the Lady Regent  
 “in *Flanders*, complained by Letters to the Council, that it was decla-  
 “red that he was, by the expresse Command of the Emperor, prohibited  
 “the Service of God in his House there, according to the Order of the  
 “Realm, contrary to the Privilege and Liberty granted to Ambassadors  
 “in all Countries. Wherefore it was thought convenient and for the  
 “King’s Honour, that the Emperor’s Ambassador here should be sent to,  
 “and advertised, that the King thought it strange, seeing he had the  
 “liberty here to do in his own House as he would: And that if his  
 “Ambassador be denied the liberty of Divine Service in his House in  
 “*Flanders*, the Emperor’s Ambassador must be prohibited the same li-  
 “berty in *England*, and be constrained to use the Forms of Service only  
 “by Law established in this Realm, and to have no Mass. That he  
 “should take the Message for Warning. The Bishop of *Ely* and Mr. Se-  
 “cretary *Petre* should deliver this Message to him.

“*Febr. 3.* The Lord *Maxwel* of *Scotland* made a Request for License  
 “to pass through *England* from *France* to *Scotland*, with sixteen Horse in  
 “his Retinue. This matter being debated seemed to be of great Impor-  
 “tance; That the *Scots* should pass to and fro through the Realm, *Scot-*  
 “*land* being made *French*. Which Liberty would much advance the  
 “*French* Affairs, and hinder our Men. It was resolved he should not  
 “pass this way. Which, with fair Words, was dissembled under this  
 “pretence, that the Realm had been so charged with the furnishing of  
 “those that, since the Peace concluded, had thus passed to and from,  
 “that we could not conveniently any longer support it. Wherefore he

VOL. II.

Hh

“was

A N N O

1550.

Warwick goes

nor into the

North.

The Ambassa-

dor in Flan-

ders forbade

the English

Service.

The Council

deny a Pass to

the L. Maxwel.



*A N N O* " was prayed to have patience. The Council before this had granted many Passes to and from *Scotland* and *France*.

*1550.* To the Lady *Elizabeth*, the King's Sister, he now granted, for fulfilling the King his Father's last Will, the whole Scite, Sept, Circuit, Compass and Precinct of the late Monastery of *Missenden* in the County of *Bucks*; and all and singular the Houses, Edifices, &c. lately in the Occupation of *Richard Grenway*; and divers other Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments in *Bucks*, *Bedford*, *Hertford*, and divers other Counties, to the yearly Value of 3106*l.* 13*s.* 1 ob. *q.* Rent reserved 106*l.* 13*s.* 1 ob. *q.* The King also this Year made over to her the Manor of *Hatfield Episcopi*, alias *Regis*, late parcel of the Possession of the Bishop of *Ely*. This, with other Lands, were valued at 44*l.* 15*s.* 10 ob. yearly. This was granted upon consideration of her parting with the Manor of *Easter* in *Lincolnshire*.

Lands granted  
to the Lady  
*Elizabeth*.  
*Book of Sales*.

From this her Manor of *Hatfield*, and perhaps not long after this time, did the said Lady write an ingenious Letter to the King her Brother, who had desired her Picture. Which was as follows:

Her Letter to  
the King upon  
his desiring  
of her  
Picture.  
*Vespasian F. 3.*

*L*ike as the Rich Man that daily gathereth Riches to Riches, and to one Bag of Money layeth a great sort, till it come to Infinite: So methinks your Majesty, not being sufficed with many Benefits and Gentleness shewed to me afore this time, doth now encrease them in asking and desiring, where you may Bid and Command; requiring a thing not worthy the desiring for itself, but made worthy for your Highness Request. My Picture I mean: In which if the inward good Mind toward your Grace might as well be declared, as the outward Face and Countenance shall be seen, I would not have tarried the Commandment but prevented it, nor have been the last to grant, but the first to offer it. For the Face I grant I might well blush to offer, but the Mind I shall never be ashamed to present. But tho' from the Grace of the Picture the Colours may fade by Time, may give by Weather, may be spited by Chance; yet the other, nor Time with her swift Wings shall overtake, nor the misty Clouds with their lowring may darken, nor Chance with her slippery Foot may overthrow.

Of this also yet the Proof could not be great, because the Occasions have been so small, notwithstanding as a Dog hath a Day, so may I perchance have Time to declare it in Deeds, which now I do write them but in Words. And further, I shall humbly beseech your Majesty, that when you shall look on my Picture you will witsafe to think, that as you have but the outward shadow of the Body afore you, so my inward Mind wisheth that the Body itself were oftner in your Presence. Howbeit, because both my so being I think could do your Majesty little Plesure, tho' myself great good: And again, because I see as yet not the Time agreeing thereunto, I shall learn to follow this Saying of Orace, *Feras non Culpes quod vitari non potest*. And thus I will (troubling your Majesty I fear) end with my most humble Thanks; beseeching God long to preserve you to his Honour, to your Comfort, to the Realms Profit, and to my Joy.

From *Hatfield* this 15th Day of May.

Your Majesty's most humble  
Sister and Servant,  
*ELIZABETH.*

The



The King also this Year granted Lands to *Thirlby* Bishop of *Norwich*; *A N NO* that is to say, for the Sum of 130*l.* 10*s.* and in consideration of Ser- *1550.* vice, the King made over to him the Manor of *Fritb* and *Newbal*, with the Appurtenances in the County of *Middlesex*, lately parcel of the Possessions of the late Bishopric of *Westminster*, of the yearly Value of 13*l.* 1*s.* The Test of the Patent was *April 9.* Again, by a Patent dated two Days after, viz. the 11th of *April*, of the Kings special Grace he granted him for Augmentation of the Bishopric of *Norwich*, all that Manor, Rectory, and Church of *Happesborough* in the County of *Norfolk*, with all the Rights, Members and Appurtenances therof, formerly belonging to the Monastery of *Wymondham* in the same County, lately dissolved, together with divers other Manors and Tenements in the Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Lincoln*: The yearly Value 303*l.* 18*s.* 9*d.* Rent reserved 52*l.* 19*s.* 10*ob.* and 64*l.* 15*s.* 11*ob.* And by Patent dated *June 19* following, in consideration of the Manor of *Happesborough*, with other Lands and Tenements, the King granted him the Manors of *Northereke*, *Houghton*, alias *Laxhams*, *Brauncchebal*, and *Snorings* in the County of *Norfolk*, with the Appurtenances, formerly belonging to the late dissolved Priory of *Blackborough*, and divers other Lands and Tenements in the County of *Norfolk*; of the yearly Value of 53*l.* 2*s.* 8*d.* Rent reserved 23*s.* 9*d.*

Grants to  
Bp. Thirlby.

And this Year did *William Morice*, Esq; of *Higb Ongar* in the County of *Essex*, make a Purchase of the King, which I the rather mention to revive the Memory of a good Man, and ancient Professor and Confessor of Religion. For he had been a great Friend and Patron of *Latimer*, under the Reign of King *Henry*: And in the very latter end of his Reign suffered Imprisonment for Religion in the *Charter House*, *London*, then inhabited by *Sir Robert Southwel*, and narrowly escaped with his Life by the Death of that King intervening. He was the Father of *Rafe Morice*, Secretary to the most Reverend Father and Martyr *Cranmer*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*. This memorable Person, with *Edward Isaac* (he of *Kent* I suppose, who under Queen *MARY* was an Exile) purchased of the King, for 1213*l.* 5*s.* 2*d.* all that Messuage or Tenement and one Garden in the Tenure of *William Meryl*, situate in *Neylond* in *Suffolk*, lately belonging to a Chauntry called our *Ladies Chauntry* in *Neylond*, and divers other Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments, in the Counties of *Suffolk*, *Somerset*, *Devon*, *London*, *Cambridge*, *Cornwal*, *Dorset*, to the yearly Value of 72*l.* 11*s.* 7*d.* The Patents bare date *July 8.*

Will. Morice:  
his Purchase.

I find a learned and well-deserving Man now gratified by the King, namely, *Walter Haddon*, L.L.D. and Master of *Trinity Hall* in *Cambridge*. To him the King, out of his special Grace, granted the Office of Reading the Civil Law within the University of *Cambridge*, durante Beneplacito, with the Salary of 40*l.* The Patent bore date *March 21.*

Dr Waddon  
public Reader  
of Law.

It was in the Year 1550, or very near it, that the famous Scotch Divine *John Knox*, was appointed Preacher to *Berwick*, and after that to *Newcastle*: Whence he came more Southward, and at length to *London*; where he became known to the King and Court, whence he received a Salary; and here and in the Parts of *Buckinghamshire* he remained till the Death of King *EDWARD*.

Knox first  
comes into  
England.



ANNO

1550.

## CHAP. XXIX.

*Sectaries. Certain incomplicant Bishops punished. Churches of Strangers in London and Glastenbury. A Lasco and Pollanus; their Pastors. The Strasburgh Liturgy. Bucer's Death. Anabaptists.*

WE shall now spend some Lines in Matters relating to the present state of Religion in the Realm. And first we shall consider some that prejudiced and hindred it: Both such as pretended to the Profession of the Gospel, and others that were open Enemies to it. *Sectaries* I mean, and *Papists*.

The Sectaries  
in Kent and  
Essex.

Foxii MSS.

Their Tenets.

*Sectaries* appeared now in *Essex* and *Kent*, sheltering themselves under the Profession of the Gospel: of whom Complaint was made to the Council. These were the first that made Separation from the Reformed Church of *England*, having gathered Congregations of their own. The Congregation in *Essex* was mentioned to be at *Bocking*: That in *Kent* was at *Feverham*, as I learn from an old Register. From whence I also collect, that they held the Opinions of the *Anabaptists* and *Pelagians*; that there were Contributions made among them for the better maintaining of their Congregations; that the Members of the Congregation in *Kent* went over unto the Congregation in *Essex*, to instruct and to join with them: And that they had their Meetings in *Kent* in divers places beside *Feverham*. The Names of some of the chief of these *Sectaries* in *Kent* were, *Henry Hart*, *Cole* of *Feverham*, *George Brodebridg*, *Humphrey Middleton*, (who were their Teachers, as it seems) *William Greneland*, *John Grey*, *William Forstal*, *Edmund Morres*, *Laurence Ramsay*, *Thomas Broke*, *Roger Linsey*, *Richard Dimeslake*, *Clark*, *Nicolas Tong*, *John Plume* of *Leueham*, and *Cole* of *Maydston*. Their Teachers and divers of them were taken up, and found Sureties for their Appearance, and at length brought into the Ecclesiastical Court; where they were examined in forty six Articles, or more. Many of those before named being deposed upon the said Articles, confessed these to be some Sayings and Tenets among them: "That the Doctrine of *Predestination* was meeter for Devils than for Christian Men: That Children were not born in Original Sin. Which were *Cole's* Assertions. These that follow were taught by *Hart*: "That there was no Man so chosen, but that he might damn himself; neither any Man so Reprobate, but that he might keep God's Commandments and be saved. That *St. Paul* might have damned himself, if he listed: And that Learned Men were the cause of great Errors: That his Faith was not grounded upon Learned Men, for that all Errors were brought in by Learned Men. Other Doctrins of theirs were, "That God's *Predestination* was not cer-

"tain,



"rain, but upon Condition. That to play at any manner of Game for  
 "Money is Sin, and the Work of the Flesh. That they ought not to  
 "salute any Sinner, or a Man they knew not. That lust after Evil was  
 "not Sin, if the Act were not committed. That *Adam* was elected to  
 "be saved; and that all Men being then in *Adam's* Loins were prede-  
 "stinatèd to be saved; and that there were no Reprobates. That the  
 "Preaching of Predestination is a damnable thing. That we are not to  
 "communicate with Sinners: And many other.

But beside these Sectaries there was Information sent to the Court Preaching in  
 in *June* this Year of another sort in *Essex*, but they, as it seems, more Essex on  
 harmless, namely, certain that came together on other Days besides *Sun-* Work days  
*days* and Holydays, to hear Sermons, who had Preachers that then complained  
 preached to them: And that, for ought I perceive, was all their Fault;  
 for I do not find any false Doctrin or Sedition laid to their Charge.  
 The Lord Chancellor *Rich*, who was no Favourer of the Gospel, being,  
 as it seems, at one of his Houses in *Essex*, sent Word of this to the  
 Council; shewing the danger of this Practice, as being likely to breed  
 the common People up in a neglect of their ordinary Callings, and  
 an indulging of themselves to Idleness. But I suppose the Truth was,  
 he was afraid the knowledge of the Gospel should spread too much. The  
 Issue of this was, "That *June* 23. a Letter was directed to the Bishop And forbid-  
 "of *London*, declaring the disposition of the People to Idleness; and den.  
 "praying him therefore to take Order for Preaching the Holydays only, N. Bately.  
 "till a better time of the Peoples Inclination: As the Minutes run in  
 the Council Book. Of which some larger notice hath been given before.

One *Hickson* now appeared, who pretending to have a Spirit of Pro- Hickson a pre-  
 phesy, had used divers strange Practises; among which he touched the tended Pro-  
 King's Person and the Estate of this Realm: And was therefore, *May* 16. phet.  
 committed to the *Tower* by the Council. Counc. Book.

One *Warreham* a Priest, who had been eighteen Years out of the Warham a  
 Realm, returning in a manner disguised, and being suspected of matter Priest su-  
 of Importance, was also committed to the *Tower* by Order of Council. spected.

Order had been given in *June* the last Year, from the Council to Bi- Masses still in  
 shop *Bonner*, against the use of Masses, said privately in some of the Pauls.  
 Chapels in *St. Paul's*, under the Name of our *Ladies Communion*: And  
 that for the future (to prevent it) the Communion should be celebrated  
 no where else but at the High Altar, and at no time else but at the times  
 when the High Masses used to be said. Of which Order of Council  
 the Bishop certified the Dean and Chapter: Yet still, to this time, even  
 under *Ridley*, who was now Bishop, the Communion was celebrated  
 with such Superstitions, as tho' it were a Mass. Of this some informed  
 the Council, and that when the Eucharist was celebrated, it was in ef-  
 fect a Mass: Whereupon the Council thought fit to appoint certain in-  
 telligent Persons, favourers of the Gospel, to go to *Pauls*, and there to  
 observe well what Deviations were made from the late Order prescribed.  
 For *Octob.* 11. 1550. it was Ordered, "That *Thomas Astley* join with Council Book.  
 "two or three more honest Gentlemen in *London*, for the Observation of N. B.  
 "the usage of the Communion in *Pauls*; wherof Information was given,  
 "that it was used as the very Mass. Such a secret good Will did many  
 of the Priests and Churchmen belonging to the Cathedral, still bear to  
 the old former Usages.

The



ANNO  
1550.

The Church also of *Westminster*, nearer to the King's House than any other, was not yet freed from its Superstitions, both in Apparel and Books, which were still preserved there. Which occasioned a Letter dated in *February* from the King and his Council to the Members of that Church; "That, in the Presence of Mr. Vicechamberlain, and Sir *Anthony Aucher*, all manner of Garnishments and Apparel of Silver and Gold, such as Altar-cloths, Copes, &c. should be taken away, and delivered to the said Sir *Anthony*: And to deface and carry out of the Library at *Westminster*, all Books of Superstition; such as Missals, Breviaries, Processionals, &c.

Three Bishops  
laid aside.

But for the taking better Order with Cathedrals, influenced much by their respective Bishops, as one, viz. *Boner* of *London* was deposed last Year, so we find three incomplicant Prelats more this Year under Confinement in the *Tower*, *Gardiner* Bishop of *Winchester*, *Heth* of *Worcester*, and *Day* of *Chichester*. The particular Reasons wherof may be read in other Histories: *Gardiner* was this Year, toward the latter end thereof, judicially Deprived; as the two others were the Year following; the former for refusing to assist at the Reforming of the old *Ordinal*, and the latter for denying to obey the Order of the Council for taking away the Altars in their Dioceses. For this Contempt, as it was stiled in the *Council Book*, they were both deprived *October 5. 1551.*

Bp. *Gardiner*  
his Matter.  
*Cranm. Memor.*

As for Bishop *Gardiner* his Story is related at length elsewhere. He was dealt very honourably with, having divers Messages sent to him from the King, and divers of his chiefest Ministers repairing to him, to confer with and persuade him. Among the rest, once the Lord Great Master, the Lord Treasurer, the Master of the Horse, and the Secretary, brought him certain Articles to Subscribe, together with the Kings Letter: Which being omitted in *Cranmers Memorials*, and so expresse of the Matters wherin the Bishop gave Offence, I shall here insert from the Original.

By the King.

EDWARD,

The Kings  
Letter to Bi-  
shop *Gardiner*.  
MSS. G. Petyt  
Armig.

"IT is not, We think, unknown unto you, with what Clemency and  
"Favour, We, by the Advice of our Council, caused you to be  
"heard and used, upon those sundry Complaints and Informations, that  
"were made to us and our said Council of your disordered Doings and  
"Words, both at the time of our late Visitation, and otherwise. Which  
"notwithstanding, considering that the Favour, both then and many  
"other times ministred unto you, wrought rather an insolent Wilfulness  
"in your self, than any obedient Conformity, such as would have be-  
"seemed a Man of your Vocation, We could not but use some Demon-  
"stration of Justice towards you, as well for such notorious and apparent  
"Contempts and other Inobediences, as after and contrary to our Com-  
"mandment, were openly known in you: As also, for some Example  
"and Terror of such other, as by your Example seemed to take Courage  
"to mutter and grudge against our most godly Proceedings: Wherof  
"great Disorder and Inconvenience might have ensued. For the avoid-  
"ing wherof, and for your just Deservings, you were by our said  
"Council committed to Ward. Where, albeit we have suffered you to  
"remain



“ remain a long space ; sending unto you, in the mean time, at sundry  
 “ times, divers of the Noblemen and others of our Privy Council, and  
 “ travailing by them with Clemency and Favour to have reduced you to  
 “ the knowledge of your Duty ; yet in all this time have you neither  
 “ knowledged your Faults, nor made any such Submission as might have  
 “ befeemed you, nor yet shewed any appearance either of Repentance,  
 “ or of any good Conformity to our godly Proceedings. Wherewith  
 “ albeit we have good cause to be offended, and might also justly, by the  
 “ order of our Laws, cause your former Doings to be reformed and pu-  
 “ nished to the Example of others ; yet for that We would both the  
 “ World and yourself also should know, that We delight more in Cle-  
 “ mency than the streit administration of Justice, We have vouchsafed  
 “ not only to address unto you these our Letters, but also to send es-  
 “ sones unto you four of our Privy Council, with certain Articles ; which be-  
 “ ing by Us, with the Advice of our said Council considered, We think  
 “ requisite, for sundry Considerations, to be subscribed by you. And  
 “ therefore Will and Command you to subscribe the said Articles, upon  
 “ pain of incurring such Punishment and Penalties as by our Laws may  
 “ be put upon you, for not doing the same. Yeven at our Palace of  
 “ *Westminster* the VIII Day of *July*, the fourth Year of our Reign.

ANNO  
1550.

*E. Somerset. W. Wiltshire. J. Warwyk. J. Bedford. W. Northampton.*  
*E. Clynton. G. Cobham.*  
*W. Paget. A. Wyngfeld. W. Herbert. Edw. North.*  
*W. Petre S.*

When his Case came before the Commissioners, he had the liberty of  
 producing favourable Witnesses in his behalf. And they were many,  
 and some Persons of Honour, as the Lord *Rich*, Lord Chancellor, Lord  
*Paget*, Sir *John Baker*, Bishop *Tunstal*, Bishop *Thirleby*, *John Seaton*, D.D.  
*William Meddow*, *John White*, *Thomas Watson*, Clerks, (these four last  
 his Chaplains), *Francis Allen* his Secretary, *James Bassett*, *Jaques Wing-*  
*field* his Proctors in this Process, *William Coppinger*, *John Dawie*, *Rich.*  
*Hampden*, *Will. Brown*, *Thomas Growt*, *Robert Massie*, and a great many  
 more, some his Chaplains, and others his Officers or Servants. Their  
 Depositions and Testimonies are all set down at large in *John Foxes* first  
 Edition of his Acts.

The Bishops  
Witnesses :

It may be observed here, that some of the Bishops Witnesses were of  
 the Privy Council : But it was at the request, as was pretended, of cer-  
 tain of the Bishops Servants. And was favourably granted by Order of  
 Privy Council ; which was to this Tenor : “ *Jan. 19.* This Day two of  
 “ the Bishop of *Winchesters* Servants came to the Council, and desired  
 “ certain of them [of the Council] to be sworn upon certain Articles,  
 “ for Witness on his [the Bishops] behalf. Wherunto they answered,  
 “ that upon their Honours, and as they would answer before God, they  
 “ would witness truly according to their Conscience, and as effectually  
 “ as if they were sworn upon a Book.” And when the Lord *Rich*,  
 Lord Chancellor, on the eighth Session, or Court-day, was to be Depo-  
 sed, (that I may mention this by the bye) he declared, that Honourable  
 Personages, being of Dignity and Office (as he was) were by the Laws  
 of the Realm privileged, not to be sworn in common Form as other Wit-  
 nesses ;

Whereof  
some were of  
the Privy  
Council.



**ANN O** 1550. nesses: Promising nevertheless, upon his Truth to GOD, his Allegiance to the King, and upon his Fidelity, to certify the Truth. And the Judges did operate him upon his Truth to GOD, his Allegiance to the King, and his Honour and Fidelity, to depose the plain and whole Truth.

A Church granted the Strangers.

John a Lasco their Pastor.

Lavater. Hist. Sacramentar.

The Patent.

An Order from the Council for this Church.

A Lasco marries again.

And as these Checks were given to Sectarism and Popery this Year, so Countenance was shewn to the true Profession of the Gospel: One Instance wherof follows; Great Numbers of Pious Foreigners, *Dutch* and of other Nations, were now in and about *London*: Many wherof were driven out of their own Countries by the Popish Persecution. These had a Place assigned them for their safe assembling themselves together for the public Worship of GOD: Being a large and fair part of the Church of the *Augustin* Friery dissolved. And one *Johannes a Lasco*, a Nobleman of *Poland* became their first and chief Pastor. This Man had abandoned his own Country and Honours to dwell an Exile in other Parts, for the freer Acknowledgment of the Gospel: But not without the *Polish* Kings good Leave, to whom he was well known and beloved. For so a Foreign good Historian teaches us: *A Lasco left Poland; sciente & permittente Rege: Cui propter Ingenii Dexteritatem charus erat, & qui in arduis Negotiis ejus Opera non semel usus est; That is, By the knowledge and permission of the King, to whom, for his excellent Parts he was dear, and who did more than once make use of him in his difficult Affairs.*

The Date of King EDWARD's Grant of this Church to these Strangers, and the particular Place where, is ascertained from that King's *Book of Sales*, being set down in these Words; "The King, *de speciali Gratia*, of his especial Grace, granted the Superintendent and Ministers of the Church of the *Germans* and other Strangers, *Totum illud Templi sive Ecclesiam nuper Fratrum Augustinens. in Civitat. Lond. ac totam Terram, Fundum & solum ejusdem Ecclesie.* The Test of the Patent was, *Jul. 24. An. 4 Edw. 6.*

As for *A Lasco* he was very vigilant in exercising Preaching; administering the Sacraments, Disciplin and Government, as being Superintendent, and deserved well of this Church. And when in the Year 1552, some of them received Molestation for not frequenting the Parish Churches where they dwelt, according as the Laws then directed; and Opposition seems to have been made by some busy Persons, to hinder the Exercise of Religion in this Church; *A Lasco* made his Complaint above, where he was much respected, and got this Obligation of going to the Parish Church dispensed with, and allowance for them to resort still to their own Church. For he obtained this Order of Council: "*Nov. 4. 1552. Ordered, that the Bishop of London should confer with John a Lasco, and between them devise some good means for appeasing the Disquiet lately happened in the Strangers Church in London, upon execution of the Statute for coming to Church. And, in the mean while, till the Matter may be further considered, to suffer the said Strangers to repair to their accustomed Church, as they were wont to do.*"

*A Lasco* buried his Wife Anno 1552. And for his Conveniency, Comfort, and for the better Managery of his domestic Affairs, married again not long after. For he had divers young Children: One was called *Barbara*, and another *Thomas*, (to whom I suspect Archbishop *Thomas Cranmer* was Godfather, and gave him his own Name.) Which Marriage

age



age *Peter Martyr* then at *Oxon* approved of. For when *John Utenbovius*, A N N O  
a Man of Nobility, Piety and Learning, and one of the Ministers of the 1550.  
*Dutch Church* in *London*, had by Letter advised the said *Martyr*, lately  
also become a Widower, to take another Wife, as *A Lasco* had done;  
“The good Man thanked him for his Counsel, and added, That so he  
“would, if he were in *A Lasco*’s Case, and had Children young and nu-  
“merous as he had. Wherefore he much commended and liked what he  
“had done. But as for himself he had no Child, and was grown into  
“Years. And therefore thought it better for him to remain as he was.”  
As I collect from a private Letter of his.

*P. Martyr’s*  
Judgment  
therof.  
*Biblioth. Eccl.*  
*Belg. Lond.*

This grave Nobleman and Servant of GOD, resided some time in his  
Youth at *Basil* in *Switzerland*: where he seemed first to have tasted the  
Word of GOD, and seen the Errors and Superstitions ordinarily practi-  
sed in the Church. Here he was, while *Erasmus*, that great Scholar,  
abode here, by whom he was well known and highly esteemed. And, as a  
peculiar Testimony therof, he made a Sale of his Library to him in his  
Life time, to enjoy after his Death, paying such a Sum. Which *Eras-*  
*mus* forgets not to specify in his last Will; wherein is this Clause, “*Biblio-*  
“*thecam quidem meam, &c. i.e.* I have sold my Library to *M. John a Lasco*,  
“a *Pole*, according to a Bond made between us upon this Contract. Yet  
“let not the Books be delivered, before he pay to my Heir 200 Florins.

*A Lasco*  
known to *E-*  
*rasmus* at  
*Basil.*

It was one commendable Practise of this Church of Strangers, that  
good Discipline was preserved in it, to bring scandalous Sinners to open  
Shame, whatever their outward Qualities or Respects were. To this  
Church, at this time, belonged a Scholar and a Preacher, named *Michael*  
*Angelo Florio*, an *Italian*; who preached to a Congregation of *Italians*,  
and had the Countenance of the Archbishop and the Secretary; by both  
whose Means he had an Annuity of 20*l.* for Life, payable by the King  
quarterly. But having been found guilty of an Act of Fornication, he  
underwent the Censures of the Church, and was deposed from his Mi-  
nistry. Afterwards enjoined Penance, which he performed. But some  
time after seemed to have been restored again. This was entred into the  
Acts of the Church. In the Year 1566. I find *Grindal* Bishop of *Lon-*  
*don*, sent unto *Cousin* and *Wing*, the *Dutch* Preachers, that they would  
transcribe out of the said Acts or Register, a short Account, what was  
done with this *Italian* for his scandalous Sin in deflouring a Maid, and  
the Form of the public Penance enjoined to, and performed by him.  
But after search, this Book was not to be found then among them. And  
the Ministers abovesaid conjectured, that *Martin Micronius* had carried  
it along with him to *Embsen*, when that Church was broken up upon  
Queen *Mary*’s access to the Crown.

Disciplin ex-  
ercis’d in this  
Church.

*Mic. Angelo*  
*Florio.*

Nor must the Church of Strangers at *Glastenbury* in *Somersetshire* be  
unmentioned, with *Valerandus Pollanus* their Preacher and Superinten-  
dent. These consisted chiefly of Weavers of Worsted. The good  
Duke of *Somerset*, to whom that dissolved Abby was granted, settled  
them there by Indenture between him and them, with a Promise to lend  
them Money to buy Wool and Necessaries, to carry on their Manufa-  
ctures, and allotted them Rooms for their dwelling, and ascertained certain  
proportions of Land for feeding of their Cows; and lastly, appointed one  
*Henry Cornish* to be their chief Overseer, to take care of them, and to  
see them provided with all things needful for them and their Trades.  
But upon the Disgrace and Misfortunes of the Duke, these honest Mens

Strangers  
placed at  
*Glastenbury.*



ANNO  
1550.

The Liturgy  
of the Stran-  
gers Church  
at Strasburgh,  
removed to  
Glastenbury.  
N. Bat.

Industry was at a stand for a time, till some farther Encouragement came to them from the Privy Council; as we shall hear by and by.

This Church seated at *Glastenbury* came from *Strasburgh*, flying thence by reason of the *Interim*. *Pollanus* had come to this Church eight Years before. In *February* 1550, being in *London*, there he set forth in *Latin* the Liturgy of these Strangers, which they used in their Religious Worship at *Strasburg*: That so exposing, as I suppose, their Worship to public View, they might the easier be admitted in *England* to the free exercise of it. The Epistle Dedicatory was to King *Edward*, dated *Feb. 19. 1551.* that is, according to the Computation of the Church of *England*, 1550. Herein he wrot, "That he thought it worth his Pains to put into "*Latin* the Rites and Manners (never sufficiently commended) used by "the Strangers Church at *Argentine*, Exiles for the Gospel of CHRIST: "being induced to it as a Point of Duty, understanding how this good "Church had been slandered by some, for changing their Religion; by "others, for the licentiousness of their Manners. He also mentioned "Aphorisms of their Disciplin, which he intended e're long to publish: "And gives this high Character of the said Church, That there was "none purer, or that came nearer to that which was in the Apostles "Times. This Liturgy is short. It was printed in *October* and bare this Title:

*Liturgia Sacra, seu Ritus Ministerii in Ecclesia Peregrinorum Profugorum propter Evangelium Christi, Argentine 1551. Cum Apologia pro hac Liturgia. Per Valerandum Pollanum Flandrum.*

The Particu-  
lars of the  
*Strasburgh*  
Liturgy.  
N. Bately.

And because some more particular Account of this Foreign Liturgy may, perhaps, not be unacceptable to some, I shall here set it down.

The Service for the Lord's Day. First, *Sursum Corda*. Then the first Table of the Decalogue is sung in Rhime. Then the Pastor standing at the Table, turning to the People thus begins, *Our help is in the Name of the Lord, &c.* A short Exhortation to confess their Sins. A Confession. [The Sentence, the Exhortation and Confession are the same which are at this Day used in the *French* Congregations, and prescribed in their Liturgy. But therein is nothing of this that follows.] Then the Pastor rehearseth to the People some Sentence out of the Scripture of the Remission of Sins, in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, the People either kneeling or standing all this while. Then the Gospel is read. Then the Absolution is again repeated. Then the rest of the Decalogue is sung. Then the Pastor exhorteth them to Pray. Then follows a very short Prayer, like one of our Collects, That God would give them Grace to keep the Commandments. Then the same Collect is sung. And the Pastor goes up into the Pulpit: Where he first Prays, and then Preaches upon the New Testament, beginning some one Book of it, and going on till he hath ended the whole Book, in several Sermons. Then a Prayer. Then Banns of Mariage are published, Baptism celebrated, the Sick particularly prayed for, Alms collected by the Deacons. Then comes a long Prayer, the same with that prescribed in the *French* Form, for the whole Church, after Sermon. Then the Apostles Creed. Then, when there is a *Communion*, the Pastor first rehearseth the Institution of that Sacrament out of



of 1 Cor. xi. Then he subjoins an Excommunication of all Idolaters, *ANN O*  
 Blasphemers, Heretics, Schismatics, Perjured, Seditious, Contentious, *1550.*  
 Disobedient to Parents, Whoremongers, Thieves, Covetous, &c. and  
 forbids any such to partake of the said Supper. Then he makes an Ex-  
 hortation concerning the Lords-Supper. Then he Communicates in both  
 Kinds himself; next the Deacon in both Kinds; then all the Men first,  
 and after them all the Women, approach reverently to the Table:  
 Where the Pastor, at one end of the Table, gives to every one of them  
 the Bread one by one; and the Deacon at the other end of the Table  
 gives them the Wine. A Psalm of Praise being sung all the while by  
 the People. The Pastor in giving the Bread to every one says, *The*  
*Bread which we break is the Communion of the Body of Christ.*  
 The Deacon in giving the Cup, says to every one, *The Cup which we*  
*bless is the Communion of the Blood of Christ.* Then follows the same  
 Thanksgiving and Benediction which is at this Day used by the *French*  
 Protestants. Here ends the Morning Service,

At Noon, after the singing of a Psalm, the Children are Catechized  
 and Instructed in the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Command-  
 ments, for an Hour.

At Even, after a Psalm was sung, a Sermon. After the Sermon a  
 Prayer and the Benediction.

The daily Service. Every Morning a Psalm is sung, a Prayer, a Ser-  
 mon, a Prayer and Benediction in the Pulpit.

The Service of Repentance. Every *Tuesday* was a Day of more so-  
 lemn Devotion to deprecate God's Judgment, and confess their Sins  
 in this Form: A Psalm, the Confession, a Sermon, a long Prayer, the  
 same as above.

The Service of Baptism is the same which is used by the *French*, ex-  
 cept that the Parent and Godfathers brought the Child. The Minister  
 asked them, *Will you have this Child baptized in the Name of the Father,*  
*and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.* They answered, *This we desire, &c.*

The Service of the Blessing of Wedlock, and of Visitation of the Sick,  
 the same with the *French*.

The Service for Ordination of Ministers, and Ecclesiastical Disciplin,  
 not much differing from that which the *French* now use.

Further Notices of this Church of Strangers at *Glastenbury* may be Orders of  
Council for  
the Strangers  
of Glastenbury.  
Conc. Book.  
 taken up from several Orders that issued from the Privy Council, con-  
 cerning them, as they were taken out of the Council Book, viz. "Nov.

"11. 1551. An Order sent to *Valerandus Pollanus*, Chief and Superin-  
 tendent of the Strangers, Worstedmakers at *Glastenbury*, signifying unto  
 them, that Order is taken with *Henry Cornish* for the Conclusion of such  
 Conveniencies as were drawn and articulated between the Duke of  
 Somerset and the said Company, willing him and them, for the ac-  
 ceptance of the said *Cornish* as their Director herein, as they had done  
 heretofore.

"Ordered also, That *Henry Cornish* do agree with them for divers  
 Leases, &c.

"Ordered also, The Auditor and Receiver of the Duke of Somerset's  
 Lands to conclude such Articles as were agreed upon, &c. And to  
 take an Account of *Henry Cornish*, appointed by the said Duke to be  
 the Overseer of the said Strangers; and to advance Money for them.



A N N O

1550.

" March 22. 1551. Ordered that the Bishop of Bath, Sir Hugh Pawlet, Sir John St. Loo, &c. do consider the void Places and Rooms about the Monastery of *Glastenbury*, that may be fittest for the placing such Strangers there as are not already provided for: And to put the same Rooms in such Order as the said Strangers may inhabit in them, as soon as may be, having regard nevertheless to the best way of saving Charges as they think may be devised.

" Nov. 29. 1552. A Letter sent to the Bishop of Bath, Sir John St. Loo, Sir Ralph Hopton, and *Cloptwood*, signifying, That it is agreed to provide for 36 Household Strangers at *Glastenbury*; and for every of them so much Ground as may keep two Kine, as good cheap as other Inhabitants do there commonly pay.

MSS. D. Hen.  
D. Episc. Lond.

Add to the rest of the Favours shewed to these Strangers Exiles planted at *Glastenbury*, what I find in the Councils Warrant Book, viz.

" Decemb. An. 5 Regis; A free Denizenship to *Valerandus Pollamus*, born under the Emperor, with a Clause written under the said Bill, to make 69 like Letters Patents to 69 other Persons, whose Names are mentioned therein.

R. Edward's  
Account of  
Bucer's Death.  
Journal.

*Martin Bucer* that godly Confessor and public Professor of Divinity at *Cambridge*, died in February. King EDWARD, in his Journal, thought it not unworthy to make a Memorial of this good Man's Death; writing therupon after this Tenor: " Feb. 28. the Learned Man *Bucerus* died at *Cambridge*; who was two Days after buried in *St. Maries Church* at *Cambridge*; all the whole University, with the whole Town, bringing him to the Grave, to the number of 3000 Persons. Also there was an Oration of Mr. *Haddon* made very elegantly at his Death; and a Sermon of [Dr. *Parker*.] After that Mr. *Redman* made a third Sermon. Which three Sermons made the People wonderfully to lament his Death. Last of all, all the Learned Men of the University made their Epitaphs in his Praise, laying them on his Grave." What Time King EDWARD assigned for the Day of *Bucer's* Death, we saw above: But, according to *Sleidan*, he died the last Day of February save one: And, according to *Nicolas Car*, in his Letter from *Cambridge* to Sir *John Cheke*, on the Calends of March.

James Bucer.

One *James Bucer* was Minister of a Dutch Church at *Sandwich*, about the beginning of Queen *Elizabeth*, in the Year 1562. But whether he were a Son of *Martin Bucer* I cannot affirm.

Melancthon  
sent for.  
Councils War-  
rant Book.

For the supply of *Bucer's* room in *Cambridge*, to read sound Divinity there, the King sent a Latin Letter to the great Learned German, *Philip Melancthon*, to come over into England; certifying him, that His Majesty had elected him in *Bucer's* Place in that University. But this Letter was not writ till the Month of May, in the Year 1553. And probably *Melancthon* might have come over had not the King's Death prevented.

Bucervisit  
P. Martyr at  
Oxon.

The Summer before his Death, July 22. being *S. Mary Magdalens* Day, upon *Martyr's* Invitation, *Bucer* came to *Oxford* with *John Pradford* and some others, to see that University and his dear Friend and Fellow Professor. Where, before he departed, he read a Lecture in *Christ Church*, upon that Text, *Sanctifica eos, O Pater, in veritate, &c.* Tho' *Bucer* were well esteemed and highly valued by some of the best Members of the University where he Professed, yet, as his Colleague at *Oxon*, he



he underwent much Slander and Disesteem from the general sort, ad-  
dicted to asperse Sobriety and Godliness. Wherof to give an Instance,  
The two hopeful Sons of *Katharin* Dutchess of *Suffolk* being admitted  
Students at *Cambridge*, and she, as it seems, for their sakes, some time  
sojourning there, had, among other her Kindnesses, sent *Bucer* a Cow and  
a Calf, towards the Maintenance of his Family. It happened that he  
walked out one Day, for his Recreation, into the Fields to see them: Up-  
on this his Enemies reported of him, That he was taught by a Cow and  
a Calf what he should read in the Schools, as tho' they were some Magic  
Spirits that assisted him. Which coming at length to the good Man's  
Ears, he said in a Joke, without any Passion, *Behold! these are my Ma-  
sters, whence I have learned what I teach others: And yet they can nei-  
ther speak Latin nor Greek, Hebrew nor German, nor talk with me in  
any other Language.* To which I will add one Defamation more,  
and that as impudent as uncharitable: The Author, one *Pontac*, of *Bur-  
dois*, having the face to publish it in print, in a Book set out not long  
after *Bucer's* Death: That *Bucer* upon his Deathbed said, *That Jesus  
Christ was not the promised Messias, but that we were to look for another.*  
Sufficiently confuted, not only by the long course of his pious Life, but  
also by those many Persons that were with him in his last Sickness, and  
testified of the devout and holy End which he made.

A N N O  
1550.

Defamed and  
belyed.  
*Vit. Juelli,*  
p. 260.

Among his Enemies and those that opposed him in the University,  
were *Dr. Redman* and *Dr. Yong*. Among his Friends there were *Dr.*  
*Parker*, *Dr. Haddon*. Among those that consorted to him were *Brad-  
ford* the Holy Martyr, and *Roger Ascham*, that fine Wit; one, whom for  
his great Parts and Ingenuity he loved much. Whose frequent Discourses  
with him (as he told his Friend *Sturmius* of *Argentine*) were fresh in  
his Memory: Which were sometimes about the State and Motions of  
Religion and of the Commonwealth; sometimes concerning the right  
Course and Method of Learning, and such like. For *Bucer* was very  
useful in promoting Learning and Religion at Home, as well as in the  
Schools; communicative in excellent Discourses to as many as repaired  
to him, as Friends or Learners. The forementioned *Ascham* and he had  
much Discourse together concerning that Learned Man of *Argentine*,  
*Jo. Sturmius*, and of putting him upon Reading on *Aristotle*, by their  
joint Letters. The good Dutchess of *Suffolk* must be remembered with  
Honour, who, knowing his Worth, cherished him in his Sickness by  
Night and by Day; of whom she had a tender Care, and endeavoured  
his Cure and Recovery, if possible.

His Enemies:  
His Friends.

Lib. 1. Epist.

So wise and useful was the Conversation of him and his Fellow, the  
Kings Professor of *Oxford*, that a Man in those Days of great Fame for  
Learning and Vertue, who was acquainted with them both, called them  
"That golden couple of Fathers, and confessed, that he received an  
"ineestimable Benefit of GOD, that he did once hear, see and know those  
"notable Fathers; esteeming more, one Days Conference with them,  
"than all the vainglorious Pomp of *Osius*, a *Portugal* Bishop [who had  
"spoken contemptibly of them,] and that those two worthy Personages  
"did as much surmount him in Wisdom and Learning, &c.

*Haddons* Cha-  
racter of him  
and Martyr.  
*Answ. to Oso-  
rius, fo. 29. b.*

We heard before of *Anabaptists* and such like Sectaries, that shewed  
themselves in *Kent* and *Essex*; insomuch that the Ecclesiastical Courts  
were fain to take notice of them. But that Cognizance, it seems, sufficed

A Commission  
against Ana-  
baptists.

not:



**ANNO** not: For in *January* a special Commission was issued forth against them  
**1550.** from the King, to one and thirty Persons, viz. to *Thomas* Archbishop  
 of *Canterbury*, the Bishops of *Ely*, *London*, *Lincoln*, *Norwich*, and *Roche-*  
*ster*, *Nic. Wotton* Dean of *Canterbury*, *Will. Petre*, *Will. Cecil*, *Richard*  
*Cocks*, *Anthony Coke*, *James Hales*, *Tho. Smith*, *John Cheke*, *Will. May*,  
*John Taylor*, *Simon Haynes*, *Gryffith Leyson*, *John Redman*, *Hugh La-*  
*timer*, *Giles Eire*, *Matt. Parker*, *Miles Coverdale*, *John Oliver*, *Richard*  
*Liel*, *Roland Taylor*, *Christopher Nevynson*, *Richard Goodrick*, *John Gos-*  
*nold*, *Richard Wilks*, *Henry Sidal*, and *Nic. Bullingham*; or to any three  
 of them: whereof the Archbishop, the Bishops of *Ely*, *Norwich*, and  
*Rochester*, *Nic. Wotton*, *Petre*, *Cecyl*, *Cox*, *Hales* and *May* to be one.  
 These were authorized to correct and punish all *Anabaptists*, and such  
 as did not duly administer the Sacraments according to the Book of  
*Common Prayer* set forth by the King's Majesty.

### CHAP. XXX.

*Cecyl becomes Secretary. Gentlemen of the Kings Privy Chamber. Sir Thomas Wroth. The Earl of Arundel. Bullingers Counsils to the King. Hoper and Alasco. Ridley made Bishop of London. Visits his Diocess. Gives Orders. Ponet made Bishop of Rochester.*

*Cecyl made Secretary. Council Book.*

*His Character.*

**A**ND now to turn our Eyes a little to the King. He being now at *Otelands*, *Dr. Wotton*, the present Secretary, a Man much employed abroad in Embassies, was released of his Place, and *September 5.* *William Cecyl*, Esq; was sworn Secretary in his stead, tho' he seemed to have officiated in that Place a Year before, according to a Diary of his own, wherein he writ, that in the Month of *September*, 3 *Edw. VI.* he was chosen into the Office of Secretary. And in *October* following he had the Grant of 100*l. per Ann.* during Pleasure, out of the *Augmentation Office*, as his Salary. This Man deserves to stand upon Record, as meriting highly of this Church, I may say, above any one Person about King *EDWARD*, or Queen *ELIZABETH*, and taking vast Pains in settling it in that good Constitution wherein it stands. He was a Man of great Wisdom and sincere Religion and Integrity, and endued with abundance of admirable Qualities, both as a Statesman and a Christian: And was the very Basis, under *GOD*, of Queen *ELIZABETH*'s Government, and worthily esteemed among all Men, in those Days, the very *Nestor* of his Age. But all this hath of late been swallowed up and clearly forgotten;



gotten, because of one Act of his, which is wont, by some, to be laid to his Charge, viz. of getting the Hundred of *Nassaburgh*, with the Appurtenances, from the Bishopric of *Peterburgh*: And the Observator upon *Cranmers Memorials* is among this number, who falls very foul upon him, saying, That he tore away from that Bishopric the far better part of the Revenue thereof, and that he got a Bishop removed that he might compass it. Which he had from *Heylin* a too hasty and passionate Writer. This is not a place to enquire into the truth of this Accusation; which, for my part, I doubt of: But I must needs say, it is very ingratfully done of the Age, especially of the Clergy, to set this Great and Good Man in so bad a Light, to blacken his Memory as they do, and to forget so many and so great good Turns, for one supposed ill one.

A N N O  
1550.

As there was now a new Secretary, so there was, a little after, a new Master of the Rolls. For in *December* the Office of Master of the Rolls was granted to *John Beaumont*, Esq; for Life, with all Fees and Profits therunto belonging, in as large and ample manner as *Sir Robert Southwel* lately had it. But how he managed this Place for his own Advantage, we shall hear hereafter.

A new Master  
of the Rolls.

The King had divers sober and learned Men about him, Gentlemen of his Privy Chamber; in whose wise and learned Conversation he was much delighted, and as much profited. For great Care was taken by his Uncle, the Duke, to have only such about his Person. And for these, as a grateful Master, he had a great Kindness, and expressed it in Royal Bounty to them. And whosoever of these was in greatest Favour with him, surely *Sir Thomas Wroth*, a Gentleman of the *West*, was one of those that received the largest Share of Benefits from him: For he not only Knighted him, but heaped great Wealth, Honours, Offices, and Possessions on him. Whereof these were some:

The Kings  
favour for *Sir  
Thom. Wroth*.

In the fourth Year of his Reign, of his special Grace and in consideration of Service, he granted him the Reversion of the Office of Keeper of his Manor *Elsing* in *Endefeld* in the County of *Middlesex*, and the Office of Steward and Bailiff of the Manors of *Elsing* and *Worcester*, and of the Manor of *Edelmeton*, and of Keeper of the New Park in *Enfeld*, after the Death or Surrender of *John Earl of Warwick*. The Value of which Offices were five Marks and sixty Shillings *per Annum*, and eight Pence *per diem*. The Patent dated *March 10*.

Grants to him  
Book of Sales.

*April 9* following, for the like Consideration, the King granted him the Manors of *North-hall*, *Down-Barnes*, and *Hamsted*, with their Appurtenances, Rights and Members, in the County of *Middlesex*; parcel of the Possessions of the late Bishopric of *Westminster*. The Value whereof yearly amounted to *65 l. 15 s. ob.*

*July 24* following, for the like Consideration, the King granted him the Lordship and Manor of *Bardfield*, and the Town of *Bardfield* in *Essex*, and the Manors of *Chigwel* and *West-Hatch*, with the Appurtenances in the same County. Value yearly *77 l. 15 s. 4 d.* Rent reserved, *11 l. 2 s. 3 d.*

*Decemb. 29* following a Patent dated at *Greenwich* was granted to *Sir Thomas Wroth* of the Privy Chamber, of the Manors of *Lidiard* in *Somersetshire* and *Theydon Boyce*, and the Scite and Demean Lands of *Berden* in *Essex*, with the Appurtenances; the Scite and Demean of *Abendon*, and

Chancellor  
*Goodrick's*  
Ledg. Book.  
*Warr. Book.*



**A N N O** and other Lands: To have to him and his Heirs, in respect of an Annuity of an hundred Mark already cancelled. Which Lands were of the yearly Value of 84*l.* 8*s.* 11*ob.* *q.*

1550.

In the fifth of the King he had an Annuity of 100*l.* granted him out of the Bishopric of *Winchester*.

Warr. Book.

In *June*, the sixth of the King, he had the Office of keeping the chief House and Messuage of *Sion*, and the Office of Steward and Bailiff of the Manor of *Isleworth* in the County of *Middlesex*; and all other Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments in *Isleworth*, *Twickenham*, *Heston*, *Whitton*, *Sutton*, *Brainford*, &c. in the same County, for Life; with all Profits, and a Fee for keeping of the House of *Sion*, &c. [Which House and Lands belonged before to the Duke of *Somerset*.] In *September* after he granted the same Sir *Thomas*, the rich Furniture and Bedding of the same House, which had been the said Dukes.

Besides which, in the third of the King, he granted him the Rectory of *Mytton* in *Yorkshire*, with all the Rights and Appurtenances in the said County and in the County of *Lancaster*, and five Messuages in *London*, during the Life of *Bartholomew Burgoyne*, Clerk.

L. Dyers Rep.  
Fol. 167.

The Lord *Rich* and Sir *Thomas Wroth* were joint Patentees for an Office in *Waltham Forest* (it was, I suppose, that of Lieutenant of the Forest) for the Term of their Lives. The Lord *Rich* (*Wroth* being fled abroad) under Queen *MARY*, surrendered his Patent in the Chancery, and there it was cancelled. And upon this a new Patent was granted of the Queen to Sir *Edward Waldgrave*, one of her Privy Council. But when *Wroth* returned, under Queen *ELIZABETH*, he sued for the said Office; alledging, that he had never surrendered his Patent. And so, I suppose, he had it again: As his Son Sir *Robert* enjoyed it after him.

Sir *Thomas Wroth* had also of the King the Manor of *Ewing* in the County of *Hertford*, and the Manor of *Newton* in the County of *Somerset*.

The King sometimes would Exercise and Play with him: And once he won of the King Ten Yards of black Velvet, which he received, by Order, from the King's Wardrobe.

His Posterity.

This Gentleman was an Exile under Queen *MARY*, with his Family, but returned into *England* after her Death, and was in great Favour with Queen *ELIZABETH*, and lived many Years in singular Reputation in *Enfield*, augmenting his Estate, and serving his Country long in the Quality of a Member of Parliament. He had Issue, *Robert* (who was Knighted,) *Richard*, *Thomas*, *Gersom*, and *John*; wherof *Gersom* was born in Exile, on which Account he had his Name; and by a private Act, in one of Queen *ELIZABETH*'s first Parliaments he was made a Free Denizon. Sir *Robert* kept up the State of the Family, and enlarged his Possessions by the Purchase of *Lucton*, or *Loughton*, in *Essex*, an Estate belonging to the Duchy of *Lancaster*, wherof his Father in Law had a long Lease before. He bought also of the Queen divers other Leases of Lands therabouts, that formerly belonged to the Abby of *Waltham*. I meet with *John Wroth*, Esq; of this Family I doubt not, who obtained a Pardon of King *RICHARD III.* with a Clause in the same of Fines, Amerciaments, and other Debts and Accounts by him due. For that he was Escheator in the Counties of *Somerset* and *Dorset*. The Name and Family still continues in *Essex*, but the Estate greatly diminished: The uncertain Lot of all Secular Things. Pardon, Reader, this Digression,



Digression, which my Neighbourhood to that Seat, and knowledge of *ANNO* that Family drew from me.

I subjoin the mention here of another Courtier, of greater Quality than *Wroth*; I mean *Henry Earl of Arundel*, a Person of ancient Nobility, and lately Lord Chamberlain. The last Year he was fined 12000*l.* for Misdemeanors. And now again this Year I find another for the Payment of 1000*l.* to the Treasurer of the *Augmentations*. And a Debt owing to the King lay upon him, *viz.* 8800*l.* taxed and cessed upon him for a full recompence of certain Contempts by him against the Law made and committed. For which he had given eight several Recognizances, remaining in the Court of *Chancery*, wherby he stood bound to the King. What these Contempts were, I know not. King EDWARD in his *Journal* calls them, *Certain Faults*; and writes, that he had committed them within twelve Years. So it seems he was now call'd to Account for twelve Years past: Which was somewhat hard, and a sign he had Enemies at Court. But he received the Favour to have a clear Discharge from this Debt. For in *January* a Warrant was sent to the Lord *Rich*, Lord Chancellor, to cancel every of the said Recognizances, and the Enrolments of them; so that the said Earl, his Heirs, Executors, &c. may be thereby discharged. The Court was minded not to lose this Nobleman. But yet it seems he could not long hold in, an Heartburning being between some of the Court and him: For in the next Year I find this Earl, with the Earl of *Southampton*, wholly discharged the Council Board and commanded to keep his House. And the Year after that, he was fain to pronounce a solemn submission before the King, as we relate in due place.

1550.

A Debt of the E. of Arundel pardoned.

The Parliament that had been sitting from the 4th of *November*, broke up the first of *February*. The Duke of *Somerset*, notwithstanding his Enemies among the Nobility, remained still favoured by the Commons. And some, as it seems, in the Lower House were consulting among themselves for his Restoration to the Office of Protector of the Kings Person, which was taken away from him in his late Troubles; but seemed to be prevented by the breaking up of the Session. Yet they intended the next Session to set about it. In the mean time the Lords were to be prepared: And *Whaley* particularly, the Receiver for *Yorkshire*, endeavoured to persuade divers Noblemen to make the Duke Protector the next Parliament. For which *Whaley* was brought into Trouble in *February*. And the Earl of *Rutland* was one that was Witness against him.

Endeavours to restore the Duke to his Protectorship.

In *March* (whether that were in the latter end of the Year 1549, or the beginning of 1550, I know not) *Henry Bullinger*, the chief Minister of *Zurich* (a wise Man and of great esteem in the Protestant Churches) dedicated, in a long Epistle to King EDWARD, his third, and part of his fourth *Decad*; being many Learned Discourses upon the chief Heads of Religion: Invited, I suppose, by some in *England*, for the young Kings Benefit, so to do; that King having a great reverence in his Mind for the foreign Learned Reformers. In the entrance of his Epistle, being a Stranger, he makes way for his admission and liberty of Speech to the King, by promising to shew him, in a few Words, the certain Causes of the Happiness or Misery of Kings and Kingdoms.

Bullinger dedicates a Book to the King.

"Your Royal Majesty (as he begins) would I know admit to Speech some new Guest, that should undertake, from the Judgments of the



ANNO  
1550

“ wisest Men, to lay before you, in short, what the real Causes were of  
“ the *Felicity* or *Infelicity* of Kings and Kingdoms. Your Majesty there-  
“ fore will not, I hope, exclude me from access to you, who do surely  
“ promise you, clearly and evidently to demonstrate the very Reasons  
“ thereof before you; that whosoever hears me needs not attend with  
“ any painful diligence to apprehend me, but bring with him only a  
“ benevolent Mind. For, by GOD’s help, I shall offer it in that man-  
“ ner, that it shall not only be perceived by their Understanding, but  
“ be as it were seen with their Eyes and felt with their Hands. And  
“ this fetched not from the dubious *Placits* of Men, but the most cer-  
“ tain Oracles of the true GOD.

Then he suggested to him what those things were which the Wise  
Men of the World agreed in, to be proper to render a King or a King-  
dom very happy: namely, “ If he were a Wise King that presided and  
“ governed; if he had about him for his Counsellors many such as were  
“ Men of Prudence, stay’d in Years, Faithful, and such as understood  
“ the Affairs of the World: If he had Captains that were Valourous,  
“ Well-exercised, and Fortunate in War: If he were furnished with  
“ plenty of all things: If his Kingdom were on all Parts well Fortified,  
“ and, in a word, his Subjects all of one Mind, Loyal and Obedient.  
“ These things, he said, were rightly and prudently spoken: But that  
“ there was another singular and most excellent thing omitted, without  
“ which no true Prosperity could be obtained or preserved; and where  
“ that was, those other things mentioned before would also be. After  
this manner of Preface did *Bullinger* heighten the Pious Kings Expectati-  
on; which this Learned Man satisfied in his following Discourse, di-  
recting him straightway to GOD’s Word. “ GOD, said he, who sug-  
“ gests the most wise and absolute Counsils more succinctly and better  
“ than the wisest Men, thus pronounceth in his Gospel, *But rather seek*  
“ *first the Kingdom of God and his Righteousness, and all these things*  
“ *shall be added unto you.* And again, *Blessed are the Eyes which see the*  
“ *things which ye see; for I say to you, that many Kings and Prophets*  
“ *have desired to see and hear those things which ye see and hear, and*  
“ *have not seen nor heard them.* Therefore, as he subjoined, being war-  
ranted by the Holy Oracles of GOD, I pronounce, that those Kings  
“ shall be happy, who offer and subject themselves and their Kingdoms  
“ intyrelly to JESUS CHRIST, the *King of Kings and Lord of Lords*;  
“ acknowledging him to be the highest Prince and Monarch, and them-  
selves his Vassals, Liegemen and Servants: that in all things follow  
“ not their own Wills, nor the Laws of Men, contrary to those that are  
“ GOD’s; nor the good Intentions of Men, but the very Laws of the  
“ highest and eternal King and Monarch; and that deliver them to their  
“ Subjects to be followed by them: Reforming all things according to  
“ the Rule of GOD’s Word only. For so they shall enjoy most flou-  
rishing and happy Kingdoms, and reign therein, Wealthy, Victorious,  
“ Long and Happy.

Then he shewed the King, “ How GOD commanded the Kings  
“ of old, that they should read the Book of the Law; and quoted that  
place in *Deuteronomy* xvii. “ *When the King sitteth in the Throne of his*  
“ *Kingdom, he shall take the Book of the Law of God, that he may read*  
“ in



"in it all the days of his Life, and do those things, and not depart *ANNO*  
 "from them, either to the right hand or to the left. 1550.

Then he represented to the King, in a long Series, the History of the Kings of *Judah* and of *Israel*, and of other foreign Kings, both before *CHRIST* and after: And how the Godly, and those that took heed to *GOD'S* Law, were prosperous, and the neglecters thereof Unsuccessful and miserable. And when he came to young *Josiah*, the King of *Judah*, he took occasion to lay down his Example at large before this young King; expatiating, "How peaceably and prosperously he reigned, of whose Faith and Obedience, which he most religiously yielded to *GOD*, the Scriptures speak: How the Admonitions of his Fathers Counsellors moved him not: How when once he heard the Words of the Book of the Law, found in the Temple by *Hilkiah* the High Priest, he gave himself wholly to *GOD* and his Word, and not expecting the Opinions or Reformation of other Kings and Kingdoms, he in time took care of his own Subjects, and began to set upon the Work of Reformation when he was young, being but eighteen Years old: And that in this Reformation he esteemed the Rules of the Holy Scriptures alone to be followed; not the Actions of Kings or Predecessors, nor the Prescription of long Time, nor the Suffrages of numbers of Men: But calling together his own People, and propounding the Book of the Law in the midst of them, appointed all things to be done according to that Rule: And that hence it came to pass, that he spared not the old High Places of *Solomon* and *Jeroboam*, set up against *GOD'S* Law; nor the most ancient Rites and Ceremonies. In short, He shewed, how that King overthrew whatsoever was set up in the Church and Kingdom against *GOD'S* Word. And lest any should lay to his charge as tho' he were too bold, or too severe in these his Deeds, the Scripture, as he added, gave him this Testimony, That before him was no such King, who turned to the Lord with his whole Heart, and with his whole Soul and strength, according to all the Law of *Moses*: neither after him arose any like him.

Towards the Conclusion he applied himself to the King more closely, telling him, "That the reason of all that he had said before was, that he should hold it for a most undoubted truth, that true Prosperity was to be procured by him no other ways, than by submitting himself and his whole Kingdom to *CHRIST*, the highest Prince, and by framing all Matters of Religion and Justice throughout his Dominions, according to the Rule of *GOD'S* Word; not stirring one Inch from this Rule; propagating the Kingdom of *CHRIST*, and trampling upon that of Antichrist, as he had happily begun. Not that the King wanted, as he said, his Admonition or Teaching, carrying in his Mind that Heavenly Teacher that suggested to him all the Doctrines of true Religion; and having that most sacred Book, the *Bible*, in which as in a most perfect Canon, was contained and delivered the whole Substance of our Salvation; having about him Men that were Learned, Wise, Godly, Bold, well skilled both in Divine and Human Laws, Prudent, hearty Lovers of sincere Truth, and well spoken of in foreign Countries. But he hoped, as King *Hezekiah*, tho' he made use of those great Prophets *Esay* and *Micah*, yet he refused not to be advised by the ordinary *Levites*; so His Majesty should receive some Fruit and



ANNO  
1550.

"Benefit by his Discourse: Having twelve Years before, dedicated to his Father, King HENRY of happy Memory, a Book concerning the Authority of the Holy Scripture, and the Institution and Function of Bishops, against the Roman Superstition and Tyranny: And he found that Work had some good effect in England." By such Dedications and Counsils as these the young Kings Mind was mightily whetted, and quickened to the taking care of Religion. And I make no doubt Bullinger and others were Instructed by some good Men here at home, to make these kinds of Addresses to him.

Dedicates another to him

This Epistle and Book was presented to the King by the Hands of Hoper, Bishop of Gloucester, personally acquainted with Bullinger. To whom the King declared his good Acceptance thereof, and the Respect and Esteem he had for the Reverend Author. In August ensuing Bullinger dedicated the remaining Sermons of the Fourth Decad unto the same King: Which the Author said he did offer him with more Confidence and Assurance than he had done the former, since he understood by that holy and vigilant Bishop the Kings gracious Good-will towards him. In the Dedication of these Sermons he suggested to His Majesty, "That He had his Eye upon nothing else but what he had mentioned to him before; namely, that he might assist, according to the Gift of God given unto him, the Business of Christian Piety, happily reviving in his flourishing Kingdom, under his Favour and the Counsils of the best of his Nobility. He shewed him, that for this new Birth of the Gospel, all the Faithful throughout the Christian World did Congratulate Him and his Kingdom; beseeching CHRIST to bring to an happy Conclusion what had been so happily begun in his Fear. He acknowledged that this Work, by the King undertaken, was great, and full of Labour and Trouble: But he who said, *I will be with you always to the end of the World*, would not be wanting to his godly Endeavours." Then that Reverend Father thought it convenient to take this Opportunity, to refute a very plausible Plea that was wont then to be urged in Germany and in England, and particularly to the King, to divert the present purging of corrupt Religion, (and this was much in the Mouths of the more Politic sort) namely, That such haste ought not to be made by private Authority, but that Men ought to stay for the Determination of a General Council in Controversies of Religion; without whose Judgment they pretended it was not lawful, no, not for a Kingdom, much less for any Commonwealth, to make the least Alteration in Religion once received, and hitherto observed. But to this he put this Answer into the King's Mouth, "That the Prophets and Apostles sent us not to the Councils of Elders or Priests, but to the Word of God. And he alledged that of the Prophet Jeremy, *Quomodo dicitis, Sapientes sumus, & Lex Domini apud nos est? Verè Mendacium operatus est Styhus mendax Scribarum, &c.* He added, That the Authority of the Prophets and Evangelists persuaded to go on, and further with suitable Encreases the Reformation of Religion once undertaken in the Fear of God, out of the Word of God; and not to regard Councils, which were governed by the Affections of Men, and not by the Word of God.

Chap. 8.

Then he went on to shew, "How little might be expected from the Decisions of Councils; which the Examples of some of the last Ages might teach for four hundred Years past and better. That for five

"hun-



" hundred Years and more, the best and most religious Men have cried *A N N O*  
 " out of the Superstitions, Errors, and Abuses crept into the Church: *1550.*  
 " That the Salt of the Earth was become Unfavoury, that is, That the  
 " Ministers of the Church were corrupted by Sloth, Ignorance, and  
 " vile Actions, and all good Disciplin was gone. Upon which Account  
 " Councils of Priests were often called together by Popes, Princes as-  
 " sisting. But what was done, what Amendment there was of Doctrins,  
 " of Teachers and of Disciplin, the thing itself spake. For how much  
 " the oftner Councils met, so much the more prevailed Superstition, Er-  
 " ror in Doctrin, Abuses in Rites, Pride, Luxury, Covetousness, and  
 " all manner of Corruption in the Teachers or Priests; and, in short,  
 " a most foul neglect in all good Disciplin. For such presided in those  
 " Councils, who ought to have been first brought into Order, or alto-  
 " gether banished out of the Society of Holy Men. Neither did they  
 " in those Councils treat of lawful Causes, nor in a lawful Way. For  
 " the Word of GOD obtained with them neither its Authority nor Dig-  
 " nity. Nor did they admit to the discussion of Causes those whom they  
 " ought chiefly to have admitted, but whom they themselves would.  
 " Neither did they seek the Glory of God and the Safety of the Church,  
 " but themselves, and the Glory and Plesures of the World. And from  
 " the present Council [that of *Trent*] what they could promise to them-  
 " selves, tho' they were blind, they might even feel.

And then having thus represented, what little good was like to come  
 from Councils, he applied himself to the King, with these Words:  
 " That when these things were as clear as the Sun, he did most pru-  
 " dently and religiously, in not looking for the Determination of a General  
 " Council, but proceeding, without more ado, to reform the Churches in  
 " his Kingdom according to the Rules of both Testaments, which we  
 " believe aright to be Inspired by the Holy Ghost, and to be the very  
 " Word of God:

He shewed, moreover, in the next place, " That it was lawful for  
 " every Christian Church, much more Christian Kingdom, without con-  
 " sulting with the Church of *Rome* and her Members, intirely to reform  
 " Religion by them depraved, so it were according to the Rule of God's  
 " Word. And then propounded to the King the Example of *Josiah*;  
 " whose Doings would teach him what he might do, and do by Divine  
 " Right; How that most Holy King understood, by reading of God's  
 " Word, and by considering how Divine Worship and other Matters  
 " stood then in the Church, that there was a very extraordinary swer-  
 " ving from the simple Truth by his Forefathers. Presently therefore he  
 " called together his Princes, and all the Estates of his Kingdom, toge-  
 " ther with all the Priests. And in this Assembly it was not long dis-  
 " puted, whether they should follow the Example of their Ancestors,  
 " rather than simply to receive that which God had commanded; whe-  
 " ther should they believe the Scripture or the Church. But that im-  
 " mediately the King commanded all to do according to God's Precepts,  
 " making no account of ancient Custom, or of the Church that then  
 " was. And therefore that His Majesty could not follow better and safer  
 " Counsil." Thus seasonably did this grave and learned Man instruct  
 this young and towardly Prince, and arm his Mind against an Objection  
 which



ANNO  
1550.

*Bullinger*  
writes an E-  
pistle Dedicat-  
ory to the  
Marquis of  
Dorset.

The reason,

And sub-  
stance therof.

The true Pur-  
pose of cal-  
ling the  
Council of  
Trent.

which subtil Men in these Times were apt to insinuate to him, to stop him in his commendable Endeavours for a Reformation.

In *March* after the said *Bullinger* dedicated the remainder of his Decads to one of this King's Council, *Henry Grey*, Marquis of *Dorset*, and afterwards Duke of *Suffolk*. Which was advisable to be done for the confirming this, and other great Leading Men, and such as were always at the King's Elbow, in the Proceedings that were making in Religion. To which this grave Man apprehended some stop might be made by a plausible occasion that now happened; which was the issuing out of a Bull of the Indiction of the OEcumenical Council (as they called that of *Trent*) on the Calends of *May* next [1551.] "From whence, as some every where, he said, seriously looked for a Reformation of the Church, so he supposed some in *England* expected the like: And that therefore they judged, there should be a Cessation from the Reformation begun. He therefore advised this Nobleman, that he should diligently see and watch what damage the Kingdom might hence sustain. And then he proceeded to shew, by solid Arguments, "That the expectation of a Reformation thence would be most vain. For that the Council was called by this Pope upon no other ends, than for the confirmation of the old Errors and Superstition, and for the overthrow of the Reformation begun in *Germany*, *England*, *Denmark*, and other Nations of Christendom; and for the oppression of the pure and sincere Doctrine of the Gospel. Here he shewed, how the Calling of the Council was in express Words, *For the extirpating of Heresy*: And Pope *Paul* did accuse and condemn, as Heretics, those that professed the Gospel, and required Reformation according to the Word of God: And how the Prelats of the Church took an Oath to the Pope and Church of *Rome*, (there set down;) so that they could not do any thing else, than what he would have them, and what tended to his Safety and Security.

He took occasion to examine some of the former Decrees of this Council; by which it appeared, as clear as the Light, for what end it was Indited by the Pope: "Not, that the Truth should be found out, or illustrated by the Scriptures, but that the Scriptures should be reduced into Order, so as to serve for the preserving and confirming the Dignity, Honour, Wealth, and Superstition of those Men: Not, that the Churches might be Reformed, but that they might be brought back into the old Deformation. And therefore he advised the Marquis, and the rest in *England*, that they should not remove their Eyes from that Light, which whosoever followed, had the Light of Life. Go on, go on, said he, in CHRIST's Name, to reform what needs reforming. Ye should not sin, tho' ye never returned into favour again with that novel *Roman* Church. He knew, he said, this Nobleman needed not Instructors, being so well instructed in true Religion, and having such Learned Men about him: Among whom he named two, who I suppose, were his Chaplains, viz. *Robert Skinner* and *Andrew Wullock* [perhaps *Bullock*:] yet he hoped this labour of his would be well taken; seeing he intended nothing thereby but the public Weal and Safety; that the Kingdom of the Son of GOD, which in that time began to flourish again, as well in *England* as elsewhere, might spread every where. And so taking notice of his Nobility and Royal Blood, and what a Refuge he was to poor Strangers, and a *Mecenas* of Students

"and



"and Learned Men, and perswading him to persist therein, he concluded: *ANN O*  
 "Desiring him to recommend him to the Noble minded *John* Earl of *1550.*  
 "Warwick, to whom he wished all Happiness and offered all Services. ~~~~~  
 Dated from *Zurick* in the Month of *March* 1551.

And indeed great was the Brotherhood and Friendship between the Foreign Divines and ours. *A Lasco* was one of these, who had lived in *Helvetia*, and was greatly acquainted with *Bullinger*. In this Year 1550, wherein his *German Church* was first constituted in *Auslin Friars*, I find *Hoper* spending a whole Day in friendly converse with him and some of his Church. *A Lasco* had wrot to *Utenbovias*, his Elder and Assistant, to invite *Hoper* and his Wife, who was an *Helvetian Woman*, to Dinner with him; Propounding, that they should meet the next Day at eight in the Morning at *Utenbovias's House*, and confer about certain Business relating to Religion, I suppose, and their Church, between themselves and some of their Members, and then to dine with *A Lasco*, and spend the Afternoon in Conversation. *Utenbovias* repaired to *Hoper*, shewed him *A Lasco's Letter*, and *Hoper*, at the foot of it, writes an Answer; which for the sake of the Reverend Martyr's Memory, I shall here set down; as I took from the Original.

*A Lasco and Hoper appoint a Meeting for Conference.*

*Ex Biblioth. Eccl. Belg. Lond.*

*S. P. Per me non stabit, quin, Deo volente, cras adero; & si valetudo uxoris mea non obstat, votis D. nostri A Lasco annuet. Hodie multa capitis gravedine fuit multata. Scio, & si corpore aberit, mente nos comitabitur. Quod perpetuo erga vos faciet Deus suo spiritu. Interim ematur aliquid, quod cum gratiarum actione una accipiamus; ego aliquod, si Deo visum fuerit, sumptus faciam. Dominus Vos, &c.*

*Hoper to A Lasco.*

*T. T. Jo. Hoperus.*

And, to take in one thing more, tho' it happened in the Year before this, to shew the good Correspondence between *Hoper* and the *Switzers*: When *Bullinger* had drawn up a in the matter of the Sacrament with *Calvin*, he sent it unto *Hoper* here, and prayed him that *Utenbovias* might see it: As I find by a Manuscript Letter of *Bullinger* to *Utenbovias* here in *England*, 1549.

*Hoper and Bullinger Friends.*

*Ridley*, who was now entred upon the Government of the See of *London*, did this Year institute his primary Visitation. Wherin what Reformation he intended to make may be seen by the Injunctions which he set forth for a Uniformity in his Diocess: Which were printed by *Reynold Wolfe* the same Year. They imported, "That there should be no reading of such Injunctions [given before by other Popish Bishops] as extolled and set forth the Popish Mass, Candles, Images, Chauntries. "That Ministers counterfeited not the Popish Mass, as in kissing the Lord's Table, washing their Hands or Fingers after the Gospel, or receipt of the Holy Communion, shifting the Book from one Place to another, laying down and licking the Chalice, blessing their Eyes with the Sudary of the Communion, or the Patin therof, or Crossing the Head with the same, holding up the Forefingers and Thumbs joined together towards the Temples of the Head after the Receiving; making any Elevation, Ringing the Sacring Bell; with such like strange and superstitious Ceremonies, forbid by the King's Injunctions. Also, none "to

*Bishop Ridley visits his Diocess of London*



ANNO 1550. "to receive the Communion but such as should be ready with Meekness  
 "to confess the Articles of the Creed upon request of the Curate. None  
 "to make a Mart of the Holy Communion, by buying or selling the  
 "Receit therof, as was sometimes used to be done before. And whereas  
 "some used the Lords Board after the Form of a Table, and some of an  
 "Altar, therefore wishing a godly Unity to be in all the Dioceses, and  
 "considering that the Form of a Table might more move the Hearts of  
 "the Simple from the old Superstitious Opinion of the Popish Mass, and  
 "to the right Use of the Holy Supper, the Curats and Churchwardens  
 "were exhorted to erect and set up the Lords Board after the fashion of  
 "an honest Table, decently covered, in such place of the Choir or Chancel  
 "as should be thought most meet by their Discretion: so that the Mini-  
 "sters might with the Communicants have their Place separated from the  
 "rest of the People; and to take down and abolish all other By-Tables  
 "and Altars. Ministers immediately after the Offertory, in time of  
 "Communion, to admonish the Communicants, saying these or such like  
 "words; That now was the time, if it pleased them, to remember the  
 "Poor Man's Chest: That the Homilies be read orderly, without O-  
 "mission of any Part therof. Common Prayer to be had in every Church  
 "upon *Wednesdays* and *Fridays*. Curats to be diligent to teach the Ca-  
 "techism upon Sundays or Holydays, whensoever just occasion was  
 "offered. And at the least every six Weeksonce, to call the Parishoners,  
 "and present himself ready to instruct and examine the Youth. None  
 "to maintain Purgatory, Invocation of Saints, the Six Articles, Bedrols,  
 "Pilgrimages, Relicks, Rubricks, Primers, Justification of Man by his  
 "own Works, Holy Bread, Palms, Ashes, Candles, creeping to the Cross;  
 "Hallowing of Fire or Altars, or such like Abuses. Ministers to move  
 "the People to often and worthy Receiving the Holy Communion; to  
 "come to Church diligently, and there to behave themselves reverently,  
 "godly, and devoutly. That Churchwardens permit not any Buying,  
 "Selling, Gaming, or outrageous Noise or Tumult, or other idle occu-  
 "pying of Youth, in the Church, Church-Porch, or Yard. None to  
 "minister the Sacraments in open audience of the Congregation, or pre-  
 "sume to expound the Holy Scripture before they be lawfully called  
 "therunto, and authorized in that behalf." This is the Sum of the  
 "said *Injunctions*. The Bishop of *Sarum* hath exemplified them at large  
 "in his History, from a printed Copy; which may be seen in the Col-  
 "lections to his Second Part, only omitting two pertinent Allegations of  
 "Scripture, which are added in the Conclusion, *viz.*

Prov. xv. *The Ear that hearkeneth to the Reformation of Life shall remain among the wise. He that refuseth to be reformed, despiseth his own Soul; but he that submitteth himself to Correction is wise.* And

3 Reg. xviii. *Elias. How long halt ye between two Opinions? If the Lord be God follow him; but if Baal be he, then go after him.*

Besides these *Injunctions* Bishop *Ridley* set forth Articles also at this Visitation. Which be printed in *Sparrow's Collections*.

An Ordinati-  
 on by Bishop  
*Ridley.*  
*Regist. Rid.*

June 24. ensuing the said Bishop conferred Holy Orders upon divers  
 Persons, having been first (*viz.* June 23.) examined by *Henry Harvy*,  
 LL. D. the Bishop's Vicar-General, and *John Skory*, S. T. B. his Chap-  
 lain. They were Ordained before the High-Altar at *St. Pauls*, accor-  
 ding to the Rite, Manner, and Form of the Church of *England* lately pub-



published and enjoined : Whose Names were *Edmund Turges*, M. A. *ANNO*  
*Richard Fletcher*, (the same, I suppose, who afterwards was Dean and 1550.  
 Bishop of *Peterborough*, and Bishop of *London*, successively,) *John Pel-*  
*ling de Hermonuseg* in *Suffex*, born in the Town of *Lewis*, [of whose  
 Name and Posterity ever since have been some worthy Clergymen]  
*Thomas Forelore*; *Lancelot Thexton*, M. A. Fellow of *St. Johns* in *Cam-*  
*bridge*, born in *Barbtry* in the County of *Richmond*; *James Clayton*,  
 living in *Hackney*, *John Rose* of *Lewes*; *John Bee*, M. A. Fellow of  
*St. Johns* in *Cambridge*; *Henry May*, B. A. Fellow of *St. Johns* in *Cam-*  
*bridge*, *Richard Walker*, B. A. Student of *Christ College*, *Cambridge*;  
*Francis Randal*, *William Bocher*, B. A. of *Malden* in *Essex*; *Odnel Heb-*  
*burn*, *William Harley* of *Ipswich*, *William Cotinge* of *Middleton* in *Kent*,  
*Reginal Blooke*, *John Wright* of *Stratford at Bow*, *Richard Grasfon*, Vi-  
 car of *Chesterford Magna*; *John Finch* of *Billerica*, *Thomas Warter*,  
*Edm. Thompson*, *John Heron* M. A. Mr. *John Fox*, M. A. living with  
 the Dutcheſs of *Suffolk*, [the famous Martyrologist] born at *Boston*,  
*Henry Markham*, M. A. Chaplain to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*;  
 Mr. *Thomas Lever*, M. A. Fellow of *St. Johns* in *Cambridge*, afterwards  
 Master of the ſaid Houſe, a learned and pious Man, and an Exile un-  
 der Queen *MARY* : All Ordained Deacons, to the number of twenty  
 five.

Again *Auguſt 10.* following the Biſhop Ordained at *Fulham* theſe Another Or-  
 Perſons: *John Bradford* his Caplain, and after an Holy Martyr under ination.  
 Queen *MARY*; *John Horton*, M. A. *Thomas Sampſon*, born at *Playford*,  
 in the County of *Suffolk*, who afterwards was Dean of *Chicheſter*, and  
 under Queen *ELIZABETH*, Dean of *Chriſt-Church*, *Oxon*; from whence  
 he was deprived in the Contention for Cap and Surplice. All theſe  
 were Fellows of *Pembroke Hall*, *Cambridge*. And beſides theſe, there  
 were two more Ordained, viz. *Rogert Hart* of *Stebunbith*, and *Lever*  
 aforeſaid, who was Ordained Prieſt, the reſt Deacons.

*Sept. 7.* was another Ordination at *Fulham*, of one Perſon, namely, Another.  
*Grasfon*, made Prieſt, and Ordained Deacon in *June* before.

*Novemb. 9.* another: When *Lawrence Nowel*, afterwards Dean of Another.  
*Litchfield*, and Brother to *Alex. Nowel*, Dean of *St. Pauls*, was Ordained,  
 living then at *Sutton Colfield* in *Warwickſhire*; together with *Richard*  
*Fletcher*, B. A. afterwards Biſhop of *Briſtol*, *Worceſter* and *London*, ſuc-  
 ceſſively; and *Edmund Thompson* of *Southwark Hoſpital*, Ordained  
 Prieſts. Theſe were Biſhop *Ridley's* Ordinations in his firſt Year.

Dr. *John Ponet*, once of *St. Johns College*, *Cambridge*, afterwards Ponet made  
 Chaplain to King *HENRY VIII.* and ſucceſſively to the Archbishop, a Biſhop of Ro-  
 Man of great Parts and acquired Learning, ſucceeded the ſaid Biſhop cheſter.  
*Ridley* in the Dioceſs of *Rocheſter*, being Conſecrated in *June*: And on Counc. Book.  
 the ſame Day had the Favour following granted him by the Council:  
 "Upon Conſideration that Mr. *Ponet*, now elected Biſhop of *Rocheſter*,  
 "hath no Houſe to dwell upon, it is agreed, that he ſhall enjoy his Be-  
 "neſice [which was *Aſbtisford* in *Kent*] in *Commendam*. But henceforth  
 "is decreed, that no Biſhop ſhall keep other Benefice than his Biſhop- No Commen-  
 "rick only. dams to Bps.



ANNO

1550.

## CHAP. XXXI.

*The State of the Universities. The Evil of  
Impropriations. Revenues of the Monaste-  
ries misused. Books now set forth.*

The Universi-  
ties in ill Con-  
dition.

Lever  
preaches at  
the Cross.

Against the  
Misuse of the  
Revenues of  
Abbies, &c.

The Favour  
of King Ed-  
ward;

And King  
Henry, to the  
Universities.

THE Universities now were but in a sorry declining Condition, occasioned by the Discouragements given to Learning, the Laity laying hold of the Spiritual Preferments so much as they did, designed and appointed for the Reward and Maintenance of the Clergy. This Abuse gave divers good Men occasion to speak their Minds: And among the rest so did one *Thomas Lever*, Fellow of *St. Johns College*, (of whose Ordination mention was made before,) who preached at *Pauls Cross*, *Decemb. 14.* upon this Text, *1 Cor. iv. 1. Let a man so esteem of us as of the Ministers of Christ, &c.* In this Sermon he undertook to shew the Causes of GOD's Anger against *England*. One wherof he made to be, the Great People about the King's Majesty, their obstructing him from doing that Good he fully intended, for the Relief of the Poor, and for the Advancement of Learning, by means of the Colleges and Chantries given him by Parliament: Which those Men, by their Importunity, got away by way of Gift from him, or exchanged for Impropriations.

But hear that Reverend Man speaking his Mind in his own Words: "If ye had any Eyes ye should see and be ashamed, that in the great Abundance of Lands and Goods taken from Abbies, Colleges and Chantries, for to serve the King in all Necessaries and Charges, especially in the Relief of the Poor, and for maintenance of Learning, the King is so disappointed, that both the Poor be spoiled, all maintenance of Learning decayed, and you only enriched. And because ye have no Eyes to see with, I will declare, that you may hear with your Ears, and so perceive and know, that where GOD and the King have been most Liberal to give and bestow, there you have been unfaithful to dispose and deliver. For according unto GOD's Word and the King's Plesure, the Universities, which be the Schools of all Godliness and Vertue, should have been nothing decayed, but much increased and amended by this Reformation of Religion. As concerning GOD's regard for the upholding and encrease of the Universities, I am sure that no Man knowing Learning and Vertue doth doubt. And as for the King's Plesure, it did well appear, in that he established unto the Universities all Privileges granted afore his Time: As also in all manner of Payments required of the Clergy, as Tithes and First-Fruits, the Universities be exempted.

"Yea, and the King's Majesty, that dead is, did give unto the University of *Cambridge* at one time two Hundred Pounds yearly to the Exhibition, and finding of five Learned Men, to read and teach Divinity, Law, Physick, *Greek* and *Hebrew*. And at another time thirty Pounds, [it should be 300 l.] yearly in *liberam & puram Eleemosynam*, in free and pure Alms; and finally for the Foundation of a new Col-  
lege,



"lege, so much as should serve to build it, and replenish it with mo  
 "Scholars, and better Living, than any other College in the University  
 "afore that time. By the which every Man may perceive, that the  
 "King giving many things, and taking nothing from the Universities,  
 "was very desirous to have them encreased and amended.

ANNO  
 1550.

"Howbeit, all they that have known the University of Cambridge  
 "since that Time that it did first begin to receive these great and manifold  
 "Benefits from the King's Majesty at your Hands, have just Occasion to  
 "suspect, that you have deceived both the King and the University, to  
 "enrich your selves. For, before that you did begin to be the Dispo-  
 "sers of the King's Liberality towards Learning and Poverty, there  
 "were in Houses belonging unto the University of Cambridge, Two  
 "Hundred Students of Divinity, many very well Learned; which be  
 "now all clean gone home: and many young toward Scholars, and old  
 "Fatherly Doctors, not one of them left. One Hundred also of another  
 "Sort that having rich Friends, or being beneficed Men, did live of  
 "themselves in Oſtles and Inns, be either gone away, or else fain to  
 "creep into Colleges, and put poor Men from bare Livings. Those both  
 "be all gone, and a small Number of poor, godly, diligent Students,  
 "now remaining only in Colleges, be not able to tarry, and continue  
 "their Studies, for Lack of Exhibition and Help.

The Decay of  
 Cambridge.

"There be divers there which rise daily about four or five of the  
 "Clock in the Morning, and from five till six of the Clock use Common  
 "Prayer, with an Exhortation of GOD's Word in a common Chapel:  
 "And from six until ten of the Clock use ever either private Study, or  
 "common Lectures. At Ten of the Clock they go to Dinner, whereas  
 "they be content with a Peny Piece of Beef among four, having a few  
 "Pottage made of the Broth of the same Beef, with Salt and Oatmeal,  
 "and nothing else. After this slender Diet, they be either Teaching or  
 "Learning until Five of the Clock in the Evening; whenas they  
 "have a Supper not much better than their Dinner. Immediately  
 "after which they go either to reasoning in Problems, or to some other  
 "Study until it be Nine or Ten of the Clock. And there being with-  
 "out Fires, are fain to walk, or run up and down half an Hour, to get a  
 "Heat on their Feet when they go to Bed.

The Diligence  
 and Courſe  
 of the Stu-  
 dents.

"These be Men not weary of their Pains, but sorry to leave their  
 "Studies. And sure they be not able some of them to continue for lack  
 "of necessary Exhibition and Relief. These be the living Saints which  
 "serve GOD, taking great Pains in Abstinence, Study, Labor and Dili-  
 "gence, with Watching and Prayer. Whereas Paul for the Saints and  
 "Brethren at Jerusalem, so I for the Brethren and Saints at Cambridge,  
 "most humbly beseech to make your Collections among the rich Mer-  
 "chants of this City, and send them your Oblations unto the University.

The Citizens  
 excited to ex-  
 hibit to them.

"But to return unto them that should have better provided for Learn-  
 "ing and Poverty in all Places, but especially in the Universities. Look  
 "you, whether there was not a great Number both of Learned and Poor,  
 "that might have been kept, maintained and relieved in the Universities,  
 "which lacking all Help, or Comfort, were compelled to forsake the  
 "Universities, leave their Books, and seek their Livings abroad in the  
 "Countries.

The King's  
 Provisions for  
 Learning  
 and Poverty,  
 abused.



A N N O

1550.

The Wrong  
don by Com-  
missioners.

“ Yea, and in the Country many Grammar Schools which be founded  
 “ of a godly Intent, to bring up poor Mens Sons in Learning and Ver-  
 “ tue, now be taken away by reason of a greedy Covetousness of you,  
 “ that were put in trust by GOD and the King, to erect and make Gram-  
 “ mar Schools in many Places, and had neither Commandment, nor  
 “ Permission to take away the Schoolmaster's Livings in any Place.  
 “ Moreover such charitable Alms was there yearly to be bestowed in poor  
 “ Towns and Parishes upon GOD's People, the King's Subjects; which  
 “ Alms, to the great Displeasure of GOD, and Dishonour of the King,  
 “ yea, and contrary to GOD's Word and the King's Laws, ye have  
 “ taken away. I know what ye do say and brag in the same Places:  
 “ That ye have done as ye were commanded, with as much Charity  
 “ and Liberality towards Poverty and Learning as your Commission  
 “ would bear and suffer. Take heed whom ye slander. For GOD's  
 “ Word, and the King's Laws and Statutes be open unto every Man's  
 “ Eyes. And by every Commission directed according unto them,  
 “ ye both might and should have given much, whereas ye have taken  
 “ much away.

The evil of  
Exchanges  
for Impropri-  
ations.

“ Was it not a godly and charitable Provision of the King, to give un-  
 “ to the University 200*l.* yearly for excellent Readers, 300*l.* yearly  
 “ in pure Alms, and many 100*l.* also to the Foundation and Erection of  
 “ a new College? And was it not a devilish Device of you to turn all  
 “ this the King's bounteous Liberality into *Impropriations* of Benefices:  
 “ which be Papistical and uncharitable Spoils of most necessary Provisions  
 “ for poor Parishes? Learn Understanding, you that play unwise Parts  
 “ among the People. You Fools once wax wise. *Qui plantavit, &c.*  
 “ *He that set the Ears*, shall he not hear the sorrowful Complaints of poor  
 “ Parishes against you that have by *Impropriations* clean taken away  
 “ Hospitality, and much impaired the due Livings of GOD's Ministers,  
 “ the Peoples Instructors and Teachers? *Qui figurat oculum, &c.* *He*  
 “ *that fashioned the Eye*, doth not he behold, that the best Lands of Ab-  
 “ bies, Colleges and Chantries be in your Hands, and evil Improprati-  
 “ tions conveyed to the King and to the Universities, and Bishop's  
 “ Lands? *Qui corripit, &c.* *He that correcteth*, and punisheth the *Hea-*  
 “ *then*, lacking the Light of GOD's Word, for the continual Abuse of  
 “ natural Reason, will not he reprove and condemn you, who have  
 “ good reasonable Wits, God's Holy Word, the King's Laws and Sta-  
 “ tutes, and much Power and Authority given unto you to edify and  
 “ do good; seeing it is abused of you to destroy and do hurt? Surely  
 “ the Abbies did wrongfully take and abuse nothing so much as the Im-  
 “ propriations of Benefices. Nothing is so Papistical as *Impropriations*  
 “ be: They be the Pope's Darlings and Paramours; which by the de-  
 “ vilish Device of wicked *Balaamites* be set abroad in this Realm, to  
 “ cause the Learned Men of the Universities, and all Bishops that be  
 “ godly Men, the Popes Enemies, to commit spiritual Fornication with  
 “ them.

To this I subjoin, what the same Preacher spoke in another Sermon:  
 “ The Kings Majesty that dead is, did give a Benefice to be impropriate  
 “ to the University of Cambridge, in *liberam & puram Eleemosynam*.  
 “ Howbeit, his Hands were so impure, who should have delivered it,  
 “ that he received 600*l.* of the University for it. Whether that this

“ 600*l.*



" 600*l.* were conveyed to the King's Behoof privily for the Alms, *ANNO*  
 " which by plain Writing was given freely, or else put in some *Judas's* 1550.  
 " Pouch, I would it were known. For now by such charitable Alms  
 " the King is slandered, the Parish-undon, and the University in worse  
 " Case than it was before. This for the Universities.

Nor would the said *Lever*, being as a conscientious, so a bold Preacher, *Lever*  
 change his Argument in two other solemn Sermons, which he preached *preaches a-*  
 in two great Auditories not long after, the one in the *Shrouds* of St. *gain in the*  
*Paul's*, the fourth Sunday after *Twelftide*: The other before the King, *Shrouds, and*  
 on the third Sunday in *Lent*. In both which he laid open in all Free- *before the*  
 dom and Plainness of Speech, without respect of any the greatest Person, *King.*  
 the Vices and Abuses of those Times; *viz.* Concerning the Revenues of  
 the demolished Abbies, Chauntries, Colleges, Fraternities and Hospitals,  
 converted to other Uses than were originally intended, the Covetousness  
 of the Gentry, the Buying of Spiritual Livings, the Neglect of those Pa-  
 rishes, wherto were annexed the richest Parsonages, the little Care Priests  
 took of their Flocks, and such like. Concerning all which after this  
 Manner he expressed his Mind; (which I do the rather set down, because  
 it may serve somewhat to explain the History of these Times.)

" In suppressing of Abbies, Cloisters, Colleges and Chauntries, the *The Revenues*  
 " Intent of the King's Majesty that dead is, was, and of this our King *of Monasteri-*  
 " now is, very godly; and the Purpose, or else the Pretence of others, *es and Chaun-*  
 " wondrous godly: That thereby such Abundance of Goods as was su- *tries misused.*  
 " perstitiously spent upon vain Ceremonies, or voluptuously spent upon  
 " idle Bellies, might come to the King's Hand, to bear the great Charges  
 " necessarily bestowed in the Commonwealth; or part unto other Mens  
 " Hands, for the better Relief of the Poor, Maintenance of Learning,  
 " and the setting forth of GOD's Word. Howbeit covetous Officers have  
 " have so used this Matter, that even those Goods, which did serve to  
 " the Relief of the Poor, the Maintenance of Learning, and to comfort-  
 " able necessary Hospitality in the Commonwealth, be now turned to  
 " maintain worldly, wicked, covetous Ambition.— You which have  
 " gotten these Goods into your own Hands, to turn them from Evil to  
 " Worse, and other Goods mo from Good unto Evil, be ye sure, it is  
 " even you that have offended GOD, beguiled the King, robbed the  
 " Church, spoiled the Poor, and brought the Commonwealth to a com-  
 " mon Misery. It is even you that must either be plagued with GOD's  
 " Vengeance, as were the *Sodomites*, or amend by Repentance, as did  
 " the *Ninevites*. Even you it is, that must either make Restitution, and  
 " amend speedily, or else feel the Vengeance of GOD grievously.—Sure  
 " I am, that if at the ordering of these things there had been in the Of-  
 " ficers as much Godliness, as there was Covetousness, superstitious Men  
 " had not been put from their Livings to their Pensions out of those  
 " Houses, where they might have had Schoolmasters to have taught  
 " them to be good, [for many Schools were intended, and others were swal-  
 " lowed up if they pertained to these religious Foundations,] and for less  
 " Wages; or, for the Reservation of their Pensions, received into Cures and  
 " Parsonages, wheras they can do no Good, and will do much Harm.

The Practices of the Gentry towards their Tenants, he thus set forth, *The Gentries*  
 " Now the People of the Country use to say, that their Gentlemen and *covetous*  
 " Officers were never so full of fair Words and ill Deeds, as they now *Practices in*  
 " be. *the Country.*



A N N O

1550.

“be. For a Gentleman will say, that he loveth his Tenant, but he  
 “keepeth not so good an House to make them Cheer as his Father did.  
 “And yet he taketh mo Fines, and greater Rents to make them needy,  
 “than his Father had. Another will say, that he would buy a Lord-  
 “ship of the King, for the Love that he hath to the Tenants thereof.  
 “But as soon as he hath bought it, by taking of Fines, heightening of  
 “Rents, and selling away of Commodities, he maketh the same Tenants  
 “pay for it. [And so he in effect obtains the Purchase, and make others pay  
 “for it.] Another saith, that he would have an Office to do good in his  
 “Country. But as soon as he hath Authority to take the Fee to himself, he  
 “setteth his Servants to do his Duty. And instead of Wages he giveth them  
 “Authority to live by Pillage, Bribery and Extortion in the Country.

Buying and  
 Abuse of Par-  
 sonages.

Then he declaimed against another evil Practice then common, which  
 was the buying of Parsonages and Benefices; wherby the Tithes coming  
 all in Laymen's Hands, Parishes were left destitute of Priests and Mini-  
 sters to perform Holy Offices, and so the People were left in Ignorance  
 and Irreligion. Which *Lever* thus lamented, “Wheras they do not  
 “only buy Lands and Goods, but also Lives and Souls of Men  
 “from GOD, and the Commonwealth, unto the Devil and themselves.  
 “A mischievous Mart of Merchandry is this; and yet now so commonly  
 “used, that thereby Shepherds be turned to Thieves, Dogs to Wolves,  
 “and the poor Flock of Christ, redeemed with his precious Blood, most  
 “miserably pilld and spoiled, yea, cruelly devoured. Be thou Mer-  
 “chant in the City, or be thou Gentleman in the Country; be thou  
 “Lawyer, be thou Courtier, or what manner of Man soever thou be;  
 “that cannot, yea, if thou be Doctor of Divinity, that will not do thy  
 “Duty. It is not lawful for thee to have a Parsonage, Benefice, or any  
 “such Living, except thou do feed the Flock spiritually with GOD's  
 “Word, and bodily with honest Hospitality.

Neglect of  
 Livings.

And again, concerning the Neglect of Livings, and the little Care ta-  
 ken of Christ's Flock, thus he reprehended those that were guilty:  
 “Those Parsonages that be most in Number, and greatest in Value  
 “throughout all *England*, be not now Shepherds Houses to lay up Fod-  
 “der to feed the poor Sheep of the Parish, but thievish Dens to convey  
 “away great Spoils from all the Rich of the Parish. There is no Per-  
 “son there to relieve the Poor and Needy with natural Sustenance, in  
 “keeping of House, and to feed all in general with the Heavenly Food  
 “of GOD's Word by Preaching. But there is a Parson's Deputy, or  
 “Farmer; which having neither Ability, Power, nor Authority to do  
 “the Parson's Duty, in Feeding and Teaching the Parish, is able, suffi-  
 “cient and stout enough to challenge, and take for his Master's Duty  
 “the tenth Part of all the Parish. Now, my Lords, both of the Laity  
 “and the Clergy, in the Name of GOD, I advertise you to take heed.  
 “For when the Lord of Lords shall see the Flock scattered, spilt and lost,  
 “if he follow the Trace of the Blood, it will lead him even straitway  
 “unto this Court, and unto their Houses, whereas these great Thieves,  
 “which murder, spoil and destroy the Flocks of Christ, be received,  
 “kept and maintained. For you maintain your Chaplains to take Plu-  
 “ralities, and your other Servants mo Offices than they can, or will  
 “discharge. Fie! for Sin and Shame; either give your Servants Wages,  
 “or else let them go and serve those which do give them Wages. For  
 “now



"now your Chaplains, your Servants, and you yourselves, have the  
 "Parsons, the Shepherds and the Officers Wages; and neither you, nor  
 "they, nor others do the Parsons, the Shepherds, or the Officers Duty;  
 "except, peradventure ye imagine that there is a Parish Priest Curate  
 "which doth the Parson's Duty. But altho' ye do so imagine, yet the  
 "People do feel and perceive that he doth mean no other thing, but, *Pay*  
 "*your Duty, pay your Duty.* Yes, forsooth, he ministreth God's Sa-  
 "craments, he saith his Service, he readeth the Homilies, as you find  
 "flattering Courtiers, which speak by Imagination, term it. But the  
 "rude Lobs of the Country, which be too simple to paint a Lye, speak  
 "foully and truly as they find it, and say, he minisheth God's Sa-  
 "craments, he slubbereth up his Service, and he cannot read the  
 "Humbles.

A N N O

1550.

And as *Lever* made and printed these remarkable Sermons this Year, *Bale* puts  
 so *John Bale* now set forth as notable a Book (allowing for his broad Way  
 of Writing,) namely, *The Acts and unchaste Examples of religious Vota-*  
*ries*, gather'd out of their own Legends and Chronicles. He designed to  
 compleat this History in four Books. Which should detect the foul  
 Lives and Practices of the Monastics, both Men and Women, from  
 the first times of their Institution till that last Age, wherein they were  
 dissolved in *England*. To these four Books he intended to give sever-  
 al Titles, according to the various Ages of Monkeny; viz. of their  
*Rising*, their *Building*, their *Holding*, and their *Falling*. The first  
 Part was to treat of their *Uprising* to Mischiefe. The second Part was to  
 shew their hasty *Building*, by hypocritish Monks to establish the wicked  
 Kingdom of Antichrist. The third was to declare the crafty *Upholding*  
 of their proud Degrees and Possessions, by the wily and subtil Sights of  
 the four Orders of Friars. The fourth should manifest their horrible  
 Fall in this latter Age, by the well grounded Doctrine of the true  
 Preachers and Writers. The first Part he finished in the Year 1546.  
 And the second in this Year 1550. and in the same Year printed both  
 together at *London*, in 12°. and Dedicated them to King EDWARD.  
 The second Part reached to the Year 1200. The two last Parts he pro-  
 mised should speedily follow. But I think they never did; the Author  
 probably being advised to suppress them for Decency, if not for Religions  
 sake, an Assault on which might seem to be made, if so many abomina-  
 ble and shameful Facts should come to Light, as *Bale* had collected toge-  
 ther. He had got the *Detecta*, taken down in Writing by King  
 HENRY's Visitors, sent abroad to visit all the Monasteries in *England*  
 and *Wales*, and had once exposed them in a Parliament. Which were of  
 such a Nature that chaste Ears could not hear them.

*Bale* puts  
 forth his Vo-  
 taries.

The same *Bale* the same Year set forth an *Apology against a rank Pa-*  
*pist; answering both him and the Doctors, that neither their Vows, nor*  
*yet their Priesthood are of the Gospel, but of Antichrist.* Printed also at  
*London* in 12°. At the End is a brief Exposition upon the 30th Chapter  
 of *Numbers*, which was the first Occasion of his writing this Book. This  
 Tract also the Author Dedicated to King EDWARD. The Apology be-  
 gins thus, (which will shew the Occasion of the Book) "A few Months  
 "ago, by chance as I sat at Supper, this Question was moved unto me  
 "by one that fervently loves God's Verity, and mightily detesteth all  
 "Falshood and Hypocrisy; Whether the Vows expressed in the 30th  
 "Chapter

And an Apo-  
 logy concern-  
 ing Vows.



ANNO 1550. " Chapter of *Numeri* give any Establishment to the Vow of our Priests  
 " now to live without Wives of their own, or nay. For the same Par-  
 " ty, as I perceived anon after, had been assaulted and chased the Day  
 " afore with that most frivolous Disputation. To whom I remember I  
 " gave this short Answer, That they made for that kind of Vowing  
 " nothing at all, but condemned it. For, as I then judged of that Mat-  
 " ter, so judge I now still, that those Vows were of things then present,  
 " and so forth continuing till Christ coming in the Flesh, concerning on-  
 " ly the Nation of the *Jews*, and now to be of no Force towards us.  
 " Forso much as they were not expressly confirmed, declared and taught  
 " of Christ, as were the moral Precepts of the Law, *Matt. v.* More-  
 " over, I considered that Christ being the clear Light of the World,  
 " *John viii.* and the Brightness of his Father's Glory, *Heb. i.* left *Moses*  
 " far behind him, as a bare Shadow or Figure; constituting one only Re-  
 " ligion for us and the *Jews*: Whose Perfection standeth not in the  
 " Works of the Law, neither in renouncing of Christian Marriage, but  
 " in a pure and constant Faith in him and his Gospel. In the End I  
 " was desired to write a Sentence or two, what I thought in Discharge  
 " of so single and sleeveless a Matter. Whereupon the next Day I turn-  
 " ed me towards a Window, and wrot the few Sentences, &c. This  
 Writing was delivered to one who was the Captain of that Place where  
*Bale* then was, being by Birth a Man of Worship. Gently was it re-  
 ceived at the first; and so entertained by the Space of five or six Weeks.  
 But within that time falling into the Hands of a certain Chaplain, he  
 framed some Answer to *Bale's* Writing. And *Bale* again replied there-  
 unto. And of all this consisted the aforesaid Book.

This Year also he again put forth his *Image of both Churches* at *Lon-  
 don*, in 12°. being an Exposition upon the *Revelations*.

And two o-  
 ther Tracts.

To these let me add two little Tracts more, composed by the same  
 Author, this, or rather the former Year. The one was, *A Dialogue*, or  
*Communication* to be had at a Table between two Children, gathered  
 out of the Holy Scripture by *John Bale*, for the Use of his two young  
 Sons, *John* and *Paul*, beginning, "*Paulus junior filius.* Forso much as  
 " God hath constituted me a Creature reasonable, and endued with an  
 " Understanding, I am naturally desirous to know to what End I am crea-  
 " ted, &c. The other is, *A Confession of the Sinner*, after the sacred  
 Scripture, collected by *John Bale*, at the Request of a faithful Friend of  
 his, Beginning, " I acknowledge unto my eternal and everlasting God,  
 " that of mine own Nature I am, as others, but a carnal thing, and the  
 " miserable Child of *Adam*, justly exiled with him in his Transgression,  
 &c.



C H A P. XXXII.

*The English Bible, and other Books set forth this Year. Vezy, Bishop of Exeter resigns. Sir Martin Bowes of the Mint gives up his Office. Some Account of him.*

THIS Year the Holy Bible translated by Miles Coverdale, was printed in Quarto, by Andrew Hester, for the more common and private Use of Christians; as he had set it forth in Folio the Year before: Which is commonly called Tyndal's Bible. The same Year (viz. 1550.) he set forth also the New Testament in Octavo, conferred with the Translation of William Tyndal; and printed by Reinold Wolf.

Coverdale's Bible.

And Testament.

Ockine's Sermons.

About this Time also certain Sermons of Ockine, the Italian, being five and twenty in Number, concerning the Predestination and Election of God, were printed by John Day in Octavo. Having been translated out of Italian into English, by A. C. Gentlewoman. Which Capital Letters I make no Question meant Anne Cook, one of the learned Daughters of Sir Anthony Cook, married after to Sir Nic. Bacon, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal.

Now did Thomas Paynel, an old Servant of King HENRY, print a Book, intituled, *The Pith and most noble Sayings of all Scripture: Gathered by Thomas Paynel; After the manner of common Places, very necessary for all those that delight in the Consolations of the Scripture.* It was dedicated to the Right excellent and most gracious Lady, the Lady MARY's good Grace. In which Dedication it appeared, that after he had made these Collections out of Scripture, he was advised by a learned Man to publish them for Mens Consolation and Learning. And assigning the Cause why he chose her to patronize this his Work, he wrot, "That it was her Graces fiery and fervent Mind to vertuous and godly Living, her true Intent and natural Inclination to the same, her liberal Hand and Favour to those which diligently exercised themselves in the spiritual and moral Studies of the sincere Word of GOD, and lastly, her Grace's Benignity and Gentleness of long time bountifully to him declared, enforced him to publish it in her Grace's Name. Then he exhorted her, "To read the fruitful Lessons thereof, and to digest them thoroughly, to practise and prove in very deed, how sweet the Lord's Words be: To use the profitable Doctrins of that little Book. For so doing her Grace should learn daily more and more truly to know the Lord, to tast, relish and to ensue his Holy and Sweet Word, to love and fear him, to be his faithful and obsequious Handmaiden, and a diligent Ensuer of his Will and Steps, most pleasantly and voluntarily to bear the Yoke of his most comfortable Commandments. Thus he gravely bespake her upon this Occasion, as tho' he hoped hereby to win her to the Gospel.

A Book called The Pith and most noble Sayings of Scripture.



A N N O

1550.

Crowley's Epigrams.

This Year also Robert Crowley printed one and thirty Epigrams compiled by him. Wherein, as the Title tells, *are briefly touched so many Abuses, that may and ought to be put away.* They mainly drive at exposing the common Vices, and vitious Men of that Age; and they shew several Customs and Practices of that Time. Tho' the Verses are old fashioned Rhimes, yet they want not sometimes good Fancy and Wit. And these are the various Subjects of them as they are placed Alphabetically by the Author: *Of Abbayes. Alehouses. Alleyes. Almes Houses. Of Baylif Arrants. Bauds. Beggars. Bear bayting. Brawlers. Blasphemous Swearers. Of Collyars. Commotioners. Common Drunkards. Common Lyars. Of Dice Players. Double beneficed Men. Of the Exchequer. Of Flatterers. Fools. Forestallers. Of Godless Men. Of Idle Persons. Inventers of strange News. Of Laymen that take Tithes. Leasemongers. Of Merchants. Men that have divers Offices. Of Nice Wives. Of Obstinate Papists. Of Rent-raisers. Of Vain Writers. Vain Talkers and Vain Hearers. Unsatiabie Purchasers. Usurers.* Whereby a notable Insight is given into Matters, Customs and Abuses of these Times. But to give a Taft of these Epigrams, I refer the Reader to the *Repository*.

O. O.

Pierse Plowman.

Now was the *Vision of Pierse Plowman* the second Time printed by the foresaid Crowley. To which were added certain Notes and Quotations in the Margin, giving Light to the Reader. The Book was very ancient, written in the Reign of King EDWARD III. For in the second Side of the sixty eighth Leaf mention is made of a dear Year, *John Chichester* being then Maior of London; which was Anno 1350. In which time it pleased GOD to open the Eyes of many to see the Truth; giving them Boldness of Heart to open their Mouths, and cry out against the Works of Darknes, as did *Wickliff*; who also in these Days translated the Holy Bible into the Mother Tongue. The Writer of this Book, whoever he was, in reporting certain Visions and Dreams that he feigned himself to have had, *I* christianly instruct the Weak, and sharply rebuke the obstinately blind. Nor was there any manner of Vice that reigned in any State, or Order of Men, which he did not learnedly and wittily lash. And (of which much Notice is wont to be taken) at the fiftieth Leaf something is writ by way of Prediction of the Fall of Abbies. The Printer Crowley, being a learned Man, and desirous to know the Name of the Author, and the time of his Writing, got together such ancient Copies as he could come by, and consulted such Men as he knew to be more exercised in the Study of Antiquity. And by some of them he learnt the Author's Name, was *Langland*, a *Shropshire* Man, born in *Cleybury*, about eight Miles from *Malvern Hills*. And among the ancient Copies, one was noted to be written in the Year MIIICIX. The Book is writ in Metre, but much different from the manner of our modern Verse, there being no Rhithms, or chiming of Words; but the Nature of the Metre is, that three Words at the least of each Verse begin with one and the same Letter. As for Example, the two first Verses of the Book run upon the Letter S. the next upon H. and the next upon W. viz.



*In a Summer Season, when Set was the Sun  
I Shope me into Shrobbes as a Shepe were.*

A N N O

1550.

*In Habit as a Heremyt unHoly of Werks  
Wend Wyde in thys World Wonders to bear.*

And again, *On a Mey Morning on Malvern Hills,  
Me beFel a Ferly of Fayin me thought, &c.*

Now also *John Marbeck*, an excellent Musician for Church Musick, Marbeck's Prayers and Anthems. once belonging to the Choir at *Winsor*, now of the King's Chapel, published Prayers and Anthems, set by him for the Use of the said Chapel, in *Quarto*, printed by *Grafton*. I shall not pretend to so much Skill as to make Observations upon the Compositions; but I cannot but remark how in the Office of Burial, the Prayer there, after the Corps was put into the Earth, varied from our present Office: in that Prayer is made for the Deceased, and the Soul departed is held to be in a middle State till the last Judgment. For thus it ran, "We commend into thy Hands of  
" Mercy, most merciful Father, the Soul of this our Brother departed,  
" N. and his Body we commit to the Earth. Beseeching thine infinite  
" Goodness to give us Grace to live in thy Fear and Love, and to die in  
" thy Favour: That when the Judgment shall come which thou hast  
" committed to thy Wellbeloved Son, both this our Brother and we may  
" be found acceptable in thy Sight, and receive that Blessing, &c. And  
then follows, "Almighty GOD we give thee hearty Thanks for thy Ser-  
" vant whom thou hast delivered from Miseries of this wretched World,  
" from the Body of Death and all Temptation; and as we trust hast  
" brought his Soul, which he committed into thy Holy Hands, into sure  
" Consolation and Rest; Grant we beseech thee, that at the Day of Judg-  
" ment his Soul, and all the Souls of thy Elect departed out of this Life,  
" may with us, and we with them, fully receive thy Promises, and be  
" made perfect altogether, through the glorious Resurrection of thy Son  
" Jesus Christ our Lord. And again, after some Psalms and Versicles,  
this Prayer. "O Lord with whom do live the Spirits of them that be dead,  
" and in whom the Souls of them that be elected, after they be delivered  
" from the Burthen of the Flesh, be in Joy and Felicity; grant unto  
" this thy Servant, that the Sins which he committed in this World,  
" be not imputed unto him, but that he escaping the Gates of Hell, and  
" the Pains of Eternal Darknes, may ever dwell in the Region of Light  
" with *Abraham, Isaac and Jacob*, in the Place where is no Weeping,  
" Sorrow, nor Heaviness. And when that dreadful Day of the general  
" Resurrection shall come, make him to rise also with the Just and Righ-  
" teous, end receive his Body again to Glory, then made pure and in-  
" corruptible: Set him on the Right Hand of thy Son JESUS CHRIST,  
" among the Holy and Elect. That then he may hear with them these  
" most sweet and comfortable Words, Come to me, ye Blessed of my  
" Father, possess the Kingdom which hath been prepared for you from  
" the Beginning of the World. Grant this, we beseech thee, O Merciful  
" Father, through Jesus Christ our Mediator, &c.



A N N O  
1550.

For printing  
the New Te-  
stament.  
Cardinal  
Pole's Book.

De Cœlibatu  
Sacerdotum.

Cranmer's  
Book of the  
Sacrament.

Lavateri  
Hist. sacram.

Bishop Gardi-  
ner's Book on  
the same Sub-  
ject.

Traberon sets  
forth Vigon of  
Surgery.

Jug, Citizen and Stationer of London, had a Licence from the King, dated in January, or his sufficient Deputies, to print the New Testament in English, as well in great Volumes as in small, for the Space of certain Years.

Cardinal Pole writ and finished, the thirteenth of the Calends of February, a Book, *De summo Pontifice Christi in terris Vicario*, &c. but not printed before the Year 1569. at Lovain.

Richard Smith of Oxford, now set forth a Book, *De Cœlibatu Sacerdotum, & votis Monasticis contra Petrum Martyrem*, Octavo. Which he afterwards recanted in London and Oxford.

But chiefly, Archbishop Cranmer's Book must not be forgotten, published this Year by him in Octavo. Intitled, *A Defence of the true and Catholic Doctrin of the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of our Saviour Christ: With a Confutation of sundry Errors concerning the same. Grounded and established upon God's holy Word, and approved by the Consent of the most ancient Doctors of the Church.* Printed by Reynold Wolf at London. The same Book was afterward printed in Latin at Embden, Anno 1557. Of which excellent Book, thus a Foreigner writ, that lived in those Times, Thomas Cranmerus *precipuos Abusus missæ Papisticæ, libello Anglico confutavit*, &c. *Hoc scripto plurimi ad sanam de Eucharistia Doctrinam adducti sunt.* That by this Writing very many were brought to embrace the sound Doctrin concerning the Sacrament; the Author having therein confuted the chief Abuses of the Popish Mass.

The same Year did Gardiner, late Bishop of Winchester, set forth a Book in Answer to the former, bearing this Title, *An Explication and Assertion of the true Catholic Faith, touching the most blessed Sacrament of the Altar: With the Confutation of a Book written against the same.* Printed in France.

Now also did Bartholomew Traberon, a learned Man, and well studied in the Divinity of the Gospel, and an Exile for Religion under Queen MARY, set forth a Book in Folio of one Vigon, a famous Italian Chirurgeon, translated by him out of Latin into English, and printed by Edward Whitchurch. It was intituled, *The most excellent Works of Chirurgery made and set forth by Master John Vigon, Head Chirurgeon of our Time in Italy.* The Dedication was, *To the earnest Favourer of all good and godly Learning, Master Richard Tracie: Beginning,* "God the mighty Governor of all things, long Time sithence hath witnessed by that excellent Prophet Moses, that for the Transgression of his Holy Laws he would plague the People with sundry and grievous Diseases. Howbeit our Blindness hath been so great, that in the Multitude of most filthy and shameful Botches, Sores and other piteous Maladies, we have not perceived how horrible a thing Sin is, and how present Vengeance, the despising and neglecting of God's dreadful Commandments bringeth upon us: No, not when we have been burnt with fiery Carbuncles, nor when our Flesh hath been torn from the Bones and eaten up with loathsome Cankers: Nor when we have been miserably tormented with the most filthy, pestiferous and abominable Disease, the French, or Spanish Pox. In these, I say, so manifest Punishments of God for the outrageous Transgression of his Laws, we have not acknowledged the exceeding Wickedness of our Nature, neither have prayed for the Holy Spirit of God, which might change" and



“and transform our corrupt Birth, and create in us new Hearts with *A N N O*  
 “the Print of Fear and humble Reverence to Godward. Yea, we have *1550.*  
 “been so far off from such a Purpose, that some of us have bragged of  
 “our natural Strengths to our own Shame and Confusion. Those filthy  
 Diseases it seems were ripe in these Days; and to these Causes did good  
 Men now deservedly attribute them, such Need was there in these very  
 evil Days for the Light of the Gospel to be brought in, for the reform-  
 ing and amending the wretched Looseness of the Age. The Reason of his  
 dedicating this Book to this Gentleman, he expressed in these Words; ‘I  
 “dedicate it to you, good Master *Tracie*, not that I think it a thing fit  
 “for you, (inasmuch as you have bestowed the most Part of your Time  
 “in the fruitful Studies of Holy Scriptures,) but that at this Time it  
 “may be a Monument and Token of my Mind towards you, which can-  
 “not be, (except I were chaunged into a worse Nature than any  
 “barbarous *Scythian* is of) but most loving. For when I was destitute  
 “of Father or Mother, you conceived a very Fatherly Affection toward  
 “me, and not only brought me up in the Universities of this and foreign  
 “Realms, with your great Cost and Charges, but also most earnestly  
 “exhorted me to forsake the Puddles of Sophisters, and to fetch Water  
 “from the pure Fountains of the Scripture. Wherefore, seeing you have  
 “been the Author and Cause of that simple Learning that I have obtained,  
 “I thought it my Duty to render the Fruits thereof unto you. And  
 “albeit that both you desire, and I delight more to travail in the Holy  
 “Writings, &c. I set down this the more at large to retrieve the Me-  
 mory as much as may be, of worthy Men in former Times, and to re-  
 vive some Knowledge of them and their good Deeds. Such an one was  
 this *Richard Tracie*, Son, as it seems of him, of that Surname in *Glo-*  
*cestershire*, who in *HENRY VIII.* his Time was for his good Religion  
 digged out of his Grave after his Death, and burnt. From whom this  
 Gentleman did not degenerate in Learning, or Piety.

Lastly, to all the rest I add one Book more that came abroad this same  
 Year, which was intitled, *A Debate between the Heralds of England*  
*and France.* Compiled by *John Coke*, Clerk of the Statutes of the Staple  
 of *Westminster*. Imprinted by *Richard Wier*. The Occasion and Subject  
 of this Book he sets down in his Preface; viz. That being one Day in  
*Brussels* in *Brabant*, and being then Secretary to the worshipful Compa-  
 ny of Merchant Adventurers of the *English* Nation, he chanced in a  
 Printer's Shop to find a little Pamphlet in *French*, called *The Debate of*  
*Heralds of England and France*: Wherein were contained the Commo-  
 dities in effect of both the said Realms, with the victorious Acts and  
 Prowesses of sundry noble Princes, ruling in Times past over the said  
 Regions. Which after he had perused, he perceived the *French* Herald  
 wholly without Desert to give the Honour to *France*, and in all things  
 debased this noble Realm and People of *England*: And further found the  
 said Book to be compiled of hearty Malice, little or nothing tracing the  
 Chronicles of the one Realm, or the other. Therefore out of Zeal to  
 his Country, this Author pretends to shew the Truth, touching the said  
 Debate, out of a great many ancient Historians which he had diligently  
 consulted, in the behalf of *England*; as *Eutropius*, *Colman*, *Bede*, *Gildas*,  
*Orote*, *Chronica Chronicorum*, &c. The Book begins thus; “*PRU-*  
 “*DENCE* upon a Day for Pleasure past her Time in a Garden;  
 “where

A Debate be-  
 tween the  
 Heralds of  
 England and  
 France.



A N N O

1550.

“ where finding her self accompanied with two Heralds, the one of *England*, and the other of *France*, and minding to put unto them a Question, to know if they were expert in their Offices, reasoned with them in this Manner: PRUDENCE speaketh. Fair Sirs, said she, you have a goodly Office, which all Noblemen ought to love and favour. For to your Reports Emperors, Kings, Princes, Ladies, and other great Lords submit themselves. You are Judges of worldly Honours, be it in Arms, as in Assaults, Battails, Rencounters, Sieges, Justs, Tourneys, or in Shows, Pomps, Feasts and Obsequies, and in all other Things don in Magnificence, and tending to Honour: By you they ought to be published, &c.

*Diacosio-Martyrion.*

An Endeavour and Intent there was to let the World see another Tract about this Year, (tho' it as yet came not forth.) It was a Book in Verse, called *Diacosio-Martyrion*, writ by *White*, Warden of *Winchester*, with some Assistance: In truth a very trifling Piece, levelled against *Peter Martyr*. He sent it to *Lovain* to be printed there. But upon the Knowledge that such a Book was by him sent thither, he was imprisoned; and other his Friends, who assisted in the making, or transporting of it, were in great Danger of suffering by it. Hereupon the *Lovain* Printer stopt, or suppress it, and sent it back, Nov. 1. 1553. And then it was printed and published in *London*. This Account is told of it in the Preface to the Reader. It was dedicated *Ad Serenissimam Illustrissimamque Principem MARIAM Regis EDWARDI VI. Sororem*. And this Dedication was not altered, tho' published, when she was actually Queen. Before it, is an Epistle to *Peter Martyr*, full of Reproaches for his Tenets about the Eucharist, his Lectures at *Oxford*, and his refusing to dispute with *Dr. Smith*, when he was challenged. And he says there, that *Peter Martyr*, to avoid the Dispute, complained to the Government against *Smith* and forced him to flee, to escape Imprisonment. But the *Memorials* of *Cranmer*, Chap. xiv. will give a true Representation of that Affair.

*Bishop Voisey resigns.*

*John Voisey*, or *Veyzey*, alias *Harman*, was Bishop of *Exeter*, and so continued to this Year; but seldom resided upon his Bishopric, living for the most Part in *Warwickshire*, where he minded secular Matters, tending chiefly to the Improvement of the Town of *Sutton Coldfield*, his native Place. To whose Absence from his Diocese the Rebellion in the West was partly attributed. The King and Court had an Honour for the Man, having been King *HENRY VIII.*'s Chaplain, Dean of his Chapel, employed by him in honourable Employments abroad in Embassies; and at home he had been Governor to the Lady *MARY*, when she was the King's only Daughter, and intitled Princess of *Wales*, L. President of *Wales*, and one of those that assisted at the Consecration of Archbishop *Cranmer*. He was now grown very ancient, and so the less fit to look after his great Diocese. And therefore, having made good Provisions for himself out of the Temporalities thereof, did now in *November* resign it into the King's Hands by Word of Mouth, as it seems, to the Earl of *Bedford*, being Lord Lieutenant of those Western Countries. Which Resignation was so acceptable and well taken at this Juncture, when there was such need there of an active and Preaching Bishop, that a Letter of Thanks was written from the King and Council to the said Bishop, for surrendring to the King his Office, or Charge, by reason of his Age, not able

The Council thanks him.  
*Warr. Book.*



able to discharge the same according to his Conscience, as it was reported *ANNO* by the Earl of *Bedford*, Keeper of the Privy Seal. Yet he outliving *1550.* King EDWARD, was replaced by Queen MARY in his old See, tho' unable to mind it. And then Dr. *Moreman* was his Coadjutor: as *Coverdale* was under King EDWARD, and upon his Resignation, his Successor, as we shall see under the next Year.

Sir *Martin Bows*, Knight, that had been long Undertreasurer of the *Mint*, and faithful in his Place, did now about *January* surrender his Office in the State, as the Bishop had surrendered his in the Church. Which I the rather mention here, because *John Stow*, in his Catalogue of Citizens that had been Benefactors, leaves him wholly out, as also doth Dr. *Willet* in his Catalogue. For as he was a very wealthy Man, so was he largely charitable. He built an Hospital at *Woolwich* in *Kent*, where he had an House and Lands. He appointed a Sermon to be preached yearly at the Church of *St. Mary Woolnoth*, (where he lived, and where he was buried,) at, or near *St. Martin's Day*. At which Sermon the Company of *Goldsmiths*, (whom he made his Trustees) are to be present; and certain of his Gifts are then and there to be disposed by them. Whose Streamers and Cognizances hang still up (or lately did) in the said Church, and are to be renewed from Time to Time by the said Company as they decay. Which they are to do in Memory of his large Benefactions towards them. For he gave them much Plate, and curiously wrought, and many Houses and Lands. He was Lord Maior, *Anno 1545. 37 Hen. 8.* and Sheriff five Years before. But to return to the Surrender of his Office: The Commissioners appointed to hear and determine all Accounts and Reckonings of the King's Mints, within the Realm, (*viz.* the Earl of *Warwic*, Sir *William Herbert*, and Sir *Walter Mildmay*) found him in Debt to the King 10000 *l.* And for his honest and faithful Managery of his Place, and Surrender of his Fee of 200 Marks; First, he had an Annuity granted him of 200 Mark, and the Confirmation of 66-13-4. granted him by King HENRY for his good Service done in the said Office. Secondly, he had a Grant to pay and discharge the foresaid Debt as followeth, that is to say, In hand 3000 *l.* and so yearly a 1000 *l.* till all were paid. Lastly, a Pardon of all Treasons, Trespases, Contempts, &c. done and committed by the said *Martin*, concerning Mony and Coin of the King's Majesty and his Father, and of all unjust and false making of Mony and Payments of the same: And of all other Offences don contrary to the Effect of the Common Law, and to any Statute, Act, Provision, Proclamation, &c. or to any Prescriptions, Customs, or any other Conventions, concerning the making and coining of the said Mony; and of all Forfeitures of Goods, Chattels, Lands, and Tenements, and Pains of Death; and of all Imprisonments, and other Pains whatsoever: And of all Prosecutions, Condemnations, Judgments and Indictments, and the Execution of them, which by reason of any of them he should run in the King's Danger; And of all manner of Debts, Accounts, Arrerages of Accounts, Acts and Demands, that against the said *Martin*, or *Thomas Shepwith*, or either of them, as Executors of the last Will and Testament of *Rafe Rowlet*, Esq; [to whom it seems Sir *Martin* succeeded in the *Mint*,] or against Sir *Rafe Rowlet*, Kt. as Son and Heir of the said *Rowlet*, by reason of any Recognizances, Obligations, Bills, &c.



ANNO

1550.

## C H A P. XXXIII.

*The King's good Progreſs in Learning and Vertue. The Marqueſs of Northampton. Commissioners for French Matters. French Crowns. A Scotch Ship ſtayed. Earl of Southampton. A Ward: Thomas Lord Howard. Mines found, &c.*

The King's  
Progreſs in  
his Studies.

THE King was now thirteen Years of Age, and by this Time underſtood *Latin*, ſpoke it, wrot it, properly, ſkilfully, fluently, and all this with Judgment too. He made alſo good Progreſs in the *Greek Tongue*, and with great Eaſe turned *Latin* into *Greek*. He had learnt over *Logic*; and was now entring into *Ariſtotle's Ethics* in *Greek*, (for *Cicero's* Philoſophy he was alſo verſed in.) For being once inſtruted in thoſe univerſal Precepts and Parts of Vertue and Vice, he would be able to bring a ſteddy Judgment to look into the various Manners of Men, which he ſhould meet with plenteouſly in reading of Hiſtory: Which was the Reaſon his learned Tutor *Cheke* aſſigned for this Courſe of Study, in his Answer made to *Aſcham*: Who had aſked him why he had not rather put him upon reading the *Inſtitution of Cyrus*, a Book very proper for a King to read. When theſe *Ethics* were don with, which would take the King up but a little Time, then he was to peruſe *Ariſtotle's Rhetoric*.

And in Ver-  
tue.

But together with his Aptneſs and great Progreſs in Learning, he had a great Diſpoſition to Vertue, a Love of Religion, a good Judgment and other excellent Qualifications. *Aſcham* who knew him well, and lived then at the Court, in a Letter dated in *December* to the learned *Sturmius* at *Argentine*, gave this Account of him, "That his Nature equalled his Fortune, but his Vertue, or to ſpeak as a Chriſtian, the manifold Grace of GOD in him, exceeded both. That he did to Admiration outrun his Age in his Deſires of the beſt Learning, in his Study of the trueſt Religion, in his Will, his Judgment, and his Conſtancy.

Some Endeavour to take  
the King off  
from his pre-  
ſent good  
Courſe.

Lever's Ser-  
mon before  
the King, on  
the third Sun-  
day in Lent.

Tho' there wanted not for ſome about his Perſon, who laboured to divert him from his Studies and Care of his Kingdom, to Paſtime and Gayety, which therefore the graver Sort, as they had Opportunity, endeavoured to arm the good King againſt. One whom we have mentioned before, took the Confidence from the Pulpit, to beſpeak him with Reſpect hereunto, after this Manner: "It is not unlike, but if your Ma- jeſty with your Council ſpeak unto your Nobles for Proviſion, now to be made for the poor People, ye ſhall find ſome that ſetting afore your Eyes the Hardneſs of the Matter, the Tenderneſs of your Years, and the wonderful Charges that ſhould be requiſite, will move and counſil you to quiet your-ſelf, to take your Eaſe, yea, to take your Paſtime,



Pastime in Hawking, Hunting and Gaming. And then turning his Speech *ANNO*  
 to such an one, he thus accosted him, "Thou hast no Taste nor Savour, 1550:  
 "how delicious GOD is unto a pure Conscience in godly Exercise of  
 "good Works: But all that thou regardest and feelest is voluptuous  
 "Pleasures in worldly Vanities. And therefore thou dost not perceive,  
 "how that they which be endowed with a special Grace of GOD, may  
 "find more Pleasure and Pastime in godly Governiance, to keep toge-  
 "ther and save simple Men, than in Hawking and Hunting, to chase  
 "and kill wild Beasts. Yea, a godly King shall find more Pleasure in  
 "casting Lots for *Jonas*, to try out Offenders which trouble the Ship  
 "of this Commonwealth, than in casting Dice at Hazzard, to allow  
 "and maintain by his Example such things as should not be suffered in  
 "a Commonwealth. Yea, surely a good King shall take far more De-  
 "light in edifying with Comfort, and decking with good Order, the  
 "Congregation of his People, the Church and House of GOD, the hea-  
 "venly City of *Jerusalem*, than in building such Houses as seem gay  
 "and gorgeous, and be indeed but vile Earth, Stones, Timber and Clay.  
 "Such like Answer ought your Majesty and all Noblemen to make, if  
 "ye find any of your Counsellors more carnal than spiritual, more world-  
 "ly than godly.

I shall now set down some Matters of more public Concern, or special  
 Remark that passed, and were signed by the King and his Council, be-  
 ginning at the Month of *October*.

*William Parr*, Marquis of *Northampton*, Brother to King *HENRY*'s Offices grant-  
 last Wife, (being therefore one whom King *EDWARD* called Uncle,) ed to the  
 was one of the Favourites of this Reign. Besides his Advancement to be Marquis of  
 Lord High Chamberlain of *England*, he had a Grant dated, *Octob. 20.* *Northampton.*  
 of the Office of keeping the Park of *Hendley*, and the little Park of  
*Windsor*, together with the Constableship of the Castle of *Windsor*; and  
 the keeping of all the Forests, Parks, Warrens, and other Places belong-  
 ing to every of the same Offices, for Life; with all Profits thereto be-  
 longing. With the Fee of Six Pence *per Day* for keeping *Hendley Park*;  
 and Four Pence *per Day* for keeping the little Park of *Windsor*. To him  
 also was granted by Patent, dated the same Day, the Office of keeping  
 the Laund of *Benfield* in the Forest of *Rockingham*, in the County of  
*Northampton*, and of the Game within the said Laund, with the Out-  
 woods of *Thornehaw*, *Woodhaw* and *Corbe Woods* within the said Forest;  
 and the keeping of *Gratton Woods*, and of the West *Bailifwick* within  
 the said Forest, with all Fees and Profits. Also he had a Grant for Life  
 of all the chief Messuage called *the Laund Lodge*, within the said Laund:  
 Together with a Lease to him for Life of the Herbage and Panage. Of  
 the same Date was granted also to this Lord the Office of Bailif of *Sur-*  
*rey*, alias *Bagshots Bailes*, in the Forest of *Windsor*; And the Office of  
 Steward and Bailif of the Manor of *Godalming*, and the Hundred of  
*Godalming* in the County of *Surrey*; with the Gubernance of all the  
 King's Tenants and Subjects within the said Manor and Hundred, Inhabi-  
 tant; with the keeping of the chief House and Scite of the late Prior's  
 Farm of *Guilford* in the said County, and the Master of the Game within  
 the Park of *Whitley*, for Life. All which Offices were surrendered by  
 Sir *Michael Stanbop*: Formerly  
 held by Sir  
*Michael Stan-*  
*bop.*



ANNO  
1550.

A Commission  
for the Con-  
troverfies  
with the  
French about  
the Borders.

A Commission was issued out, *Novem. 16.* to *John Wallop, Thomas Wyat,* and *Richard Rede,* Knights, *William Cook,* LL. D. and *Francis Hall,* Esquires, or to any four, three, or two of them, to hear and determine with the *French King's* Commissioners, all Controversies between the King's Majesty and the said *French King*; touching as well the Right of Title of Lands and Possessions, as also of Lordships and Territories, as well within the King's Majesty's Limits, as within the *French King's*, upon the *Marches of Calais.*

A new Commission, but to the same Tenor and Purport, was made, only leaving out *Sir Thomas Wyat,* upon some Reason of Sickness, or the like, and putting *Sir Richard Blount* in his Room. A Memorial was then given by the King, with the Advice of his Council, to the said Commissioners, concerning the aforesaid Controversies. And there was a Warrant to *Sir Edmund Peckham,* Cofferer, to pay to *Sir Richard Rede,* a learned Common Lawyer, and a Judge, forty Shillings *per diem,* until his Return unto the King's Presence, advancing him two Months beforehand; And to allow him for all such Sums of Money as by his Bills should be signified unto him to be laid out about sending Letters to the King's Majesty, or otherwise about the said Affairs. The like Warrant to the said *Peckham* was directed, to pay *Dr. Cook,* a learned Civilian, for his Diet, the Sum of thirty three Shillings four Pence *per Day,* and to advance him two Months.

A Proclama-  
tion for  
French  
Crowns.

A Proclamation came forth dated *Novemb. 27.* Commanding all the King's Subjects, and every other Person having Traffic within the Realm, that from the last of *December* next ensuing, they should not utter, or receive any Crowns, commonly called *French Crowns,* above the Value of six Shillings and four Pence of current Money of *England*; upon Pain of Forfeiture of the same. Whereof the one half should be to the King's Majesty, and the other to the Accusers. With a *Proviso,* that whosoever before the last Day of *December* should bring any of the *French Crowns* into the King's Mints should receive for every of them seven Shillings, according to the Value before limited.

A Complaint  
of a Scotch  
Ship stayed.

The Princess of *Scotland* had sent a Letter of Complaint to the King in this Month of *November,* advertizing the King, that a Ship called *The Trinity,* appointed to help some Part of the Train of the Queen her Mother in her Voyage to *France,* was stayed in the King's Port of *Hull,* contrary to the Amity and late Peace. But all this was but a glozing Surmise, and perhaps this Ship was no better in Truth than a Pirate. For to this Import did the King's Answer to the Princess run, that there was no such Ship stayed in that Port of *Hull*: But in the Port of *Grimsey* in the River of *Humber* there was a *Scotch Ship* stayed: Yet none of the Ships that appertained to the said Train; as appeared by the Deposition of the Mariners, and of *Davy Simner,* Master and Owner thereof. And that it was stayed there, because it was entred without any safe Conduct, or other Licence contrary to Law and the ancient Customs of both Realms. Wherewith the King said, he nothing doubted but that she would be satisfied.

Earl of South-  
ampton Ward  
to Sir William  
Herbert.

*Henry,* the young Earl of *Southampton,* being the King's Godson, and now his Ward, was in *December* committed to *Sir William Herbert.* His Father *Sir Thomas Wriothesley* was created Earl the first Year of this King, and Lord Chancellor, a Man very inward with *Stephen Gardiner,* late Bishop of *Winchester,* and much addicted to his Principles, an Enemy to



to the Duke of *Somerset*, and Assistant to *Warwick* in his Practices against him. Being thrown out of the Court and his Places, and in some Apprehension of being called in Question for his Life, was thought to take it to heart, and retiring to his own House, died in Discontent, or, as some said, by giving himself a Dose. To Sir *William Herbert*, with his Ward, was committed the keeping of the Manor of *Blomesbury*, (where, if I mistake not, the Earl had his House) and all the Messuages, Lands, and Tenements in *Milfield* and *Culverclose* with their Appurtenances in the County of *Middlesex*, and of the Manor of *Sutton* with the Appurtenances in the County of *Somerset*, to the yearly Value of 200 l. With the Wardship and Marriage of the said Earl *Henry*, without Disparagement during his Minority. A Warrant was also issued out, the same second of *December*, to the Earl of *Wiltshire*, Master of the Wards and Liveries, that where the King had granted to Sir *William Herbert*, the Wardship of *Henry* Earl of *Southampton*, he appointed to the said Sir *William* an 100 l. for the Exhibition of the said Earl during his Minority, and that he should at several Days pay one Thousand Pounds for the said Wardship, and to appoint the said Sir *William* another 100 l. of the said Earls Lands: And also abate him 700 l. Part of the said Thousand, in Consideration that the said young Earl was the King's Godson, and of the good Service of the said Sir *William*.

ANNO  
1550.

*Thomas*, Lord *Howard*, the same I suppose that was intituled Lord *Howard* of *Bindon*, seemed to be one of the poor Noblemen of this Reign, however his Poverty were occasioned. This Man ran in Arrears in the second and third Payment of a Subsidy granted to the King's Father in the 34th of his Reign; which came to the Sum of 93-6-8. And besides he was indebted to King EDWARD 300 l. who favourably considering his Circumstances, pardoned him wholly the former Sum, and threescore Pounds of the latter; and took sufficient Sureties for the Payment of the rest in six Years.

Debts pardoned to  
*Thomas*, Lord  
*Howard*.

This Year had one *Michael Winston* found out divers Mines of Iron and Steel within the King's Forests of *Exmore* and *Dartmore* in *Devonshire*; and also certain Earth, which would make Moor Coal. With the which the Iron and Steel might be made of the Oar of the said Iron and Steel to be found within the said Forests. Upon Information hereof the King granted a Commission bearing Date *December 11*. whereby he authorized and licenced *John*, Earl of *Bedford*, *Peter Carow*, and *Gawen Carow*, Knights. *Richard Duke*, and the said *Michael Winston*, and every of them, and all others, by them, or any of them to be named, or appointed; to dig, found, win and get by all means they could from Time to Time hereafter, Iron Woore [Oar] and Steel, within his Highness proper Ground, within the said Forests; and likewise Earth to make Moor Coal, without giving, or paying any thing therefore. And also to erect and build in his said proper Ground, such and so many Houses and Mills, as should be thought meet and convenient to the said Earl, *Peter*, *Gawen*, *Richard* and *Michael*, or any of them, for the making of Iron and Steel with the said Woore and Coal. And further, that they should enjoy the said Houses and Mills, and other the said Necessaries to them, their Heirs, Executors and Assigns for ever; with Power and Authority to bequeath and assign the same at their Pleasure, and in such Manner as by the said Commissioners Order shall be appointed. So the said Mills and Houses, and making of the

Mines of Iron  
and Steel in  
*Devon*.



4 N N O  
1550.

said Iron and Steel may have Continuance for ever: Yielding to the King and his Heirs for every Tun of Iron there made six Shillings and eight Pence; and likewise for every Tun of Steel. And to the Intent the said Purpose should take Effect, the said Commissioners had Authority to make Orders and Decrees for the establishing the Continuance thereof, so they be not against the Commonweal, or Laws, or Statutes of the Realm: With a *Proviso* that they shall not intermeddle with any Bodies severall, without their Consents.

Beaumont  
made Master  
of the Rolls.

Sir Robert Southwel, Knight, Master of the Rolls, under some Eclipse, did now resign, or was deprived of his Place, and the Office, December 11. conferred upon John Beaumont, Esq; for Life, with all Fees, &c. in as large and ample Manner as the said Robert lately had it.

A Message  
from the Da-  
nish King con-  
cerning his  
Merchants.

One Dr. Albert Knoppert, a Lawyer, was now in England, lately sent from Christiern, King of Denmark, for adjusting some Merchants Business, wherein he was civilly treated. He had in this Month of December complained, in the Name of that King's Subjects, of certain Customs made here about Merchandize, to their great Loss and Damage. But the King in Answer shortly declared unto Christiern, that his Subjects also complained of certain Customs made there to their great Hindrance. This Complaint the King and his Council seemed to take the more Offence at, because that but the Month last past the King and his Council had fulfilled the Desire of, and given Satisfaction to the said Dr. Albert, who came to be Procurator in certain Causes of Injury, supposed to be don to some Danish Merchants: and had given him a Letter of Answer to carry to King Christiern, signifying the Justice he had don his Subjects, with a Commendation of the said Albert for his Diligence and Wisdom used therein.

An Embassy  
to Denmark.

In this Month of December, I find a Warrant signed by the King, to deliver to Sir John Borthwick, a Scotch Man, five Months Diet beforehand in Prest after twenty five Shillings and eight Pence per Day, sent about certain the King's Affairs; and so hereafter to be allowed until his Return to the King, *inclusive*. This seems to have been some private Embassy, because no mention is made of the Person, Place or Message. But the King's Journal discovers all. Where it appears that Borthwic (who seems to have been Knighted for this Purpose) was sent to the King of Denmark with private Instructions, for the matching of the Lady Elizabeth with his Son. He had his Passport to go beyond Sea with one Gentleman and three Servants, January 2.

The King's  
Favour and  
Grace to Exe-  
ter.

As a Testimony of the King's Gratitude and good Will to the Citizens of Exeter for their last Years good Service against the Rebels, (besides the Thanks he had rendred them already) by a Patent dated December 19. the King confirmed to the Maior and Commonalty of that City and their Successors, all their old Customs, Liberties, Privileges, Franchises, and Jurisdictions contained in any Charters, or Letters Patents of the King's Majesty, or his Progenitors; with a Gift to them in Fee-simple of all his Manor of Exiland in Devonshire, with divers other Lands, Tenements, &c. to the yearly Value of 29-18-10. over and above the Reprizes: To be holden by Fealty only in Sockage, with a Licence to purchase 100 l. a Year in Land.

Commission  
for French  
Pyrates.

This Kingdom upon the Sea Coasts towards France, and the English Merchants suffered much by French Pyrats still, notwithstanding the Peace



Peace with France: Nor could the *English* depend upon their Friendship, *ANNO*  
Therefore a special Commission was given out, dated, *Jan. 2.* to Dr. 1550.  
*Griffith Leyson*, Sir *Richard Rede*, and Dr. *William Cook*, or to two of  
them, to examine and determine all and singular Pyracies, Depredations,  
&c. now present, or hereafter to be don between the King's Subjects  
and the *French King's*, since the last Treaty of Peace between them con-  
cluded.

Sir *Philip Hoby* seems now to have returned home from his Embassy Sir Philip Ho-  
with the Emperor, where he had resided two or three Years. A needy by late Amba-  
Man it seems he was, whether the Cause were his own Prodigality, or fador gratifi-  
some other Misfortune. To which I attribute the Counsil he suggested ed.  
to the Protector mentioned before, of taking away all the *Prebends* from  
the Church, and bestowing them upon secular Uses, and reducing the  
Revenues of the Bishops; hoping thereby that some Part thereof might  
fall to him. His Needs made him often craving Supplies, while he was His Need.  
Ambassador. Infomuch that in one of his Letters to the Counsil he told  
them that he had run into Interest, and borrowed Mony upon Credit  
more than he could well yet a while discharge. And that if he should,  
through lack of Payment of his Diets, either run into further Debt, or  
else be forced to lay to Pledge, or sell the King's Plate, that he had  
there, it would be little to the King's Honour, and a great Blot to his  
own Honesty. He trusted therefore their Lordships would have Consi-  
deration thereof. This Person owed to the King 1249-12-4 ob. All  
which the King now forgave him, perhaps in Reward of the Service of  
his Embassy: Acquitting and Discharging him, his Heirs, Executors  
and Administrators, and divers others standing bound with him for  
1100*l.* due to the King for Stalment of his Debts. And whereas the said  
Sir *Philip* was endebted to the King in the Sum of 27-15-0. for the Con-  
tribution granted the King's Father, a Warrant was issued to the Exche-  
quer to levy a Tally or Tallies containing the said Sum, and to deliver  
the same to him as of the King's Gift. These Favours were granted him,  
*Jan. 7.* And three Days after the King granted him in Fee-simple all  
the Manor of *Norton*, with *Lenchwife* in the Parish of *Norton*, with the  
Appurtenances in the County of *Wigorn*: And divers other Lands, &c.  
to the yearly Value of 47-12-11. to be holden in *Capite*, by the fortieth  
Part of one Knight's Fee. And whereas he had obtained of the Dean  
and Chapter of *Worcester*, the Parsonage of *Lenchwick* and *Norton*, (to  
which Church it belonged) for twenty one Years, that would not serve  
his Turn, but he procured the King's Dispensatory Letters to them,  
(dated *April 16.*) to this Import, that altho' the Statutes of their House  
did not permit them to extend their Grants any further than for twenty  
one Years, he did thereby dispense with their said Statutes in that be-  
half, and desired them to grant the same Leases for threescore Years.

Great Fears were now upon good Intelligence conceived, concerning Preparations  
the Realm of *Ireland*, lest it should be betrayed, the *French* practising for *Ireland*.  
that Way. So that the King purposed to send Forces speedily thither,  
and to put that Place into a Posture of Defence. And for that End he  
wrot five Letters in the Month of *January*, to as many Persons of the  
chiefest Eminency in that Kingdom; importing, That whereas the King's  
Majesty purposed this Spring Time to send an Army into *Ireland*, they  
should therefore put themselves and their Men, as well those that were  
under



**A N N O** under their Rule by their Offices, as also their Household Servants and  
**1550.** Tenants, in a readines, to such a Number of Horsemen and Footmen,  
 as they might conveniently: And to be in a Readiness against the  
 Day of And likewise that they should make their Repair to the  
 King to understand his further Pleasure: And also to certify the Num-  
 ber of the said Horsemen and Footmen forthwith; and how many should  
 be Demilances, and how many light Horsemen. The Lord Cobham  
 was appointed in *February*, to lead the Army into *Ireland*, and Sir Henry  
 Palmer to be Master of the Ordnance.

An Office to  
 the Earl of  
*Dorset*.

Henry, Earl of *Dorset*, whose Seat was in *Leicestershire*, had granted  
 him in the Month of *January*, the Office of Steward of the King's Ho-  
 nours and Lordships in the said County, and of all Lordships, Manors,  
 Lands, &c. in the Counties of *Leicester*, *Rutland*, *Warwick*, and *Not-*  
*tingham*, Parcel of the Dutchy of *Lancaster*, for Life: And also the  
 Office of Constable of the Castle of *Leicester*, and the Office of Porter  
 of the same Castle; with all Profits, and a Fee of five Pound a Year  
 for exercising the Office of Steward. And for keeping of the Castle and  
 Office of Porter two Pence per Day.

A Commission  
 for the Safety  
 of the Coun-  
 fillors.

Those that were of the King's Council, and so appointed to be by his  
 Father King HENRY in his last Will enrolled in the Chancery, and  
 the rest whom the said King by his said Will ordered to be Assistants to  
 the said Counsellors, now thought it convenient to have their past Coun-  
 cils and Management of the public Affairs, confirmed and ratified by the  
 present King, and to be specially commissioned by him for their future  
 Acting in the same Quality, during the King's Minority. And this no  
 doubt for their own Security, which otherwise perhaps might now, or  
 hereafter be called in Question: And that chiefly in these ticklish  
 Times, when there were such Parties in the Court. Wherefore there  
 was a large Commission drawn out for this Purpose: (But whether signed  
 and sealed I cannot tell) which may be found in the *Repository*, taken  
 from the *Cotton Library*.

P P.

Titus B. 2.

Parties in the  
 Court.

Upon Occasion of this Commission it seems their happened great  
 Feuds at Court, or else this Commission occasioned by them. For in  
*January*, the Court then being at *Greenwich*, appeared great Parties and Si-  
 dings, the Earl of *Warwic* heading one Party, and the Duke of *Somer-*  
*set*'s Friends on the other side: Whereof the Lord Privy Seal, and the  
 Lord *Paget* were two. These and others thought it of Importance that  
 this Commission should proceed, as tending so to their own Security  
 and Quiet, who were about the King. And the Lord Chancellor, and  
 Lord Treasurer did not dislike it. But the haughty designing Earl of  
*Warwic* was against it; and pretended much his Care of the King's  
 Safety, which some Way or other might be in great Danger hereby.  
 And therefore in this Fit he wrot a severe Letter to *Paget*, who was a  
 great Doer in this Business, giving him Warning how he proceeded:  
 Whose Letter was as follows.

The Earl of  
*Warwic* to the  
 Lord *Paget*.  
 Titus B. 2.

" This may be to require your Lordship to be vigilant and circum-  
 spect in the Matter which now you have in hand. Perhaps the Lord  
 Chancellor and the Lord Treasurer, who thinketh me touch them  
 least, can be content that it may be wrapt up in Silence: and to say,  
 " it is not expedient it should come in Question: but GOD preserve  
 " our Master. If he should fail, there is Watchers enough that would  
 " bring it in Question, and would burden you and others, who now  
 " will



" will not understand the Danger, to be Deceivers of the whole Body ANNO  
 " of the Realm with an Instrument forged to execute your malicious 1550.  
 " Meanings. Mark well the Words that Baker Yesterday spake in the  
 " King's Presence concerning the Fault, if any were, must be imputed  
 " to the Lords. Well, I would wish as well for the Surety of the King's  
 " Majesty as for the Truth of the Matter, that Men should not be against  
 " the perfect Reforming of it, now especially, seeing it hath been thus  
 " far debated: Which I reckon even a happy thing. Praying you to  
 " participate this unto my Lord Privy Seal. And so I commit you both  
 " unto the Tuition of the Lord. At *Grenewich* the 22. Jan. 1550.

Your Loving Friend,

J. WARWYC.

The Letter is somewhat obscure, as depending upon some particular weighty Matter then in Agitation in the Council; for the doing whereof the more securely the aforesaid Commission was thought necessary. But in it appears *Warwic's* Displeasure against some of them, covered over with a pretended extraordinary Care of the King's Person.

The Feuds grew more and more visible between the Parties of the Duke of *Somerset* and Earl of *Warwic*. And now it was laboured on both sides to strengthen their Parties. In the next Month, viz. in *February*, a certain great Lord in the North, (whether the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, Lord President, or some other,) received a Letter from another, in or about the Court, giving him to understand these Dissensions, and a Report that went of him that he offered himself to side with one of the Parties. But he like a wise and wary Man pretended, that he would not believe, that two such great and wise Men, and related together, should have Misunderstandings between them. And that for his Part he would mind impartially the Business intrusted with him by the King, and meant not to be biased any other Way. But this Lord's own Words are worthy the perusing. Whereby may also appear his Judgment of this Dissension.

Discord appears between Somerset and Warwic.

" My very good Lord, after my hearty Commendations. Having perused your gentle and most friendly Letters, which I yesterday received by your trusty Servant this Bearer, like as the same do fully declare your Lordship's great Friendship and Amity to me, being first by Nature grounded in Consanguinity and Nearness of Blood; even so through this your great Gentleness I am enforced presently to testify my hearty good Will toward your Lordship again; Assuring the same, that as both by Nature and your Kindness, I am bounden, I shall at all times be ready in like Case to do for your Lordship what in my Power lieth. And where you do write, it should come to your Hearing, that some Person, having practiced with me to feel my Disposition in Friendship towards the Duke of *Somerset* and the Earl of *Warwic*, should speak certain Words, whereby he would seem to perceive that I rather offered my self to be a Party, and to set Variance and Disorder between my said Lords, than to preserve the Quietness, Unity and Concord of this Realm; My Lord, if any Person have made this Report of me, he hath most untruly slandered and belied me. GOD defend, that I considering the Trust, that it hath pleased the King's Majesty to repose in me, should so long live to mind any Dissension in this his Highness's Realm.

A Letter from a Lord out of the North hereupon. Titus B. 2.

" And



ANNO  
1550.

“ And as concerning Agreement between my said Lords, albeit I have  
“ heard certain Rumors in the Country, that they should not be in full  
“ and perfect Amity, yet did I never give Credit therto; but both  
“ thought and said, that I trusted my said Lords were too wise so to do,  
“ considering the great Inconvenience that might come thereof: And  
“ weighing with my self also their near Alliance by Marriage, I was  
“ fully persuaded the same Rumors to be untrue. And surely great Pity  
“ it were, and as I think not a little Danger and Disquietness to the  
“ whole Realm would grow thereof, if any such thing should chance.

“ Wherefore, good my Lord, now that I have discoursed unto you my  
“ full Mind in this Behalf; I trust you will make Answer to such slande-  
“ rous Reports, as be most untruly fained of me; like as I would do for  
“ your Lordship in like Case. Which you may with your Honour do.  
“ For I never intended to take Party with any Nobleman against another,  
“ but to my Power to encrease their Friendships, and to serve the King's  
“ Majesty according to my Duty: As knoweth the Almighty, who long  
“ preserve you, my very good Lord, in Health and Honour. From  
“ York, the 17. Febr. 1550.

Orders for  
remedying  
the Dearth  
in Cornwall.

In the West of England, and especially in Cornwall, Corn and other  
Provisions of Flesh and Fish, and other Necessaries, grew very dear,  
occasioned perhaps by the late Insurrections there. Whereby the poorer  
Sort suffered not a little. And this furthered in a great Measure by the  
richer Sort, who by Forestalling and Monopolizing, and other unjust  
Arts of those that furnished the Markets, sold their Corn and Cattel  
at their own Prizes. Therefore special Order was sent to the Justices of  
that County, for the speedy Regulation of these Grievances, especially  
among this People newly pacified from a Rebellion. These Justices were  
directed to learn the Names of those that used to serve the Markets in the  
several Divisions with Grain, Butter, Cheese and Flesh. And then to en-  
quire, whether they had withdrawn of late from the Markets which they  
furnished. To examine which of them sold at excessive Prizes, contrary  
to a late Commandment. And so to require them to appear before them at  
certain Days, putting them under Sureties for their Appearance, to re-  
ceive their Deserts. If they should accuse others, as selling to them at ex-  
cessive Prizes, then those to be sent for also, and put under like Sureties.  
The Grain of every Parish to be surveyed by the Justices, and likewise  
the Cattel, and to be entred down in Books. Victuallers to be appointed  
to serve the Market Towns; and they to be such as dwelt nigh, and to  
be no Graziers: They to fetch Cattle for the Markets from the Graziers;  
who were to deliver them to the said Victuallers paying for the same at  
the King's Price. Grain to be appointed by the said Surveyors to serve  
the Markets at reasonable Prizes, by them to be set. Likewise such as  
were accustomed to serve the Markets with Butter and Cheese, to serve  
it at the King's Price. Butchers having Beef, Muttons and other Victuals  
at the Grazer's Hands, to be compelled to sell the same according to a  
Rate set by the Maiors, or chief Officers of the respective Towns. And  
such like Orders were also given for selling of Fish. This Commission to  
the Justices of Cornwall, and a Table of the several Prizes prescribed for  
these and other things brought to Market, as Wines, Cloth, Hides, Lea-  
ther, &c. may be found in the MS. before mentioned, exemplified in  
the Repository.

qq



CHAP. XXXIV.

ANNO  
1550.

*An Ambassador for France. Crofts goes to Ireland. Jersey fortified. Duke of Somerset's bare Circumstances. Grants of Leases and Places to several Courtiers. The Earl of Southampton, Denny and the Lord Wentworth die. Lady Mary comes to Court. Offices granted to the Marquis of Northampton. A short Pathway, &c.*

**G**REAT Jealousies were now of the French's making Disturbances both in Scotland and Ireland. A French Ambassador came hither in January, in Favour of Scotland; as, to move the English to surrender certain Places to the Scots, and to confer other Benefits upon that Nation. Upon this the King sent Sir William Pickering, his Ambassador into France, in February, and withal sent a Letter to Sir John Mason, Ambassador then in France to return home for Ease of his Sickness, and to communicate to Sir William Pickering, placed there in his Room, the whole State of the King's Affairs there: And to deliver to him all Plate and other things he had delivered to him here of the King at his Departure. To Sir William Pickering a Letter was sent soon after to this Import, That if Sir John Mason for his Sickness were not able to join with him in the Message he is sent about to the French King, to authorize him to proceed therein. And if he be able, and after wax so feeble by Sickness that he cannot continue his Service of Ambassage, that then the said Sir William shall succeed him in his Room by Authority of the King's Letters. Pickering came home again in March, and went again in April. And then Mason came home.

Sir William  
Pickering goes  
into France.

And whereas the French were practising in Ireland, Sir James Crofts, a good Soldier, was sent thither in February, to look after the Condition of that Kingdom, and especially the Havens, to prevent any Invasion, and to begin some good Fortifications. And he arrived with some Artificers at Waterford the next Month, where the Deputy was, having lately repaired to the South Parts with his Forces to watch the French. Four Letters were sent at this time; One to the Earl of Desmond, and the other three to other Persons of Credit, for the said Sir James Croft, Knight, sent thither to view certain Ports, Havens and other Places, which certain the King's Enemies intended to invade there and to report the Discommodities that may come upon the Loss thereof. And a Fleet of Ships was set forth for the Defence of that Realm, and to guard some Havens on the South side toward France.

And Sir  
James Crofts  
into Ireland.

The same Apprehensions had the English of the French's surprizing of the Isle of Jersey. Orders were therefore taken for strengthening the Castle, and other important Places there. And it was thought fit the Isle should bear the whole Charge of its own Defence, tho' it made a hard

Jersey fortifi-  
ed.



**ANNO** Shift. For there was a Letter sent thither to take down the Bells, reserving but one in every Church of the Island of *St. Obins*, [a Place in *Jersey*.] And the half Value of the same to be employed upon the Fortifications of the Castle there, and the other half upon the Fortifications towards the alleviating of the Charges of the King's Subjects there: And to arrest and tax the said Subjects after the Rate of their Goods, towards the Charges of the said Fortifications: And further, to appoint unto Priests that had Fees and Annuities given to them for Term of their Lives, upon certain Obits and Masses founded there, such Pensions as should be thought good by their Discretion, to be paid of the Chantry Lands of that Island. But these Orders came not forth till the Beginning of the next Year.

The Bishop of  
*Bath's* Palace  
comes to the  
Duke of *Somerset*.

The Dukes  
narrow Cir-  
cumstances.

His Son a  
Hostage.

Warr. Book.

Sir Andrew  
Dudley's Of-  
fice.

Leases to Se-  
cretary *Cecyl*.

This Year the Duke of *Somerset* got from *Barlow*, the Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, the Palace of the Bishop of *Bath*; the said Bishop alienating to him, *Novemb. 9.* the Scite, Circuit and Precinct of the said Palace, and divers other Lands to the yearly Value of 62-0-11. And in *March* following he got a Prebend, being the Manor of *Dultingcote* and *Chilcote* in *Somersetshire*, from one *Tbyn*, Prebendary of *Wells*. Both, as it seems, in Exchanges.

The Duke in his late Fall had been fleeced of all, not only his beneficial Places and Offices, but also of his Lands and Revenues; and was now reduced into narrow Circumstances: And therefore was to make his Fortunes again, as well as he could. This his Condition his Nephew the King considered, and helped him as much as he might. Which appeared, as in the Respects above mentioned, so in this that followeth. The King was now soon after the 25th of *March* to send Hostages into *France*, consisting of Persons of the best Nobility, that might answer the *French* Hostages sent hither. And among the rest the Earl of *Hertford*, Son and Heir to the Duke, and the King's Cousin, was one. And the King was at the Charge of setting him out, which I do not find he did to any other. For to *Francis Nudigate*, Steward to the Duke, the King granted 200 Mark by way of Gift toward the Charge of the said Earl's Furniture. And more, to the Duke was given 246-6-3. in Recompence of the Charges of the Board Wages of certain of the Servants attending upon the Earl in *France*. And about the same Time to the Duke was paid 500*l.* bequeathed him by King *HENRY's* last Will, which was paid upon Account of his present Need, as I must suppose, that Legacy having in Effect been before satisfied, when in the first Year of the King the said Duke had a Grant of divers Lands and Lordships, partly in consideration of Services, and partly for fulfilling the King's last Will: As it ran in the Book of *Sales*.

In *December*, Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Brother to the Earl of *Warwic*, gained the Office of Keeping all the Jewels, of the Robes and other things in the Palace of *Westminster*; with whom was joined *Arthur Sturton*; Which Place was granted to them for Life, and the longest Liver, with the Fee of 100 Mark.

Mr. *Cecyl*, Secretary about this Time had the Rectory of *Wimbleton*, in Reversion granted him for threescore Years, according to a Letter sent by the King, dated in *January* to the Dean and Chapter of *Worcester*, to whom the said Rectory belonged: Sir *Robert Tirwhit*, Knight, being at present in Possession by an old Lease, and *Cecyl* having Sir *Robert's* Interest in the same.

William



*William Honnings*, Esq; now, or late a Clark of the Council, got A N N O  
a Prebend from the Church of *Salisbury*. For *Guido Cavalcant* a Stran- 1550.  
ger, Incumbent of the Prebend of *Cloeping Farington* in the County of  
*Berks*, belonging to the said Church, being requested to give and sur-  
render his Interest and Estate of the Possession of the said Prebend, and  
being contented thereto, the King this *February* wrot to the Bishop, Dean  
and Chapter of *Salisbury*, that they also would agree hereunto in such  
Sort, as the same might take effect towards him in Fee-simple.

*Honnings gets  
a Prebend of  
Sarum.*

The King's Justice appeared in an Act of his that happened about this  
Time. The Wardens and Scholars and Clarks of the College of *St.  
Mary's prope Winton*, alias *St. Mary's College of Winchester*, had here-  
tofore sold to King *HENRY* certain Lands, and paid 671-14-2. besides,  
to his Treasurer. For the which the Manor of *Endeford* in *Wilts*, with  
other Lands were granted to them. Which Manor and Lands were in  
remainder to one *Thomas Culpeper* and his Heirs Male of his Body be-  
gotten. And who had lawfully entred. So their Purchase was lost and  
gon. The King therefore in Satisfaction, now this *February* granted them  
the Manor of *Ayshe* in *Surrey*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly  
Value of 77-16-9.

A Grant to  
*Winchester  
College.*

To gratify *George Broke*, Lord *Cobham*, a great Soldier, who had  
don the King good Service abroad, and was now going with an Army  
into *Ireland*, the King gave him in Fee simple the Lordship and Manor  
of *Great Hoo* and *Little Hoo*, and the Hundred of *Hoo*, with divers o-  
ther Lands, Tenements, &c. to the Yearly Value of 108-3-5. several  
Rents reserved and deducted. To hold by the fortieth Part of one  
Knight's Fee. Some of these Lands lay in *Rocheſter* and *Wrotham*. To  
which was added the Rectory of *Earith*.

A Gift to  
Lord *Cobham*.

The Earl of *Southampton*, Aug. 4. was honourably buried in the  
Church of *St. Andrew's Holborn*. And Sir *John Hoper*, Priest, preached  
at his Funerals. And Sept. 1. his Lady and Widow was buried at *Farn-  
ham*: Who had sometime been the Wife of Sir *William Fitz-Williams*,  
Lord Privy Seal to King *HENRY VIII*.

The Earl of  
*Southampton*  
buried.

Sir *Anthony Denny*, a learned and wise Man, bred in *St. John's Col-  
lege, Cambridge*, an ancient Favourer of the Gospel, and Professor of  
it, one of the chief Gentlemen of King *HENRY's* Bedchamber, and of  
this King's, dyed about the latter End of this Year. His Seat was at  
*Waltham Abby* in *Essex*, where I think he lies buried. He left Dame  
*Johan Denny* his Widow, Executrix of his last Will and Testament. A  
Declaration by her made as well concerning Stuff received by the said  
Sir *Anthony*, belonging to the King; as also for Disbursing and Delivery  
thereof, was taken Feb. 12.

Sir *Anthony  
Denny* dies.

As *Denny* finished his Course, so the Lord *Wentworth* accompanied  
him. Who being Lord Chamberlain of the King's Household was ho-  
nourably buried March 7. in *Westminster Abby* in the Chapel, where  
the old Abbot was interred; two of the King's of Arms, and two of  
the chief Heralds attending, and *Coverdale* preached.

Lord *Went-  
worth* dies.

March 15. The Lady *Mary* rode through *London* unto *St. John's*,  
her Place, with fifty Knights and Gentlemen in Velvet Coats and Chains  
of Gold afore her: And after her fourscore Gentlemen and Ladies; and  
every one having a Pair of Beads of Black; to make an open Profession,  
no doubt, of their Devotion for the Mass: Which she lately had been re-  
quired to lay aside, as we shall read hereafter. In this Equipage she  
rode

Lady *Mary*  
comes to  
*London*;



**A N N O** rode through *Cheapside* and *Smithfield*. Two Days after she rode from **1550.** *St. Johns* to the Court through *Fleetstreet* with many Noblemen, Knights, Gentlemen, Ladies and Gentlewomen. And at Court she alighted, and Mr. *Wynghfield*, Comptroller of the King's House, and many Lords and Knights, brought her through the Hall unto the Chamber of Presence. And there she tarried two Hours, being treated at a goodly Banquet. What her Business now at the Court was, we shall soon see. Afterwards she took Horse and rid back to *St. Johns*, and lay there all Night, and on the Morrow she rode to her House, call'd *Newbal* in *Essex*, where she remained for some Time.

And the Court.

An Office to the Marquis of Northampton.

As the Marquis of *Northampton* in *Octob.* last obtained the keeping of *Windsor*, now *March 20.* the King gave him the Office of keeping the chief Messuage of the Manor of *Escher*, and the Office of keeping the Garden and the Ortyards there, and the Bailif of the said Manor; And the Keeping of the Park, and the Lieutenantship of the Chase of *Hampton Court*, and the keeping of the Chase, with three Men to attend thereupon, for Life, with Fee.

A short Pathway, &c.

Let me add only the Mention of a Book, that came forth this Year, Imprinted at *Worcester*, by *John Oswen*, the 24th of *May*; having this Title, *A short Pathway to the right and true Understanding of the Holy Scripture.* Set forth by that most famous Clerk, *Hulderick Zuinglius*. And translated out of *Latin* into *English* by *John Verou Senonois*. This Man was a Foreigner, but an eminent Minister and Preacher in *London*, in the beginning of *Queen Elizabeth*.

He dedicated this his translated Book to *Sir Arthur Darcie*, Knight. Thus beginning his Address, (whence we may collect the good Progress of Religion at this Time, and the Backwardness of a great Part of the People yet to entertain it.) "Many at this present, Right Worshipful Sir, that the Gospel is so pregnantly, so sincerely, and purely preached by innumerable Learned godly Men, whom God doth stir up, and excitate daily in this flourishing Realm and Commonwealth, do greatly mervail and wonder that yet the greatest Part of the People doth frowardly draw back, nor will submit themselves to the sweet and pleasant Yoke of the Gospel; having lyeffer to abide still in the thick Darknes of Ignorance, and stinking Puddle of Mens Traditions, than to come to the shining and most clear Light of the everlasting Truth and Verity. Which if they would weigh, ponder and examine, and consider the Matter more earnestly, and with greater Diligence search the Scripture, they should undoubtedly find, perceive and understand that this Blindness and Error doth remain yet in so many Thousands, because that God hath not yet drawn them, without whose Spirit Man's Industry can profit nothing, tho' he teacheth and writeth never so much, &c.

"I do most humbly dedicate, offer and nuncupate unto your Right Worshipful Masterhip, as unto him, who is and hath been always most desirous to promote, set forth and enlarge the Kingdom of our Lord JESUS CHRIST.

And here we end the first Book, having taken a View of the best Part of this King's Reign. Hereafter the Factions at Court more encreased, and proved fatal to some of them; as shall be seen.



# MEMORIALS

Of Matters worthy R E M A R K,

ECCLESIASTICAL and CIVIL,

In the R E I G N of

## King E D W A R D VI.

### B O O K II.

#### C H A P. I.

*The Lady Mary's Concern with the King and Council, for retaining Mass in her Family. Dr. Mallet her Chaplain. The Emperor interposes for the Lady Mary to have Mass.* ANNO 1550.



THE Lady Mary's Zeal for her Religion, created her and her Chaplains and Servants, this and the ensuing Year, no little Trouble. An Office having been composed for the Communion and Public Prayers in *English*, which was enjoined by Parliament to be used throughout *England*, all were required, by Proclamation, to receive it with due Reverence. But the Lady Mary would not admit it by any means in her Family, but kept herself to the old Mass, notwithstanding many Messages and Intimations from the King and his Council, to dissuade her, and to forbid the Use of it.

So it fell out, that in *November* Dr. Mallet and Mr. Barkley, her two Chaplains, were indicted for certain things committed by them, contrary to the King's Laws; and Process for them was awarded forth, and delivered to the Sheriff of *Essex*. And she seeming to defend them, the Council wrote to her, requiring her, as soon as they, or either of them, returned to her House, to surrender them up unto the Sheriff, who had a Warrant from the King to attach them. Or if it liked her not, then to warn them from her House, and not to keep them there to be defended as it were from the Justice of the Law. Mallet's Fault was, that he

Mass continued in the Lady Mary's House.

Her Chaplain indicted for saying Mass.



ANNO 1550. said Mafs at *Newball* to her Family, newly removed thither from *Woodham Water*, she following, but as yet not being there. To whom in her Clofet only he ought to have said it. *Alexander Barkley*, her other Chaplain, was Vicar of *Much Badon* in *Effex*; and he, thinking to bear out himself with the Authority of his Mistress, had said Mafs in his Church, contrary to the King's Statutes and Proceedings. But he submitted, and after some Months Imprisonment, had his Pardon in May, 1551.

The Letter of the Lords of the Council to the Lady *Mary*, concerning her Chaplains, was this:

The Council  
to the Lady  
*Mary*.  
Otho. C. 10.

After our due Commendations unto your Grace. Where two of your Chaplains, the one named *Dr. Mallet*, the other *Barkley*, be indicted for certain things committed by them contrary to the King's Majesty's Laws; for whom Process is also awarded forth, and delivered to our loving Friend *Sir George Norton*, Kt. Sheriff of *Effex*: Forasmuch as we understand, that the one of your said Chaplains doth continually attend about you, albeit we nothing doubt but your Conformity and Obedience to the King's Majesty is such, that of yourself you will most readily cause any your Servants, whatsoever they be, to obey humbly his Majesty's Officers and Ministers for the Execution of Justice; yet being desirous, in respect of your Grace's Honour, to have this Process executed in as quiet sort as may be, we have thought good to pray your Grace to give Order, that your said Chaplain, remaining in your House, may be delivered to the Sheriff at such Time, as he, or any his Deputy, shall come for him, to answer to the Laws for such Matters as he is charged withal. And thus wishing your Grace long Continuance of Health, we pray Almighty God to have you in his blessed keeping.

From *Westminster*, this  
2 Decemb. 1550.

Your Grace's Assured,

|                      |                     |
|----------------------|---------------------|
| <i>E. Somerset.</i>  | <i>W. North.</i>    |
| <i>T. Cant.</i>      | <i>T. Ely.</i>      |
| <i>J. Warwick.</i>   | <i>A. Wyngfeld.</i> |
| <i>E. Clynton.</i>   | <i>W. Wilts.</i>    |
| <i>J. Bedford.</i>   | <i>H. Dorset.</i>   |
| <i>T. Wentworth.</i> | <i>T. Darcy.</i>    |
| <i>T. Cheyne.</i>    | <i>R. Sadleyr.</i>  |

She writes  
in behalf of  
her Chaplain  
imprisoned.

Upon this passed several Letters between her Grace and the Council, both in this and the next Year, (*viz.* that of 1551.) she vindicating her Chaplain; inasmuch as he had done no more than what she had bidden him, and so, if any Fault were committed, it was hers rather than his. And in Justification of herself, she urged a Promise, thrice repeated, which the King and Council had granted the Emperor's Ambassador on her behalf; which was, that she should have Leave to have Mafs said before her, and be exempted from the danger of the Statute. But they told her, in a Letter dated Decemb. 25. 1550. that 'A Promise was indeed made a good while ago to the Ambassador, that Mafs in her own Clofet should be suffered and winked at; but that it was to be but a while, till she

were



were better informed; and only a few of her own Chamber to be present with her. But that to the rest of her Household, the Communion Service should be used.

ANNO  
1550.

They signified to her moreover, what they said to the Emperor's Ambassador, that came to intercede for her to have the Mass, viz. That they had only reduced that which was commonly called the Mass, to the Order of the Primitive Church, and the Institution of Christ: with which the King and the whole Realm had their Consciences well quieted. They added, That it had Foundation in Scripture upon plain Texts, and no Glosses, and confirmed by the Use of the Primitive Church. That the greatest Change was, not in the Substance of their Faith, nor in any one Article of their Creed; but only the Difference was, that they used the Ceremonies, Observations and Sacraments of their Religion, as the Apostles and first Fathers of the Church did. Whereas, she used the same, that Corruption of Time had brought in, and very Barbarity and Ignorance nourished. She held, they said, for Custom against Truth, they for Truth against Custom. And whereas she had urged earnestly the Maintenance of her Faith, they asked her, Where her Grace had Ground for such a Faith, to think Common Prayer in the *English* Church should not be in *English*; that Images of God should be set up in the Church; or that the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ should be offered by the Priest for the Dead? And that tho' she had no Scripture to maintain them, they had plain Scripture to forbid them. They took notice also, how she had Baptism ministered in her House the old way, in a Tongue unknown; whereby, they said, the best Part of the Sacrament was unused, and as it were a blind Bargain made by the Godfathers. This excellent Letter, which I suppose was drawn by the Pen of Archbishop *Cranmer*, is extant in *Fox*.

The Council  
argue with  
her about  
the new  
Communi-  
on Book.

But all convinced her not; and she procured the Emperor to interpose again in her behalf. For the Emperor's Ambassador, *Feb. 16.* put the Council in remembrance of their Promise made unto them for the Lady *Mary*, that she should be suffered to use Mass in her Family: upon which Promise, she had hitherto used it. Wherefore the Emperor trusted, she should still do the same, till the King came to Years of Perfection. Answer was made, that the Council would advise, and in three or four Days give full Answer.

*Art. & Mon.*  
p. 1215.

The Empe-  
ror's Am-  
bassador in-  
terposes.  
*Coun. Book.*

I do not find, neither in the King's Journal, nor Council Book, what Answer the Council gave to the Ambassador. But *March 18.* the Lady *Mary*, being summoned, I suppose, to come up, made her Appearance at Court, and came to the King at *Westminster*: Where she with the Council was called into a Chamber. And then she was told, how long the King had born with her, and that having now no more Hope, as appeared by the Purport of her Letters, the King could not bear it any longer, without some sudden Amendment. But she answered resolutely, Her Soul was God's, and her Faith she would not change, nor dissemble her Opinion by contrary Doings. It was told her, That the King constrained not her Faith, but willed her not to rule as a King, but obey as a Subject. And the very next Day, *March 19.* the Emperor's Ambassador came boldly with a short Message from his Master for War, except his Cousin the *Princess*, as he called her, might have Mass. To this no An-

The Lady  
*Mary* comes  
to Court.



ANNO  
1551.

swer was then given. The 20th Day, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the Bishops of *London* and *Rocheſter* were conſulted with in this Point: who told the Council, That to give Licenſeto Sin, was Sin; nevertheless they thought the King might ſuffer, or wink at it for a Time. In the mean time, *March 22.* Mr. *Rocheſter*, Comptroller to the Lady *Mary*, was before the Council, and being asked, How many Chaplains ſhe had? he ſaid four, viz. Dr. *Mallet*, *Hopton*, *Barker* and *Richards*. The next Day, *March 23.* the Reſult of the Council was, That Dean *Wotton* ſhould be ſent to the Emperor, to ſignify, that the King did wholly deny this Requeſt to the Lady *Mary*. And in the mean ſeaſon it was reſolved, to puniſh the Offenders that heard Maſs; firſt, ſuch as were his own Servants, and next, her's. Hereupon, *March 24.* Sir *Anthony Brown* was ſent to the *Fleet* for hearing Maſs, with Serjeant *Morgan*: And the Council Book ſets this Note upon *Morgan*, that he could not excuſe himſelf, becauſe that being ſo learned a Man, he gave an ill Example unto others. And Sir *Clement Smith*, who had heard Maſs, tho' it were a Year before, received a *Reprimand*.

An Ambaſſador ſent to the Emperor.

*March 25. 1551.* the Emperor's Ambaſſador came to the Council to receive his Answer. But they gave him none other, but that one ſhould be ſent to the Emperor within a Month or two, to declare the matter. And accordingly, *April 10.* *Wotton* had Inſtructions to repair in Embaſſy to the Emperor, and to be Ambaſſador Ledger there: chiefly to give the Reaſons of the King and his Council, why the Emperor's Ambaſſador, and the Lady *Mary* were denied to have Maſs ſaid before them; and to make this Reſolution before the Emperor, 'That if he would ſuffer the King's Ambaſſador with him to uſe his Service, then the King would ſuffer the Emperor's Ambaſſador to uſe his. But if he would not ſuffer the King's Ambaſſador, neither would the King ſuffer the Emperor's Ambaſſador. And that as to his Siſter, ſhe was his Subject, and therefore ſhould uſe the Service appointed by Act of Parliament to be uſed by all his People.'

K. Edw. Jour.

The Council forbad Dr. *Mallet* to ſay Maſs in the Lady *Mary*'s Family; which nevertheless he did, and was forgiven. Therefore *Apr. 29.* being before them, they asked him, Why after he had been once forgiven, he would again wilfully offend the Laws in ſaying Maſs, &c? He could not deny but that he had done ill in it. But forasmuch as beſide this leud doing, he had alſo perſuaded others of the King's Subjects to embrace his naughty Opinions, he was committed to the *Tower*. This Warning was no more than the King had given to his own Servants.

*Mallet* ſent to the *Tower*.  
Counc. Book.  
The Lady *Mary* ſent Letters to the Council hereupon.

Hereupon the Lady *Mary* ſent Letters to the Council, dated *May 2.* and *11.* and *June 21.* marvelling at the Imprisonment of *Mallet*, her Chaplain, for ſaying Maſs before her Houſhold; ſeeing it was promiſed the Emperor's Ambaſſador ſhe ſhould not be moleſted in her Religion, but that ſhe and her Houſhold ſhould have the Maſs ſaid before them continually. They answered, 'That becauſe of their Duty to the King, Country and Friends, they were compelled to give her this Answer: That they would ſee not only him, but alſo all others Maſs-ſayers and Breakers of Order ſtraitly puniſhed. And that, as for the Promiſe, they had not, nor would give none, to make her free from the Punishment of the Law in that behalf.' But it ſeems Maſs was notwithstanding continued in her Houſe: Which gave great Offence.



In the Month of *July* she was at *Richmond*. Where the King, as before he had sent her a kind Letter, so now he sent unto her a gracious and obliging Message by the Lord Great Master, the Lord Privy Seal, and one of the Secretaries. And on this Occasion she wrote the King a Letter, (which these Noblemen seem to be the Carriers of) chiefly to shew how unwavering she continued in her formerly declared Purpose about Religion; and the rather, because some seemed to have informed the King of her Inclination to conform to the late Establishment of it: Which Letter I think worthy the inserting, and was as follows:

ANNO  
1551.

The King  
sends a gra-  
cious Mes-  
sage to her.

*Most Excellent and Noble Prince, and my most benign and good Brodre,*

I Do most humbly thank you for your great Goodness, Favour and Liberality, which, as well by your Majesty's own Letters, as by the Report and Declaration of your Counsellors, the Lord Great Master, the Lord Privy Seal, and your Grace's Secretary, I perceive it hath pleased you to determine towards me. Whereunto I have no more to answer, but that I shal ever remain your Majesties most humble Sufter and Servant, according to such Letters as I have written to your Highness, and to such Advertisement as I have given to your Grace by your said Counsellors; which is correspondent and agreeable to my first Mind and Answer, made at the first opening of the Matter to me. From the which, as I neither have varied from the Beginning, ne wol vary hereafter; so if any Man have said the contrary, I assure your Grace that he hath don it without my Consent or Commission. Thus I beseech our Lord to send your Majesty long Life, with good Health, and perpetual Felicity. From *Richmond*, the 16th of *July*.

Her Letter  
to him.  
Titus, B. 2.

*Your Majesties humble Sufter  
and Servant.*

*August* the 9th, there met at *Richmond* Twenty four Lords of the King's Council, to discourse concerning the Lady *Mary*. Who agreed, that it was not convenient she should be suffered any longer to use her Mass against the Order of the Book of Common Prayer appointed. And it was resolved, that the Officers of the Lady *Mary*'s House should be sent for, and charged not to suffer any other Divine Service to be used in her House, but such as was permitted by the Law. And that the Chaplains should be prohibited to say Mass, and the Servants of the House forbid to hear it. And a Letter hereof to be sent from the King to the Lady *Mary*. And thereof they made an Instrument signed with their Hands and Seals.

The Resolu-  
tion of the  
Lords for the  
Lady *Mary*.  
Counc. Book.

*August* the 11th, a Warrant was ordered to be sent to the Officers of the Lady *Mary*'s House, to appear before the Council on the 13th instant: And a second Letter sent to the same Import.

Her Officers  
sent for.

*August* the 13th, [or rather the 14th,] at *Hampton Court* appeared before the Council *Robert Rochester*, Comptroller of the Lady *Mary*'s House, *Edward Waldgrave*, and *Sir Francis Inglefield*. It was, to let her know by them rather than by Strangers, the less to molest her, that it was their Order that the *Communion Book* should be used hereafter in her Family: And to inhibit her Chaplains to say Mass before her in her House, or in any other Place; and neither themselves, nor any of the Family to hear

They appear.



ANNO  
1551.

The Con-  
tents of the  
King's Let-  
ter.

Otho. C. 10.

Her Officers  
Message to  
her, from the  
Council.  
Titm. B. 2.  
p. 68.

How angrily  
she received  
it.

hear Mass, on pain of the King's Displeasure. This Message was given them with a Letter from the King of that Purport, to be by them delivered to her. *Rochester* made many Excuses; but was commanded on his Allegiance to see the Matter executed. And in case her Grace should dismiss him out of her Service, (as he pretended she would for doing this Message) he and the rest were commanded on the King's behalf not to leave the Service and the House, but to stay and see the Order fulfilled.

In the Letter which the King now sent to her, he reminded her of the Speeches and Letters that he had used with her formerly, to persuade her to Obedience; as also the Letters of the Council that had been sent to her for that Purpose, to reduce her to Conformity and Agreeableness in Religion. He observed, as he wrote, that she was more wedded to her own Mind after all this, than she was before. Infomuch, as she refused so much as to hear any learned Man, to inform her rightly of these Matters. He added, That he was minded to take a more earnest regard to the Reformation of her Family, for the Preservation of the Authority of the Laws thus broken and contemned; and for the Glory of Almighty God. Which were the Causes that he had sent for her Officers. By whom should be signified unto her his Commandment in respect of her Family. He that will read the Letter itself, I refer him to the *Cotton Library*: It is not any where as yet published, as many other of the Letters relating to this Transaction are.

What followed upon this, I present as I found it in a Manuscript of the said Library.

' This Day [being *Aug. 22.*] Mr. *Rochester*, Sir *Francis Inglefeld*, and Mr. *Walgrave*, Officers to the Lady *Mary's* Grace, were before the Lords, and declared unto their Lordships, that upon *Saturday* the 15th of this present, they arrived at *Copped Hall*, somewhat before Night. By reason whereof, they did not the same Night execute their Charge committed to them at *Hampton Court* the 14th of this present. The *Sunday* following, being the 16th of this present, because they understood that her Grace received the Sacrament, (for so they termed it) they did abstain to deliver their Letters before Noon, considering that the same would trouble and disquiet her. So as after Dinner taking Commodity to declare their Letters, after that her Grace had read them, they made offer to her to declare what Charge they had received of the Lords to execute; praying her Grace to be contented to hear the same. Whereupon her Grace made answer, That she knew right well, that their Commission was agreeing with such Matters as was contained in her Letters. And that therefore they needed not to rehearse the same. Howbeit then pressing her Grace, she was finally content to hear them. And when they had don, she seemed to be marvelously offended with them; and charged them, that they should not declare that same they had in Charge to say, neither to her Chaplains nor Family. Which if they did, besides that they should not take her hereafter for their Mistress, she would immediately depart out of the House. Upon this, as the said *Rochester*, *Inglefeld* and *Walgrave* said to the Lords, that forasmuch as she oftentimes altered her Colour, and seemed to be passionate and unquiet, they forbore to trouble her any farther; fearing that the troubling of her might perchance bring her into her old Disease; and besought her to consider the Matter calmly

with



with herself, and pass thereupon against *Wednesday* next, when they ANNO  
 would wait on her Grace, and know her further Pleasure. Which, 1551.  
 they said, they did, hoping to have found her then, upon more ripe de-  
 liberation, and debating of the Matter with herself, more conformable.  
 And in the mean time they forbore also to declare to her Chaplains and  
 Household the Charge they had received. But repairing to her Grace  
 the said *Wednesday*, being the 19th of this present, they did not only  
 not find her conformable, but in further Choler than she was before;  
 utterly forbidding them to make Declaration of their said Charge and  
 Commission to her Chaplains and Household: Adding, That where she  
 and her Household were in quiet, if they would by any means disturb  
 her and them, if any Inconvenience did ensue thereof to her or them,  
 she would [attribute] it to the said *Rockefter*, *Inglefeld* and *Walgrave*.  
 Which thing considered, they thought it better to return without doing  
 their Commission, and declare this much to their Lordships, without  
 meddling any further, then to procede in the Execution of their Charge  
 before they had advertised their Lordships of the Premises.

The Lords having heard this much, commanded them to attend,  
 until they should know further of their Pleasures.

The said *Rockefter*, *Inglefeld* and *Walgrave* brought with them Let-  
 ters from the Lady *Mary's* Grace to the King's Majesty. Thus far,  
 and no farther, the *Cotton* Manuscript, which is but a Transcript out of  
 the Council Book. The rest I supply out of the Council Book, and the  
 King's Journal.

*August 23.* *Rockefter*, *Inglefeld* and *Walgrave* appeared again: And Her Officers  
again before  
the Council.  
 they were severally, one by one, charged with not obeying the King's  
 Injunctions, in not prohibiting the Chaplains to say Mass, and the Fam-  
 ily to hear it in the Lady *Mary's* House; but that, contrary to Order, and  
 Directions of the Council, troubled the Lady *Mary*, by doing the Message  
 to herself, and not to the Chaplains and Family. Hereupon they were  
 strictly charged each one to repair to the Lady *Mary's* House, and do the  
 Charge enjoined them according to the Order and Directions of the Coun-  
 cil, upon their Allegiance, and by the King's special Command. They  
 all refused to do it. *Rockefter* and *Inglefeld* said, They would endure  
 any Punishment or Imprisonment: and *Inglefeld* alledged, That he could  
 not find in his Heart or Conscience to do it. They were commanded to  
 attend continually the Council, until such Time as they should know  
 their further Pleasure.

The 26th of *August*, the Lord Chancellor [*Rich.*] Sir *Anthony Wyng-* The Lord  
Chancellor,  
and two o-  
ther Privy  
Councillors  
sent to her.  
Counc. Book.  
*feld*, [Comptroller of the King's House] and Sir *William Petre*, [Secre-  
 tary] were sent to the Lady *Mary* with a Letter and Message: And in  
 default of her said Officers, were to declare to her the Meaning of that  
 Promise made to the Emperor in her behalf: And calling before them  
 all her Chaplains and Household Servants, to command the former to use  
 no other Service than what was by Law established, and the latter not  
 to be present at any other Service, upon pain of most strait Imprisonment.  
 This Message was carried *Aug. 28.* being *Friday*.

*Aug. 29.* they made Report to the Council of what they had done. Her House  
is appointed  
to be watch-  
ed. King's  
Journ.  
 And then it was appointed that the Lord Chancellor, Lord Chamberlain,  
 the Vice-Chamberlain, and Secretary *Petre* should see by all means they  
 could, whether she used the Mass. And if so, that the Law should be

execu-



**ANNO** executed on her Chaplains. At this very Time certain Pinnaces were  
**1551.** prepared for secret Conveyance away of the Lady *Mary* over Sea. The  
 doing of which was practised by the Emperor.

Her Servants  
 sent to the  
 Tower.  
 Counc. Book.

**Aug. 31.** the Lady *Mary's* three Servants aforesaid, who had been two  
 Days before committed to the *Fleet*, were sent to the *Tower*. And the  
 Council ordered the Warden of the *Fleet* to convey them thro' the Bridge  
 to the *Tower*, to be had there severally: And the Lieutenant of the  
*Tower* to receive and keep them close Prisoners from speaking to any  
 Man, and not to let them have Pen, Ink and Paper. And because she  
 might have need of her Comptroller, another was sent by the King to  
 supply his Absence.

The Empe-  
 ror's Ambaf-  
 fador inter-  
 poses for the  
 Relief of  
 them.  
 King's Journ.  
 The Answer  
 given him.

**Sept. 5.** the Emperor's Ambassador came to the Court, and required  
 that the Lady *Mary's* Officers should be restored to their Liberty, and  
 that she might have her Mass, till the Emperor were certified of these  
 Things. He was answered, That the King needed not to answer ex-  
 cept he listed, because the Ambassador spake without Commission, which  
 was evident by the Shortness of the Time since the Commitment of the  
 Officers, of which the Emperor could not be so soon advertised. He  
 was willed no more to move these Piques without Commission, in which  
 he had been often answered. He was moreover told, That by this Time  
 the Emperor was advertised, [by the King's own Ambassador, of his  
 Dealings with his Sister,] altho' the Matter pertained not unto him.  
 It was told him also, That the King had done nothing but according to a  
 King's Office herein, in observing the Laws that were so godly, and in  
 punishing the Offenders: And that the Promise made to the Emperor was  
 not so made as he pretended, [that is, that she should always have the  
 Liberty of having Mass said in her Family,] as was affirmed by Sir *Phi-  
 lip Hoby*, being at that Time Ambassador there.

*Walgrave* is  
 sick in the  
 Tower.  
 Removed.  
 Counc. Book.

**Sept. 27.** *Walgrave* being sick in the *Tower*, his Wife had leave to re-  
 pair to him for his Relief, and to provide for the Recovery of his Health.  
**And Octob. 24.** it was ordered, That he should be removed out of the  
*Tower* by the Lieutenant to some honest House, where he might be bet-  
 ter looked to, for the curing of his Quartan Ague: remaining still as a  
 Prisoner, and to be forth coming, whensoever he should be called for.

They had  
 Leave to go  
 Home.  
 Set at Li-  
 berty.

**March 18.** *Rocheſter*, *Walgrave* and *Inglefeld* had Leave to go out of  
 the *Tower* for their Healths ſake, to their own Homes. And,

**April 24.** 1552, they were ſet at Liberty, and had Leave to repair to  
 the Lady *Mary*, upon her Requeſt. But leaving the ſaid Lady with her  
 Servants thus reſtored to her, let us proceed to other Matters; looking  
 back upon the Year, and taking up ſeveral Tranſactions in the State not  
 yet mentioned.



## C H A P. II.

*The King writes to King Sigismond : And the Duke of Florence. Payments of the Army. Lord Darcy created. Merchants of Calais. The King takes up Money. The College of Galway. The Council for Wales. Lords Lieutenants. Forts.*

**T**HE King, *March 25, 1551*, wrote a Letter of Thanks to *Sigismond*, King of *Poland*, on this Occasion: Some Quarrel depending between *Robert Helsen*, the King's Subject, and *Ludolph Rull*, a Stranger, and, as it seems, one of *Dantzig*, about some Matters of Merchandize, their Cause came before the Senate of the said City; who were too partial to *Rull*, so that the other could have no Justice: Therefore an Appeal came before the said King *Sigismond*: Who gave a more favourable Hearing of *Helsen's* Cause. Which being well taken of King *Edward* and his Council, a kind Letter was addressed to him.

A Letter to the King of Poland.

A good Understanding was maintained between the Duke of *Florence* and the King. There was now found out a new and more useful Order of Martial Discipline in *Italy*, (which Country now bred many good Soldiers) and chiefly practised under that Duke. Which coming to the King's Knowledge, he desired of the said Duke to have a Plat or a Scheme of the said new Discipline. Which he accordingly in two friendly Letters communicated to the King. For which the King in *March* wrote him a Letter of Thanks. And lest any Offence should arise to the Duke about a Ship of his Country which was laden hither with Grain, and taken to the King's Use, (of which the Duke had taken notice to him in a Letter) it being now a scarce Time in *England*, the King certified the Duke, That according to his Request, there should be a reasonable Price set thereon, to his Contentation.

The King's Request to the Duke of Florence.

Tho' a Treaty of Peace were concluded with *France* the last Year, by which he parted with *Boloign*, and other Places there, it was not before this Year, in the Month of *March*, that he could disband his Soldiers in those Parts, and ease his great Burthens of Payments to them. For the Payment therefore of these Debts, he remitted this *March* to Sir *Richard Cotton*, his Treasurer there, 2000 Pounds towards the Charges yet unpaid for *Boloign* and *New-Haven*. More to him 1000 Pounds, towards the Defrayment of the King's Charges of *Newhaven* and *Blackneß*. More to him 1000 Pounds, to be employed by him for the Debts unpaid of divers Soldiers and Artificers, for Service and Work done at *Dover*, *Boloign*, *Newhaven* and *Blackneß*. More to Sir *Maurice Denys* (who, I think, was Treasurer of *Calais*) 4000 Pounds, to be by him employed about the King's Payments in his Charge, or to be delivered over by him to Sir *John Clere*, Treasurer of the King's Army, as Cause shall require. More to him 1000 Pounds, to be employed by him about the King's

Payments for the Discharge of the Army in France.



ANNO  
1551.

Payments, for the Discharge of his Soldiers yet at *Calais* remaining unpaid. To Sir *Anthony Aucher* (the King's Victualler) 1000 Pounds, towards the Payment of Provisions at *Boloign*. More to him towards the Preparation of certain Presents of Cupboards of Plate, to be delivered, by way of his Majesty's Reward, to the Ambassadors that shall come to the Court out of *France* for Ratification of the Peace, 1200 Pounds. More to him in Prest for Conduct Money of Soldiers passing from beyond the Seas to their Countries, 200 Pounds. To *Richard Taverner* 333 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence in Prest, to be employed towards the Payment of Wages of certain *English* Soldiers of the Band of Captain *Cuff*, *Coniers*, *Barry*, and others of *Boloign*, appointed to attend upon the King's Person. To *Lucas Fringar*, one of the Commissaries for the *Almain* Soldiers, as well for his Pains taking with Mr. *Grimston* for mustering the 700 *Italians* and *Albanes* [*Almains*] that came from the North, [where they had been, I suppose, in the Army against *Scotland*, with which Country Peace was lately made,] as for conducting them from *London* to *Dover*, there to see them transported to *Calais*: And thence to take their Journies, for twenty Days going and coming, after 10 Shillings a Day, for him and his Servants and their two Horses, in the whole 10 Pounds. To the same *Fringar*, several Sums to be paid by him to certain Captains for their Household Servants; that is to say, to Captain *Hans van Brumswick*, for his Clerk and his Boy, his two Halbards, for his Chirurgeon and his Man, for his Interpreter, his Cook, his Housekeepers; and the like to Captain *George Stener*. To the Lord *Waldeck* 557 Pounds 14 Shillings: Which, with the Sum of 226 Pounds already by him received in Prest, amounted to 784 Pounds 14 Shillings, being the full Payment of the Entertainment of himself at 10 Shillings per Day, sixteen Horsemen and two Coritfers, every at 12 Gilders, making 4 Shillings of Sterling Money by the Month for thirty Days; amounting for a Months Payment to 57 Pounds 4 Shillings: And so for a Month's Conduct, and also twelve Months and an half of Service from the 12th of *May*, that he hath served with the said Horsemen, by the Council's Order and Appointment: And now was discharged.

Darcy created Lord  
Darcy.  
Lands given  
him.

*April* 7, was the Creation of Sir *Thomas Darcy*, Kt. (a great Man in this Reign) and the Heirs Male of his Body, to the Title of Baron of *Chiche* in the County of *Essex*, by the Voice of the Parliament. At the same Time, together with his Honour, he obtained a noble Gift of the King, namely, the House and Scite of the late Monastery of *Chiche St. Osyth*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Essex*. Which House and Scite the Lady *Mary* had during her Life, with divers other Lands, &c. Together with a further Gift unto him of the Manor of *Luston*, alias *Loughton*, with divers other Lands, &c. in the County of *Devon*. All which extend to the yearly Value of 83 Pounds 7 Shillings 13 Pence Halfpeny Farthing; paying yearly out of the Manor of *Thorp Kirkby*, alias *Kirkby*, and *Walton*, alias *Walton-Hall*, in the County of *Essex*, which he hath in Fee Tail, 29 Pounds 12 Shillings 6 Pence Halfpeny Farthing: And for the Tenths and Tithes of the said late Monastery of *Chiche St. Osyth*, after the Death of the said Lady *Mary*, 37 Shillings. And for the Manors of *Thorp Kirkby* and *Walton*, 11 Pounds 16 Shillings at the Court of Augmentations. And out of the Manor of *Luston*, which he had in Fee Simple, 15 Pounds 10 Shillings 6 Pence. And for the Tithes and



and Tenths of the said Manor, 5 Pounds 6 Shillings. And for the Manor of *Shingford Paul*, 52 Shillings. And for a Close called *Ancars Tngs*, 13 Shillings 4 Pence. And for the Lands in *Knighton*, 5 Shillings 8 Pence. And to take the Profits from *Michaelmas* last. And to the rest, add his Preferment to the Office of Lord Chamberlain of the King's Household, upon the Decease of the Lord *Wentworth*.

ANNO  
1551.

For the Benefit of the King's Town of *Calais*, an Indenture was made in *April*, between the King's Majesty, and the Maior, Constable and Fellowship of Merchants of the Staple of the Town of *Calais*, Witnessing, That the King hath given Licence to the said Maior, &c. for one whole Year, from the First of *April* last, until the last of *March* then next coming, to ship and transport out of this Realm unto the Staple of *Calais*, all those their Wools and Woolfels, and Fells called *Sborlings* and *Morlings*; and to have like Conduct and Waisting [Waisting] for the sure Conveyance of their Goods unto *Calais*, as heretofore they have had; paying no more, or larger Sums of Money, than for so much Goods of Staple Merchandize as they shall ship and transport unto the Staple of *Calais*, during the said Year. And the said Maior, Constable and Fellowship of Merchants of the said Staple, covenanteth to pay to the King's Majesty, at the 6th of *April*, and 6th of *October*, in the Town of *Calais*, to the Treasurer thereof, the Customs or Subsidies of the said Merchandize, as they have been accustomed. And if the said Maior, &c. be destitute of any Sum or Sums of Money in *Calais*, or at the Arrival of their Goods there, for the Performance of their Customs and Subsidies at their Days of Payment prefixed, that upon the Notice thereof given to the Council, they shall have his Grace's Licence of Passport and safe Conduct, to convey over out of the Realm unto the said Town of *Calais*, for as much Money as they shall need from Time to Time, for that only Purpose, and none other. When as otherwise, Money *in Specie* was not to be coveyed out of the Nation. And this Indenture was for the King's Convenience, as well as the Merchants, that he might have his Money ready there for his Use, without the Change and Danger of transporting.

Indenture  
between the  
King and  
*Calais*.

The King's Charges were such, that his own Revenue would not suffice, but he was fain now, in the beginning of this Year, to take up Money at high Interest of Foreign Merchants, and chiefly of one *Anthony Fugger*, a vastly rich Man, and his Nephews, Bankers of *Antwerp*. For which he gave several Recognizances. One was to him and his Nephews, for the Payment of 381440 Florens, *Carols Flemish*, at *Antwerp* the last of *February* next, or for every Floren 20 Stivers *Flemish*, dated *April* 15. Another Recognizance of the same Date to the same Persons of 84000 Florens *Carols*, to be paid at the same Place the last of *April*, 1552. Another of the same Date of 272743 Florens *Carols*, payable *May* 15. 1552. Another of the same Date of 261918 Florens *Carols*, to be paid *Aug.* 15. 1552.

The King  
takes up  
Money.

As good King *Edward* had been the Author of many pious Foundations for Learning and the Service of God in *England*, so about this Time he was excited to such a Work in *Ireland*. There was a Grant by him made, *Apr.* 16. to the Maior, Burgeses and Commonalty of the Town of *Galway* in *Ireland*, and their Successors, of the Impropration of the Vicarages of *Galway*, *Mary*, *Rawyn*, *Moccully*, *Fowran*, *More*, *Roscan*, *Clare*, and *Kilcomen*, *Scowre*, *Scrine*, and one Parcel of Tith

The King  
founds a  
College in  
*Galway*.



ANNO  
1551.

in *Galway* aforesaid, called *The Bishops Quarter*, towards the Sustainment of Priests to minister the Sacraments in the College of *Galway*. And that *Patrick Blake* shall be Guardian of the same, and *Thomas French*, *Darby Choyssen*, *John Talman*, *Darby Oucwain*, and three more, to be singing Vicars thereof. And that the said Maior, after the Decease of any of them, may chuse new in their Rooms, to minister the Sacraments and Sacramentals at their Discretion: so they be meet and able for the same.

The Council in *Wales*.

The King did in this Month of *April*, appoint by a Commission a Council for the Government of *Wales*, consisting of a President, who was Sir *William Herbert*, and thirty Persons more: whereof the Earl of *Worcester*, Viscount *Hereford*, the Bishop of *St. Asaph*, and the Lord *Powis*, were of the Nobility. To these were given Instructions, consisting in Twenty eight Articles, by Order of the King and his Council. And a Warrant also was signed to Sir *John Williams*, to pay to the said President, and others appointed Commissioners with him, for their Diet, Stipend, Fees, Wages, after a Rate there set down; that is, for the Diets yearly after the Rate of 20 Pounds per Week. And for their yearly Fees, to some 13 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence; and to others 10 Pounds. But to Fifteen were no Salaries at all assigned. And to have their foreign Expences after the Rate of 100 Pounds a Year. And for the Wages of *William Carter*, Armourer, for the keeping of the Armour and Artillery of *Ludlow*, 6 Pence per Day.

Commissions for Justices and Lieutenants of the Counties.

And as the King took this Care of *Wales*, by setting those over that Principality, so in the next Month he took the like Care of all the Parts in *England*, by one and twenty Commissions directed to the chief Nobility: who were to be the King's Justices for the Counties, 'To enquire of all Treasons, (as the Commissions ran) Misprisions of Treasons, Insurrections, Rebellions, unlawful Assemblies and Conventicles, unlawful speaking of Words, Confederacies, Conspiracies, false Allegations, Contempts, Falshoods, Negligences, Concealments, Oppressions, Riots, Routs, Murders, Felonies, and other ill Deeds, whatsoever they were; and also all Accessaries of the same: And to be his Lieutenants also, for the levying of Men, and to fight against the King's Enemies and Rebels, and to execute upon them the Martial Law; and to subdue all Invasions, Insurrections, &c. as should chance to be moved in any Place, as they should repair to the Limits of their respective Shires. With Commandment to all Officers to assist them.' These Commissions not to be prejudicial to the Commissions of Oyer and Terminer, before given out. The Names of these Lords Justices and Lieutenants were; The Duke of *Somerset*, for *Bucks* and *Berks*; the Earl of *Rutland* and the Lord *Clinton*, for *Lincoln* and *Nottingham*; the Earl of *Suffex*, Sir *Roger Townsend*, Sir *William Fermor*, and Sir *John Robertson* [perhaps *Robsert*] for *Norfolk*; the Earl of *Warwick*, the Viscount *Hereford*, and the Lord *Paget*, for *Staffordshire*; the Earl of *Arundel*, and the Lord *La Ware*, for *Suffex*; the Lord Chancellor, Lord *Rich*, the Earl of *Oxon*, the Lord *Darcy*, and Sir *John Gate*, for *Essex*; Sir *William Herbert*, for *Wilts*; the Bishop of *Ely*, for the Isle of *Ely*; the Earl of *Warwick*, for *Warwick* and *Oxford*; the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, for *Surry*; the Lord *Cobham*, and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Sir *Thomas Cheney*, for *Kent* and *Canterbury*; the Earl of *Huntingdon*, for *Leicester* and *Huntingdon*; the Earl of *Derby*,

Their Names.



for *Lancashire*; the Earl of *Shrewsbury* for *Derby*; Sir *William Herbert* for the Principality and Marches of *Wales*; the Lord *Darcy*, Lord *Wentworth*, and Sir *Anthony Wyngfield*, for *Suffolk*; Sir *Robert Tirwhyt*, and Mr. *Thomas Audley*, for *Huntingdon*; the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, for *Northampton*, *Bedford*, *Hertford*, and *Cambridgeshire*; the Earl of *Bedford*, for *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Devon*, and *Cornwal*; the Lord Treasurer, Earl of *Wiltshire*, for *Southampton*; the Lord *Paget*, and Sir *Roger Cholmely*, for *Middlesex*.

ANNO  
1551.

Care was also taken in *May* for fortifying the Kingdom, and especially in the Parts against *France*, for Security against such a powerful Neighbour. Two new Forts were resolved upon for *Jersey*. And for the rendering the Isle of *Scilly* more useful, Provision was made for the better peopling and strengthening it. For the effecting whereof, certain Commissions were given out, dated in *May*.

As one for *Jersey*, to *Helier de Carteret*, *John Clark*, *Clement Lemprier*, Esqs; *Ninian Saunders*, Gent. *Lewis Hampton*, Clerk, *Charles Mabion*, Clerk, *Richard Dinnarick*, *Nich. Lemprier*, *Edw. Denmarick*, *Jr.* *Laurence Hampton*, Jurats, *Hugh Perrin* and *Nich. Solomont*, Gentlemen, or to any six of them, whereof *De Carteret* and *Clark*, or one of them at least, to be one. These had Power and Authority to call before them the Inhabitants of *Jersey*, by the Advice of Sir *Henry Powlet*, Kt. Captain there: And to assess every of them to be Contributaries according to their Goods and Lands, towards the building of two Fortresses; the one in the Ilet of *St. Helier*, and the other in the Ilet of *St. Ohyn* [*Albin*] there. And also for a perpetual Pension to be gathered of their Lands, for the Charges of the safe keeping of them. And to put their said Order and Cessment in Writing; that it might remain for ever. With an Authority also given them to appoint Officers, to make all manner of Provision for the Edification of the said Fortresses.

Two Fortresses to be built at *Jersey*.

The Commission for the Isle of *Scilly* was directed to Sir *William Godolphin*, Kt. *John Killigrew*, and *John Godolphin*, Esqs; The Contents whereof was, for them personally to repair thither, and to make a perfect, diligent Survey of all the same Isle: And to set out the Number of Acres of Land within the same; and to divide the same into so many Parts as may serve for Tenants and Householders of Husbandry; allowing them sufficient Land for tilling, and sufficient Pasture. And to grant the same for One and twenty Years, reserving to the King reasonable Rents. And for their better Instruction, the King had sent them certain Instructions inclosed. And lastly, to signify their Doings in the Chancery, in distinct Writing in Parchment under their Hands, within three Months after they should accomplish the same Commission.

*Scilly* to be surveyed:

Which was followed by another Commission in *June* to *John Killigrew*, to take up and provide all manner of Workmen and Labourers of all sorts, and all such Stuff, of what kind soever, as should be thought requisite or needful for furtherance and finishing of the new Fortification within the said Isle of *Scilly*.

And a Fort built there.

The King also, in the said Month of *June*, sent Letters for the Survey of *Dover Castle*, and according to the Defects of it, to set speedily without Delay upon the sufficient Repair thereof.

*Dover Castle* to be surveyed.



ANNO  
1551.

## C H A P. III.

*Embassies and Busineses Abroad into Scotland and France, and to the Emperor. Dr. Wotton sent. His Business about the Lady Mary's Mass. The Affairs of Ireland. The Match with France. The French Ambassador comes about it. Herman Archbishop of Colen.*



**T**HIS was a busy Year for Embassies and Agencies Abroad with the *Scots*, the Emperor, the *Irish*, and the *French*.

Comm<sup>rs</sup> tion-  
ers for the  
Borders of  
England and  
Scotland.

Quarrels and Conteſts were continually bred between the *Engliſh* and *Scots*, bordering ſo near upon one another. And ſo they were now again, ſince the late Treaty of Peace concluded between King *Edward* and the *French* King, wherein *Scotland* was included. Commiſſioners therefore were appointed, *Apr.* 6. for the Limits between *England* and *Scotland*. Who were the Biſhop of *Litchfield*, or of *Norwich*, Sir *Robert Bowes*, Sir *Leonard Beckwith*, and Sir *Thomas Chaloner*. They were to determine with the Queen of *Scots*, or her Commiſſioners, the Controverſy lately riſen about the Borders: And alſo for taking and delivering of Pledges, and all manner of Spoils and Piracies, and other Attempts, done by either of their Subjects. The Meeting was to be about the 10th of *May*, upon the Limits beyond *Barwick*, dividing *England* and *Scotland*. The Commiſſioners on the *Scots* Part were the *French* Ambaſſador, Monſieur *De Lanſac*, then in *Scotland*, the Biſhop of *Orkney*, or of *Rofs*, the Maſters of *Rutben* and *Ayrſkin*. The Council ſent to the Biſhop of *Litchfield* to advertiſe him of his being one of the ſaid Commiſſioners, and to require him, in caſe he were in good Health, (for he was now well aged) to prepare for his Journey, and to expect their further Inſtructions. But, it ſeems, he got himſelf excuſed. For *Apr.* 13. the Biſhop of *Norwich* was ordered to repair to the Borders of *Scotland* by *May* the 1ſt, or within three Days after. And the Commiſſion, which was ſealed *Apr.* 15. was to *Thomas* Biſhop of *Norwich*, and the three other before-named.

The French  
King calls  
upon King  
*Edward* for  
this Com-  
miſſion.

This Commiſſion was ſet on foot by the *French* King's Motion, out of his Care for *Scotland*. Who, in *January* laſt, ſent his Ambaſſador *Lanſac* to the King, requeſting Favours for the *Scots*; as to determine the debatable Grounds, for Allowance to the *Scots* peaceably to traffic, and to fiſh in *Tweed*, Reſtoration of certain *Scots* Hoſtages, that had remained in *England* ever ſince King *Henry's* Time. And this the *French* King backed with his own Letters. To the which Letters and Embaſſy the King gave a favourable Answer, both by his Letters and his Ambaſſadors *Maſon* and *Pickering*. And tho' he had a Right, as he ſaid, to the aforeſaid Places, yet offered to ſtand to Conditions to be agreed on by the Commiſſioners on both Sides.

Dr. Wotton  
goes in Em-  
baſſy to the  
Emperor.

*Nicolas Wotton*, Dean of *Canterbury*, was ſent Ambaſſador to the Emperor this *April*, and to take the Lady Regent of *Flanders* in his way. It was intended chiefly to ſatisfy the Emperor, who had interceded for the



the Lady *Mary*, to have the Use of the Mass continued in her Family, viz. *ANNO*  
why it could not be permitted any longer, the Laws being in Force to *1551.*  
the contrary: and because she was a Subject, and so could not be exempted from the Laws: And to expostulate with the Emperor, who had denied the King's Ambassador in *Brussels* the Exercise of his Religion. In *Wotton's* Credential Letters to the Emperor, he is said to be one of the King's Council, and that the King had sent him his Ambassador for the better Continuance and Preservation of the old Amity and Love between them. A Letter also was framed for him to deliver to the Lady Regent of *Flanders*, to this Import, that where the King had sent the said *Wotton* his Ambassador, he could not suffer him to pass without visiting of her, and bringing his Letters of Commendation. For the defraying his Expences, a Warrant was made to pay to the said *Nicolas Wotton* from the 25th of *March* last past, until his Return unto the King's Presence, after the Rate of Five Marks by the Day for his Diet, and to advance him for five Months beforehand: and to allow him from Time to Time such Money as he shall signify by Letter he hath defrayed, for the posting of himself and his Servants, with their Transportation both Outwards and Homewards. *Wotton* went in *Morison's* Room, who now *Morison* revoked.  
came home from the Emperor; and by his discoursing somewhat freely of Religion to the Emperor, and *D'Arras*, became unacceptable to him. Which was the chief Reason of his revoking.

*Wotton* was instructed to deliver himself thus to the Emperor, concerning the Restraint of the *English* Ambassador in the *Low Countries* from using his Religion, ' That setting apart such Offence as the Emperor had conceived against the King's former Ambassador, by his Proceedings herein with the Emperor, that had for divers Considerations so much Reason for the King to require it, that he looked not to be denied it of the Emperor, as long as he should have any Respect of Honour or Friendship. That as the King required any thing of the Emperor, so he was ready to do the like to him, minding to be answerable in any Point of Good Will and Friendship. That he required no otherwise of the Emperor, than his Ambassador had in *England*; nor any more than what was granted and suffered by others to his Ambassadors in other Realms and Dominions; and the Thing also was such as was usually granted in all Policies and Commonwealths: Nay, that the Christians, where they lived in the *Ethnics* Subjection, retained their Manner of Religion; and the *Turks* among Christians retained theirs; and the *Jews* likewise. Wherefore that the King did not doubt, but the Emperor, his good Brother, considering that they differed not in any Substance of their Religion, but only in the Form of certain Ceremonies and Usages, having the same Christ and Saviour, the same Books of Scripture that the Emperor had, would agree hereunto, as Reason and Friendship required; seeing the King's Request was lawful, and usually granted him in other Places; and by the King not denied to the Emperor; nor meaning thereby any Disquiet in the Emperor's Countries. Otherwise the King must not think, that the Emperor had so much Consideration either of Friendship or Honour, as others had. Of which Thought, he would be very sorry to have any such earnest Occasion given him by the Emperor.

Another



ANNO  
1550.

Concerning  
the Lady  
Mary.

Another Point of the Ambassador's Business was, about a Letter sent by the Emperor to the King, importing his Motion, that the Lady *Mary* might use her accustomed Religion for a further Time, according to an Assurance made, as he pretended, by the King to the Emperor. Concerning which, the Ambassador was instructed to say, 'That there was no Assurance or Promise ever made by the King, but only that he was content to bear, at that Time when the Motion was made by the Emperor's Ambassador, with her, and to spare the Execution of the Laws for a Time, until he saw some Proof of her Amendment. And that nothing else was promised, the Emperor's Ambassador had seen and heard by several Testimonies of the Council. And that both the Lord *Paget* and Sir *Philip Hoby*, Ambassadors at that Time with the Emperor, were examined upon their Faith and Honour, and both constantly denied, that ever they mentioned any Promise touching the King's Sister, either to the Emperor, or any other.' Moreover, he was ordered to say, 'That altho' the Emperor seemed to move this unto the King, yet when he should understand, how much against Reason it was to be granted, he would stay further Motion: For that such Order and Form of Common Prayer in the *English* Churches, and Usage of the Communion, was the very Order as the Primitive Church of Christ used. Besides, that it was established as a Law of the Realm by the Consent of Parliament. By the which the whole Estate of the Realm was ruled, and the King himself, in all manner of Causes, being such an universal and high Court, as there was none in all the *English* Policy to be compared to it. Further, That the Example of breaking this Order wittingly, were pernicious and dangerous to all the Realm; the Reverence of the King's Estate, the Execution of Laws, and the Authority of the same, would be utterly gon. Wherefore that it was the King's Desire, that the Emperor would turn the Case, and to imagin this to be his own. Finally, that all these Things considered, the King assured himself, the Emperor should cease to move this Matter, and would rather give the King contrary Counsil, for the Love and tender Care he bore him.

'Yet, that he assured the Emperor, that in all Things wherein he might shew his natural Affection to his Sister, he would heap it abundantly upon her, even a degree above his natural Affection, to demonstrate his earnest Desire to gratify the Emperor.

Matters of  
Ireland.

In the same Month of *April*, Care was taken of the Affairs of *Ireland*. It was thought fit to send for Home Sir *Anthony St. Leger*, the King's chief Officer in that Kingdom; the King declaring by Letters, that he intended to make use of him, and to employ him nearer about him; and Sir *James Crofts* (who came thither the Month before) was placed in *St. Leger's* room, who was made Deputy in *August* last. Besides the main Business of fortifying the Havens, *Crofts*, with several others of the Kingdom, was appointed to raise Money for the King, by Farming out his Lands there, and selling the Wards and Marriages of such as were in the King's Homage. Orders were also given out to the new Deputy to punish by Martial Law the Disorders of the Soldiers, who were greatly complained of for their Misdemeanors. The Lord *Fitzgerald*, the late Earl of *Kildare's* Son, to encourage his Loyalty and Service of the King, had granted to him a good Share of those Lands that came to the Crown by



by the said Earl's Death. All this more particularly is set down in the King's *Warrant Book*, as followeth:

' The Office of L. Deputy of *Ireland* to Sir *James Croft*, during Plea-  
' sure, with like Authority as Sir *Anthony St. Leger* had given him in  
' his Commission; and a Fee of a Thousand Pounds a Year.

' A Commission to Sir *James Croft*, Sir *Thomas Cusake*, Sir *George*  
' *Aylmer*, Sir *William Brabazon*, Knights, and *Patric Barnwel*, Esq; or  
' to Three of them, whereof the said Deputy to be one; to demise, grant  
' and set to Farm for One and twenty Years, and that under the Great  
' Seal there, as well all and singular those Manors, Lands, &c. which  
' hereafter may come into his Majesty's Hands, as those Lands which he  
' now hath within the same Realm: And to sell the Wards and Mar-  
' riages of all and singular the Heirs [of those] that have heretofore died  
' in the King's Homage, or hereafter shall die. Provided, that all Woods  
' and Under-woods growing upon any of the said Lands so demised, be  
' unto the King's Majesty reserved; saving to the Tenants sufficient  
' Hedge-boot, Plow-boot and Fire-boot.

' Another Commission to the said Deputy, and to the Marshal there,  
' to hear and to determine all Causes and Complaints against the King's  
' Soldiers of his Army there, and to punish the Offenders according to  
' Martial Law, upon due Proof to be had in that behalf. Provided,  
' the said Causes and Complaints be determined within three Months  
' after the same began, if the Plaintiff follow his Suit.

' A Letter to Sir *Anthony St. Leger*, to repair home to the King's Pre-  
' fence; and that before his Departure he see Sir *James Croft* placed  
' there: And to leave with him, by Bill indented, all such Stuff, Plate,  
' and other Things which he hath and occupieth of the King's.

' Four and twenty Letters were also sent, all of one Effect, declaring,  
' That for divers Considerations, the King minded to occupy Sir *Anthony*  
' *St. Leger* about certain his necessary Businesses here at home: There-  
' fore presently sendeth, to supply the Office of Deputy there, Sir *James*  
' *Croft*, as by his Letters Patents to them shall more plainly appear.

' A Letter was also sent in favour of the Lord *Garret* [*Fitz-Gerald*.]  
' To the Intent he may be the abler to do the King better Service, the  
' King is pleased, that he shall have so much of those Lands that came to  
' the King's hands by the Death of the Earl of *Kildare*, his Father, as  
' amounteth to the yearly Value of 300 Pounds. And that they cause  
' a certain plain Value and Survey to be sent hither to the Council, war-  
' ranted and subscribed by them, and such other Officers as be required  
' in such Cases, to the said yearly Value of 300 Pounds.

' A Letter in favour of Sir *William Brabazon*; to make a sufficient  
' Lease in reversion to him for One and twenty Years, of all such Farms  
' as he presently holdeth, by the Demise of the King's late Father, there.'

Forces were raised for *Ireland*, and lay in *London* ready to depart,  
and which should have departed before now. Therefore now in *April*,  
Orders were given forth by Proclamation, that all Captains and Soldiers  
that of late had received Prest, or had been entertained to pass into *Ire-*  
*land*, either by the long Seas, or by *Bristow*, should depart forthwith, or  
before a set Day in the said Month, toward the same: And that no such  
Person should remain in *London* after the same Day, under pain of Impri-  
sonment, or other Punishment at the King's Pleasure.

ANNO  
1551.

Sir *Ja. Croft*  
made Lord  
Deputy of  
*Ireland*.

A Commis-  
sion to sell  
Wards and  
let Lands in  
that King-  
dom:

And another  
to punish Sol-  
diers there.

Sir *Anthony*  
*St. Leger* re-  
called.

Letters de-  
clarative of  
the same.

A Grant of  
Lands to the  
Lord *Fitz-*  
*Gerald*.

A Lease for  
Sir *William*  
*Brabazon*.

Forces for  
*Ireland* ready  
to depart.



ANNO  
1551.

A Surveyor  
of the Mines  
and Money  
in Ireland.

A Surveyor also, viz. *Robert Record*, Esq; was constituted for the King's Mines and Coin in that Kingdom. To whom a Commission was directed in *May*, appointing him Surveyor of all the Mines of Mettal and Minerals in the said Realm: And that he, during Pleasure, should as well rule and order the Affairs and Works concerning the said Mines and Provisions of the same, as to appoint and take all manner of Provision, Labour, and Carriages, both by Land and Water, as well in the Realm of *England* as *Ireland*. And the Treasurer, Comptroller, and Seynmaster of the late erected Mints, and other Officers, in all their Alloys, Assays, Mixtures, Meltings, Blanchings, Sheerings, and other their Works, to use the Counsel of the said Surveyor. This for *Ireland*.

A great Em-  
bassy into  
*France*.

A great and honourable Ambassade was now also, in this busy Month of *April*, preparing for *France*, from the *English* Court, soon after Sir *William Pickering*'s Departure thither. It was, to bring the *French* King the Garter; and not only that, but chiefly to treat of a Match. There went as chief Ambassador, *Par* Marquis of *Northampton*, a Person of a very courtly and brave Behaviour and Gallantry; who had Ten Pounds a Day allowed him for his Diet; Sir *Philip Hoby*, a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, and often employed in Embassies; and *William Thomas*, Esq; a Clerk of the Council. There went also in the same Quality *Goodrick* Bishop of *Ely*, accustomed long to publick Business; Sir *Thomas Smith*, a very learned Knight, and Dr. *John Oliver*, both Civilians; besides a great Company of other Noblemen and Gentlemen, that voluntarily accompanied. To one of whom the King lent 2000 *French* Crowns, to be repaid at his Return. And the Loan of 4000 Crowns apiece was then offered to all such as were minded to go into *France*, and would give Bond for Re-payment, either in like Crowns, or Gold of like Finesse. To the aforesaid Ambassadors were also joined in Commission, Sir *William Pickering* and Sir *John Mason*, Ambassadors already in *France*. In the Company went also Sir *Gilbert Detbick*, Kt. Garter, Principal King of Armes; on whom attended *Chester* Herald, and *Rouge Dragon*, Purservant. Garter was allowed Twenty Shillings by the Day for his Diet, and Twenty Shillings more for his Reward: The Herald Five Shillings a Day for his Diet, and Five Shillings a Day for his Reward: The Purservant Two Shillings Six Pence a Day for his Diet, and as much more each Day for his Reward. Garter was also allowed three Yards of Cloth of Gold, two Yards of Cloth of Gold Tissue, and sixteen of blue Velvet. Which was for to serve for the Banner, the Mantle of the Helmet, and the Lining of the same, for the Installation of the *French* King.

A Match  
with the  
*French* King's  
Daughter  
propounded.

It was not before *June* this Ambassade arrived in *France*. The 20th of which Month, the Marquis invested the *French* King, in his Chamber, with the Order of the Garter. And the Bishop of *Ely* made the Speech, explaining the Purport of the Embassy. And the same Day in the Afternoon, the Motion for the Marriage between King *Edward* and the Lady *Elizabeth*, eldest Daughter of *France*, was broke, and very well received.

Persons sent  
to, to attend  
the Court at  
the *French*  
Ambassa-  
dor's com-  
ing.

And because a like splendid Embassy was expected from *France*, answerable to this now sent from *England*, the King being minded to give all honourable Reception to those that should come, in this same Month of *April*, caused Fifty eight Letters to be directed to divers brave *English* Gentlemen; requiring them, upon the sight of those Letters, to put themselves



themselves in such Readiness and Furniture as they might, before the Day of *June*, appear at the Court at or elsewhere, according to their Degree and State; for the Honour of the King and Realm, to attend there. For that certain Personages of good Estate were look'd for in Ambassage from the *French* King.

In *July* came over the *French* Ambassador, named *Claude La Val*, intitled, *Monsieur Le Marechal St. Andre*, upon the same account, with a brave Retinue, and landing at *Rye* in *Sussex*, was accompanied with a Thousand *English* Gentlemen and their Men, on Horseback. He was treated in *Kent* by Sir *John Baker*, and the Lord *Cobham*, at their Houses; met at *Gravesend* by the Lord Admiral, and forty other Gentlemen; and so conducted by them in Barges to *Durham* Place. One of the King's Gentlemen, and another of his Grooms, dying of the *Sweat*, he removed to *Hampton* Court. Thither was the Ambassador brought to the King. *July* the 14th. He delivered to him his Letters, and dined with him. And after Dinner, being withdrawn into an inner Chamber, he made his Speech to the King. To each Part whereof the King answered *extempore*, most solidly and wisely, beyond his Years, as he hath set it down himself in his *Journal*; whither I refer the Reader. Three Days after, the Ambassador repaired from his Lodgings at *Richmond* to *Hampton* Court, to present the King with the Order of *St. Michael*. Some Days after, he dined with the King again, and saw him Shoot, Ride, Play on the Lute, and was admitted into his Bedchamber and Study.

Matters were soon agreed on, and the Portion and Dowry settled; the former being 200000 Crowns, and the latter 10000 Marks. I have some Letters of this Ambassador to Secretary *Cecyl*: Whereby we may understand the Matter went chiefly thro' his Hand; he appointing the Ambassador his Times when to wait upon the King, and to have the Speech of him. To whom the Ambassador betook himself for the forwarding and conducting his Business. Him he desired to get his Memorial finished, which he sent to *Cecyl* by his Secretary; and also that the Ratification of the Marriage, and other Letters, testifying the Consent and Approbation of the Privy Council, might be dispatched: as he had wrote to the Master of the King's Horse, they should be sent speedily to *France*, by one of the Gentlemen of his Retinue. To this Conclusion was this Matrimonial Business brought; as appears by this Letter of the Ambassador to *Cecyl*:

**T**E maxime rogatum velim, amicissime *Cecili*, ut juxta Memoriallem Libellum tibi ab eo qui mihi est à Secretis, hodie mane relictum; Rem nostram matures, & quantum poteris festinationem adhibeas. Ea autem de causa illud à te importunius postulo, quod nudius tertius D. Magistro Equitum Regis nostri significaverim, me brevi, una cum Literis Matrimonii Confirmatoriis, Literas quoque alias missurum, quibus testatum in posterum haberemus, probantibus & consentientibus Regis vestri Consiliariis, rem confectam. Utrasque autem ad Regem mittere statueram per quendam ex Nobilibus meis quicquid die profecturus est. Bene vale, Amicissime *Cecili*.

Tuus omnino,

CLAUDIUS LA VALLUS.

ANNO  
1551.

The French  
Ambassador  
comes.

Hist. Reform.  
Coll. P. 30.

The Match  
agreed on.

The Amba-  
sador to the  
Secretary.  
MSS. penes  
me.



ANNO  
1551.

The King  
hath the  
French La-  
dy's Picture.

About *December* or *January* last, *Guidot*, an *Italian* Merchant, who came from the *French* Court, brought from thence a gilt Cup to the King, and presented also the Picture of the *French* King's Daughter to him. Which the King then delivered to the Earl of *Warwick*, and bad him keep it. It was thought that *Guidot*, a Person made use of in Messages between the *French* Court and this, had secret Instructions from the *French* Queen, to present that Picture to the King; who was the most desirous Woman in the World, that her Daughter might be bestowed on the King. This might give the first Occasion of moving for this Match with *France*, that was now in hand, and so forward. And the Marshal of *France* being this *July*, as we see, ready to return home, the said Earl of *Warwick* being then at *Oxford*, sent the Picture to the Lord Chamberlain, to deliver it to the King, with Advice that he should shew it to the Marshal at the Day of his taking his leave of the King. Which Act of the King, perhaps, might much satisfy the Queen, when the Marshal should tell her of it, (whose Practice the said Earl verily thought it was, to send it) that the same should appear to her not to be rejected.

The Articles on the *French* side, drawn up while King *Edward's* Ambassadors were in *France*, began in this Form and Tenor:

Articles of  
Marriage on  
the *French*  
side.  
MSS. *Forlan.*

UNiverfis & singulis, ad quorum Notitiam præsentēs Literæ perve-  
nerint. Nos CAROLUS, miseratione divina, tituli S. *Ceciliae*,  
sacrofanctæ *Romanæ* Ecclesiæ Presbyter, Cardinalis de *Lotharingia*, Ar-  
chiepiscopus & Dux *Remensis*, primus Par *Franciæ*; ANNA, Dux de  
*Montmorency*, Par, Constabularius & magnus Magister *Franciæ*, insignis  
Ordinis Sancti *Michaelis* Eques; *Jobannes BERTRANDUS*, Miles,  
Sigillorum Cancellariæ custos; *Robertus de la MARCHE*, Dominus  
de *Sedan*, *Franciæ* Marechalchus, ejusdem Ordinis S. *Michaelis* Eques;  
*Jobannes de la CHENET*, Miles, Dominus *DEURY*, Generalis Fi-  
nanciarum, in Sanctiori & Secretiori Concilio Christianissimæ Regiæ  
Majestatis Consilarii, Oratores, Procuratores & Commissarii ejusdem  
Christianiss. Regis ad infra-scripta sufficienter constituti & authorizati,  
Salutem.

Postquam depositis Armis & Hostilitate remota per Dei Cpt. Max.  
favorem & gratiam, inter dictum Christianissimum *Franciæ*, & Sereniss.  
finum *Angliæ* Reges, reconciliatis animis vetus ille & à parentibus suis  
Regibus felicissimæ memoriæ diutissimè conservatus, & ab illis ad se  
transmissus, amor & amicitia mutua redintegrata fuit; de nulla re alia  
prius ac potius deliberandum Princeps uterque censuit, quam quibus  
modis hic Amor & Affectus fraternus, non solum in perpetuam stabili-  
tatem conservari, verum quo modo augeri etiam, atque adeo indies ma-  
gis ac magis adolescere in perfectissimum, quantum humanarum rerum  
natura patitur, necessitudinis statum queat. In qua deliberatione dum  
versantur, non suis vehementibus Affectibus satis indulgisse sibi sunt visi,  
quantumcunque magnis alioqui se profecuti fuerint officiis amicitiae, nisi  
& eo fuerint insuper vinculo copulati, quod à Deo summo Parente in  
Paradiso institutum omnium humanorum vinculorum fortissimum fir-  
missimumque habetur. Quod non animos tantum amore, verumetiam  
corpore consanguinitate conjungit, sanguinem sanguine copulat, & cog-  
nationis propagine necessitudinem contractam per multas ætates & fa-  
cula



cula firmissimè transmittit. Hæc est ejus natura sacrosancti ac divini-  
tus instituti Matrimonii.

ANNO

1551.

Quod quidem si mox locum habere potuisset, & affinitas tam optata  
sine ulla dilatione iniri conficique quivisset, nihil utrique Principi fuisset  
antiquius, nihil optatius, ut statim foret orbi testatum, quàm infu-  
catè ac verè Rex uterque alterius Amicitiam complectatur, quàm cu-  
piant ardentè ambo eandem esse æternam, & per vincula nuptiarum  
indissolubiliter copulatam.

Sed quoniam isthuc nunc ætatis ratio fieri non patitur, quod unum  
est proximùmque quod hoc tempore fieri potest, de matrimonio contra-  
hendo, cum primum tempus ætatisque permittet, inter præfatum Sereniss-  
imum *Angliæ* Regem, & Illustrissimam Dominam *ELIZABETHAM*  
prædicti Christianissimi Regis filiam natu majorem, communicandum  
duxerunt.

Nos igitur præfati Christianiss. Regis *Franciæ* Consilarii, Oratores,  
Procuratores, & Commissarii, sufficienter autoritate de Matrimonio  
prædicto contrahendo, cum Illustribus, præclaris ac Nobilibus Viris  
*Gulielmo* Marchione *Northampton*, Comite *Essexiæ*, Domino de *Par*,  
illustriss. Ordinis Garterii Milite, Magno Camerario *Angliæ*, & dicti  
Sereniss. Regis *Angliæ* Pensionariorum Capitaneo generali, *Thoma* Epif-  
copo *Elien*. *Johanne Mason* Milite, præfati Sereniss. Regis in Lingua  
*Gallicana* Secretario, & ad dictum Christianiss. *Francorum* Regem Am-  
bassiatore, *Philippo Hobbye* Milite, præfati Sereniss. Regis à Cubiculis,  
& munitionum bellicarum Generale, *Willielmo Pickering* Milite, præ-  
fati Regis item à Cubiculis, *Thoma Smith* Milite, Præposito [Collegii  
*Etonensis*] & *Johanne Oliver* Legum Doctore præfato Sereniss. Regis  
*Angliæ* in Cancellaria sua à Libellis supplicatoriis, etiam Consiliariis,  
Oratoribus, Nunciis & Commissariis ejusdem Sereniss. *Angliæ* Regis ad  
infrascripta sufficienter & legitimè deputatis & autorisatis, conveni-  
mus, concordavimus & conclusimus, atque autoritate Commissionum  
nostrarum, quarum tenores inferius inferuntur, convenimus, concordavimus  
& concludimus Articulationem prout sequitur. And then the Ar-  
ticles of the Marriage follow, which would be too long here to insert.  
This is enough to shew in what Forwardness this Match was, and the  
Form and Manner of drawing up such matters; and lastly, who were  
Commissioners on both Sides, and their Titles and Qualities.

And this at last was the Effect of this Embassy, which began in *April*,  
and created Work for some Months after.

*Herman*, that pious Confessor, late Elector and Archbishop of *Colen*,  
(who for adhering to the Protestant Religion, and setting on foot the Re-  
formation of his Country, was deprived by the Pope and Emperor) sent  
his Agent Dr. *James Omphalius* to the King in *October* or *November*, with  
his Letter. And in *November* the King answered the said Letter, and  
friendly dismissed the Agent, granting him a Passport to return into  
*Flanders*, with three Servants, three Horses, three hundred Crowns, and  
all other Things necessary for his Journey. The Sum of which Message  
appears not; but I conclude it to be concerning providing for the better  
State of the Protestant Interest; and perhaps recommending *Melancthon*,  
and some other *German* learned Men to the King. He wrote also the

*Omphalius*  
comes from  
the Archbi-  
shop of *Colen*.

next



ANNO next Summer to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, to forward his Business  
 1551. with the King; who being then in his Progress, the said Archbishop sent  
 Herman's Letters to the Secretary, to be mindful of them.

#### CHAP. IV.

*Sir John Gates advanced. Grants to him. Occurrences.  
 The Bishopric of Winton diminished. Regulation  
 of Coin. Coverdale preferred to Exeter. The Sweat-  
 ing Sicknesse. Henry Duke of Suffolk dies. A Dearth.  
 Orders to the Bishops. Bishop Scorie's Letter to  
 the King. Duke of Somerset's new Troubles.*

Sir John Gates  
 Vice-cham-  
 berlain.

Grants to  
 him.



UT return we now again to the Month of *April*; wherein we must remark some other Occurrences then happening, tho' of a more private nature.

In this Month of *April* was Sir *John Gates* (sometime wrote *Tates*) a Groom of the Privy Chamber to *Henry VIII.* advanced to be Vice-chamberlain, and Captain of the Guards to the King; and being, I suppose, but of mean Fortunes, was to be raised by his Prince, as were others of his Condition; which cost the King dear. So *Gates* had Lands given him to the Value of 120 Pounds *per Annum*. He was about this Year also, or the last, High Sheriff of *Essex* and *Hertfordshire*, living at *Chestbunt*, and one of the King's Commissioners, when the Goods and Chattels of Colleges and Chauntries, in considerable Proportions, came into his Hands for the King's Use. Which, it may be presumed, he having the fingering of, might convert some Part thereof to his own Use. But if he did so, of it he got himself cleared by a Pardon signed *March 16.* when, according to the Lord Chancellor's Ledger Book, it was wrote, 'That he was pardoned for all his Accounts due to the King, for certain Plate, Jewels, Ornaments of Household, and other Goods; and also, for Accounts of certain Goods received, appertaining to the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the Earl of *Surrey*, upon their Attainder: And further, now lately for the Plate received of the College of *Plecy* in *Essex*, at the Time of the Dissolution thereof.' *April 29.* a Patent was granted him of an Annuity of 40 Pounds, to be assigned by the Master and Council of the Court of Wards, out of the Manors of *Marden*, *Bremcham*, *Smethcote*, and the Farm of *Wilford* in *Wilts*; and all the Manors of *Mayor*, *Flotbeck*, &c. and other Towns in the County of *Cornwal*. Which came to the King's hands by the Death of *Silvester Davers*, and by the Minority of *John Davers* his Son and Heir, with the Custody and Marriage of the said *John*. Likewise, he obtained a Patent of the same date, whereby the King granted him the Scite of the College or Free-Chappel of *St. Steven's* in *Westminster*, with all the Chappels and Precincts of the said Scite, except the upper Buildings, now called *The Par-*

liament



liament House, over the Vault of the College Chappel beneath: And also the Advowson of the Parsonage and Church of *Rotbing Abbatissa*, alias *Abbas Rotbing* in *Essex*, belonging to the late Monastery of *Berking* in the said County: And to have the Issues and Profits thereof from the Time of the Attaint of *Sir Rauf Fane*: And were extended to the yearly Value of 13 l. 6 s. 8 d. ANNO 1551

In the same Fift Year of the King, in the Month of *October*, he gave to the said *Sir John Gates* the Keepership and Walkership of two good Walks in *Waltham* Forrest, viz. *Chappel Hainalt* and *Le Hainalt*, the two former Keepers thereof being yet alive, namely, *George Doddesworth* and *John Nodes*: Who yet, by two Patents dated *Octob. 20.* were to have the Fees, during their Lives, of Eight Pence a Day, and twenty Load of Fewel Wood, to be allowed them yearly by the Woodward of the said Walks, in recompence of the said Offices granted to *Gates*. But his Patents for these Walks were not signed till *Jan. 29.* The said *Sir John* to have and occupy to him and his Assigns, during Life; reserving unto the said *George* and *John* their said Fees during their Lives: And after their Decease, or either of them, to come to the Hands and Possessions of *Sir John Gates*. Two Walks in Waltham Forrest.

In the same Fift Year, he surrendered into the King's hands the Hospital of *St. Thomas* in *Southwark*: which King *Henry* had granted him by Patent for Life. In recompence whereof, the King in the Month of *July* bestowed on him divers good Manors in *Essex*, namely, *Bradwel*, *Munden* and *Lawford*, and other Lands, to the yearly Value of 208 Pounds 9 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpeny. This Hospital the King soon after gave to the City of *London* for their Poor. Manors in Essex.

And in the same Month, the Duke of *Suffolk* dying of the Sweating Sicknes, *Gates* was made Keeper of his great House in *Southwark*, with the Garden, Orchard and Park, and High Steward of the Lands and Liberties thereof for his Life. And also High Steward of *Paris Garden*, and the Liberties thereof, with the Fee of 30 Pounds per Annum. Offices in Southwark.

Still in the same Month, the King granted him the Manors of *Sutton* and *Ropley* in the Counties of *Southampton* and *Surry*; late Lands belonging to the Bishopric of *Winchester*, to the Value of 145 Pounds 19 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpeny, per Annum. Manors in Hampshire and Surry.

In the Seventh and last Year of King *Edward*, he obtained from him in Fee simple the Manor of *Hursbourn* in the County of *Southampton*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 203 Pounds 10 Shillings and an Halfpeny, with a further Grant, that there shall be for ever one Market and two Fairs at *Ringwood*, one of the Towns granted him. Other Lands in Hampshire.

And to add the mention of one Benevolence more to this Gentleman, which was before any of these above-mentioned, viz. in the King's first Year. He had by Patent dated *July 29.* the Lordship and Manor of *Barwic*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Essex*, parcel of the Possessions of the Dutchy of *Lancaster*, and divers other Lands and Tenements in *Essex*, *Hertfordshire*, *Norfolk*, and *Northamptonshire*. And this, in consideration of Service, and for Performance of the Purpose of King *Henry VIII.* his Will. And besides all this, we may read of more Favours shewn him in the Procefs of this History. This Gentleman, in short, as he was the Duke of *Northumberland's* Favourite, so he perished with him in the *Lady Jane's* Busines.

In



ANNO  
1551.

*Geo. Van Paris.*  
Warr. Book.

In *April* was the Warrant to the Lord Chancellor *Rich*, to make out Procefs and Writ of Execution for the burning of one *George Van Paris*, a Chirurgion, born in *Flanders*, having been condemned of *Anabaptism*, averred by him to Death, as the Words ran in the said Warrant. This was the *Arian* mentioned by the King in his Journal, and said to be excommunicated by the *Dutch* Congregation, and after long Disputation, condemned.

Altars to be  
taken down  
in *Chichester*  
Diocese.

The See of *Chichester* being now vacant, upon Bishop *Day*'s Deprivation, the Altars remained in many Churches a good while after. For in *May*, 1551. a Letter from the Council was writ into the Diocese to this Tenor, ' That where, notwithstanding the King's general Commandment already passed for the taking down all Altars within the Realm, ' divers stand yet within the Diocese of *Chichester*; that substantial Order be taken forthwith for the pulling down all Altars within the ' Churches and Chappels of the said Diocese, and for the setting up of ' Tables in their stead, in some convenient Place of the Chancels again.

A Triumph  
at *Greenwich*.

*May* the 3d, was a great Triumph at *Greenwich*. The King and all his Company wore Black and White, (being in Mourning, perhaps, for somebody.) As the Footmen and Trumpeters, their Hats and Cloaks, the Banners and the Spears in those Colours. The other Part, which was the Earl of *Hertford*, and with him a great Company of Lords, Knights, and other young Gentlemen, wore all yellow Silk. So were their Trumpeters Hats, the Banners and Footmen, and their Spears and Trappings of their Horses, all in Yellow. And they ran at the Ring, and at *Tourney* with Swords.

An Earth-  
quake.

*May* 25. about *Rygate*, *Croyden* and *Darking* was felt an Earthquake, and especially at *Darking*. Infomuch that there, and elsewhere, Pots and Pans and Dishes fell down, and moved about.

Two great  
Northern  
Earls come  
up.

*May* 31. the Earls of *Derby* and *Shrewsbury* came to Town out of the North: Both accompanied most splendidly with Men and Horse. Whereof the latter was attended with seven Score Horse, and afore him forty Velvet Coats and Chains, and all wearing his own Livery; unto his own Place in *London*, which was called *Coldberber*.

A new Set-  
tlement of  
the Bishopric  
of *Winton*.

In this Month of *May*, when *Ponet* was made Bishop of *Winchester*, after the Deprivation of *Gardiner*, a great Alienation was made of the Lands and Revenues antiently belonging to that Bishopric, according as it was required of the said *Ponet*, when he first came to the See, or rather conditionally to his Preferment thither. Then he passed away to the King the Manors of *Marden*, *Twisford*, *Marwel*, *Waltham*, &c. in the County of *Southampton*, and divers other Lands, Lordships, Tenements, Rents, &c. and in effect all the Temporalities of that rich Bishopric. And to make all sure, Letters were dispatched to the Dean and Chapter to confirm the Grant of the said Bishop by their full Consent and Seal of the Chapter, as in that case by the Order of the Laws is required and accustomed. Then did the King give to the Bishop and his Successors, in consideration of the said Bishop's Surrender, a great many Rectories, as that of *Bremmer*, and of the Chappel of *Charford* and *Hale*, and the Rectory of *Regborn* in the County of *Southampton*, and divers other Lands, to the Value of 2000 Marks, to be held in *liberam Eleemosynam*, and to take the Profits from *Michaelmas* last. He granted him moreover, for some Recompence for all this taken away, that his First-Fruits,



Fruits, (which before were charged in the King's Books at 3885 Pounds 3 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpeny Farthing) should be now reduced to 2000 Marks; and that for his Tenths, from henceforth he should be taxed at 200 Marks, and no more, to be paid yearly; that he should have ten Years space to pay his First-Fruits in; that Bonds should be taken for Payment, from the Bishop only, without Sureties to be bound with him: And that all the Bonds and Writings for the First-Fruits of his former Bishopric, viz. of *Rocheſter*, should be delivered him up; which the King forgave him. And for the putting all this into effect, a Warrant was issued out to the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Council, and to all others, being Officers of the Court of First-Fruits and Tenths. The King also gave him a License to enter into his Bishopric, and to take the Profits thereof, without paying any thing therefore, notwithstanding a Statute made in that behalf, in the 26th of *Hen. VIII.* The Import whereof was, that no Spiritual Person should enter upon his Benefice, before he had paid the First-Fruits, or given Bond and Security to pay them. A Pardon also was granted him of all Pains, Penalties, and Sums of Money that might be forfeited, and due to the King, for entering into the Bishopric of *Rocheſter*, contrary to the said Statute.

ANNO  
1551.

The King soon gratified his Servants with the Lands and Manors of this Bishopric; as Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Philip Hoby*, Sir *Henry Semur*, Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Kts. *Henry Nevyl* and *William Fitzwilliams*, Esqs; For in July following were these Parcels given away:

The Lands  
of the Bi-  
shopric of  
*Winton* dis-  
posed to  
Courtiers.

To Sir *John Gates*, the Manors of *Sutton*, *Ropley*, &c. in *Southampton* and *Surrey*, of the yearly Value of 145 Pounds 19 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpeny.

To Sir *Philip Hoby*, the Manors of *Marden*, &c. in the County of *Southampton*, of the yearly Value of 87 Pounds 18 Shillings 7 Pence.

To Sir *Andrew Dudley*, the Manor of *Witney*, &c. of the yearly Value of 180 Pounds 7 Pence Halfpeny Farthing.

To Sir *Henry Semour*, Lands to the yearly Value of 186 Pounds 4 Pence.

To *Willam Fitzwilliams*, the Manor of *High Clere*, &c. to the yearly Value of 84 Pounds 17 Shillings 3 Pence.

To *Henry Nevyl*, the Manor of *Margrave*, &c. to the yearly Value of 114 Pounds 18 Shillings 10 Pence.

Sir *Thomas Wroth* also had an Annuity of 100 Pounds.

And for the further Confirmation of this Alienation made by the Bishop of *Wincheſter*, it was thought requisite to have it allowed and consented to by the Dean and Chapter, under their Seal. Whereupon in August a Letter was sent to Sir *John Mason*, Kt. that he should repair to *Wincheſter*, and to agree with the Bishop to meet them there at a certain Day; and to cause all the Canons, Prebendaries, and others whom it concerned, to assemble in the Chapter House, for confirming the said Lands, before *Michaelmas* next; and to advertise the Council the Day, that Order might be given to the King's learned Council to be there at the same time.

This Alien-  
ation to be  
confirmed  
by the Chap-  
ter.

And, to take up all these Matters together, another Letter was sent to this Bishop in behalf of the City of *Wincheſter*; namely, to take Order that the City and Citizens, and their Successors, might be freed from their Suits and Services heretofore made to that Court called *The Palm Court*, to the Bi-  
shop.

The City of  
*Wincheſter* to  
be freed  
from Suit  
and Service  
to the Bi-  
shop.



**ANNO** Court, and all other Liberties he had to the same, clearly exonerated and discharged by his sufficient Writing, under his Seal, and confirmed by the Chapter Seal, according to his Promise.

1551.

An extraordinary License to Chidley.

In this Month of *July*, the King was pleased to grant somewhat an extraordinary License to *George Chidley*; whether for some remarkable Merit in him, or out of the King's special Inclination and Affection to him; *viz.* that he should wear his Cap in the King's Presence, or elsewhere, without Let or Trouble of any Man.

A Command to the Warden of the Stanneries.

The King also now took care of his Tin, one of the ancientest and choicest Commodities of this Land. Some Disorders arising amongst the Tanners, he gave order to the Warden of the Stanneries of *Cornwal*, who, I think, was the Earl of *Bedford*, to summon Four and twenty of the most substantial and discreetest Tanners of every Stannery, into some convenient Place, and there to consider and review the Laws and Customs, and to take notice of the Irregularities committed; and to redress and reform the things that were amiss, for the Quietness and good Government of the Tanners, the Preservation of the Stanneries, and the common Wealth of the Realm: And that Command should be given, that the same Laws and Orders be strictly put in execution.

Regulation of Coin.

Another of his great Cares, which employed his Thoughts and Endeavours all along his Reign, almost hitherto, was for the amending of the coarse Money of his Kingdom, and bringing down the good to a true Value. For as the King had taken order for his Coin, both Gold and Silver, in the Year 1549. *viz.* setting a Price upon the several Pieces of Gold, that they should not go above the due Value; and for calling in a

The Teston.

coarse sort of Money, called *Testourns* or *Testons*, which passed for 12 Pence, tho' scarce half so much in intrinsic Value; so now this Year the King and his Council had further Cares about Coinage, for the further Regulation of it. For still the Testons went current for above the Value,

King's Journ. Proclamations for the same.

There was therefore, this *July*, a Proclamation for shortning the Fall of Money to a Day. And another Proclamation the same Month, that the Teston should go at 9 Pence, and the Groat at 3 Pence in all Places of the Realm at once. Another Proclamation came forth the same Month of *July*, for the Punishment of them that would blow Rumours of abasing and enhauncing of the Coin, to make things dear. And in *August*, (to take up here at once the Transactions of this Money-business all together) the Teston was again cried down from 9 Pence to 6 Pence, the Groat from 3 Pence to 2 Pence, and the Twopence to a Penny, the Penny to an Halfpenny, and the Halfpenny to a Farthing. In *September* there was a great deliberation concerning Coin, occasioned chiefly because there were divers Standards. For at this Time a Shilling fine had been reckoned for two Shillings. The same Month a Proclamation was set forth touching the Prices of Cattel, of Hogs, Pigs, Beeves, Oxen, Muttons, Butter and Cheese: which were set after a reasonable Price, but not fully so good cheap, as when Coin was at the perfectest; but within a fift part of it, or thereabouts. The same Month a Letter was directed to the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Great Master, and the Master of the Horse, to meet at *London* for the ordering of the Coin.

Deliberation upon a Device for Money. Warr. Book.

In the same Month of *September*, there was a Letter undirected, but I suppose, to the foresaid Personages, authorizing them to call before them such expert, skilful Men, as they should think meet: and debating with them



them such Determinations and Devices, as before the King's Majesty and his Council have of late been propounded and purposed for the State of the Coin. And if the same shall be most profitable, then to proceed to put the same in ure. And if any other way shall be found, more convenient to be followed, in Alteration either in part or in the whole of the same Determination, then also to proceed in putting the same in execution. Whereof they were to certify the King and his Council.

ANNO  
1551.

The same Month, the Lords abovesaid, at London tried all kinds of Stamping; but of the Fineness of 9, 8, 6, 4 and 3, proved, that without any Loss but sufferable, the Coin might be brought to eleven Ounces fine. For whereas it was thought before, that the *Testurn* was through evil Officers and Ministers corrupted, it was tried, that it had the Valuation just, by eight sundry kinds of melting. And 400 Pounds of Sterling Money, a *Testurn* being but Six Pence, made 400 Pounds eleven Ounces fine, of Money Sterling. Whereupon they reported the same; and then it was concluded, that *Testurns* should be eleven Ounces fine: the Proportion of the Pence according to the Gold: So that Five Shillings of Silver should be worth Five of Gold.

The Lords  
Report a-  
bout it.

In the same Month (so close did they follow their Business) it was agreed, that the Stamp of the Shilling and Sixpence should be, on one Side a King figured to his Shoulders in Parliament Robes, with a Chain of the Order: The Stamp of Five Shillings of Silver, and half Five Shillings, should be a King on Horseback, armed with a naked Sword hard to his Breast. Also, that *York's* Mint, and *Tbrogmorton's* in the Tower, should go and work the Fine Work; and in the City of *York* and *Canterbury* should the small Money be wrought, of a baser State. And Officers for the same were appointed. And Octob. 1. a Commission was signed for the making of Five Shilling Pieces, Half Five Shillings, Groats and Sixpences, eleven Ounces fine; and Pence, and Halfpence, and Farthings, four Ounces fine.

The Stamp  
resolved on.

And the  
Mints set  
to work.

This great Work also cost divers Proclamations. One was dated in September, that none should melt any *Testurn*, or Shilling, Groat, Half-Groat, Penny, Halfpenny, or Farthing, or any other Coin of Silver, being current within the Realm: to make Vessel, Plate, or any other thing. Upon Pain of Forfeiture of four times the Value of the Money so molten; and to suffer Imprisonment, and other Pains.

A Proclama-  
tion against  
melting  
down the  
King's Coin.

Another Proclamation in October was signed for the calling in *Testons* and Groats. That they that listed, might come to the Mint, and have fine Silver of Twelvepence for two *Testons*.

Another for  
calling in  
*Testons*.

Another in the same Month, Declaring, that the King's Majesty had ordered and established to be made within his Mints, these several Coins, as well of Silver, in Fineness of the Standard, as also of Gold: as hereafter ensueth; that is to say, One Piece of Silver Monies, which shall be current for Five Shillings of the lawful Monies aforesaid. Another Piece, which shall be called *The Piece of Two Shillings and Sixpence*, of the lawful Monies. The third Piece, which shall be called *The Sterling Shilling*, current for Twelve Pence. The fourth Piece, which shall be half of the said Shilling, shall be current for Six Pence. Also, that the King had ordered to have four Pieces of small Monies made likewise current. That is to say, the first Piece shall be called a *Peny*, with a double Rose, and shall be current for a Penny of the lawful Monies aforesaid.

Another, de-  
claring the  
several Va-  
lues of Gold  
and Silver  
Coin.



ANNO

1551.

The several  
Gold Coins.

The second shall be called *an Halfpenny*, with a single Rose. And the third Piece *a Farthing*, with a Portcullife. [The fourth Piece is here wanting, perhaps Half a Farthing.]

And of the Coins of Gold, as here ensueth; that is to say, The old Sovereign of fine Gold: which shall be current for 30 Shillings of lawful Money of *England*. Another Piece of fine Gold, called *the Angel*, shall be current for Ten Shillings. The third Piece of fine Gold, which shall be called *the Angelet*, half of the *Angel*, current for Five Shillings. And further, an whole Sovereign of Crown Gold shall be current for Twenty Shillings. The second Piece of Crown Gold, which shall be called *the Half Sovereign*, shall be current for Ten Shillings. And the third Piece of Crown Gold, which shall be called *a Crown*, current for Five Shillings. The fourth Piece of Crown Gold, which shall be called *the Half Crown*, shall be current for Two Shillings Six Pence of the lawful Monies aforesaid.

And the King straitly charged and commanded all manner of Persons within his Realms and Dominions, to receive and pay the said several Pieces of Money, as well of Silver as of Gold, at the several Rates before rehearsed, upon Pain of his high Displeasure, and to be further punished, as his Highness should think convenient.

And his expresse Commandment was, that all such base Monies which his Majesty had lately by his several Proclamations reduced to the Value of a lower Rate, should pass and go current in Payment in like manner and sort as his Highness's last Proclamation had declared; until such Time as his Majesty's Mints might with diligence convert the same into his said new Coins. Which he minded to have done with all possible Expedition.

And his Majesty signified to all his loving Subjects, that if they brought in a Quantity of Monies now current into his Mint within the Tower of *London*, they should have the same received there by Tale at the Value, as they were then current, upon Bills. And they should, in as convenient Time as might be, be repayed for the same Monies then current, by Tale in other the King's new Money afore declared.

Another a-  
gainst false  
Rumours of  
the King's  
new Coin.

Another Proclamation was set forth in *December* following. Which charged and commanded all the King's true Subjects, not to credit certain vain, false and seditious Rumours concerning certain Pieces of his Highness's Coin, now made, which had been well stricken, that his Majesty's Arms did not appear in the same; and to be seditiously declared: These Persons, it seems, building upon this Conceit, that the Stamp of the King's Arms made the Money current; because the antient Monies usually had that Impression.

Another a-  
gainst buy-  
ing and sell-  
ing it.

Yet another came forth the same Month, prohibiting the buying and selling of Coin, at other Prices than the same was current by the King's late Proclamation.

And thus, after several Months, was that great Business of the Coinage brought to Perfection, in the Fifth Year of the King. Which was one of the Glories of his Reign. But now to return to the Month of *July* again, which we have not yet done with.

The King  
exercises on  
Horseback.

*July 6.* (that very Day two Years after, wherein the King died) he rode gallantly through *Greenwich* Park, accompanied with the Earls of *Darby* and *Warwic*, the Lord Admiral, Sir *William Herbert*, and other Knights and



and Gentlemen, Trumpets founding, and all the Guards in their Doublets, [that is, Back and Breast in Armour] with their Horses, and with Bows and Arrows and Halbards, two and two together. Here the King on Horseback ran at the Ring, with other Lords and Knights. The Earl of *Warwic* aforesaid, had met the King there with an hundred Men of Arms, and great Horses, and Gentlemen, in Coats of Velvet embroidered. The same Night the King supped at *Deptford* in a Ship with the Lord Admiral, and the Lords of his Council, and many Gentlemen.

ANNO  
1551.

In this Month of *July*, that eminent Confessor *Miles Coverdale* was placed in the Bishopric of *Exeter*, and had a License of Entry into the same: a wealthy Bishopric before, valued in the King's Books at 1585 Pounds 13 Shillings 6 Pence Halfpeny Farthing yearly; now impaired by the last Bishop, that it was set in the King's Books but at 500 Pounds, and no more, and the Tenths to be 50 Pounds hereafter yearly. And *Coverdale* was to be discharged of that first Year's Tenths, and of all Arrearages in the old Bishop's Time. To which old Bishop [*Veyzy*] it was granted, upon the Resignation of his Bishopric, to enjoy all Annuities granted to him out of the Lands of the Bishopric, whereof he had made a State in Fee simple to others, namely, to the Earl of *Bedford*, and other Noblemen. And also, to enjoy certain Rents granted out of the Bishopric to certain Persons, that were then come into his hands. And that the said Bishop might plead in any Court by the Name of *John Veyzy*. These Conditions he obtained for his Resignation; that he might have a Subsistence for his Life. And all was granted him accordingly, in this Month of *July*.

*Coverdale*  
made Bishop  
of *Exon*.

The Plague of *Sweat* was this Summer very severe, and carried away multitudes of People, rich and poor, and especially in *London*: where in one Day, viz. *July* 10. died an hundred People; and the next an hundred and twenty. And it came even into the King's Family about this Time; which caused him to retire to *Hampton Court*. The King had given order to a great many Persons, both of the Nobility and Gentry, to attend the *French* Ambassador, as well to shew the King's Magnificence, as the Honour he intended for the said Ambassador. But in this Month of *July*, a Proclamation came forth for all Gentlemen to return home again, that were appointed to attend against the coming of the *French* Men, and not to pester the Ambassador's Lodging, for fear of the *Sweat*.

The Sweating  
Sickness.

Among the Persons this *Sweat* took away, *Henry* Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Lord *Charles* his Brother, were greatly lamented, not only because of their Quality, but their Hopes: Who, *July* 16. died both in one Bed. They were both Members of the University of *Cambridge*, and admitted in *King's* College, and put under the Tuition of that accomplished Scholar, Dr. *Walter Haddon*, Professor of the Civil Law, and University Orator. To whose Memory he dedicated a Copy of elegant Verses, which began thus:

The Duke of  
*Suffolk* and  
his Brother  
die of the  
*Sweat*.

*Et vivos colui meos Alumnos,  
Et nunc prædico mortuos Alumnos.  
Vos, dulces pueri, valere vester  
Haddonus jubet, ut potest jubere, &c.*

They



ANNO  
1551.

The Hope-  
fulness of  
these young  
Noblemen.

Marquis of  
Dorset made  
Duke of  
Suffolk.

Sir J. Gates  
made Keeper  
of the Duke  
of Suffolk's  
House in  
Southwark.

They died both this fatal *July* at *Buckden*, at the Bishop of *Lincoln's* House, whither they were retired to avoid the Sicknes, being all the Male Issue of that most illustrious Prince *Charles* Duke of *Suffolk*, and of his second Wife *Catharine*. She had obtained of the King the Wardship and Marriage of the young Duke her Son, and also the Wardship and Marriage of *Agnes Woodvil*, [or rather *Woodvill*] I suppose of the right noble House of the *Woodvills*; *Elizabeth*, a Daughter whereof, was Wife to King *Edward IV.* and her Sister to *Henry* Duke of *Buckingham*. This young Lady being brought up in her House, with her said Son, she seemed to intend to match with him.

The Duchesse, out of her tender Regard to them both, came to *Cambridge* with them, and sojourned there, about the Time that *Martin Bucer* went thither: To whose Inspection and Counsel she commended them. Upon their Funerals, Dr. *Haddon* made an eloquent Oration before the University. Therein he described Duke *Henry*, not yet arrived to Man's Estate, to have been a very excellent Person, well learned for his Years, and much addicted to Literature; that his Parts were such, as he imbibed, with the greatest Ease, whatsoever he was instructed in: That all his Discourses were upon learned Arguments, and his Delight in the Conversation of learned Men; good Store of whom he had always about him, procured at first by his Mother's Care; and more he took to him, according as he perceived their Parts, and fancied their Conversation. His Custom was, when he and the rest of his learned Retinue were together, to propound some Question, of which he himself would first speak, and then desire to hear them, what they had to say about it. He had a prompt and fluent Utterance, yet attended with a becoming Modesty, which, as it preserved him from Boasting and Conceit of himself, so from despising others. This Stile of his, *Haddon* took notice of, and exhorted him much to read *Tully*, for the further Improvement of it: adding, that by conversing diligently a Year or two in that Author, he would prove a better *Ciceronian* than himself, how well soever the World said he imitated that Author. This Counsel was given him in the Winter, when an Ague interrupted this illustrious Youth's Studies. But as soon as he recovered Health, he fell upon the reading *Tully* with all Vigour, according to his Tutor's Advice, which he called, like a true Scholar, his *Command*. His younger Brother *Charles* was a Youth of the like Parts and Hopes. Both which being thus immaturely crompt off, the Honour fell. But the Marquis of *Dorset*, having married the Half Sister of these Noblemen, was in *October* invested with the Title of the Dukedom, and the Estate was divided among many Heirs. For *May 6. 1552.* a special Livery was granted by the Treasurer to Sir *Richard Candish*, Kt. Sir *William Sydney*, Kt. *Thomas Lovel*, Esq; *Christine Darnel*, Widow, *Walter Aiscough*, Esq; and *Elizabeth* his Wife, Coheirs of the late Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Lord *Charles Brandon*, to enter into their Purpartie of all the Lands of the said Duke and Lord.

As for the said Duke's great capital Messuage or Mansion in *Southwark*, the Office of keeping thereof, together with the Garden, Orchyrd and Park, was in *July* granted by the King to Sir *John Gates* for Life: With the Office of High Steward and Bailiff there, of all the Lands, Tenements and Liberties of the same: And also of the Office of Steward and Bailiff



Bailiff of *Paris* Garden, and the Liberties thereof: With the Fee of *ANNO* 30 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence *per Annum*.

His Brother *Charles* also, by the King's Favour, was Steward of the Lordship of *Sheriff-Hutton*, and Constable of the Castle of *Sheriff-Hutton* in *Yorkshire*. Which Office and Constableship were granted, upon his Decease, to Sir *William Pickering*, Kt. a worthy and honourable Gentleman, and employed much in Embassies, with all the Fees and Profits thereunto accustomably arising, together with the Herbage and Panage of the Park, thereunto belonging.

*July 10.* by reason of this new Sweat, the King removed from *Westminster* to *Hampton Court*. For there died certain beside the Court; which caused the King to be gone so soon. The Lord *Cromwel* in *Leicestershire* died, and the Lord *Powis*, Sir *John Luttrell*, Kt. a noble Captain, Sir *Thomas Speke*, Kt. who fell sick at the Court; Sir *John Wallop*, of the Order of the Garter, and Captain of the Castle of *Guisnes*, a Soldier of great Worth and Desert; and one Sir *Peryn Negroo*, Kt. besides the two young Dukes. All these died in *July*, within a few Days one of another. As in the next Month, within two Days, three considerable Heirs were carried off with the same Infection; viz. *August 20.* *Henry Williams*, Son and Heir of Sir *John Williams* after Lord *Williams* of *Thame*. *Aug. 22.* the Son and Heir of the Lord *Sands*; and Sir *Richard Lister*, Son and Heir of the Lord Chief Justice of that Name.

From the 8th of this Month of *July* unto the 19th, there died in *London* of this Sweat 872, and no more in all, as was certified in to the Lord Chancellor.

Another Judgment beside this Sicknes lay upon the Nation at this Time, and that was a Dearth; which continued along this Year, there being little Prospect of the Fall of Provisions: and Corn remained excessively dear after Harvest. Which was the Occasion (that I may bring it in here a little before its due Place) that a Commission in the Month of *December* was issued out to *John Lord Mordaunt*, Sir *John St. John*, Sir *Urian Bruerton*, Kts. *Nicolas Luke*, *Francis Pygot*, and *Lewis Dives*, Esqs; for the County of *Bedford*; and thirty two Commissions of the like Effect were also issued out to others, throughout the Nation: To enquire by all Ways and Means, how the enhancing of the Prices of Corn, Victuals, and other Things, contained in a Proclamation annexed to the said Commission, had grown, and daily grew, by the insatiable Greediness of divers covetous Persons in the several Counties: and to punish such as should disobey any thing contained in the same. For the Supply of the City of *London* with Corn for the Winter, the King obtained leave of the *French King* to transport 1200 Tun of Wheat out of his Country. So that this Scarcity sprang rather from the covetous Practices of many, in advancing the Prices of Things, and hoarding up the Fruits of the Earth, rather than from any Unseasonableness of Weather, or thin Crop in Harvest. And this the State was sensible of, as appeared by the Commissions abovementioned; and by this Order of Council that follows.

*July 18.* Letters were sent from the Council to all Bishops, to persuade the People to Prayer, and to see God better served. Which was upon the Apprehension of the Judgment of the Sweating Sicknes, then sorely afflicting the Nation, and the Dearth.

And

1551.

*Sheriff-Hutton* upon *Charles* L. *Brandon*'s Death, comes to Sir *Will. Pickering*.

Many other great Persons die of the Sweat.

A Dearth.

Commissions for Inquiry into it.

Orders to the Bishops for Prayer. *Counc. Book.*



ANNO  
1551.

And to  
preach a-  
gainst Co-  
vetousness.

And this Summer the King and his Council issued out Orders to all the Bishops, charging and commanding them in their own Persons, and that their Preachers and Ministers in their several Diocesses, by their Command, should preach against the Sin of Covetousness: Which now grew most insatiable among the People, insomuch that each went about to devour other: And that the Bishops and Preachers should for this Crime threaten Men with God's grievous Plagues, not only such temporal ones as then lay upon the Nation, but such as should be likewise inflicted in the World to come. Which Order of Council, I suppose, was procured by some good Men in the Court, such as the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Secretary *Cecyl*, or *Cheke* of the Privy Chamber; not only in respect of the monopolizing of Corn, but also upon the Contemplation of that tearing and rending from the Church, the Universities, the Hospitals of the Poor, and from one another; which some of the Courtiers and Great Men practised, together with their Inclosures; and by their Example spread over the whole Kingdom. So that all common Justice and Honesty was scarce any where to be found,

Thomas, Clerk  
of the Coun-  
cil, would  
draw a Pre-  
bend from  
the Church  
of *Paul's*.

But notwithstanding this Order from the Court, soon after was an unreasonable Piece of Covetousness shewn at the Court itself. For *William Thomas*, a Clerk of the Council, (who hath been mentioned before) greedily affecting a certain good Prebend of *S. Paul's Church*, and to get it settled upon himself and his Heirs, procured some of the King's Council to direct their Letters to *Ridley*, the Bishop, for that purpose. Which occasioned an earnest Address from that good Man to *Cheke*, *Gates*, *Wroth* and *Cecyl*, and some others, whom he took to be Men that feared God, to prevent it; (having designed this Prebend for *Grindal*, his own Chaplain) and exhorting earnestly with them, what a Discouragement this would be to the Preachers of God's Word, if their Rewards should be thus ravished from them.

Bishop *Scory's*  
Letter to the  
King con-  
cerning Ec-  
clesiastical  
Discipline.

To this I add, the mention of a Sermon preached the last *Lent* at Court, by a famed Preacher *Scory*, (after Bishop of *Rockester*) against two Evils, among others then very much felt. The one was, the want of Ecclesiastical Discipline, whereby great Wickednesses were committed without any Censures or Punishments: the other was, Covetousness; whereby the Poor was so much wronged by the Rich, by the means of Inclosures, and converting Tillage into Pasture. For the Redress of which Evils, with some other, he made then humble Suit to the King. And of these two, this Preacher, being in *August* made Bishop of *Rockester*, thought fit to remind the King again, in his Letter of Thanks for his Advancement.

The Sickness  
suddenly a-  
bates.

The Sweating Sickness, tho' so violent in *July*, yet the next Month it marvellously abated. Insomuch that in a Letter which the King wrote in his Progress, dated *August 22.* to *Fitz-Patrick*, he said, that the most part of *England*, at that Time was clear of any dangerous or infectious Sickness.

The French  
King en-  
stalled.

The King went *Aug. 24.* from *Hampton Court* to *Windsor*, where the French King was stalled of the Order of the Garter, with a great Banner of Armes embroidered with *Flower de Lices* of Gold bossed, and Mantle of Tissue, and the Helmet clean gilt, and so the Sword.

The King on *Michaelmas Day* wore the Robes of the Order of *S. Michael*, with Escalop Shells of *France*. And the same time was chosen of



the Order of the Garter, the Lord Chamberlain, Lord Darcy, who was enstalled Octob. 3. ensuing. Coming in the Place of Sir John Wallop, deceased.

ARRO  
1551.

The Month's Mind for the two Dukes of Suffolk, 14. celebrated, was kept Septemb. 22. So the more solemn Celebration of the Funerals of great Persons, about a Month more or less after their Interriments, used to be called. It was performed with two Standards, two Banners, great and large, ten Bannerols, with divers Coats of Armes: two Helinets, two Swords, two Targets crowned, two Coats of Armes, two Crests, and ten dozen of Escotcheons crowned: With Lamentation that so noble a Stock was extinct in them.

Lord Darcy  
of the Order.  
Month's  
Mind of the  
two Dukes  
of Suffolk.

In September the King granted these Annuities to several French Men, viz. Francis de Bignon, 37 Pounds 10 Shillings; Abraham Parady, John de Len, [Loen perhaps] Nic. du Menir, Galliot Taffat, 27 Pounds 7 Shillings 6 Pence each; and Colin le Cout, 18 Pounds 4 Shillings, to be paid from the 1st of January last. These seem to have been learned Ministers, fled from their own Country for the Persecution.

Annuities to  
some French.

Now began the Duke of Somerset's new Troubles. For Octob. 14. he and the Lord Gray were sent to the Tower. And the next Day were committed to the same Place, his Dutcheffs, and many more of his Friends and Servants, as Sir Rafe Vane, Sir John Tbyn; and also Sir Thomas Holcroft, Sir Michael Stanhope, Mr. Hammond, Mr. John Seimour, Mr. Walley, Mr. Nudigate, Mr. Banister, Mr. Brayne, Mr. Crane and his Wife, Sir Miles Partridge, Sir Thomas Arundel and Lady. The 21st of the same Month, the Lord Paget was carried to the Fleet by the Guard; and the 8th of November following, together with the Earl of Arundel, was sent to the Tower. Both whom were charged to have been privy to Somerset's Practices; and were fain afterwards to make their Submissions. And Novemb. 25. the Lord Dukes of the North was committed to the Tower, as it seems for the same Crime.

Somerset's  
new Trou-  
bles. This MS.  
varies from  
the King's  
Journal in  
a Day.

Next, the Duke of Northumberland (for so was Warwick newly created) and his Party, to make the pretended Treasons of Somerset and the rest appear the more formidable, on the 22d of October, with much Shew and Ceremony, were all the Crafts and Corporations of London commanded to repair to their Halls. And there it was shewed them, that the Duke of Somerset would have taken the Tower, seized on the Broad Seal, and have destroyed the City: And then to have gone to the Isle of Wight. After this Declaration, they were charged each Corporation to ward at every Gate in London, and to have a walking Watch thro' the City.

The City  
commanded  
to be upon  
Guard.

The Lord Chancellor Rieb not being able to attend upon Chancery Business, by reason of his Sickness, a Commission was dated Octob. 26. to John Beaumont, Esq; Sir William Portman, Sir James Hales, Sir Richard Rede, John Olyver, and William Cook, (the first whereof was Master of the Rolls, the three following Judges, and the two last Civilians) to hear and determine any manner of Matters before the King in his Chancery, between his Subjects now hanging, or hereafter to be exhibited: With Authority to award out all manner of Procefs that had been accustomed therefore. And to punish all manner of Contempts, and do all other Circumstances necessary for the same. And with a Commandment to all the Officers to attend upon five, four or three of them. And

A Commis-  
sion for dis-  
patching  
Chancery  
Matters.



ANNO 1551. all things done by them, to stand in like Force as if they were done by the Lord Chancellor himself.

### CHAP. V.

*The Marquis of Dorset advanced. Polydore Virgil. A Lasco. The Army mustered before the King. The Scots Queen entertained. Reports in Germany. Sir James Croft. Lord Admiral goes into France. Barnaby Fitz-Patrick. Guisnes to be surveyed.*

The Earl of  
Warwic suc-  
ceeds Dorset  
in the North.  
Cont. Book.

**B**UT to go on with the Transactions of the State this Year. *Octob. 14.* the Marquis of *Dorset* petitioned the King to be recalled from being Warden of the North, by reason of his Inability. For *Feb. 15.* it having been thought necessary, for weighty Considerations, to send a Man of Honour Northward, it was resolved to send the Marquis of *Dorset*, as Warden General of the North. The King yielded this Nobleman his Request, and appointed the Earl of *Warwic* to succeed him. And *Octob.* the Lord Chancellor had Commands to make out a Patent to that effect, with as much Preeminence and Authority as any of his Predecessors ever had, and full Fee, and Leave to constitute Deputy Wardens under him: and he was allowed an hundred light Horsemen. But it was not before *May 11. 1552.* that he was ordered to go into the North. That is, till he had overthrown the good Duke of *Somerset*, that was in his way, and had made himself the greatest Man in the Court, save the King, and had even him at his pleasure.

The Marquis  
of Dorset  
made Duke  
of Suffolk.

The Marquis of *Dorset*, as well for his good Service, as for that by way of Marriage he was like to have Claim to the Dukedom of *Suffolk*, was created to that Degree. Then was created also, *Warwic* Duke of *Northumberland*, *Wiltshire* Marquis of *Winchester*, and Sir *William Herbert* Lord *Cardiff*, and after Earl of *Pembroke*; and Secretary *Cecyl*, *Harry Nevil*, *Sidney*, and *Cheke*, made Knights.

Orders for  
the Univer-  
sities.

In this Month of *October* some Care was taken of each University. For *Octob. 2.* a Commission went forth to visit the University of *Oxon.* And the 12th, Mr. *Car* was ordered to succeed Mr. *Cheke*, in the Greek Lecture at *Cambridge*.

A Gift from  
the King to  
Polydore Vir-  
gil.

*Octob. 14.* and *Novemb. 1.* to *Polydore Virgil*, (who was now about returning to his own Country of *Italy*, having obtained a Passport last *March* for himself, and four Servants, and three Horses, and other Necessaries) 100 Marks were ordered, as a Gift from the King. *Nov. 9.* the two former Orders of the Council, of giving him 100 Marks, being made void, this Day it was ordered, that 300 Crowns, after the Rate of 5 Shillings a Crown, be given him as a Gift from the King. Which Gift



the Duke of *Northumberland* acquainted him with. And for it he applied himself to Secretary *Cecil*.

And *Novemb. 19.* to *Johannes a Lasco*, another learned Foreigner, were given 100 Crowns, (the Council Book saith 100 Pounds) as a Reward from the King.

But for a Farewel to *Polydore*, these few Words. He was an *Italian* by Birth, but had lived forty Years in *England*, and served both the *Henries*, the Seventh and the Eighth, and was preferred in this Church to the Archdeaconry of *Wells*, and to the Prebend of *Nonnington* in the Church of *Hereford*. And wrote the *English* History in 26 Books, and other Works. His Judgment was for Priests Marriage, and against worshipping Images; but in other respects an earnest Papist. This fourth Year of King *Edward*, he had petitioned for Leave to depart to his own Country; which was granted him. And an Order, by Patent, to that effect, dated *June 2.* whereby he was also indulged to enjoy the Profits both of his Archdeaconry and of his Prebend, during his Life. An Exemplification of which Patent, Mr. *A Wood* hath given in his *Fasti Oxonienses*. And besides this License, the King presented him also with the Gift above said. But for the Unfaithfulness of his History, especially of the antient *Britons*, he hath left a Stain upon his Name. And *Henry Lloyd*, a learned *Welshman*, in his Description of *Wales*, gives this Censure of him: 'Either he never saw nor read the antient Histories of this

ANNO  
1551.

And to John  
A Lasco.

The King's  
Licence to  
Polydore.

Vol. I. p. 638.

A Censure  
of him.

' Realm, or dissembled the same, to the Praise of himself, and the Honour of the *Romans*, as well Spiritual as Temporal, and to blaze forth their Acts and Deeds within this Realm: and on the other part, doth either openly slander, or privily extenuate, or shamefully deny the martial Prowess and noble Acts, as well of *Saxons*, *Danes* and *Normans*, as of *Britons*. That he never saw the antient Writers of the *British* History, as the *British* Chronicle, the History of *Gildas*, *Ponticus Verunnius*, *Mat. Paris*. And being a Stranger born, and ignorant in the Histories of this Realm, as of those Tongues and Languages wherein they were written, could never set forth the true and perfect Chronicle of the same. But having a good Grace, and a pleasant Stile in the *Latin* Tongue, and finding himself in a Country where every Man either lacked Knowledge, or Spirit to set forth the History of their own Country, took this Enterprize in hand, to their great Shame, and no less Dispraise.' And Sir *John Price* writ his *British* History on purpose against the envious Reports, and slanderous Taunts of the said *Polydore*.

Add, that the Lord *Coke* shews him to err in Time, Title, and Cause, where he is undertaking to relate the Original of the Court of Wards. 1. For the Time of the Beginning of this Court, *Polydore* makes it to be granted to King *Henry III.* Anno Dom. 1219. Whereas *Glanvil*, who wrote in the Reign of *Henry II.* treated of Wardships due to the King, and other Lords; and so also did *Ockham*, who lived in the said King's Reign. 2. *Polydore* makes this Wardship to come from the Grant of the Subject to the King: Whereas the Truth is, all Tenures by Knight's Service, which since the Conquest draweth Ward and Marriage, were either created or reserved by the King. And, 3. He utterly mistaketh the End of the Creation of these Tenures by Knight's Service; which were originally created for Defence of the Realm, by the King's own

*Polydore's* Errors about  
the Court  
of Wards.  
*Lib. 16. p. 288.*



ANNO 1551. Subjects: which is more safe, than to trust to Foreigners. Thus the Lord Coke.

The Army  
to be mustered  
before the  
King.

The King was minded now to see his standing Forces, Horse and Foot, muster before him; and the rather, that he might be in a Readiness, in case any Rising might happen, as was apprehended in the Month of *October*, by the discontented Duke of *Somerset*, and his Party. So there were ten Letters written in *October*, and directed to certain of the chief Officers of the Army, to have the *Gendarmery* and Bands of Horsemen which were appointed there, in a Readiness to be seen by his Majesty the *Sunday* following *Hallow-tide* next, being the 8th of *November*. And a like Letter was dispatched to the Marquis of *Northampton*, [Captain of the Band of Pensioners] to have the Band, appointed him, in a Readiness the same Day; with all the Pensioners, and Men of Arms, attending on the Court.

Horses sent  
to the French  
King.

In this Month of *October*, the King sent to the *French* King, now as it seemed, in good Amity together, sixteen fine Horses, by Sir *Jaques Granado*: Who had a Passport for that purpose, to carry them over, and all other Necessaries for himself and the said Horses.

The Scots  
Queen at  
Court.

In the beginning of the Month of *November*, the Queen Dowager of *Scotland* was at the *English* Court: Where she was entertained by the King and the Court with all possible Respect, according to her high Quality. The King afforded her much of his Communication. Whereof, when she came home, she gave this Testimony, That *she found more Wisdom and solid Judgment, in young King Edward, than she would have looked for in any three Princes that were then in Europe*. The King at this her being at his Court, gave her a Ring with a fair Table Diamond.

Orders and  
Letters for  
this Queen's  
Reception.

The Relation of this Queen's passing through *England* from *France*, is thus set down in the Council Book. *Octob. 25.* a Letter was sent by the Council to the Lady *Mary* and Lady *Elizabeth*, to signify the Arrival of the Queen of *Scotland* at *Portsmouth*, and her coming to the King's Presence, and her Passage through the Realm. Also the like Letters were sent to divers Noblemen and Ladies, to attend upon the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, and the Lady Marchioness his Wife, for the receiving of the Queen Dowager at *Hampton Court*. *Octob. 27.* Letters also were sent to Mr. *Cotton*, Mr. *Wingfield*, and other Gentlemen, appointed to receive and attend upon her; and to signify to the Council, what they have done in receiving of her, and when she intended to be there. Another Letter was sent to Sir *Percival Hart*, to prepare himself to come up to *Whitehall*, with his Wife, to accompany her into the North Parts. *Octob. 28.* Letters were sent to the Sheriffs, and other Gentlemen of the Shires, near the Parts where she should pass, to receive and conduct her through their Limits, in such wise as might seem best for his Majesty's Honour, and their own Estimation; and to give order for the quiet Behaviour of the King's Subjects towards her, and her Train. *Nov. 1.* a Commission was given to Mr. *Dudley* and *Richard Shelly*, to take up Horses and Carriages, and all other Necessaries for her Journey home-wards, and for her Usage and Entertainment by the way. *Nov. 2.* the Duchess Dowager of *Suffolk* was commanded to lodge her at her House at *Stamford*; Mr. *Chester* to lodge her at his at *Roxton*. Sir *Rafe Sadler* was ordered to entertain her, and see her well accompanied, and her

Train



Train well used, for their reasonable Money, at her passing through *Hertfordshire*. *Nov. 16.* the Lord *Ogle* was ordered, as the *Scottish* Queen passed by the Borders into *Scotland*, to complain of the want of Justice, that had happened through the Default of her Ministers, and of a heavy Murder committed.

ANNO  
1551.

From one of the Manuscripts in the *Cotton Library*, (which formerly seems to have been a Journal of one who belonged to the Herald's Office) I take this Account of the Manner of this Queen's Reception at *London*, and at Court. *Novemb. 2.* the Queen of *Scots* came to *London* from *Hampton Court*, and landed at *Bernard's Castle*, and came riding to the Bishop's Palace, with many Lords, the Duke of *Suffolk*, Marquis of *Northampton*, Lord *Warwic*, Lord *Willoughby*, Lord *Haward*, Lord *Russel*, Lord *Bray*, and divers more Lords, Knights and Gentlemen. Then came the Queen, and all hers and our Ladies and Gentlewomen, to the number of an hundred. Many great Gifts were sent her by the Maier and Aldermen, and others, as Beeves, Muttons, Veals, Swines, Wild Fowl, Bread, Wine, Beer, Spices, Quails, Sturgeon, Salmon, Wood and Coals. *Nov. 4.* the Queen rode unto the Court, attended with a great Train of Noblemen, Gentlemen and Ladies. At the Court Gate stood all the Guards in their best Coats. There the Earl of *Pembroke* saluted her, and brought her to the Hall-Door: And there the Duke of *Northumberland* met her, and brought her into the Hall. Where the King's Grace meeting her, saluted her, and embracing and kissing her, took her by the Hand and led her up into the Chamber of Presence: Where was a Banquet. And when all was done, she took her Horse, and was conducted unto the Bishop's Palace to Supper: And there she lay till the sixth Day. At which Time she rode through *London* unto *Bishop's Gate*, accompanied with the Duke of *Northumberland*, and an hundred great Horse with him, the Men arrayed in Coats of Velvet embroidered, Hats of Velvet, and white Feathers, and Chains of Gold; together with the Earl of *Pembroke*, with an hundred great Horses, mounted with Gentlemen in Coats garded with Velvet, wearing Chains, Hats and white Feathers; and every Man with a new Javelin in their Hands, and a Badge: Then came the Lord Treasurer, with an hundred great Horses, and the Riders in Coats of Maile, with Badges, viz. the Falcon of Gold, and Javelins; with great numbers besides of Lords, Knights, Gentlemen and Ladies. There the Queen was presented at the Gate by the Chamberlain of *London* with 100 Marks out of the Chamber, and so went forward on her Journey.

Her Reception.  
*Vitellius*, F. 5.

In the begining also of the Month aforesaid, a great Rumour ran, and spread as far as foreign Countries, that some of the chief Nobility about the King had plotted to lay violent Hands on him. From *Antwerp* the Report fled to *Strasburg*. And the Elector *Palatine* had it soon brought to his Court: Who sent to *Strasburg* to *Christopher Mount*, an Agent for *England* there, to know of him the Truth of it. *Mount* did what he could to satisfy every one, that it could be nothing but an idle Fame. The Occasion, doubtless, was the Apprehension of the Duke of *Somerset*, whom his Enemies resolving to remove, had raised a Noise of his Intention of seizing the King's Person, and making an Insurrection. And that Noise easily improved into a Report of killing the King. Which also it is not improbable, the Conspirators against the Duke might studiously

Report in  
*Germany*, of  
killing the  
King.



ANNO  
1551.

ously give out, to render him the more odious, and to abate that Love the People generally had for him. But *Mount* hereupon writ an earnest Letter, *Nov. 12.* to both the Secretaries, informing them of this Report, and intreating them to give him the Truth of the Matter, that he might the better satisfy others, and all good Men: Concluding, there could be no such Monsters in the World, to lay their Hands upon a Prince of so great Accomplishments of Body and Mind. His Letter being short, I will here set down.

*Mount's Letter from Strasburg to the Secretaries. MSS. penes me.*

Quinta decima præteriti mensis novissimas hinc ad vos dedi Literas, magnifici Domini Secretarii, quæ medio mihi tempore constare potuerunt, modò scribo. Ex *Antwerpia* ad nos scribitur, magnam esse in *Anglia* Commotionem. Nempe, quosdam inter Primos habitos viros vitæ Sereniss. Regis infidiatos esse. Ego hanc Causam ut vanam arbitror. Neminem enim tam iminani & belluina natura esse suspicari possum, ut qui hoc jubar exoriens, tantisque virtutibus, animique & corporis rarissimis dotibus illustre & amabile, delere & opprimere in animum inducere possit. Itaque suppliciter vestras Magnif. oro & obsecro, ut nos ex præsentis sollicitudine eripere maturetis. Quotidie enim ab optimis quibusque viris interrogor, an *Anglia* talia Monstra aboriri poterit. Optimè valeatis, *Argentina, 12 Novemb. Anno 1551.*  
Palatinus Elector proprium apud me nuntium habuit, ut hujus rumoris causam disceret. Optimi quique viri solliciti sunt de Sereniss. Regis Salute & Regni Tranquillitate.

To the Right Honourable Sir *William Petre*,  
or Sir *William Cecil*, Knights, Principal Secretaries to the King's Majesty.

A Proclamation about ceasing the Prices of Cattel.

A Proclamation was set forth in this Month of *November*, declaring, that the King's Pleasure was, that the Proclamation set forth for the ceasing the Prices of Cattel, and other Victuals, and all Pains, Forfeitures, &c. therein contained, should from thenceforth cease, and be put no farther in execution: [Some Inconvenience, it seems, being found in this stinting the Prices of Food.] The Proclamation for assenting the Prices of Cattel and Provision, to which this seems to refer, came out 1549; and may be read in the foregoing History.

Sir *Jas. Croft* gratified.

For the good Service that Sir *James Croft* had done in *Ireland*, who was sent over thither the latter end of the last Year, now in *November* a Letter was sent to him from the King and Council, that the King had given him 1000 Pounds; and had received him into his Service in the Privy Chamber; and that he should have in Wages of his Household Servants forty able Horsemen, at 12 Pence *per Diem*, and sixty Footmen, at 6 Pence *per Diem*.

The Parliament prorogued.

The Parliament that should have met *Novemb. 4.* whether the Cause were, the Remainder of the Sweating Sickness, or something else, was put off till a further Time. Wherefore the King wrote Letters in *September* to the Lord Chancellor, commanding him to take order for a Prorogation until the First of *Hilary* Term; and to learn how many Rooms were void, by the Death of divers Knights of the Shire, and Burgeses, and to signify the same to his Majesty. And that able Men might furnish



furnish the House, the Council, *Octob. 28.* made an Order, that not young Persons, but grave and elderly, should be chosen for the Parliament. **ANNO 1551.**

The *French* King now had a third Son born, intituled *Duc D'Engoulesme*. For him *Jarnac*, the *French* Ambassador, desired the King from his Master, to stand Godfather. To which the King gave this Answer: That he was glad of the News, and thanked the King his Master, that he should be Godfather to his Son, being a Token of the Good Will he bore him. And that he would dispatch, for the Accomplishment thereof, the Lord *Clinton*, Lord Admiral.

The *French* King has a third Son.

The Lord *Clinton*, in this said Month of *November*, was dispatched Ambassador into *France*; Sir *William Pickering* being Ambassador Leiger there before, and so continuing. One Point of his Embassy was, to christen the *French* King's Son, in the King's Name. For which that Lord had a particular Commission from the King, under Seal. And there was a Letter of Order writ, to deliver him 500 Marks in *French* Crowns, at Six Shillings the Piece, towards his Charges in the Voyage. What the Expences were, when he stood Proxy for the King at this Royal Infant's Baptism, may be seen by this Warrant following: 'A Warrant dated in *January*, to the Lord Treasurer, for the Payment of 292 *French* Crowns to the Lord Admiral; which he gave in Reward to the Governor, the Nurses, and other Ministers about the King's youngest Son, lately christened by him in the King's Name, naming him *Edward Alexander*.' At this Ceremony, the Lord *Clinton* presented the Queen with two Gold Flagons with Chains, weighing 165 Ounces, from the King. And for this Office that Nobleman was gratified by his Master, when he came home, with two good Lordships, one in *Torkshire*, and another in *Somersetshire*.

The L. Clinton goes Ambassador to France, to christen the French King's Child: And

But there was another great Point wherein the present Embassy of this Lord consisted, namely, to transact the Matter of the Match between King *Edward* and the *French* King's Daughter. For which there was a Commission to him, and to Sir *William Pickering*, jointly and severally, to hear all manner Matters with the *French* King, concerning the Marriage between the King's Majesty, and the Lady *Elizabeth*, the *French* King's Daughter, and the Confirmation thereof according to their Instructions, which they must receive. The Instructions delivered them consisted in three Articles.

To transact the Match.

In the Lord *Clinton*'s Company went by Order Sir *W. Stafford*, Sir *Adrian Poynings*, Sir *John Norton*, Sir *John Terry*, Sir *Richard Corbet*, Mr. *Brook*, Mr. *Nevyl*, and among the rest, *Barnaby Fitz-Patric*, a young *Irish* Gentleman, and one of the chief Gentlemen of the King's Privy Chamber, and much favoured by the King, having been bred up with him from a Child. Him the King, taking this Opportunity, sent into the *French* King's Court, furnished him with Instructions under his own Hand, for his Behaviour there, which are preserved in *Fuller's History*; appointed him four Servants, gave him 300 *French* Crowns in his Purse, and a Letter to the *French* King in his Favour, declaring, That the King had sent him thither to remain in his Court, to learn Fashions, for the better serving him at his Return. He was instructed to converse with Sir *William Pickering*, the *English* Ambassador, as much

*Barnaby Fitz-Patric* sent into France for breeding.



**ANNO** as he could. And when he was there, the King held a Correspondence  
**1551.** by Letters with him.

Letters of  
Thanks to  
the French  
King.

Letters were sent this same *November* to the said *Pickering*, that it was the King's Pleasure, that at his next going to the *French* Court, he would pray the King to permit his Majesty to have a thousand Tun of Wheat, which the Citizens of *London* desired to buy of him; for the Dearth was great in the City. This was readily complied with by the *French* King; and more than the King's Request, that is, 1200 Tun, was permitted to be transported. The said King likewise paid Civilities to *Fitz-Patric*, taking him into his Court. This caused King *Edward* in *December* to write a Letter of Thanks to him, both for his liberal Grant of 1200 Tun of Wheat to be bought in *France*, for the Relief of the City of *London*, and for his gentle receiving of *Barnaby Fitz-Patric* into his Service, and placing of him in his Privy Chamber. In *February* following, I find, Orders were given to pay *Barnaby Fitz-Patric* his Annuity of 150 Pounds.

*Guifnes* to be  
surveyed.

A Letter in this above-named Month of *December*, was sent to the Lord *Clinton*, to repair, immediately at his Return from the *French* King, to the Castle of *Guifnes*; and there calling to him the Captain of the same, to view and consider the same Castle, the Town, the Buildings, and the Fortifications, and the Wants, Decays, or Needs there. And thereupon to weigh, what Buildings and Fortifications were already begun, and of what Importance: and whether they needed to be altered, or what else might be better devised: And that he should set Order with the Surveyors there, for the going in hand with the same. This Order was sent, I suppose, upon Information of some Defects of that Town and Castle. And now the Lord *Clinton* being in *France*, it was thought fit to take that Opportunity to send this great and expert Captain to view the Strength and Weakness of that Piece, and to give his Orders for the Security thereof; the *English* Court having always a jealous Eye upon the *French*, lest they might, some time or other, take their Advantage against those Places in *France* belonging to the *English*.

A Commissi-  
on for *Guifnes*  
and *Calais*.

There was also, in the same Month of *December*, a Commission given forth to Sir *Richard Cotton* and Sir *Richard Bray*, Kts. to repair with certain Instructions to the said Castle and County of *Guifnes*, as also to the Town of *Calais*, and to certain other Pieces on that Side of the Seas. And there shewing their Commission, to hear their Opinions and Advice, as well of the Counsellors in each of the said Pieces, as of other Officers there, concerning the Works, Buildings, and Fortifications of the said Pieces. Such was the Circumspection of the King and his Council, over their Confines upon *France*, notwithstanding this present appearing Friendship with that King.

The Lord  
Admiral  
comes home.  
*Cont. Book.*

The Lord Admiral returned from his Embassy, and these other Charges committed to him, *Decemb. 30.* and then delivered to the Lords the Ratifications of the Marriage between the King's Majesty and the Lady *Elizabeth*, the *French* King's Daughter, under the Great Seal of *France*. And it was resolved, that the same Treaty should be delivered to the Lord Treasurer, to be by him reposed in the Treasury of the *Exchequer*, to remain there of Record in safe keeping.



ANNO  
1551.

## C H A P. VI.

*The English jealous of the Emperor. The Bishop of Ely bath the Great Seal: Delivered up by the Lord Rich. His Rise, and Wealth. Some Account of the Bishop of Ely. Richard Turner, B. D. A Mint at York. Merchants of the Stilyard.*

**I**T was hardly practicable for the King to keep all fair at once with *France*, and the Emperor: But as the King's Friendship seemed to become cordial with one Prince, the other grew into Jealousy, as tho' the Friendship diminished towards him. And this was the Case at this Time with the Emperor, after these mutual Respects with *France* before-mentioned. And the good Understanding with the Emperor began to be much doubted; especially now in *December*, upon account of a Fleet that was setting forth immediately, by the Emperor's Order. *Monf. De Bever*, a Sea Officer, was newly come to the Emperor, and after six or eight Days, was dispatched towards *Zealand*, to rig out, as the Speech went, a great number of Ships, at this unseasonable Time of the Year; some reported sixty Sail, others, thirty: and that he was to go with the same for *Spain* in all haste; or, according to others, after *Christmas*. *Skipperius*, the Emperor's Admiral, lay then also in *Zealand* about Maritime Affairs. Of this, *Sir Thomas Chamberlain*, the King's ordinary Ambassador, wrote to the Lords of the Council, in much Doubt about it. For he could not tell what to make of that Bruit, that Ships should be sent to *Spain*; considering, the Emperor had as good Ships in *Biscay*, and enow, and meeter Ships for the Wars, than those in that Country. Which made him remember the Year 1536, or 1537, when the Emperor, being then in *Spain*, a number of Hulks were bruited to be sent out of *Flanders* thither, and after were discovered to have sought landing in *England*, as he heard then say; praying God they did not mean to attempt again. And to encourage some such Purpose of Invasion, Reports were thrown up and down in the *Low Countries*, of the weak Condition of *England* at this Time. And so did the Ambassador inform the Lords: 'These People, (as the Tenour of his Letter ran) do verily think Things to be worse in the Realm than, I trust, they shall find to be. God forgive them that cause our poor Country to be slandered and talked of, as presently it is.

The Emperor prepares a Fleet in Winter.

England jealous thereof.

But it was certain, whether upon these Movings of the Emperor, or for some other Cause, that the King also was making Preparation for the Seas. Infomuch, that the President of the Lady Regent's Council asked *Chamberlain* the Reason of it. To whom he replied, that he had not heard thereof. But if any such were, he supposed it was to keep the narrow Seas from Rovers. For, he said, these Wars were not to be look'd for to be other than before had been seen: that when the Emperor having

England fits out to Sea.



ANNO  
1551.

A great  
Muster.  
*Vitellius, F. 5.*

War with *France*, and we neuter, the poor Merchants were robbed on each Side. And for any other Purpose, he could not guess. Thus might one see they were in Jealousy of *England*. But to look at home.

The King was bred up to Armes, as well as Learning. For the Royal Youth was warlike and active, and loved to exercise himself in Feats of Armes. *Decemb. 7.* (the King's Journal makes it the 4th) in *Hide Park* was a great Muster in his Presence, after this manner: First came the King's Trumpeters; and then the Lord *Bray*, in gilt Harness, Captain of the Pensioners, and a great Banner of the King's Armes. Then all the Pensioners, in compleat Harness, and great Array, in White and Black, Five and Five in a Rank. And after them came their Servants, in number an hundred, with great Horses and Harness, in White and Black, and Spears. The second Company was led by the Lord Treasurer, being an hundred Men of Armes, with broidered Coats, Red and White, with Spears: His Standard a Faulcon of Gold. The third Company belonged to the Duke of *Northumberland*, being an hundred Men of Armes, in Velvet Embroidery, with Trumpeters: His Standard a Lion crowned Gold, and ragged Staff. The fourth Captain was the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, with an hundred Men of Armes, in Yellow and Black: Spears, Pensils, and Trumpeters: His Standard the Maidenhead. The fifth was the Earl of *Bedford*, with an hundred Men of Armes, in Red and White: His Standard a Goat White. A Trumpeter, Pensils and Spears. The sixth the Earl of *Rutland*, with an hundred Men of Armes, in Yellow and Blue: His Standard a Peacock, and Pensils. The seventh the Earl of *Huntingdon*, with fifty Men of Armes, in Blue: Spears, Standard and Pensils: His Standard a Maunch. The eighth the Earl of *Pembroke*, with an hundred Men of Armes: His Standard the Green Dragon. The ninth the Lord *Cobham*, with fifty Men of Armes, in Black and White: His Standard the *Saracen's* Head. The tenth the Lord Chamberlain, with fifty Men of Armes, Coats of White and Red, and Spears: their Coats in Broidery, Pensils: His Standard the Maiden's Body. The eleventh Mr. Treasurer *Cheny*, with an hundred Men of Armes; all Black: Spears and Pensils; besides Costerels: His Standard the Rose in the Sun. There is some Variety in the numbers of the Men, as set down in King *Edward's* Journal. The Horses were all fair and great. They marched twice about *S. James's*, and so went away.

The Great  
Seal fetched  
from the  
Lord Rich.  
Chanc. Good-  
rick's Ledger  
Book, Jul.  
B. 9.

On *Monday, Decemb. 21. Anno Regni Reg. Edwardi VI. quinto*, Letters were brought from the King, and delivered to the Lord Rich, by *William* Marquis of *Winchester*, Lord Treasurer, *John* Duke of *Northumberland*, President of the Council, and *Thomas* Lord *Darcy*, Lord Chamberlain of the Household, at his House in *Great S. Bartholomew's*. (Sir *John Hayward*, Writer of the Reign of this King *Edward*, adds the Earl of *Pembroke*, falsely, and leaves out the Marquis and the Lord *Darcy*, defectively.) And being in an inner Chamber there, between the Hours of Eight and Nine in the Morning, he delivered them the Great Seal. About Ten of the Clock, the same Lords offered and presented it to the King, in the New Palace of *Westminster*, in his Chamber there, in the Presence of divers Nobles, and others. The King kept the Seal with him till the next Day, viz. *Tuesday, Decemb. 22.* On which Day, about Ten a Clock, the King committed and delivered it to the Reverend Father in Christ, Lord *Thomas* Bishop of *Ely*, *durante Beneplacito*, to keep, exercise

Delivered  
to the Bishop  
of *Ely*.



exercise, and use it. And then ordained and appointed the said Bishop Keeper of the Great Seal: Present the aforesaid Marquis of Winchester, Duke of Northumberland, Lord Darcy, William Peter, and William Cecyl, Kts. Principal Secretaries to the King, Robert Bowes, Philip Hoby, John Mason, Kts. Thomas Powl, Comptroller of the Hanaper, Thomas Cotton, Deputy of John Hales, Clerk of the said Hanaper, Anthony Skynner, one of the Examiners of the Court of Chancery, Edmund Walker, and Edmund Day, and others. The same Day a Warrant came to the Chancellor of the Augmentations, to pay him for the Wages, Diet, and Livery of himself, and the Ministers of the Chancery, in as large manner as the Lord Rich, or any other had, serving in that Place.

ANNO  
1551.

The King's Journal tells us, that the Seal was sent for from the Lord Rich, considering his Sickness; and that it was delivered to the Bishop of Ely, during his Sickness, as tho' it were designed to be restored him again. And to this agrees, that he was only made Keeper of it during Pleasure. But Jan. 19. the Lord Rich's Indisposition continuing, and therefore he probably desiring to be eased of the Office, the Bishop was made Lord Chancellor. And that because, as *Custos Sigilli*, he could execute nothing in the Parliament that should be done, but only to seal ordinary things, as the King writes. And a Warrant was sent to the Bishop of Ely, to make out a Commission to the Lord Treasurer, to take the said Lord Chancellor's Oath.

Made Lord  
Chancellor.

King's Journ.

*Hayward* imposeth his own Fancy upon his Reader, rather than the Truth, when he frameth the Motive that prevailed with the Lord Rich to lay down his Place. Which he thus setteth down: 'That he having built a fair Estate, and perceiving what nimble Ears were born to listen after Treason; also for that a Parliament was towards, and doubtful what Questions might arise; made Suit to the King, that in regard of the Infirmities of his Body, he might be discharged of his Office.' If the Historian had spoke this as his Conjecture; it might have passed better: But to tell us what was in that Lord's Mind, and to report it the true Cause of his abandoning his Chancellorship, when he openly alledged another Cause to the King; this is scarce allowable. For, surely, that which the said Lord asserted, namely, his Infirmary, was at least one true Cause that inclined him to relinquish it, being not able to attend the Business it required. For he was certainly, the Year before, visited with a sore Sickness, at *Leez* in *Essex*, with forty more of his Family, as appears by the King's Journal. Which, I doubt not, was some infectious Disease; the Relicks whereof might hang upon him a great while after. And 'tis certain, in *October* the Master of the Rolls, and three Judges, and two Civilians, were appointed Commissioners to dispatch the Matters of the Chancery, the Chancellor being indisposed. But if any worldly respects made him incline to quit his Place, one might be, that he did not like the Proceedings in Religion, being himself a Favourer of the old Superstition; and another, his Friendship to the Duke of *Somerset*, now under a Cloud, with whom he saw he must fall; and therefore thought best to resign voluntarily, rather than to be forced so to do. It appeared also, that the said Chancellor was declining at Court some Months before, by the Anger the King and Council had expressed against him; and that for a Matter indeed, which deserved Commendation rather, seeming to shew his Care and Circumspection, how he

Why the  
Lord Rich  
laid down  
his Place.

King's Journ.  
p. 19.



**ANNO** set the Great Seal to any thing. For his Rule was, not presently upon  
**1551.** a few Privy Counsellors hands, to seal any important Matter with the  
 Great Seal. It happened in the Month of *September, 1551.* a Letter  
 came to him, signed with the Hands of eight Counsellors, to pass some-  
 what under the Great Seal. But he delayed to do it, and sent the same  
 Letter back again, inclosed in one of his, to the Earl of *Warwic*, requir-  
 ing more Hands. At this, great Offence was taken with the Chancel-  
 lor, and a Letter was dispatched to him from the King, declaring his  
 Mislike of this his Doing. The Earl of *Warwic*, I suppose, was con-  
 cerned in this, and the Broad Seal was to be set to somewhat of his pro-  
 curing for himself, or his Friends. And to have this Stop put to it by  
 the Chancellor, created some Impatience in him; and he might re-  
 sent it.

His Wealth  
 procured un-  
 der King *Ed-*  
*ward.*

Yet *Hayward* saith true in this, that *he had built a fair Estate.* A  
 great Part of which he had obtained under this King, either by Gift, or  
 by Purchase. Which, as I find them set down particularly in the King's  
 Book of *Sales*, and partly in the Warrant Book, were thus. *An. Reg.*  
*Edw. 1<sup>o</sup>.* for fulfilling King *Henry VIII.* his Purpose, and in considera-  
 tion of Service, the King gave him, by Patent dated *June 1.* the Manor  
 of *Hatfeld Broadoak* in *Essex*, and divers other Lands and Tenements in  
 the said County, yearly Value 80 Pounds 9 Shillings 8 Pence. And  
 13 Pounds 6 Shillings 4 Pence reserved.

*Item, Anno Reg. 3.* For 240 Pounds, and in consideration of divers  
 Spiritual Promotions, [which he had formerly got, but now parted with]  
 the King by Patent dated *Febru. 12.* gave him the Manor of *Wansled*,  
 with its Rights, Members, and Appurtenances, in *Essex*, and the Park  
 there, and divers other Lands and Tenements, Parcel of the said Ma-  
 nor: yearly Value 12 Pounds.

*Item, Anno Reg. 4.* He obtained of the King in Fee simple all the  
 House and Scite of the late Priory of *Pretewel*, alias *Pritelwel*, in the  
 County of *Essex*, with divers other Lands, Tenements, &c. to the  
 yearly Value of 45 Pounds 4 Shillings. To be holden *in Capite*, by the  
 tenth Part of a Knight's Fee. Paying yearly for the same, 4 Pounds  
 11 Shillings. And to take the Profits from *Michaelmas* last. Dated in  
*March.*

*Item, Anno Reg. 4.* Of the King's special Grace, and in consideration  
 of Service, he granted him, by Patent dated *April 16.* the Manor and  
 Lordship of *Brinktree*, with its Appurtenances, in *Essex*; and the Ad-  
 vowson of the Vicarage and Parochial Church of *Coggeshal* in *Essex*,  
 Parcel of the late Possessions of the Bishop of *London*: yearly Value  
 39 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence.

*Item, A Gift to the Lord Rich, Anno Reg. 5. Septemb.* (in confi-  
 deration of his faithful Service, and for 500 Pounds) of the Lordship of  
*East Woodbury* in *Essex*, with divers other Lands, &c. to the yearly  
 Value of 67 Pounds 19 Shillings 2 Pence.

*Item, Anno Reg. 7. June 24.* A Purchase was made by the same Lord  
*Rich*, of the Honour of *Raleigh* in *Essex*, with the Hundred of *Rock-*  
*ford*, and *Rockford* in the same County. Value yearly of 113 Pounds  
 13 Shillings 4 Pence.

This



This Lord (to mention a Passage or two concerning him, while we have him before us) was among those that were produced Witnesses on Bishop *Gardiner's* behalf, Anno 1550. when he declined the taking an Oath, and being sworn in common Form; saying, 'That honourable Personages, being of Dignity and Office, as he was, were by the Laws of the Realm priviledged not to be sworn in common Forms.'

ANNO

1551.

His Saying concerning swearing Persons of Honour. Fox, 1st Edit. p. 792.

His Son and Heir was *Richard Lord Rich*, born about the Beginning of King *Edward's* Reign. Who in his younger Years travelled to *Rome*, and was there in the Year 1570. For a Testimony whereof, as tho' it were a matter of religious Merit, he procured formal Letters Testimonial from *James*, Cardinal of *S. Mary in Cosmedin*, the Pope's Vicar General, with his Seal appendent. In which Instrument, the said Lord is exactly described, \* 'To be of the County of *Essex*, and Diocese of *London*; to be aged about Two and twenty, of middle Stature, without a Beard, having Scars upon the Joints of two of his Fingers of the Left Hand, and another in the middle of the Palm of his Right. That he was present in Person in the Office of the Notary of the Court; and that *George Nevel* and *Walter Hinton* did there see, know and speak with him.' Such narrow Notice, it seems, was taken of the *English* Gentlemen that came to *Rome*. But this Testimonial was seized, and came into the Hands of the Secretary of State, and laid him under a Cloud in the *English* Court. But begging Pardon for this Digression concerning the Lord *Rich*, I proceed to inquire into the Qualities and Abilities of Bishop *Goodrick*, that succeeded him.

*Hayward* hath represented the Parts of this Bishop, and his Merit of so high a Dignity, to be very slender. A Man, saith he, if happily able to discharge this Place, assuredly no more. But it is agreeable to his ordinary Practice, to make very ill Representations of the Clergy, especially such as favoured the Gospel. The Bishop of *Salum*, in his History gives a Character of this Chancellor, quite contrary to that of *Hayward*; namely, 'That he was a busy Secular-spirited Man, and gave himself up wholly to Faction, and Intrigues of State: And that tho' his Opinions always leaned to the Reformation, it was no Wonder, if a Man so tempered would prefer the keeping of his Bishopric [in Queen *Mary's* Days] to the Discharge of his Conscience.' A hard Farewel of a Man of eminent Figure, a long Time, in the State. I do acknowledge it his great Failing, that he complied with the Religion professed under that Queen, if he did so. And he seems likewise to have been of the Faction against the Duke of *Somerset*. For at *Ely* House they met. Which House he had let out, or lent to the Duke of *Northumberland*, as I conjecture. For he lived not there himself, but in *Warwic-lane*.

Some Account of Chancellor Goodrick.

Abating this, according to the Collections we can pick up concerning this Reverend Man, he is misrepresented, and his Memory wronged to Posterity. In King *Henry's* Days, he sided with those that laboured a Reformation of corrupt Religion. Insomuch that *John Bale* joined him with several Kings, Archbishops and Bishops, as Archbishop *Cranmer*, Archbishop *Herman* [of *Colen*] Bishop *Barlow*, Bishop *Bird*, Bishop *Thurlby*, Bishop *Latymer*; whom he took to be prophesied of *Rev. 17.* to

Image of bad Churchmen.

Hate

2

\* *Mediocris Statura, imberbom, habentem cicatrices super juncturis duorum digitorum manus sinistræ, necnon aliam, &c.*



ANNO  
1551.

*Hate the Whore*, tho' they were before the Horns of the Beast. Under King *Edward* he was one of the learned Bishops appointed to purge the Public Service from the old Superstitions, and to frame the Book of *Common Prayer*. He was in many weighty Commissions in this Reign. I find *A Lasco* once applying to him in behalf of his Church of Strangers; to whom he was very kind, and assistant. He used learned Reasons with Bishop *Day*, and argued with him before the Council, for taking away Popish Altars. And for his Abilities in Matters of State, he was long nurtured up therein, by being employed both by King *Henry* and King *Edward*. In the great Embassy to *France* in *May*, 1551. he was one of the Ambassadors, with Sir *Philip Hoby*, and others; and the Bishop was the Mouth of the rest, and made the Speech to the *French King*. To which the Cardinal of *Lorraine* made Answer. Archbishop *Parker*, who knew him well, praised him for his impartial Administration of Justice. And in his Epitaph, extant in *Godwin's Catalogue*, it appears he was not only employed by, but acceptable to, the two Kings in many Actions both concerning the Church and Commonwealth, and was often employed Abroad in Embassies to foreign Princes, and at Home a Privy Counsellor. And his Wisdom, Integrity, and Abstinence, is there commended. Under King *Henry* he had two great Men belonging to him, viz. *Thomas Smith*, LL. D. (after Knighted, and made Secretary of State) was his Chancellor; and *Richard Cox*, D. D. his Chaplain, whom he preferred to King *Henry*, to be Tutor to Prince *Edward*. What Preferments befel him afterwards, under King *Edward*, and Queen *Elizabeth*, are sufficiently known.

*Petrus Valen-*  
*tius Almoner*  
*to Godrick.*

To whom I will add, for a third, *Petrus Valentius*, an honest learned *French* Protestant, Chaplain to this Bishop, and whom he made his Almoner in *Ely*, where he continued for above twenty Years. An Instance of whose Integrity follows: While *William Wolfey* of *Well* in *Cambridgeshire*, and *Robert Pygot*, lay Prisoners in *Ely* Goal, (afterwards burnt in that Town) among others that came to see them, came this *Valentius*: Who calling them kindly by the Stile of *Brethren*, said, 'That according to his Office, he was come to talk with them; for that he had been Almoner there twenty Years, and above. He desired them to take his coming in good Part. And he promised them, that he would not endeavour to pull them from their Faith; but he both required and desired them, in the Name of Jesus Christ, to stand to the Truth of the Gospel, and God's Word: Beseeching God Almighty, for his Son Jesus Christ's sake, to preserve both him and them in the same unto the End. For, as he added, calling them *Brethren* again, that he knew not himself, how soon he should be at the same Point with them.' These, and such like Words, he used: Which coming so devoutly from him, caused all to water their Cheeks; because it was contrary to the Expectation they had of him.

A Patent to  
Turner for a  
Prebend of  
Windsor.

The first use the new Keeper made of his Seal committed to him, was for the Preferment of a learned and painful Preacher of the Gospel, who had divers Years, under King *Henry*, suffered much for his holy Profession, and good Zeal in preaching against Papal Corruptions, in *Kent*; well known to Archbishop *Cranmer*, who nominated him to Secretary *Cecyl* for Archbishop of *Armagh*, and gave this Character of him, *Nihil appetit, nihil ardet, nihil somniat, nisi Jesum Christum*. The Man I am speaking



speaking of, was *Richard Turner*, B. D. Whose Patent was sealed December the 24th, (two Days after the Bishop had the Great Seal) for a Prebend in the College of *Windsor*, which *Simon Simons*, lately deceased, had. This *Turner* had formerly been Fellow of *Magdalen College, Oxon*, and the chief Occasion of the first *Concordance in English*; which was done by *Marbeck*, a Singing Man of *Windsor*. *Turner*, about the latter End of King *Henry*, seeing him diligently transcribing the *English Bible*, for his own private Use, and well observing him to be an industrious and ingenious Man, advised him to set about the framing of a *Concordance*, with Directions to him therein: And he effected it. This *Turner* died in Exile in the following Reign.

ANNO  
1551.

Two Days after, viz. Decemb. 26. he sealed with the Great Seal the Establishment of the King's Mint within the City of *York*, and Articles for the same. Which Patent was delivered to one *Mountford*, Officer in the said Mint, who was left behind, and appointed to tarry and receive the same. The Establishment of which Mint, was subscribed and examined by Sir *Walter Mildmay*; and contained eleven Articles. The Officers were, *George Gale*, Esq; Under Treasurer of the Mint; *John Wind*, Comptroller thereof; *Richard Lee*, Assay Master, and *John Monnes*, Provost of all the Moneyers of the Mint. Between the King and these, was an Indenture made, that they had undertaken before the King, to make certain Monies after the Standard, as in the same was mentioned.

A Mint at  
*York*.

The Merchants of the *Stilyard*, called also the *Merchants of the Haunse*, who were *Almains*, were put down this Year, and their Liberties seized into the King's Hands: And afterwards remained in like Condition with other Stranger Merchants. These were Merchants here in *Henry III.* his Reign, and before, and brought in Grain, Cordage, and other Naval Provisions, Flax, and Hemp, Linen Cloth, Wax, and Steel; from whence the Place in *Dowgate Ward*, where they dwelt, was called the *Steel-yard*. The Kings of *England* encouraged them at first, and gave them large Privileges; and among others, of Shipping out Woolen Cloth. They were permitted to have an Alderman among them, who was their chief Magistrate. The Maior and Aldermen of the City granted them divers Liberties; as to lay up their Corn in Innes, and to sell it in their Garners. And they in like manner, on their Parts, were bound to several Duties; as, among the rest, to repair *Bishops Gate*. But at length they brought in so much Corn, that it beat down the Price of it here, to the Injury of our Husbandmen in the Country. And the *English* in Time grew Merchants themselves, and traded abroad in the Commodities that these *Almains* did. Whence arose great Envies among them, and many Complaints were by the *English* Merchants put up against them, till in the End they were suppressed. But to shew the last Rencontres they met with, because it belongs to this Time. 'Decemb. 29. the Aldermen and Merchants of the *Stilyard* appeared before the Council. And to them the Information of the Merchant Adventurers was delivered, and a Copy given in Writing. To which they were to answer 'Jan. 20. And an Order was sent to the King's Solicitor General, Mr. *Goodrick*, Mr. *Gosnold*, and the Recorder of *London*, to consider and overlook the Information of the Merchant Adventurers, and the Answer of the Merchants of the *Stilyard*, and to weigh the Cause with  
' all

The Merchants of  
the *Stilyard*  
put down.

Counc. Book.



ANNO  
1551.

King's Journ.

Counc. Book.

Warr. Book.

Persons ap-  
pointed to  
assist the L.  
Keeper.

all Circumspection and Wisdom; and to signify their Judgments there-  
upon; and to keep their Conferences secret. On Feb. 9. the Case of  
these Merchants was heard before the Council, and referred to a fur-  
ther Hearing. In the mean time the Recorder of London, and other  
learned Men in the Law, should view the Charters and Writings of  
these Merchants. Feb. 24. the Decree passed against the Merchants  
of the *Stilyard*, and is registered at large in the Council Book. In  
the King's Journal the Decree is briefly set down; and the Sum thereof  
was, That they were no sufficient Corporation: That their Number,  
Names, and Nations were unknown: That they coloured Strangers  
Goods: That they shipped 44000 Cloths in a Year; and all other Stran-  
gers together, shipped but 1100. A few Days after, Ambassadors came  
from *Hamburg* and *Lubeck*, on the behalf of these Merchants. And  
March 2. they were committed for Answer to the Lord Chancellor, the  
Secretaries, Sir Robert Bows, Sir John Baker, Judge Montague, and some  
others. And, (to bring all this Matter together, tho' it fall in the Years  
following) May 11. 1552. the Lord Chancellor, Secretary Cecyl, Dr.  
Wotton, Sir John Baker, Sir Robert Bows, Justice Mountague, the Re-  
corder of London, Mr. Gosnold, and Mr. Goodrick, were to reply to the  
Ambassador of the *Stede*, touching the Sentence pronounced against the  
Merchants of the *Stilyard*, and to devise what may be answered there-  
unto, so as it may consist with Equity, Justice, and his Majesty's Ho-  
nour. July 8. the Ambassador of the *Stedes* was answered, and satisf-  
fied, saving in two things, viz. 1. For License to take upon the old  
Custom such Merchandizes as arrived here since their coming thither.  
And, 2. For the Term of their Grant to be prolonged. The same Day  
Orders were sent to the Customers of London, declaring, that the King  
licensed the *Stedes* to carry out a certain number of Cloths, and a cer-  
tain Quantity of Lead, for their old Custom, in consideration that the  
Premises were provided before the Decree made touching the resuming  
of the Privileges into the King's hand. Octob. 11. further Proceedings  
against the Merchants of the *Stilyard* was referred to the *Exchequer*.  
The next Year, viz. April 23. 1553. the Company and Fellowship of  
the *Haunses* obtained a License to bring out of their Countries all kind of  
Merchandizes, being of their own Commodities, as they have heretofore  
used to bring in, until the Feast of the *Nativity* next, and the same to  
put to Vend, paying the Customs, as they have done before. And in  
May the same Year, 1553. a Warrant was issued to the Customers of  
London, to receive of the Merchants of the *Stilyard*, for all such Wares  
as they shall bring into this Realm between this and *Christmas* next, only  
such Customs as they have been wont to pay. This Favour was obtained  
to them, as it seems, by the Solicitation of the Messenger from the Cities  
of the *Stedes*, Dr. Apollonius: Who had his Passport from hence May 13.  
to go safely beyond Sea, carrying also the King's Letters to the *Stedes*  
with him. Now to look back again.

In January the Master of the Rolls, Portman, Hales, and Rede, Judges,  
Dr. William May, Leyson, Oliver, Bellasis, Cook, Civilians, were commisi-  
onated to assist the Bishop of Ely in hearing Matters of Chancery.



CHAP. VII.

*The King's Chaplains. William Thomas his Grants. Thomas Rose : Hugh Goodacre : Eminent Divines ; Preferred. The King's Deliberations. Annuities for the Chaplains. The Bishopric of Bristol fleeced. Enquiry into the King's Revenue. Commissions.*

**I**N this Month of *December*, it was thought fit the King should retain six Chaplains in Ordinary : who should not only wait upon him, but be Itineraries, and Preach the Gospel all the Nation over. Two of these Six to be ever present at Court; and Four absent abroad in Preaching. One Year, Two in *Wales* : Two in *Lancashire* and *Darby*. The next Year, Two in the Marches of *Scotland* : Two in *Yorkshire*. The third Year, Two in *Devonshire* : Two in *Hampshire*. The fourth Year, Two in *Norfolk* and *Essex* : And Two in *Kent* and *Suffex*. And these Six to be, *Bil, Harley, Pern, Grindal, Bradford*, and the sixth dashed out in the *Journal*; but, probably, was *Knox* : For he was one of the Preachers in the North, at *Newcastle*, and elsewhere, and had a Salary paid him out of the *Exchequer*. But the Number was reduced to Four, (*Bradford* also being left out) who were stiled, *The King's Ordinary Chaplains*. *Warr. Book.*

Six Chaplains appointed for the King. *K. Edw. Journ.*

*William Thomas*, who the Year before had been admitted one of the Clerks of the Council, (of whom before something was said, and more may be hereafter) had his Fortunes to make, and so crowded in, with others, upon the King for his Liberality. He obtained a Patent for Life, the 27th of this *December*, of a Toll of all Cattle, Merchandize, and other Customs and Subsidies, within the Towns of *Prestend, Beelth, and Elvel*, in the Marches of *Wales*; and of Salt-Fats, &c. in the County of *Worcester*; and an Annuity of forty Marks of the Fee-farm of the City of *Hereford*; to have for Term of Life, after the Decease, Surrender, &c. of *William West*. And (to lay these Matters together) another Patent *May 12.* the next Year, for an Annuity of forty Pounds, payable out of the *Exchequer, durante Beneplacito*. On which Day, an Annuity of fifty Marks was granted to *Bernard Hampton*, another Clerk of the Council, payable as the former. And to *Armigel Wade*, another Clerk, fifty Pounds yearly. And the next Year, (*viz. 1553.*) *Mar. 31.* a Custody was granted to the said *William Thomas, Esq;* of two Parts of the Manor of *Bradesly*, and of the Parsonage of *Cicester* in *Glocestershire*, and all other Lands and Tenements in *Bardesly, Weyilswel, Barkley Herons* in the said Shire, and in *Reding* and *Windsor* in *Berks*, by the yearly Value and Rent of 19 Pounds, and not above. Which lately were *Anthony Bourchier's*, but now in the King's hand, by reason of the

Grants to Thomas, Clerk of the Council.

*Bernard Hampton. Armag. Wade.*



**ANNO** Minority of *Thomas Bourchier*: and also the Custody of the said *Thomas* during his Minority.

1551.

Other  
Grants.  
Warr. Book.

And besides all this, I find that in *January* 1550. he had a good Penworth of the King, viz. the Purchase of the Manor of *Lentwarden* in *Herefordshire*, with divers other Lands; among the rest, the capital Messuage and Demesns of the Manor of *Tedleston*. In *September* this Year, 1551. the King, by way of Gift in Fee simple, granted him the Manor of *Garway*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Hereford*, and several other Lands. In the which Year, *Thomas* was one of those that were appointed to go over in Quality of Ambassador to the *French King*, in a most splendid Manner, with the Marquis of *Northampton*, about a Match with that King's Daughter, as was said before, when he was allowed forty Shillings a Day for his Diet. He was also once employed by the Council in a secret Journey: For the Expences of which, they made him Allowance.

Rose, Vicar of  
West Ham.

*Jan.* 18. the Seal was passed for a Presentation to the Vicarage of *West Ham* in *Essex*, to be enjoyed by *Thomas Rose*, that had endured much Imprisonment and Danger for his godly Zeal towards Religion; and was so well thought of by Archbishop *Cranmer*, that he was nominated also for Archbishop of *Armagh*, at the same Time with *Turner* before mentioned.

Goodacre hath  
a Plurality.

It was not long after, viz. *March* 19. that the Seal was granted for a Plurality to *Hugh Goodacre*, M. A. Vicar of the Parish of *Shalfleet* in the Isle of *Wight*, and Chaplain to *Ponet* Bishop of *Winchester*, to hold two other Benefices, of any yearly Value. This Man I the rather mention, because of his great Abilities in Learning, and for being nominated with the two others mentioned above, for the *Irish* Archbishopric. Which he obtained, and went over into *Ireland* to superintend that Province; and died there.

Things by  
the King  
propounded  
to be deliberated:  
About Peace  
Abroad.

The Time of the Year being now more proper for Deliberation than Action, in the Month of *February* the young King had his Thoughts, becoming mature Years, bent upon the present Juncture of Affairs, both Abroad and at Home; and put down with his own Hand, in a Memorial, divers Things to be deliberated well upon. And, first, Endeavours having been made by the King to set on foot a Treaty of Peace between the Emperor and the *French King*, which as yet took no place, the King made a Note, what was further to be done for the compassing of that matter.

About the  
Deputy of  
*Ireland*.

Sir *James Croft* was now Deputy of *Ireland*. The King, for the better taking Care of that Kingdom, made it another Point of his Consideration, whether *Crofts* should still remain Deputy, or some Person of Nobility to be placed in his room. And for the easier Government of that People, whether it would not be convenient to have three Councils there. And if so, then to consider, who should be the Persons of which those Councils should consist; and the properest Places where they should hold their Residence.

About the  
Parliament.

The Parliament now sitting, and many Bills brought in, the King made another Note, for him to consult, what number of Acts should be passed, and which.

About the  
Rolls.

He set it down also, among his Matters to be considered, who should succeed *Beaumont* in the Office of the Rolls, that he might be the better and



and more honestly served in that Place. For as for *Beaumont*, he was now put in Prison for forging a false Deed, as from the Duke of *Suffolk*, deceased, to the Lady *Powis*. And other of his Deceits were, not long after, discovered. ANNO 1551.

Lastly, Having set up a Mint at *York*, he thought it fit to be considered, whether any Pence of the *Tower*, or baser Standard, should be there coined. And the Mint.

And in the Backside of this Memorial, are these learned Lawyers Names written by the Secretary; viz. *Mr. Saunders*, *Mr. Dyer*, *Mr. Attorney*, *Mr. Solicitor*, *Mr. Carrel*: as fit Persons, out of which a Master of the Rolls might be chosen, to succeed *Beaumont*.

A Proclamation came forth *Feb. 20.* prohibiting Frays and Fightings in Cathedral Churches; and bringing in Horses and Mules into the same. Whereby may be gathered, what Indecencies and Prophaniations were now practised in Churches. A Proclamation against Frays in Churches.

There was an Annuity by Patent, dated *March 13.* of forty Pounds granted to *Edmund Grindal*, B. D. and Chaplain to the King's Majesty, *durante Beneplacito*, with a *Liberat dormant*. The same Annuity, of the same Date, was granted to *William Bill*, D. D. *John Harley*, B. D. and *Andrew Perne*, D. D. This I take out of the Lord Chancellor *Goodrick's* Ledger Book, and the Warrant Book. Whether the two other Chaplains, *Bradford* and *Knox*, mentioned in the King's Journal, were discharged, or their Patents for their Annuities were not yet finished, might be doubted. But it appears, tho' *Bradford* and *Knox* were nominated for Chaplains, yet the Four former were only retained. And *Knox* had an Annuity of 40 Pounds for his good Service in Preaching in the North, till he should have some Place in the Church conferred on him. It was out of Respect to him, I suppose, that one *William Knox*, perhaps his Brother or Relation, had in *September, 1552.* a Passport granted to him, to bring in, or carry out of any Haven in *England*, all such Merchandizes as were permitted by the Law, to indure for one whole Year. And to make the said Traffic in any Ship of the Burden of an hundred Tun. Annuities for the King's Chaplains.

Sir *George Norton* prevailed with some of the Council, to obtain the King's Letters, which were dated in *December, 1550.* to *Busb* Bishop of *Bristol*, to get from him the good Manor of *Leigh* in *Somersetshire*, belonging to his Bishopric: and in Exchange *South Petherton*, the Parsonage thereof, &c. was to be made over to him. To which the Bishop would not yield a great while. Infomuch that a Letter was sent from the Privy Council to him; marvailing that he had not granted the King's Request for Sir *George Norton*, (the same, I suppose, that was High Sheriff of *Essex*) considering he was offered as considerable a Recompence. And therefore the King entreated him, not to deny it. This Letter was dated *Jan. 7.* Another Letter was sent to him, that setting apart all Excuses, he will send up one to the Council to give order in his behalf; having with vain Excuses, as the King was informed, abused his Highness. On *Feb. 8.* the Bishop of *Bristol* appeared before the Council, touching his Answer to be made to this Request for this Knight, who desired, upon reasonable Recompence, to have the said Manor. The Bishop then affirmed, that he had granted it in Lease to his Brother *Busb*, and upon this Condition, that if his Successor, the Bishop that hereafter



ANNO  
1551.

should be, would dwell upon it himself, that then *Bush* should suffer him to have it, taking of him Recompence for the Charges already bestowed upon it: Which amounted to above Two hundred Pounds, besides the Rent limited in the Lease. And altho' the Council persuaded the Bishop as much as was possible, to tender the King's Request in this Cause, yet he would in no wise yield thereto, but departed, refusing to commune of the Matter. But afterwards he was wrought upon to part with his Lease. For *March* 8. the Council wrote to him, 'That where-  
' as he had accorded to exchange the Manor, so he might have it during  
' his Life, the King desired him to assure the Reversion of it, and not  
' to make any other Lease of it than is already made.' Which the Bishop did perform. And in *September* the King granted back to him the said Manor, with the Appurtenances, for his Life, without Account rendering, in consideration of his Gift thereof to the King in Fee simple.

And granted  
to Sir George  
Norton.

And then immediately the King granted the Reversion of the said Manor of *Leigh* to Sir *George Norton*, after the Bishop's Death, to be holden by the hundredth Part of a Knight's Fee, with a Grant to him and his Heirs, to have like Courts, Franchises, and Perquisites of Court, as the said Bishop, or any before him, have had.

A Commis-  
sion for En-  
quiry into  
the King's  
Revenue.

The King's Necessity, and the Jealousy of the Integrity of his Officers that handled and received his Revenues, made him think fit to issue out a Commission in *January* to the Lord Chancellor, the Earl of *Bedford*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *William Petre*, and others; to call before them the Heads, and inferior Ministers of the Court of *Exchequer*, the Court of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, the Court of Wards and Liveries, the Court of Augmentations, the Court of First-Fruits and Tenths; charging and commanding them to make before the said Commissioners perfect and full Declaration, in Writing under their Hands, of all the King's Revenues, Profits, and Casualties within their several Charges and Offices, answerable in the said Courts, before the Date of the said Commission, and of all Rents, Resoluts, Fees, Annuities, Pensions, and other Deductions. And divers other Commissions of this nature, for calling to Account the King's Officers employed in his Revenues, or other Benefits accruing to him by Chauntries, Church-Plate, Jewels, Bell-metal, &c. and for making certain Sales of his Lands, were issued out the ensuing Year.



CHAP.



C H A P. VIII.

*Dr. Redman dies. Some Account of him. Commis-  
sions for making Ecclesiastical Laws. Bullinger's  
Correspondence in England. Dr. Cox's Letter to  
him. Conferences about the Sacrament. The  
Duke of Somerset's End: Brought about by Nor-  
thumberland, and some others. Somerset's Friends  
and Dependents. Edward Semour restored.*

**S**TILL to take up a few more scattered Matters, happening within the Compass of this Year, relating chiefly to Religion and Learning.

In the Month of November, Trinity College in Cambridge lost her learned Master, and the Church of Westminster her Reverend Dean, Dr. Redman; one of the solideſt and beſt read Divines in the Land; and to whoſe Judgment great Deference was paid by all. And therefore he was appointed one of the Divines to compoſe the *Common Prayer Book*. Alexander Nowel, or Noel, the Maſter of Westminster School, (afterward Dean of Paul's) ſet forth a little Book, containing the ſaid Redman's laſt Judgment of ſeveral Points of Religion in Controverſy; eſpecially concerning the Doctrin of the Sacrament, according as he had received it from the Mouth of that learned Man, a little before his Death. The Book was drawn into Articles: Whereunto were ſubſcribed, the Names of Dr. Yong, Mr. Cratford, Noel's Fellow Teacher in Westminster School, Richard Burton, Ellis Lomas, John Wright, Rich. Eliſborn, Dr. Redman's Servants. Theſe, together with Alexander Noel, ſubſcribed ſeverally their Names to every Article, before Dr. Cox, then Dean of Westminster. The Copy was exhibited to certain of the King's Privy Council. And from them came to the Printer's Hand. And Fox hath publiſhed this Tract in his *Martyrology*.

The Death  
of Redman.

Noel's Book  
of Redman's  
Judgment.

Preface to  
Noel's An-  
ſwer to Dor-  
man.

The Occaſion of this Declaration of Redman was thus, as Noel ſets it down in his Preface to his Answer to Dorman: Dr. Redman, in reſpect of ſome of his Friends, durſt not in his Health utter the Truth, as he knew in his Conſcience; but of his own accord, now in the laſt Concluſion of his Life, ſent for Noel, when he was in his Death-Bed, and ſetting all worldly Reſpects aſide, as he ſaid, confeſſed and acknowledged the Abuses and Errors of Popery, in his Hearing, to the confirming of Noel's Faith.

Redman on  
his Death-  
Bed ſends  
for Noel.

But Dorman charged Noel, for publiſhing the aboveſaid Book, as tho' he belied that Reverend Man: and that to honeſt, learned, and good Men, then living, it was notoriously known, he did ſo. But Noel, for his own Vindication, appealed to the reſt that were Subſcribers, as Witneſſes, as well as himſelf. Nay, and Dr. Yong was he that had firſt laid this Charge upon Noel, tho' this very Man ſubſcribed his Hand to as much of the Treatiſe as he heard. And Noel moreover proteſted before

The Papiſts  
charge Noel  
with Forge-  
ry.

God,



ANNO  
1551.

God, as he should answer it at the dreadful Day, that *Tong* subscribed with him, and others, as was printed in that little Book of the Conference between Dr. *Redman* and him. Yea, and further, that Dr. *Tong* of his own accord made offer to Dr. *Cox*, that he would exhibit to him in Writing, subscribed with his own Hand, a larger Treatise concerning Dr. *Redman's* Judgment, touching his allowing of the said Articles: and also what his Judgment was, touching other Articles, then in Controversy. *Noel* added, that he thought himself for ever bounden to Dr. *Redman*, and did heartily thank God therefore. And that he was so little ashamed of any Infamy that should grow unto him, and so little afraid of any Lye by him uttered of Dr. *Redman*, that he did before God most heartily rejoice in that Truth, which he heard of the said Reverend Man.

*Redman*, whether a Papist.

By this it may appear, that *Redman* was reckoned a Papist, however he made a shift to live in the outward Communion of the then established Church, and was named to be one of those that were to assist at the compiling of the *Common Prayer*. It is certain, he was accounted by *Dorman*, and the Papists in those Times, as one of theirs: and so he was accounted by Protestants then also. And therefore his Judgment was so much made use of by them: that a Man who in all his Life before stood so much against the Protestant Doctrine, particularly of Justification by Faith, and wrote against it, (whatever his inward Thoughts of it were) should in the last Sands of his Life revoke this, and disallow so many other Popish Errors, which he was never known to disallow of before; but now he was going to die, the Truth would out. It was not sufficient then to denominate a true Protestant, to live in the public Communion of the Church, because so many Papists, it is plain, then did so: Nor, that he was of the Number of those Divines that were appointed to prepare a Public Office of Prayers. For Bishop *Day*, another of them, was a strong Papist: and so was *Robertson* affected: and not much otherwise was Bishop *Skip*. In truth, in the composing of that Office, Choice was made, not so much of Men with respect to their Opinions, as to their great Learning and Knowledge in the Usages and Practice of the antient Church. And it may be a Question, whether these, tho' nominated to this Work, assisted at all in it, any more than *Heth*, Bishop of *Worcester*, that was nominated, with others, for correcting of the *Ordinal*, yet would have no hand in it.

Made a Sermon at *Bucer's* Funeral.

*Redman* preached at the Funeral of *Martin Bucer*, when the University buried him. Wherein he bestowed much Commendation on him. Which was the more remarkable, because he had been no Friend to *Bucer's* Actions nor Opinions, and there had been some Discord between them in certain Points. Whence *Nicolas Car*, in his Letter to *Cheke* concerning *Bucer's* Death, said, that by *Redman's* Oration the Glory and Esteem of *Bucer* was augmented. 'And so much the more, said he, we congratulate his Virtue, that he who sometime opposed *Bucer's* Doings, and was thought to dissent from him, yet could not find any Matter with which to reproach or charge him.' And again, 'That he should be praised and extolled by such as were his antient Friends, might seem to proceed from Favour and Affection; but to be spoke well of by one whom he did disagree from, and oppose, was a Sign of some singular Excellency to have been in him.' In truth, it redounded much to *Redman's* Integrity, that tho' there had been some Differences between them,



them, yet he would not, now he was dead, say any thing to hurt his good Name. ANNO 1551.

As to *Redman's* Condition, and Studies, he was nearly related to the learned and sober Prelate, *Tunstal* Bishop of *Durham*; he studied both at *Cambridge* and *Oxford* for some Years, and then went abroad, and tarried at *Paris* a long Time: came back well learned in *Latin* and *Greek*, about the Year 1531. and so improved by a diligent reading of *Tully*, that *Cheke* and *Smith*, both sufficiently known, being excited to imitate him, became afterwards the greatest Scholars in *England*; and both preferred in the Court. Afterwards he wholly addicted himself to the Study of Divinity; wherein he excelled, in the Opinion of all. He was of an agreeable Conversation, modest, kind, and good to all, even Enemies; troublesome and hard to none. Such an Artist in his Sermons for the forming of a Christian Life, as *Ascham* (one that then lived in the University) professed he hardly ever heard the like. In his Opinions concerning the Marriage of Priests, and some other Controversies, he declared himself to be of a right Judgment, in the Public Schools. He differed from Protestants in the Doctrine of Justification by Faith only; but without Sharpness. And the great Reason why he did so, was because he was afraid of a licentious Life, which some would be apt to take up from it, if it should have been taught the common People. But what his last Thoughts were of that Point, we saw before.

His Condition.  
*Ascham*, Ep.  
ad *Sturmi*.  
Lib. 1. Epist.

As yet the Realm remained without a Body of Ecclesiastical Laws, the old ones being not proper for a State that had renounced the Pope, and his Superstitions. Therefore a Commission, dated Octob. 22. was directed to *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Nicolas* Bishop of *London*, and *Richard Cox*, Almoner, *Peter Martyr*, *Rowland Taylor* of *Hadley*, *Bartholomew Traheron*, *John Lucas*, and *John Gosnold*: To consider of all the King's Ecclesiastical Laws, according to a Statute of Parliament made 3 Reg. *Edwardi VI.* Wherein Thirty two Persons were appointed for the same Purpose; which might be reduced to Eight: And to gather and put in order in Writing all such of them as they should think convenient, and other Laws Ecclesiastical, as they should think meet to be used within the Realm: And to deliver the same unto the King, that they might be further considered, according to his Statutes. There was also a Commission dated in November, to the same Purpose, to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishop of *Ely*, *Cocks*, (alias *Cox*) *Peter Martyr*, *William May*, *Rowland Taylor*, *John Lucas*, and *Richard Goodrick*: To confer together concerning the Ecclesiastical Laws. This Commission superseded that made in October; wherein three Persons were nominated, which it was thought convenient afterwards to change, viz. the Bishop of *London*, *Traheron*, and *Gosnold*, for the Bishop of *Ely*, *May*, and *Goodrick*. These Commissioners finished at last this great Work: And the King lived not long enough to get it Enacted: and so it fell, and that great Labour frustrated.

A Commission for framing Ecclesiastical Laws.  
*Warr. Book.*

There was a great Deference given by our Reformers unto the Learned in the Church of *Zurich*, and Letters of Ecclesiastical Moment passed between each. As namely, between *Bullinger*, the chief Pastor there, and Dr. *Richard Cox*, Dean of *Westminster* and Chancellor of *Oxford*. That grave Man did very earnestly admonish the said *Cox* of his Duty in the Church and University, and adjure him to mind the Charge entrusted

*Bullinger's*  
Advice concerning the Reformation in *England*.



ANNO  
1551.

trusted with him. Which *Cox* took in very good part, and as coming from the Spirit of God, as he expressed it in his Letter to him, writ in *May* this Year; acknowledging, How slow and heavy Men are commonly in God's Business, and how diligent and studious in their own. *Bullinger* also gave him Counsel about Reforming of the Church; advising him to use his Interest, that Divine Worship might not be defiled by Popish Ceremonies and Customs. To which Advice, I conjecture, the Employment of *Cox*, in correcting the Divine Offices to be used in this Church, gave occasion. *Cox* replied, 'That his Mind and Judgment was, that all things in the Church ought to be pure, simple, and far removed from the Rudiments and Pumps of this World. But that his Authority was but small; wishing the Bishops were of his Mind and Belief, and so leaving the Care and Event of Things to God, concluded.

Sends certain Books to Cox.

*Bullinger* also this Year, by an Agent hither, named *Joannes ab Ulmis*, sent the said Dr. *Cox*, together with a long and kind Letter, two Books, viz. *Calvin's* Treatise concerning the Concord between the Churches of *Geneva* and *Zurich*, in the Matter of the Eucharist: And the other, his fifth Decad of Sermons. Of whose Mind in the former Matter, viz. that of the Sacrament, *Cox* declared himself to be. *Cox*, and some others of *Bullinger's* Friends, procured *Ulmus* a Fellowship in *S. John's* College in *Oxford*.

And some Scholars to Oxon.

*Bullinger* in these Days sent over divers young Men to *Oxon*, to study there: Of whom *Cox* took particular Care. His Answer to *Bullinger's* Letter remains yet in the great Monastery at *Zurich*, bound together with many other choice Letters of the same nature, in a Volume. A Transcript of which Answer, I here present the Reader.

*Clarissimo & doctissimo viro, Henrico Bullingero, Domino, & Fratri suo charissimo, Ric. Cox, Cancellarius Oxoniensis.*

Ex Archivis Ecclesiae Tigurin.

CUM tanto beneficiorum cumulo me exornare atque honestare digneris, *Bullingere* in Christo frater observantissime, ex devincto sane quam devinctissimum reddidisti. Laconicas & jejunas meas literas, tantum non justo volumine, eoque doctissimo, & legenti mihi jucundissimo, compensasti. Pergis præterea duplici munere me beare, nimirum tractatu D. *Calvini* de *Christianissimâ concordia* inter vos in negotio Eucharistiæ, & V<sup>ta</sup> sermonum tuorum Decade: quam nocte hæsterna mihi porrexit *Jo. ab Ulmes*. Pro utroque munere quantas possum maximas ago tibi gratias. Utroque autem vehementer oblector. O! si det aliquando clementiss. Deus, ut in cænæ sacræ tractatione ad eundem veritatis scopum universa Christi collimet Ecclesia: Inter legendum libros tuos, maximè cum occurrerit quod me piè affecerit, non desinam tui memor esse, & Deum precibus meis pulsare, ut te Ecclesiæ suæ diutissime serve, & Spiritu suo Sancto magis ac magis imbuat. Cum autem me tam candidè & Christianè te officio commonefacis, & ad munus obeundum tam seriò extimulas, & tam religiosè adjuras, id ego interpretor, à Domini Sanctiss. Spiritu factum esse, nequid in ipsius negotio languidè aut negligenter agamus. Sentio enim in dies, quam finis in Domini rebus desides, & quam in nostris studiosi & impigri.

Porro, salubre & sanum tuum consilium in Ecclesiæ Dei reformatione, eo libentius amplector, quod cum fide mea, qua me benignus

Dominus



• Dominus in hisce rebus donavit, per omnia consentis. Ego enim exi-  
 • stimo in Ecclesia omnia debere esse pura, simplicia, & ab hujus mundi  
 • elementis & pompis, longè alienissima. Sed in hac nostra Ecclesia,  
 • ego & eruditione & autoritate infirmus, quid possum præstare? Tan-  
 • tum conari Præsulibus nostris eandem mecum mentem & fidem optare  
 • possum, & Domino interim negotii sui curam & eventum committere.  
 • Dignissimus es, mi Bullingere, in quem magna beneficia conferantur  
 • qui tam grato animo accipis ea beneficia, quæ vel omnino nulla sunt,  
 • vel certè levissima. Juvenes illi duo, qui apud nos aliquanto degerunt,  
 • digni sunt sane ob pietatem, & ardens in bonis literis studium, favore  
 • & benevolentia omni piorum. Reliquos duos, qui nuper hac adventa-  
 • runt, & quos tantopere mihi commendares, vel tua causa, quanta pos-  
 • sumus humanitate tractabimus. Non omittam tuo nomine Salutem  
 • dicere magnis illis heroibus, & tui studiosis. Dom. Jesus te diutissimè  
 • servet incolumem, & Ecclesiæ suæ restaurandæ animum addat & vires.  
 • Vale. Westmonasterii, 5 Maij, 1551.

ANNO

1551.

Tui studiosissimus, & in Christo  
 frater amantissimus,

RIC. COX.

The foresaid *Ab Ulmis* particularly applied himself to the Duke of  
*Northumberland*, desiring, as is probable, his Favour towards those of the  
 Religion in those Quarters of *Switzerland*, and presenting *Bullinger's*  
 Commendations to him. The Duke received him with all Humanity,  
 and professed much Favour and Kindness towards *Bullinger*: and for his  
 sake, promised that he would take into his Patronage an ingenious young  
 Man of that Country, named *Alexander*, whom *Cecyl* and *Cheke* had  
 gotten into the King's School at *Westminster*. But the Duke's great and  
 public Employes made him neglect his Promise for a great while, after  
 he had made it to *Ulmes*, and others, almost half a score times: Such a  
 right Courtier was *Northumberland*. For *Cheke* had addressed to the  
 Duke in this behalf, whom he found very kind, and ready to do it. Bi-  
 shop *Hoper* also, upon the Motion of *Bullinger*, had solicited the Duke  
 in *Ulmes*, and the Youth's behalf. To whom the Duke very lovingly  
 said, *That he would indeed be a Friend to them*. But now the next  
 Year, *Ulmes* being to return home, and nothing yet done, he wrote an  
 earnest Letter to *Cecyl*, who, he said, could do much with him, and  
 was so much commended for his Favour to such as were studious in  
 good Arts, and who before had of his own accord offered him all  
 Friendship, and most obligingly given him his Hand; praying him  
 now to acquaint the Duke, that he being ready to return to *Bullinger*,  
 recommended *Alexander* once again to him, being very Poor, and desti-  
 tute of Money: Desiring nothing of his Grace, but that he would at this  
 Time, for *Bullinger's* sake, help him a little with his Liberality. And  
 how little soever it should be, they would receive it thankfully, if it  
 were but Twenty Shillings a Year; and that by his means he might  
 have a Scholar's Place, if it might be. Such a Courtier was this great  
 Nobleman, promising much, but performing little. But we may see  
 hence, what great Countenance and Respect that reverend, learned Man

*Bullinger*  
 sends an  
 Address to  
*Northumber-*  
*land*.



**ANNO** of Zurich, had in the Court of King Edward. But *Ulmes* being gone, a  
**1551.** Letter was procured from the King to S. *John's* College, to grant to this  
*Alexander*, under the Name of *Alexander Smutches*, the Fellowship there,  
 which *Ulmes* had left.

Two private  
 Conferences  
 concerning  
 the Eucha-  
 rist.

On two certain Days, the one in *November*, and the other in *December*, two friendly Conferences concerning the Sacrament, were instituted privately, for Satisfaction in that great Point of the *Presence*: (the former was held in the House of Sir *William Cecyl*, Secretary of State, the latter in the House of Sir *Richard Morison*) between divers learned Persons of the Clergy and Laity, of both Persuasions. Mention whereof was made in the *Memorials* of Archbishop *Cranmer* more largely.

P. 269.

And a third.  
*Arth. Oxen.*  
 P. 178.

We are told by a late Author, of a third Disputation now held. And that the Houses where these Disputations were managed, were the Earl of *Bedford's* at the *Savoy*, Sir *William Cecyl's* at *Chanon-row*, and Sir *John Cheke's* at the *White Friars*, lately dissolved. And that *Fecknam*, then a Prisoner in the *Tower*, was borrowed thence by Sir *Philip Hoby* for this Disputation, to satisfy Protestants, who then thought, that their Religion could not be denied. And that these Disputations were afterwards prorogued, and carried into the Country; and first into *Worcestershire*, to *Perfbore* there: where *Hoper*, the Bishop, disputed with *Fecknam*; and then to the Cathedral Church of *Worcester*. But upon what Authority he saith all this, I know not.

The Duke  
 of Somerset's  
 End.

*January 22.* the Duke of *Somerset*, the King's Uncle, after a former Trouble, out of which he emerged, falling into new Misfortunes, was beheaded on *Tower Hill*, for Felony: Brought about by a Faction, headed by the proud Duke of *Northumberland*: This being the King's second Uncle he saw lose his Head in his Reign, in less than the space of three Years.

It was then reported, that the chief Assisters of *Northumberland*, in bringing this Duke to his End, were the Earl of *Arundel*, the Lord *Wriothesly*, and Sir *Richard Southwel*, great Papists, and the two former then under a Cloud; and therefore very Enemies to the Duke. These *Northumberland* useth, soon after bringeth again into the Court: And who in such Favour now with the King as they? By this Means, it is said, many false Rumours, and forged Letters were sent about, to the Defamation of the Duke, and to make him Criminal. And not long after they had done the Duke's Business, *Northumberland* had no further need of them, and instead of getting them preferred, as was promised them, they were all kicked off again. Nay, it was said, the Lord *Paget* was the fourth Person assisting in this Tragedy. Who, indeed if he were one of these Conspirators, (as in truth he was a Papist) he was guilty of a very base and perfidious Act to his old Master, who was a great Friend to him, and confided much in his Counsel, as we have heard. The Account of this secret Intrigue was related by one that lived in those Days, even *Ponet* Bishop of *Winchester*, that succeeded Bishop *Gardiner*, when he was deprived, if he be indeed the Author of that Book, which is said to be published in the Year 1556, intituled, *A short Treatise of Politic Power*, and reprinted 1642. His Words about that Matter are these:

' When *Wriothesly*, *Arundel*, and *Southwel* conspired with the ambitious  
 ' and subtil *Alcibiades* of *England*, the Earl of *Warwic*, after Duke of  
 ' *Northumberland*, to pull the good Duke of *Somerset*, King *Edward's*



Uncle and Protector, out of his Authority, and by forging a great many false Letters and Lies, to make the Protector hated, brought to pass *Warwic's* Purpose; who then for a while but they Three? *Wriotbesly*, that before was banished the Court, is lodged, with his Wife and Son, next to the King. Every Man repaireth to *Wriotbesly*, honoureth *Wriotbesly*, saith unto *Wriotbesly* as the *Affyrians* did to *Haman*, &c. And all things be done by his Advice, and who but *Wriotbesly*? *Arundel* is promised to be next to the King, Groom of his Stole, and Comptroller of his House at the least. *Southwel*, for his whisking and double Diligence, must be a great Counsellor in any wise. But what was the End? The Earl, as crafty as the best, seeing that his Desires should not take place, if these Men might have what they hoped for, so enhaunceth the Matter, that *Wriotbesly* is fain in the Night to get him out of the Court to his own Home: Where, upon narrow Examination, fearing lest he should come to some open shameful End, poisoned himself, or pined away for Thought.

ANNO  
1551.

*Southwel* is committed to the Fleet; where being examined, he confessed enough to be hanged for, and had gone very near it, had not his Examiners, upon hope of his Amendment, breaking out of his Eye, but not out of his Heart, obtained the Earl's Favour. And at the Earl's Suit, *Arundel* escaped, otherwise had his Head with the Axe been divided from his Shoulders.

What became of *Paget*, we shall hear hereafter. Only let us take up here what the same Author writes of this Nobleman, in the same Place. And now, at length, was *Paget*, the Master of *Practises*, handled; that will have one Part in every Pageant, if he may by Praying or Paying put in his Foot.—— But what doth this Master or Proctor of *Practises*? Doth he not dissemble with the Earl of *Warwic*, serveth his Turn in all that his Wits would serve? But what at length becometh of our practising *Paget*? He is committed to Ward, his Garter with Shame pulled from his Leg, his Robes from his Back, his Coat Armour pulled down, spurned out of *Windsor* Church, trod under Foot, and himself at length, with great Favour obtaineth, that he might redeem the rest of his corporal Pains with open Confession at the Bar of the *Star Chamber* on his Knees, of his Bribery, Extortion, Dissimulation, Ambition, Robbing of the King, and such like Virtues; whereby he became Noble. And in the End, what became of *Northumberland* himself, the great Wheel of all, that procured the Duke of *Somerset's* Death? He also perished, not long after, unpitied by all. And this was the sad Conclusion of that once most illustrious Prince, and flourishing Duke.

He was beheaded soon after Eight of the Clock in the Morning; being brought to his Execution the sooner, to prevent the Concourse of the People, who would be forward to see the last End of one so well beloved by them. And further, to provide against any Disturbances, besides the King's Guard attending there with their Armes, there were near a Thousand Men, of the Liberty of the Tower, present also with their Halberds, from *Ratcliff*, *Limehouse*, *White Chappel*, *S. Catbarines*, *Stratford Bow*, and from *Hogston*, and *Shoreditch*. Both the Sheriffs were also present. But notwithstanding all this Guard, a little before the Duke died, there happened on a sudden a rumbling Noise, as tho' it had

The Disturbance on  
Tower Hill.



ANNO  
1551.

been Guns shooting off, and great Horses coming. Which produced a very great Terror among the People; of whom there was a greater Conflux than ever had been observed before on such an Occasion, notwithstanding it was so early. They that were on one Side of *Tower Hill*, thought verily that those on the other were fighting with, and killing one another. Whereupon the People, Guard and all, in their Haste, fell down upon the Ground, tumbling over one another with their Halbards: This increased the Consternation and Belief in every body, that there was nothing but immediate Death to be expected. Which made all endeavour, Might and Main, to escape away. And in their Flight, and crouding one upon another, near a hundred Persons were thought to have fallen into the *Tower Ditch*. And many others fell down into Cellars, and other dangerous Places. But all this Fright was groundless. And after, when Things were a little pacified, the Duke having concluded his Speech, piously received the Stroke of Death. His Body was put into a Coffin, and carried back to the *Tower*, and buried on the North Side of the Choir of *S. Peter's*.

His Royal Nephew had made him Great, as by many and lofty Officers and Honours, so by the large Possessions he granted him: Which it shall not, perhaps, be unacceptable to some, if I number up.

His Possessions granted him by the King.  
*Book of Sales.*

*Anno Reg. 1.* He had by Patent dated *July 23.* the Town and Manor of *Marlebridg*, [*Marlborough* perhaps] late Parcel of the Possessions of *Catharin*, late Queen of *England*, and divers other Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Wilts*, *Southampton*, *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Oxon*, *Cornwal*, *Devon*, *Hereford*, *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Warwic*, *Wigorn*, and *Middlesex*. The Value, *Non patet*. Commonly it is so set down in the Book of Sales, when the Lands passed are of great Value; it being, I suppose, thought fit to conceal the Value of them, to avoid Envy. But Rent reserved. This Grant was, *In consideration of Services, and of the Promise of Henry VIII.*

*Item, An. Reg. 1.* Another Patent dated *July 28.* granting him the Manor of *Mildenhal* in *Wilts*, and divers other Lands, Tenements, and Possessions in the Counties of *Wilts*, *Somerset*, *Dorset*, *Glocester*, *Devon*, and *Surrey*. The Value, *Non patet*, with Rent reserved. And this, *In consideration of Services, and Exchange of Possessions*, which lately were belonging to the Prebends of *Newthorp* and *Wylton* in the County of *York*; and other Lands, Tenements, and Possessions in *York*, *Somerset*, *Devon*, and *Wilts*.

*Item, An. Reg. 1.* *Erectio Ducis Somerset*, with the annual Rent of 40 Pounds, going out of the Manors of *Crokeborn*, *Stokegorssey*, and *Wyke Fitzpain*, in the County of *Somerset*, lately Parcel of the Possessions of *Henry*, late Marquis of *Exeter*. The Test of the Patent bore Date *February 26.*

*Item, An. Reg. 1.* A Patent dated *July 9.* granting him the Prebend of *Newthorp* and *Wylton* in the County of *York*, and divers other Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *York*, *Nottingham*, *Southampton*, *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Kent*, *Lincoln*, *Bucks*, *Somerset*, and *Glocester*. The Value, *Non patet*. In consideration of the Tithes of *Ramesbury* in the County of *Wilts*, and for Service.

*Item, An. Reg. 1.* By a Patent dated *July 16.* the King granted him the Lordship and Manor of *Plympton* at *Exminster*, with the Appurtenances,



nances, in the County of *Devon*, lately Parcel of the Possessions of *Henry* Marquis of *Exeter*; and divers other Lands and Tenements in the Counties of *Devon* and *Middlesex*. And this in consideration of his House, Scite, and capital Messuage of *Shene*, and other Things, in the County of *Surrey*. The Value, *Non patet*.

ANNO

1551.

Item, *An. Reg. 2. July 11.* The King gave him the Manor of *Wymborn* in the County of *Dorset*, Parcel of the Possessions of the Dutchy of *Lancaster*, and the Manor of *Stonden*, *North Stonden*, and *Okel*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Wilts*, and *Berks*; and divers other Lands, Tenements, and Possessions in the Counties of *Dorset*, *Wilts*, *Berks*, *Norfolk*, *Southampton*, and *Glocester*. The yearly Value 106 Pounds 14 Shillings 9 Pence. And this in full consideration both of the King's Donative, and Royal Benevolence.

But now all the Duke's Treasures and Lands whatsoever, came to the Crown, together with his Personal Estate. One Part whereof was granted to *John* Earl of *Bedford*, viz. *Covent Garden*, and seven Acres, called *Long Acre*. Sir *John Gates*, Vice-chamberlain to the King, who now was grown into great Favour, obtained another Part. For the King gave him all the Duke's rich Furrs, and much of his costly Household-stoff: and withal, the Goods and Chattels which lately were Sir *Ralph Vane's*, attainted with the Duke. The Bedding and Furniture of *Sion* House, of which the King had constituted Sir *Thomas Wroth* Keeper, were bestowed on the same Sir *Thomas*.

Several of the late Duke's Goods given to Gates.

Certain Matters likewise of the late Duke's doing, were now intended to be revoked by Parliament. Whereof one was, That whereas he, upon his Marriage with *Anne*, his second Wife, had by Act of Parliament cut off the Entail of all his Estate from the Issue of his first, by whom he had *John Seimour*, Esq; that all might be settled upon the Issue of the said *Anne*; this the said *John* petitioned might be revoked: And there was an Act of Parliament intended to be made in *February*, at the Petition of the said *John Seimour* Esq; eldest Son of *Edward*, late Duke of *Somerset*, and *Catharin Filol*, one of the Daughters and Heirs of Sir *William Filol*, Kt. deceased, for the repealing of a Statute made at *Westminster*, 32 *Hen. VIII.* concerning the entailing of all such Lands as the said Duke then was seized of, or thereafter should be, in Fee simple, Fee tayle, or otherwise, unto the said Duke, and Lady *Anne*, his second Wife, and to the Heirs Male of their Bodies, lawfully begotten.

Revocation of several of the Duke's Doings. *Warr. Book.*

And a Match being agreed upon, to be celebrated between *Henry*, the Duke's Son, and *Catharin*, the Earl of *Oxford's* Daughter, by certain Indentures signed by the said Duke, and this Earl also, was laboured to be annulled. And a Bill was in *April* prepared to be enacted by Parliament, that two Indentures made between the said late Duke of *Somerset*, and the said Earl of *Oxford*, and certain other Recognizances, shall be void, and of none effect, concerning the Marriage between the Lord *Henry*, the said Duke's Son, and *Catharin*, Daughter to the said Earl.

And soon after his Execution, his Coat of Armes in *Windsor* Castle, set up there, as he was one of the Knights of the Garter, was ordered to be pulled down. For the King in *February* wrote a Letter to declaring his Majesty's Pleasure, that he should repair to *Windsor* immediately, and take down the Hatchments of the late Duke of *Somerset*, attainted, and put to Execution, in sort as others had been in like Cases.

His Hatchments pulled down at *Windsor*.

The



ANNO  
1551.

His Friends  
fall with  
him.

Lord Paget  
sequestered  
from his  
Office of  
Chancellor  
of the Duchy.

The Duke fell not alone; but several of his Retainers and Friends fell with him; and among the rest, his most faithful and trusty Friend the Lord *Paget*. Whom, tho' they could not find sufficient to put him to Death, yet they sequestered from his Place of Chancellor of the Duchy: Which was committed to Sir *John Gates*, a Creature of the Duke, of *Norshumberland's*. For in the Warrant Book I find a Letter dated in *November*, (that is, the next Month after the taking up of the Duke) to Mr. Vice-chamberlain, 'That where by Sequestration of the Lord *Paget*, Chancellor of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, there is Stay made in that Court of Processes, and other things, that of Order and Course should pass out of the said Court, under the Privy Seal, and Great Seal, that he should, during the King's Pleasure, keep the said Privy Seal, and Great Seal: To the Intent to seal such Writs and Commissions only, as by the Order of the same Court, be accustomed to be granted, either for making of Sheriffs, or other Justices, for the Order of the said Lands: So he place the Attorney, and others of the said Court, thereto: And in any wise to forbear sealing any Leases without special Order and Commandment from the King's Majesty.' This Sequestration continued against the Lord *Paget*, and the Office remained in *Gates's* Hands till the next *March*, 1552. When a Commission was given out to him, authorizing him still to keep the Great and Privy Seals of the Duchy, and to dispatch all things pertaining to that Office; with Authority to appoint a Vice-chancellor. And soon after *Paget* surrendered his Place, and was fined deeply in the *Star Chamber*.

Sir Michael  
Stanhop.

Sir *Michael Stanhop* was a Relation and Friend of the Duke's, and was attainted, and died about his Business. He had a House well furnished at *Bedington* in *Surrey*. The Goods and Chattels remaining there, *Thomas Lord Darcy* obtained.

Sir Ralph  
Vane.

Sir *Ralph Vane*, or *Fane*, was another that fell with the Duke, and was attainted and executed. He had the Honour of *Penshurst*, the Manor of *Ensfield*, and other Manors and Lands in *Kent*. All which were granted to Sir *William Sidney*, one of the Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber; together with the Park of *Penshurst*, and all the Chattels, Lead, Utensils, Vessels, Horses, Mules, and other things upon the said Manor.

Sir Miles Par-  
tridge.

Sir *Miles Partridge* was likewise another that sunk under the Duke's Calamities. To him belonged the great Messuage called *Kew*, in the Parish of *Mortlake* in *Surrey*. This, with all the Issues and Profits of it, was granted to Sir *Henry Gates*, another Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, Brother to Sir *John Gates*. And to him also came the Goods and Chattels in or belonging to this House. Yet for the Subsistence of his Widow, was somewhat granted. For I find a Grant to the Lady *Jane Partridge* for Life, of the Manor of *Kenne* in *Devon*, of the yearly Value of 57 Pounds 12 Shillings Halfpeny Farthing. But this not before *April*, 1553.

Sir Thomas  
Arundel.

Sir *Thomas Arundel* perished also with *Somerfet*, a West Country Gentleman, tho' it were the next Day (the Jury being shut up all Night) before he was found guilty. His Mansion House, which was the College or Chauntry of *Slapton* in *Devon*, was purchased of the King by *John Peter* of *Exeter*, Gentleman; the Father, perhaps, of Sir *William Peter*, Secretary of State; together with the Manor of *Norton*, and other Possessions



Possessions belonging to the said *Arundel*. Other of his Possessions, viz. *ANNO*  
*Kingston* in *Somersetshire*, and *Chiselborn* in *Yorkshire*, two Manors, the *1551.*  
Lord *Clinton* obtained.

As most of the Duke of *Somerset*'s Estate was dispersed away from his Posterity and Relations, so a small Part of it was granted to Sir *Edward Seimour*, his Son, who had been almost a Year after his Father's Attainder, neglected, and no Provision made for him. But about the Month of *September*, 1552. the King gave him by Patent divers Lordships, Part of his Father's Possessions; namely, *Walter, Shedder, Stowey*, with a Park thereunto belonging, and the Hundred of *Winterstock* in *Somersetshire*. And in *February*, 1552. the said Sir *Edward* became Ward to the Earl of *Warwic*, the Duke of *Northumberland*'s eldest Son.

Lands given  
to Sir Edw.  
Seimour.

The Duke's eldest Son, named *Edward* [miswritten, perhaps, for *John*] *Seimour* also, by a former Wife, viz. the Lady *Catharin Filol*, or *Filocks*, a Daughter and Heir of Sir *William Filol*, or *Filocks*, of *Woodlands* in *Dorsetshire*, had this Right done him, wherein his Father the Duke seemed to have done him Wrong: That a Patent was granted him, to be restored to as many of the Lands as were his Mother's, and sold away by the Duke without her Consent; and that this should be made good to him out of the Lands that the Heirs begotten of the Body of the Lady *Anne*, his second Wife, should have. This was in Conformity to an Act made in the Fifth and Sixth Years of this King, intituled, *For the Limitation of the Duke of Somerset's Lands*. And the Letters Patents directed to the Lord Marquis of *Winchester*, Master of the Wards, to take order with him, according to the said Act, to have to the said *John Seimour*, the Lands in like State as he should have had the foresaid Lands of his Mother, in case no Sale thereof had been made. Let me add, that *March 25*, 1553. a Bill was ordered by the King and Council to be prepared, that it might be enacted by Parliament, for the Restitution in Blood of *Edward Seimour*, Son and Heir of the late Duke, attainted, and begotten of the Body of *Catharin Filol*.

Care taken  
about Sei-  
mour, the  
Duke's Son  
by a former  
Venter.





ANNO

1551.

## C H A P. IX.

*The King's Debts. More's Utopia in English. Epistles of Bucer's Death: And other Books printed now. Bible printed in Folio. Bishop Ridley's Ordination of Ministers. A Parliament. Private Acts. A Bill for Apparel. Forms of Wills and Testaments.*

The King's Debts.



HE King's Debts now ran high. He had taken up great Sums from Banks, and Persons beyond the Seas: And was indebted this Year to them the Sum of 132372 Pounds 10 Shillings. Of this Sum, One thousand Pounds was for a Diamond. Besides Debts within the Realm, 108807 Pounds 4 Shillings 10 Pence. The total Sum amounted to 241179 Pounds 14 Shillings 10 Pence. The Particulars whereof may be seen in the Paper following.

MS. pen. me. *A Brief of all the King's Majesty's Debts, external and domestic, Feb. 1551. Anno 6<sup>o</sup> Edw. VI.*

## Debts beyond the Seas.

|      |                             |         |          |                           |
|------|-----------------------------|---------|----------|---------------------------|
|      |                             | l.      | l.       |                           |
| Payd | { Imprints, To the Schetz,  | { 10700 | { 480100 | { Payable 15 Nov. 1552.   |
|      | { To Lazarus Tucker,        | { 10700 |          |                           |
|      | { To the Fuggars,           | { 26700 |          |                           |
| Payd | { Item, To the Fuggars,     | { 20000 | { 21400  | { Payable 15 Feb. 1553.   |
|      | { Th' Interest thereof,     | { 1400  |          |                           |
|      | Item, To the Schetz,        | { 14000 |          | { Payable 20 Jul. 1553.   |
|      | And Rentleger,              |         |          |                           |
|      | Item, To the Fuggars,       | { 24000 | { 27352  | { Payable 15 Aug. 1553.   |
|      | { Th' Interest thereof,     | { 2360  | { 13 4   |                           |
|      | Item, To the Schetz         | { 1000  |          |                           |
|      | for the Diamond,            |         |          |                           |
|      | Item, To Francis Van Hall,  | 17426   | 13 4     | { Payable ult. Aug. 1553. |
|      | Item, To John Rauntzow, Kt. | 3093    | 3 4      | { Payable 1 Sept. 1553.   |
|      | Sum total                   | 132372  | 10 0     |                           |

Debts



ANNO  
1551.

Debts within the Realm.

|                                                | l.     | sb. | d. |
|------------------------------------------------|--------|-----|----|
| To the Household                               | 28000  | 00  | 00 |
| To the Chambre                                 | 20000  | 00  | 00 |
| To the Wardrobe                                | 6075   | 18  | 00 |
| To the Stable                                  | 1000   | 00  | 00 |
| To th'Admiraltie                               | 5000   | 00  | 00 |
| To th'Ordinaunce                               | 3134   | 07  | 10 |
| To the Surveyor of the Works                   | 3200   | 00  | 00 |
| To Calleys                                     | 15000  | 00  | 00 |
| To Barwyck                                     | 6000   | 00  | 00 |
| To the Revels                                  | 1000   | 00  | 00 |
| To Silley and Alderney                         | 1000   | 00  | 00 |
| To Ireland                                     | 13128  | 06  | 08 |
| To Winter, for his Voyage to Ireland           | 471    | 04  | 06 |
| To Barthilmewe Compagni, [the King's Merchant] | 4000   | 00  | 00 |
| To Portesmouth, and th'Isle of Wight           | 1000   | 00  | 00 |
| To the Men of Armes                            | 800    | 00  | 00 |
| To the Lieutenant of the Tower                 | 997    | 07  | 04 |
|                                                | 108807 | 04  | 10 |

Summa totalis of the Debts Externe, and  
within the Realm } 241179 14 10

For the King was forced to take up great Sums of Money sometimes, from the Bank, or some of the rich Merchants abroad in the *Low Countries*: As of the *Schetz*, that is, one *Jasper Schetz*, and his Brother: Of the *Fuggars*, that is, one *Anthony Fuggar*, and his Nephews, *Tucker*, *Rentleger*, *Van Hall*, *Rantzow*, *Rolinger*, &c. And when the King borrowed Money, he often made use of the Credit of the City and Citizens of *London*: Sometimes the Maior and City, and sometimes some of the eminentest Men therein for Reputation and Wealth, were bound for Payment. And the King gave them his Security. So I find a Recognizance Anno 1551. to *Jud*, Maior, and the City, to discharge them, and their Successors, and their Goods, as well beyond the Seas, as on this Side, for the Payment of certain Sums of Money they stood bound for, to the *Fuggars*, for the King: And a Grant, Anno 1552. to the Maior and City of *London*, to discharge them, their Heirs, and Executors, of 103707 Florens Carols, Money of *Flanders*, to *Guolphango Roblingero*, to be paid to him at the Payment of the Gold Mart, Anno 1553. Of that *Anthony Fuggar*, the King this Year bought a very fair Jewel, containing four Rubies, marvellously big, one Orient and great Diamond, and one great Pearl. It cost the King 100000 Crowns.

But to be punctual in his Payments, and keep up his Credit abroad, the King in the Month of *February* dispatched Sir *Philip Hoby* to the Lady Regent in Embassy, but indeed chiefly to pay his Debts to the *Fuggars*, and to borrow more Money. His Instructions, in short, were:

The King took up Money abroad upon the City's Credit.

Warr. Book.

Hoby sent in Embassy to pay the King's Debts.



ANNO  
1551.

His Instru-  
ctions.  
Galba, B. 12.

For the Discharge of such Debts as the King owed to *Anthony Fuggar* and his Nephews, beyond the Seas.

The said Sir *Philip* shall, at his said Ambassade to the Lady Regent, take in good Safety with him, at the Hand of the Marquis of *Winchester*, Lord Treasurer of *England*, the Sum of an Hundred Fourscore One Thousand, Six Hundred Fourscore and Five Crowns of the Sun, as of his Majesty's Treasure: And shall see the same Sum well and duly, and as secretly as he may, conveyed to *Antwerp*. So that he may have the Sum there before the last Day of this Month of *February*.

And at his coming thither, shall, with all Secresy, understand the Value current there, of the said Crowns of the Sun. And that done, he shall consider the Sum that his Majesty shall owe to the said *Anthony Fuggar*, at the last of this Month: Which is, Three Hundred Fourscore One Thousand Four Hundred and Forty Florens *Carols Flemish*: Every Floren at twenty Stivers.

And for the Remnant of the Debt, to take and borrow of the Merchants, Ten Thousand Pounds *Flemish*, upon the Interest of Seven in the Hundred, for the Space of Six Months, or such reasonable Interest as he may. And his Majesty's Bond, under the Great Seal of *England*, and the Bond of the City of *London*, being for the same, upon the Payment duly made, he shall instantly receive both the said Bonds.

Item, The said *Philip Hoby* shall receive of *William Daunsel*, the Governour of the *English* Nation there, or such other as shall be appointed by the Letters of the above-named Treasurer, such Bullion and Silver, as he hath there until this Time, for the King's Majesty's Use: And the same he shall cause safely to be brought into the Realm, to his Majesty's Use, upon a Warrant of a License to also received by the said Sir *Philip Hoby*, of *Jasper Schetz*, and his Nephews, for the Value of 3000 Marks Weight. And to reserve to himself, for Reward of his Charges and Expences for this his Ambassade, the Sum of 200 Pounds. After this Busines done at *Antwerp*, he was to repair to the Regent, then at *Bruges*, and shew the Wrongs done by their Ships to the *English* Merchants, and other the King's Subjects.

Taking up  
Money of  
foreign Mer-  
chants begun  
by K. Henry.

This Practice of taking up Money of foreign Merchants, was first begun by King *Henry VIII.* And these Debts, that now lay heavy upon the King, were either such as his Father left, or were contracted by his Uncle the Duke of *Somerset*.

A Grant to  
the Town of  
*Kingston*.

*Febru. 20. Anno Reg. 6.* an Indenture was made between the King and the Maior and Burgeses of the Town of *Kingston* upon *Hull*. Wherein the King granted them and their Successors, the Custody and Government of the Castle there, and two Block-houses, standing upon *Drypole* Side, in the County of *Tork*, for the more Surety, Preservation, and Keeping of the said Town, together with all the Lands, Gardens, and Waste Grounds, lying within the Walls of the said Castle and Block-houses, with all the Profits and Commodities thereunto belonging, without any Account making unto the King. And the said Castle and Block-houses to be from thenceforth exempt, and clearly distinct from the County of *Tork*, and reputed and taken as Part, and Parcel, and Member of the Town of *Kingston*. And in consideration hereof, the said Maior and Burgeses covenanted with the King, at their proper Cost and Charges, to repair and maintain the said Castle and Block-houses, with the Jetties, and all the



the Banks, as often as need should require; and to keep safe, and maintain all such Munitions, Ordinances, and Implements, as they should require of his Highness, for the Defence of the said Castle and Block-houses. They were also empowered, from Time to Time, to make and ordain Acts, Ordinances, and Constitutions, for the Preservation and Keeping of the said Castle and Block-houses: And that the Maior and Burgeses should have the Nomination, Election, and Assignment of such Persons as should have the Custody, Rule, and Charge of them, and the putting in and removing of every such Person without Interruption, Let, or Impediment. And the King gave them, towards the maintaining and supporting of the said, &c. 50 Pounds, to be taken of the Rents and Issues coming out of the Manor of *Myton* in the said County of *Kingston*. The King also granted them the Advowson, Gift, and Presentation, and Right of Patronage, of the Hospital of the Holy Trinity, near unto the Town of *Kingston*. And they covenanted with the King, to put into the said Hospital, as often as it should be vacant, an able and honest Person, to be Master and Incumbent there, and to provide and foresee, from Time to Time, that the Issues and Profits of the said Hospital should be employed and bestowed upon the Maintenance and Relief of the poor People there, according to the Foundation thereof. And for the Performance of the Premises, the Maior and Bailiffs were bound unto the King in 200 Pounds Forfeiture.

ANNO  
1551.

This Year *Cranmer* vindicated his Book of the Sacrament, set forth the last Year, and replied unto by *Gardiner* and *Smith*. This Answer was called, *An Answer of the most Reverend Father in God, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Primate of all England, and Metropolitan, unto a crafty and sophistical Cavillation, devised by Stephen Gardiner, Doctor of Law, late Bishop of Winchester, against the true and godly Doctrine of the most holy Sacrament of the Body and Blood of our Saviour Christ, &c.*

Archbishop  
*Cranmer's*  
Answer to  
*Gardiner*.

This Year also was translated and printed in *English*, that famous Book of *Utopia*, writ in *Latin* by the ingenious Sir *Thomas More*: intituled, *A fruitful and pleasant Work of the best State of a Public Weal*. Printed by *Abraham Vele*, at the *Lamb* in *Paul's Church-yard*, in a small *Octavo*. The Translator's Name was *Raphe Robynson*, Citizen and Goldsmith of *London*, as he styles himself; done at the Request of *George Tadolwe*, Citizen and Haberdasher of *London*. Not, as I suppose, that *Robynson* followed the Occupation of a Goldsmith, or was of any other Occupation in the City, whereby he got his Livelihood; for he was a Scholar of *Corpus Christi College, Oxon*. But it was usual in those Times for Gentlemen, that were no Traders or Artificers, to take their Freedoms of some of the Companies, and held it as a Matter of Credit and Reputation, to be Freemen of *London*. And the Companies would sometimes give the Freedom of their Societies, to certain Persons to whom they intended to shew a Respect. This Book the Translator dedicated to Secretary *Cecyl*. It is replenished with excellent Reading, and pleasantly carried on, by way of Dialogue, feigned to be between the Author and a great Traveller and Philosopher at *Bruges*, while *More* was Ambassador there from the King of *England*.

*Utopia* printed  
in *English*.

Translated  
by *Robynson*.



ANNO  
1551.

The Author  
Sir Tho More,  
bred up in  
Abp Morton's  
Family.

By a Passage in the Book, it appears, the Author Sir *Thomas More*, was bred from a Child in the Family of a very eminent Statesman, *Thomas Morton*, Cardinal and Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and Lord Chancellor of *England*. For so he writes, *The pleasant Remembrance of that Cardinal [Moreton] in whose House I was bred up of a Child*. In this Family, we may conclude, *More* gained much Advantage in Learning, and Wisdom, and State Policy. For that Great Man thus he describes:  
 ' He was a Man of mean Stature, and thorow stricken in Age, yet bare  
 ' his Body upright. In his Face did shine such an amiable Reverence, as  
 ' was pleasant to behold: Gentle in Communication, yet earnest and  
 ' sage. He had great Delight many times, with rough Speech to his  
 ' Suitors, to prove (but without harm) what prompt Wit, and what bold  
 ' Spirit were in every Man. In which, as in a Virtue much agreeing  
 ' with his Nature, so therewith were not joined Impudency, he took  
 ' great Delectation. In his Speech he was fine, eloquent, and pithy. In  
 ' the Law he had profound Knowledge. In Wit he was incomparable;  
 ' and in Memory wonderful excellent. These Qualities, which in him  
 ' were by Nature singular, he by Learning and Use had made perfect.  
 ' The King put much Trust in his Council. The Weal Public also in  
 ' a manner leaned unto him. In the Chief of his Youth, he was taken  
 ' from School into the Court; and passed all his Time in Troubles and  
 ' Business, and was continually troubled and tossed with Misfortunes and  
 ' Adversities. And so by great and many Dangers, he learned the Ex-  
 ' perience of the World.' In the Family of so complete a Man, was the  
 Author of the *Utopia* bred up.

Cheke's Epi-  
stle of Bucer's  
Death.

Besides the *Utopia*, these Books also were printed this Year: An Account of the much lamented Death of *Martin Bucer*, in certain Epistles; viz, An Epistle of Sir *John Cheke* to *Peter Martyr*, of the said *Bucer's* Death, dated *March 10.* and another Epistle of the same Person to *Walter Haddon*, of the same Subject. And a third Epistle wrote by *Car* to *Cheke*, of the same Reverend Person's Death, dated from *Trinity College* in *Cambridge*, the Ides of *March*. Also Epigrams upon the Death of the same, in *Quarzo*.

Bucer's Book  
*De Regno*  
*Christi*.

The said *Bucer* presented his Book in Manuscript, *De Regno Christi*, to King *Edward*, as it seems, about New Year's-tide, as his New Year's Gift; himself being then sick, and dying the next Month. In his Epistle there, to the said King, he thankfully acknowledged his Liberality to him, and *Fagius*, his Fellow, lately dead; for receiving them, being Exiles, placing them in the University of *Cambridge*, and assigning them so liberal Salaries, and ordering the Commencement of the same, some Months before either of them could enter upon their Function in the said University, by reason of both their Sickneses; He acknowledged also the King's Beneficence to him, in taking Pity of his Indisposition, and granting him 20 Pounds for a Stove, for the relieving of his poor Body, broken with Age and Sicknes. The Book itself treated of the *Kingdom of Christ*; What it ought to be in this World; what Things it peculiarly claimed; and what Things it had common with worldly Kingdoms; and how salutary, or rather, necessary it was, to all Orders of Men, to have it established among us: Lastly, By what Ways it may and ought to be restored by Kings, Princes, and Magistrates. This Book, indeed, was not printed till the Year 1557. when *Bucer's* Children procured the

Prefis



Prefs at *Basil* to be employed in it, dedicating it to *Christian*, King of *Denmark*. Therein they gave the Reason why their Father dedicated the Book to King *Edward*; namely, That that King had an ardent Love to the Glory of Christ, and the Welfare of his Realms; and endeavouring to excel others in all kinds of Virtue, he sent for Men endued with Learning and Piety, to come into *England*, offering them ample Rewards. Among whom, *Bucer*, their Father, was none of the least. For, him the King made much of, above the rest, received him into Harbour, and took care he should teach Divinity in one of his Universities, and preach Christ's Gospel. Therefore the King's Love of Religion, and his Subjects, which appeared most singularly in that Prince, and the Study of good Arts, to which he was wholly devoted; these excellent Qualities, and his great Good Will towards Men of Learning and Piety, moved their Father, that he intended, under his Name, to publish his Book.

ANNO  
1551.

Another Book came forth, published by another learned Foreigner, and dedicated to the King. It was *Sebastian Castalio's Latin Bible*, with his Annotations. Printed at *Basil* in *Folio*.

Castalio's  
Bible.

And yet another printed there, with an Epistle prefatory to the said King, being *Julius Firmicus's Astronomicum*, in Eight Books.

Firmicus's  
Astronomicum.

At *London* also was printed, *Liturgia Sacra, seu Ritus Ministerii in Ecclesia Peregrinorum profugorum propter Evangelium Christi*, *Argentinae. Cum Apologia Valerandi Pollani. Octavo.*

Liturgia Sacra  
Peregrinorum.

Lastly, *A most sure and strong Defence of the Baptizing of Children, against the pestiferous Sect of the Anabaptists. Set forth by that famous Clerk Henry Bullinger, and now translated out of Latin into English, by John Veron Senonoyes. Imprinted at Worcester by John Oswen, 1551.*

A Defence  
of baptizing  
Children.

The Holy Bible, of *Tho. Matthews's* Translation, with all the Prologues and Annotations upon every Chapter, (which had been once complained of, by the Popish Bishops, to King *Henry*, and so were left out in a former Edition) was now printed in *Folio*, for *Tho. Petite*.

The Bible  
printed.

*Erasmus's* Paraphrase on the four Gospels, and the Acts, now came forth in a Second Edition, printed by *Edw. Whitchurch*.

Erasmus's Pa-  
raphrase.

Let me add here, now we are upon the Mention of Books printed, that in *April* this Year, two Foreigners, Printers, the one an *Italian*, the other a *Dutch* Man, had Privileges granted them, to print certain Books; which, it seems, our *English* Printers had not Skill or Learning enough to do. For one *Laurence Torrentinus*, Printer to the Duke of *Florence*, had a Privilege here, for seven Years, to print the Digests and Pandects of the Civil Law of the *Romans*. And that none should print the same, during the said Time, without his License. And *John Gipkin*, a *Dutch* Man, lately made free, and now Bookseller of *London*, for a Privilege for ten Years to Print, or cause to be printed, the *Herbal* compiled by *William Turner*, Doctor in Physic. Which *Herbal* is the Ground-work of *Gerard's Herbal*.

Two foreign  
Printers pri-  
vileged.

On the 28th of *February*, was buried the noble Lady Countess of *Pembroke*, and Sister to the late Queen *Catharin*. She died at *Bernard's Castle*, and was carried unto *S. Paul's* in this Order. First there went an Hundred poor Men and Women, in Mantle Freez Gowns: Next followed the Heralds, and then the Corse. About which were Eight Banners of Armes. Then came the Mourners, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen. After them, the Ladies and Gentlewomen Mourners, to the

Countess of  
Pembroke's  
Burial.

number



**ANNO** number of Two hundred in all. Next, came in Coats Two hundred of  
**1551.** her own, and others Servants. She was interred by the Tomb of the  
 Duke of *Lancaster*. And after, her Banners were set up over her, and  
 her Armes set on divers Pillars.

**Lady Eliza-  
 beth comes  
 to Court.**

**March 17.** the Lady *Elizabeth*, the King's Sister, rode thro' *London*  
 unto *S. James's*, the King's Palace, with a great Company of Lords,  
 Knights, and Gentlemen; and after her a great number of Ladies and  
 Gentlewomen on Horseback, about Two hundred. On the 19th, she  
 came from *S. James's* thro' the Park to the Court; the Way from the  
 Park Gate unto the Court spread with fine Sand. She was attended with  
 a very honourable Confluence of noble and worshipful Persons of both  
 Sexes, and received with much Ceremony at the Court Gate.

**Ordinations  
 of Bishop  
 Ridley.**

These Ordinations passed this Year, under Bishop *Ridley's* Hands, zea-  
 lous to furnish his Diocese with faithful, honest, and Evangelical Pastors,  
 which, in these early Times of the Reformation, were very scarce. His  
 first Ordination was celebrated **May 19.** when seven Deacons were or-  
 dained, and five Priests. Their Names, for brevity, we omit. The next  
 Ordination was **Aug. 2.** at *Fulham*, when only one was ordained, and he  
 Deacon, and a *French* Man, named *John Veroneus*, *Senonens. Dioc. in*  
*Gallia: i. e. of Sens in Champaign.* Again, **Aug. 24.** in his Chappel  
 at *Fulham* were ordained one Deacon, and three Priests; whereof the fore-  
 said *French* Man was one. The said *Veron* was Minister of *Ludgate*, and  
 wrote divers Tracts in *English*, and was taken up for Religion in the Be-  
 gining of Queen *Mary's* Reign. Again, **Sept. 29.** were ordained seven  
 Deacons. Whereof one named *William Clark*, M. A. of *Littlebury*, was  
 then of the Age of Fifty seven: and another was *Robert Crowley*, who was  
 after an Exile, and under Queen *Elizabeth*, Minister of *Cripplegate*, and  
 wrote some Things. In the Bishop's Register he is stiled *Stationer of the*  
*Parish of S. Andrew Holborn.* Again, **Octob. 4.** were ordained three Dea-  
 cons; whereof one was *Christopher Dixe*, of *S. Mary Somerset, London,*  
*Taylor*, and one Priest. Again, **Novemb. 2.** were ordained two Priests,  
 and two Deacons. Of the Priests, *Crowley* was one. Lastly, **March 6.**  
 in the Oratory of *Robert* Bishop of *S. David's* House, in *Grace-church-*  
*street*, at the Sign of the *Cross Keys*, the said Bishop ordained one Priest,  
 named *Alexander Leighton*, of *Pembroke Hall, Cambridge*, by Allowance  
 and Order of the Bishop of *London*.

**A Sessions of  
 Parliament.**

The Parliament holden by Prorogation began to sit **January 23.** and  
 continued sitting till **April 15.** following; this being the fourth Session.  
 Where, besides many public Acts printed, were these private Acts  
 made:

**Private Acts.**

An Act for Assuring Lands to the City of *London*.

An Act touching the Marriage of the Marquis of *Northampton*. [Where-  
 by his Marriage was declared lawful, as by the Law of God indeed it  
 was, any Law, or Canon Ecclesiastical to the contrary notwithstanding.]  
 This Bill was brought in by Order of Council, viz. 'That it be enact-  
 'ed, for Legitimizing, as well the Marriage of the said Marquis, and *Eli-*  
 'zabeth his Wife, [his former Wife yet living, from whom he was di-  
 'vorced] as the Children born between them. Dated in *February*.

An Act for the Foundation of a Grammar School at *Pockington*.

An Act for frustrating Assurances to the Duke of *Somerset*, made by  
 the Earl of *Oxford*. [Of which somewhat was said before.]



An Act for S. Peter's Church in Westminster.

An Act for the Limitation of the Duke of Somerset's Lands.

ANNO

1551.

One of the public Acts made in this Parliament was, for the Punishment of divers Treasons. In which Act, it was provided favourably for the Subject. As, that there should be two Witnesses in Case of Treason; and that the Witnesses, and the Party arraigned, should be brought Face to Face: and that Treason should not be adjudged by Circumstances, but plain Evidence. This Bill, before it passed, was learnedly argued by the Lawyers in the House, and especially Sir *Nicolas Hare*, and Mr. *Stamford*. The former whereof was one of the Judges, and the other the Queen's Serjeant at the Trial of Sir *Nicolas Throgmorton*, who was arraigned in Queen *Mary's* Reign, to have been in *Wyat's* Treason. This *Throgmorton* was in this Parliament, and heard this Argument debated by them. Which he made use of afterwards, at his said Trial. He then said, there was a Maxim and Principle in the Law, which ought not to be violated, 'That no Penal Statute may, ought, or should be construed, expounded, extended, or wrested otherwise than the simple Words, and 'nude Letters of the same Statute doth warrant and allow.' And he told Serjeant *Stamford*, That among divers good and notable Reasons, then by him in that Parliament declared, he noted this one, why the said Maxim ought to be inviolable. Which was, 'That considering the 'private Affections, many times both of Princes, and Ministers, within 'this Realm, for that they were Men, and would and could err, it would 'be no Security, but very dangerous to the Subject, to refer the Construction and Extending of Penal Statutes to any Judge's Equity, as he 'termed it; which might either by Fear of the Higher Powers be seduced, or by Ignorance and Folly abused.' By which means *Throgmorton* escaped.

The Act for Treason.

There was a Bill prepared (as it seems, this Sessions of Parliament) for the restraining of the Excess of Apparel, and for directing People's Habits according to their Qualities; tho' it took not effect. And the King's own Royal Pen drew it up; after the Example of his noble Father, who used to draw up many Bills to be enacted in Parliament, and to supervise, correct, and interline many more. And because our Design is to preserve as many of the Writings of this young and blessed Prince as we can, I shall transcribe it from the Original, and present it here.

A Bill of Apparel.

*The rough Draught of a Bill for the restraining and directing of Apparel; drawn up for the Parliament by the King himself.*

NO Man, but of the Blood Royal, to wear Cloth of Gold, of Purple Colour, or any other Purple.

E MSS: Guil. Petyt, Armig.

Under a Duke, no Man to wear Cloth of Gold Tinsel.

Under an Earl, not to wear Sables, or black Jennets, or Cloth of Silver.

Under a Baron, no Man to wear Cloth of Gold, or Cloth of Silver, or Luzarnes Furrs, or any Embroidery of Gold and Silver, or Damasken Work, or Goldsmiths Work.

Under the Degree of a Knight of the Garter, no Man to wear Blue or Crimson Velvet, nor any Cloth made out of this Realm, nor embroidered of Silk.

No



ANNO

1551.

No Man under the Degree of a Knight, (except Gentlemen that may dispend 500 Pounds Lands, or Gentlemen of the King's Chamber) wear any Velvet, or Furr of Maternes or Buge, or any Furrs growing out of the Realm.

No Man to wear Satin or Damask, except he may spend 100 Pounds, during Life, or else be a Gentleman, and the King's sworn Servant. Nor yet to wear any Ostrige Feathers, nor Furrs of Conies.

No Man that is not worth 200 Pounds, or else 20 Pounds in Living certain, to wear any kind of Chamblet.

No Serving Man, under the Degree of a Gentleman, to wear any Furr, save Lambs Furr; no Taffata, nor Sarcenet in his Hose, nor no Velat in his Cap, Scabberd, Girdle, &c. nor any Cloth above 10 Shillings the Yard.

No Man under the Degree of a Knight, to wear any Gilt Thing.

No Man under the Degree of a Gentleman, to wear any Silk Points.

No Husbandman, Shepherd, &c. to wear any Cloth above Shillings the Yard.

Their Wives may wear that their Husbands do; and so may their Sons and Daughters, being under their Tuition.

The Forfeiture is, to all that be Gentlemen, the Loss of Apparel, and the double Value thereof. To all others, it is the Loss of the Apparel, and fitting five Days in the Stocks.

In the Court, the Usher may seize the Apparel. And if he commence not his Action within fifteen Days, then the Lord Chamberlain. Likewise on the Queen's side, her Usher and Chamberlain.

Any Man to seize Apparel worn out of the Court.

*Proviso*, That all Maiors, Bailiffs, &c. and all others that have accustomed one certain Apparel of their Office or Vocation, to wear the same still.

*Proviso* for Ambassadors, That their Men coming from beyond Sea wear their Masters Livery that they wear beyond Sea, till their Masters give them new. Likewise for all such as be in Service beyond Sea.

*Proviso*, for all to whom the King giveth any Livery or Apparel.

*Proviso*, for Players.

*Provided*, That upon coming of great Embassades, or foreign Princes, the Lord Great Master for the Household, the Lord Chamberlain for the Chamber, may give License, and assign unto those that be under their Charge in the King's Service, whether they be Ordinary, or else Extraordinary, to wear for the Time of that present Occasion, such Array as to them shall seem convenient.

The Value of their Lands or Goods to be tryed by the Valuation of his Subsidy going last before, if there were any within three Years before: otherwise to be tryed by their Oaths.

No Husbandman to wear any dyed Cloth, nor Leather tanned or dressed out of the Realm.

No Man under the Degree of a Baron, to wear any Gold that weigheth not one whole Ounce.

They may wear in the Trapping of their Horse, none other than they may wear in their own Apparel.

The Act to take place after *Whitsuntide*.

No Man to wear any Chain that weigheth less than ten Ounces of Gold.

For



For the Close of this Year, I cannot but observe, how Wills and Testaments now ran, and how different the wording of a Will in King Edward's Days, was from one drawn up in the Reign of King Henry his Father. Whereby we may gather, how at this Time of Day, by the Knowledge of the Gospel, Superstition generally wore off in the Nation. Now Testaments ran in this Tenor: 'I commend my Soul to God my Maker, faithfully believing to be saved by the shedding of Christ's Blood, and my Body to be buried in Order as a Christian.' Which Words were in the Will of *John Norton* of *Dedford*, in the Fifth Year of King *Edward*, 1551. And in the same Year, this was Part of the last Will of *John Byshop*, of *Skraptoft* in the County of *Leicester*: 'First, I give and bequeath myself to Almighty God, beseeching him to accept it, of his Mercy. Second, my Body to be buried in the Parish Church of *Skraptoft* aforesaid: and for my *Mortuary*, according to the Custom of the Realm.' Whereas before, I meet with Wills thus worded. In the Year 1536. *Richard Boekland*, Burgefs of the Town of *Ros*, made this Will: 'First, I bequeath my Soul to Almighty God, to his Mother *Mary*, and to *All Hallows* in Heaven, and my Body to be buried in the Churchyard of *Ros*. Item, I bequeath to the Cathedral Church of *Hereford*, xii d. I bequeath to the High Aultar of *Ros*, xii d.' In the Year 1538. *John Holder* of the Parish of *Churcham*, made this Will: 'First, I give and bequeath my Soul to Almighty God, to our blessed Lady, and to all his Saints. I also bequeath to the High Aultar of *Churcham* for *Obiit-Tith*, xii d. Item, I will and ordain that a Priest sing for the Health of my Soul, and my Father's Soul, and all Christen Souls, in *Churcham*, for the space of a Quarter of a Year.' *John Myllenchop*, of the Parish of *Ey* in *Hereford* Diocese, made these Bequests: 'First, I bequeath my Soul unto Almighty God, and to our Lady his Mother, and to all the celestial Company of Heaven; and my Body to be buried in the Churchyard of *S. Pyturs* [*Peter's*] of *Ey*. Item, I bequeath to the Mother Church of *Hereford*, iiii d. Item, to the High Aultar of the Church of *Ey*, two Tapers of the Weight of two Pound of Wax, there to bren before the blessed Sacrament. Item, to Sir *Hugh Holder*, my ghostly Father, to pray for my Soul, and all Christen Souls, iii s. and iiii d.

ANNO

1551.

Forms of  
Wills and  
Testaments.  
Cranm. Reg.





ANNO

1552.

## C H A P. X.

France and Cesar apply to the King. The King congratulates the Elector of Saxony. Gresham the King's Agent in Antwerp. The French Successes against the Emperor. The English incline to the Emperor. Jealousies of France. Steuklie's Intelligence thence. Minutes of Council for breaking with France. Fitz-Patric sent for Home. Steukley committed. French Commission for Sea Affairs.

The King's Carriage with respect to France, and the Emperor.



LET us now look Abroad. This Year 1552. (into which we are entring) was an ill Year for the Emperor: Who had at once upon him, the *Turk*, the *German* Princes and States, and the *French* King: And War waxing very warm between him and the Emperor, Applications were made by both Princes to the King. It was about the Close of the last Year, that the *French* King had made a League, offensive and defensive, with divers of the Princes of *Germany*; as Duke *Maurice* of *Saxony*, the Duke of *Mecklenburgh*, the Marquis *Albert*, or *Albright*, of *Brandenburgh*, the Duke of *Anhalt*, Duke *Augustus*, Count *Mansfield*, and other Princes. And both the *French* King, and the Princes, in the Beginning of this Year, invited the King into the League. But he, at the Audience he gave the *French* Ambassador, put off entring into a War, by a Speech he made to the Ambassador, which he had penned before. And he sent Sir *Philip Hoby*, and Sir *John Mason* to the said *French* Ambassador, to declare at more length, the King's Mind in that Matter. Nor would the King grant the *French* King's Request, delivered by his Ambassador in *April*, to carry the Provisions for his Army by Sea to *Calais*, and so to *Arde*, for Conveniency and Safety; that is, through the King's Territories; because it was against his League with the Emperor. And on the other hand, upon the Motion of *De Corrier*, the Lady Regent's Ambassador, the King readily renewed a Promise he had made before, that the Emperor's Ships might take harbour in his Havens, to be sheltered, upon Occasion, from the *French*.

The *French* King's Message.

The King carries it fair to both.

For the King now kept himself unconcerned from the Quarrels of each Prince, and carried a fair Face to both. It was observable, that when the *French* Ambassador, Seigneur *De Sulpice*, had in *June* advertised the King of his Master's Success in the said Month, in winning the Castle of *Robdemac*, and Mount *St. Anne*, and taking the strong Town of *Du Villers*, wherein was much Booty, and Ammunition; the King sent a Letter of Gratulation to that King, for his prosperous Successes in the present Wars; and another to the *French* Queen, for the said Successes, advertised by her Letters. And when in the said Month, by the Emperor's



peror's Letters, the King had Intelligence of an Invasion into *Champaign*, infomuch that the *Dauphin* had been like to have been taken, and the Queen being in those Parts, was glad to send away some of her Stuff to *Paris* for Safety; and the Town of *Guise* was taken, and the Country spoiled by the *Flemings*; the King in like manner sent Letters of Congratulation to the said Emperor by *Seigneur De Corrier*, Ambassador in *England*, now going home; and likewise other Letters gratulatory to the Lady Regent of *Flanders* for the same.

ANNO  
1552.

The Emperor being put to great Straits, and the *French* having now invaded *Luxemburg*, in *July* he required the King's Assistance of 5000 Footmen, or 700 Crowns a Day, during four Months, according to a Treaty made with the King's Father at *Dort*, 1542. But the King's Principle still was to keep himself from engaging in War, as much as he could. Which made him decline granting this to the Emperor, by urging, that his Father's Treaties did not bind him: That he had sworn Amity with the *French*, which he could not break: And that the Emperor had refused to aid him, when in the Year 1549. the *French* foraged in the Low Country of *Calais*. But he offered himself, if the Emperor pleased, to be a Mediator for a Peace between both. Yet it was not long after, namely, in the Month of *September*, the King disliking the *French's* Successes, and growing more and more in Jealousies of that King, changed his Mind, and was disposed to fall in with the Emperor against *France*, could he but find out a fair and just Way to do it. Which we shall see in the Process of our Story.

The Emperor's Demands.

*John Frederic*, the good Duke of *Saxony*, who had been the Emperor's Prisoner, was in *July* discharged. Who sent a Letter to the King, the same Month, signifying his Liberty. Which, on the 27th of *July*, the King answered with all Humanity, congratulating him heartily his Delivery out of Prison. To him, in *September*, the King wrote another Letter in *Latin*. The Import whereof seemed to be, that which about this Time was in chief Consultation at the Court, *viz.* to strengthen the King's Interest, in contracting a Friendship with the *Germans*, such especially as were Protestants.

The King congratulates the Duke of Sax's Liberty.

*Thomas Gressham* Esq; a Merchant in *London*, (famous to Posterity for the *Royal Exchange*, which he was the Builder of, and for the College and Lectures of the Arts and Sciences, in the same City, which he founded) had been sent over to *Antwerp* the latter End of the last Year, about *February* or *March*, to transact Matters of Money between the Merchants there, and the King. For the King was fain to make that Shift, to uphold himself and his Affairs, by borrowing great Sums of Money, at high Interest. Some whereof the King paid by his said Agent at the Day; and for some he desired Forbearance. April 31. a Debt of 14000 Pounds was paid to the *Fuggars*. And again, in *May*, *Gressham* was sent over, to make a Payment of 20000 Pounds to the said *Fuggars*, who required to have this paid; and then they would be willing to stay longer for the rest that remained. At this Voyage the King, to gratify his Agent, (unless, perhaps, it were for the King's own Use) granted him a License to carry over fifty Kintals of Copper in Bullion and Plate, within the space of one Year. In *August*, certain other Payments (in all 56000 Pounds) became due to those rich Bankers *Anthony Fuggar*, and his Nephews and Partners, and *Jasper Schetz*, and his. *Gressham* was

*Gressham* sent to *Antwerp*.



ANNO  
1552.

fent again, with a Commission to take up Monies of others for those Payments, but could not. So now he was ordered to deal with them for Forbearance for some Time longer. Of which Counsel, the Duke of *Northumberland*, and the Earl of *Pembroke*, as well as others of the Lords, were the chief Authors. But these Monies having been taken up for the King by *Gressham's* Agency, and in Part by his Credit, he being an exact Merchant, was exceeding uneasy at this Failing of Payment, as looking upon it as a great Reflection, both upon the King, and upon himself too. The King owed in the whole at *Antwerp* at this Time, an Hundred and Eight Thousand Pounds.

His Memo-  
rial.

But to understand more particularly this Affair, I shall here present the Memorial given to *Gressham* in this Journey:

‘ That whereas the said *Thomas* had Commission of late, to put over certain Debts due by the King’s Majesty, the 15th and 20th of *August*, that is to say, 48000 Pounds *Flemish* to the *Fulkers*, and 12000 Pounds to the *Schetz*: Wherein although he travailed, he could not hitherto accomplish the Purpose of his Commission: Therefore his Majesty’s Pleasure is, that the said *Thomas* shall return over the Seas thither again, and see what more Good he can therein do, for the Performance of his former Commission, and follow the same, to the most Advantage of his Majesty. And if he can so do, then shall he repair to the *Fulkers*, or their Agents in *Antwerp*, and delivering to them such Letters as be there prepared, shall declare unto them, how desirous the King’s Majesty would be, to have now, at their Day, made ready Payment of the Money due; but that in this troublesome Time of the World, it behoveth his Majesty so to consider his Estate, that for divers great and weighty Considerations, his Majesty otherwise is moved to employ the same Money which was prepared for this Payment. And therefore his Majesty doubteth not, but the said *Fulkers* will be content to think this Consideration reasonable; and not forget the Benefits and good Bargains they had had of the King’s Majesty, with good and true Payments at all times made: And assure themselves, that were it not for weighty Causes, his Majesty would not at this Time defer any such Payment. Whereof his Majesty the rather hopeth of their Contentation, for that *Antonio Fulker* himself, being herein conferred with by his Majesty’s Ambassador with the Emperor, seemed ready to gratify his Majesty, not only in this such a Matter, but also a greater.’ These humble and gentle Words was the King fain to use to his Creditors, to incline them to defer his Payments, and to keep up his Credit with them.

*Gressham*  
writes to  
*Northumber-*  
*land*.

*Gressham*, Aug. 21. which was the Day after his Arrival at *Antwerp*, wrote to the Duke of *Northumberland*; Wishing that God would give him such Success, that the King’s Honour and Credit might not be touched. For that it would be no small Grief to him, that he being Agent, Merchant Strangers should be forced to forbear their Monies against their Wills: Advising earnestly, that such a Matter should for the Time to come be well foreseen, or else in the End the Discredit would lie upon his Neck, if it should go otherwise than well with the Duke, and the Earl of *Pembroke*. But he doubted not, if God gave them both their Lives, they would foresee in Time. He spake of two things, wherein he feared the King and Council had disobliged these Merchants: And so they



they might be the more difficultly brought to deal with the King for the future. The one was, that when he, the said *Gressham*, had lately offered a fine Jewel at 8000 Pounds, to sell, which if the King would have bought, they should have lent him 52000 Pounds for a Year, the Lord *Wiltshire*, Lord *Darcy*, Lord *Warden*, Sir *John Gates*, and Secretary *Cecyl*, of the Privy Council, undervalued the Jewel, as tho' it were worth nothing. And at another time he offered, in the Name of the *Fuggars*, a Bargain of Fustians to the King of 5000 Pounds, for the Prolongation of 25000 Pounds: which also did not like them. But the Council would have these Bankers continue their Money for another Year, without taking any Merchandize or Jewels. This, as *Gressham* said, did abash him; considering how Things went heretofore, when the King's Father, who first began to take up Money upon Interest, did use to take his Fee-Peny in Merchandize, either Jewels, Copper, Gunpowder, or Fustians: And that so it was accustomed ever since, to take Wares, when the King made any Prolongation, until the Charge of this Business, as he said, was committed to him.

ANNO  
1552.

And therefore, he added, if there were not some other Ways taken for the Payment of the King's Debts, but to force Men from Time to Time to prolong them, the End thereof, he said, would neither be honourable nor profitable for the King. In consideration whereof, if there were no other Ways taken henceforth, he beseeched that he might be discharged of his Office of Agentship: For otherwise, he saw in the End he should receive Shame and Discredit thereby, to his utter Undoing for ever. Which yet, he added, would be the smallest Matter, if his Majesty's Credit should not be spotted thereby; specially in a strange Country; where, at that present, his Credit, he said, was better than the Emperor's. For the Emperor had offered 16 per Cent. and yet no Money could be gotten.

*Gressham* was also, in this Mission, to deal with the *Fuggars* for Prolongation of 43000 Pounds: and on that Condition, he was to signify, that the King was content to take 6000 Pounds in Fustians: And with the *Schetz* to prolong 10000 Pounds, that would grow due to them Novemb. 20. next.

*Gressham's*  
Commission.

And being sensible of the King's growing Debts, and the great Inconveniencies that at last would follow, he projected, that in case this Agency of his, for the Prolongation of these Payments succeeded, to find out a Way to bring the King wholly out of Debt in two Years, in case the King and Council would assign him 12 or 1300 Pounds a Week, to be secretly received at one Man's Hand, that so it might be kept secret. And he would so use that matter in that Town of *Antwerp*, that every Day he would be seen to take up in his own Name, 200 Pounds Sterling by Exchange: Which would amount in one Year to 72000 Pounds. And thus doing, it should not be perceived, nor administer any Occasion to make the Exchange fall. He projected also a great Benefit to the King, if all the Lead were in the King's hands, and the King to make a Staple thereof, and to make a Proclamation, or to shut up the Custom-house, that none should convey out of the Land any Parcels of Lead for five Years. Whereby the King might cause it to rise, and feed them at *Antwerp* from Time to Time, as they should have need thereof. By which he might keep his Money within his Realms, and bring himself out of the

His Device  
to bring the  
King out of  
Debt.

Debts



ANNO 1552. Debts, which his Father and the late Duke of *Somerset* had brought him into.

But in Conclusion, as to this Continuation of Money upon Usury, he assured the Duke of *Northumberland*, that it would prove a marvellous great Hindrance to his Majesty. But if these his Counsels were taken, he mistrusted not to save the King 20000 Pounds in the Payment of his Debts, e'er the Year went about. This may serve to shew the pressing State of the King's Debts Abroad; and, by the way, to display somewhat the Abilities of this brave *English* Merchant.

*Gressham's*  
Account of  
Money re-  
ceived and  
paid.

The said *Gressham*, Sept. 23. gave in a very fair and large Account during the Time of his being at *Antwerp* this Year, between the King and him. Which he intituled, 'A brief Declaration of the whole Account of your Majesty's Servant *Thomas Gressham*, Mercer, of all such Sums of Money as he hath received and paid in the Town of *Antwerp*, for your Majesty's behoof, since the 1st of *March*, Anno 1552. until the 27th of *July*, 1552. as hereafter shall more plainly appear to your Highness.

'*Imprimis*, Received by the Hands of Sir *Philip Hoby*, Kt. the 1st of *March*, 1552. in *French* Crowns of Gold, the Sum of an Hundred Fourscore Thousand Two Hundred Twenty Five Pieces, at Six Shillings and Six Pence the Crown, amounts to the Sum of

'Received of *Jasper Schetz*, the 1st of *March*, 1552. which was taken upon Interest by Sir *Philip Hoby*, and me *Thomas Gressham*, for three Months, after the Rate of Twelve upon the Hundred,

Money also was mentioned to be taken up of *Anthony Relinger*, and *Condrat Relinger*: and much more, and at several Times, of *Jasper Schetz*. At last, 'Item, Paid for a Supper, and a Banquet, that I had made to the *Fuggar*, and to the *Schetz*, and others, that I have had to do with for your Majesty, since the Time that your Highness hath committed this great Charge unto me, 25 Pounds.

'The Sum total of all my whole Payments, amounteth to 106301 Pounds 4 Shillings 4 Pence.'

The *English*  
like not the  
Successes of  
*France*.

We will now look out again over the Seas, into *France* and *Germany*, according to whose Successes, it must necessarily go with *England*. As the *Turk* had prospered against the Emperor this Summer, so had the *French* also, and *Germans*, ravaged and spoiled, and greatly distressed him in his *Low Countries*. Whose ill Successes, the *English* began to take to heart. For they cared not that either the one or the other should be too prosperous. *Chamberlain*, the Ambassador residing then at *Brussels*, spake his Thoughts in a Letter to the Lords, about the Beginning of *September*, That he did right well weigh with himself the present Time, [thinking *England* to be in danger by the *French* Successes] and he did earnestly wish, he might have occasion to certify of some Exploit done by *Cesar*, who was then on foot again. A Matter, he believed, that would be a Means to make *England's* other Neighbour [of *France*] deal more gently with us. 'For to say the Truth, as he further explained himself, the Game had not gone indifferently, having too long gone on the other Side.

The Emperor was hastening now in *September*, to face these triumphing *French* Men, who carried all before them. The foresaid Ambassador wrote to the Council, That according to the secret Talk, the Empe-



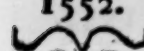
ror was *Septemb. 12.* (the Day on which he wrote his Letter) at *Spire* ANNO  
 or *Straßburg*. From whence, it was thought, he would direct an Army 1552.  
 to enter *France*, by the way of *Burgundy*, and make the Prince of *Pie-*  
*mont* General thereof, who was come to the Emperor in Post. And The Empe-  
 others did think, that his Majesty himself would pass by *Lorraine* and ror is com-  
*Luxemburgh*, and seek to enter *France* that Way: Meaning so to cause ing against  
 the Enemy to divert his Power from the *Low Countries*, especially from the French.  
*Artois*. Where, it was said, that the *French* did at that present burn and  
 spoil greatly; and were then before a Place of *Mons. De Reux*, called  
*Renty*, where he did not a little lament, that he might not set upon them  
 as he would: Which the Emperor had forbidden, until such Time as he  
 was clear out of *Germany*. It was then commonly reported, that the  
 Emperor was now strong, and reckoned out of all Danger among the  
*Germans*, and that his Power daily increased, by good numbers of Men  
 of War, that drew unto him. So that in that Court, where the *English*  
 Ambassador was, they said, that e'er it were long, the World should hear  
 that his Imperial Majesty was revived, and not so much put to the worst  
 as Men thought. But for all that, others there were, that thought the  
 Emperor not so well furnished of Money, presently to do so great Feats  
 withal. And indeed, in the Burse of *Antwerp*, Money was never so  
 scanty: Where he ran, as the Ambassador was informed, martely great  
 and excessive Interest for large Sums already had, and most part spent,  
 as it was thought, by the Queen Regent, to defend those *Low Countries*.  
 And so Men did conjecture, the Emperor should have two Impediments;  
 the one, the Year being spent; the other, want of Money. But in the  
 midst of these Expectations from the Emperor, at this Juncture the *French*  
 took two Places of Importance in *Piemont*; the Name of one whereof  
 was *Crescentia*.

In the midst of these Turmoils of the Emperor, he still shewed his  
 Zeal to Popery, even at this present, when thereby he did but more  
 irritate and provoke the *Germans* against him. The before mentioned  
 Ambassador wrote hither, That every Man there wished, that the Em-  
 peror, to win the *Germans*, would dissemble, and shew them best Coun-  
 tenance at this Time. But, it seemed, he took the contrary way; hav-  
 ing made *Don Lewis D'Avila* of his Privy Chamber, Captain of all his  
 light Horse; which the Nobles of those *Low Countries* did much mis-  
 like, being a Stranger; and so it was thought the *Germans* would too.  
 And upon Conference the Ambassador had with divers, he found that  
 the most part did then mislike in the Emperor, that he could not play  
 the Part which he was wont to play so well, being a chief Principle  
 with the *Spaniards*, among whom his Majesty was brought up for a  
 good part of his Youth; that is, to dissemble, and temper with the Times.  
 For when he passed thro' *Ausburg*, he had expelled some of their Preach-  
 ers, taking for colour, that their Preachings tended more to Sedition  
 than Religion. In which, the Ambassador said, that in his Conceit, he  
 had much overshot himself. For, as some Persons of Virtue and good  
 Judgment said, if ever he could dissemble, it behoved him now to do it,  
 and to make fair Weather with the *Germans*; shewing them the best  
 Countenance he could, whatsoever he meant besides. And so, indeed,  
 there went a Talk, that the Emperor would forget and forgive all unto  
 Marquis *Albright*, [who was the chief of the *German* Protestants that  
 confe-

The Empe-  
 ror loseth  
 himself  
 more in Ger-  
 many.



ANNO  
1552.



The Low  
Countries suf-  
fer much by  
the French.

News out of  
Germany, by  
the English  
Ambassador.

The English  
lent the Em-  
peror Gun-  
powder.

The English  
misused by  
the French.

confederated with *France*, and made Havock in the Emperor's Countries] and rather reward him with good Livings besides, to win him from the *French* King's Devotion. Which, as the Ambassador went on, and expressed his Judgment, whether they said as they would have it, or what was thereby meant otherwise, he knew not: But that a Man would not think it the worst means to reckon, having made so fair a *Skapada*, as they called it there.

The *Low Countries* were all in a great Disturbance at these Ravagings of the *French*, beating down all before them. But at the Emperor's being now on foot, and coming down towards them with the Forces he had gathered, they grew more easy, and the Court at *Brussels* was presently reduced to some Quietness, over what it was before: Every one expecting, with the present fair Weather that happened this latter End of *September*, to hear of some good Exploit to be done by the Emperor, upon some Places which the *French* had gotten in his Absence. And this also the *English* would inwardly be glad enough to hear of, not liking these *French* Proceedings. And therefore *Chamberlain*, the Ambassador, promised the Lords, to get all the Intelligence he could, and hoped to acquaint them with Matters worthy his writing: Beseeching them to assure themselves, that of his Part, should no Negligence be shewed, for lack of Advertisement. For that he knew the same to be the best Service he could do; and did consider how much he was bound to employ himself thereto, without refusing any Pains or Labour.

The News out of *Germany*, as the Ambassador now sent it to the Lords, were, that *Mons. De Bossu*, General of the Emperor's Army, was repairing to the Emperor with Part of the Forces of the Countries where the said Ambassador was; and that he was *Septemb. 26.* at a Place called *Gelven*, within 18 Leagues of his Majesty. That the Soldiers of *Marquis Albright* of *Brandenburg*, the chief Enemy of the Emperor on the *German* Side, and that had pillaged and plundered extremely the Emperor's Towns and Places, finding themselves wealthy, and rich of the Bransking and Spoil, did daily slip away from him, and leave him. And a Bruit was, how the *French* King should ask Reckoning of *Albright*, of that he had branskated; and that *Albright* had yet to receive 200000 Florens from the City of *Treves*: Which, it was to be thought, the Emperor now coming, would keep him from at this Time, albeit he had threatened to burn the City, if he had it not. That the Bishops of *Colen* and *Treves* did furnish *Bossu* his Camp with Victuals, and did send unto the Emperor 1500 Horse, and six Ensigns of Foot.

The King lent the Lady Regent, for the Emperor, 112 Barrels of Gunpowder, lying then at *Antwerp*, upon her Desire to borrow it for three or four Months. And *Damsel*, the *English* Governour there, delivered it to *Corrier*, one of that Queen's Council.

How the *French* about this Time dealt with King *Edward*, and his Subjects, which served more to cool the Affection of the *English* to him, I proceed next to shew.

The *French* King having been complained to by the King, for the great Wrongs done on the Sea to the *English* by his Men, to pacify him somewhat, Commissioners were in *September* sent into *England* from *France*, to hear and determine such Maritime Matters. But as *Chamberlain*, the Ambassador, wrote to the Duke of *Northumberland*, that the Report was



was there, that while the *French* King did send his Commissioners into *England*, to understand the Spoiliations his Subjects had committed upon the poor Merchants, they did not stick to take still at the Sea, what they could get of ours. Whereupon the said Ambassador gave his own Judgment, ' That for his Part, he wished that Fortune would shew herself a little indifferent, and turn another while on the other Side, and then he would well hope, we should have good Restitution. And so if she would dally now on the one Side, and then on the other, for a Year or two, he would verily believe, we should dwell by good Neighbours on each Side a good while after.

ANNO  
1552.

It was now the 24th of *September*, and these Commissioners from *France*, tho' in *London* for some Days, yet had not yet been at the Court, by reason, as was said, the Ambassador had been lately sick, and disordered of a Rheum; but being amended, that Day they desired Access: Which was granted them. Yet at this very Time, the *French* Men upon the Seas continued their Depredations on the Merchants, and had lately taken certain Passengers towards *Calais*; alledging, that unless certain Pirates of theirs, taken and detained at *Calais* for notable Piracies, were set at liberty, the same Passengers should not be delivered, but should be used as the *English* should use theirs. And this the Council signified to Sir *William Pickering*, Ambassador with the *French* King.

The *French*  
continue  
their Pira-  
cies.

At this Juncture one *Steukley*, once the Duke of *Somerset's* Servant, who, upon his Troubles, fled to *France*, and there abode, came now over, and brought with him this Intelligence, as he pretended to have from the *French* King himself, viz. That the said King intended, upon Peace made with the Emperor, to besiege *Calais*, and to invade *England* about *Falmouth*, and more to that Purpose; as, the invading it at the same Time on the North, by the help of the *Scots*. This Information startled the Court.

*Steukley's* In-  
telligence  
concerning  
*France*.

There went also Rumours abroad, of the *French's* Design upon the King. Which was, that the *French* Ambassador should invite the King to a Banquet aboard some *French* Ships; and having him thus in their Hands, to convey him away. This Report fled over to *Antwerp*, by a Merchant that haunted *England*, and came lately thence with the said News. And withal, that the Ports and Passages were stopped; an hundred Sale of *French* Ships arrested in the West Parts; and the *French* Ambassador forbid to approach to the Court. Which, perhaps, might be true enough, upon the Displeasure taken at the *French*, as for other Matters, so particularly for *Steukley's* Discoveries.

Rumours a-  
bout seizing  
the King.

Concerning which, to be the better satisfied, and that they might not seem too credulous, the Council wrote to *Pickering*, Ambassador in that Court, especially because *Steukley* had pretended to have imparted something of this to him. Their Letter ran to this Tenor:

The Council  
writes to the  
Ambassador  
concerning  
*Steukley*  
*Galba*, B. 12

' After our hearty Commendations unto you. Ye shall understand, that *Thomas Steukley*, returned hither into the Realm about the latter End of *August*; and since his coming, upon some Demand made, hath uttered certain Matters of great Importance: Alledging, that he did disclose some part of the same to you: Whereof he enquireth, whether you have at any time advertised; that is to say, that the *French* King understood certain Advantages for the taking of *Calais*, by



ANNO 1552. the surprizing of *Newenham* Bridge, the taking of *Ricebank*, and so consequently *Calais*. Which thing, he saith, he understood of the *French* King himself. The Matters he telleth, be of great Moment; which, he saith, he hath had of the *French* King himself, with whom he entered into such Credit, as we here be somewhat amazed, how to interpret the Tales, and how to judge of the Man. For some Trial of whom, we thought to understand certainly, whether he hath uttered any like Matter to you at any Time, as he saith he hath: And thereof we do not remember that ye did ever write any thing to us, as we know: surely ye would, if he had. We remember ye wrote to me, the Duke of *Northumberland*, in the Man's Favour, for his Return into this Country, with the King's Majesty's Favour. Wherefore, for our better Judgment of the Man, and his strange Tales, we pray you to certify us what Intelligence he hath at any time given you of these manner of matters, and of others also: and the same to send in Cifer to us, as ye shall think needful, &c. From *Windsor*, Sept. 24. 1552.

Your loving Friends,

|                        |                      |
|------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>Winchester.</i>     | <i>T. Darcy.</i>     |
| <i>Northumberland.</i> | <i>G. Cobbam.</i>    |
| <i>J. Bedford.</i>     | <i>Rich. Cotton.</i> |
| <i>W. Northampton.</i> | <i>John Gate.</i>    |
| <i>E. Clynton.</i>     | <i>W. Cecyl.</i>     |

Consultation of breaking with *France*.  
*Galba*, B. 12.

Minutes of Council.

What Answer the Ambassador gave to this Letter, we shall see by and by. But how weary the *English* Court already grew of their Friendship with *France*, and how busily it was employed at this very Juncture, to fall in with the Emperor, will appear by this Deliberation, contained in these Minutes of Council following:

- I. To consider by what Means the Emperor shall be induced to demand Aid again of the King, [who had some Months ago denied him.]
- II. If that cannot be compassed, then to consider, how the Emperor shall understand the King's Contentation to aid him, and what Personages shall execute this, either with the Emperor, or with the Regent.
- III. To order, that upon this opened to the Emperor, our Ambassador with the *French* King may withdraw himself secretly.
- IV. To consider, how the Princes Protestant of *Germany*, may have some Intelligence and Accord with the King.
- V. To devise to practise with the *Scots*, to further their Discontentation with the *French*.
- VI. Whether *Steukley* shall return into *France*, and continue his Practice there, for more Intelligence.
- VII. To see the Estate of *Calais*, *Guisnes*, and the Marches, well ordered and guarded with Officers, and Helps of other Lacks there: And therein to consider the Report of the Commissioners, [viz. Sir *Philip Hoby*, Sir *Richard Cotton*, and *William Berners* Esq; who were sent to view the Condition of those Places in *June* last.]
- VIII. The like Order for *Barwic*, and other Frontiers upon *Scotland*.
- IX. To give Order, that the Passages at *Dover* be well look'd unto.

X. To



X. To see to the Guard of the *Thamise*. Mr. *Gonston*, and Mr. *Winter*, to take two Pinaces, and to keep the *Thamise*. ANNO 1552.

A Discourse was also drawn up by Secretary *Cecyl*, upon two Questions, serving for this present Occasion:

I. Whether the King's Majesty shall enter into the Aid of the Emperor.

II. Whether he shall only declare the *French* King his Enemy; without sending Aid according to the Treaty.

The Discourse in Answer to the former of these, is printed (but with some Variation) in the History of the *Reformation*; which endeth with the Reasons against the Conjunction. But this is thus continued in the Manuscript I make use of: Vol. II. Ap- pen. p. 82.

' A third Opinion upon this, Whether it were best to impart to the Emperor by the Ambassador, that the King's Majesty meaneth not to neglect the Emperor's Estate, but will herein, for the Help and Defence of the *Low Countries*, do that he may.

' And likewise to cause Mr. *Chamberlain* [Ambassador in the *Low Countries*] practise, that the Imperials may require and provoke him to make this Motion; forasmuch as they have already begun the like Talk with him: And in the mean Season, to permit indirectly our Merchants to reprice upon the *French*, and to hear the *French* Commissioners.

' To proceed in the mean time, both for Money, and likewise the fortifying and guarding of the Frontiers, with such other things fit for to enter the War withal.

' Move the Emperor indirectly, that where the *French* King induceth the *Turk*, it might be considered by his Majesty, and other Princes of Christendom, how the said *French* King might be impeached from his Enterprize.

#### REASONS for this.

' First, By this Means we shall enter with no more than the Emperor: As with the *Germans*, and such other. And so tho' the Emperor should die, [being aged, and much afflicted with the Gout, and last Year dangerously sick] yet the Band should not be without Parties.

' Secondly, It shall be also most honourable to break with the *French* for so common a Quarrel, for the Faith of Christendom.

' Thirdly, We shall hereby avoid the costly and chargable aiding of the Emperor according to the Treaty.'

These were the secret Debates and Consultations in the Council, for the effecting this Design against the *French*. Which as yet they had no mind the *French* should so much as suspect. In the mean time, the King shewed his Love to his Schoolfellow and Friend *Barnaby Fitz-Patric*, that was now in the *French* King's Court, sent thither in the Summer, to learn Experience, and see Fashions. The King was now desirous that he should come home. And that his Revocation might be without giving any Suspicion or Offence, *Pickering*, the Ambassador, was by the Council ordered to give him Advice and Furtherance to obtain Leave, as of his own Disposition, and not taking Knowledge of the King's Pleasure. And therefore *Barnaby* was to be instructed by the Ambassador, that he might pretend, that he was of himself very desirous to return now, and see the

The Secretary's Discourse on that Argument. Galba, B. 12.

*Fitz-Patric* sent for home from France.



ANNO  
1552.

Pickering's  
Answer  
concerning  
Steukley:

Which the  
Lords ac-  
quaint the  
Ambassador  
in the Low  
Countries  
with.

The French  
Commissi-  
oners about  
Sea Affairs.

King's Majesty this Winter Season, the Wars being for the Season of the Year suspended: And that he should so use his coming away, as the same might not be any ways taken suspiciously. The Council prayed the said Ambassador further, to give him his good Counsel and Advice for his like Demeanour.

By this Time *Pickering* had returned his Answer to the Council's Letters concerning *Steukley*. The Sum of which was, That whatsoever the said *Steukley* had told them, he had declared nothing to him of all that he had informed the Council. And moreover, that it was his Thoughts and Belief, that he never heard the *French* King speak such Words as he reported, nor was in Credit with him. Upon which, *Steukley* was committed to the *Tower*. And this the *French* Ambassador was advertised of, that the King had committed him thither for unruly flandering his Master. Which was told him the rather, to suspect the *English* Renegades that were in *France*, as the King himself notes in his Journal.

The Lords of the Council also, in their Letters to *Chamberlain*, Ambassador at *Brussels*, informed him, that Things were fair between the *French* and *English*, as to the Jealousies raised by *Steukley*'s Information, the Ambassador at the *French* Court having satisfied them of the said Person's Falshood and Imposture. Whereat all the Answer *Chamberlain* gave was, that he thanked God that all things were so well as the Lords Letters reported. Letters also of great Weight were now sent to Sir *Richard Morison*, Ambassador with the Emperor, bearing Date the 24th of *September*, which *Chamberlain* conveyed out of hand, with Diligence and Surety, as he was commanded: of which we shall have Account by and by.

The *French* Commissioners, being two Lawyers, that came hither about the Spoils done to the *English*, gave little Satisfaction. They gave an Account, how the Matters of the *English* Merchants were examined and transacted at their Courts in *France*. Secretary *Petre*, Dr. *Wotton*, and Sir *Thomas Smith*, were appointed to treat with them. These shewed, how the Merchants Losses amounted to 50000 Pounds, and upwards, for which they expected Satisfaction. To which the *French* Commissioners gave little Answer, but that they would make Report of it, when they came home, having no Commission for the Consideration thereof. In the beginning of *October* came over *Mons. Ville Andre* in Post from the *French* King, about these Matters. His Message was, that tho' certain Ships and Goods of *English* Men were justly condemned in *France*, yet the *French* King was contented, out of Respect to the King, whose Servants the Owners were, to restore them *gratuitè*. But this was refused; and Answer was made, that the King desired nothing *gratuitè*, but Justice and Expedition. And when *Ville Andre* signified, that it was his Master's Desire, that some Agreements were made between the *English* and *French* concerning the Ordinances and Customs between *England* and *France* in Maritime Affairs; it was answered, that our Ordinances were nothing but Civil Law, and certain antient Additions of the Realm: and they thought it Reason, not to be bound to any other Laws, but the old Laws, where no Fault was to be found in them. And whereas the King had under Confinement certain *French* Men, that robbed on the Sea-coast, this Messenger required a Release for them; it was told him, that they were Pirates, and should be punished according to Justice: Yet Cle-  
mency



mency should be shewed to some. Upon his Departure, Letters were writ, and sent by him to that King, answering other Letters which he brought from him; therein particularly thanking the *French* King for certain Edicts he had lately issued out, which would for the future serve to the Benefit of our Merchants. To this indifferent Understanding, were the two Crowns already come.

ANNO  
1552.

## CHAP. XI.

*An Embassy to the Emperor. Morison's Address to him. The King offers Aid against the Turk.*

**W**E have seen what were the Consultations at the Council Board concerning the Assistance of the Emperor; now let us hear how the *English* Court proceeded in the Resolutions they had taken. It was the 7th Day of *September*, that *John Weston*, Servant to *Morison*, Ambassador with the Emperor, had his Passport and Letter to all Kings, Princes, &c. to suffer him to pass safely by them to the Emperor's Court. He brought with him Instructions and a Memorial, to enter this Communication with the Emperor. It was the Desire of the Lords of the Council, that the Emperor should be so managed, as to be brought to require their Aid before they offered it. Which they thought he would be ready to ask again, having been but the last Summer denied it: For which the Ambassador was now instructed to make Excuse. A great Difficulty to this their falling in with the Emperor, was the Amity lately entered into with *France*. Therefore, for the preserving and covering that, they thought it best to offer him Aid against the *Turk*: Yet were desirous to have a special Messenger sent from the Emperor hither, to hold some further and more secret Conference; not liking the Emperor's Ambassador that then resided here. Thus then Orders came to *Morison*, for addressing himself to the Emperor, in this Month of *September*, upon the King's Return home from his Progress, and upon the Emperor's Advance for the Defence of the *Low Countries*.

Instructions  
sent to the  
Ambassador  
resident with  
the Emperor.

For the Managery of which Address, he was instructed, ' To seek to have Access to the Emperor's own Person, and to declare to him, the King's affectuous Commendations, with such other friendly Words of Office, signifying the King's hearty Love to his said good Brother; and so to enter into the matter of his Charge. And first, To shew the Emperor, that the Regent, his Sister, sent to the King her Letters, about the latter End of *July*; by the same making Declaration of the *French* King's Attempts, and proceeding in Hostility against the Countries of his said good Brother the Emperor; and in the End remembering to the King, the Treaty of Alliance heretofore made between the King's Father and the Emperor, she, the King's said Sister, by her Letters required, in following the Tenor of the said Treaty, to declare the

*Morison's Address to the Emperor.*

*French*



ANNO  
1552.

*French* King, and his Confederates, the King's Enemies. The which Letters came to him, being in his Progress and Pastime, having then very few of his Council with him, (the greatest Part, and that of his trustiest Counsellors, being severally dispersed for his Service, into the remotest Parts of his Realm) the Matter being of itself great and weighty, and the like being moved to him as strongly as could be. Nevertheless, upon some Consideration, such as, for the Time and Place where the King then was, could be no other, he caused his Answer to be made to his said good Brother's Ambassador, in such sort, as he thought in Reason should content him. Which was this summarily: That he was right sorry of the ill Chance of these Wars, and especially of the extreme Continuation thereof, between his good Brother and the *French* King, with both whom he was at Peace. And therefore, considering the Ruin that might thereby come to Christendom, besides his own private Friendship and Love to his said good Brother, he was content, if his said Brother would so think good, to travail the best he might, to bring the Matters in Controversy to a Treaty, and friendly Composition, (as, indeed, so he meant) and was desirous, with his whole Heart and Mind. Secondly, he let his said good Brother's Ambassador understand, his earnest and constant abiding in the same.

He was instructed further, that finding the Emperor not satisfied with the King's former Answer, he should descend into this open and manifest Declaration of the King's great Love and Amity, and say, 'That now upon the King's Return from his Progress, and the Assembly of his Counsellors together again, his former Answer, and the whole Matter was newly considered, and conferring together divers Reasons, with the King's hearty Love towards the State of his good Brother, he resolved not to forbear the Demonstration of the same his Love, notwithstanding the great Extremities which might much move him to the contrary, if he did not prefer Honour, Truth, and perfect Amity, before all other worldly Matters. And, together with his Council, considered the antient, old, inviolate, and natural Amity between his Realm and the House of *Burgundy*; feeling himself as naturally moved to the Tuition and Confirmation of the same, as if it were his own Pawn-Money.' And with all this Preface and Protestation, was brought in the King's Offer of Assistance of the Emperor, and the other States of the Empire, with Forces for the repelling of the *Turk*, if he could bring to pass some League against the *Turk* and his Confederates. The Ambassador concluded, he had nothing more in Commission: But if the Emperor would send somebody into *England*, he might know more. And herein the Policy was, to check the *French*, to keep fair with the Emperor, and to procure more Friends in *Germany*.

Overture  
made to the  
Emperor, to  
assist him a-  
gainst the  
*Turk*.

In the same Manuscript Volume where I find the Memorial, with these Instructions abovesaid, there is also another Memorial of the Charge committed by the King to the said Ambassador, dated *Sept. 24.* with Lines drawn under many of the Words and Sentences, and a Note of Secretary *Cecyl's* Hand, that what was so underlined, was to be put in Cypher. So that I conclude, this was the authentic Memorial sent to the Ambassador; the drawing up of the other above specified, being not so well approved of. This other Memorial then ran to this Tenor:

That



• That he should with all Diligence procure Audience of the Empe- ANNO  
• ror; and at his Access deliver his Letters of Credence, with the King's 1552.  
• most hearty Commendations, and earnest Declaration, that he was most  
• glad to have understanding of his good Estate and Health: And that  
• the King understanding his good and honourable Avauncement towards  
• his *Low Countries*, to the great Comfort of the same, and having  
• the same Love and Good Will towards the prosperous Success of his  
• said Countries, that his late Father, and other his Progenitors, had ma-  
• ny Years past, willed him, his Ambassador, expressly in his Name to  
• congratulate his coming thitherward, and to shew him, that the good  
• Success which the King wished to him, and his Affairs and Enterprizes,  
• was as much as he would to himself, and his own Countries and Patri-  
• monies.

• That when the Ambassador had opened thus much, with as good  
• Words as he could devise, he should begin to descend to this that fol-  
• lows: Using his Earnestness and Frankness as he should see, by his  
• former Sayings, occasion given to him by the Emperor's Acceptation  
• thereof, either by his good Words, or other Behaviour in his Gesture,  
• he should say, that where the King had lately understood of the great  
• Murders, Spoils, and Cruelties, done and committed both in *Hungary*,  
• and upon the Coasts of *Naples*, and other Parts of *Italy*, by the *Turks*,  
• the old common Enemy to the Name and Religion of all Christianity,  
• like as the King could not but from his very Heart lament the same, so  
• he would, for his Part, as might be thought expedient for the Weal  
• Public of Christendom, shew himself willing to accord with his said  
• good Brother, and other Christian Princes and States, for the Repulse  
• of the said *Turk*. And if any such good Means might, by the great  
• Wisdom and Policy of the Emperor, be thought good and devised, to  
• bring the same to some good Purpose and Effect, he, for his Part, would  
• shew himself so ready and well willing thereto, as his said good Brother  
• should well perceive, that he had not only that Zeal to the Conservation  
• and Surety of Christendom, which in a Christian Prince is duly re-  
• quired, but also such Consideration and Regard to his said good Bro-  
• ther, and antient Amity with the House of *Burgundy*, as to Honour and  
• Reason appertained.

• This being spoke by the Ambassador in such good sort as he should  
• see Occasion require, he was instructed to stay and pause a while, as it  
• were looking for some Answer to be made thereto by the Emperor. And  
• that if the Ambassador perceived he took it in thankful Part, then might  
• he entertain the Talk modestly, with such good Words as might seem  
• to him best, to confirm the King's good Affection, to the Continuance  
• of the Amity, and his great Offence and Grief for the Entry of the  
• *Turk* into Christendom. And that if he perceived the Emperor did in  
• so good part receive this the King's Overture, that he should shew him-  
• self willing to enter any further Talk or Device for the further Pro-  
• ceeding, the Ambassador might, as of himself, shew his Readiness and  
• Good Will to do all that he any wise well might, as a good Minister,  
• for the bringing this Purpose to some profitable Effect. Which he should  
• say in his own Opinion, should the better take good Entry and Success,  
• if by some special Man to be sent hither, the King might understand  
• more fully the Emperor's Mind in this Matter.

• But



ANNO  
1552.

‘ But if he should perceive the Emperor did not regard this Overture, either in not liking the Matter itself, or not regarding the King’s Amity as Reason would, and as it was on his part offered; then the Ambassador might use himself more coldly, and diminish the Declaration of the King’s Earnestness, in like sort as the Emperor shewed himself, and conclude, that he had thus done the Message committed to him, and would leave the Consideration to the Emperor, as he should think good.

‘ That if in the opening of the Premises, the Emperor should make any Mention or Interpretation against the *French King*: referring the *Turks Invasion* to the said *French King*, as some Occasion hereof: and so should demand directly or indirectly, whether this Overture be meant to extend toward the *French King*, or any other of Christen Name, that should join in League or Amity with the said *Turks*; the Ambassador might thereto say, that he had no more in Charge presently, than he had said; and therefore, for further opening of the King’s Mind, he thought the same might be best had here.

‘ That if at any Time of this his Talk, the Emperor should gather Occasion to ask the Ambassador, what the King would do, for giving Aid against these Invasions made by the *French King* upon the *Low Countries*, he might Answer, that as he had nothing to say therein, but that he thought the Answer which the King declared to his Ambassador here resident, upon the Letters sent to the King from his good Sister the Queen of *Hungary*, had both been signified to him long before this Time, and also, as he trusted, in Reason contented her. And that in this Point, altho’ the Ambassador knew what was answered, yet the King would not he should enter into the Dispute thereof: Meaning in this, and the rest of Things to be treated with the Emperor, that he should rather procure the sending of some special Man hither, than to treat any thing by the Emperor’s Ambassador, then resident in *England*: Who hitherto had not appeared the fittest Man to increase or enlarge the Amity betwixt the Emperor and the King.

‘ Finally, it was the King’s Pleasure, that the Ambassador should, in the Execution of this present Charge, wholly extend his good Policy and Wisdom, to mark and well advise all such Words of Moment as the Emperor should utter to him in this Talk, by what Order, Behaviour, Gesture, or other Passion of Joy or Grief, the same should be spoken; so as the King might simply, plainly, and very orderly have the true Declaration thereof from him: Wherein he desired so express and special a Report of this Matter, as upon the same he might better conceive, what should be expedient to be further done in this and other his weighty Affairs.

The Council  
to the Amb-  
assador.

Together with these Instructions, the Council wrote this Letter to Sir *Richard Morison*; wherein may further Particulars of this Transaction be seen.

‘ **A**fter our hearty Commendations, with our like Thanks and Commendation of you, for your good Diligence in Advertisements: We do at this Time send with this Packet, a certain Charge, articulated in a Memorial sent to you from the King’s Majesty, and signed with his gracious Hand. In the Execution whereof, we doubt not but ye will use



use good Wisdom, considering the Importance of the Matter. And *ANNO*  
 where his Majesty in the last Clause requireth your Diligence in Ob- *1552.*  
 servation, and to have the Report made orderly and simply; the Mean-  
 ing is, upon the same to consider here the Consequence of more Mat-  
 ter. And at this Time we send this Depeche, not by thorow Post  
 from hence, because we would avoid the Suspicion of the *French*.  
 Who, giving us lately many Causes to doubt them, may perchance be  
 the more jealous of our sending thither. Herein, we know, you may  
 add Matter of Weight. And yet, we pray you, take no more Know-  
 ledge than in the King's Majesty's Instructions you are certainly pre-  
 scribed. For it behooveth, in these manner of Matters, to use great Se-  
 crecy and Foresight. The *French* King's Commissioners come hither  
 to the Court, with the *French* Ambassador, the 27th of this *September*.  
 Of whom we shall hear what Restitution is to be made for our Depre-  
 dations.

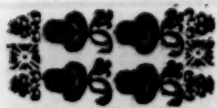
The Emperor's Ambassador's Wife hath here a Son born; to whom  
 the King's Majesty is pleased to be Godfather. We pray you, either  
 let us have certain Answer by the Bearer hereof, or by some of your  
 own; and that with as much Diligence as may be. Any other thing  
 we have not of Importance: and therefore end with wishing you there  
 such Success as we have need of; and after these your late Turmoils,  
 to have some more Rest. From *Windsor*, the 24th of *Septemb. 1552.*

*Your loving Friends,*

|                        |                          |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Winchester.</i>     | <i>Rich. Cotton.</i>     |
| <i>Northumberland.</i> | <i>John Gate.</i>        |
| <i>J. Bedford.</i>     | <i>William Petre, S.</i> |
| <i>F. Huntingdon.</i>  | <i>W. Cecyl.</i>         |
| <i>G. Cobham.</i>      |                          |

When *Morison* had delivered the aforefaid Message to the Emperor, ac-  
 cording to his Instructions, the Emperor thanked the King for this Offer,  
 and said, he would cause the Regent to send a Man to the King for the  
 said Purpose, and to know the King's further Meaning in that behalf.  
 And so the Ambassador signified to the King, in the begining of *October*.

*The Effect  
 of this Em-  
 bassy.*





ANNO

1552.

## C H A P. XII.

*The King's Military Exercises. A splendid Muster before him. The Dearth. The Lady Mary. The King's Progress. Occurrences. A Monstrous Child born. Strange Fishes taken in the Thames. The King consults for the Estate of Religion, and the Realm.*

The King  
rides with  
his Guard  
armed to  
Black Heath.



OW let us look upon Matters at Home. In the Month of May, behold! some of the King's Martial Exercises and Recreations. On the 12th Day, he rode thro' *Greenwich* Park unto *Black Heath*, with his Guard armed with Bows and Arrows, in their Jerkins and Doublets. Then the King ran at the Ring, together with other Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen.

A splendid  
Muster be-  
fore him.

The last Year the chief Lords of the Land, and such as waited on the King, had appointed under themselves a considerable Body of Men, well armed and horsed, to be for Service upon any Emergence or Summons of their Prince. On the 16th Day of the Month aforesaid, the King rode into the said Park, to see the goodly Musters of the Lords Men. Where every Lord's Men marched in several Companies. A Trumpet blowing before each. And they had each their Standards, with Pensils: Their Coats in Embroidery of their Lord's Colours: Their Spears of the like Colour, and their Footmen attending. The first Band was of the King's Pensioners, the Lord *Bray* being their Captain, and the King's great Banner of Armes, born of Four, of Damask, Blue and Red: The King's Trumpeter blowing, and the Pensioners in goodly Array and Harness from Top to Toe: Having goodly Bosses on their Coats; And their Men in like Colours of Cloth. The second Band of Men of Armes, was the Lord Treasurer's, Marquis of *Winchester*, having a White Standard, with a Faulcon of Gold; their Coats White and Red: Who two Days before, had mustered in *Moorfields*, being a goodly Company, consisting of an Hundred Men well furnished, provided with great Horses, and a Trumpeter blowing before them. The third Captain was the Lord Great Master, with his Men of Armes: His Standard of Red Damask, a Lion Silver, crowned Gold, and Ragged Staff: The Coats all Black Velvet in Embroidery the half, and the other half in Cloth embroidered, White and Red. Fourthly, the Duke of *Suffolk*, with his Men of Armes; and his Standard an Unicorn Silver Ermine in a Sun-beam Gold, White and Murry, and his Pensils *Flaunders* Colour. The fifth, the Lord Privy Seal his Men of Armes: His Standard of three Colours, a White Goat, the Standard powdered with Escalop Shells: His Coat Red and White in Broidery, and Pensils of the same. The sixth was, the Band of the Lord Great Chamberlain, *Par* Marquis of *Northampton*: His Standard Yellow and Black, a Maidenhead crowned Gold: His Coats Yellow Velvet, half the Men, and the other half wearing Cloth, Footmen in Yellow Velvet, and Pensils. The seventh Band was, the Master of



of the Horfe, Lord *Warwic*, his Men: His Guydon of Red Damask, a White Lion crowned Gold, and powdered with ragged Staves of Silver, and Pensils. The eighth Captain was, the Earl of *Rutland*, with his Men: His Standard of Yellow and Blue, with a Peacock in Pride Gold, and Pensils with a Peacock. Coats Blue in Broidery. The ninth was, the Earl of *Huntingdon*, with his Men: His Standard a Baboon, [which indeed is the Crest of the Lord *St. John's*] the Coats Blue embroidered Velvet; and Pensils, with a Bull's Head crowned, about his Neck. The tenth Band was, the Earl of *Pembroke* his Men: His Standard of three Colours, Red, White, and Blue; and a Green Dragon with an Arm in his Mouth; and Pensils. The eleventh was, the Lord Admiral, with his Men: His Guydon the Crofs of *S. George* Black, with an Anchor of Silver: Coats Black, and broidered with White. The twelfth, the Lord Chamberlain *Darcy*, his Men: His Standard a Maid with a Flower in her Hand. Coats Red broidered with White, and Pensils. The thirteenth, the Lord *Cobham*, with his Men: His Standard White and Black, and a *Saracen's* Head in it. His Coat Black garded with White, and Pensils. The fourteenth belonged to Mr. Treasurer *Cheny*, Lord of the Cinque Ports: His Guydon a Red Crofs, and Half a Rose in a Sun-beam Black: Spears and Pensils. Some of these Bands of Men of Armes consisted of an Hundred, and some of Fifty.

Provisions of Food continued dear, notwithstanding a Proclamation the King had lately set forth, fixing the Prices of Victuals. Which was not so well observed in *London*, as it was expected upon such a Command, it should be. Tho' in this Month of *May*, a Cart-load of Beef was brought away from a Butcher, as forfeited, because he refused to sell it according to the Proclamation. But this would not remedy the Dearth, but People were forced to buy at high Prices. Whereupon, *June 7.* the Duke of *Northumberland*, and divers other Lords of the Council, came into *London*, and sat at *Guild Hall*. Where being waited upon by the Lord Maior, and his Brethren the Aldermen, they were severely reprehended, as for certain other Causes, so chiefly because the Maior looked no better after the Provisions in the City, and for the reasonable selling of the same.

Care taken  
for the  
Dearth.

The Parliament having given the King a Subsidy, this Summer the Officers were busily employed in collecting it. But here a Remark must be made, of the King's Grace and Charity towards the poor godly Strangers that were fled hither. For in this Month of *June*, he made a Grant to divers of these Aliens, being born out of his Dominions, to detain every Sum of Money taxed on their Heads, for their Relief, as of the King's free Gift.

The King's  
Favour to  
poor Stran-  
gers.

The Lady *Mary's* Grace came *June 11.* on Horseback thro' *London* unto *S. John's*, with a goodly Company, both of Gentlemen and Ladies. And two Days after, rode from *S. John's* to *Tower Wharf*, and took her Barge to *Greenwich*, where her Brother then kept his Court. And in the Even she returned again by Water. Her Visit seemed to be, to take her Leave of the King, ready to take his Progress.

The Lady  
*Mary* goes to  
Court.

*June 16.* the Duke of *Northumberland* took Horse at Five of the Clock in the Morning, intending towards the North, to look after the Marches against *Scotland*. Of which he was constituted Lord Warden; accompanied with a gallant Retinue of Lords and Knights, to bring him on

*Northumber-  
land* goes in-  
to the North.



ANNO  
1552.

The King  
begins his  
Progress.

Religious  
Cheats.

A Monster  
born.

Divers great  
Fishes taken  
in the Thames.

Sir Anthony  
Wingfield  
dies.

his Way. He took in by the way, at *Sempringham*, the Lord Admiral's: Thence to *Lincoln*, and *Hull*, where he spent eight or ten Days. He declined *York*, because of the Plague there. And so Northward. We shall hear more of him hereafter.

*June 27.* The King removed from *Greenwich* by Water unto *Putney*. And there he took Horse unto *Hampton Court* on his Progress. And lying there ten Days, he went forwards to *Otelands*, and so to *Guilford*, and other Places Southward, as we shall read hereafter.

This Time was not without Religious Cheats. There was one *Greg*, who once counterfeited himself a Prophet, set on the Pillory *July 1.* for cheating, in selling Pots of Strawberries filled up half way from the bottom with Fearn. And in the same Month, were whipped publickly a young Man, and two Women, for pretending to Signs and Visions. One of these Women endeavoured to poison her Husband, and admitted her Servant to her Bed. Therefore the Morrow after the whipping, she was set on the Pillory.

*August 3.* In *Oxfordshire*, in a Town called *Middleton Stony*, eight Miles from *Oxford*, the good Wife of the House known by the Sign of the *Eagle*, was delivered of a double Child, begotten by her late Husband *John Kenner*, deceased. The Form whereof being so monstrous, there were printed Relations of it, and multitudes of People were curious to see it. It had two Heads, two Bodies, four Arms, four Hands: But downwards one Body, one Navel, one Fundament, at which they voided both Urine and Ordure. It had two Legs, with two Feet on one Side, and on the other Side one Leg with two Feet, having but nine Toes. The 18th of *August* following, one of these Children died, and on the 19th died the other.

*Aug. 10.* were three Dolphins taken up between *Woolwich* and *Greenwich*. One was sent to the Court for the King; the other were sold in *Fish-street*, to them that were minded to buy them. And on the 16th Day were taken up at *Broken Wharf*, three other great Fishes; and in three other Places, three more, and sold in *Fish-street*. And, to put these Matters together, on the 10th Day of the next Month, were three great *Porpus's* driven up to *London Bridge* with a great number of Boats; some with Nets, some with Bills, and some with Morice-pikes. And then they returned down again, and the Boats after them, between Four and Five of the Clock in the Afternoon. There had been great Rains: after which they were seen. The 9th Day of the next Month, *viz.* of *October*, were taken and brought thro' *London*, and under *London Bridge*, two great Fishes, and so to *Paris Garden*, and next unto *Westminster*. Whereof the one was the Male, and the other the Female.

*Aug. 15.* died at *Bednal Green*, that noble Knight Sir *Anthony Wingfield*, Comptroller of the King's House, and of his Privy Council, and Knight of the Garter. And Mr. *Cotton* was advanced to be Comptroller in his Stead. And on the 21st of the same Month, was the aforesaid Knight buried at *Stepney*, with a great Company of Mourners, with Priests and Clerks singing, and an Herald. The Order of the Funeral was after this manner: The Corps was carried from *Bednal Green* over *Mile-end Green*, with his Standard, and a great Banner of Armes, and his Helmet, Target, the Garter, the Sword, the Crest a Bull of Gold and Sable. There was a Communion: at which preached the Vicar of *Sbor-*



*Sborditch*, a *Scot*, [named *Makebray*, if I mistake not, afterwards an *ANNO* Exile.] Afterwards was a great Dinner made for all Comers. And 1552. after Dinner, were set up over the Place where his Body lay, his Helmet, his Target, his Sword, his Standard, and his Banner of Armes, having all, Piece by Piece, been before offered to the Priest.

Aug. 26. Departed this Life, Sir *Clement Smith* Kt. a Gentleman of *Essex*, Uncle unto the King, having married Queen *Jane's* Sister. And Sir *Clement Smith*.

Septemb. 5. A Proclamation went forth, that the Butchers in *London* should sell Beef, and Mutton, and Veal, the best, for a Penny Farthing the Pound: and Necks and Legs at three Farthings the Pound. And the best Lamb eight Pence the Quarter. And such as refused to sell after these Rates, were to forfeit their Freedom for ever. Prices set upon Meat.

Things at this Time were not over-fair between *England* and *France*; as may appear by this Skirmish at Sea, first began by the *French*; who with two great Ships came down upon a little *English* Bark, called *The Little Ager*, bound for *Spain*, which suffered sore by them, striking down her great Mast. But in the Fight another Ship, called *The Great Bark Ager*, following her, rescued her, and overcame them both, and brought them to *Portsmouth*. This happened Sept. 26. A Fight at Sea.

Octob. 8. A Proclamation was issued forth, commanding that no Men that had great Horses, fit for Service, should sell them; lest by the furnishing of *France*, or the Emperor, (who, no question, offered tempting Prices) *England* might leave herself disfurnished. Great Horses.

The King being returned from his Progress to *Hampton Court*, Sept. 28. began now, after his Pastime, to set himself, like a wife and conscientious Prince, to the serious Thoughts of his Kingdom. And by this that I am now going to relate, will appear, to what Maturity of Understanding, and Wisdom, far beyond his Years, he was already arrived, being now in *October* Fifteen Years old. In which Month, he exercised his Thoughts on three weighty Matters, for the public Good. The first was, for Religion. The second, for the Security and Prosperity of his Kingdom. The third, for the procuring a sufficient Quantity of Money, to clear himself of Debt, and to raise a Treasure for all Events. And for each of these, he drew up with his own Hand *Memorials*, consisting in divers Particulars: Which were as followeth. The King bends his Thoughts for the good Estate of his Realm.

And first, for his Care of Religion, he digested this into several Articles. I. For an Uniformity of Doctrine, to which all Preachers should set their Hands. This was intended to establish the Church in a Truth of Doctrine, as it was already in a sober, decent Form of Worship in the public Addresses made to God; and to put a Check to the old Errors, and Popish Opinions, that yet remained in the Heads of many Priests, still officiating in the Church. And this good Purpose of his, he brought to Effect before his Death, by setting forth the Book of Articles of Religion, intituled, *Articles agreed upon by the Bishops, and other learned Men, in the Convocation held at London, Anno 1552. for the avoiding Diversity of Opinions, and establishing Consent touching true Religion*. They were in Number Forty two, and are most-what the same with the Thirty nine Articles established in Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign. His Devices for Religion.

II. For the abrogating the old Canon Law, and establishing a new. There was so much Popery and Superstition mixed with the Ecclesiastical Laws, and such a multitude of Popish Canons and Decrees, that they became



ANNO  
1552.

became a Snare and a Burden : Being also very injurious to the State and Dignity of Princes, extolling so immensely the Papal Power, and subjecting Kings in their own Dominions to the Bishops of *Rome*. Infomuch that the King's Father procured an Act of Parliament for the purging those Laws, or rather for the framing a Body of good Laws in their stead. This was, after divers Years, by the indefatigable Labours of Archbishop *Cranmer*, and the Countenance of this King, brought to Perfection, and wanted nothing but the King's longer Life, and an Act of Parliament, to bring them into Force and Practice.

III. *A Catechism to be set forth to be taught in all Grammar Schools.* This the King thought very needful, for the bringing up Youth in Christian Principles, and Knowledge of true Religion. And this he saw finished in his Life-time : A short Catechism in *Latin* coming forth not long after this, by the King's Authority ; *Alexander Nowel*, Master of *Westminster* School, and Prebendary of the Church there, being the Author thereof.

IV. And because the Age was so loose in their Manners, and many gross Sins were ordinarily and openly committed, to the Scandal of the Christian, especially the *Reformed* Christian Religion, and because Ecclesiastical Discipline was so necessary for the good Estate of the Church ; therefore did the good King set it down in his *Memorial*, for another material thing to be regarded in Religion, *That Commissions should be granted those Bishops that were Grave, Learned, Wise, Sober, and of good Religion, for the executing of Disciplin.* There were still many that filled the Episcopal Sees, that were old Popish Bishops, but made a shift to comply. These the King was minded to exempt out of this Commission, not thinking it fit to intrust Disciplin with them, but only with those that were *Grave, Learned, Wise, Sober, and of good Religion.* And,

V. Because the Incumbents of Churches, and those that had Livings and Benefices, and the Cure of Souls, were very negligent in their Office, and Non-resident, and followed other Callings, and took little Regard of the People committed to their Charge, leaving their Churches sometimes destitute, or putting in ignorant Curates, that could scarcely read, much less edify the People by sober Instruction in preaching of the Word of God : And many Bishops took little regard of all these Defaults in their Clergy, and kept but few Preachers themselves : Therefore for the Reformation of this, he seemed to determine another Royal Visitation ; and therein, *To find Fault with the Slothfulness of the Pastors, [i. e. Bishops] and to deliver them Articles of Visitation ; willing and commanding them to be more diligent in their Office, and to keep more Preachers.*

VI. *For making more Homilies, and more Injunctions,* for the Service and Supply of Ministers, who were ignorant, and could not preach ; or negligent and superstitious, and did not sufficiently observe the Rules and Institutions of the Reformation. But this came to no Effect in his Reign.

VII. The King did also at this Time make *Memorandums* for certain Bishoprics, namely, for the filling of two then vacant, *viz.* an Archbishopric in *Ireland*, and the Bishopric of *Hereford*. For which latter, he noted down Mr. *Harly*, one of his own preaching Chaplains : Who soon after was accordingly preferred to that See. And *Tunstal* being deprived



prived of the Bishopric of *Durham*, the King made a *Memorandum* for dividing that rich Bishopric into two, and for placing fit Men in them. These were King *Edward's* Thoughts and Memorials for Religion.

ANNO

1552.

Secondly, His Deliberation for the Security and Prosperity of the Realm, as it appears under his Hand, consisted in several Particulars also.

His Devices  
for the Na-  
tion's Secu-  
rity.

I. The former, namely, the *Security* and Safety of his Kingdom, he found very necessary to be consulted at this Juncture. For he was in effect come to a Resolution of breaking with *France*, which had dealt so injuriously with his Merchants and Subjects, and trifled with him in making that reasonable Satisfaction he required: and which, as soon as a Peace should be made with the Emperor, intended, as the King had Intelligence, to fall upon his Territories in *France*, and upon *England* by the help of the *Scots*. And in this Month of *October*, it was also discovered, how that King practised in *Ireland* with the Earl of *Desmond*, and other *Irish* Lords, by one *Paris* an *Irish* Man, who now revealed it, and got his Pardon.

Therefore the King first made a Remembrance of Things to be done for the strengthening of his Territories bordering on *France*, viz. 1. For the Fortifying of *Newenham Bridge*: Which Place, as *Steukley* had discovered, the *French* King intended to force. 2. For amending the Gitty of *Calais*. 3. For making Store-houses at *Guifnes*.

Next, for the providing for his Realm at home, he made these Remembrances: 1. To strengthen the Havens of *Falmouth* and *Dartmouth*: About which Places, the said *Steukley* had informed, that the *French* King intended to invade *England* on the West. 2. To amend the Peer of *Dover*, and repair the Castle there, and the Haven of *Sandwich*. 3. To Fortify *Portsmouth*: another Haven lying towards *France*. And then for securing the Parts of *England* bordering upon *Scotland*: 4. To accomplish the Fortifying of *Berwic*, and the Reparation of *Beaucastel* in *Tyndal*, and the Fortification of *Black Bank*. And still further, for the Strength of the Nation: 5. To make more great Ordnance of the Copper in the Tower, and the Bell-mettal. 6. To provide more Armour, and more Pikes, Hagbuts, Staves, Bow-staves, Bills, &c. 7. To send Commissioners for viewing the State of the Realm, for keeping of great Horses: And whether they did observe the Statutes made concerning the same. For which Purpose, at this very Time a Proclamation was issued out, dated *Octob. 5.* admonishing all Persons that were bound by the Statute made *Anno 33 Hen. VIII.* to keep great Horses, to have the same in a Readiness at all Times, to be mustered by such Commissioners as the King should in every Country appoint for that Purpose, upon Pain of the Forfeitures in the said Statute expressed.

II. For the Prosperity and Wealth of the Nation, the King made these two Memorials: The Device of two Marts; one at *Hull*, for the Northern Parts; and the other at *Southampton*, for the Southern. For the better making himself Master of this Project for the Marts, he penned another distinct Discourse: First, of the Reasons and Causes, why it was then most necessary to have a Mart in *England*: Secondly, how the Mart would be brought to pass: Thirdly, the Discommodities and Lets to the Mart to be kept in *England*: Fourthly, the Remedies and Answers thereto. His Writing concerning every of these Particulars, are pub-



ANNO published in the History of the \* *Reformation*. 2. *To bring more Arts into the Realm. So that all may not stand by Clothing.*

1552.  
\* Vol. II. Ap-  
pend. p. 78.  
His Device  
for raising  
Money.

His third Consultation was as weighty as any of the former, namely, for the procuring of a Quantity of Money, to enable him to pay his Debts, and to make a Fund for any future Service. For indeed the King found himself now sinking deeper and deeper into Debt, by borrowing Money at high Interest, more than he could well pay. For I find him this Year taking up Money thrice at *Antwerp*, by his Agent *Gresbam*. That is to say, in *May*,

|                                            |         |                       |
|--------------------------------------------|---------|-----------------------|
| Of <i>Wolf Recheling</i>                   | - - - - | 64000 Florens Carols. |
| Of <i>Jasper Schetz</i> , and his Partners | - - -   | 64200 Flor. Car.      |
| Of <i>Anthony Fuggar</i> , and his Nephews | - - -   | 160500 Flor. Car.     |

Whereof the two former Sums were payable in *December*, and the latter in *November*. Again, in *July* the King took up

|                                           |       |                  |
|-------------------------------------------|-------|------------------|
| Of the <i>Schetz</i> , and his Nephews    | - - - | 44640 Flor. Car. |
| Of <i>Conrad Raylinger</i> , and his Sons | - - - | 36860 Flor. Car. |

Both Sums payable in *July*, 1553. For which the Maior and City of *London* were Security. And to them the King gave a Recognizance, therein discharging them, and their Heirs, and Successors, Lands, Possessions, and Goods, both on this Side the Sea, and beyond. Again, in *September* the King took up

|                                            |         |                   |
|--------------------------------------------|---------|-------------------|
| Of <i>Francis Van Hall</i>                 | - - - - | 185560 Flor. Car. |
| Of <i>Anthony Fuggar</i> , and his Nephews | - - -   | 164116 Flor. Car. |
| Of <i>John Rantzow</i> , Kt.               | - - - - | 18559 Flor. Car.  |
| More of the <i>Fuggars</i>                 | - - - - | 128500 Flor. Car. |

Whereof the two former Sums were payable in *August*, 1553. the third in *September* following, and the fourth in *February* the said Year.

By this frequent taking up of Money, it appeared, his Debts were great, and his Treasure was low: So that upon any emergent Necessity, he might be put to pressing Streights. Which the King well considering, contrived with himself for the composing of two things; viz. the Discharging of his present Debts, which amounted now to 300000 Pounds. And to get a Treasure for all Events, whatever Chances might happen, whereby he might have present Occasion of a Mass of Money. Which Treasure, he concluded, should be 50000 Pounds. For the effecting of both which, he laid this Scheme: viz.

I. For the getting himself out of Debt, to retrench his Expences:  
1. *By diminishing the Charges of the Pensioners Table, of the Lord Priory Seal's, of the Physician's, and of the Master of the Household; giving them reasonable Recompences.* As the Month before, viz. in *September*, the King began that Course, when the young Lords Table was taken away, and those of the Masters of Requests, the Serjeants at Armes, and divers other extraordinary Allowances, as the King noted in his Journal. 2. *By providing for the Wardrobe, that the Charge might be the less.* 3. *By discharging of the Admiralty.* 4. *And of the Posts.* 5. *And of certain Bulwarks on the Sea-side, thought to be superfluous.* And accordingly I find a Letter in this Month of *October*, to the Lord Chamberlain, for his Warrant, to discharge the unnecessary Bulwarks in the County of *Essex*, accord-



according to a Schedule of the same, signed by the Privy Council. And **ANNO**  
 hereupon the Bulwarks of Earth and Boards, in *Essex*, which had con- **1552.**  
 tinual Allowance of Soldiers in them, were discharged. By which was  
 saved presently, 500 Pounds *per Annum*. and hereafter 700 Pounds  
 more, as the King notes in his Journal. 6. *Discharging likewise of 1000*  
*Men in Ireland, besides what had been already discharged.* 7. *Of 500*  
*Men at Barwic, when his Forts should be repaired; and 200 at Guisnes,*  
*for the Winter.* 8. *By bringing the Augmentation Court into the Exche-*  
*quer, and so likewise the Court of First-Fruits and Tenths, and saving all*  
*those Fees that might be spared.* 9. *By examining, whether the Receiv-*  
*ers of the King's Monies, and such like Officers, had Portage Money al-*  
*lowed them by their Patents. And if they had, how they got it.* it being  
 something, it seems, not formerly allowed. By which Portage Money,  
 they had good Consideration allowed them, for the bringing or sending  
 of the King's Money to the Exchequer, or elsewhere. This the King  
 made a Note of, to retrench. 10. *By discharging likewise of superfluous*  
*Fees in the Duchy, and the Wards.* And as these were the King's Thoughts  
 of good Husbandry, and for cutting off what Expences might be spared,  
 for the saving Money to enable him to pay his Debts: So,

II. For the gathering of a Treasure, and getting a Mass of Money, he  
 devised this Course: 1. *To gather and coin the Church Plate.* For which  
 there were soon after Commissions issued out, to Persons of the chiefest  
 Eminency in the severall Counties, to take away, and convert to the  
 King's Use, all such Plate as was more than necessary for the celebrating  
 the Communion. 2. *To sell some Lands, for the making up the Sum of*  
*5000 Pounds, namely, the Lands of certain Chantries, Colleges, Houses,*  
*and Beaumont's Lands, late Master of the Rolls, forfeited now to the*  
*King.* 3. *To redeem the Leases pertaining to the Liveries at Westmin-*  
*ster, Waltham, Reading, and S. Albans.* 4. *To call in for the Remnant*  
*of the King's Debts.* 5. *To take Account of all those that have had to do*  
*with the King's Money, since the 36th of King Henry VIII.* For this al-  
 so a Commission was issued out. 6. *The Stay of Lead.* This was *Gres-*  
*ham's* Counsel to the Duke of Northumberland, as may be seen before.  
 7. *To sell the Bell-metal.* 8. *To execute the Penal Laws touching Horses,*  
*Plows, &c. for Riots, Oppressions, Planting and Graffing of Trees, for the*  
*Size of Wood and Billet, Forestalling and Regrating.* I find divers Com-  
 missions issued out for these Purposes: Which, no doubt, created some-  
 times Oppressions and hard Dealing towards the People. And I am apt  
 to think, the hand of Northumberland was with the King in this, whose  
 Father had put it into the Head of this King's Grandfather, to take his  
 Advantage upon his Subjects, for the breaking of old obsolete Laws, which  
 had pecuniary Penalties annexed to them. But it cost him his Head.  
 9. *To take the Advantage of the Offences and Forfeitures of the Merchants*  
*of the Stilyard.* 10. *To call a Parliament, to get a Subsidy in respect of*  
*the Defence of the English robbed by the French.* 11. *To sell certain*  
*Jewels, to the Sum of 15000 Pounds.* 12. *To examine how the Sale of*  
*the Fustians was made, and also of the Copper;* which the King had  
 bought of the *Fuggars*, and the *Schetz*, according to the Custom of those  
 that borrowed Money of them, to take some Part in Commodities:  
 13. *To borrow Money of the Staplers.* Which the King did this Month,  
 to the Sum of 40000 Pounds; that is, twenty Shillings upon every  
 Cloth



**ANNO** Cloth exported. And there was at a Shipping this Month of *October*,  
**1552.** carried out 40000 broad Cloths. 14. *To call in for Sir Anthony Gui-*  
*dot's Obligations.* For there were some Dealings between the King and  
 him, the King granting him, being a Stranger, a Liberty of Trade, and  
 he entring into Obligations to the King for that Privilege. I find also,  
 the King granted him a Protection. Lastly, *To take Order for the Mines*  
*in Ireland.* For there were Mines lately found out there, and several *Al-*  
*mains*, expert in Mines, were procured, to search and dig in them. But  
 I think this turned but to little Account, and the King, not long after, had  
 Thoughts of discharging these *Almains*.

Commissions  
 issued out  
 for raising  
 Money.

According to these Devices of the King for raising Money, there were  
 in *December* and *January* divers Commissions issued out: and some of  
 them somewhat oppressive. As for that, for requiring of all Church  
 Plate, (excepting what was requisite for the Administration of the Sa-  
 crament) the King, it appears, was moved to do this upon these Consi-  
 derations, as he wrote himself, 'That he thought that way best, be-  
 ' cause it should make Things to be looked for, that else peradventure  
 ' would be lost: as Church Plate; which, as Men said, was daily con-  
 ' veyed away. And hereby the Bullion might remain still, [and be for  
 ' a further Reserve] and the Land not sold. [Which was appointed so  
 ' to be, for raising Money.] Which the King thought better to be be-  
 ' stowed upon those that had served him, [in Places of Trust, and Offices  
 ' about his Person] than sold to Auditors and Pen-men; [such, he meant,  
 ' as were in Places of Account, and Receivers of the King's Revenues]  
 ' who, having store of Money, would buy it.' And as for the Commis-  
 sion to examine the Breakers of Laws, which were to be punished by  
 pecuniary Mulcts and Forfeitures, to alleviate this, the King wrote,  
 ' That the Forfeits being demanded of such as had willingly devoured  
 ' their Neighbours, and broken the Law, would do much Good.' He  
 meant, by making the Laws better observed for the future, and to pacify  
 many People that had suffered by their Oppressions. And lastly, for  
 the Commissions, whereby the King's Officers, and Receivers, and those  
 that were intrusted with the King's Money, were to be called to Ac-  
 count, he intended, that what Monies should be recovered of them,  
 should be set apart for a Stock for any future Event. For so he wrote in  
 his Book, ' The Arrearages of the Surveyors and Auditors of the Courts,  
 ' shall be left for a Treasure, or not dismembred.

The King's  
 Computa-  
 tion.

In fine, it was not far from this Time, that the King applied him-  
 self to compute his own Debts, and his own Treasure, thus:

|                                               |            |
|-----------------------------------------------|------------|
|                                               | l.         |
| Debts owing beyond Sea - - - - -              | 200000     |
| Debts owing to him - - - - -                  | 100000 l.) |
| The Subsidy, which he reckoned at - 80000 l.) | 200000     |
| Superfluous Church Plate - - - - -            | 20000 l.)  |

Besides this he had,

|                            |        |
|----------------------------|--------|
|                            | l.     |
| In the Household - - - - - | 20000  |
| Of the Mints - - - - -     | 10000  |
| Michaelmas Rent - - - - -  | 10000  |
| Treasure - - - - -         | 100000 |

Bullion



|                            | l.    |
|----------------------------|-------|
| Bullion - - - - -          | 34000 |
| Lands to be sold - - - - - | 3000  |
| Fustians - - - - -         | 14000 |

ANNO  
1552.

Thus did this young Prince mind his Royal Estate, and look after his Treasure, as knowing it the very Nerves and Marrow of the flourishing Condition of a Kingdom.

### CHAP. XIII.

*Matters of Ireland. The Emperor raises Money in the Low Countries. Antwerp. The English Merchants there. Buckholt's Process against the King.*

**M**ATTERS in *Ireland* about this Time stood thus. There had been lately some Disturbances and Commotions in the Northern Parts, by *O Conor*, and some other *Irish* Lords, blown up, as it seems, by the *French*, and the *Scots*: Making use of the Practice of one *George Paris*, a discontented *Irish* Man; who, at length, in hope of his Lands, made Discovery, and had Letters promising him Pardon, and more Favour. Which coming to the Knowledge of the Queen of *Scots*, he was clapt up in *Striveling* Castle, when he was about coming out of *Scotland* into *England*. Seasonable Opposition being made against these Stirs, by some of the Nobility and chief Men in that Kingdom, and by the Cities of *Dublin* and *Drogheda*, under the Lord Deputy, Things were appeased, and set at quiet. Whereupon, in *October* the King sent several Letters; one to the Lord Chancellor and Council; another to the Master of the Rolls there; another to the Master of the Ordnance; and a fourth to the Earl of *Desmond*; signifying, that as the Lord Deputy there had advertised his Majesty of their diligent Service done to him in the Expedition Northwards, so he would not neglect to keep the same in good Remembrance to requite, when Occasion should require. And two other Letters of the same Effect were sent to *Drogheda* and *Dublin*. The King was now busy for settling the whole State of *Ireland* in good Order.

At this Juncture, the King sent for *Crofts*, the Lord Deputy, over to his Presence, the Letters importing, That forasmuch as certain Articles sent unto the Privy Council, could not be resolved and answered, without present Conference with him, by his Majesty and the Council, he should repair thither, leaving the Charge of that Realm, during his Absence, to the Chancellor there, the two Justices of the Bench and Common Pleas, and the chief Baron of the Exchequer, jointly to minister the Affairs of that Realm, by the Advice of such other Counsellors there,

The Lord Deputy sent for over.



**ANNO** as they should think needful. This Letter was dated *Octob. 27.* Yet, **1552.** Counsels altering, *Novemb. 7.* following, Letters came from the King to the said Lord Deputy, to nominate and appoint Sir *Thomas Cusake* to supply the Place of chief Governour of the Realm, during the Absence of him the said Deputy, together with Sir *Gerard Aylmer*, Justice of the Bench. And another Letter, of the same Date, was sent to the Earl of *Desmond*, to aid and assist them, together with Thanks given him for his former Service. But upon some new Advice, it was not safe for the Deputy as yet to be absent from *Ireland*; for *Nov. 26.* Letters were sent to him, to stay his coming away for a while, till the King's Pleasure should be further signified unto him.

But stayed.  
And why.  
King's Journ.

The Reason whereof was this: Letters had been seized in *Boloignois*, by some *Burgundians* in the Emperor's Service. Which Letters were writ from the Queen of *Scots* to the *French King*: Importing, how she had sent *O Conor's* Son into *Ireland*, to comfort the Lords of *Ireland*, who had lately been defeated, and to encourage them to attempt new Disturbances. These Letters being brought to the Queen Regent, she ordered *Mons. De Langie*, the Treasurer of *Flanders*, to acquaint Mr. *Gresham*, the King's Agent, (then at *Antwerp*) with them. Who, *Nov. 24.* arrived at the *English* Court, and shewed these Matters there. Whereupon Counsils were taken to send Letters by *Henry Knowles*, a special Messenger, in Post, to stay the Deputy, if he met him in *Ireland*, that he might watch these intended Mutinies, and be provided against them; with Advice that he should pretend his own private Affairs for his present Stay, and to prolong his Going from Week to Week, lest it might be perceived. *Knowles* also carried with him Articles concerning the whole State of that Realm: which the Deputy was willed to answer. For the which Purpose, he had been sent for over, to give Satisfaction thereunto by his own Mouth. For this Discovery and Intelligence, a Letter of Thanks was written to the Regent: signifying withal, a Desire of further Amity.

Coinage of  
Monies in  
Dublin.

In *November* some Stop was put to the Coinage in *Dublin*, upon the Death of *Martin Pirry* Esq; Treasurer of the Mints there. But *Decemb. 25.* Letters were wrote to the Council, to give order to the Officers of the Mint to proceed to the Coinage of such further Portions of Bullion, as ought to have been coined by the Grant made to the said *Pirry*, so the same exceeded not the Value of 8000 Pounds more than was already coined. For it was but in *July* last, that an Indenture was made between the King and this *Pirry*, witnessing, That for divers urgent Causes and Considerations, the King minding for the present to coin a certain Mass of Bullion within his Mints erected in the City and Castle of *Dublin* in *Ireland*, had ordained and made the said *Martin* to be Master or Treasurer of his said Mint, *Oliver Daubeny* to be the Comptroller thereof, and *William Williams* to be Assay-master: And where his Highness had delivered to the said *Martin* the Quantity and Sum of 1500 Pound Weight of fine Silver of *Troy* Weight, his Majesty willed, granted, and agreed, that the said *Martin Pirry*, his Executors and Assigns, with the Comptroller and Assay-master of the said Mint for the Time being, and with such Monies, Ministers, and Labourers, as to them should seem good, should melt, work, and make in the fore-said Mint, the said Quantity and Sum of 1500 Pounds Weight of fine Silver,



Silver, into one manner of Silver Monies, which should be called *Pieces of Six Pence*, running for Six Pence of lawful Money of *England*; and should be of such Weight, as Sixty and Twelve of them should weigh one Pound Weight of *Troy*; and that every Pound Weight of the same Monies should hold and be three Ounces of fine Silver out of the Fire, and nine Ounces of Allay: which his Majesty had ordained to be Standard.

ANNO  
1552.

In the Winter of this Year, great Preparations were making for carrying on the War between the Emperor and the *French*, who was somewhat too hard for the former the last Summer. And what Means were made in the *Low Countries* by the Queen Regent, for the raising of Money, the Nerves of War, and which the Emperor had extraordinary need of, *Chamberlain*, the King's Ambassador, informed the Council, in a Letter writ Jan. 8. ' That on *Thursday* last, the Proposition to be made unto the States, both Temporal and Spiritual, assembled at *Bruges*, arrived from the Emperor, to whom it was sent to be seen; and it was immediately propounded there. Wherein the Queen herself, as it was said, played the jolly Woman, exhorting the States and Burgeses at this Time to help the Emperor, being provoked to a War against his Will. Whereto the Preeminence of Answering fell at this Time to *Flanders*, because the Demand was there made. They of that Town answered for all *Flanders* before *Brabant*, which else ought to have had the Preference. And so declared themselves to be willing to aid the Emperor's Majesty, like good Subjects, according to their Power. Forthwith the next Day her Majesty had all the Commoners of the Towns of *Brabant* and *Flanders* before her, in her Privy Chamber, where all Men were put out, Officers of the Household, and others, except the Council. The Day, on which the Ambassador wrote his Letter, the rest for *Holland* and *Zeland*, *Artois*, and *Henault*, *Friesland*, and others, were before her Majesty in the same Place.

The Emperor raises Money for the War.

' The Demands made by the Queen were, from *Flanders* 480000 Gulderen, from *Brabant* 400000. *Henault* and *Artois* did pay less always, because they were nigh the Enemy, and should feel the War more than the rest. And those said Sums it was agreed to be assessed upon them: *Zeland* was cessed at 40000 Gulderen; the Bishopric of *Utrecht* at 20000. The Clergy were not mentioned in the Sums above specified. Besides, these Demands of the Emperor were to be put out to Rent for the Sum of 600000 Gulders. Which, after the Wars ended, the Subjects were like to redeem themselves. Howbeit the Thing was so raised upon their Meat and Drink, that it would be almost not felt. The Answer to this Demand was to be made at *Brussels* within ten Days.

' Here were now taken great Determinations to bend a mighty Power against the *French* King. And the Emperor had a great Quantity of Gold and Silver of the *Indies*, come by Land from *Jeana* thither: Which was put to be forged into Money. But yet he sought nevertheless, to have what he could by Finance, and other Means. And a Person of the Ambassador's Acquaintance, newly come from *Zeland*, had learned certainly, that sixty Ships of War, that were prepared to have gone to the Sea with the Admiral, were then all dismissed. And Order was taken for to excuse the Charge of 100000 Gulders monthly for



ANNO 1552. for the same. And that every of the Towns of *Holland*, and *Zeland*, and *Flanders*, should rig out Ships of themselves, for which they had an Ordinance of their own; and the Emperor should be at no more Cost, but the Wages of certain Soldiers in every Ship. And so they should of themselves both keep the Seas, and convoy their Merchants Ships from Time to Time.

England keeps itself disengaged.

In all this Time *England* kept herself disengaged to either Party, and was only a Spectator, however well it wished to one Side more than the other. Yet Jealousies were conceived of her. *Skipperius*, the Emperor's Admiral, in some Discourse with the *English* Ambassador, said, that it was told him, that 2 or 3000 Horsemen should be sent out of *England* to *France*: Which, he added, he could not believe. And the Ambassador assured him, it was untrue.

A Friar hinders a Truce between the Emperor and the Turk.

The Emperor, that he might have the less upon his hand, was making some good Advance toward a Truce with the *Turk*: Which a Friar, of great pretended Sanctity, did endeavour to obstruct; probably set on work by the *French*: And the Saying went, that he practised with the *Turk* to have undone again all that was there in so good Forwardness. Whereupon the Report was, that *John Baptista Guastaldo*, a great Officer of the Emperor's, had caught him, and put him to death. Which, some thought, would make a shrewd Stir among the *Hungarians*, who, it seems, had a great Opinion of him.

Oppression of the English Merchants at Antwerp.

The Emperor's Treasurer General, called *Monf. Langie*, came to *Antwerp* in *February*, to see and mark how all Things went there, and to prove what Money might be found to serve the Emperor: and seeking among the Merchants to take up 60000 Guilders, could not find the one half. And, as it was told the *English* Ambassador, (who also wrote this to the Lords) there was no Money to be had at Finance in *Antwerp* under 16 in the Hundred for one Year; and very little so. For the Wealth of the Place depended upon the *English* Trade: and there were now such heavy Impositions upon Merchandizes brought thither, upon this Necessity of the Emperor, that the *English* Merchants had of late imported very few Commodities. And that rich Place began now to be very poor. This being perceived, some Part of the Duty had been taken off; but still other Impositions were required, contrary to the Intercourse for Trade with *England*. The Treasurer, in Talk with an *English* Merchant, that had been Suitor to him, asked him, why their Ships with Merchandize came not? and said, that now the Impost of the half Hundred Penny was dissolved, the Merchants had no Cause to complain. Yes, said the Merchant, we have a great deal more Wrong done us, directly against the Liberties we ought to enjoy by the Intercourse: And with that, told him, of paying 20 Shillings upon a Last of Herrings now, more than ever was before. Especially, he told him, that he thought they ought not to exact any such thing upon what was carried from thence into *England*. To that the Treasurer had nothing to say, but that it was Victuals: and that we might in *England* do the like upon Victuals, when we would. But here, as the *English* Ambassador added in the Letter wherein he related all this, neither the Treasurer had regard, nor our Merchant did remember to tell him, that their People did fish the Herrings upon our Coast, thro' our Sufferance. Which did not require in Friendship, that therefore there should be exacted upon the same, greater Customs than in



in Time past. The Treasurer leaving off Talk, said, If the *Englisb* Merchants were any way molested, and did complain, they should have Redress. For they had, indeed, been very hardly used before, when they appealed for Justice in their Courts.

In some Talk between the President and the *Englisb* Ambassador, in the Conclusion he asked him, concerning a poor *Englisb* Merchant, that had been long trained there in the Law by the Countess of *Meghen*, very uncharitably, and against all Right and Conscience. He told the President, that the Man was by long Suit undone, and almost desperate how to obtain Justice. Whereupon the President said, he should have Sentence shortly; and that, said he, in such sort, that it shall appear, that good Justice is ministred without regard to *Madam de Meghen*, tho' she be a great Woman. Whereat the Ambassador made this Consequence to the Lords of the Council, to whom he made this Relation, That they might perceive, that at these Folks hands, with a little Abstinence, [and Forbearance of Trade] Favour and Gentleness would be atchieved, rather than they would forgo our Merchants; which at that Time they truly stood in great doubt of.

The *Englisb* courted to renew their Trade at *Antwerp*.

The Rulers of *Antwerp* had been very earnestly in hand with the Queen and her Counsellors, for to call in their Placarts and Ordinances late made; which, by Experience in their Town, they did perceive to be the utter Ruin of the Negotiation, which they laboured to have free, and at liberty, as in the Time past it had been. Which, they said, had been the only enriching of those *Low Countries* throughout; and that the whole Welfare thereof depended upon the same free Negotiation. And they had, among many other things, perswaded the Queen, that without a short Redress, there would be, by reason of the same, such a sort of idle People, as they should not be able to rule; who were before maintained by the Trade of the Place, and now had nothing to do.

*Antwerp* almost undone by Impositions.

There was about this Time one *Buckbolt*, an *Almain* Officer, that gave much Trouble to *Chamberlain*, the Ambassador. For he had lately exhibited a Request and Writing unto the Privy Council of the Lady Regent, of certain Sums of Money owing from *England* to him. Which Request and Writing was brought unto the Ambassador in a judicial way, by a Serjeant at Armes, by Order of the said Council. This *Buckbolt* was to have served King *Henry VIII.* under the Regiment of one *Risenburgh*, about five Years past. Upon the Sight of the said Request, with the Demand of the Privy Council, that the Ambassador should answer to the same; he sought Access, and shewed the President and Council, that this Man had received great Sums of Money of the King's Father; but that he, with the rest of his *Almains*, in their Journey had devoured and consumed it, with over-doing of every kind of Service, by raising great Displeasure, devastating and spoiling the Emperor's Country of *Liege*, and his Subjects there; wholly refusing to go to some Place, as they were bound by their Oath and Covenant; like as divers Commissioners sent then by the Emperor unto the King's Commissioners (whereof this Ambassador was one) could testify. Besides also he shewed, that they kept one and other of the King's Commissioners Prisoners, and intreated them as evil as they could. Moreover he told them, that whereas the said *Buckbolt* did claim Debt of the King's Majesty for that Journey, he would prove, by Acquittances signed and sealed by him, that

*Buckbolt's* Complaint.

The Ambassador's Answer.

he



**ANNO** he had of the King above 20000 Guilders more than he ought, altho' he had served three Months; and yet served not one Hour. Whereupon the Ambassador further declared unto the Regent's Council, how the King's Father had caused him to convent the said *Buckbolt*, *Risenburgh*, and others, before the Emperor; to the Intent he might have Knowledge of their Treasons used against him. Which the said Ambassador opened sufficiently before *Skipperius* and *Naves*, Commissaries appointed by the Emperor to understand the same. And withal told them, the King had not caused him to convent these Men before the Emperor, meaning to enter in Judgment there with the Parties; but thinking the Emperor, of good Zeal towards his Majesty, would have punished the Traitors, being under his Obeisance, for Example to all others, to deal with any Prince of Honour after the like manner: like as his Majesty would have done, if any of his Subjects had done the like unto the Emperor. But, he said, it appeared, that the Emperor had not had any such Consideration. And whereas now before them the said *Buckbolt* did attempt to seek Justice against the King's Majesty, and convent him to answer him in Law, as tho' the King were bound to their Jurisdiction; he told them, that he hoped they would have the same Consideration that appertained in that behalf: no more seeking to judge the Question between the King's Majesty, and his Servant, than the King should do between the Emperor, and his Servant; which were not reasonable. And whereas the said *Buckbolt* did mean to make his Action good against him [the Ambassador] because he was the King's Majesty's Commissary, he said, he then acted under him; and the same Commission was now out; and his Account, with *Buckbolt's* Acquittances, yielded up upon the same. And he prayed them moreover, to consider, that he was his Majesty's Ambassador, and a public Person: And therefore not to consent, that the said *Buckbolt*, or any other, should convent him to answer, whereas he was not bound.

*Buckbolt's*  
Process in  
the Year  
1548.

This troublesome Man had been making these his Demands some Years before, namely, in the Year 1548. when Secretary *Smith* was Ambassador at *Brussels*, together with *Chamberlain*. Then he urged to the said Secretary and *Chamberlain*, that there [at *Brussels*] his Debt should be adjudged. *Chamberlain* told him, that the King of *England*, their Master, was not bound to stand to their Judgments. He would have had *Chamberlain* to have given him in Caution to stand there at Justice with him. But *Chamberlain* told him, he was revoked from that Charge long since. But that if he would come into *England*, he should have safe Conduct to go and come; and there it should be tried what was due to him. And so should he do better than to slander the King, saying that his Majesty owed him, when indeed rather he owed the King. Besides, that no Service was done by him, nor the rest, that had among them 10000 Pounds. Which grieved the Ambassador to think on. Also by Secretary *Smith's* Letter to the Protector, about the same Time, it appeared, that *Buckbolt* had been favourably heard at the Emperor's Court at *Brussels*; and according to the Tenor of which, the Emperor had wrote in his Favour. But the Secretary, and the other Ambassador, answered him, That the King's Majesty had made a reasonable Answer to the Emperor; and that so much was offered to him as could be demanded; viz. that bringing his Accounts into *England*, if he could approve



more to be due to him than was paid, he should be reasonably satisfied: *ANNO*  
 As again, if he had too much, it was reason he should repay it. His *1552.*  
 learned Men he brought with him, thought this reasonable. But he  
 stood much, that the Matter was begun there, and therefore there it  
 should be answered. And needs he would have had Sir *Thomas Cham-*  
*berlain* to have found him Sureties, and to have answered there. They  
 both answered, that *Chamberlain* was not sent for that Purpose; and that  
 it had not been seen, that a King should be required to answer in another  
 Prince's Court, especially seeing *Buckholt* should be *Actor*, [*i. e.* Plaintiff.]  
 After much Reasoning to and fro, he required *Smith* to see and hear his  
 Accounts, and to make the Report to the Protector. To this *Smith* re-  
 fused not. But when he came to *Skipperius* to have his Process, he  
 came again to the Ambassador's, and said, he could not get it of him.  
 To the which they said, they could not do without it. And so for that  
 Time they were rid of him. But he afterwards persisted in his Pretences,  
 as was shewed before. By all which may be seen, how favourable and  
 partial this Government was to their own Subjects, when there hap-  
 pened any Competition between them and Foreigners, tho' they were  
 Crowned Heads.

## C H A P. XIV.

*Disturbance in Buckinghamshire. Bishop Hoper vi-*  
*sits. The Bishoprics of Worcester and Gloucester*  
*united. The Duke of Somerset's Daughters. The*  
*Duchess, &c. The King goes a Progress. The Gest.*  
*The Duke of Northumberland goes into the North.*  
*Lord Guilford Dudley, his Son. The Bishop of*  
*Bath's Exchanges. Dr. Walter Haddon, &c. The*  
*King's Sales. The Merchants of Bristow, &c.*

**L**ET us now take another Review of this Year, and gather up  
 divers other more private Matters, that happened within the  
 Compass of it.

Landlords had now so wracked their Rents, and raised them  
 so high from the old Wont, that the Farmers grew very dis- *Insurrection*  
 contented; or rather continued so, partly for that Reason, and partly for *in Bucks.*  
 the Continuance of the Dearth of Provisions, kept up still by some of  
 the richer Sort. Which occasioned another Insurrection, about the Be-  
 gining of this Year, in *Buckinghamshire*. The Pretence whereof was, to  
 have Lands upon easier Rents, and Victuals better cheap. The chief  
 Man that headed this Tumult, was a Tanner of *Deansfield* in that Coun-  
 ty, called *Isaac Herne*. Who was after taken and indicted, but pardoned. *Warr. Book.*  
 His Pardon bore Date *April 29.*



**ANNO 1552.** The Reverend Father *John Hoper*, holding the See of *Worcester* in Commendam with *Glocester*, (*Worcester* being void by the late Deprivation of *Heth*) as he had visited *Glocester*, Anno 1551. bringing certain Articles of Religion with him, to be by that Clergy subscribed; so now, 1552. he went in Visitation to the Diocese of *Worcester* with the same Articles. But in the Church of *Worcester* were two Canons, named *Johnson* and *Jolliff*, who refused to subscribe, and protesting against them, charged the said Articles not to be Catholic, nor agreeable to the ancient Doctrin. With whom the Bishop entered into a Dispute, and had much Trouble. And at length sent up a full Account thereof to the Council.

Bishop Hoper visits Worcester.

Two Canons there refuse Subscription to his Articles.

But however Popish these Men were, they made a shift with their Consciences, to continue in their Places throughout this Reign, for ought I find to the contrary; and under Queen *Mary* had more Preferments heaped upon them. *Johnson* got a Prebend in the Church of *York*, and a Rectory in the same County. *Jolliff* became Dean of *Bristol*. *Johnson* wrote against *Hoper's* Articles, but kept his Writing privately by him, during King *Edward's* Reign: till *Jolliff* carried the Manuscript with him beyond Sea to *Lovain*, in the Beginning of Queen *Elizabeth's*, and printed it in *Antwerp*, 1564. with Additions of his own, under this Title, *Responsio sub Protestatione facta, &c. i. e. An Answer made under Protestation, to those Articles of John Hoper, bearing the Name of Bishop of Worcester, in which he disagreed from the Catholic Faith. Together with some Confutation of the said Hoper; and the Replies of the Right Reverend Father in Christ, Stephen Gardiner Bishop of Winchester, at that Time detained in Prison for the Confession of the Faith. Dedicating the said Book to the King of Spain.*

Visits Gloucester the second time.

After the Bishop had done his Visitation in the Diocese of *Glocester*, hearing his Articles were not subscribed to by divers of his Clergy, and many Abuses still remained there, he hastily went over that Diocese again, and administered certain Interrogatories, both for the Clergy and the Laity. Which were these that follow:

*Interrogatories and Examinations against the Clergy.*

Hoper's Interrogatories. E. Foxii MS.

- I. What is the Cause of his Non-residency, and whether his Curate be sufficient?
- II. Whether the Communion be used in such Place, and after such Sort, as most varieth from, and is most distant from the Popish Mass?
- III. Whether they preach any Doctrin to avouch Purgatory, Pardons, Auricular Confession, Praying to Saints, the Bishop of *Rome*, Holy Water, Holy Bread, Palmes, Ashes, Beads?
- IV. Whether they allure the People to the Love of any other Person or Persons within this Realm, or without, to this Intent, that the People should favour them?
- V. Item, Whether they say one Part of their Service softly, and the other aloud, as they were wont to say the *Pater noster* with a small Voice, and the Psalms with a loud Voice?
- VI. Item, Whether they sit at one Part of the Service, and kneel at another, and stand at another, as they were wont?
- VII. Item, Whether they use any Months Minds and Anniversaries?
- VIII. Item, Whether they use any Corporas Cloth in the Communion?
- IX. Item,



IX. *Item*, Whether they ring or knole the Bells in the Time of the Communion, or between Mattins and the Communion?

X. *Item*, Whether they suffer the People to sit at the Epistle, and stand at the Gospel?

XI. *Item*, Whether at the Visitation of the Sick they bear the Sacrament with covering their Heads with the Surplis, or at their Breast, or with any Light: Or, when they come into the House, they suffer the People to kneel and honour it?

XII. *Item*, Whether any of them speak unreverently of God the Father, the Son, or the Holy Ghost; or mock and scorn at the Word, Laws and Promises of God?

XIII. *Item*, How many Priests within the Deanry have subscribed unto the Articles that I put forth unto them?

*Against the Laity.*

XIV. Whether the Midwives at the Labour or Birth of any Child, do use any Prayers or Invocations to any Saints, (saying to God only in Christ) for the Deliverance of the Woman: And whether they do use any Salt, Herbs, Water, Wax, Cloths, Gyndils, Reliques?

XV. *Item*, Whether any Midwife refuse to come to any Woman labouring of Child, for Religion sake, or because she is a Wife to a Minister of the Church, that hath married, or do marry, both by God's Laws and the King's?

XVI. *Item*, How many Priests within this Deanry have subscribed to my Articles?

Hoper having been Bishop of Gloucester about fourteen Months, made a Deed of Gift May 12. to the King, of the said Bishopric; viz. of all the Lands and Annuities which by means of that Bishopric he enjoyed: And also a *Dedimus Potestatem* annexed to the same, directed to John Tayler, otherwise called Baker, and to John Coventre, to receive the Confirmation of the said Deed, to be made by the Dean and Chapter there, to the said King's Majesty. This was in order to the dissolving this Bishopric, and the founding a new Bishopric, by the uniting of this of Gloucester, and that of Worcester, into one.

In April he was translated to the Bishopric of Worcester, with all the Lordships, Manors, &c. during his Life: And a Patent was granted to John Hoper Bishop of Gloucester, to be Bishop of Worcester, and for the uniting the Bishopric of Gloucester with that of Worcester. So that the Jurisdiction of the Bishopric of Gloucester shall now cease, and be accounted Parcel of the Bishopric of Worcester; *Habend. sibi durante Vita, quamdiu se bene gesserit*, (for so it is set down in the Manuscript) Anno 6 Edw. VI. without any other Date. Soon after another Patent was granted him for the Discharge of his First-Fruits.

In September he received a Letter for the Surrender of the Bishopric of Worcester, to the end there be a new Collation of the same.

I find another Patent and Grant made by the King to this Bishop, dated Decemb. 8. An. 6. Reg. Edw. VI. viz. uniting the Bishoprics of Gloucester and Worcester into one; and to be one from henceforth, and one Diocese, and so to be reputed and taken.

ANNO

1552.

Hoper makes a Deed of Gift of his Bishopric to the King.

Translated to Worcester.

Surrenders Worcester.

Union of Gloucester and Worcester.



ANNO  
1552.

Hoper made  
Bishop of  
Worcester and  
Glocester.  
The Endow-  
ment of this  
new See.

And yet another granted him soon after, to be Bishop of *Worcester* and *Glocester* for Life. By another Patent the King gave him, and his Successors for ever, to the Maintenance of the same Bishopric, the Manors of *Alcburch*, *Kempsey*, *Hallow*, *Grimley*, *Blockley*, and *Aston*, in the County of *Worcester*; and the Hundreds of *Heswoldflow*, and *Patflow*, in the said County; and the Manor of *Cleve*, in the County of *Gloucester*: Also the Manors of *Maysmore*, *Brokthorp*, *Harscomb*, *Preston*, *Longford*, *Droyfcort*, and *Brockworth*, in the County of *Glocester*: And the Manors of *Ruge*, and *Farleigh*, in the said County: And the Manors of *Hopemeleshal*, *Dewchurch*, and *Kilpeck*, in the County of *Hereford*, lately belonging to the Monastery of *S. Peter's* in *Gloucester*: And the Scite of the Manor called *The Vinyard*, with the Park, and the King's Part of the Manor of *Lassington*, and the half of the Wood called *Woolridge*, and *Le Perch*; with the Parsonages and Churches of *Hartpurie*, *Maiscombe*, and *Upton*, in the City of *Glocester*; and of *Canyme*, *Northlach*, *Kenysford*, *Welford*, *Southferney*, and *Standish*, in the County of *Glocester*; and of *Dewchurch*, *Kilpeck*, *Glasebury*, *Devenock*, *Cowern*, and *Envias Harrold*, in the County of *Hereford*: And the Parsonage and Church of *Newport* in the County of *Wenlock* in *Wales*; and the Chappel of *Piperton* in *Hereford*: And all the Tenths in the Parishes of *Standish*, *Culdrick*, *Hardwick*, *Overoxlinch*, *Ranwich*, *Parva Harveld*, *Netheroxlinch*, *Sall*, *Putley*, *Farley*, and *Auney St. Crucis*, in the County of *Glocester*; and in *Devenock*, *Wentworth*, and *Talbworth*, in *Hereford*: And the Portion or annual Rent of 53 Shillings 4 Pence, to be taken from the Rectory of *Reimsford*, and yearly paid by the Vicar of the same Church for the Time being; and 26 Shillings of the Rectory of *Teynter*; and 10 Shillings of the Rectory of *Rencomb*; and 26 Shillings of the Rectory of *Nevinsfeld*; and 26 Shillings of the Church of *Newport* in the said County of *Wenlock*: And the Tenths in *Aldefworth*, *Linton*, and *Skipton Solas*, in the County of *Glocester*; with all the Advoufons belonging to the aforesaid Manors; with the Advoufons and Collations of the Vicarages of *Hartpurie*, *Maysmore*, and *Upton S. Leonards*, in the County of the City of *Glocester*; and of *Camyer*, *Norleeb*, *Kemesmisford*, *Welford*, *Southferney*, and *Standish*, in the County of *Glocester*; and of *Dewchurch*, *Kilpeck*, *Glasebury*, *Devenock*, *Cowerne*, and *Envias Harrowld*; and the Presentations of Chaplains, or Stipendiaries of those Chappels of *Maysmore*, *Camyas*, *Stinsbecomb*, and *Piperton*, in the Counties of *Glocester* and *Hereford*: Which came to the King's hands by the Concession of the said *John Hoper*: So fully and intirely granted as they were before put into the King's hands, by reason or pretence of Gift, or Concession, or Surrender of the said *Hoper*. Which are extended to the clear annual Value of 1000 Marks, above and beyond the Tenths and yearly Rents for the Time to come reserved by these Presents. To have to him and his Successors for ever; to be held in pure and perpetual Almes:

His Tenths.

And rendring thence yearly to the King at the Court of First-Fruits and Tenths, 66 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence, at the Feast of our Lord's Nativity every Year; to be paid in the Name of the whole Tenths, and of the Tenth Part, as well of the Premisses granted to the Bishop, and his Successors, and of the Bishopric of *Wigorn* and *Glocester*, and of all the Manors, Rectories, &c. and for full Recompence of all Tenths. And when the separate and annual Tenths of the foresaid Bishoprics in the Court



Court of First-Fruits and Tenths, heretofore yearly paid *inter se*, did extend to the Sum of 136 Pounds 10 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpeny. Yet the King granted by these Presents, the said Bishop and his Successors, to be acquitted and disburdened of all Sums of Money and Burdens, besides the said annual Tenths of 66 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence. And this said Bishop to be discharged of the First-Fruits for this one Time. And the King's Majesty doth covenant to discharge him, and his Successors, yearly, of 133 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence Halfpeny, yearly to be paid to *John Bell*, Clerk, late Bishop of *Worcester*, out of the foresaid Manors belonging to the same Bishopric: and of 5 Pounds yearly, to be paid for the Fee of the chief Steward of the foresaid Manors; and of 42 Shillings paid for the Moiety of the Fee for keeping the Bishop's Palace of *Worcester*: And to discharge him of other, &c. But of, &c. and 26 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence yearly, to be paid to *John Tayler*, alias *Baker*, Gent. for keeping the Register of the Bishop of *Glocester*.

ANNO  
1552.

In June a Warrant went to the Officers of the Court of First-Fruits, to discharge the said *Hoper*, Bishop of *Worcester*, of all the First-Fruits. Nay, and so much was he favoured, that a Letter was sent to the Lord Chancellor, to take order, that no Person should demand a Fee of him. This Letter was wrote, Decemb. 1552.

He is pardoned his First-Fruits.

In the Month of May, there was a Call of these Serjeants at Law, *Robert Brook*, Recorder of *London*, *James Dier*, *John Caril*, *Thomas Gawdy*, *Richard Catlyn*, *Rafe Rookesby*, *William Stamford*, and *William Dallyson*, Esquires. And a Warrant was issued to the Lord Chancellor, to make out Writs to them, that his Majesty having nominated them to be Serjeants at the Law, therefore they should prepare themselves for the Execution of the same, upon Pain of the Forfeiture of 1000 Pounds a piece.

Serjeants at Law.

The good Duke of *Somerset* having been beheaded in January last, the King and Council took care of his four younger Daughters: as he had six, viz. *Anne*, *Margaret*, *Jane*, *Mary*, *Katharin*, and *Elizabeth*; all bred up to Learning. For I find, by Order of the King, they were committed, May 2. 1552. to the Lady *Cromwel*, who was to have 50 Pounds per Ann. for each of them. Which Salary was Novemb. 1. increased to 100 Marks a Year a piece. One of his Daughters, viz. the Lady *Elizabeth*, was before in the keeping of the Lady *Smith*, (the Wife, I suppose, of Sir *Thomas Smith*, who had belonged to the Duke; or perhaps, rather the Wife of Sir *Clement Smith*, who was her Aunt.) And in February there was a Warrant to the Exchequer, to pay to that Lady an Annuity of 100 Marks towards the Finding the Lady *Elizabeth*, one of the late Duke of *Somerset*'s Daughters, during the said *Elizabeth*'s Abode with her. One of these Ladies, viz. *Jane*, the third Daughter, the Duke her Father secretly laboured to match with the King, and employed the Lord *Strange* much about his Person, to recommend her to him, and to take his Opportunity to move the King that way; as that Lord confessed, in the said Duke's last Troubles. But she died unmarried, as also did two of her Sisters, *Margaret*, and *Katharin*. Those that were married were, *Anne*, the eldest, who was married to *John Dudley* Earl of *Warwic*, and eldest Son to the Duke of *Northumberland*, and afterwards to Sir *Edward Umpton*, Knight of the Bath. *Elizabeth* married Sir *Richard Knightly* of *Pausly*, she being his second Wife. *Mary* was married

The Daughters of the Duke of Somerset.  
Counc. Book.  
Warr. Book.



**ANNO** married twice, first to Sir *Richard Rogers* of *Brianslo* in the County of  
**1552.** *Dorset*, Kt. and after to Sir *Henry Peyton*, Kt. Yet I find that *Margaret*  
 afore said, was desired in Marriage by the Lord *Strange*, in the Year 1551.  
 For a Letter was directed from the King and Council, to the Earl of  
*Derby*, his Father, dated in *July*, that the King's Majesty was well  
 pleased, that his Son should solemnize Marriage with his Kinswoman  
 the Lady *Margaret*, Daughter to the Duke of *Somerset*. But perhaps  
 the Duke's Disgrace and Misfortunes, that soon after befel him, was the  
 Occasion that that Match took not effect.

The Du-  
 ches.

As for the Duches, she remained in the *Tower*, (as she must do all this  
 Reign.) In the Beginning of the Year 1553. 100 Pounds was assigned  
 her out of the Profits of the late Duke's Lands, by a Letter of Order to  
 the Chancellor of the Augmentations, to be paid to the Lieutenant of the  
*Tower*, for her Use. And it being the good Time of *Easter*, Leave was  
 given to Bishop *Hoper*, formerly the Duke's Chaplain, to visit her.

Eaton Col-  
 lege visited.

*May* 6. The Lord Chancellor, the Bishop of *London*, Sir *John Cheke*,  
 Dr. *May*, Dr. *Wendy*, were appointed Visitors of *Eaton* College. *May* 14.  
 Mr. *Riley*, Vice-Provost, appeared. *Hurland*, the Usher, and *Avise*, a  
 Fellow, were warned to appear. And *Fawding*, one of the Fellows, was  
 committed to the *Fleet* for leud Words.

Covent Gar-  
 den.

*June* 10. *Covent Garden* and *Long Acre*, (which have improved since  
 to such a vast Estate) were given to the Earl of *Bedford*.

The King's  
 last Progress.

This Summer, in the same Month of *June*, King *Edward* began his  
 last Progress. It had been resolved, the Extent of the Progress should be  
 to *Pool* in *Dorsetshire*, and to come back by *Salisbury* homeward to  
*Hampton* Court: Fifty Pound of Gold was coined of the new Standard,  
 to carry about in this Progress. Of which these were the Gifts:  
*June* 27. He removed to *Hampton* Court. Thence to *Oatlands*, another  
 of the King's Houses, where he stayed about eight Days. Thence to *Guil-*  
*ford* in *Surrey*. Thence to *Petworth* in *Sussex*. Thence to *Condrey*, Sir  
*Anthony Brown*'s House, where the King was most nobly banquetted.  
 Thence to *Halvenaker*, a pretty House beside *Chichester*. Thence to  
*Warblington*, a fair House of Sir *Richard Cotton*'s. Thence to *Waltham*,  
 a fair great old House, formerly belonging to the Bishop of *Winchester*,  
 at that present the Lord Treasurer's. In all these Places, the King had  
 good Hunting and good Cheer. Thence to *Portsmouth*. Where the King  
 well viewed the Town and the Haven, but chiefly the Bulwarks. Of  
 which he gave this Account in a Letter to *Fitz-Patric*, 'That the Bul-  
 'warks were chargeable, massy, well rampired, but ill fashioned, ill  
 'flanked, and set in unmeet Places: That for the Town, it was weak in  
 'comparison of what it ought to be; that it was too great, there being  
 'within the Walls large Closets, and much vacant room: That the Haven  
 'was notably great, and standing by Nature easy to be fortified. For  
 'the more Strength thereof, he devised two strong Castles on either Side  
 'of the Haven, at the Mouth thereof.' From *Portsmouth* he went to *Tich-*  
*field*, the Earl of *Southampton*'s House. Thence to *Southampton*. The  
 Citizens had put themselves to much Cost against his coming, by Paint-  
 ing, Repairing, and Rampiring of their Walls. Thence to *Beaulieu*, or  
*Bewly*, a little Village in the middle of the *New Forest*. Thence to *Christ-*  
*church*, a little Town in the same *Forest*. Where the King was, the 22d  
 of *August*. Thence to *Woodlands*. Thence to *Salisbury*. Thence to *Wilton*.

His Obser-  
 vations of  
 Portsmouth.

Thence



Thence to *Wotifunt*, the Lord *Sands*'s House. Thence to *Winchester*. ANNO  
Thence to *Basing*, the Lord Treasurer's House. Thence to *Donnington* 1552.  
Castle, near the Town of *Newbury*. Thence to *Reding*. And so to *Wind-*  
*for*. Whither he came *Septemb. 15*. And thence *Septemb. 28*. to *Hampton*  
Court again. While he was at *Christchurch*, he wrote an ingenious Ac-  
count of his Progres so far, to his Favourite *Barnaby Fitz-Patrick*, then  
in *France*. Which is preserved in *Fuller's History*.

Book VII.

The King went this his Progres in great State, befeeming a Monarch :  
And he took along with him, as Part of his Retinue, four Kings at Armes, *P. 412.*  
*viz. Garter, Clarentieux, Norroy, and Ulster*, the only King of Armes Kings at  
for all *Ireland*, whom the King had made the last *February* : And three Armes wait  
Heralds, *viz. Somerset, Rouge Dragon, and Blew mantel*; and appointed upon the  
them handsome Allowances for their Diet. The chief King had 20 Shil- King.  
lings a Day, and the rest 6 Shillings and 8 Pence. The Noblemen and  
Officers that attended the King, had each a Band of Men to go with them,  
which amounted to the Number of 4000. But the Country being very  
poor, both in Hay and Grasse, and other Provisions, they were dismissed,  
and only 150 culled out, to go with the King.

Among other Preparations for this Progres, a Letter was sent *July 23*. Preparation  
to *Sir Philip Hoby*, Surveyor of the Ordnance, to be resident within the for the Pro-  
*Tower*, joining with the Lieutenant of the same, to take good order for gress.  
the keeping thereof, and of the City of *London*, in the Time of Progres.  
He fell sick in the *Tower* soon after his coming there; so that in *August*  
the King licensed him to repair into the Country. For the King's own  
Furniture and Apparel, *Sir Andrew Dudley*, who was Keeper of the Ward-  
robe in *Westminster*, was ordered to deliver to *Arsenius*, the King's Ar-  
mourer at *Greenwich*, a Yard of Crimson Velvet, and a Yard of Satten,  
to trim an Headpiece for his Majesty. For, it seems, the King did in  
this noble Progres, sometimes ride in Armour. And a Warrant was sent  
to *Humfrey Orme*, Keeper of the standing Wardrobe of the *Tower* of *Lon-*  
*don*, to deliver to *Thomas Chappel*, the King's Bedmaker, one Bed, and a  
Bolster of Fustian, filled with Down: which, I suppose, was the King's  
travelling Bed. The said Bedmaker received of *Sir Andrew Dudley*, for  
the apparelling of the new Bed, 17 Yards and an half of for the  
Ceeler, Teaster, and double Vallence; 6 Yards and an half of Taffata, to  
line the Ceeler; 11 Yards and half of red *Bruges* Satten, to line the  
Teaster; 4 Yards of *Turky* Silk incarnate; 20 Yards of Crimson Damask,  
for Curtains; 22 Yards and three quarters of Crimson Capa, for a Da-  
mask to the same Bed; 17 Yards and an half of Crimson Damask, for a  
rich Counterpoint; 10 Yards and an half of changeable Sarcenet, to line  
the same; and two Papers, with Part of another Paper of Passemain Lace  
of Gold; containing together, 67 Yards, to garnish the Curtains and  
Ceelers of the same Bed.

While the King was in his Progres, the Duke of *Northumberland*, Ge- The Duke of  
neral Warden of all the Marches towards *Scotland*, being gone down Northumber-  
thither, with the Earls of *Huntingdon* and *Pembroke*, to take a View land goes  
there, which was by Order of Council in *May* : Having so done, accord- down to the  
ingly wrote to the King, the State of those Places : And advised, that Marches.  
some new Fortifications should be made in *Berwic* : that some unnecessa-  
ry Expences there should be retrenched : that there might be a General  
Deputy Warden, and three other Wardens of the three Marches; recom-  
mending



ANNO  
1552.

The King's  
Orders to  
the Duke  
there.  
Warr. Book

mending one for that Deputy. He mentioned also to the King, certain Outlaws, that is, some in the Borders that had robbed and spoiled; how these were willing to return to their Obedience upon a Pardon. To this Letter of the Duke's, the King in all Points agreed: and sent an Answer in *July*, signifying, 'That the King thought his Opinion good, and very necessary, concerning a new Piece to be made in *Barwic*, and the Charges thereby diminished. And therefore his Pleasure was, that he, the Duke, should give Order and Direction there, for the new Plat and Device, and to cause such Parts of the Works to be first advanced as shall most need, one before the other. And also, his Majesty did well allow his good Opinion, to have a Deputy General over all the three Marches, and Deputy Wardens there. Where his Majesty thought none more meet than the Lord *Wharton*; of whom the said Duke had thereto a good Opinion. And finally, that the King was contented, that certain Persons Outlawed, and of their voluntary Wills returned, should have his Mercy shewed them.' Here the Duke saw 10000 Pounds disbursed, which was sent down before him.

Reports up-  
on the Duke's  
not going  
with the  
King.

There was notice taken by the People, that the Duke of *Northumberland* went not with the King in his Progress: which made some surmise, and others talk abroad, according as they would have it, that the Duke was in Disfavour at Court, and was commanded to be absent. This, when it came afterward to the Duke's Ears, was not to be put up by him: and the Complaint was brought before the Council; and the Reporters, some of them, were found and punished. For so we meet with this Order of Council in *September*.

Some com-  
mitted for  
reporting it.

'*Sept. 25.* One *John Kyrton* was committed to the *Fleet*, for reporting that the Duke of *Northumberland* should be commanded to be absent from the Court, with other slanderous Reports. And one *John Burrough* was committed to the *Tower* for the like Matter.'

A Match be-  
tween the  
Lord *Guil-  
ford Dudley*,  
and the Earl  
of *Cumber-  
land's* Daugh-  
ter, endea-  
voured.

While the King was in his Progress, he endeavoured to gratify this Duke, by forwarding a Match between the Lord *Guildford*, his Son, and a Daughter of the Earl of *Cumberland*. For this Marriage had been earnestly laboured to be brought to pass; and the more, for that there were great Impediments pretended. Whether the Earl had no Inclinations thereto, and to conceal the same, (for it was not safe to deny *Northumberland* any thing) gave out these Impediments: perhaps some Pre-contract; or, more probably, because she came of a Family related to the Royal Blood. For this Purpose, there was a Letter writ by the King in *July*, to the Earl of *Cumberland*, 'Desiring him to grow to some good End forthwith in the matter of Marriage between the Lord *Guildford Dudley*, and his Daughter; with License to the said Earl, and all others that shall travail therein, to do their best, for Conducement of it to Effect; any Law, Statute, or other Thing to the contrary notwithstanding.' And that the Duke was the impulsive Cause of the King's writing this earnest Letter in his Son's behalf, may appear by a Letter which he forthwith sent to the said Duke, signifying as well his Majesty's writing and speaking to the said Earl heretofore, for this Matter of Marriage, as his writing again at this present, for the permitting thereof, with License thereof to the said Duke, his Son, or any for them, to travail therein, any Law, Statute, or other thing to the contrary notwithstanding. But tho' this, whatever the Cause was, succeeded not, (and perhaps

Warr. Book.



perhaps, the forwarding this Match might be one of the Ends of his going down into the North) yet the next Year, the ambitious Duke had his Desire fully, and joined this his Son to the Lady *Jane*, of the Blood Royal, (tho' it proved his own, and their Destructions) and his elder Son, Sir *Andrew*, to the said Earl of *Cumberland's* Daughter, as we shall see in due place.

ANNO  
1552.

The King this *July* made an Exchange (for the Benefit of some of his craving Courtiers) with the Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*. The King to have the chief Mansion of the Deanry of *Wells*, with the Lands within the Precinct thereof, and the Manor of *Westoker*, and the Patronage of the Parsonage thereof, and the Borough of *Wellington*, and *Stogursey*, in the County of *Somerset*, and the Park of *Wedmore*, and an Annuity coming out of the Manor of *Glastonbury*: And the Bishop to have the chief Mansion belonging to the Bishop of *Bath's* See, commonly called *The Bishop of Bath and Wells Palace*, and all within the Precinct of the same; and the House in *Wells* appointed for the safe Custody of Clerks convict, and the Manors in *Wells* and *Westborough*, and the Borough of *Wells*, and the Hundred of *Wells*, and all the Appurtenances: Which lately the said Bishop had made over to the Duke of *Somerset*, and now were forfeited to the Crown; and so reverted again upon this Exchange. But he was to pay yearly to the King for the Manor of *Wells* 10 Pounds. For this there was an Indenture between the King and the said Bishop, viz. That the Bishop had bargained and sold to his Highness, his Heirs, and Executors, the chief Mansion, &c. And then the King made a Gift to the said Bishop, in consideration of the said Bargain and Sale, and to his Successors, of the chief House of the See, &c. to be holden in pure Almes.

An Exchange  
with the Bi-  
shop of *Bath*.

About this Time the King and Council had provided two new Masters for two Colleges; the one in *Cambridge*, the other in *Oxford*. Dr. *Walter Haddon*, a very learned and honest Man, Doctor of the Civil Law, that had lately been removed from *King's* College, to be Master of *Trinity* Hall in *Cambridge*, (of whom the King had made great use in his Proceedings, and in Commissions for Religion) was intended to be promoted to the Presidentship of *Magdalen* College in *Oxford*. Dr. *Oglethorp*, the present President, having been dealt withal to resign. So *July* 20. Dr. *Mowse* was recommended to be Master of *Trinity* Hall in *Cambridge*. And *August* 14. Dr. *Haddon* was appointed to be elected Master of *Magdalen* College, *Oxon*, at *Michaelmas* next, when *Oglethorp* promised to resign. But it happened, that neither *Oglethorp* was after willing to resign, nor the Fellows to elect Dr. *Haddon*. Which caused the King, after one Letter written to that College in behalf of *Haddon*, without Success, to send them a second angry one. But at last he was placed there.

Dr. *Haddon*  
recommend-  
ed for Presi-  
dent of *Mag-*  
*dalen, Oxon.*

Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Brother to the Duke, having been Captain of *Guifnes*, an high and honourable Post, esteemed in those Times, and got into Debt by the Service there, was now in *October*, sent for Home, to prevent the Inconveniences of a Feud between him and the Lord *Willoughby*, Captain of *Calais*. Whereby he became nearer about the King's Person, and was made one of the four Principal Gentlemen of the King's Privy Chamber. He was also Keeper of the King's Wardrobe in *Westminster*. He it was, that in the beginning of the King's Reign, being in

Sir *Andrew*  
*Dudley* pre-  
ferred.



ANNO 1552. the *Pauncey*, one of the King's Ships, met at Sea with the *Lion*, a principal Ship of *Scotland*, and giving her a Broad-side, did so maul her, that he took her.

Ordinances  
for the Tower.

The King took care of the *Tower*; and now in *October* established Articles and Ordinances for Sir *John Gage*, Constable thereof, and Sir *Edward Warner*, newly made Lieutenant, and for the Yeomen of the Guard, with others, appointed to give Attendance in the said *Tower* of *London*, for the sure keeping of the same, to be observed and kept, upon Pains therein limited. Sir *Anthony Darcy* was Lieutenant hitherto; but in the Month of *October*, the said Sir *Anthony* received a Letter to deliver by Indenture to Sir *Edward Warner*, the Charge of the *Tower*, with the Prisoners, and all other things thereunto belonging.

Proclamation  
for Tillage.

And for the Relief of the Country, and for the making Corn more cheap and plenty, a Proclamation came forth in *November*; willing and charging all Justices of the Peace, diligently to have Respect to the due Execution of a Statute made the last Session of Parliament for Tillage, to be used as it was in any one Year since the first Year of the Reign of King *Henry VIII*.

Commission  
for taking  
away Goods  
from Churches.

It was the King's pressing Need, I suppose, that occasioned somewhat a severe Commission to be issued forth this Year, not only to take away out of Churches all Garments, and other Utensils, used formerly in superstitious Worship; but to take for the King's Use, all Goods belonging to the Churches, that could be spared. And then, to be sure, little enough would be left. Now in *November*, a Letter was directed to  
'To take all Certificates and Returns of the late Commission, directed to  
'divers Countries, for the said Survey of Church Goods, and to devise  
'the best Means for the bringing and converting to the King's Use, such  
'Goods as could be spared in the Churches.' Among other Things that came into the King's Possession, by vertue of this Commission, was good store of Linnen, good and bad, as Surplices, Altar Cloths, Towels, Napkins, &c. used for the Celebration of Mass. These the Bishop of *London*, as it seems, as much as was found in the Churches of *London*, or of his Diocese, begged for the poor Children of *Christ's-Church*. And accordingly a Letter came from the King and Council to the Bishop of *London*, to deliver to the Governour of the Hospital of *Christ's-Church* in *London*, such Linnen Vestures, and other Linnen Cloth, not employed for the Ministry in the said Churches, as of the King's Gift, for the poor Orphans, and other poor People.

The King  
sells away  
Rectories.  
Book of Sales.

The King was now selling away apace the Rectories and Advoufons of such Churches as came into his Hands by Act of Parliament, either from the Monastries, Chauntries, and Free Chappels, or by Exchanges. I will here give an Account of a few of these Purchases.

To Reve and  
Cotton.

*Thomas Reve*, and *George Cotton*, purchased the Parsonage of *East Pury*, alias *Potterspury*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Nottingham*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 85 Pounds 7 Shillings 6 Pence, for the Sum of 1421 Pounds 8 Shillings 5 Pence Halfpeny, paid to the Treasury.

To Whiting  
and Freeman.

A Patent was granted to *John Whiting*, and *Thomas Freeman*, of the County of *Leicester*, Gentlemen, of the Parish and Church of *Wissenden* in the County of *Rutland*, lately belonging to the Priory of *Sempringham* in the County of *Lincoln*; and the Parsonage of *Moulton*, and the Advoufson



Advouſon and Right of the Vicarage of the Pariſh Church of *Moulton*; *ANNO* and the Parſonage of *Winſwick*, and the Advouſon and Right of Patro- *1552.* nage of the Vicarage of the Pariſh Church there, in the County of *Hun-* *tingdon*, lately belonging to the Priory of *Huntingdon*, &c. *Et illis eſt con- ceſſum Reſtorias prædictas ad proprios uſus.* Dated Nov. 18. 1552. For which they paid 1224 Pounds 13 Shillings 10 Pence Halfpeny.

A Patent granted, and ſtands in the Book next to that mentioned be- *To Bradshaw.* fore, to *John Bradshaw* the Elder, of the Parſonage and Church of *Pre- ſtend*, with the Right of the Patronage of the Vicarage of the ſame, in the County of *Hereford*, late Parcel of the Monastery of *Wigmore* in the ſame County, with all Corn and Hay in the Pariſh of *Preſtend*, *Et illis eſt con- ceſſum convertere, &c.*

Another Purchase of the great Tithes in the Town and Fields of *To Margaret* *Wyke*, and in *Pershore* in *Worcestershire*, by one *Margaret Brown*, for the *Brown.* Sum of 266 Pounds 4 Shillings.

A Patent was granted to *Sir Rowland Hill*, Kt. [and Alderman of *Lon-* *To Sir Row-* *don*] for the Sum of 408 Pounds 10 Shillings 8 Pence, of the Parſonage *land Hill.* and Church of *Sainton* upon *Hyne Heath* in the County of *Salop*, and the Advouſon, Donation, and free Diſpoſition, and Right of Patronage of the Vicarage of the Church, and one Rectory in the County of *Cheſter*, and the Rectory of *Sherf*, with the Appurtenances, in the Counties of *Salop* and *Stafford*: To have to him and his Heirs, of the yearly Value of 17 Pounds 17 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpeny. *Et quod convertere poſſit prædictas Reſtorias ad proprios uſus.*

To which I will add, another Purchase, (tho' it happened two or three *And to Tho-* *Months* after) made by *Thomas Cecyl*, Son or Relation to *Sir William mas Cecyl.* *Cecyl*, Secretary, and *John Bell*, for the Sum of 2055 Pounds 19 Shil- lings 2 Pence Farthing, of the Parſonage of *Canfield*, with the Advouſon of the ſame, and divers other Advouſons and Chauntry Lands, and Lands given to the Maintenance of Priests, to ſing Soul Maſſes, and to the Maintenance of *Obits, &c.* in divers Shires. Which were extended to the clear yearly Value of 94 Pounds 3 Shillings 2 Pence. To them and their Heirs, to be held in Soccage, and Part *in capite*. Dated Feb. 9.

Theſe Sales were made for raiſing Money for ſatisfying the King's *Commiſſions* Debts: And as a Commiſſion came out lately, to certain Perſons, for the *for Sale of* *Sale* of 1000 Pounds Lands: So a Warrant in *November*, came to the *the King's* *Lord Chancellor*, ſignifying to him, that it was his Maſteſty's Pleaſure, that *Lands.* immediately upon the Determination of the ſaid Commiſſion, he ſhould make out three other like Commiſſions, one after another, under the Great Seal, putting into every of them 1000 Pounds [Lands *per Ann.*] to be ſold by the ſaid Commiſſioners in like manner as the other. Theſe Commiſſioners were, the Biſhop of *Norwich*, *Sir John Gates*, *Sir Philip Hoby, &c.*

The King now took care of the Merchants of *Briſtow*, and allowed *The Mer-* one *Edward Prince*, *Thomas Hicks*, and *Robert Butler*, Merchant Ad- *chants of* *venturers* of that City, to chuſe a Maſter of that Myſtery, and two War- *Briſtow* made *dens*, and made it a Corporation for ever. Which makes it ſeem as tho' *a Corpora-* there were no Corporation of Merchants before in that City, but all *tion.* *Free Traders.* Unless, perhaps, this Corporation was eſtabliſhed for the *Warr. Book.*



**ANNO** 1552. Traders into some particular Parts of the World, which are not mentioned in the Manuscript.

**Ambassadors sent to the Emperor and French King.** Two Embassies were now, *Decemb. 2.* preparing to be dispatched. Sir *Andrew Dudley* was going to the Emperor: And a Letter was sent to *Morison*, Ambassador in that Court, wherein the Affairs of the Ambassade of the said Sir *Andrew*, was commended to him. And Sir *Henry Sydney* was Ambassador to the French King. And Letters were sent to Sir *William Pickering*, Leiger there, touching the Business about which Sir *Henry* was sent.

**The Magistrates of Strasburgh send for Peter Martyr.** About this Time Letters were sent from the King to the Magistrates of *Strasburgh*, (from which Place the learned *Peter Martyr* came last into *England*) to permit the same Reverend Man to return again to them: For that they needed him in their Public Schools. But the King, and Archbishop *Cranmer*, and as many as favoured sincere Religion, and sound Knowledge in Divinity, were loth to lose him from *Oxford*, where he now was placed the King's Professor. Therefore a Letter from the King was sent to *Christopher Mount*, the King's Agent in those Parts, residing there, to make Relation to the said Magistrates of *Argentine*, 'That *Peter Martyr*, whom they desired to return thither, for the Government of their Schools, could not depart hence, he being already appointed Reader of the King's Majesty's public Lectures of Divinity at *Oxford*, and was admitted free Denizon: And to desire them to accept his Majesty's Doings herein in good Part.'

**Naval Stores brought in by Composition.** The King took care of his Shipping: And to supply himself from the *East Country* with Cables, Cordage, and other Naval Stores, in the Month of *February*, he agreed to allow ten Clothiers of *Suffolk*, to make five hundred coarse Cloths, for the Use of *Richard Crag* of *London*, Draper, to be transported to *Danfig*, and the Eastern Parts; commanding the Customers to take Bond of the same Person, to bring in the said Naval Provisions, as much as should amount to the Value of the said Cloth.





CHAP. XV.

*A Commission for Inquiry into Heresies. The new Service. The Bishop of Durham's Troubles: Deprived. A Synod. Articles of Religion, and a Catechism, confirmed. Articles for Uniformity. Gilpin's Sermon at Court.*

**N**OW for a few Matters relating to Religion, or Religious Men.

A Commission was directed this Year, dated in *October*, to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishop of *London*, and other worshipful Persons in *Kent*, to make Inquiry after sundry Heresies lately sprung up; and for the Examination and Punishment of erroneous Opinions, as it seems, of the *Anabaptists* and *Arians*. Of which Sort some now, notwithstanding former Severities, shewed their Heads. Under Pretence of this Commission, some Papists of that Country did hope to bring divers honest Professors of the Gospel into Trouble. And indeed these were the chief Procurers of this Commission, and were joined with the Archbishop in it: Dissembling, nevertheless, to be indifferent in the Matters of Religion. The Archbishop and Commissioners sat at *Ashford*. Among others questioned at this Commission, a Man and a Woman of good Life, and Professors of Religion, living at *Ashford*, were accused falsely by several employed for that Purpose, to have been lewd together in an House: Where, the Witnesses said, they saw them by Moonshine, at Eleven a Clock at Night, in an Entry on such a Side of the House, and on such a Day of the Month. And they cried out to the Archbishop, for exemplary Punishment to be taken on them. The Archbishop going that Day to Dinner, passed by the Side of the House where this Lewdness was pretended to be committed. Where making a Stop, by considering found, that the Moon on the Day sworn, shone on the other Side of the House at Eleven a Clock, and was hardly up, or but just rising at that Time. So that it appeared not possible to see into that Part of the House at that Time, by the help of the Moon. And considering withal, the good Reputation of the Man, and of the Woman especially, and the ill Disposition of the Accusers, by this means the sagacious Archbishop made a clear Discovery of the Innocency of these two Folks, and the malicious Wickedness of their Adversaries. And so he set them both at liberty. And when a Year or two after, he was himself in Bands at *Oxford*, he sent a Present to the good Woman, by one *W. P.* to whom the Archbishop told this Story, and who writ this Account; desiring her to forgive him for his Straitness used towards her. And the said Person carried this Present unto the Woman, and delivered the Message accordingly.

A Commission for certain Heresies in *Kent*.

The Archbishop's Sagacity.

Fox 1st Edit. P. 1477.

As the Revising, Perusing, Explaining, and Finishing the Book of *Common Prayer*, and Administration of the Sacraments, had been committed to the Archbishop, and certain other learned Divines; so the Work was compleated, and was printed off by *Grafton*, in the Month of *September*,

Orders about the new revised *Common Prayer Book*. *Count. Book.*



**ANNO** *ber, Anno 1551.* But, it seems, the Book was not so correct as it should be. For *Septemb. 27.* an Order came to *Grafton*, the Printer, in any wise to stay from uttering any of the Books of the New Service. And if he had distributed any of them among his Company, [of *Stationers*] that then he give strait Commandment not to put any of them abroad, until certain Faults therein, were corrected. And, probably, one Reason of this Order might be, for inserting the Article for declaring the right Meaning of kneeling at the *Communion*. For which there was an Order in *October*.

The Revi-  
sors.

They design-  
ed to restore  
Disciplin.

Cox to Bul-  
linger.

These Reviewers, before spoken of, were *Cranmer*, *Ridley*, and certain other Doctors; whereof *Dr. Cox* was one: Who being met together at *Windsor*, diligently, as their Scope was, reformed the Book according to the Word of God. And they intended also, to proceed to the restoring of a good Disciplin in the Church. But here great Stop and Opposition was made; and loth Men were, to be brought under Ecclesiastical Disciplin. Of this, *Cox* wrote to *Bullinger*, *Octob. 5. 1552.* Therein he told him, ' That they had already altered the Rites of the Public Prayers and Sacraments, and framed them according to the Rules of God's Word. But we hate, said he, those bitter Institutions of Christian Disciplin. We would be Sons, yea, Heirs, but we abhor the Rod. And he prayed *Bullinger*, that he would by his Letters stir up the Great Men and Nobles, to take particular Care about this Disciplin; without which, with great Grief he spake it, the Kingdom of God would be taken away from them.' But something *Cox* met with in *Bullinger's* fifth Decad, in the Place where he treated of the Lord's Supper, which he was not satisfied in, and which looked contrary to an Order they had made in the Communion Book, concerning Communicating the Sick. Which that learned Man seemed not to allow of, for want of a Congregation, which Four or Five Persons could not make. Where *Cox* propounded this Inconvenience, as arising from his Opinion; ' What if, when the Lord's Supper was to be publicly administred, all should go out, or refuse, besides Three, Four, or Five, that stayed to receive; might not the Sacrament be lawfully administred to them? Why then should the Sick be deprived of that Liberty?' Of this he desired *Bullinger's* fuller Solution.

The new  
Service ra-  
tified.

But as for the afore-mentioned Book, thus reformed, called now *The New Service*, it was ratified by the Parliament that sat in *January* following, in an Act, intituled, *An Act for the Uniformity of Common Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments*. Whereby all Persons were enjoined to resort to their Parish Churches on *Sundays* and Holidays, to hear those Prayers, and to abide there quietly and soberly, upon Pain of the Censures of the Church: And no other Forms to be used, nor any present at such Forms, upon Pain of Imprisonment.

Bishop of  
*Durham's*  
Troubles:

There had, about the Year 1550. been a Conspiracy in the North: To which the Bishop of *Durham* had been privy; but thought fit to conceal it. But one *Ninian Menvil* discovered it; and withal, informed against the said Bishop. Whereupon he was in danger of Misprision of Treason. This Business against the Bishop came before the Council in the Month of *June*; when it began to be considered: But the King being then about taking his Progress, it was resolved, *June 19.* to defer it till his Majesty's Return. About *September*, the Bishop was sent up for by



by the Council, upon certain Accusations. And accordingly, about the begining of *October*, he was in *London*. And on the 4th and 5th Days of the said Month, lodged at the late Monastery of *White Monks* on *Tower Hill*. And soon after, was committed thence to the *Tower*; and a special Commission appointed for his Trial. Which Commission was directed to Sir *Roger Cholmely*, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, Sir *Richard Read*, *John Gosnold*, *Richard Goodrick*, *Robert Chidley*, *Stamford*, Esquires, and *Richard Liel*, Doctor of the Law, &c.

ANNO  
1552.

or to Seven, Six, or Five of them, ' To call before them, at such Time and Place as they should think convenient, *Cuthbert* Bishop of *Durham*, and examin him of all manner of Conventicles, Conspiracies, Contempts, and Concealments, or other Offences. And if he be found guilty, to deprive him of his Bishopric; and otherwise, to do in the Premises according to their Wifdoms, &c.' In fine, he was found guilty, and deprived, the 14th of *October*, of his Bishopric: or the 11th Day, according to King *Edward's* Journal.

And Depri-  
vation.

And as *Tunstal* was thus deprived in *October*, so in *November* following a Grant was made to *Robert Horne*, Professor of Divinity, and Dean of *Durham*, of the said Bishopric, with all the Lordships, Manors, Lands, &c. to the same belonging, during his natural Life. But in an *Apology* writ by the said *Horn*, soon after his flying abroad under Queen *Mary*, it is evident, that he accepted not of it. And the Reason why he refused it was, because he cared not to take *Tunstal's* Bishopric over his Head. Yet *Tunstal*, when restored in the said Queen's Reign, was his great and chief Enemy, as he complained in the said *Apology*. The Bishopric was soon after dissolved, with an Intent to found two in the room of it.

The Bisho-  
pic bestow-  
ed upon *Horn*.  
*Warr. Book.*

But a Warrant was issued out to Sir *John Williams*, to pay to *Menvile*, [for his good Service in making this Discovery] by way of his Majesty's Reward, the Sum of one Hundred Pounds. But he paid for this afterwards. For in the First and Second of King *Philip* and Queen *Mary*, under the Name of *Ninian Menvile nuper de Sedwich in Com. Dunelm, Armig.* he was indicted in the King's Bench of High Treason, [perhaps he was concerned in *Wyat's* Business] and upon Procefs he was outlawed, and so returned. He lived to the fourth Year of Queen *Elizabeth*. In whose Reign, long after, his Daughter and Heir brought in a Writ of Error in the King's Bench, against her Father's Indictment; wherein two Errors were assigned. And the Outlawry was reversed, *Anno Regni. Elizab. 27.*

*Menvile* re-  
warded.

Outlawed  
under Q.  
*Mary.*  
*Cok. Instit.*  
Par. 3. p. 215.

*De Chambre*, in his History of the Bishops of *Durham*, sheweth how *Menvile*, (whom he calls *Rinian Menvile*) as he accused Bishop *Tunstal* of concealing a Conspiracy in the North in the Year 1550. so in the Year 1548. he had also accused him, together with his Chancellor, and the Dean: And, I suspect, it was of a Crime of the like Nature. For it is probable enough, that as in that Year there was a dangerous Rebellion by Papists, broken out in the West, so there might be another hatching in the Northern Parts, to back them. Upon this Accusation, the said Bishop, and the two other accused with him, were summoned up to *London*. Where the Dean, named Dr. *Whitehead*, formerly the Prior there, an antient Man, and not used to these Harasses and Troubles, ended his Days, and was buried in the Church of the *Minories*, *London*.

Bp *Tunstal*  
and the Dean  
charged a-  
bout a Con-  
spiracy in  
1548.  
*Angl. Sacra.*  
Par. 1.

*Hayward,*



ANNO  
1552.

Hayward  
taxed.

*Hayward*, that undertook to write the History of King *Edward's* Life, was ignorant of all this. For this is all he writ of Bishop *Tunstal's* Troubles, 'That he was sent to the *Tower* for Concealment of I know not what Treasons, written to him, I know not by whom, and not discovered until what I shall call the Party, did reveal it.' Because he could pick nothing else of this Matter out of King *Edward's* brief Journal, which was the main Assistant of his History, and he could not tell where to go, or would not take the Pains, to give himself further Information, he sets it down after this farcastical manner, below the Gravity of an Historian; and all, the better to conceal his own Ignorance, and to tax the Government. Was this writ like an Historian, whose Office is to relate, and give the Reader plain and satisfactory Accounts of Things? But this is a Digression which the Reader will pardon. And I proceed.

A Synod.  
Articles of  
Religion.  
Warr. Book.

While the Parliament was sitting this Winter, a Synod also was held; wherein was framed and concluded, a Book of Articles of Religion, taken out of the Word of God, purified and reformed from the Errors of Popery, and other Sects. 'But it was in the Month of *May*, Anno 1553. (I transcribe out of the *Warrant Book*) that these Articles, agreed upon by the Bishops, and other learned Men, in the Synod at *London*, in the Year of our Lord 1552. for avoiding of Controversy in Opinions, and the Establishment of a godly Concord, in certain Matters of Religion, were published by the King's Commandment.' And a Book, containing these Articles, was then signed by the King's own Hand.

A Catechism  
approved by  
the Synod.

A *Catechism* for the Instruction of Children in the Fundamentals of true Religion, passed the said Synod: But who was the Author, was not known in those Days. Bishop *Ridley* was charged to be the Author and Publisher thereof, by *Ward* and *Weston*, in the Disputation with him at *Oxford*. Who falsely also told him, That *Cranmer* had said so, but the Day before. *Ridley* declared, he was not, and that *Cranmer* would not say so. But he confessed, that he saw the Book, perused it after it was made, and noted many Things for it. And so consented to the Book. *Weston* then told *Ridley*, that he made him at the Synod to subscribe it, being then a Bishop, as he said, in his Ruff. But *Ridley* replied, he compelled no Man to subscribe. Indeed he set his Hand to it: and so, he said, did *Cranmer*: And that then it was given to others of the Convocation to set their Hands, but without Compulsion. *Ward* then would have framed an Argument out of this Catechism against *Ridley*, to prove that tho' Christ was ascended into Heaven, yet he might be on Earth: and so consequently in the Sacrament: and then quoted a Passage out of it, *Si visibiliter & in terris*, &c.

License for  
printing it.  
Warr. Book.

What I have to say more of this Catechism is, that it seems to have been published in *English*, as well as in *Latin*, that *John Day* printed it, and licensed to come abroad 1552. For, according to the *Warrant Book*, 'In *September*, 1552. a License was granted to the same Printer, to print it both in *Latin* and *English*, the King having caused it to be set forth.' But it was not printed before 1553. And the Reason it was so long between the License and the Publication, (Half a Year, and more) I conjecture was, because it was thought fit to have the Allowance first of the Convocation, for the giving it the greater Countenance and Authority.

The Author.

It was certainly writ by *Alexander Noel*, as I find by comparing *Noel's* Catechism



Catechism and this together. The *Collocutores* are in both Catechisms the same, viz. *Magister* and *Auditor*. And in many Places, the very same Questions and Answers are given *verbatim*; only *Noel's* Catechism published under Queen *Elizabeth*, is larger much. In *May* the next Year, viz. 1553. the Council sent their Letters abroad in behalf of this Catechism, enjoining it to be taught to Scholars, *As the Ground and Foundation of their Learning*, as it is expressed in the Warrant Book.

ANNO  
1552.

Enjoined to  
Schools.

At the same Time were many Letters issued out, dated *May* 20. to the Clergy, 'That the King had sent unto them certain Articles (which were 54 in Number) for an uniform Order to be observed in every Church within the Realm. Which Articles are there said to be gathered with great Study, and by the greatest learned Men of the Bishop's, &c.' These Articles were enjoined for Uniformity in *Rites*, as the last Year were framed the Articles for Uniformity in *Doctrin*, being forty two in number, tho' published not before *June* this Year. And thus, by the Care of the Archbishop, the Reformation of the Church seemed to be compleatly provided for. But what these Articles were, I cannot tell; nor do I know any Book or Manuscript but this, where there be any Footsteps or Mention of them.

Articles for  
Uniformity.  
Warr. Book

Vide *Cramer's*  
Memo-  
rials, Ch. 27.

*Bernard Gilpin*, famed in the North for his good Zeal to Religion, and his Care of his Flock, was sent for up to Court, to preach before the King. In Obedience to which, he came up, and on the first *Sunday* after *Epiphany*, he preached, tho' the King, upon some Occasion detained, was not present to hear him. It being a notable Sermon, not sparing Vice, in whomsoever he met with it, and pointing to the Corruptions of these Times, I shall briefly give some Account of it. He preached upon the Gospel for the Day, which was *Luke* ii. beginning at *ver. 41*. taking only one Clause of it, *Wist ye not that I must be about my Father's Business?* The Method he chose for his Discourse was, to shew in Order, how all Estates of Men, the Clergy, the Nobility, and the Commonalty, were under the Bands of this Obligation. They must be about their Father's Business. And he must, he said, cry so unto all Estates, as well of the Ecclesiastical Ministry, as of the Civil Governance, together with the vulgar People.

*Gilpin*  
preaches  
at Court.

He began with the Priests; who, he said, seemed to have brought Blindness into the whole Body, making Men to forget their Heavenly Father's Business. Then he shewed the Avarice and Ambition of the Clergy in former Days; and how the Bishop of *Rome* abused *Peter's* Keys, to fill *Judas* Satchel; how he dispensed with all Prelates that brought any Money, from obeying Christ's Commission given to *Peter*, *Feed, feed my Lambs and my Sheep*; and stretched it so largely, that instead of feeding Christ's Lambs and Sheep, he allowed them to feed Hawks, Hounds, and Horses, I will not say (said he) Harlots: and instead of Fishers of Men, he made them to become Fishers of Benefices. He brought Preaching into such Contempt, that it was accounted a great Absurdity for a Cardinal to Preach after he had once bestrid his Mowl. And then he declared, that if he had that Gift, Strength, and Calling, (tho' he were sure to smart for it) he had rather speak against the Pope's Enormities in *Rome*, than to speak of them there. Then he declaimed against the intolerable Abuses that came from *Rome*, and could not be driven away, and sent to *Rome* again to their Father: He

The Con-  
tents of his  
Sermon.



ANNO 1552. meant Dispensations for Pluralities and *Totquots*, and for Non-residences: Which had, he said, so many Patrons, that they could not be driven away, together with other Abuses.

From the Clergy he intended to turn his Speech to the King, and the Nobles: but they were not then present. Whereat he used these Words, 'I am come this Day to preach to the King, and to those that be in Authority under him: I am very sorry they should be absent, which ought to give Example, and encourage others to the hearing of God's Word. And I am the more sorry, because other Preachers before me complain of their Absence. But you will say, they have weighty Affairs in hand. Alas! hath God any greater Business than this?— But in their Absence I will speak to their Seats, as if they were present.' And so he proceeded to speak to the King; and then to the Nobles. Whereof, concerning such of them as were Patrons of Livings, he said, that they saw that none did their Duty. And that they thought as good to put in Asses as Men. And that as for the Bishops, they were never so liberal formerly in making of lewd Priests, but they were at that present as liberal in making lewd Vicars. He dared to say, that if such a Monster as *Dervil Gatherel*, the Idol of *Wales*, burnt in *Smithfield*, could have been well conveyed to come to set his Hand to a Bill to let the Patron take the greatest Part of the Profits, he might have had a Benefice.—— For worldly Offices, they searched meet and convenient Men; only Christian Souls, so dearly bought, were committed, without Respect, to Men not worthy to keep Sheep.

He advised the King to send forth Surveyors, to see how Benefices were bestowed and used, how Christ and his Gospel were robbed and dishonoured, to the great Decay of the Realm and Commonwealth. That he should find but a small number of Patrons, that bestowed rightly their Livings, seeking God's Glory, and that his Work and Business might be rightly applied. For that it was almost general to observe of every one of them, his Farming of them to himself or his Friends, and to appoint the Rent at his own Pleasure. But worse than all this, a great Number never farmed them at all, but kept them as their own Lands, and gave some Three Halfpeny-Priest a Curate's Wages, 9 or 10 Pounds.—— They began first with Parsonages, and seemed to have some Conscience towards Vicarages. But now their Hearts were so hardened, all is Fish that comes to the Net. That there were Vicarages about *London*, having a Thousand People belonging to them, so spoiled.—— Gentlemen kept in their hands Livings of 40 or 50 Pounds, and gave one that never came there, 5 or 6 Pounds. Some changed the Grounds of the Benefice with their Tenants; to the Intent, that if it were called for, the Tenant should lose it, and not they. He could name the Place where a Living of an Hundred Mark by the Year, [mentioned in the Margent, *viz. Croftwait* and *Chefwic*] had been sold for many Years, he supposed an Hundred, save one; and so continued still.—— That Noblemen rewarded their Servants with Livings, appointed for the Gospel.—— That he was not able to rehearse, nor yet any Man knew, all the Abuses, which the Simoniac, Ambitious, and Idol Pastors had brought into the Land. By whose Examples, ravenous Wolves, painted Christians, Hypocrites, had entred, and defiled the Sanctuary, spoiled Christ, and his Gospel, to the Destruction of his Flock.

Then



Then he descended to shew, what gross Superstition and Blindness remained among the People, thro' Lack of faithful Preachers. He passed over much Infidelity, Idolatry, Sorcery, Charming, Witchcrafts, Conjuring, Trusting in Figures, &c. which lurked in Corners, and began of late to come abroad, only for Lack of Preaching; they thought Baptism not effectual, because it wanted Mens Traditions. A great Number thought it a great Offence to take the Sacrament into their Hands, that had no Conscience to receive it with their blasphemous Mouths. — Many, because they saw not in the Church the shining Pomp of painted Cloths, Candlesticks, Images, Altars, Lamps, Tapers, they said, *As good go into a Barn*: Nothing esteeming Christ, who spake to them in his holy Word; neither the holy Sacrament, reduced to its first Institution. — That the Devil, by those Cormorants that devoured the Livings appointed for the Gospel, had made a Fortrefs and Bulwark to keep learned Pastors from the Flock; that is, so to decay Learning, that there should be none Learned, to commit the Flock unto. For by reason Livings appointed for the Ministry, for the most part were either robbed of the best Part, or clean taken away, almost none had any Zeal or Devotion to put their Children to Schools, but to learn to write, to make them Apprentices; or else Lawyers: The two Wells, *Oxford* and *Cambridge*, almost dried up. — The Decay of Students so great, that there was scarce left of every Thousand an Hundred: Adding, That if they decayed so fast, in seven Years more, there would be almost none at all. And then might the Devil make a Triumph. — A Thousand Pulpits in *England* were covered with Dust. Some had not had four Sermons in fifteen or sixteen Years, since Friars left their Limitations. And few of those worthy the Name of Sermons. These were some of the gross Abuses and Corruptions used in the Church before, and even to this Time, for Covetousness sake. And this was the free and honest Way this, and other Preachers in these Days, used in exposing of them. But now to other Matters.

ANNO  
1552.

## C H A P. XVI.

*New Serjeants. Lady Mary visits the King. The King's Sales. A Lasco's Judgment of the Ceremonies. His Epistle to the King. Books printed. Leland dies.*

**A**BOUT the 7th of *October*, the seven Serjeants of the Coif, nominated in *May* last, went unto *Westminster* Hall in their Gowns and Hoods of *Murrey* and *Russet*, and their Servants in the same Colour. There their Charge and Oath was given them by the King's Judges, and old Serjeants. This done, they returned with the Judges, and the old Serjeants, and learned Men of the Law, unto *Grays Inn* to Dinner, together with many of the King's Privy Council, Nobles, and the Lord Maior and Aldermen.

The new  
Serjeants  
sworn.



ANNO  
1552.

The new Serjeants gave to every Judge, the old Serjeants, and Men of the Law, Rings of Gold, every new Serjeant giving like Rings. After Dinner they repaired to *Paul's*, and so went up the Stairs, and round about the Choir, and there did their Homage. And so came unto the North Side of *Paul's*, and stood upon the Steps, until four old Serjeants came together, and fetched four young, and brought them unto certain Pillars. And an Oration was there read unto them by the old Serjeants. And so down again they went unto *Grays Inn*.

Sir Tho Germyn died.

Sir *Thomas Germyn*, Kt. the best Housekeeper in the County of *Suffolk*, died about this Time. Part of his State in Housekeeping, consisted in his Chappel, where Prayers and Holy Offices were daily celebrated, with finging and Singing Men, as in Cathedrals. The County was reckoned to have had a great Loss in him. His Funerals were pompously performed, with his Standard, Penon of Armes, Coat Armour, Target, borne by Herald, &c. *October 21*.

Two Knights of the Garter.

*Decemb. 16*. The Earl of *Westmorland*, and Sir *Andrew Dudley*, were enttalled at *Windsor*, of the noble Order of the Garter.

The King keeps a great Christmas.

*Ditto the 23d*. The King removed from *Westminster* to *Greenwich*, to keep his *Christmas* there. And began to keep Hall; and had a Lord of Misrule, who ordered the Sports and Pastimes, for the King's Diversion; which were in as great Variety, and Royal Pomp, as scarcely ever had been seen before.

Waltham Steeple falls.

*Febru. 9*. Between Seven and Eight of the Clock in the Evening, the great Steeple of *Waltham Abby* in *Essex*, fell down to the Ground, and all the great Bells; and the Choir, and much of that stately Church, demolished with it.

The Lady Mary visits the King.

On the 10th Day of the said Month, the Lady *Mary* (who on the 6th came to *London* to *S. John's thro' Cheapside*, attended with Lords and Ladies, Knights and Gentlemen, to the number of two hundred) rode thro' *Fleetstreet* unto the King at *Westminster*, nobly and numerously accompanied. For they now seemed to look upon her as the rising Sun, the King being in a Consumption. Among the Ladies that now attended her, were the two Duchesses of *Suffolk* and *Northumberland*, the two Marchionesses of *Northampton* and *Winchester*, the Countesses of *Bedford*, *Shrewsbury*, *Arundel*, the Lady *Clinton*, the Lady *Brown*, and many more. When she arrived at the outward Court, there met her the Dukes of *Suffolk* and *Northumberland*, the Marquis of *Winchester*, the Earls of *Bedford*, *Shrewsbury*, *Arundel*, the Lord Chamberlain, the Lord Admiral, and a great number of Knights and Gentlemen. And so she was conducted up to the Chamber of Presence, and there the King met her, and saluted her. This Visit seemed to be, to see him in his Sickness.

On the 24th of *Feb*. Sir *William Sydney* was honourably buried at his Place at *Penshurst* in *Kent*.

The Earl of Pembroke's Retinue.

On the 17th *ditto*, the Earl of *Pembroke* came riding into *London*, with three hundred Horse; afore him, an hundred Gentlemen with Chains of Gold: all in blue Cloth plain, with Badges on their Sleeves, being a Dragon. And so to *Bernard Castle*: which was his Place.

Strangwick, a Pirate:

In the Month of *March*, the King sent forth several Ships to find out and apprehend one *Strangwick*, a great Pirate; and appointed 460 Pounds to be laid out in Victualling and Furnishing those Ships for the Service.

I find



I find this *Strangwich*, and two *Killigrews* with him, such notable Sea Rovers, that in the Month of *February* the King sent a Letter to the *French King*, that he would do his Endeavour for the Apprehension of them; perhaps to vindicate himself from conniving at them for any Damage they might do to that King's Subjects, as well as to prevent them from doing any more to his own.

ANNO  
1552.  
And two  
*Killigrews*.

Popular Disturbances and Tumults seemed now to be very frequent, and the common People uneasy under the present Juncture. Which occasioned, surely, that severe Commission which was given out this Month of *March*, to *John Earl of Bedford*, *William Earl of Pembroke*, the Lord *Darcy*, *Sir William Petre*, *Sir John Baker*, *Sir Philip Hoby*, *Sir Robert Bows*, *Sir Thomas Wroth*, *Edward Griffith*, *John Gosnold*, or to any six, or more of them: To put in execution all such Martial Laws, as should be thought by their Discretions most necessary to be executed. And Instructions were also given them, in nine distinct Articles.

A Commis-  
sion for Mar-  
tial Law.

In this Month of *March*, and the Month preceding, the King sold away his Lands and Lordships in great Quantity, (besides not a few given to his Courtiers) his Necessities, no question, so requiring. So that all this Money following, came into the Exchequer for so many several Purchases: (For it would be too long to mention the Names of the Lands and Purchasers.)

The King's  
Sales.  
*Book of Sales*.

|              | l.   | s. | d.    |
|--------------|------|----|-------|
|              | 2055 | 19 | 2     |
|              | 289  | 06 | 8     |
|              | 390  | 17 | 0     |
|              | 1343 | 10 | 10    |
|              | 1331 | 18 | 1     |
|              | 951  | 02 | 2     |
|              | 958  | 06 | 8     |
|              | 246  | 05 | 0     |
|              | 1988 | 16 | 5 ob. |
|              | 146  | 13 | 4     |
| In February, | 930  | 14 | 6     |
|              | 700  | 02 | 4     |
|              | 4570 | 14 | 0     |
|              | 566  | 15 | 4     |
|              | 396  | 13 | 6     |
|              | 694  | 02 | 2     |
|              | 1223 | 15 | 0     |
|              | 564  | 05 | 6     |
|              | 712  | 15 | 4     |
|              | 425  | 19 | 8     |
|              | 850  | 00 | 0     |
|              | 767  | 08 | 4     |
|              | 1482 | 09 | 3     |
|              | 66   | 13 | 4     |
| In March,    | 1606 | 03 | 2     |
|              | 1248 | 17 | 7 ob. |
|              | 1477 | 19 | 2 ob. |

|        | l.   | s. | d.       |
|--------|------|----|----------|
|        | 1036 | 14 | 10       |
|        | 1199 | 15 | 1 ob.    |
|        | 359  | 12 | 0        |
|        | 568  | 04 | 5        |
|        | 389  | 19 | 5 ob. q. |
|        | 386  | 13 | 8        |
|        | 346  | 01 | 10       |
|        | 246  | 00 | 0        |
|        | 574  | 00 | 0        |
|        | 694  | 04 | 0        |
|        | 1696 | 11 | 9        |
|        | 300  | 04 | 8        |
| March, | 917  | 10 | 5        |
|        | 933  | 06 | 8        |
|        | 580  | 05 | 6        |
|        | 889  | 15 | 8        |
|        | 1718 | 10 | 3        |
|        | 732  | 10 | 11       |
|        | 1340 | 03 | 4        |
|        | 613  | 06 | 8        |
|        | 870  | 15 | 1        |
|        | 744  | 03 | 11       |
|        | 646  | 05 | 9        |
|        | 1596 | 07 | 8        |
|        | 1417 | 08 | 6        |
|        | 1305 | 08 | 10       |
|        | 229  | 03 | 4        |

Besides



ANNO  
1552.

Kneeling at  
the Sacra-  
ment, and  
the Habits,  
give Offence.

A Lasco's  
Book.

Mr. N. Bar-  
tely.

A Lasco to  
the King,  
concerning  
the Habits.

Besides these, were many more Purchases made of the King's Lands the Year ensuing. For the Sale of which, there was a Commission on purpose, directed to the Bishop of *Norwich*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Philip Hoby*, Sir *Walter Mildmay*, and others.

Divers there were now, in this King's Reign, that liked so little of Popery, that they thought it highly convenient not to symbolize with that Church in any of its Usages. And that gave Occasion to them to dislike particularly two Things, viz. the Posture of kneeling at the Reception of the Communion; and the Priestly Habits; which were not laid aside by the Reformers of this Church from Papal Innovations. The retaining of these gave the more Disgust, because it was contrary to the Example of many of the foreign Reformers, as those of *Switzerland* and *Geneva*; whose Books and Judgments swayed greatly, and were much used here. A Lasco, the Superintendent of the Foreigners Congregations in *London*, being a Person greatly respected by the King, and the Nobility, and Bishops, as for his noble Blood, so for his Learning and Religion, was put upon writing on this Argument to the King. And he composed a Treatise in *Latin* of the Sacrament, which was printed in *London*, 1552. This Book bore this Title, *Brevis & dilucida de Sacramentis Ecclesie Christi, Tractatio. In qua & Fons ipse & Ratio totius Sacramentariae nostri Temporis Controversia, paucis exponitur, Naturaque ac Vis Sacramentorum compendio & perspicue explicatur: Per Joannem A Lasco, Baronem Poloniae, Superintendentem Ecclesie Peregrinorum Londini, Anno 1552. in 8vo.* Together with this Book, was bound up a Tract intituled, *Consensio mutua in re Sacramentaria Ministrorum Tigurinae Ecclesie, & D. Jo. Calvini, Ministri Genevensis Ecclesie. Data Tiguri, Aug. 30. 1549.* This Book the noble Author presented to several of the Court, his Friends, and among the rest, to Sir *Anthony Cook*. Which very Book was lately in the Possession of a very Reverend Friend of mine, deceased, and hath these Words writ in it by A Lasco's own Hand, *Clarissimo ac doctissimo viro Dno Cuko, Praeceptor Regio fidelissimo Joannes A Lasco, D. D.* Before it was an Epistle to King *Edward*. Which, to shew what Arguments swayed with A Lasco, and others, at this Time, for the abolishing all Habits and Customs used in the Papal Worship, I shall here set down, and the rather, it being now so rarely to be met with.

Joannes A Lasco, &c. to the renowned EDWARD the Sixth.

REcte facit Pater, laudemque meretur proculdubio, si Filiam Virginem, &c. The *English* whereof was as followeth: ' Well doth that Father, and without doubt, deserveth Praise, who, having a Daughter a Virgin, drawn by the Guile of Panders into some leud and dishonest House, and there trimmed after the Whorish Guise, doth presently rescue her thence, and bring her home to his own House, before she be utterly spoiled. But the same Father, if he be wise, thinketh it not enough for the Safety of his Daughter, and the Honour of his House, that he hath brought her Home again, unless he take from her wholly whatsoever he knoweth to be accounted in those Houses an Whorish Attire: Neither doth he enquire whence such Attire came first, but judgeth it dishonourable to himself, and so unworthy his Daughter



Daughter, and whole Family, that any such thing at all, as Strumpets have used for dressing in their Houses, should appear in his. And he doth not give Ear to their Persuasions, who bear him in hand, that all things are to be esteemed according to the Father's Mind in his own House; and so think that the Father's Approbation can make that honest in his own House for his Daughter and whole Family, which in another House is most dishonest for any Daughters, that regard their own Credits. Ascribing so much to the Father's Prerogative, that whatsoever he approves, must be of others well liked of, so far as it concerns his own House. For he knows full well, that altho' all those things, which he hath authorized in his own House, be there well thought of, yet that is not enough, since the Honour of his Daughter, and his whole Family, must not only be cared for within his own House, but also throughout the whole City; that he may remove all ill Suspicions from his Family among all his Neighbours; and is heedful that the Panders have not the least Occasion left them, of challenging or laying claim to his said Daughter, as having something of their Whore-house Marks upon her.

ANNO  
1552.

Even so in the Church of God, as in a City, Magistrates and Ministers are in Place of Parents, having the pure and right Administration of the Sacraments committed unto them of God, for to be tended and tendered as their own Daughter; it is therefore very commendable in these Parents of the Church, as we may term them, if they rescue the lawful and pure Administration of the Sacraments from the Violence and Tyranny of the *Romish* Panders, by taking it into their own Care and Custody.

But here they ought to remember, especially they who are called by the holy Spirit eminent Ministers of God, and nursing Fathers of his Church, that is, Christian Kings and Monarchs, that it is not enough for them, thus to have brought this Daughter out of the Papist Stews home, into their own Care and Keeping, unless they also put off from her all that dressing which they know to be Whorish in the Stews. That no such thing may be seen with them, which may be accounted Whorish; especially in that City where there is great Variety of Judgments; the over-ruling whereof by Man's Authority, is not to be expected, and where there are so many Hucksters for the Stews remaining.

Nor let them hear the Delusions of those, who suggest, that such kinds of Dressing, from whence soever they be taken, may be made good and honest by Authority. For well they know, they are not set over the whole Church of God, but only one Part of it, as a Family in a City: And that therefore, tho' they could bear out such things at home by their Authority; yet it is their Duty, as they regard public Chastity and Honesty, to procure the Honour of their Daughter and Family, not only within their own Walls, but also without the whole City; not suffering any thing to be seen within their House, which they know to be held, urged, and maintained by the *Romish* Stews, and their Instruments, as their proper Whorish Stuff.

Last



ANNO  
1552.

‘ Last of all, they must be wary, lest any Signs or Tokens be left upon their Daughter, by which she may be questioned again by these Panders, as one of theirs.

‘ Now if it please your Excellent Majesty, you are one of these nursing Fathers of the Church of God, blessed be his Name; therefore, in this high Calling, you have by the Lord God this Ministry of the Sacraments, as a Daughter rescued out of the Popish Brothels, and brought into your own House, that is, into your own domestic Care and Keeping. Here therefore be pleased to set before your Eyes the foresaid Example of a good Father in those things, which yet remain to be performed; that is, in providing for the public Credit of this your reduced Daughter, and so of your whole Family, not only in this your flourishing Kingdom, but also in the Catholic Church of Christ, whereof you are a Citizen: Unto whom a principal Part thereof, as an honourable Family, is committed in Trust.

‘ This is that which all the Godly throughout the Christian World do expect from your hands; and that the more earnestly, because they know, that God hath enriched you with such excellent Gifts, and placed you in so high a Station, almost above all others, even to this very End, that you might remove from the Ministry of the Sacraments all these Popish Trinkets, wherewith it hath been fearfully profaned, and restore unto it again that Virgin-like Attire, wherewith it was of old adorned by the high King of Kings and Lawgiver, Christ the Lord, in his holy Institution. So shall your Faith and Fidelity be famous throughout the Christian World, and the Church of England grow more honourable under your Government.’

This Letter was, to serve the Turn of some Dissenters, printed again, 1633. in a Book intituled, *A fresh Suit against Humane Ceremonies: Or, A Triplication unto D. Burges his Rejoinder for Dr. Morton.*

*Catechismus  
brevis.*

To the former Book of the Sacrament, published this Year, I add a few more; viz. *Catechismus brevis Christianæ Disciplinæ summam continens, omnibus Ludimagistris, Autoritate Regia, commendatus. Mandato Regis Edwardi Præposito.* In 12°. For the printing of which, John Day had a special License granted him, dated in September.

*Articuli Re-  
ligionis.*

*Articuli de quibus Synodo Londinensi, Anno Domini 1552. convenerat, Regia Autoritate promulgati.* In 12°.

*Marcus Con-  
stantius.*

A Book now also appeared in Latin with a feigned Name, but it was known to be made by Bishop Gardiner, against Archbishop Cranmer's Answer, set forth the last Year. This Book was printed at Paris, and went under this Title, *Confutatio Cavillationum, quibus sacrosanctum Eucharistia Sacramentum ab impiis Capernaitis impeti solet. Autore Marco Antonio Constantio Theologo Lovanensi.* Which was again learnedly answered by Peter Martyr. Of whose Book, what the Reputation was in those Times, we are told by an eminent Author, namely, ‘ That in his Book was contained in effect, whatsoever is delivered of the whole Matter of the Eucharist, as well in Scripture, as in the antient Fathers and Councils.’ At the Entreaty of Friends, the Author reduced his Book into an *Epitome*.

*Lavat. Hist.  
Sacramentar.  
In hoc Libro  
fere omnia  
continentur,  
&c.*



*Le Livre de Prières Communes, de l'Administration des Sacraments & autres Ceremonies en l'Eglise d'Angleterre.* This Book was our Book of *Common Prayer*, translated into *French*: Which was done by *Francis Philip*, the Lord Chancellor's Servant, as he stiled himself, and printed by *Tho. Gaultier*, the King's Printer for the *French* Language, in the Year 1553. [that is, reckoning the Year to begin in *January*. For in *December*, 1552. a License was granted to this *Gaultier* of *London*, to print in *French* all such Books of the Church as should be set forth. This Book was by the said *Francis Philip* dedicated to *Thomas Goodrich*, Bishop of *Ely*, Lord Chancellor. In which Dedication he shewed, 'How the said Chancellor put him upon this Translation, for the Use of 'the Isles and Lands which spake *French*. Which therefore he did ver- 'ry gladly undertake, and finish as soon as possibly he could; not only 'to the End, that the King's most Royal and Christian Ordinance, for the 'Use of this Book of *Common Prayer* to be used in all his Dominions, 'might obtain its Effect, but also that all *France* might know, that the 'Christian Religion was not wholly abolished in *England*, as many 'among them esteemed. For in reading this Book, they should know 'evidently, that God was here served in Spirit and in Truth, and that 'the Sacraments were here administred purely and sincerely, according 'to the Word of God: And that he was assured, that having read it, 'the good and well-disposed Sort would say, Blessed be so noble a King, 'under whom from Day to Day the Reformation of Religion so increased 'and flourished.

ANNO  
1552.  
The Com-  
mon Prayer  
in French.

In this Year also, *John Bale* printed and set forth a Book intituled, *An Expostulation or Complaint against the Blasphemies of a Frantic Papist of Hampshire.* Printed by *John Day*. The Papist he wrote against, and for what Cause, he declared towards the Beginning of his Book; viz. 'That on one of the *Christmas* Holidays, to wit, *Decemb. 29.* last past, 'in the House of a Gentleman of his own Affinity in the said County, 'the said Papist, being in the full Heat of his Frenzy, brast out into this 'unreverend, blasphemous, and contemptuous Talk of the King's Ma- 'jesty, and of his most godly Proceedings: *Alas! poor Child*, said he, 'unknown it is to him, what Acts are made now adays. But when he 'comes once of Age, he will see another Rule, and hang up an Hundred 'of such Heretic Knaves.' Meaning the Preachers of those Times: for at the same Season he had most spightfully railed on one of them, being absent. These Words *Bale* divided into three Parts, and answered each at large. The first Part touched the King's Highness; the second his honourable Council; and the third the true Ministers of God's Word.

That which touched the King he made to be, that this Man had called the King *A poor Child*; 'When as, said *Bale*, he was abundantly 'replenished with the most gracious Gifts of God; specially, with all 'kinds of good Learning, far above all his Progenitors, Kings of this 'Imperial Region. And when Childishness in a King is reproved by 'the Mouth of God, and given many times of him to a People as a 'Curse, Plague, and Scourge, for their Unfaithfulness. *I shall give you 'Children, saith the Lord, to be your Princes, and Babes shall have Rule over you*, Es. 3. That is, ye shall have for your Disobedience, Men to 'be your Governours that are dissolute, rash, wanton, and careless: yea,



ANNO  
1552.

Men unexpert, and unexperienced in Princely Affairs, and Men which will not regard your Commonwealth, but follow their own Lusts. Wo! be to such a Land, saith *Solomon*, that hath so Childish Rulers. And all these Childish Ways be detestable in a King, yet is not the Childhood of Youth in him to be reprov'd. For so might King *Josias* have been reprov'd, which began his Reign in the Eighth Year of his Age. — Then he comes closer to this Papist, so blasphemously reporting the noble and worthy King *Edward*, (then in the Fifteenth Year of his Age, and the Fifth of his Reign) without all Honour and Reverence. He added, His worthy Education in liberal Letters, and godly Virtues, and his natural Aptness in retaining of the same, plentifully declared him to be no *Poor Child*, but a manifest *Solomon* in Princely Wisdom. His sober Admonitions, and open Example of Godliness at that Day, shewed him, mindfully to prefer the Wealth of the Commons, as well ghostly as bodily, above all foreign Matters. Mark what his Majesty hath done already in Religion, in abolishing the most shameful Idolatry of Antichrist, besides his other Acts for public Affairs, and ye shall find at this Day no Christian Prince like to him.

This Book the Author dedicated to the Duke of *Northumberland*, with this Title, *To the Right High and Mighty Prince Johan Duke of Northumberland, Lord Great Master of the King's most honourable Household, and Lord President of his Majesty's most honourable Privy Council*. In this Epistle he set him forth as a singular Favourer and Patriot of the true Religion; which yet, as it appeared afterwards, influenced him no more than as it served to forward his worldly Interest. For thus *Bale* addressed to him: 'Considering in your noble Grace the same mighty, fervent, and religious Zeal in God's Cause, which I have diligently marked in *Moses*, the Servant of God, &c. — This poor *Exposition* am I, your poor Orator, so much the bolder to dedicate to your Highness, in that I have always known the same a most mighty, zealous, and ardent Supporter, Maintainer, and Defender of God's lively Word. — Jesus Christ, whose invincible Verity your Grace hath hitherto most fervently favoured.'

Vocation of  
*John Bale*.

The same Author, *John Bale*, set forth this Year his *Vocation to the Bishopric of Ossory in Ireland*, and his Persecution in the same, and his final Deliverance.

Order for  
printing the  
*Primer*.

Here I shall subjoin a Privilege granted to *William Seres*, Stationer, to print all Books of private Prayers, called *Primers*, as should be agreeable to the Book of *Common Prayer*, established by Parliament: and that none else printed the same, upon Pain of Forfeiture thereof. Provided, that before the said *Seres*, and his Assigns, did begin to print the same, he should present a Copy thereof, to be allowed by the Lords of the Privy Council, or by the Lord Chancellor for the Time being, or by the King's four Ordinary Chaplains, or two of them. And when the same was, or should be, from Time to Time printed, that by the said Lords, and others of the Privy Council, or by the Lord Chancellor, or with the Advice of the Wardens of the Occupation, the reasonable Price thereof to be set, as well in the Leaves, as being bound in Paste or Board: In like manner as was expressed in the End of the Book of *Common Prayer*. This Privilege was dated *March* the 4th.

I can-



I cannot here omit the Mention of the Death of the most learned Antiquarian, *John Leland*, which happened in *April* this Year, after he had been a Year, and upwards, distracted, to the deplorable Frustration of his noble Designs of illustrating the History of this antient Nation. Being bereft of his Wits, he became the King's Care. Who committed the keeping of him either to his Father or Uncle, I suppose, (for he was one of the same Name) *John Leyland*, or *Leland*, Senior, together with all his Lands, and Rents, and Profits whatsoever, in as ample Manner as *John* the younger, being in his right Mind, enjoyed them, for the better Sustentation of him. This Grant was in the Month of *March*, 1550. This *Leland*, who had the Care of this poor Gentleman, lived, I suppose, in *Pater noster Row*, which belonged to the Parish of *St. Michael the Quern*, in which Church, not much above a Year after, he was buried.

ANNO  
1552.

Leland dies  
mad.

He being a *Londoner* born, had his Education under *Lilly*, the famous Grammarian, and first Master of the Free School near *S. Paul's*. He had divers Contemporaries, which, by their Learning and Advancement afterwards, added Lustre both to the School where all of them were bred, and to the City where some of them were born. As namely, *Sir William Paget*, afterwards Secretary of State, and made Lord *Paget* of *Beau Desert*, and honoured with the Garter. To whom *Leland* addressing a Copy of Verses, speaks thus of *Lilly*, their common Instructor:

His School-  
master, and  
Schoolfel-  
lows.

*Notior ille tibi, notior ille mihi :*

And makes Mention of something which he [*Paget*] wrote in Vindication of their Master, against one *Gonell*, a learned Man. Another of his Schoolfellows was *Sir Edward North*, after also Lord *North*, and a Privy Counsellor, a Citizen born. To him *Leland* dedicated some Verses, mentioning therein their learning together:

*Imbibimus leti litterulasque simul.*

*Sir Anthony Denny*, Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to King *Henry*, and a great Favourer of the Professors of the Gospel, and as great a Scholar, was also *Leland's* Mate in this learned School. Of whose Wittiness and Ingenuity there, he speaks in a Piece of his Poetry, written to him. *Sir Thomas Wriotbesly*, afterwards Lord *Wriotbesly*, and Lord Chancellor of *England*, was also a *Londoner* born; and so was his Father, and a great Friend of our *Leland*, and was probably of the same School with him, being a Man brought up in Letters. In Honour of whom, did *Leland* also exercise his curious Vein of Poetry.

From this Nursery of *S. Paul's*, he was transplanted to the University of *Cambridge*. Where, in learned Studies, and Converse with ingenious Men, he took great Delight, and made great Improvements.

*Applausit studiis Granta beata meis.*

But afterwards, it seems, he studied at *Oxford*, and was there preferred, and made Fellow of *All Souls*. His Patrons and Friends, besides those mentioned before, were Archbishop *Cranmer*, *Sir Brian Tuke*, *Sir John Mason*, *Dr. Legh*, *Dr. Cox*, *Dr. Haddon*; all Men of Fame in their Days.

C H A P.



ANNO

1552.

## C H A P. XVII.

*Commissioners from France. Corruptions at Court. Paget, and Beaumont, and the Earl of Arundel, their Submissions. The University of Rostock to the King. The King's Diligence, and good Example. Free Schools by him Founded.*

The French  
vapour.



HIS Year came Commissioners from *France*, *Monsieur Aubrey*, and *Monsieur Du Val*; the one Lieutenant Civil of *Paris*, the other an Advocate unto the *French* King. An Agent of the King's, whose Name was *Barnaby*, met with them at *London*. They came about some Matters of Restitution to some *English* Merchants, for Ships and Goods taken, pretending they belonged to the *Spaniard*, because they were not carried in *English* Bottoms. They told *Barnaby*, in a vapouring sort, (which that Nation was then much addicted to) how little Harm *England* in their Wars was like to do them; and that in the last War, wherein King *Henry*, together with the Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, invaded them, and took *Bulloign*, we did but spend all our Riches, and destroyed a great Number of Subjects, and left all our Money in *Flanders* and *Artois*, and could not now shew one Town we had taken.

The way  
to distress  
*France*, and  
benefit *Eng-*  
*land*.

Shipping.

Upon this occasion *Barnaby*, in a Letter to Sir *William Cecyl*, the Secretary, related, by his own long Experience of that Country, (having made twenty eight Voyages thither, employed by King *Henry*, and *Crumwel*) how we might effectually distress that Country: namely, by this one thing, increasing Mariners in *England*. Whereas for want of Ships and Shipmen, our Commodities of our own Growth were fetched away from us for very small Prices by *French* Vessels, to their exceeding enriching. He had seen going out of *Rye* at one Tide 37 Hoyes, laden with Wood and Timber, and never an *English* Mariner among them. He had heard great Complaints for want of *English* Ships, to lade Goods for *Spain*, and other Places; and none to be had. Great Benefit also might be made of our Fishing, if we had Ships: but especially of our *Newcastle* Coals. This last, the *French* could not live without. It maintained those in *France*, that wrought in Steel, and Mettals, and Wire, and made Guns; and likewise their Goldsmiths. The *French* Custom was, that after their Fishing was done, three or fourscore Ships of *Normandy* and *Britain*, were sent for Coals; the Gain whereof was prodigious. Coals were bought at *Newcastle*, for two Shillings and two Pence a Chaldron, and sold again in *France* for thirteen Nobles.

A Project  
for the King  
to take Coals  
into his own  
hands.

These things considered, *Barnaby's* Advice was, that the King of *England* should take Coals into his own hands, (as the *French* King had taken Salt) and bring them into *Kent*, and there make a Staple of them. And that no Goods whatsoever should be carried out of *England*, but in *English* Bottoms. By this means an infinite number of Mariners would be set work, and it would prove a great Strength to the Realm. And hereby



hereby *England*, in respect of Trade and Seamen, might no longer be so inferior to *France*, which did at that present so much outdo it. For in these Times, there would sometimes come out at one Tide from *Diep*, five hundred Boats, and more, and in every Boat ten or twelve Men. Whereby the Maritime Towns maintained themselves, their Towns and Ports, by Fishing, and grew very rich by Trade. Whereas in *England*, *Sandwich*, *Dover*, *Hyde*, *Hastings*, *Winchelsea*, were decayed exceedingly for Maintenance, and hardly any Mariner in those Ports. And *Barnaby* would undertake to set 6 or 7000 Mariners a work, in carrying Coals only. But I betake the Reader to *Barnaby's* Letter, where he may read this, and other things worth noting, of the State of the Nation, more at large.

ANNO

1552.

C.

The Court was very corrupt, and extremely covetous, especially towards the declining of the King's Reign: Raking continually from the King, (who was fain to borrow) for the enriching of themselves; and making Preys also one of another. The Lord *Paget*, Chancellor of the Dutchy, and *Beaumont*, Master of the Rolls, and *Whaley*, Receiver of *Torkshire*, were in the Month of *May* discovered to have grossly wronged the King. *Paget* had sold away Lands, and great Timber Woods, and had taken great Fines of the King's Lands, to his particular Profit and Advantage, never turning any of it to the King's Use. He made Leases in Reversion for more than 21 Years. All this he confessed before the Privy Council, and surrendered his Office, (which was after conferred upon Sir *John Gates*) and submitted himself to what Fines should be laid upon him. *Beaumont* bought Lands with the King's Money, lent the King's Money, and kept it from the King, to the Value of 9000 Pounds, and above, and 11000 Pounds Obligations. And being Judge in a Cause in Chancery between the Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Lady *Powis*, he took her Title, and went about to get it into his Hands, paying a Sum of Money, and letting her have a Farm of a Manor of his: and caused a false Indenture to be made, with the old Duke's counterfeit Hand to it; (by which pretended Indenture, the said Duke gave these Lands to the Lady *Powis*) and went about to make twelve Men perjured; and lastly, had concealed the Felony of his Man, to the Sum of 200 Pounds. All this he confessed, and for these Things surrendered all his Offices, Lands, and Goods to the King, and gave the King an Obligation under his Hand and Seal, for his Debt of 20861 Pounds, and upwards. *Whaley* lent the King's Money upon Gain: He paid one Year's Revenue with the Arrearages of the last: He bought the King's Land for himself with the King's own Money: In his Accounts he made many false Suggestions. At the Time of the Fall of Money, he borrowed divers Sums of Money, and had Allowance for it after. By which he gained 500 Pounds at one crying down, the whole Sum being 2000 Pounds, and above. All this he confessed, surrendered his Office, and submitted to Fines.

The Corruption of the Court.

K. Edward's Journ. p. 55.

See the Repository. D.

The Lord *Paget*, and *Beaumont*, June 16. were brought into the *Star-chamber*. There the former declared his Submission by Word of Mouth, and delivered it in Writing. He was fined 6000 Pounds: But *Beaumont* had denied his former Confession before the Council. But now being called before the Council, he acknowledged a Fine of his Lands, and signed an Obligation and Surrender of all his Goods. And on the 20th Day, being brought again to the *Star-chamber*, he confessed all.

*Paget* and *Beaumont* for Corruption brought into the *Star-chamber*.

When



ANNO

1552.

They sur-  
render their  
Goods and  
Lands.

See this Let-  
ter in the  
Repository.  
E.

The Conclu-  
sion with the  
L. Paget.]

The Earl of  
Arundel in  
Prison.

When the Council had discovered all this Corruption, on the 18th of June, from *Greenwich* they wrote the News of it to the Duke of *Northumberland*, Earls of *Huntingdon* and *Pembroke*, and Secretary *Cecyl*, who were in a Journey, going down to the Borders of *Scotland*, upon many Disorders there, and negligent looking to the Forts, the Duke being Lord Warden of the Marches. *Beaumont* had surrendered his Goods and Lands to the King: But the King was not to be the better for them; some of them being presently begged by the Duke of *Northumberland*, and Earl of *Pembroke*, for the Earl of *Huntingdon*. And *Huntingdon* another Time will do the like Courtesy for them, if need be. That which they asked for this Earl was, the Custody of *Gracedieu*, the Parsonage of *Dunington*, and the Manor of *Throuston* and *Swanington*, Parcel of the said *Beaumont's* Possessions, with all his Goods and Chattels in and upon the said House and Lands. And when Order should be taken for the Delivery of any of the Lands of the Lord *Paget*, in Satisfaction of Part of his Fine, they prayed the Council, that the Earl of *Huntingdon*, and the Lord Chamberlain, might not be forgotten: the one to have the Custody of his House at *Drayton*, and the other of that at *London*. And as these things before mentioned came under the keeping of *Huntingdon*, so the next Year he became the Proprietor of them. For in June, 1553. the King granted him the Scite, Circuit, and Precinct, and also the Manor of *Gracedieu* in *Liecestershire*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 158 Pounds 8 Shillings 5 Pence.

The Conclusion with the Lord *Paget*, after he was thus censured, and had also made his Submission for being privy to the late Protector's Practice against *Northumberland*, was in *December* following, when he had a general Pardon of all Offences and Transgressions, and other Negligences, except Debts due to his Majesty in the Court of Exchequer, the Augmentation, the Wards, and the First-Fruits and Tenths. And an Indenture was made between the King's Majesty and the Lord *Paget*, for the Assurance unto his Majesty of 100 Pounds by Year, and for the Payment also of 2000 Pounds, that is to say, 1000 Pounds at *Christmas* next, and the other at *Christmas* following. Yet not long after, he came into some Favour at Court. For in *February* he had a Discharge for the Payment of the 2000 Pounds imposed on him as a Fine. And the Month ensuing, he had a special Grant for his Coat of Armes, which before was taken away from him, upon Pretence that it was given him by a King of Armes that could not give it. But now the same Coat was confirmed to him by Patent, granted to him by the Name of *William Lord Paget*, of *Beaudefert*, and his Posterity for ever.

The third Day of this Month of *December*, (that same Day Twelvemonth the Duke of *Somerset* was tried and condemned) did the Earl of *Arundel* appear before the King, and make his humble Submission by Word of Mouth. He had been Lord Chamberlain, and of the Privy Council, but upon some occasion put out of both Places. Whereat he grew malecontent, and was dealt with to come into the late Plot of the Duke of *Somerset*, against certain of the great Nobles that bore the Sway: Yet he would not meddle, but concealed it, and chose to be a Looker on, thinking to have his Malice executed by other Hands: but it cost him dear. For *Octob. 20. 1551. Crane*, one of them in this Plot, did confess, that the Earl knew of the Matter, about inviting those Nobles to the

Lord



Lord *Paget's* House to a Banquet, and then to have cut off their Heads: *ANNO*  
 And that *Stanbope* was the Messenger that went to the Earl. Upon *1552.*  
 this, *Novemb. 8.* the Earl, with *Stoadly* and *S. Alban*, his Men, was  
 committed to Prison; and that because *Crane* did disclose more and more  
 of him. And having been a Prisoner above a Twelvemonth, *Decemb. 3.*  
 he was fain to make a Submission, and submit to a Fine: His Submis-  
 sion was in these Words, as they are taken out of the *Council Book*, and  
 there said to be by Order of Council entered into the said Book.

‘It may please your most excellent Majesty to understand, that *His Sub-*  
 ‘whereas I *Henry* Earl of *Arundel*, now Prisoner in the *Tower*, have *mission.*  
 ‘been charged to be one of the Confederates and Conspirators with *Ed-*  
 ‘ward, late Duke of *Somerset*, lately attainted, and with others, for *Counc. Book*  
 ‘the Apprehension and Imprisonment of divers Noblemen, then and  
 ‘yet being of your Majesty’s Privy Council: And forasmuch as upon  
 ‘my Examination taken during the Time of my Imprisonment in the  
 ‘*Tower of London*, before *John* Duke of *Northumberland*, *John* Earl  
 ‘of *Bedford*, *William* Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, *William* Earl of  
 ‘*Pembroke*, and Sir *Philip Hoby* Kt. and otherwise, it doth appear, that  
 ‘I the said *Henry* Earl of *Arundel* was Privy, and of Knowledge of the  
 ‘said dangerous Conspiracy practised by the said Duke, and others, to  
 ‘the Peril of the State of this your Realm: And forasmuch also as I  
 ‘the said Earl of *Arundel* did not, according to my most bounden Duty,  
 ‘reveal so much as I did know of the said Duke’s Intents, to your High-  
 ‘ness, or to some others of your Majesty’s Privy Council, but did con-  
 ‘ceal and keep the same secret; whereby I do confess and acknowledge,  
 ‘that I have not only worthily deserved this mine Imprisonment, but  
 ‘also that the same my said Offence and Concealment should be dan-  
 ‘gerous unto me, without your Majesty’s Clemency: For the miti-  
 ‘gating therefore of the same, I do most humbly acknowledge by this  
 ‘my Submission, my said Offence, and do crave and desire your most  
 ‘gracious Pardon for the same: And further, do submit myself for the  
 ‘Premises to the most merciful Order of your Highness, and of your  
 ‘most honourable Council.’

After this Submission, the Earl of *Arundel* appeared the same Day be- *And Fine.*  
 fore the Council: Where the Lords informed him, that he was fined  
 6000 Marks, to be paid in six Years, at 1000 Marks a Year. And he  
 was bound in a Bond of 10000 Marks, to pay the said Fine: And was  
 set at Liberty, being admonished by the Lords to behave himself ac-  
 cording to the Duty of a Nobleman, and to be indeed what he pro-  
 fessed in Words.

But the Earl found Favour afterwards. For *May 10.* a Grant was  
 made him, that he should pay 3221 Pounds 12 Shillings 2 Pence at  
 the Augmentation, in Form following, *viz.* at *Easter* next, 221 Pounds  
 12 Shillings 2 Pence. And after, yearly at the same Feast, 333 Pounds  
 6 Shillings 8 Pence, until the whole Sum were satisfied and paid. And  
*July 2.* following, (that is, but four Days before the King’s Death, be-  
 ing then also, as it appears, of the Privy Council) a Pardon and Discharge  
 was sealed to him for 10000 Marks, acknowledged by him to owe it to  
 the King’s Majesty by Recognizance, upon certain Considerations in  
 the same expressed. This, we may conclude, was *Northumberland’s* Do-  
 ing, his Policy being, to gain as many Noblemen his Friends as he could,  
 in



**ANNO** in the great Intrigue he was then upon, to bring the Crown into his Family. But *Arundel* deceived him.

1552.

The University of Rostock to the King.

This Nation was now become renowned abroad, for its Countenance to true Religion, and good Learning, and King *Edward* for a right nursing Father to both. While every where in *Germany*, and all other Countries, the Gospel and Learning was oppressed and discouraged, *England* was the common *Asylum* for all good and learned Men to fly to. And hither they came daily, both for Shelter, and for Subsistence. Among the rest, I find one *Wolfgang Perister*, a *Prussian*, of the University of *Rostock*, who, by a Letter from the Rector and University, was recommended this Year to the King. They thanked God, who had yielded a quiet Harbour in the King's Countries, for the Church, and good Studies. And when in all other Kingdoms, the public Ministers of the Church, and the Studies of good Learning, were either wholly destroyed, or sadly wasted, by the Cruelty of Popes, the Tumults of Wars, and the Differences of Opinions, it was God's great Mercy to afford a quiet Seat in the King's Dominions, for the godly constituted Churches and Schools. Which were so cherished by the Wisdom, Piety, Munificence, and Authority of the King's Majesty, that in these Ornaments the Kingdom of *England* exceeded all the Kingdoms of the World beside. This Address to the King may be read in the *Repository*.

The King's Diligence in his Studies.  
*Psitt MS.*

And indeed good King *Edward*, among his many other Princely Qualities, was a true Patron of Learning, as loving and promoting it both in himself and others, from his youngest Days. It was observed of him, how exceeding diligent he was, usually at his Book. He would sequester himself from all Companies, into some Chamber or Gallery, to learn without Book his Lessons, with great Alacrity and Cheerfulness. If he spent more Time in Play and Pastime than he thought was convenient, he would find fault with himself, and say, *We forget ourselves*, (as Mr. *Cbeke* reported of him) *that should not lose Substantia pro Accidente*. He used to pen Letters, both in *English* and *Latin*, as Part of his Exercises. The Subject whereof generally was, to excite other young Nobles, his Acquaintance, to follow their Studies, with very pretty Arguments: As, what an Ornament Learning was, both to Prince and People: What Glory Subjects might take in a learned Prince; and what Joy a Prince might take in learned Subjects, and the like.

The notable Influence of the King's Example upon certain Scholars.

There was one Mr. *Heron* in these Days, a Schoolmaster of ingenuous Youth; one of whose Scholars had a Father that took occasion, from the Example of the King, to excite his Son the more to follow his Studies; writing to him sometimes in *English*, and sometimes in *Latin*, these and such like Passages of the King's Diligence, and admonished him and his Schoolfellows, to follow the godly Example of so virtuous a Prince: Adding, 'That if they, (I do but transcribe) by his Worth, and Example, and Precedent, would apply their Study and Learning, it would most happily come to pass, that the learned King should have much Felicity in his learned Subjects, and they no less to glory in so learned and prudent a Prince, with such like Persuasions. Which Letters of Commendations of the said King, being uttered by chance unto the said Schoolmaster, and having partly received Letters thereof from the Father of the said Scholar, he incontinently caused them that were written in *English* to be turned into *Latin* by his Scholars, and such



as were written in *Latin* to be *Englisbed*: Using the same not only as Lessons for his Scholars, but also as Matter of animating and provoking unto the better and more diligent applying of their Learning. Upon this Occasion, the said Mr. *Heron*, as well by his Letters, as by his private Talk, yielded unto the Father of the said Scholar, right hearty Thanks for his said Letters, directed unto him and his Son, touching the King's Diligence; declaring plainly, that, in his Opinion, the virtuous Example of that worthy and good young King, wrought more in the Heads of his unwilling Scholars, for their Furtherance unto good Literature, than all his Travail among them in one Year past before.

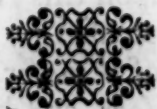
ANNO  
1552.

How King *Edward*'s good Heart stood affected to the forwarding both of Learning, and sound Religion too, appeared by appointing a School in his Court for his *Henchman*, that is, his Majesty's Pages, and other Youth attending on him: And for Encouragement of the Schoolmaster, he assigned him a Salary for Life. For such a Patent I have seen granted to *Clement Adams*, M. A. authorizing him to be Schoolmaster to the King's Majesty's Henchmen, with the Fee of Ten Pounds by the Year for Life. Dated *May 3. Anno 6<sup>o</sup>. Edw. Reg.* But especially this appeared by his Founding so many Schools in the Nation; more, by a great many, than any of his Predecessors had done. For, to compute only from the Time that Bishop *Goodrick* had the Great Seal, in little more than sixteen Months, he Founded at least sixteen Free Schools.

Schools  
founded by  
K. Edward.  
Cott. Libr.  
Jul. B. 9.

For besides the Schools at *Bury* in *Suffolk*, at *Spillesby* in *Lincolnshire*, at *Chelmsford* in *Essex*, at *Sedberg* in *Yorkshire*, at *Louth* in *Lincolnshire*, and at *East Retford* in *Nottinghamshire*, with others Founded by him in the Years 1550. and 1551. these following owned the King for their Founder, and were erected from *December, Anno 1551.* being commonly called King *Edward* the Sixth his Free Grammar Schools; viz. *Birmingham* in *Warwickshire*, *Shrewsbury*, *Morpeth* in *Northumberland*, *Macclesfield* in *Cheshire*, *Nonne Eaton* in *Warwickshire*, *Stourbridge* in *Worcestershire*, *Bath*, *Bedford*, *Guilford* in *Surrey*, *Grantham* in *Lincolnshire*, *S. Albans* in *Hertfordshire*, *Tunbridge*, *Southampton*, *Thorn* in *Yorkshire*, *Gyggeswic* in *Craven*, and *Stratford* upon *Avon*. These Schools had Governours appointed over them, a Master and Usher, and endowed commonly with 20, 30, or 40 Pounds *per Annum*. And indeed for the most part, the Endowments were out of Tithes formerly belonging to Religious Houses, or out of Chantry Lands given to the King in the First of his Reign, according to the Intent of the Parliament therein. Which was, to convert them from superstitious Uses, unto more godly; as, in Erecting Grammar Schools, for the Education of Youth in Virtue and Godliness; for further augmenting the Universities, and better Provision for the Poor. And the good King was so honest and just, to lay them out, in a considerable Measure, for these pious Ends. See the Foundations of these Schools distinctly specified in the *Repository*, from an Original.

I.





ANNO

1552.

## C H A P. XVIII.

*Popery in Corpus Christi College, Oxon. Dr. Heins dies. Immanuel Tremellius preferred. Bishop Ponet's Book. Knox at Newcastle. Lady Anne of Cleves. Day, late Bishop, his Judgment about Altars. Commissions. Sir William Bowyer's last Will. Ordinations of Ministers. Places and Offices bestowed.*

The Council  
commits to  
the Fleet  
Some of Cor-  
pus Christi  
Coll. Oxon.  
Counc. Book.



LET me be allowed to gather up a few more Passages, that may deserve to be related, happening within this sixth Year of the King.

Dr. Morwin, President of *Corpus Christi* College, Oxon, and *Wells*, and *Allen*, Fellows of the same College, were *May ult.* summoned to appear before the Council. *June 5.* they were ordered to appear the *Sunday* following. *June 15.* they were committed to the *Fleet*. Their Fault was, for using upon *Corpus Christi* Day, other Service than was appointed by the *Book of Service*. And a Letter was sent to the College, to appoint *Jewel* to govern the College during the Imprisonment of the President. *July 17.* the Warden of the *Fleet* was ordered to release the President of *Corpus Christi*, upon his being bound in a Bond of 200 Pounds to appear next Term before the Council. *Novemb. 29.* *Allen*, upon his conforming to the King's Orders, was restored to his Fellowship.

Dr. Heins  
dies.

In *October* departed an eminent Man of the Church, *Simon Heins*, D.D. Dean of *Exeter*, and Prebendary of *Westminster*, being one of the first Company of Prebendaries planted there by King *Henry*, upon the new Foundation thereof, as a Reward for the Services he did in Embassies he was employed about by the King. He was an antient Favourer of the Gospel, even from the Time he lived in *Queen's* College in *Cambridge*. He was one of the Compilers of the *English* Liturgy under King *Edward*. And was succeeded in his Prebend by *Andrew Pern*, D.D. the King's Chaplain; and in his Deanry by *James Haddon*, a learned and good Man. The said *Heins* was true to the Interest of Religion, and endured Trouble for the sake of it, under King *Henry*. *Sutbray*, Treasurer of the Church of *Exeter*, and Dr. *Brewrwood*, Chancellor, accused him, their Dean, to the Council, for preaching against holy Bread, and holy Water, and that he should say in one of his Sermons, that *Marriage and Hanging were Destiny*. Whence they would have gathered Treason against him, because of the King's Marriage, as tho' he had an Eye to that. But however, upon this Accusation he was sent to the *Fleet*, with Sir *Philip Hoby*, accused by Bishop *Gardiner*. *Heins* had also a Prebend in the Church of *Windsor*, where, about the Year 1541. or 1542. he, with Sir *Philip Hoby* and his Wife, Sir *Thomas Chardin*, Mr. *Edmund Harman*, Mr. *Thomas Welden*, and others, were by Dr. *London*,



don, Dean of *Wallingford*, a busy Persecutor, and some others, combining together, put into a Paper of Complaints; which was presented to Bishop *Gardiner*, the King's great Privy Counsellor, (in which Plot himself privily was) as Aiders and Maintainers of one *Anthony Persons*, a good Preacher in *Windsor*, who was about that Time burnt. And *Heins* was moreover accused as a common Receiver of suspected Persons.

ANNO  
1552.

With the Mention of *Heins*, I join another Confessor, of the same Judgment, and of the same University, tho' of another Country, viz. *Immanuel Tremellius*, an *Italian* by Birth, escaping hither out of Germany for his Religion; a Man he was of great Learning, and especially in *Hebrew*, harboured sometime by Archbishop *Cranmer*: and was appointed by the King to be the Reader of *Hebrew* in *Cambridge*, with a Salary. He had also a Prebend of *Carlisle*, void by the Death of *William Pirrie*, conferred on him. Which the Bishop of *Ely*, Lord Chancellor, was very instrumental to his obtaining. For he had begged this Prebend of the King for Dr. *Bellasis*. But he dying, the Chancellor in September, being then at *Ely*, wrote a Letter to Secretary *Cecyl*, that he would procure that Canonry for *Immanuel*, of the King: Writing thus;

‘**F**Orasmuch as *Immanuel*, the *Hebrew* Reader in *Cambridge*, taketh great Pains, having little to take unto, I thought it well bestowed, if he might obtain it. And the rather, forasmuch as I understand by one *Anthony*, a *French* Man, who is in House with the said *Immanuel*, that you yourself motioned the Matter. Wherefore, if it shall stand with your Pleasure to help him to it, I shall be very well contented, and glad thereof; and ye in so doing, shall deserve Thanks at the University's hand, and have him your continual Orator for the same. As knoweth *Jesus*, who have you in his keeping. From *Ely*, this 5th of September.

The Bishop  
of *Ely* to  
*Cecyl* in his  
behalf.

Your assured loving Friend,

T. ELY, Canc.

His Patent was dated Octob. 24. with a Clause to be Non-resident, as long as he read the said *Hebrew* Lecture, with Letters, or a Writ for his Induction.

About this Time came forth a learned Book, wrote by Dr. *Ponet*, or *Poynt*, now Bishop of *Winchester*, for the Lawfulness of Priests Marriage. Which, in the Year 1554. Dr. *Martyn*, the Civilian, made an Answer, such as it was, to: Dedicating his Book (the better to ingratiate himself) to Queen *Mary*. Dr. *Taylor*, lately made Bishop of *Lincoln*, not long after the Edition of this Book of *Poynt*'s, preaching at *S. Paul's* Cross, took notice of it, with high Commendations, and Words of magnifying given unto it, as the said *Martyn* in his Answer took notice; ‘As if, said he, it had been sent down from Heaven by Revelation, or had proceeded out of the very Bosom of the Holy Ghost.’ *Taylor* then said, ‘That therein was contained a sufficient Doctrine for Priests Marriages, and Learning enough to convince all Gainfayers.’ In this Book, if you will take *Martyn*'s Word, *Poynt* hath this Expression,

*Ponet*'s Book  
for the Mar-  
riage of  
Priests.



ANNO  
1552.

tion, to shew the Impossibility of living chaste: ' Neither Fasting nor  
' Watching, nor any such like, is more able to strait their Desire, Life  
' and Health being preserved, than abating of Moisture and Earth about  
' the Root of a Tree, so ye kill him not, is able to strait the same Tree  
' from bringing forth of Leaves and Blossoms in the Spring-time of the  
' Year.' And the foresaid Bishop *Taylor*, in that Sermon at *Paul's* Cross,  
is said by *Martyn* to have alledged this Passage out of *Poynt's* Book, con-  
cerning the Necessity for Bishops and Priests to marry, by *S. Paul's* Do-  
ctrin to *Timothy*; ' *S. Paul* saith to *Timothy* and *Tite*, a Bishop or Priest  
' must be the Husband of one Wife. *Paul* doth not say, it is enough  
' for him, if he hath had a Wife; but he saith in the present Time,  
' *Siquis EST sine Crimine, unius Uxoris Vir, & oportet ipsum ESSE*  
' *irreprehensibilem*. He must *Esse*, BE the Husband of one Wife. Nei-  
' ther find I fault with the Doctors, which change BE into HATH  
' BEEN, but such Bishops and Priests as neither BE, nor HAVE  
' BEEN married, nor will marry to this Day, must find some other  
' Exposition for this Text of *S. Paul*, or else cannot I see, how they can  
' excuse themselves, but that they shall be found guilty by this Descrip-  
' tion and Rule of a blameless Bishop.'

Answered  
by *Martin*.

In Confutation of this Book, Dr. *Martyn* undertook to answer three  
Points. 1. *Poynt's* false expounding of the holy Scriptures, touching  
Priests Marriage. 2. His untrue Interpretation of God's Word, for the  
Defence of married Monks, Nuns, and Friars. 3. His falsely report-  
ing the Canons of the Apostles, untruly alledging fundry Chronicles  
and Histories, and most unhoneestly slanderling old Writings, and the  
Decrees of holy Fathers. But Dr. *Martyn* was not *Poynt's* Match, who  
sufficiently vindicated himself, soon after *Martyn* had set forth his Book:  
And Archbishop *Parker*, under Queen *Elizabeth*, published a very learned  
Manuscript, wrote in Queen *Mary's* Reign, in Answer likewise to *Martyn*;  
which was *Poynt's*. To which that Archbishop himself made very large  
and excellent Additions. Which are taken notice of by me elsewhere.

Life of Arch-  
bp *Parker*.

*Cheke* sets  
forth Tran-  
slations.

The learned Knight Sir *John Cheke*, printed this Year his Translation  
of *Chrysostom's* Homily, *Brethren, I would not have you ignorant*, &c.  
Printed by *Tho. Bertbelet*. This Knight also set forth a Translation of  
the *New Testament*, in 4°.

*Knox* prea-  
ches at New-  
castle.

*John Knox*, the earnest Preacher, and one of the King's Itineraries,  
was now in the North. And on *Christmas* Day he preached at *Newcastle*  
upon *Tine*. There he spake against the Obstinacy of the Papists, and  
affirmed, ' That whosoever in his Heart was Enemy to Christ's Gospel  
' and Doctrin, which then was preached within the Realm, was Enemy  
' also to God, and secret Traitor to the Crown and Commonwealth of  
' *England*. And that as such, thirsted after nothing more than the  
' King's Death, which their Iniquities would procure, he said, so they  
' regarded not who should reign over them, so that their Idolatry might  
' be erected again.' This, it seems, provoked many of his Auditors ex-  
tremely; insomuch that they began to raise Trouble against him, and  
accused him to the Magistrate; as appears by his *Admonition to the Pro-  
fessors of God's Truth in England*, printed in 1554. ' How these my  
' Words at that Time pleased Men, the Crimes and Actions intended  
' against me, did declare.' But then, Queen *Mary* being on the Throne,  
and *Philip* of *Spain* made her Husband, he appealed to those Expressions  
of



of his, reckoning it at that Time as a thing commonly owned, that the People had made a very bad Choice, when they took for that Queen a *Spanish* Husband, to reign over them. 'Let my very Enemies now say their Conscience, if those my Words are not proved true.'

The Lady *Anne* of *Cleves*, once King *Henry's* Wife, but divorced, was still alive, living in *England* upon her Dowry, and, as it seems, in good Reputation. She had Lands in *Bisbam*, which were those, I suppose, formerly belonging to the Monastery there; and at *Blebbingley*, where she had a House, and sometimes dwelt. She seemed to be a Lady of good Behaviour, and of an obliging Carriage; bearing a very friendly Correspondence with the Lady *Mary*, as well as with the other Ladies of the Court. She spoke, or at least writ, *English* very well, as appears by her Letter under-written. Which she writ upon certain Business happening between the Lady *Mary* and her, occasioned by a Change of Lands the King made this Year, both with her, and with his Sister. The Lands which the Lady *Anne* parted with to him, were those of *Bisbam*. For which the King granted her *Westrop* in *Suffolk*, with the Appendages. For the getting of which confirmed to her, she was fain to wait a great while. Of the Lady *Mary* likewise, this Year the King desired to have in Exchange, her Manors of *S. Osyth's*, *Claxton Magna* and *Parva*, and *Willeigh*, all in *Essex*. The Lady *Mary* desired of the King, (in recompence for this Change, I suppose) those Lands in *Suffolk* which he had given before to the Lady *Anne*. This occasioned the Stop of the Great Seal, which, after long Expectation, was going to pass for the Lady *Anne*. Whereupon she wrote this civil Letter to the Lady *Mary*, which I have transcribed from the Original of her own Hand.

The King exchanges Lands with the Lady *Anne* of *Cleves*.

ANNO  
1552.

To my Lady *Mary's* Grace.

'*M* Adam, After my most hartly Commendations unto your Grace, being very desirous to hear of your prosperous Health; where- in I much do rejoice. It may please you to be advertised, that it hath pleased the King's Majesty to have in Exchange my Manor and Lands of *Bysbam* in the County of *Berkshire*; granting me, in recompence, the House of *Westrop* in *Suffolk*, with the two Parks, and certain Manors thereunto adjoining. Notwithstanding, if it had been his Highness's Pleasure, I was well contented to have continued without Exchange. For which Graunt, for mine own Assurance in that behalf, I have travailed, to my great Cost and Charge, almost this twelve Months: and it hath passed the King's Majesty's Bill signed, and the Privy Seal, being now, as I am informed, stayed at the Great Seal, for that you, Madam, be minded to have the same, not knowing, as I suppose, of the said Graunt. I have also received at this *Michaelmas* last past, Part of the Rent of the foresaid Manors. Considering the Premisses, and for the Amity which hath always been betwixt us, of the which I most earnestly desire the Continuance, that it may please you therefore to ascertain me by your Letters, or otherwise, as it shall stand with your Pleasure. And thus, good Madam, I commit you unto the ever-living God,

She writes to the Lady *Mary*.  
MSS. G. P. Arm.



ANNO • God, to have you in merciful keeping. From my House of *Blychen-*  
1552. • ley, the viii. day of *January*, A<sup>o</sup>. D<sup>o</sup> V<sup>c</sup> LIII.

*Your assured louyng Friend, to her  
little Power, to command,*

ANNA, the Dowghter of CLEVES.

The Lands  
granted her.

In the Month of *August* before, I find the King gave this Lady, in consideration of the Surrender of *Bisbam*, the Manors of *Brokeford* and *Tbwaite* in *Suffolk*, with divers other Lands, (in which, I suppose, the aforesaid *Westrop* is comprised) amounting to the yearly Value of 67 Pounds 17 Shillings 10 Pence Halfpeny.

Dr. Day ex-  
plains his  
Judgment  
about the  
Altar.

Dr. Day, late Bishop of *Chichester*, had been harboured now about half a Year with the Bishop of *Ely*, Lord Chancellor, but under Restraint. There *Cecyl*, the Secretary, being one Day entered into Discourse with him about that same Argument, which, about two Years before, was the Cause of his Imprisonment and Deprivation; viz. for disobeying an Order of the King and Council, for taking *Altars* out of the Churches, and placing *Tables* in their rooms, for the Use of the holy Communion. Day now, in his Converse with the Secretary, shewed himself very moderate in that behalf, when, as it seems, he intreated him to stand his Friend for the obtaining of his Liberty. Whereat the Secretary, who had favourably reported of him at Court, willed him soon after, to write the Communication that they had together. Day therefore, *Jan. 10.* wrote him a Letter to this Purport, 'That to treat  
' of that Argument, could be no less unpleasant and dangerous unto him,  
' than it would be to a Merchant to sail again in those Seas wherein he  
' had suffered Shipwreck before; yet he had gone about to accomplish  
' the Secretary's Will and Pleasure, and had devised with himself, how  
' and what he should write of that Matter. But he professed, in good  
' Truth, he could not tell what he should write therein, otherwise than  
' he had answered unto the Lords of the Council, before he was com-  
' mitted to Prison, and afterward to the Commissioners, at the Time of  
' his Deprivation: viz. that he stuck not at the Altar, either at the  
' usual Form of the Altar, or of the Situation thereof, or of the Matter,  
' Stone, or Wood, whereof the Altar was made. And that he then took,  
' as he did at present, those Things to be indifferent, and to be ordered  
' by them that had Authority. But that the Commandment which was  
' given him, to take down all Altars within his Diocese, and in the lieu  
' of them to set up a Table, implying in itself, as he took it, a plain Abo-  
' lishment of the Altar, both the Name and the Thing, from the Use  
' and Ministration of the holy Communion, he could not with his Con-  
' science then execute, as he answered the Lords of the Council then,  
' and afterwards to the King's Commissioners. And what he should  
' now answer further, he could not tell.' But herein Day seemed not  
fairly to relate the Matter. For the Commissioners, finding him so much  
to insist upon retaining the Name of Altar, because he found it used in  
the old Doctors, and, as he pretended, in the Scripture too, told him,  
That touching the naming of the holy Table an Altar, it was indiffe-  
rent,



rent, and left it so to him. He added, ' That if the Secretary and Sir *John Cbeke* would, in consideration of the Loss of his Living, and two Years Imprisonment, obtain for him the Liberty of a Subject, if he should hereafter abuse it, he would not desire to live; and he would pray for the King's most excellent Majesty, and his most honourable Council, and them his Deliverers. But that if his Liberty must be bought with a new Conflict, and Hazard of his Conscience, he thought it better to want it, than to purchase so poor a Commodity at so great a Price.'

The King's Debts pressing him, many Commissions were this Year, one upon the Neck of another, sent forth, for the remedying thereof; the Council hoping thereby to raise great Sums of Money: Whereby, no question, great numbers of People were sufficiently vexed, to the Discontent and Disturbance of the Innocent, as well as the Guilty.

ANNO  
1552.  
Various  
Commissi-  
ons for rais-  
ing of Mo-  
neys.

1. One Commission, in *March* last, was issued to certain Persons, for the surveying of the State of all the King's Courts erected for the Custody of the King's Lands, and for the answering of his Rents and Revenues.

2. Another Commission came forth in *June*, for the Sale of Chantry Lands.

3. And in the same Month, were divers other Commissions and Instructions to peculiar Persons in every Shire, to view and survey the Bells, Plate, Jewels, Vestments, or Ornaments belonging to every Church; and to seize into their Hands, to the King's Use, such of the said Goods, as had been, at any Time before the said Survey, embezzled.

4. Another Commission was directed to *Clarentieux*, the King at Armes, to visit his Province, that is, from the River *Trent* Southward, that whosoever had taken into their Cognizance, or Armes, Standards, or Banners, any Bearing contrary to the Usage of the Realm, Knowledge thereof should be given to the King and Council: I suppose, to get Fines that way also.

5. Another Commission was issued out in *December*, to the Duke of *Northumberland*, and several other Noblemen, and Knights, to examin all the Treasurers, Receivers, and Officers whatsoever, of the Exchequer, of the Court of Augmentations, of the King's Chamber, of the First-Fruits, of the Wards, of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, of the Town and Marches of *Calais*, of the Town and Garrison of *Berwic*; and all other Treasurers, which had been formerly, or were at present, from the 24th Year of King *Henry VIII.* to that Time, (that is, from the Year 1532. to the Year 1552. Twenty Years:) And also, all Paymasters, Surveyors, Mustermasters, Purveyors, Victuallers, and the like, that had received of the King, or his Father, any Sums of Money to be employed in the Wars, Buildings, Fortifications, or other Affairs. And if any should be found indebted to the King, to proceed with them for the due Satisfaction thereof.

6. Another Commission came forth the same Month, to see how the King was satisfied as to Lead, Belnettal, Plate, Jewels, Ornaments, Stock, &c. coming to him from divers Monasteries, Priories, Colleges, and Chantries, or by Attainder of divers Persons, or by divers Forfeits of Jewels, Silver Bullion, Plate, Gold, and Silver.

7. Yet another Commission there was in *January*, to examin by Record of Chancery, or other ways, what Sums of Money were due to the King at any Time for Sale of Lands, since the 4th of *February*, 27 *Hen. VIII.* (the Year wherein the lesser Monasteries were dissolved) and how the same was answered.

8. Another yet came forth the same Month, for the Col-



**ANNO 1552.** Collection of Church-Stuff, Plate, Jewels, Ornaments, &c. 9. In the Month of *February*, we hear of another Commission for many, or all Counties in *England*, to survey all manner of Church Goods. 10. And lastly, in *March*, when all this scraping would not get Money enough for the King's Necessities, came forth a Commission to sell for ready Money, as much of the King's Manors and Lands, as should come to the Value of 1000 Pounds *per Annum*. And there were other Commissions of the same Import, for Sales, before this. And yet I find, that in *February*, before that Commission was sealed, many considerable Things were sold away from the Crown: As the Manor of *Keverdly* in *Lancashire*, and other Lands; the Manor of *Bushton* in *Wilts*, and divers other Lands; the Manor of *Compton Bassett* in *Wilts*, the Manor of *Odicknol*, and *Chamleigh* in *Devon*, the Lordship of *Otherey* in *Somersetshire*, the Tithes of the Parish of *Wrenbury* in *Cheshire*, &c.

A Commission to examine the Executors of Sir William Bowyer, deceased.

Sir William Bowyer, an Alderman of *London*, and Lord Maior of the said City, Anno 1544. dying in his Maioralty, left a fair Estate, and five Daughters to inherit. But appointed such Executors and Overseers, as seemed more willing to enrich themselves by the Estate of the Deceased, and defraud the Children, than to discharge their Trusts faithfully. Francis Chaloner married Agnes, one of the Daughters. Which Francis had much Contest with the Executors; and in the Year 1552. obtained a Commission for the just Examination and Determination of this Matter. And about *February*, a Commission was granted, at the Suit of the said Francis, to three Doctors of the Arches, and three Serjeants of Law, who were, Dr. May, Dean of *S. Paul's*, Dr. Leyson, and Dr. Cook, Gawdy, Stamford, and Catlyn; to call before them the Executors and Overseers of the said Sir William Bowyer's Will; 'Who, as the Commission ran, 'had defrauded Agnes, the Daughter of the said William, and four other 'Sisters, of their said Father's Legacies: Which were great Sums of 'Money, besides movable Goods and Jewels; which they had abused 'to their own Lucre, and had not only left out of the Inventories, exhibited into the Prerogative Court of the Arches, much of the Goods 'and Jewels, but also had caused the same to be prized for under their 'Value: And, that is worse, had also caused the same to be razed, and 'many Parts to be cancelled: whereby they had made the same very 'unperfect. Nor so contented, had caused the hoped for and recuperable Debts to be put into the Title of the desperate Debts. And among 'the Debts, had put in many feigned Sums of Money to be indebted by 'the Deceased to them: And finally, had extended the Funeral Expences to 200 Pounds above the same appointed by the Order of the 'City.'

Bishop Ridley's Ordinations.

The Persons Ordained this Year by Ridley Bishop of *London*, were first, *May 15*. Eleven Deacons, all of them Fellows, or Masters of Art of *Cambridge*, and six Priests. Again, at *Bartholomew-tide*, requesting License to Ordain of the Bishop of *Ely*, Ridley being then at *Cambridge*, in that Bishop's Diocese, he Ordained in *Pembroke Hall*, his own College, Robert Kensey, M. A. Fellow of *Trinity College*, Vicar of *Ware*; and many others. Again, *Decemb. 11*. were seven Deacons Ordained. Whereof one was aged Forty, another Thirty seven, and another Thirty three. Again, *Decemb. 21*. were Ordained three Priests, William Harley of

Katharin



*Katharin Creesburch, London; William Turner Dean of Wells, and Robert Kensley, before-mentioned.* ANNO 1552.

This Year were these Places and Offices conferred by the King. In April, *Ambrose* Earl of *Warwic*, eldest Son of the Duke of *Northumberland*, was made Master of the King's Horfes, upon the Earl of *Pembroke's* Surrender of that Office. And to have 100 Marks yearly. In the same Month, the King appointed for his chief Officers in the Mint within the Tower, *Thomas Egerton*, Esq; Treasurer of the Mint, *Thomas Stanley*, Comptroller, *William Billingsley* Assaymaster, *John Munds* Provost. And Sir *John Godsalue*, who had been before Comptroller, in regard of his Surrender, had an Annuity of 60 Pounds. And to Sir *Nich. Throgmorton*, late one of the Treasurers of the Coin of the said Mint, was granted an Annuity of 100 Pounds, for his Surrender, and his faithful Service. In May Sir *Edward Bray* had the Grant of the Constablership of the Tower in Reversion, after the Death of Sir *John Gage*, by the Fee of 50 Pounds per Annum. In June Sir *Roger Cholmely* was constituted Lord Chief Justice of England; *Henry Bradshaw* Chief Baron of the Exchequer; *Edmund Griffith* was made Attorney General of all the Courts of Record within England; and *John Gosnold* Solicitor General. In the same Month, the Lord *Robert Dudley*, another of the Duke of *Northumberland's* Sons, was made Master of the Buck-hounds, with the yearly Fee of 33 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence, upon Surrender of the same by the Earl of *Warwic*, his Brother. In September Sir *John Cheke*, Kt. and one of the Privy Chamber, obtained a Patent to be one of the Chamberlains of the Exchequer, or of the Receipt of the Exchequer; once belonging to Sir *Anthony Wyngfield*, deceased: And also to appoint the Keeper of the Door of the said Receipt, and of all other Officers belonging to the same. Dr. *Nicolls* had a Patent for an Annuity of 10 Pounds, and a License to take the Bodies of Prisoners, both Men and Women, after their Execution, [for Dissecting.] He was, I suppose, constituted the King's Chirurgeon. As the Year before *John Hemingway* had the Office of being the King's Apothecary, given him; and a Fee of 40 Marks yearly. And in February the abovesaid Lord *Robert Dudley* had the Office *Capitalis Trenchiatoris*, [chief Carver] upon the Surrender of the Duke his Father's Patent for the same Place, granted him by King *Henry VIII.* to have to the said *Robert* for Term of Life, with the Fee of 50 Pounds yearly. This Place the said Lord *Robert* had executed from the Feast of *S. Michael*.

Places and Offices bestowed.





ANNO

1552.

## C H A P. XIX.

*A Parliament. The King's Letters to the Sheriffs. Bishopric of Durham dissolved. A general Pardon. Certain excepted. The King removes to Greenwich. Knox's last Sermon at Court. Summoned before the Council. Earls of Pembroke and Westmorland. Sir Andrew Dudley. Sir John Williams. Melancthon. North-East Passage. Archbishop Holgate.*

The King's  
Care for an  
able Parlia-  
ment.



TOWARDS the Conclusion of the Year, the King called a new Parliament. And now beginning to set himself, as his Years came on, to mind Business, he intended to have an House composed of Men of great and good Abilities, to consult withal in the present Affairs and Difficulties of his Kingdom. Therefore after he had sent out a Warrant, *Jan. 18.* to the Lord Chancellor, to direct forth Process for the summoning of a Parliament the 1st of *March* next, he caused his Letters to be wrote in *January* to the Sheriffs of each County, that they should diligently give notice to the Citizens, and Burgeses, and Freeholders of every County, That it was the King's Will, they should chuse and send up to him, as much as possibly they might, Men of Knowledge and Experience, that so the Needs of the State might be more effectually provided for, than heretofore had been. And that where any of his Privy Counsellors should recommend Men of Learning and Wisdom, to have regard to their Direction, as tending to the same. The Letter was as followeth:

The King's  
Letter to the  
Sheriffs for  
Parliament  
Men.

T Rusty and well-beloved, We greet you well. Forasmuch as we have, for divers good Considerations, caused a Summonition for a Parliament to be made, as we doubt not but ye understand the same by our Writs sent in that behalf unto you; we have thought it meet, for the Furtherance of such Causes as are to be propounded in the said Parliament, for the common Weal of our Realm, that in the Election of such Persons as shall be sent to the Parliament, either from our Counties, as Knights thereof, or from our Cities and Boroughs, there be good regard had, that the Choice be made of Men of Gravity and Knowledge in their own Countries and Towns, fit, for their Understanding and Qualities, to be in such a great Council. And therefore, since some Part of the Proceeding herein shall rest in you, by virtue of your Office, we do, for the great Desire we have, that this our Parliament may be assembled with Personages out of every Country, of Wisdom and Experience, at this present Will and Command you, that ye shall give notice, as well to the Freeholders of your County, as to the Citizens and Burgeses of any City or Borough, which shall have any of our Writs by your Direction, for the Election of Citizens and Bur-



‘Burgesses, that our Pleasure and Commandment is, that they shall chuse and appoint (as nigh as they possibly may) Men of Knowledge and Experience, within the Counties, Cities and Boroughs: So as by th’Assembly of such, we may, by God’s Goodness, provide (thorough the Advice and Knowledge of the said Parliament) for the Redress of the Lacks in our Commonweal, more effectually than heretofore hath been. And yet, nevertheless, our Pleasure is, that where our Privy Council, or any of them, within their Jurisdictions, in our behalf, shall recommend Men of Learning and Wisdom; in such case their Directions be regarded and followed, as tending to the same, which we desire; that is, to have this Assembly to be of the most chiefeft Men in our Realm, for Advice and good Counsel.’

ANNO  
1552.

Letters also were sent in *January* from the King to some of the High Sheriffs, recommending therein Persons to them to be elected Knights: As one to the Sheriff of *Hampshire*, for the electing of Sir *Richard Cotton* to be one of the Knights for that Shire. The like Letter to the Sheriff of *Suffolk*, for the electing of Sir *William Drury*, and Sir *Henry Benningfield*, Knights for the next Parliament. Another to the Sheriff of *Bedfordshire*, in Commendation of Sir *John St. John* Kt. and *Lewis Dyve* Esq; To the Sheriff of *Surrey*, in Commendation of Sir *Thomas Cavarden* Kt. and *John Vaughan* Esq; To the Sheriff of *Cambridge*, for Sir *Edward North*, and *James Dyve* Esq; To the Sheriff of *Berks*, for Sir *William Fitzwilliams*, and Sir *Henry Nevyl*. To the Sheriff of *Oxon*, for Sir *John Williams*, and *Richard Fines* Esq; To the Sheriff of *Northamptonshire*, for Sir *Nicolas Throgmorton*, and *Robert Lane* Esq; And no more were recommended by the King’s Letters. And these were such as belonged to the Court, or were in Places of Trust about the King.

Persons nominated for  
Knights of  
the Shire.

This Parliament began to sit *March* 1. and ended *March* the last, in the Seventh Year of the King. Then was a private Act made, for Denizing the Children of *Richard Hills*, an eminent Merchant abroad; and another for Restitution of *Edward Seimour* Kt. eldest Son to the late Duke of *Somerset*. And the third and last private Act was for the Dissolution of the Bishopric of *Durham*: that so the Courtiers, (however well the King meant it, viz. for the Founding two Bishoprics out of it) as if they had not enough humbled the Church, might have a few more good Fleeces from her. But he that had the greatest Expectation from this dissolved Bishopric, namely, the Duke of *Northumberland*, was sadly disappointed, and instead of gaining the good Revenue thereof, lost his own Head, and his Possessions beside, within less than half a Year after. These were sudden Counsils, and carried with a strong hand; for but in *November* last, a Grant was made of this Bishopric to *Robert Horn*, D. D. the Dean of that Church.

Dissolution  
of the Bi-  
shopric of  
*Durham*.

For it was soon after this Dissolution of the Bishopric, namely, in *April*, that *Durham* was changed into a County Palatine, and so to continue from thenceforth, by Letters Patents: Wherein was set down the Constitution thereof, and the number of Judges, Officers, and Ministers were appointed, requisite to supply the same: and to have a Great Seal, and Privy Seal; and to be united to the Imperial Crown of the Realm. And this new County Palatine was, I suppose, to add a new Title to

*Durham* made  
a County Pa-  
latine.



ANNO

1552.

Persons excepted out of the General Pardon.

the ambitious Duke of *Northumberland*, viz. Earl of *Durham*. I find the Demeans of this dissolved Bishopric began soon to be disperfed. For in *May* the Fee-farm of the Lordship, Manor, Town and Borough of *Gateshead*, late Parcel of the Possessions of that Bishopric, were granted to the Maior and Burgesfes of *Newcastle*. And in *June* the Capital Messuage of *Coldbarborough* in *Thames-street*, *London*, lately belonging to the said Bishopric, was given to the Earl of *Shrewsbury*.

The King concluded this Parliament with a General Pardon. Out of which were these Persons following excepted: Cardinal *Pole*, *Jeffrey Pole*, [Brother, unless I mistake, to the Cardinal, some of whose Name, viz. *Arthur* and *Edmund*, were in a Plot afterwards against Queen *Elizabeth*, and pardoned.] *Richard Pate*, [once Bishop of *Worcester*, and was at the Council of *Trent*; and so shall be again under Queen *Mary*, and who fled abroad again under Queen *Elizabeth*.] *Goldwel*, [Servant to Cardinal *Pole*, and under Queen *Mary* made Bishop of *S. Asaph*, and fled abroad again under Queen *Elizabeth*, and abode at *Rome*.] *John Clement*, [Doctor of Physic, and that had been Schoolmaster to Sir *Thomas More*'s Children. In *More*'s Epistle to *Petrus Egidius* of *Antwerp*, he called this *Clement*, *Puer*, i. e. his *Servant*: 'Whom, he said, he suffered not to be away from any Discourse, whence he might reap some Benefit or Advantage. For from this young bladed and new shot up Grain, which had already begun to spring up in *Greek* and *Latin* Learning, he looked for, he said, a plentiful Increase, at length, of goodly ripe Corn.' This *Clement* was constituted by Cardinal *Wolsey* his Rhetoric and *Greek* Reader.] *John Story*, Doctor of Law, [that was under Queen *Mary* a great Man, and very zealous in the Office of Examining and Butchering the poor Protestants; but his End was the Death of a Traitor under Queen *Elizabeth*.] *William Rastal*, [who was the Son of *John Rastal*, a learned Man, and a Printer, who married Sir *Thomas More*'s Sister. This *William*, Nephew to Sir *Thomas*, was of *Lincolns Inn*, went beyond Sea under King *Edward*, and abode at *Lovain*. Under Queen *Mary* he returned, and was made one of the Justices of the Common Pleas. This Man wrote several Books of the Law. Under Queen *Elizabeth*, he fled to *Lovain* again, and there died. This *William Rastal* married *John Clement*'s Daughter.] Three *Italians* also, viz. *Anthony Bonvice*, *Benedict Bonvice*, and *Balthazar Guarsey*: [This *Balthazar*, I take to be once of *Canterbury*, and very busy in collecting Accusations against good Archbishop *Cranmer*, about that Time under King *Henry VIII.* when Bishop *Gardiner*, and several of the Prebendaries, and others of the Church of *Canterbury*, had conspired to ruin him.] *Germain Seo*, *Edmund* and *Thomas Craifford*, *Thomas Finch*, *Thomas Raynolds* of *Whitstaple* in the County of *Kent*; and another *Thomas Raynolds*, related, probably, to *Raynolds*, the Monk of *Sion*, that was executed under King *Henry* for refusing the Supremacy; and lastly, *William Bedel*. Many of these were concerned with Cardinal *Pole*, and others denied the Supremacy; and some were concerned with the holy Maid of *Kent*.

Ambassadors.

This *March* were Dr. *Wotton* and Sir *Thomas Chaloner* sent to the *French* King: And Sir *Philip Hoby* sent to the Emperor: And so was also *Thirlby* Bishop of *Norwich*. *Hoby* was to be Ledger there, in Sir *Richard Morison*'s room, now coming home. To whom there was a Letter



er sent *April 1.* to deliver to Sir *Philip Hoby*, sent Ambassador to the Emperor, by Bill indebted, all such Plate as he received, when he entered into that Charge.

ANNO

1552.

In *York*, and those Northern Parts, the Testons still passed for Sixpence: But about *April* a Design was in hand, to take them down to a Groat. An Inkling of which going about, everybody ran in with their Testons to the Mint in *York*, and paid them in there. Whereupon grew this Inconvenience, that all Commodities began to rise much, and a great Scarcity of Money followed. Wherefore to remedy this Dearth, the Council in the North was fain to procure some to be punished, that sold at unreasonable and prohibited Prices.

Testons still  
go in *York*.

The King, for his Healths sake, (as it seems) and to enjoy the Country Air, removed *April 11.* from *Westminster* by Water to *Greenwich*. As he passed by the *Tower*, he was presented with a great Shot of Guns and Chambers: And all the Ships shot off their Guns, all the way to *Ratcliff*; and so did the three Ships that were riding there, appointed to go to *Newfound Land*, and the two Pinaces, that were to accompany them. And this was the last Remove of the good King.

The King's  
last Remove  
to *Greenwich*.

*April 17.* came a Command down to *London*, that all the Churchwardens of *London* should repair unto *Guild-hall*, and appear before the King's Commissioners, the Bishop of *London*, and the Lord Maior, and *Cholmely* Lord Chief Justice; and bring with them a true Certificate of all Church Goods, Plate, Money, Bells, and of all Copes and Ornaments that pertained to each Church. For the Sacrilegious Hunger of the Courtiers was not yet satiated.

A Certificate  
of Church  
Goods in  
*London* to be  
brought in.

*Knox*, it seems, upon the Displeasure taken against him in *Newcastle*, as was said before, soon after returned to *London*, and being in good Reputation with the King, and some of the Council, for his zealous Preaching against the Errors of *Rome*, and the Vices of the Time, he was appointed to preach before the King and his Council at *Westminster*, a little before his Majesty departed thence. And his Sermon, being the last he preached before his Majesty, he suited to the Court, as it now stood; wherein the main governing Men, and who carried all the Stroke, were mere Temporizers, and secretly Well-wishers to the old Religion, and shewing little Zeal for the present Establishment of the Church, any further than the National Laws absolutely required: and so they outwardly complied, but craftily concealed their inward Judgments, for the accomplishing their worldly Ends and Interests. These were the Men now chiefly about the King. There were two especially, ruled all in the Court, the Duke of *Northumberland*, by stout Courage, and Proudness of Stomach, and the Marquis of *Winchester*, the Treasurer, by Counsel and Wit. This was well enough observed by the good Sort: And bold *Knox*, being now to preach at Court, was resolved to speak his Mind, and reprove them, even to their Faces. And for that Purpose, took his Text in *Psal. xl.* *He that eateth Bread with me, hath lift up his beel against me.* This Sermon he spake of afterwards, in his *Faithful Admonition*; where he was mentioning how the Papists, with their Craft, wrought all Mischief in King *Edward's* Reign, being such as bore Authority and Rule. 'And who, I pray, said he, ruled the Roast in the Court all this Time, by stout Courage, and Proudness of Stomach, but *Northumberland*? And who, I pray you, ruled all by Counsel  
' and

*Knox* Preaches his last  
Sermon at  
Court.



ANNO

1552.

and Wit? Shall I name the Man? I will write no more plainly now than my Tongue spake the last Sermon that it pleased God that I should make before that innocent and most godly King *Edward VI.* and before the Council at *Westminster*, and even to the Faces of such, &c.

By occasion of the foresaid Text, he made this Affirmation, 'That commonly it is seen, that the most godly Princes had Officers and chief Counsellors most ungodly, conjured Enemies to God's true Religion, and Traitors to their Princes: And that their Wickedness and Ungodliness was speedily perceived, and espied out of the said Princes, and godly Men: But that for a Time those crafty Colours could so cloak their Malice against God, and his Truth, and their hollow Hearts towards their loving Masters, that by worldly Wisdom and Policy, at length they attained to high Promotions.' And for the Proof of this his Affirmation, he recited the Histories of *Achitophel*, and *Shebna*, and *Judas*. Of whom the two former had high Offices and Promotions, with great Authority, under the most godly Princes *David* and *Ezekias*; and *Judas* was Purse-master with Christ Jesus. And when he had made some Discourse in that Matter, he moved this Question, 'Why so godly Princes permitted so wicked Men to be upon their Council, and to bear Office and Authority under them? To which he answered, That either they so abounded in worldly Wisdom, Foresight, and Experience, touching the Government of a Commonwealth, that their Counsel appeared to be so necessary, that the Commonwealth could not lack them, and so by the colour to preserve the Tranquillity and Quietness in Realms, they were maintained in Authority: Or else they kept their Malice, which they bare towards their Masters, and God's true Religion, so secret in their Breasts, that no Man could espy it, till by God's Permission they waited for such Occasion and Opportunity, that they uttered all their Mischiefe so plainly, that all the World might perceive it. And that was most evident by *Achitophel*, and *Shebna*. For of *Achitophel* it is written, That he was *David's* most secret Counsellor; and that because his Counsel in those Days was like the Oracle of God. And *Shebna* was unto good King *Ezekias*, sometime Comptroller, sometime Secretary, and last of all, Treasurer. To the which Offices he had never been promoted under so godly a Prince, if the Treason and Malice which he bare against the King, and against God's true Religion, had been manifestly known. No, said he, *Sobna* was a crafty Fox, and could shew such a fair Countenance to the King, that neither he, nor his Council, could espy his malicious Treason. But the Prophet *Esaïas* was commanded by God to go to his Presence, and to declare his traiterous Heart, and miserable End.

1 Reg. 15, 16.

Esa. 22, 36.

'Were *David*, said he, and *Ezekias*, Princes of great and godly Gifts and Experience, abused by crafty Counsellors, and dissembling Hypocrites? What wonder is it then, that a young and innocent King be deceived by crafty, covetous, wicked, and ungodly Counsellors? I am greatly afraid that *Achitophel* be Counsellor, that *Judas* bear the Purse, and that *Sobna* be Scribe, Comptroller, and Treasurer.' This he said, and somewhat more he spake that Day, not in a Corner, but even before those whom his Conscience judged worthy of Accusation. He said, that since that Time they had declared themselves more manifestly, namely, under the Queen. He affirmed, That under that in-

nocent



nocent King, pestilent Papists had greatest Authority. ' Oh! who was  
 ' judged to be the Soul and Life to the Council in every Matter of weigh-  
 ' ty Importance? Who but *Sobna*? Who was most frank and ready  
 ' to destroy *Somerſet*, and ſet up *Northumberland*? Was it not *Sobna*?  
 ' Who was moſt bold to cry, Baſtard, Baſtard; Inceſtuous Baſtard *Mary*,  
 ' ſhall never reign over us? And who, I pray, was moſt buſy to ſay,  
 ' Fear not to ſubſcribe with my Lords of the King's Maſteſty's moſt ho-  
 ' nourable Privy Council: Agree to his Grace's laſt Will, and perfect  
 ' Teſtament. And let never that obſtinate Woman come to Authority.  
 ' She is an errant Papift. She will ſubvert the true Religion, and will  
 ' bring in Strangers, to the Deſtruction of this Commonwealth. Which  
 ' of the Council, I ſay, had theſe, and greater Perſuaſions againſt *Mary*,  
 ' to whom now he crouches and kneeleth? *Sobna* the Treafurer. And  
 ' what intended ſuch traiterous and diſſembling Hipocrites by all theſe,  
 ' and ſuch like crafty Slights, and counterfeit Conveyance? Doubtleſs  
 ' the Overthrow of Chriſt's true Religion, which then began to flouriſh  
 ' in *England*.' Thus he wrote concerning his Sermon.

ANNO  
 1552.

But notwithstanding the piercing Glances thereof upon ſome of the  
 Great Men, it was, as near as I can gueſs, about this Time, that the  
 Council ſent to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, to beſtow the Living of  
*Alkallows* upon Mr. *Knox*. But when it was offered him, he reſuſed it,  
 not caring to be bound to uſe all King *Edward*'s Book. And *Sampſon*,  
 and after him *Saunders*, (afterwards a Martyr) were collated to the ſaid  
 Pariſh. April 14. *Knox* was called before the Council. Who demanded  
 of him three Queſtions. 1. Why he reſuſed the Benefice provided for  
 him in *London*? To which he answered, That his Conſcience did wit-  
 neſs, that he might profit more in ſome other Place than in *London*. And  
 therefore had no Pleaſure to accept any Office there. But he might  
 have answered, that he reſuſed that Parſonage, becauſe of *Northumber-*  
*land*'s contrary Command: Who deſigned it, perhaps, for him that ſuc-  
 ceeded into it, namely, *Sampſon*. 2. Whether he thought that no Chri-  
 ſtian might ſerve in the Eccleſiaſtical Miniſtration according to the Rites  
 and Laws of the Realm of *England*? To which he ſaid, That many  
 Things at that Time were worthy of Reformation in the Miniſtry of  
*England*: Without the Reformation whereof, no Miniſter did, or could  
 diſcharge his Conſcience before God. For no Miniſters in *England* had  
 Authority to ſeparate the Lepers from the Heal: (i. e. the Whole or  
 Sound; that is, they had not the full Power of Excommunication)  
 Which was, he ſaid, a chief Point of his Office. 3. They asked him,  
 If kneeling at the Lord's Table was not indifferent? He answered,  
 That Chriſt's Action was moſt perfect. And that it was moſt ſure to  
 follow his Example. And that kneeling was Man's Addition and In-  
 vention. About this laſt Queſtion, there was great Contention between  
 the Lords of the Council and him. There were then preſent, the Arch-  
 biſhop of *Canterbury*, *Cranmer*, the Biſhop of *Ely*, *Goodrick*, Lord Chan-  
 cellor, the Lord Treafurer, the Earls of *Bedford*, *Northampton*, *Sbrewf-*  
*bury*, the Lord Chamberlain, and both the Secretaries. After long Rea-  
 ſoning, it was ſaid to him, He was not called of any ill Meaning, and  
 that they were ſorry to know him of a contrary Mind to the common  
 Order. He answered, He was ſorry the common Order was contrary  
 to Chriſt's Inſtitution. He was diſmiſſed, with ſome gentle Speeches,  
 and

*Knox* will  
 not accept  
 a Living.

The Council  
 ſummon him  
 before them  
 to know the  
 Cauſe.



ANNO 1552. and willed him to advise with himself, if he would communicate according to that Order. All this above, is collected from a Letter of Knox's own writing.

Knox in  
Bucks.

Painful Ad-  
monition.

Now Knox seems to have gone into the Parts of *Buckinghamshire*, and that in his Itinerary Course of Preaching. In some Places in this Circuit, and particularly at *Amerham*, he took a liking, partly for their Forwardness to hear him, and partly for their Civilities towards him. In these therefore, and such like Places, he would tarry somewhat longer than in others, where he could not find so much Delight; and there, and elsewhere, sometime allow himself Recreation. But this was afterwards a Trouble to him, as reckoning himself to have been guilty of too much Indulgence to himself, and of too little regard of the Need that other People stood in, of having the Gospel preached to them: And he blamed himself, ' That he had not been an indifferent Feeder, as was ' required of Christ's Stewards. For in preaching Christ's Gospel, said ' he, albeit my Eye, as God knoweth, was not much upon worldly ' Promotion, yet the Love of Friends, and carnal Affection of some Men, ' with whom I was most familiar, allured me to make more Residence ' in one Place than in another: Having more respect to the Pleasure of ' a Few, than to the Necessity of Many. That Day I thought I had ' not sinned, if I had not been idle. But this Day I know it was my ' Duty, to have had Consideration, how long I had remained in one ' Place, and how many hungry Souls were in other Places, to whom, ' alas! none took Pains to break and distribute the Bread of Life. More- ' over, remaining in one Place, I was not so diligent as mine Office re- ' quired, but sometime by Counsel of carnal Friends, I spared the Body; ' some Time I spent in worldly Business of particular Friends, and some ' Time in taking Recreation and Pastime, by Exercise of my Body.' This I the rather set down, that you may see one of the King's Itineraries in his Office.

But leaving Knox, we shall make some Remembrances of other Men of Note, as they occasionally about this Time offer us Matter to relate of them.

Sir William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke, now grew great, having been lately advanced from a Commoner to a Nobleman, specially since the Conspiracy of the Duke of *Somerset*, wherein it was pretended, that he, together with the Duke of *Northumberland*, and the Marquis of *Northampton*, his Brother in Law, should have been assassinated: Whereby he became linked in with those two overtopping Men. He was made President of the Council for the Marches of *Wales* in 1552. And in this last Year of the King, he made two great Purchases of Lands and Lordships from the Crown, which cost him upwards of 1800 Pounds. He was made the first and chief of a Commission, to view and survey all Church Goods, Plate, Furniture, &c. belonging to any Church, Chapel, or Guild in the County of *Chester*. The King also bestowed upon him the Office of keeping the Forests and Parks of *Claringdon*, *Pauncet*, *Buckholt*, and *Melchurst*, in *Wills*. To him and his Son, for their Lives. And he obtained, as of the King's Gift, the Manor of *Dunyat* in *Somersetshire*, with other Lands and Possessions.

Henry



Henry Nevyl was Earl of *Westmorland* in this Reign, a Person of ancient Nobility, but of a tainted Life, and blemished Manners. In the Year 1551. he conspired to have robbed the King's Treasure at *Middleham*, where his Majesty had considerable Revenues. He endeavoured also to rob his Mother. And sold Land to the Value of 200 Pounds *per Annum*, either lavished away in Prodigality, or to carry on a Treason. And to please the People, he intended to set forth a Proclamation, for the raising of Coin to its former Value, which, being of a baser Alloy, had been lately cried down, by the King's Order, that Money might come to a truer Standard. These things *Horn*, Dean of *Durham*, had discovered against him in *October*, 1552. But was bid to keep the Matter close. Whatever Punishment this Earl underwent, in the beginning of *April*, 1553. by the means, I suppose, of *Northumberland*, who grew formidably great in the Northern Parts, to gain this Northern Nobleman, had great Favour shewn him. For he had a Pardon of all Treasons, little and great, Misprision of Treason, &c. committed before the 20th of *March* last; and soon after, in the same Month, the King gave him the Manors of *Kenton*, *Lifton*, *Cbetecomb*, *Baseby*, *Stow*, and *Deping*, and other Lands in the Counties of *Devon* and *Lincoln*. To whom they were before entailed: To him, and the Heirs of his Body. And in the Month following, Commission came to the Earl of *Huntingdon*, and Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Knights of the Order, to admit and instal the said *Westmorland* into the said Order.

ANNO  
1552.

*Westmorland*  
pardoned  
and reward-  
ed.

Which Sir *Andrew*, of late risen exceedingly, as well as the Lord Chamberlain, (*viz.* the Lord *Darcy*) had been both lately admitted into the said Order. And in *April* the King gave them both, out of his Wardrobe, 18 Yards of Crimson Velvet, for the Livery of the said Order of the Garter, and ten Yards apiece of white Sarcenet, or Taffata, to line it. *Dudley* succeeded the Lord *Paget*, who, upon Pretence of Defect of Blood and Armes for three Descents, had been before deprived of the Garter ignominiously. But the *Liber Caruleus*, in the Registry of the Knights kept at *Windsor*, observed, it was not so much those Causes, as the Prevalence and Practice of the Duke of *Northumberland*, by which he had been unjustly and undeservedly put off the Order. But Sir *John Hayward*, as also *Stow*, are mistaken, when they write, that the *George* and Garter were forthwith bestowed upon the Earl of *Warwic*, that Duke's eldest Son; when, indeed, it was not bestowed upon the Son of the said Duke, but upon Sir *Andrew*, his Brother, as was shewn before.

Sir *Andrew*  
*Dudley*, and  
Lord *Darcy*  
taken into  
the Order.

Sir *John Williams*, who was Master of the Jewel-house, and now discharged in *May*, gave up his Accounts, and was cleared of the Sum of 16667 Pounds. This Gentleman was under Queen *Mary* created Lord *Williams* of *Tbame*, and made Lord Chamberlain of the Household to King *Philip*.

Sir *John Wil-*  
*liams* Master  
of the Jewels.

Had not the King died so soon, the moderate, learned, and wise *Melancthon* would have come into *England*, and been placed in the University of *Cambridge*. For in this Month of *May*, a Letter in *Latin* was sent to him from the King, signifying, that the King had elected him to supply that Place which *Martin Bucer*, deceased, had in that University. And *June* 6. following, a Warrant was issued to the Treasurer of the Augmentations, to deliver to the Archbishop of *Canterbury* 50 Pounds,

A Letter to  
*Melancthon*.



**ANNO** to be sent over the Seas by him, for the Expences of the same learned  
**1552.** Man coming to the King's Presence.

The Adventure of the North-East Passage.

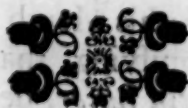
In this Month of *May* did the King grant Letters of Commendation, or safe Conduct, for the three Ships that were enterprizing that noble Adventure of seeking for a Passage into the Eastern Parts of the World thro' the unknown and dangerous Seas of the North. Of this Expedition *Sebastian Gabato*, an excellent Mariner of *Bristow*, but of *Italian* Parentage, was a great Mover, to whom the King, as a Gratuity, had given 200 Pounds. For this Voyage, in *February* last, the King lent two Ships, the *Primrose*, and the *Moon*, a Pinace, to *Barns*, Lord Maior of *London*, *Garret*, one of the Sheriffs, *Tork*, and *Windham*, Adventurers, binding themselves to deliver to the King two Ships of the like Burden, and good Condition, in *Midsummer*, Anno 1554. Sir *Hugh Willoughby*, a brave Knight, was the chief Captain in this Enterprize: To whom the King granted a Passport to go beyond the Seas, with four Servants, 40 Pounds in Money, his Chain, &c. The Letters of safe Conduct were wrote in *Latin*, to all Kings, Princes, and other States, being three in number, for each Ship one: And three others of the same effect, were writ in *Hebrew*, and three others in the *Chaldee* Tongue; to suit with the Language of the Eastern Countries, when they should arrive in those Parts of the World. But the Voyage proved unfortunate, by reason of the Ice and Storms in the North Parts; tho' so much was gained, to the great Advantage of the Nation, that by it the Country of *Russia* was better known, and a Trade with it then first discovered.

Archbishop Holgate purchaseth *Scroby*.

In this Month of *May* did *Holgate* Archbishop of *Tork*, the only wealthy Bishop then in *England*, bestow some Part of his Wealth very commendably, for the Benefit of his Successors in that See. For he made Purchase from the King of the Scite, Circuit, and Precincts, Capital Messuage, and Mansion, Lordship, and Manor of *Scroby* in *Scroby*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Nottingham*, lately Parcel of the Possessions of the Archbishop of *Tork*. Which Premises were extended to the yearly Value of 37 Pounds 8 Shillings 5 Pence Halfpenny, above all Reprizes and Allocations. To have the Premises to the Archbishop, and *Barbara*, his Wife, during the Life of the Archbishop, and of *Barbara*, and either of them, living longest, with Impetition of Waste during the Life of the said Archbishop; and after the Departure of the Archbishop, and his Wife, then to his Successors, Archbishops of *Tork*, for ever. To hold of the King, and his Successors, in free Soccage: Which was purchased by him for the Sum of 630 Pounds 7 Shillings 6 Pence, *May 27.*

Ambassadors from *England*.

*Mr. Sheres* was in this foresaid Month of *May*, sent Ambassador to the King of the *Romans*; and to *Maximilian* King of *Boeme*; and about the same Time, *Florentius de Diaceto* to the King of *Denmark*.





CHAP. XX.

ANNO

1552.

*A Design to enter into League with the Protestant Princes. The present Condition of the Emperor. The Embassy to him from England. Letters from the English Ambassadors, concerning the Affairs of the Low Countries.*

**B**UT now to turn ourselves to the King's Concerns with his two neighbour Princes.

This Year *England* had Sir *Thomas Chamberlain* Ambassador with the Regent, the Bishop of *Norwich*, Sir *Richard Morison*, and Sir *Philip Hoby*, Ambassadors with the Emperor. Who laboured the confirming of the Amity with *England*, and did sincerely favour him against the *French*; tho' more privily, because of the Peace with *France*. Where our Ambassadors were, Dr. *Wotton*, Sir *William Pickering*, and Sir *Thomas Chaloner*. Whose Office was, to mediate a Peace between that King, and the Emperor. Now because we have no History extant, as I know of, that gives any sufficient Account of these Concertations, but are very defective, nay, say nothing at all thereof, therefore I will, by the help of the Letters of these Ambassadors, and of the Council to them, declare this at some more Length.

It must be known, that a great Intrigue now driving on by these Ambassadors with the Emperor was, to open a Door to strike a League with the Protestant Princes of *Germany*. And it was left to the Discretion of the Ambassadors, to take their Opportunity to move the Matter. They sent Letters *April 28.* to the Council, being an Answer to Letters that had been before sent from the Council to them: Therein they signified, That as yet there had been no good Opportunity to utter, especially in those Parts, any Piece of the Matter of the Council's Letters, until more Time, and further Intelligence, might give Light for the Manner and Order of Entry. By the next Letters of the Lords, wrote *May 5.* they ordered the Ambassadors to forbear to say or do any thing therein; that is, for Entry of any Practices touching the League, whereof they wrote before. Yet it was their Will, that the said Ambassadors should devise, both with Mr. *Mount*, the *English* Agent at *Strasburgh*, at his coming to them, and by all other ways, to understand as much as they might, in all things mentioned in their former Letters; and especially, to consider this one Point, *viz.* with what Princes of *Germany*, in what Degrees, and after what Sort, it were best to enter, and break first, when the King, upon further Intelligence and Occasion, should think good to proceed further in this Matter. And in these Points they desired to understand the Ambassadors Opinions, who had all Three great and long Experience of those Princes, and had been privy, as they thought, with what Commissions, and under what sort, the Covenants had passed heretofore with the Princes of *Germany*, both in the League for the Defence of the *Low Countries*, and in some other like Considerations made in those Parties in Times past.

A Design to enter into a League with the Protestant Princes.



ANNO  
1552.

Instructions  
in case of the  
Emperor's  
Death.

The Emperor still remained very sickly, and in more Likelihood to die than to live. In case of whole Mortality and Departure, the Council instructed the Ambassadors, that it was the King's Pleasure, that they should use such Words of Lamentation as might seem meet; and to declare to the Regent, that considering, that by the said Emperor's Death, the End of their Embassy was come, and their Commission expired, he, the Bishop of *Norwich*, and he, Sir *Richard Morison*, were minded to take their Leaves, and to make their Returns to the King's Presence; and he, Sir *Philip Hoby*, according to his Majesty's Letters, of late written to the Regent for that Purpose, did mind to make his Abode and Continuance in those Parts, to attend upon her the said Regent, according to the Charge committed unto him.

The Empe-  
ror besieges  
*Therwin*.

The Emperor's Party were this *April* and *May* besieging *Therwin*, but with no great hope of Success; any more than there was in the latter End of the last Year, when the Emperor besieged *Metz*, and was forced to raise the Siege. He was now greatly distressed for Money. For his Subjects of the *Low Countries* slunk back, and made Terms, in case a Tax were levied upon them; and the Bankers refused to lend any more. For, as *Chamberlain* wrote to the Lords, That for the last Demand from *Holland*, the People stood with the President there residing, desiring, that if they should yield thereunto, they might be unburdened of an Impost of Tole upon the Hundred, put upon them for all Fish and Merchandize, since the beginning of these Wars, towards the furnishing of a Navy of Ships, which, they were made believe, the Emperor would find upon the same, for a sure Convoy of their Merchants Ships between this and *Spain*, from Time to Time. And instead of such a Navy, they were compelled to double Man their own Ships, and double furnish the same with Ordnance, at their own Cost, and not to depart till thirty or forty Ships were ready together. And yet was the Impost, nevertheless, gathered of them. So that they standing hereupon, the President wrote to the Regent, that he could not induce them to condescend, otherwise than with Promise to take away the said Impost. Finally, it was known that the Regent wrote to the President, that if he could do no better, he should promise as much as they asked: which should be performed as other the like had been.

The People  
of the *Low*  
*Countries*  
murmur.

The People did murmur, and thought that Money already given, illy bestowed; and had no better hope of the Enterprize upon *Therwin*, than they had of *Metz*. When they were required for this last Grant, one of the Presidents, to allure them to condescend, was commanded to shew unto divers, certain Accounts of the Charges of the last Year: that it might appear how much the last did amount unto, and yet was not enough by a great deal, and that *Cesar* should yet be in Debt unto divers Persons, five or six Millions. It was reported, that among the rest, one Gentleman of *Holland* said merrily to the President, *What shall it boot me to see the Accounts, seeing I do know, that if there be not enough, more will be asked; and being too much, none shall be restored?*

Money very  
difficult to  
be raised.

The Nobles, the Abbots, and others of the Clergy, did sit still with the Commons, devising upon the easy levying of this last Grant in *Brabant*: Which they could not levy upon Meat and Drink, as they were wont, there being already so many new Imposts and Gables, beside the ordinary Excise, as the poor Commons were not able, and worse willing,



to bear it; so that as yet they could not agree: And the Money was **ANNO**  
unready when *Cesar* had present Need thereof. **1552.**

The *Fuggars*, and other Merchants in *Antwerp*, would lend no more upon Interest, until the old were paid: Which some mean Merchants did exclaim for, being not able otherwise to pay their Debts. But thought could they get, and yet still more was craved of them. The *Fuggers* would lend no more at Interest, but by Exchange: Whereby they meant, both to make more Gain, and also to stand in more Surety of their Payment. For that delivering Money here by Exchange, they would drive the Prince to seek out another Merchant, that might promise them Payment in *Spain* or *Italy*. And so thought themselves better able to obtain the Payment of others, Merchants, as they themselves were, than there of *Cesar's* Receivers: Whose Bills, and none other, they were wont to have for their Money.

The Merchants in *Antwerp* will not lend any more.

The People found themselves shrewdly wronged. For where the last Year they disbursed their ready Money to receive yearly Rents upon the Demesns of these Countries, when the Year came, that they looked for Payment, they were half paid, and forced to tarry until the End of the second Year. And then they looked for as little, by reason all the Demesns, and other Things there, were set to Pledge, and the Money faster spent than it was gathered.

The People that lent Money wronged.

The Cause of this Scarceness of Money did proceed from the great Mistrust that now went, of the Merchants Weakness, stepping daily aside. So that the Gentlemen, Burgesses, Widows, and others of those Countries, that were wont to put forth such Money in Banks, as they did spare to spend of their yearly Revenues, and other Gains, did now think better to keep it in Coffers, without Gains, than to put it in Hucksters Hands, and lose the Principal.

The Cause of this Scarceness of Money.

The Emperor's own Condition was now, in *April*, such, that he kept himself close, and gave no Audience to any Man, nor was seen abroad. The reason whereof was thought to be, that the Despight of his ill Successes had bred in him a melancholic Humour, not much differing from a Frenzy. So that the *English* Ambassadors, (who came for Confirmation of the Amity, and to offer a Mediation for Peace between the Emperor and *France*) remained as yet without Access to his Presence. Of this want of Admission, the said Ambassadors informed the Lords. Who authorized them, for lack of Access to the Emperor's own Person, to declare unto the Regent, his Sister, the Effect of their Embassage. Whereupon they agreed, that Sir *Richard Morison* should repair to *Monsieur De Arras*, to have Audience spoken for accordingly. The said *Arras* said, he would declare it to the Emperor; assuring him, that if the Emperor had been in any Ability to have given them Audience himself, they had not been thus long delayed. And because they should not think the Time long, he therefore sent his Secretary *B.* unto them, to pray them to resort unto the Regent. Which, *Arras* said, proceeded only of the Emperor's Debility; for had he been in case able to have given them Audience, they should most thankfully have been received by him. After this, *D' Arras* sent the Secretary unto them, to tell them, he declared this Matter to the Emperor, who took it in very good part, and was determined nevertheless, within two or three Days to give them Audience himself, if he were able. It was *May 7.* in the Morning, when

The *English* Ambassadors Audience with the Regent.



**ANNO** 1552. two of the Emperor's Council came to them, telling them, that the Queen was ready to give them Audience. With whom they repaired unto her Presence, and there declared the Effect of their Message, according to their Instructions: and withal delivered unto her, first her own Letters, and afterwards the Emperor's Letters: Praying her, that like as she had always shewed herself an Augmenter of Amity between the King's Majesty, and her Brother the Emperor, so she would now do what Good in her lay, to the Furtherance of the King's Majesty's godly Intent and Purpose, as well to the Honour of both Princes, as to the Profit of the universal State of Christendom. Whereunto she made as gracious and loving Answers as might be desired; promising Continuance of her Good Will towards that Amity, which she knew the Emperor tendered much; and that for the rest, she would declare it to the Emperor, and let them know his Mind therein, as shortly as might be, not doubting but that they should be answered to their Contentation.

After having paused a little, they further declared unto her, That like as the King's Majesty had sent them thither unto the Emperor for that good Intent, even so had the King sent the like Ambassadors to the French King, with Commandment to do their best: And as Matters might grow to any good Purpose, so to advertise them [the Ambassadors with the Emperor] of it; offering themselves to employ their utmost Diligence to do Good in this Behalf. Which the Regent accepted most thankfully.

Talk between D'Arras and the Ambassadors.

After this Audience with the said Queen, (which was at *Brussels*) on *May 10. Monf. D'Arras* came to the Ambassadors Lodgings, to visit them: and after much Courtesy, and gentle Words, they fell in Talk of the State of their Army at *Therwin*, and out of that, into a Discourse of the Peace. Wherein *D'Arras* said, that the Queen deferred their Answer only, for that the Emperor was desirous to make them Answer himself. And further, said he, 'Whereas you require to understand the Occasions of these Wars, the Emperor knoweth none other Cause, but the French King's Ambition. Who hath taken the Emperor's Ships at *Barcelona*, spoiled his Merchants upon those Seas, stirred his Subjects against the Emperor, and taken Towns belonging to the Empire, Which was both begun and done, when his Ambassador did affirm and swear, that his Master the French King meant nothing but good Peace.' Then speaking of the high and unreasonable Demands the French intended to make, in order to Peace, he added, That these were rather the Means to irritate them, that were already pricked; and that the Mediators should do their best, to stay those Demands. 'Nay, said Sir *Richard Morison*, it may be, for saving their Honour in speaking first, they will demand unreasonable Things, and nevertheless, in the End be contented with Reason. For if the French be willing to have Peace, they will speak, and yet, peradventure, their Speech shall be high. The French willing to have Peace? said *D'Arras*. Yes, I wifs, said he, I know they have sought Peace of us by several Ways, and have propounded certain particular Demands for the same. Howbeit, said he, the French trust not you: because they know you be our Friends. And therefore if you should tell them this, they would deny it. Nevertheless, as he proceeded, since all the World knoweth the Beginning of these Wars, and the French King's Doings, the Emperor needeth not



‘ not to utter them. Which Things, said he, the *French* King ought  
 ‘ to be put in remembrance of, by them that be Mediators; that the  
 ‘ *French* King might be thereby moved to make such Offers as are rea-  
 ‘ sonable. And when that shall be offered, the World shall well know  
 ‘ the Emperor to be affected to such a reasonable Peace, as may serve to  
 ‘ avoid the Occasion of new Wars, and be for the Quiet of all Chri-  
 ‘ stendom.’

ANNO  
1552.

This was the Sum of the Talk that passed between *Arras* and the  
 Ambassadors. Touching the Estate of the Emperor's Person, the Am-  
 bassadors sent word to the Lords of the Council, That they could by no  
 means learn assuredly, how it was with him. For it was kept so, that  
 there was no Man came abroad that was able directly to say, the Em-  
 peror is in this or that Case.

The State of  
the Empe-  
ror's Person :

As for the State and Government of the *Low Countries*, after the Em-  
 peror's Death, which the Lords willed the Ambassadors to understand,  
 they caused *Chamberlain*, one of them, to make as diligent Search as he  
 could : whose Discourse they sent to the said Lords, together with the  
 Advertisements out of *Italy*.

The said Discourse was to this Tenour : ‘ That he had learned, that  
 ‘ the Government of those Countries belonged of Right to the Emperor's  
 ‘ Son, after his Decease, altho' the People did bear him small Affection;  
 ‘ so that it was thought, that if *Maximilian* would make any Offer of  
 ‘ himself, when such Opportunity should serve, that he might be the  
 ‘ rather and willinger received, before the other. It was also thought,  
 ‘ that then *Ferdinando* might make Question for the Portion of his Fa-  
 ‘ ther's Goods ; wherein he would say, he was not indifferently dealt  
 ‘ with, alledging the Partage or Repartition, to be wrong made: Where-  
 ‘ of his Brother had promised him Recompence, as yet unperformed.  
 ‘ For *Spain*, it was thought, that if the Mother should outlive *Cesar*,  
 ‘ that *Ferdinando* should be nearer than *Philip*, by the Laws of that  
 ‘ Country. Altho' some said, that *Cesar*, to make that sure, had gotten  
 ‘ his Mother to grant beforehand, unto the inheriting of his Son her Ne-  
 ‘ phew. Which, for all that, was counted of no more Value than the Act  
 ‘ of a Madman. That Country would by no means have the *Spanyard*  
 ‘ to Govern or bear Rule over them : Which they fear to have, if *Cesar*'s  
 ‘ Son be their Head. They thought that rather, by accepting of *Maxi-  
 ‘ milian*, they should not only be quit of *Spanyards* to Rule them, and  
 ‘ bear Stroke in those Parts, but also they should, by such means, unite  
 ‘ themselves faster with the *Germans*, who did bear him Good Will. And  
 ‘ so be out of Fear of the *Germans* Revenge upon that Country ; for that  
 ‘ they conceived, that *Cesar* could never have done to them that he had,  
 ‘ without the Assistance of those *Low Countries* with their Money.’

And of his  
Countries,  
after his De-  
cease.

As to the Regent, thus he discoursed, ‘ That if *Cesar* should take his  
 ‘ Leave [of the World] or ever his Son [*Philip*] did arrive, he did not  
 ‘ learn, that the Regent were like to sit long in Governance, the People  
 ‘ did so much mislike her former Proceedings, divers ways. For where-  
 ‘ as in Times past, the Use had been at all Times, when any Loan or  
 ‘ Tax should be demanded of those Countries, for to call together all the  
 ‘ States thereof, Parliament-wise, and openly to propound the Demand,  
 ‘ with all Gentleness and loving Exhortations, the Regent had taken an  
 ‘ Use for to call but the Deputies of *Bruges* for *Flanders*, and the like

The Regent  
not loved.

‘ of



ANNO 1552. of *Antwerp* for *Brabant*, stoutly willing them to condescend unto such Sums as she had demanded. Which, if they had sought to qualify, making any good Demonstrations of the Weakness of the Commons, she would bid them leave their Merchandizes or Bargaining with her, saying, that *Cesar must and will have it.* These, and other things, did *Morison* write to the Lords, concerning the Posture of Things there.

The Embassy  
to the Empe-  
ror, to join  
with the Em-  
peror and  
the German  
Princes.

By Letters from the Council, dated *May 24.* it appeared to be their Intent, to take the Occasion that the Time ministred, as well for the Proceedings with the Emperor, as also for the Matters of *Almaine*, to join the King's Majesty both with the Emperor, and also with other Princes of *Germany*, in a straiter Amity: And that Sir *Richard Morison* should open unto his Collegues the Particularities of those Things that he had Knowledge of. Accordingly they conferred together, and perused such Articles of Discourse as the said Sir *Richard* had delivered in Writing to them. The Copies whereof were sent to the Lords, to the Intent that they might the better consider the same; with which also went the Ambassadors Letters. Wherein they wrote, 'That according to their Lordships Device, they thought, that such a League and Amity would serve to very good Purpose, as well for the King's Majesty, as for the Defence of those *Low Countries.* But how this Communication might be entered into, they were in doubt: because the Emperor's Sickness seemed to be such, that it was thought he would not give Audience himself, but refer this, as he did other things, to the Queen. So that of likelihood *Monf. D'Arras*, and others, should be made privy to it. And because the Matter required so great Secrecy, they mistrusted it could not be kept so secret, when it was opened to the Queen, and by her to others. This made them doubt how it might be broken, unless they had Audience of the Emperor himself. If the Emperor grew better, and were able to give them Audience, and should like this League, as in reason he ought, the Ambassadors signified to the Lords, that they thought it good to be followed with the Princes of *Germany*, after such Order as in the Articles of Discourse was contained, or otherwise, as should seem best to the Lords. Which might also be the Occasion to bring those unto Accord, that then by their Strife troubled all *Germany.* But in case, as the Ambassadors further shewed their Minds, the Emperor should not like this Confederation, as Princes' Hearts be unknown, then, after the opening of the Matter unto him, they thought it a Matter to be feared, that he would practise to disappoint the King for making any League at all with the *Germans.* Wherefore they thought, that this Matter was so to be moved to the Emperor, as he might not know the King's full Mind herein, until the Emperor's own Inclination thereunto, were first felt. They added, that after they should have spoken with Mr. *Mount*, (the Agent employed with the *German* Princes) they should be more able to say further herein, and would thereof advertise their Lordships.'

Here follow the *Articles of Discourse* mentioned above:



*It shall be thought good, that the King's Majesty should enter into a straiter Amity with the Emperor, jointly with the other Princes of Germany.*

1. First, Whether the Emperor can be contented, that a foreign Prince should join in League, having heretofore shewed himself averse to suffer the like.

2. Also, whether he could be contented, that the King's Majesty, our Master, should be in Confederation with the *Germans*; because he may fear, that their Religion, which he misliketh, might by these Means the better be established, and the harder to be altered by him.

3. And whereas the Empire, by the League that the Emperor already hath with them, is bound to defend these *Low Countries*; and he bound again, in all Contributions, to pay but as much as two Electors, with many other Advantages on his Part; whether now he can be contented to enter into Communication of a new League, which may happen not to prove so beneficial for him, as the present League he now hath.

4. Whether the *Germans* could be contented to embrace such a League, because that, as it is supposed, they which neither love nor trust the Emperor, would be loth to join in League with him, that hath heretofore wrested them unto Covenants not indifferent. And as it may be, that by their good Wills, they would not observe this present League, so they may be much less willing to enter into any new League with him.

5. Whether the League should be made with the Princes, without the Emperor.

6. Whether the Discord which is among the Princes, should hinder the King's Majesty's Purpose herein. For having *John Frederic*, he should want Duke *Maurice*, and the *Landgrave*, like as, having them, he may want the other.

7. Whereas a Diet is appointed to be at *Frankford*, for the appeasing of these Disorders, if the Princes that vary, shall be there personally, whether it were good that the King's Majesty should send a Person thither, to move the said Princes unto Accord.

8. Whether it were convenient to let the Emperor understand the King's Majesty's Intent here, before he should so send, lest the Emperor might mistrust some other Practices, or else might find himself aggrieved, that another Prince should meddle with the pacifying of the Estates of *Germany*, he being Emperor, to whose Office the Order of those Matters appertaineth.

9. When these Princes should be satisfied, they being of two Sorts, as they call them, *Protestants* and *Papists*, whether both Sorts can be contented to enter into this League or not.

10. Whether the League should be made with Part of the Princes, unless they were such as were strong enough to weigh the rest. For otherwise, it is doubted, the King's Majesty may be put to more Charges with the Defence of them, than he shall receive Commodity by that League.



ANNO  
1552.

These Articles the King's Ambassadors seriously debated among themselves, and at last came to certain Resolutions, which they also sent to the Lords under this Title:

*Our Opinions, agreed upon in debating the Doubts mentioned in the said Articles, to every Article particularly.*

1. The Emperor heretofore hath not liked the Practice of any foreign Prince with the *Germans*, as well for that some of those Practices were meant against him, as he took the League of *Smakald* to be; as also because they might be a Hindrance to his chief Purpose: which, as divers have thought, was to have made himself absolute Lord of the whole. But now that he seeth his Purpose therein cannot take place, by reason as well of his own Age as Infirmities, as also by the Experience of his Enemies Force, we see not in Reason, why he should be loth to have other foreign Princes joined in League with him and the Empire, for the more Strait [Security] and Safeguard of his own Countries.

2. When the Emperor shall perceive, that the Intent of this League tendeth only to the Defence and Preservation of his Friends Countries, and his own, whereby *Christendom* may be the better preserved from the *Turkish* Invasions, and the *French* also have the more Cause to be in Quiet, (without which League, neither his own Countries, nor *Germany*, can be without Danger, if God should call him away) we think Reason would, that leaving the Controversy of Religion, he should be content to join with all manner of Friends. As the *Swissers*, who being divers in Religion, are nevertheless whole in League, for their own Defence. And sithence he hath suffered Duke *John Frederic*, the Duke also of *Wirtemberg*, and others, also to continue in their Religion, it is to be supposed, that for Religion only, he will not refuse so necessary a League as this.

3. If this League, that the Emperor now hath with the *Germans*, as it is beneficial for the Emperor, be thought prejudicial unto the *Germans*, and so taken as unequal, especially for two Causes; one, that the *Low Countries* being much subject unto Wars, shall put the *Germans* very often to Travail and Charges, in the Contributions, whereof the Emperor's Charge is very little, all things considered; and the other, that whereas upon Occasions, the Princes of *Germany* have sought Order at the Emperor's hands, for the Correction of those his Officers of the *Low Countries*, which violently have broken the Peace against them, that forasmuch as by the common Law, no Man ought to be Judge in his own Case, it might therefore please his Majesty, those Cares might be determined either *per Cameram Imperialem*, or by indifferent Arbiters; they have been answered, That their Countries should not be sued in the Chamber of the Empire, for no manner of Cause, but only for not contributing such Money as by the Covenants they are bound. So that they think the Covenants not equal; as it may appear in the Writings exhibited by the *Germans*, in the Diet of *Augusta*. Wherefore if the *Germans*, mistaking this Inequality of Covenants, to the which they consented as it were by Compulsion, when the Emperor was at the greatest, should now have a Disposition not to perform this League, when their Time should so serve them, we think Reason would, the Emperor,



Emperor, considering the Inequality of these Covenants, should be contented to have them brought unto that Equality, that they might have just Cause to observe them: and so to stand him in Stead, where now it is possible the present League shall stand him in none. ANNO  
1552.

4. The Causes why it is thought the *Germans* neither love nor trust the Emperor, are, that the one Side perceived that he went about to alter their Religion; and both Parts mistrusted, he meant of *Germany* to make a Kingdom. Which they may so long fear, as he [shuffeth in] his Leagues with them. Wherefore when they shall see a King of *England* the Third in the League, one like to stand by them, as well in Religion, as in Maintenance of their Liberties, they cannot in reason but rejoice at it: like as the Emperor himself, who hath now, as it is thought, changed his Purpose, neither seeking Dominion over them, Alteration of Religion, nor Promotion of his Son to the Coadjutorship, should be glad to have such an one joined with him, as may both rid the *Germans* of Suspicion, and also be a continual Stay for his House.

5. We think it not good for the King's Majesty to enter into any League, unless this Emperor, or his Successor *Ferdinand*, be one of the Confederacy. For like as the Charges otherwise will be great, and the Commodity small, so we reckon little Surety to be had of the Members without the Head.

6. We think, that there be few better Means to end the Discords and Variances of *Germany*, than the travailing about this League. For if the King our Master, and the Emperor, do enter with the one Party, it is like enough the other will make Means not to be left out. For neither *Frederic* would suffer *Maurice* to be in, and himself out, nor yet *Maurice*, nor the *Landgrave*, remain excluded, if tolerable Conditions be offered: As it is like enough there shall be, when Men not partial shall be Judges thereof, and not themselves.

7. The *Germans* sending heretofore of their Ambassadors into *England*, to move Peace between the King's Majesty deceased, and *France*, may now serve as a good Occasion for the King's Highness to render unto them the like Gratuity. And as this may be a good Beginning to the rest, so they conceiving in us a certain Love and Affection towards their Nation, may upon friendly Motion of this Amity, think us fit to be desired and sued unto, to join in this League with them.

8. We think it good, for avoiding of all Doubts, if the King's Majesty shall send any Man to *Frankford*, to move the Princes to a Peace, that the Emperor be first made privy, both that his Majesty mindeth to send, and for what Purpose he sendeth. And forasmuch as the Emperor, and King of the *Romans*, and others, have much travailed to see a Concord among the *Germans*, and as hitherto have not brought it to pass, the thing being so godly, and so to the Emperor's Benefit as it is, we reckon he must not only take it well, but also yield his Thanks unto the King's Majesty, who offereth as well to help Peace forward in *Germany*, as he mindeth it between his Majesty and *France*.

9. In our Opinion, the *Gerre* in Religion will rather further this Matter, than hinder it. For while these two are thus divided, they be both so afraid to take Harm as they are, and like to refuse Safety, if any Man would make them Offer thereof. The Protestants be not so much the stronger, but they may be afraid of Practices, the Emperor being



ANNO  
1552.

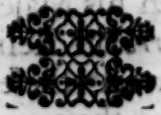
being on the other Side. And the Papists, being every Day spoiled, and afraid of worse, whensoever the Emperor shall go his way, would be gladder than the Protestants, that such Order were taken, as they neither might fear Stirs, nor also fear to lose that they have. This is answered in the Fifth.

10. For the moving of the Matter, we do think *John Frederic* the fittest Man to hear of it first. For as he cannot but like it, so he is better able to devise which ways it may be furthered, than we can. He hath a Man, called *Frederic*, as fit a Man as any is, to handle this Matter. His Master and he might, perhaps, bring it to pass, that the *Germans* might seek this League at the King's Majesty's hand. Which were greatly to the King's Honour: And they might also intreat the King of *Romans* unto it. And in case the Emperor be either dead, as some think he is, or not fit to be practised withal, then we might think *Ferdinando* might so be moved by the said *Frederic*, and others, to this Matter, as he should by himself, or by his Friends, either seek this League at the King's Majesty's hands, or be contented if any Overture were made thereof. For *Ferdinando* shall want these Estates, that Wealth and Riches that the Emperor now hath, and therefore more need foreign Friendship than the Emperor doth.

And if the King of *Romans*, being spoke unto by *Frederic*, would think it his Part to advertise the Emperor hereof, and so should communicate the Matter unto him, the Emperor should yet but know what the *Germans* desire. And *Frederic* might say, the King's Motion of him, and others, to Peace, made him to devise how he, and the rest of *Germany*, might declare themselves worthy this his Good Will.

It is like, that *Ferdinando*, understanding his Brother's Estate, will practise what he can, and where he may, to get him all the Friendship that is to be gotten. And here it is to be feared, lest if neither we speak for ourselves, nor none other for us, that he, in this Time of Practice, may speed himself of such Friendship, as he shall think our Amity hereafter little needful. He is already allied, by Marriage of his Daughters, with the Dukes of *Bavaire*, and of *Cleves*. And now there is a Marriage concluded between the King of *Pole*, and his Daughter the Duchess of *Mantua*. He is esteemed a Prince of a right and good Nature, true of his Word, much careful of his Honour: And therefore is beloved of Protestants and Papists. He travailed very much with the Emperor at *Villache*, that the Articles of Religion might pass, as the Protestants did desire: And therefore will not, as we think, much stick to enter into any Amity with *England*, notwithstanding our Religion.

And these were the Matters the King's Ambassadors were doing in *Germany*; and the Advices they gave: Which the Lords of the Council did so approve, that they seemed speedily to resolve upon those Measures.



CHAP.



ANNO

1552.

## C H A P. XXI.

*The King's Ambassadors in France, and to King Ferdinand: And to the Emperor. Their Access to his Presence. Instructions sent them for their Proceedings.*

**I**N the mean time, the *English* Ambassadors, Commissioners for the Mediation in *France*, *Wotton*, *Pickering*, and *Chaloner*, by a Letter writ *May 1.* gave some Account of the Demands of the *French*; which were extravagant. For having Conference with the *French* King, and his Council, they found these Men loth to seem to make any first Offer, before they heard how the other Part, *viz.* the Emperor, was disposed for a Peace. Hence their Demands at first were, the Duchy of *Milan*, the County of *Ast*, the Realms of *Naples*, and *Sicily*, and *Arragon*, the Superiority of *Flanders*, and of *Artois*, the Town of *Tourney*, with the County of *Tourneser*; the Kingdom of *Navar* to be restored to the rightful King: And *Siena* they were content should be set at Liberty, as before, free from the Subjection of the one and the other. As for *Metz*, *Tul*, and *Verdune*, they challenged nothing but the Guard and Protection thereof. These Demands and Offers the Ambassadors sent to the Lords of the Council, to be further used, as their Wisdoms should think meet, by their Instructions. But these Offers for an Introduction to the Peace, were of such a Nature, that the Ambassadors with the Emperor forbore to open them to that Court. For they supposed them to be such, as would marvelously hinder that Matter, rather than do any Good at all, as they wrote to the Lords, and as we shall hear more by and by.

*Sberes*, as was said before, was dispatched Ambassador to the King of the *Romans*, and his Son, with Instructions tending, as it seems, to make way thereby for a fast Friendship with the Princes of *Germany*, and to induce the Emperor thereto. These Instructions (which were the same in effect with the Schedule in the Chapter before, sent the Council by the Ambassadors in the Emperor's Court) were by the Council communicated to the said Ambassadors. Wherein they, in their Letters *June 4.* gave their Opinions, that the Lords had taken the best way possible to be devised; and chosen the very Time that best served to the beginning of that Matter, and, as they verily trusted, there should good Success follow thereof.

The Emperor still continued indisposed, so that no Access of the *English* Ambassadors could be permitted to him. The King thought long of their Abode there, without any Entry hitherto into the Matter they came for, being now the Beginning of *June*: and willed them therefore to use the best Means they could conveniently, to obtain the Emperor's Answer. On the other hand, the Ambassadors assured the Lords, that it had grieved, and did grieve them not a little, to think how long this

The French's Demands.

Instructions for the Ambassador to Ferdinand.

The Ambassadors could yet have no Answer, by reason of the Emperor's Sicknes.



ANNO  
1552.

The French's  
insolent De-  
mands ob-  
struct the  
Mediation.

this Delay had lasted, and how impossible it was for them to do more than they had done. For the Emperor's Sicknes, as they shewed, being such, as no Man could speak with him, was the continual Excuse made by that Court to the Ambassadors for their Delay. So that as fast as they pressed them for Answer, they as fast again did intreat them of a little Patience, bearing them still in hand, that the Emperor himself would needs answer them. Yet should the Emperor's Council have given in their Answer now, the Ambassadors said, they could in a manner conjecture, what it should be. For they looked to have some Overtures out of *France*, thro' their [the Ambassadors] Hands; such as might be an Entry to persuade them, that it was like the *French* King would come to some Reason. Whereas those Offers above-mentioned, that they had received from the King's Ambassadors there, were Demands, and not such as they thought meet for them to open in Particularities, without special Commandment from the King's Council. Left that they of the Emperor's Council there, receiving at the Ambassador's Hands such unreasonable Demands, instead of Offers, and thinking them allowed by the Lords of the King's Council, and so set forth by them [the Ambassadors] by Order from the said Lords, might take it unkindly, and alledge, that the King's Majesty tendred not the Emperor's Honour in this, so much as by their Message it was pretended: And thereupon the Emperor's Council make Answer to them [the Ambassadors] contrary to the King's Majesty's Expectation.

The Ambassadors loth  
to mention  
them to the  
Emperor.

The Ambassadors added, That they remembred, that before their coming forth, their Lordships would not suffer the like Matter to be put into the Instructions, having considered as much as that came to, upon *Pickering's* Advertisements of the *French's* like Demands. The Council had urged the Ambassadors to press for an Answer from the Emperor, upon this Reason, because the Ambassadors in *France* did expect to hear from the Emperor's Court, now since the *French* King had once spoken. Upon which the said Ambassadors with the Emperor wrote to the King's Council, That they could not see what they might do more, considering that this the *French* King's speaking was, as they said, no speaking at all. For that as yet it had not been uttered unto the Emperor; and that, in their Opinion, it should rather hinder the Matter, than otherwise, if those Demands should be uttered. They proceeded, That it might appear by former Letters, wrote *May 13.* sent to their Lordships, wherein was contained their Communication with *Mons. D'Arras*: unto whom they did then indirectly, by Circumstances, open a Likelihood of the *French's* Offers, as things grounded for Honour, to the begining of a Talk, and nothing meant; yet they could not perceive any Disposition in him to hear unreasonable Matters moved. Whereby, they said, they had the more Cause to conjecture, that of unreasonable Demands, like Answer might follow. The Conclusion was, that seeing the Emperor was in that Case, that it was most uncertain when they should speak with him; yea, and when they should speak with him, that they should have no other Offers than those to make him; they therefore humbly besought the Lords, to prescribe unto them what they should do; whether they should open to the Emperor, (or for lack of him, to the Queen) those *French* Offers, as they were, or what they should further do in this behalf. For, said they, without



out Order given us from your Lordships, we neither durst, nor dare ANNO.  
open these Demands.

About this Time came *D'Arras* to the Ambassadors Lodgings, to pray  
them of a little more Patience, telling them, That the Gout in the Em-  
peror's Leg had so fairly left him, that he thought himself almost well:  
But it was come into his Hand, that he could not yet tend any Business.  
Nevertheless, he would surely answer them within a while, to their Con-  
tentation. The Ambassadors made him a courteous Answer, wishing  
the Emperor speedy Recovery, that they might understand some To-  
wardness of the Matter they came for.

1552.

The Empe-  
ror mends.

The 8th of June was the Day the King's Ambassadors had their long  
expected Audience of the Emperor. The Manner whereof was as fol-  
loweth: The same Day in the Afternoon, about Five of the Clock,

The Amba-  
sadors have  
Audience.

*Mons. De Baldemont*, and *Gerard*, two of the Emperor's Council, fetched  
them from their Lodging to the Court. Where first they had Access  
unto the Queen. By whom, after great Excuse made of the long Delay  
of their Answer, it was told them, That like as the King, their Master,  
in travailling on this sort to pacify the present Wars, had not only shewed  
himself a very sincere Friend unto the Emperor, but also a Well-willer  
of the Tranquillity of all *Christendom*, according to the Office of a good  
King: So the Emperor, for his part, did not only yield unto his good  
Brother, his most hearty Thanks, but also assured them, that whenso-  
ever those reasonable Conditions were offered, that might appear to tend  
unto a perfect and unfeigned Peace, it should well be known, that the  
Emperor did presently no less covet the Quiet of all *Christendom*, than  
as a good Christian Prince should, and as he had ever coveted, and tra-  
vailed for it. And since the Cause of these Wars was unknown to the  
Emperor, being begun of the *French* King in that sort, that all the  
World knew, it was therefore Reason, that the Offers also should begin  
there: Or else, said she, let them that had begun, shew what Ground  
they had to begin it, that it might be seen by indifferent Men, in whom  
the Fault was: And then look what might, with the Emperor's Honour,  
in Reason be required; and it should be seen, whether he meant not in-  
deed, as she had now said unto them. And herewith, she left that Mat-  
ter, and told them, that they should immediately speak with the Em-  
peror himself, and should at his Hands perceive, whether this were true  
or not.

The Regent  
speaks to  
them.

Whereupon she caused them to be led down to the Emperor's Cham-  
ber of Presence. From whence, after a little Pause, they were brought  
into his Privy Chamber. There they found him sitting in a Chair,  
with his Feet on a Stool, looking very pale, weak, lean, and feeble;  
howbeit, nothing so ill as they before believed of him. For his Eyes  
were lively enough, and his Speech sensible. So that the Ambassadors  
could not tell what to judge of him. For he had escaped so many Pe-  
rils of Sicknes, that tho' his Colour, and his Flesh were gone, yet he  
might, they said, endure a while. Yet, to judge him by their Sight,  
they said, that he appeared to them a Man of short Time of Continuance.  
When the Ambassadors came into his Presence, and had made their due  
Reverence, they gave the King's Commendations to him, and in few  
Words touched the King's Majesty's Affection to him, and then the  
Cause wherefore they were sent. Whereunto he briefly answered them  
after

They come  
into the Em-  
peror's Pre-  
sence.



ANNO after this manner: That he was sorry for their long Delay there. But  
 1552. his Sickness had been the Cause: Wherefore he prayed them to bear  
 withal. And for their Message, he did especially thank the King, his  
 good Brother, both for his good Affection, which he always found in  
 him, and also for his Zeal unto the Concord and Peace of all Christen-  
 dom, giving him the Title of *A good and virtuous King*; shewing him-  
 self much pleased, that the King did so earnestly follow this good Pur-  
 pose, so friendly by him taken in hand: Assuring them, that upon  
 Offer of reasonable Conditions, his Honour being saved, they should  
 well see how he tendred Peace. And praying them to make his most  
 hearty Commendations again unto the King, his good Brother; the  
 Ambassadors took their Leave of him, wishing to his Majesty Strength,  
 and long Health. All this the Ambassadors certified by a Letter, dated  
*June 9.* sent by Mr. *Thomas*, Clerk of the Council, together with other  
 Intelligence, which he had in Credit from them.

By Letters from the Council, dated *June 11.* the Ambassadors, who,  
 as we heard before, desired further Directions, whether it were the King's  
 Pleasure, that they should open either to the Emperor, or the Queen, those  
 Offers which were made by the *French* King, or not, were told, That  
 it might have appeared to them by former Letters, that they, the Coun-  
 cil, thought not fit that the said Overtures should be opened, neither to  
 the Emperor, nor the Queen, nor any other; and that the King was still  
 of the same Mind, as well for the Considerations mentioned in their  
 [the Ambassadors] Letters, as for certain other. And whereas the Coun-  
 cil had before wrote unto them of the Unlikelihood of further opening  
 on the *French* part, for such Causes as were in their Letter contained;  
 their Meaning, they said, was not, that they, the Ambassadors, should  
 declare those unreasonable Demands of the *French*, but only to set forth  
 to them, that they should take occasion, as soon as they might, to do  
 the Message they had first from them, the King's Council.

The *French* still remained high in their Terms, and shewed no good  
 Disposition towards an Accord with the Emperor, but only in Words.  
 For the Council, by the King's Commandment, had written to Dr. *Wat-  
 son*, and the rest, at the *French* Court, to use the best Means they could,  
 to get some further Knowledge, and to assay whether it might be obtained  
 to have any other Conditions propounded in *France*. But, as they signi-  
 fied to the Ambassadors with the Emperor, they had no great hope to  
 receive any Answer more certain than before. And therefore now, by a  
 Letter writ *June 11.* they instructed the said Ambassadors, that they  
 might, as they should see convenient Time, proceed according to their  
 Instructions. And that if any Overtures more reasonable should be pro-  
 pounded, then they might further go on, according to his Majesty's for-  
 mer Charge committed unto them.

The Ambassadors with the Emperor, after their Audience, soon wrote  
 to the King's Commissioners with the *French* King, declaring what An-  
 swer the Emperor had given them; exhorting them, that they should  
 move that King as earnestly as they could devise, to come to the Offer  
 of some reasonable Conditions, or at least such as were void of Extre-  
 mities, and the which might induce some Treaty by their Friends to-  
 ward a Concord. To this the Council also urged the said Commissioners.  
 And by this plain Proceeding with the *French* King, the Council did  
 think



think (and so they wrote *June 20.* to the Ambassadors at *Brussels*) *AD. 1552.* their Commissioners should either have occasion given, to enter further into the Matter, or some such other resolute Answer, as might determine both their Ambassades.

The King being now near his End, and in the daily Increase of his Sicknes, which by this Time grew very extream upon him, yet such was his generous and Christian Disposition, that he was very earnest in this his Mediation for Peace, as tho' he desired to see Christendom at Quiet before his Death. And these were the last Steps I find made in this Business. After the King's Ambassadors had been with the *French* King, soliciting for more reasonable Offers, that might shew him well affected to Peace, he, in fine, gave them such Answers as little tended to the proceeding to a Treaty. Nevertheless, the Emperor was again addressed to, by the Ambassadors at his Court; who now shewed him plainly, what the *French's* Demands were: but they were instructed to soften the Roughness of them, by esteeming it only as a Practice formerly used in the Entry into these kind of Debates, wherein commonly more was demanded than was expected to be granted, being intended chiefly to introduce Discourse. But, however these Things succeeded, the Ambassadors were ordered to assure the Emperor of the King's most hearty Affection to him, and his Affairs, and of his Care for the good Estate of Christendom. But the Council's Letters to these Ambassadors, will shew all this Business, more distinctly. Which I will set down at length in this Place, being writ the 1st of *July*, that is, but six Days before the good King's Death.

The King's Progress in his Mediation.

After our hearty Commendations. Upon the Receipt of your Letters of this last Month, by the which you declared unto us the Answer made unto you by the Emperor, upon your Access unto him, we sent unto you the King's Majesty's Commissioners being in *France*, to proceed again with the *French* King in the Matter of Peace, and by some Means to procure more reasonable Demands; upon the which some kind of Entry might be taken to treat thereof. For which Purpose, we gave them certain Knowledge of the Emperor's Answer unto the *French* King. Whereby it might be seen, both how the Emperor was disposed to a Peace, and yet, nevertheless, without some particular Overture of the *French* King's behalf, not minded to enter any further Talk of the Matter. This Message is done by our Ambassadors, and Answer received from the *French* King; such as do little further the proceeding to a Treaty. And yet it seemeth convenient for the Honour of the King's Majesty, and for Demonstration of his earnest Meaning in this Travail, to proceed further with the Emperor by your Means.

The Council unto the Ambassadors with the Emperor. Galba, B. 1

And first, Touching the Answer made by the *French* King, because ye shall both certainly and plainly understand as we do, we send here, with a Copy of such Part of the Ambassadors Letters, as appertaineth thereunto. Upon Consideration whereof, the King's Majesty thinketh it convenient, that ye should seek Access unto the Emperor, and after Recommendation from his Majesty, declare the very Troth and Proceedings of the Matter, as followeth. First, That the King's Majesty's Ministers with the *French* King, had such Answer from him in



ANNO 1553. their first Motion for the Peace, that altho' the *French* King declared himself to have Good Will to a Peace, yet his Demands were so great, and in such Extremities, as the King our Master thought it not expedient, for the Furtherance of the Matter, to open the same Demands unto the Emperor. But as one that meant indifferently in these Extremities, to obtain that which he desired, that was, the Peace betwixt both, the Prince forbore the Utterance of that which he thought impertinent to the End, and sought only Occasion of some Entry unto a Treaty. And now having caused his Ministers with the *French* King to proceed again unto some more reasonable Articles, or Matters of Treaty, they find the former Disposition in the *French* King to appear for the Weal of Christendom; and yet they find him still to rest upon his former Demands, as he looked for Answer to be had thereof before he will fashion any new Matters. So as the King's Majesty hereupon is, as it were, forced, for the earnest Desire he hath to see some Fruit of his Travail, to open unto his said good Brother the Emperor, both the Fashion of the *French* King's Answer from Time to Time, and the Cause that moved his Majesty to abstain from the opening thereof before.

This done, if the Emperor require it, or that you shall see it otherwise convenient, ye may declare unto him the Particularities of the first Demands of the *French* King, as heretofore ye have been advertised from hence: And as you, Mr. *Hoby*, have indirectly opened heretofore to *Mons. D'Arras*. After the which declared, ye may add, for the salving of the Strangeness of the Demands, That altho' the King's Majesty, our Master, taketh the same Demands to be very strange; yet calling to Remembrance, that heretofore between Princes being in Debates, and coming towards Treaties of Peace, it hath been often used, that in the Beginning, to enter in Communication of like Matters, there hath been, in outward Appearance, and in the first Speech, larger and more ample Demands made, than have been meant, either of one Part to obtain, or of the other to grant; offering thereby Occasion only of Talk: as in this Case it may please the Emperor to interpret it; the King's Majesty thinketh it not unlikely so to proceed of the *French* King. And therefore his Majesty desireth his good Brother, to take this his Travail and Plainness in good part; and to assure himself, that what Means soever may be devised towards the Proceeding and Perfection of this Beginning, his Majesty will not refuse to shew himself, as he hath hitherto done, both careful of the common Estate of Christendom, and always well willing to have the Affairs of his good Brother in like Consideration as his own.

In this manner, as ye see Occasion, either dilate or strengthen the Proceedings in Speech, so as you observe two things; the one, that the King's Majesty's Affection towards the having of this Peace, may appear to continue as it hath been from the Beginning uttered: the other is, that if you see likelihood of Peace to follow, that the King's Majesty's former Travail be not made frustrate, by other intermeddling herein; but that his Majesty may have both the ameyning of the Matters, and be therein, for his own part, provided as becometh. If you shall see no likelihood of Peace, then it shall be well done to procure such Resolution and Answer, as may be an Occasion for your

Return,



Return, upon Advertisment first made hither to us, the Honour of *ANNO*  
the King's Majesty, and the Continuance of Amity with the Emperor, 1553.  
therein provided.

And until Answer hereof be had from you, the Commissioners with  
the *French* King remain, as it were, unoccupied, &c. And so we bid  
you heartily farewell, from *Greenwich*, the 11th of *July*, 1553.

|                        |                       |                   |                    |
|------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------|--------------------|
| <i>Tbo. Cant.</i>      | <i>Arundel.</i>       | <i>G. Cobham.</i> | <i>W. Petre.</i>   |
| <i>Tbo. Ely, Canc.</i> | <i>F. Shresbury.</i>  | <i>R. Ryche.</i>  | <i>W. Cecyl.</i>   |
| <i>Winchester.</i>     | <i>W. Northampt.</i>  | <i>T. Cheyne.</i> | <i>Job. Cheke.</i> |
| <i>Northumberland.</i> | <i>F. Huntingdon.</i> | <i>Darcy.</i>     | <i>Ed. North.</i>  |
| <i>J. Bedford.</i>     | <i>Pembroke.</i>      | <i>R. Cotton.</i> | <i>Ro. Bowes.</i>  |
| <i>H. Suffolk.</i>     | <i>Ed. Clynton.</i>   | <i>J. Gates.</i>  |                    |

By the Number of Subscribers, we may conclude, the Court was  
now full; partly to see what the End of the King's Sickness would be;  
and partly obliged, no doubt, by *Northumberland*, to be present at the  
new Settlement that was now making of the Crown, after the King's  
Decease, into his Family. That so all the Council, and best of the  
Nobility, might be dipped in it, that it might be the firmer.

In this Mediation nothing more was done, nor likely to be done, the  
Bishop of *Norwich* and Sir *Richard Morison* coming Home, and the  
King's Death preventing. Nor do I find any other Orders after this,  
proceeding from the Council to these Ambassadors, but only one by a  
Letter written to *Hoby*, (left there Ledger) three Days before the King's  
Death, concerning a *foul and most cruel Piracy*, as it is there called, done  
upon the Sea by some of the Emperor's Subjects. The Council sent  
withal a Supplication, and certain other Writings, exhibited unto them,  
the Council, by certain Merchants of *London*, that were the Sufferers.  
Which Papers shewed the Manner of doing it at length. One whereof  
the Council took particular Notice of, as they writ, 'That altho' the  
'rest of the Circumstances made the Thing strange, yet this made it  
'to be most strange, that the Piracy should be committed by such a  
'Fleet, having among them an Admiral, a Man of Name and Reputa-  
'tion, &c.' They therefore desired *Hoby* to employ his accustomed  
Wisdom and Dexterity, in such sort, as the Merchants might have a just  
and large Recompence, or Restitution, of their Ships and Goods; and other  
Things taken from them.

The King's Ambassadors also with the *French* King had Orders to  
come Home the very Beginning of *July*, viz. Dr. *Wotton*, and Sir *William*  
*Pickering*; little Advance toward a Treaty between that King and the  
Emperor, being like to succeed by their Mediation: And as *Hoby* was  
left the King's Ambassador Ordinary with the Emperor, so Sir *Thomas*  
*Chaloner* was left in the same Quality in *France*. And a Letter, dated  
*July* 2. was sent to that King, in Commendation of the said Sir *Thomas*,  
for his placing in that Room.



ANNO

1553.

## C H A P. XXII.

*Orders for Subscription to the Articles of Religion:  
And for the teaching and learning of the Catechism  
set forth by the King's Authority. Irish Matters.  
The Duke of Northumberland. The Lady Mary's  
Letter to the King. Divers great Matches. The  
King's Gift to London, &c. The King's Death.  
His last Will. His Funeral. His Character.*

The King's  
Command to  
the Bishops,  
for requiring  
Subscription  
to the *Arti-  
cles of Reli-  
gion.*

**B**UT now to return into the King's Dominions, and look up-  
on Things nearer Home.

Some of the good King's last Consultations for the State of Religion was, his Care that the *Articles* of the true Doctrine of Religion, lately framed, should be subscribed to by the Bishops, and by all such as should take Holy Orders, or officiate in the Church, either in reading or preaching, or that enjoyed any Benefices: And that a Book should be kept in the Bishop's Register for that Purpose, as a Record. And that any that refused to subscribe to them, should not be admitted by the Bishop to any Orders, or Ecclesiastical Ministry. And that such as scrupled to subscribe, for lack of the right Knowledge and Understanding of any of them, the Bishop by Instruction and Conference should endeavour to inform them, allowing them about six Weeks Time for Deliberation: otherwise to disable them from enjoying any Preferment in the Church. And this seems to be the first Time that Subscription to the Articles was enjoined.

And for  
teaching the  
*Catechism.*

And having likewise lately set forth a *Catechism*, by his Royal Authority, for all Youth that went to School, to be taught, in order to their bringing up in God's Favour, and in the Knowledge of true Religion, with a Commandment to all Schoolmasters, to teach it accordingly: The King enjoined the Bishop to visit yearly every School in his respective Diocese, and to enquire how the said Catechism was duly taught, and all Scholars learned the same. And Certificate to be sent from the Bishop to the Archbishop, of any Offences committed against this Order, from Time to Time. Letters from the King, dated from *Greenwich*, in *June*, for this Purpose, I shall set down, (and the rather, because none of our Church Historians take Notice of it) being exemplified from that sent to *Ridley*, Bishop of *London*.

Registr. *Rid-  
ley*, p. 297.

**R**ight Reverend Father in God, Right Trusty and Well-beloved,  
We greet you well. And bycause it hath pleased Almighty  
God, in this latter Time of the World, after long Darknes of Know-  
lege, to revele to this his Church of *England*, whereof We have,  
under Christ, the chief Charge in Earth, a sincere Knowledge of the  
Gospel,



Gospel, to the inestimable Benefit of Us and our People, redeemed by  
our Saviour Christ; We have thought it meet, and our Duty, (for the  
pure Conservation of the same Gospel in our Church, with one uni-  
form Profession, Doctrin, and Preaching, and for the avoiding of many  
perillous and vain Opinions, and Errors) to send unto you certain *Ar-  
ticles*, devised and gathered with great Study, and by Counsell and  
good Advice of the greatest learned Part of our Bishops of this Realm,  
and sundry others of our Clergy. Which Articles, We Will, and Ex-  
hort yourself to subscribe, and in your Preachings, and Readings, and  
Teachings, to observe; and cause to be subscribed and observed of all  
others, which do, or hereafter shall preach, teach, or read within  
your Diocese. And if any Person or Persons, having Benefice within  
your Diocese, shall from henceforth not only refuse wilfully to set  
their Hands to these Articles, but also obstinately exhort their Pa-  
rishians to withstand the same, and teach the People in any contrary  
way, Our Pleasure is, that being duly proved, ye shall advertise Us,  
or our Council of the whole Matter fully: To the Intent, that such  
further Order may, by Direction from Us and our said Council, be  
taken, as the Cause shall require, and shall stand with Justice, and the  
Order of our Laws.

ANNO  
1553.

And further, that when, and as often as ye shall have any manner  
of Person presented to you, to be advaunced by you, as the Ordinary,  
to any Ecclesiastical Order, Ministry, Office, or Cure, within your  
Diocese, ye shall, before ye admit him, confer with him in every these  
Articles; and finding him thereto consenting, to cause him to sub-  
scribe the same, in one Ledger Book to be formed for that Purpose:  
Which may remain as a Register for a Record: And to let him have a  
Copy of the same Articles. And if any Man in that Case shall refuse  
to consent to any of the said Articles, and to subscribe the same, then  
We Will and Command you, that neither you, nor any for you, or  
by your Procurancie in any wise, shall admit him, or allow him, as  
sufficient and meet to take any Orders, Ministry, or Ecclesiastical  
Cure. For which your so doing, We shall discharge you from all  
manner of Penalties, or Danger of Actions, Suits, or Pleas of *Premu-  
nire*, *Quare impedit*, or such like. And yet our Meaning is, that if  
any Party refuse to subscribe any of these Articles, for lack of Learn-  
ing, or Knowledge of the Truth thereof, ye shall in any wise, by Teach-  
ing, Conference, and Proof of the same by the Scriptures, reasonably  
and discreetly move and persuade him thereto, before ye shall peremp-  
torily judge him as unable, and a Recusant. And for the Trial of  
his Conformity, ye shall, according to your Discretion, prefix him a  
Time and Space convenient to deliberate, and give his Consent. So it  
be betwixt three Weeks and six Weeks from the Time of his first Ac-  
cess unto you. And if after six Weeks he will not consent and agree  
willingly to subscribe, then ye may, and lawfully shall, in any wise  
refuse to admit or enable him.

And where there is of late, by our Authority, set forth a *Catechism*  
for the Instruction of young Scholars in the Fear of God, and true  
Knowledge of his holy Religion, with expresse Commandment from Us  
to all Schoolmasters, to teach and instruct Scholars the said Cate-  
chism: making it the Beginning and first [Entry] of their teaching in  
the



ANNO  
1553.

the Schools; Our Pleasure is, that for the better Execution of our said Commaundment, you shall yearly (at the least) once visit, or cause to be visited, every School within your said Diocese. In which Visitation it shall be required, both how the Schoolmaster of every such School hath used himself in the teaching of the said Catechism; and also how the Scholars do receive and follow the same: Making plain and full Certificate of the Offenders contrary to this Order, and of their several Offences, to the Archbishop of the Province, within three Months, from Time to Time, after every such Offence. Yeven under our Signet, at our Manor of *Greenwich*, the 9th Day of *June*, in the Seventh Year of our Reign.

Warr. Book.

This Catechism I conclude to be the Church Catechism, joined now ordinarily with our *Common Prayer*, for the printing of which *John Day* had the King's License in the Month of *March* before: as likewise he had from Queen *Elizabeth* afterwards.

Letters to  
the Irish  
Lords.

In the Month of *May* were many Letters written from the King to divers, and the chief of the *Irish* Nobility. What the Contents thereof were, I do not learn. But if I take it right, the Intention thereof seems to be, by Promises of Pardon, and fair Words, either to reduce them to Obedience, or to keep them from making Disquiet in that Realm. These Letters, all of one Date, viz. *May 13.* were to the Earl of *Tyrone*, to the Bishop of *Done* and *Dromore*; to *O Hanlon* Lord of *Oriet*; to *Mac Donel*, Captain of the *Galloglas*; to *Maculyn*, to *Ochan*, to *Magwyre* Lord of *Farmannagh*; to *John O-nel*, the Earl of *Tyrone's* Son; to *Molmor Oraylie*, Lord of *Breffyn*, and to *Hugh Macnellog*, Lord of *Clanaboy*.

Northumber-  
land's Grants.

**DUDLET**, the great Duke of *Northumberland*, now bore all the Sway at Court, and in effect did what he listed. This Year, besides the County Palatine of *Durham*, (the Honour and Power of which was like to fall to him) the King gave him *Bernard's* Castle there, with very great Additions of Lands and Lordships in that County, and in *Northumberland*. He was also now made High Steward of all the Honours, Castles, Manors, Lordships, and Lands in the Counties of *Cumberland*, *Northumberland*, *Westmerland*, and *York*, or any otherwhere in the Bishopric of *Durham*, for Life. He had also granted to him, the Manors of *Feckenham*, *Bromesgrove*, *Kings-norton*, in *Worcestershire*, with many other Lands. The Year before, he was made chief Steward of the East Riding of *York*, and of all the King's Lordship in *Holdernes* and *Cottingham* in the said County. The Year before that, he was constituted General Warden or Keeper of the Marches of *England* towards *Scotland*, namely, of the East, West, and Middle Marches. Which were scarcely before put into one Man's Hand, (except the Marquis of *Dorset*, immediately before him) and he to appoint his Deputy Wardens. And his Patent was ordered to be drawn up in the most large and comprehensive Manner, enduing him with as much Authority, Power, Pre-eminence, Commodity, and Liberty, as any before him had enjoyed from *Richard* the Second's Time, to *Henry* the Eighth, as the Warrant ran. Besides these things in the North, he obtained of the King great and spreading Demeans in *Somersetshire*, *Warwick*, and *Worcestershire*, and many other Counties.



So that by this Time the Duke had prodigiously enriched himself, and made himself formidably great, by Lands and Lordships, Honours and Offices, Castles, and Places of Trust, heaped upon him by the King; to whom it was not safe to deny him any thing he asked. He had strengthened his Interest also by raising himself Friends upon the King's Cost, as more especially, the Lord Clinton, and Sir John Gates, and his Brother, Sir Andrew Dudley, Master of the Wardrobe, and taken into the Order of the Garter, and his own Sons, Ambrose, raised to the Degree of Earl of Warwick, and Master of the King's Horse, Sir Robert Dudley, made a Lord, and the King's Carver, and Guilford Dudley, whom the Duke was now marrying to one of the Royal Blood, viz. the Lady Jane, eldest Daughter of the Duke of Suffolk.

ANNO  
1553.  
The Duke of  
Northumberland's  
Land's Great-  
ness.

This present Juncture was an extraordinary busy Time with him. For finding the King declining apace in his Health, (which some thought himself the Instrument of) his ambitious Mind drew him to make his Advantage hereof, and to advance his Family to Reign. Which he did by suggesting to the King, the Danger of the true Religion, which he had so carefully Reformed and Established, if his Sister Mary should succeed, who was wholly Popish: Advising him therefore, that he should by his express Will exclude her, and make a Settlement of the Crown upon the Family of the Greys, married into the Royal Blood: A Daughter whereof, one of his Sons had lately wedded. The Courtiers saw Northumberland's Designs, and many of them did but coldly espouse the Business, and were not as careful in the Matter as himself. Which he expected they should be, out of their unfeigned Concern for Religion, and the Safety of the Realm, which he much talked of, and pretended. And having occasion in the Beginning of May to write to Secretary Cecyl, then retired into the Country upon Pretence of being sick of an Ague, but perhaps, more truly sick of Northumberland's Project, he lamented to him the great Negligence of many in the Court, in those, as he called them, most dangerous Days: And that neither Zeal, nor the Consideration of the Time, could scarcely awake them, and smoothly winked all Cares from their Hearts. And that he could ill bear them; such was his Duty to the State, as he plausibly writ, like a very careful Statesman. But of another of his Cares, perhaps, now was, that in the Beginning of this May the King was in a Probability of Restoration to his Health. For he now seemed to amend, and grow better, and the Physicians made no doubt of his thorow Recovery: and the rather, because the King was now resolved to follow their Directions, which he was not so inclinable to do before. This, Northumberland said, he was sure would comfort the Secretary; and that the News of it, two or three Mornings one after another, being brought him by the Physicians, revived his Spirits. Nevertheless, all this surely was but a Copy of his Countenance. Or if he were in earnest, it was because the King might live to have his aforesaid designed Settlement of the Crown confirmed by Parliament; which was soon after called for that Purpose, and should have, had the King lived.

Northumber-  
land's Cares  
for the  
Realm.

A  
Confession  
of the  
King's  
Weakness.

The King  
mends.

A  
Copy  
of the  
King's  
Countenance.

The Lady  
Mary writes  
a congratu-  
latory to him  
hereupon.

And the King's growing better, together with a Present he had sent his Sister Mary, caused her to write to him a congratulatory Letter, as little doubting now a perfect Recovery. Which ran in this Tenor:

My



ANNO

1553.

MSS. G. P.  
tyr. Armig.

**M**Y Duty most humbly remembred unto your Majesty. It may please the same to be advertised, that as the hearing of your Highness late Rheum-Cough was to me as much Grief as ever was any thing, even so the Hope which I have conceived, since I received your Majesty's last Token by my Servant, hath been not a little to my Comfort. Praying Almighty God, as according to my bounden Duty, to give your Majesty perfect Health and Strength, with long Continuance in Prosperity to Reign. Beseeching your Highness to pardon this my bold and rude Writing. And if in the same I do trouble your Majesty at this present, as I hope I do not, that then my humble Duty and Nature, which enforced me thereunto, may excuse my Default. Thus most humbly taking my Leave of your Majesty, I do, and shall daily pray for the prosperous Preservation of your most Royal State, as of all others I am most bound. From *Beaulieu*, the xvi. of *May*, scribed with a rude Hand.

Your Majesty's most humble Sister,

MARYE.

A Deputy  
Constable of  
the Tower  
made.

Now therefore having the great Game of all to play, to bring the Crown into his Family, the Duke thought of securing the *Tower*. Sir *John Gage*, the present Constable of the *Tower*, being now absent, either by Sicknes, or some other Cause, Sir *James Croft*, one of this Duke's Confidants, was appointed to be *Gage's* Deputy in his Absence, in order to laying him quite aside. And in *May* Instructions were sent by the King to Sir *James Croft*, and Sir *Edward Warner*, Lieutenant of the *Tower*, for their Proceedings, touching the good Order to be kept there. And a Warrant was sent to the Treasurer of the Augmentations, to pay the said Sir *James*, Deputy Constable of the *Tower*, 40 Shillings by the Day, for thirty Men appointed under him; and to Sir *Edward Warner*, 8 Pence a Day apiece for ten Men. And in the same Month of *May*, Orders were given to *Clinton*, Lord Admiral, for the discharging of several Bulwarks and Fortifications, as those at *East and West Tilbury*, *Sandshot* in *Dorsetshire*, the Bulwark of *Higham*, and those of *Gravesend* and *Milton* in *Kent*, and the Powder and Munition in them, to be removed to the *Tower*, for the better Guard thereof. And in the same Month of *May* a License was given to the Lord *Warwic*, and to the Lord *Robert Dudley*, two of the Duke's Sons, the one to retain an hundred Men, and the other fifty.

A new Sec-  
retary.

In the next Month, viz. *June*, a third Secretary of State was appointed, (a thing scarce known before) viz. Sir *John Cheek*: Whose Love and Zeal to Religion made him safe to the Interest of the Lady *Jane*. And a Gift was added to him and his Heirs, of *Clare* in *Suffolk*, with other Lands, to the yearly Value of 100 Pounds. And in the same Month was sent to the Lord Admiral a Letter, to take Charge of the *Tower*, and enter upon the Government thereof. And another Letter was sent to the Lieutenant, to assist the said Lord Admiral in all things, as should be by the said Lord declared to him, and to observe such Directions as he should appoint. And another Letter, dated *June 30*.

Lord Clinton  
made Con-  
stable of the  
Tower.



revoking Sir *James Croft* from the Charge of the Oversight and Order of the *Tower*, and to permit the said Lord *Clinton*, to whom the King had appointed the chief Order, Rule, and safe Custody of the same.

ANNO  
1553.

And a little before this Time, were great Preparations making for the Match (which was celebrated in *May*) of the Lady *Jane* with *Guilford*, *Northumberland's* Son, and some other Marriages, that were to accompany that; as the Earl of *Pembroke's* eldest Son with the Lady *Catharin*, the Duke of *Suffolk's* second Daughter, and the Earl of *Huntingdon's* eldest Son with the Duke of *Northumberland's* youngest Daughter: And another of the said Duke's near Relations, (his Brother, I think) Sir *Andrew Dudley*, was likewise matched near the same Time, with *Margaret Clifford*, the Earl of *Cumberland's* Daughter. And for the more Solemnity and Splendor of this Day, the Master of the Wardrobe had divers Warrants, to deliver out of the King's Wardrobe, much rich Apparel and Jewels. As, to deliver to the Lady *Frances*, Duchefs of *Suffolk*, to the Duchefs of *Northumberland*, to the Lady Marchionefs of *Northampton*, to the Lady *Jane*, Daughter to the Duke of *Suffolk*, and to the Lord *Guilford Dudley*, for Wedding Apparel: (which were certain Parcels of Tissues, and Cloth of Gold and Silver, which had been the late Duke's and Duchefs's of *Somerset*, forfeited to the King) and to the Lady *Katharin*, Daughter to the said Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Lord *Herbert*, for Wedding Apparel, and to the Lord *Hastings*, and Lady *Katharin*, Daughter to the Duke of *Northumberland*, for Wedding Apparel, certain Parcels of Stuff and Jewels. Dated from *Greenwich*, the 24th of *April*. A Warrant also there came to the Wardrobe, to deliver to the King's Use, for the finishing certain Chairs for his Majesty, six Yards of green Velvet, and six Yards of green Satin: Another, to deliver to the Lady *Mary's* Grace, his Majesty's Sister, a Table Diamond, with Pearl pendant at the same: and to the Duchefs of *Northumberland*, one square Tablet of Gold, enamelled black, with a Clock, late Parcels of the Duchefs of *Somerset's* Jewels. And lastly, another Warrant to Sir *Andrew Dudley*, to take for the Lady *Margaret Clifford*, Daughter of the Earl of *Cumberland*, and to himself, for their Wedding Apparel, fundry Silks and Jewels: This last Warrant bearing Date *June 8*.

Preparation  
for certain  
great  
Matches.

The King, but the Month before his Death, gave a most Royal and Exemplary Charity to the City of *London*, for the better Maintenance of their Poor of all Sorts. For in *June* there was an Indenture made between the King's Majesty, and the Maior, Commonalty, and Citizens of *London*, Witnessing, that the King's Majesty hath given and granted to the said Maior and Commonalty, and their Successors for ever, towards the Maintenance of the poor and impotent People, all his Manor House and Place of *Bridewel*, with the Appurtenances, lying or being in the Parish of *S. Bridget* in *Fleet-street*, *London*, with divers other Lands, &c. With a License unto them for to purchase 4000 Mark Land, for the Use abovesaid; besides the Lands given them by his Majesty in *London*, and elsewhere. And also his Majesty covenanteth, That they shall purchase so much Land as they are afore licensed, besides the Fees and Pensions granted by the King's Letters Parents, to the Officers that shall serve in any of the Hospitals. And his Majesty covenanteth, That as well the Lands given by his Highness, as those that they shall purchase, shall be clearly quitted and

The King's  
charitable  
Gift to the  
City.

Warr. Book.

*Bridewel*.  
Counc. Book.



ANNO

1553.

discharged against his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors for ever, of all Tenths and First-Fruits, and of all and singular Sums of Money, for or in the Name of a Tenth, or yearly Tenth Part, or in the Name of First-Fruits. And that they may make godly and wholesome Ordinances, Statutes, and Rules, for the good Governance of the Poor. And it shall be lawful for them, within the City of *London*, and County of *Middlesex*, to search and examine, by all Ways and Means, all manner of suspicious Houses, as Taverns, Ale-houses, and such like, Gaming and Diceing Houses, Dancing Schools, Tennis Plays, Bowling Allies, and such other like suspect Places, for Ruffians, Vagabonds, and idle Persons, and masterless. And further, his Majesty hath granted unto them to do, and suffer to be done, all thing and things, be it by Letters Patents, Acts of Parliament, Confirmation, or otherways, for the more Assurance of the Premises, as by their learned Council shall be devised: as it ran *verbatim* in the Council Manuscript Book, which I often make use of, and I do here the rather specify it, because perhaps this original Indenture may have been consumed in the great Conflagration, with other of the Hospital's Writings and Muniments. In the same Manuscript a Note of the Gift is set down in these Words, A Gift unto the said Maior, &c. of the Manor, chief Messuage, Tenement and House called *Bridewel*, and divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 450 Pounds. And besides this House of *Bridewel*, he gave the City for their Poor, the *Gray Friars*, now called *Christ's Church*, and *S. Thomas Hospital* in *Southwark*.

For a new  
Parliament.

In this Month of *June*, a Warrant was issued to the Lord Chancellor, to make out Writs for a Parliament, to be holden the 18th of *September*.

A Convoca-  
tion sum-  
moned.

And the Archbishop had more good Work upon the Anvil, to do for Religion and the Church, had the King lived, and he remained in Place. For *June 19.* a Command came from the King to the Archbishop for holding a Convocation. And accordingly the Archbishop issued out his Letters of Order to *Ridley*, Bishop of *London*, for a Convocation, to be held in *S. Paul's*, *Septemb. 19.* ensuing. The Archbishop's said Letters were dated *July 3.* And Bishop *Ridley* issued out his Letters, bearing Date *July 6.* Which were not executed, the King dying that Day. But by the way, this makes it plain, that *Ridley*, however he was in Design, was never actually Bishop of *Durham*. Because the very last Day of the King's Life, he stiled himself in the said Letters, *Nicolaus Miseratione divina, London. Episcopus.*

A new Edi-  
tion of the  
Bible.

This Year *Coverdale* set forth another Edition of the Holy Bible: intituled, *The whole Bible of the Old and New Testament, faithfully translated into English, by Miles Coverdale: And newly overseen and corrected, M. D. L. III. 2 Thes. 3.* Pray for us, that the Word of God may have free Passage, and be glorified. Set forth with the King's most gracious License. The Epistle Dedicatory was to the King. And *M. Coverdale* had an Epistle also there to the Christian Reader.

The Cate-  
chism.

The Books  
of Bishop  
*Poner*, and  
*Becon*.

And a License of Privilege was granted unto *John Day*, Printer, for the printing a Catechism in *English*, with the Brief of an *A B C*, thereunto annexed: And also for the printing and reprinting of all such Works and Books, as were devised and compiled by the Right Reverend Father in God, *John*, now Bishop of *Winton*, and by *Thomas Becon*, Professor of



of Divinity. So that no such Books, nor any Part of them, be in any ANNO  
wise repugnant to the Holy Scriptures, or the Proceedings in Religion, 1553.  
and the Laws of the Realm. This License was dated at Westminster,   
March 25. 1553.

A License also was indulged to Richard Totbel, Printer, to print all License for  
manner of Books of the Common Law of this Realm, for seven Years. printing  
So as the first Copies thereof be allowed by one of the Justices of the Law Books.  
Law, or two Serjeants, or three Apprentices of the Law: whereof one  
to be a Reader in the Court, &c.

And Thomas Sternbold, one of the King's Servants, set forth his Sternbold's  
Psalms: being a Collection of some of David's Psalms, which he, for his Psalms.  
own private Entertainment, had composed into English Verse, and set  
them to Tunes, and had sung and played by himself, for his own godly  
Solace. These gave the young King, sometimes overhearing them, much  
Pleasure. Which was the Reason of Sternbold's dedicating them to the  
King: tho' they seemed not to be published till after his Death. His  
Book was intituled, All such Psalms of David as Tho. Sternhold, late  
Groom of the King's Majesty's Robes, did in his Life-time draw into  
English Metre.

The King's Sales this last Year of his Reign, besides what were set The King's  
down before, were as follow: Sales this  
Year.

|           | l.   | s. | d.        |         | l.   | s. | d.     |
|-----------|------|----|-----------|---------|------|----|--------|
| In March, | 1072 | 13 | 05 ob.    |         | 1989 | 06 | 08     |
|           | 236  | 10 | 04        |         | 435  | 04 | 05     |
|           | 704  | 13 | 09        |         | 301  | 03 | 00     |
|           | 1554 | 12 | 01        |         | 949  | 07 | 03     |
|           | 234  | 08 | 00        |         | 1797 | 07 | 09     |
|           | 980  | 17 | 00        |         | 783  | 08 | 02     |
|           | 615  | 10 | 01        |         | 1049 | 09 | 04     |
|           | 1330 | 00 | 00        |         | 589  | 06 | 00     |
|           | 1161 | 19 | 05        |         | 497  | 11 | 08     |
|           | 1334 | 19 | 06        |         | 564  | 14 | 11 ob. |
|           | 893  | 06 | 07        |         | 727  | 03 | 07     |
|           | 3102 | 07 | 00 ob. q. | In May, | 531  | 00 | 00     |
|           | 1681 | 13 | 07        |         | 1072 | 13 | 05 ob. |
| In April, | 1717 | 08 | 04        |         | 735  | 17 | 01     |
|           | 190  | 16 | 00        |         | 1608 | 14 | 00 ob. |
|           | 1709 | 29 | 08        |         | 630  | 07 | 06     |
|           | 1406 | 10 | 01        |         | 1926 | 03 | 09 ob. |
|           | 388  | 17 | 01        |         | 718  | 08 | 08     |
|           | 1440 | 07 | 02        |         | 1402 | 13 | 01 ob. |
|           | 395  | 06 | 08        |         | 270  | 00 | 00     |
|           | 303  | 18 | 07        |         | 4221 | 11 | 05     |
|           | 756  | 01 | 05 ob.    |         | 773  | 00 | 04     |
|           | 1736 | 13 | 07 ob.    |         | 3972 | 09 | 04 ob. |
|           | 3302 | 06 | 08        |         |      |    |        |
|           | 585  | 16 | 00        |         |      |    |        |



ANNO

1553.

|          | l.   | s. | d.        |          | l.   | s. | d.     |
|----------|------|----|-----------|----------|------|----|--------|
|          | 2132 | 03 | 09        |          | 687  | 06 | 06     |
|          | 126  | 06 | 04        |          | 1491 | 07 | 01     |
|          | 414  | 18 | 04        |          | 81   | 13 | 04     |
|          | 733  | 12 | 06        |          | 362  | 03 | 02     |
|          | 775  | 19 | 00 ob.    |          | 442  | 13 | 02     |
|          | 834  | 14 | 03        |          | 1951 | 14 | 09 ob. |
|          | 212  | 17 | 10        | In June, | 1704 | 00 | 04     |
|          | 307  | 04 | 02        |          | 436  | 12 | 07     |
| In June, | 3708 | 11 | 09        |          | 303  | 18 | 07     |
|          | 699  | 18 | 01        |          | 510  | 13 | 10     |
|          | 1667 | 00 | 00        |          | 1108 | 15 | 00     |
|          | 615  | 14 | 10 ob.    |          | 1928 | 04 | 03     |
|          | 129  | 07 | 11        |          | 366  | 13 | 04     |
|          | 125  | 00 | 00        |          | 1095 | 06 | 08     |
|          | 1119 | 13 | 04        | In July, | 500  | 15 | 07 ob. |
|          | 1382 | 03 | 00 ob. g. |          |      |    |        |

These were the distinct Sums of Money for the several Purchases of the King's Lands, sold by the Commissioners in the Months before said, besides many other, which the King parted with of free Gift.

One cruelly  
whipt for  
seditious  
Words.

The Mouths of the common People were now full of Murmurings, upon the King's continual wasting Sickness, and many forbore not to talk broadly against some, of using unfair Ways for dispatching the King out of the World: On whom condign Vengeance was taken. And June 30. a young Fellow was whipt cruelly, by a new Invention, for pretended Visions, and opprobrious and seditious Words. Which, very probably, were about the King's Sickness, and against the Duke of Northumberland's Practices, and the putting by the King's two Sisters from succeeding to the Crown. The Invention was this: A Post was set up by the Standard in Cheap, to which he was tied with a Collar of Iron about his Neck, fastened to a Chain, and that Chain fastened to the Post: And two Men with two Whips whipping him about the said Post.

Frequent  
Reports of  
the King's  
Death.  
N. Barrely.

It was wonderful also to think how frequent the Reports flew about, that the King was dead, some Months before his Death happened; as tho' there were some Ground for the Fame. The Council Book mentions the several Times, when Examinations were had of these Reports, and the Persons that spread them. Anno 1553. April 12. one Bodynbam, April 26. Alice Hall, May 5. a Man, and two Women, May 21. Christopher Moor, and three others, May 27. John Saunders, were examined, and convicted, and punished, by Order of the Council, for Reports concerning the King's Death, and the like lewd Speeches.

The King's  
Sickness and  
Death.

The last Winter the King fell sick of a Cough, which brought him into a Consumption of the Lungs. And so he lingered, and grew worse and worse. Yet sometimes there seemed to appear great hope of his Recovery; as there did in May, whereof the Duke of Northumberland, in a Letter to Secretary Cecyl, wrote with seeming great Joy, as was shewed before: till July 6. when he piously left an Earthly Crown for an Heavenly.

That



That he died by Poison, would not out of the Peoples Minds and Mouths: as may appear by what I find in a Journal kept by one in those Times. Where the King's Death is thus by him set down, soon after Queen Mary's coming to the Crown. 'July 6. Deceased the noble King Edward VI. in the Seventh of his Reign. And he was poisoned, as everybody saith. Where now, Thanks be to God, there be many of the Traitors brought to their End. And, I trust God, more shall follow, as they shall be spied out.' And the like seemeth to be hinted in *Gabriel Harvey's Musarum Lacryme*: Where occasionally speaking of King Edward's Death, he thus expresseth it:

ANNO

1553.

Suspected to be by Poison. *Vitellius, F. 5.*

*Morbo tabescens Aurea Proles:  
Pulmonem absumptum Medici dixerunt. Quid ad nos?*

This Report of King Edward's being poisoned, ran abroad not only thro' this Nation, but into other Countries: and Papists soon took it up, and made their use of it, to reproach the Reformation. So did *Oforius* Bishop of *Sylva* in the Kingdom of *Portugal*, in his Letter wrote to Queen *Elizabeth*, soon after her Access to the Crown; affirming expressly, That that King was hainously poisoned in his Childhood. But he that was his Answerer, a grave and knowing Man, Dr. *Walter Had-*  
*den*, that knew very much of the Matters of the Court, and those Times, being himself a Courtier, esteemed this Report to be but a Fable, raised by idle People, and carried about by such as favoured Popery. For these are his Words in answer to this Rumour, which he wrote near twenty Years after, and might then be supposed to speak the Truth without Fear; 'Can you, being a *Portugal* born, so impudently defame  
' our Region with that horrible Crime, without all likely or probable  
' Proof, now that twenty Years be spent and gone, when as no sober  
' or discreet *English* Man did ever conceive any such Thought in his  
' Mind? The Physicians reported, that he died of a Consumption:  
' The same was affirmed by the Grooms of his Privy Chamber, which  
' did keep continual Watch with the sick King. All his Subjects did  
' believe it for a confessed Truth: Neither could your slanderous Fable  
' have been blown abroad; but among tattling Women, foolish Children,  
' and such malicious *English* Losells, like unto you. Nor yet could this  
' rotten unfavoury Cavil have had any discreet Author, had it not been  
' whispered into the Ears of *Oforius*.' Whether poisoned. Fol. 27.

The King's Death was reported, divers Days before it happened; the Reporters being chiefly his Enemies: and the Reports thereof fled beyond the Seas; nay, even when there were Hopes conceived of his Recovery. For so, it seems, they had, but six Days before his Departure. For the allaying of which Rumours, the Council wrote to the Ambassadors abroad, who could not tell what to think of it themselves, 'That  
' because they thought the Lewdness of some sort of Men, both here  
' at Home, and Abroad, was such, as either for Lightness, or for Contentation of their own Malice, made evil false Reports of the King's  
' Estate, (which God preserve) they did assure them, That, thanked be  
' God, his Majesty was alive, whatsoever evil Men did write or spread  
' abroad: And, as they trusted, and wished, his Estate and Towardness  
' of Recovery out of his Sickness, should shortly appear, to the Comfort  
' of all good Men. Of which Matter they assured them, as well for  
' their

Reported to be dead divers Days before.



ANNO 1553. 'their own [the said Ambassadors] Satisfaction, as for the Answer of others.' This was writ July 1. from *Greenwich*.

But eight Days after, a Letter of a sadder Accent came from the same Council to Sir *Philip Hoby*, to this Tenor:

The Council  
report the  
King's Death  
to Hoby the  
Ambassador.

After our hearty Commendations. We must needs be sorry at that which cometh both from us, and goeth to you, with such extreme Sorrow, as the like never passed under these our Hands. But such is the Almighty Will of God in all his Creatures, that his Order in Time may not be by us resisted. In one word, we must tell you a great heap of Infelicity: God hath called out of this World our Sovereign Lord, the 6th of this Month, towards Night. Whose manner of Death was such, toward God, as assureth us, that his Soul is in Place of eternal Rest. His Disease whereof he died, was of the Putrefaction of the Lungs, being utterly incurable of this Evil. For the Importance we advertise you, knowing it to have most Comfort to have been thereof ignorant. And the same ye may take Time to defer to the Emperor, as from us, who know assuredly, that his Majesty will sorrow and condole with us, for the Departure and Loss of a Prince of that Excellency, and so dear a Brother and Friend: Not doubting but that his Majesty will have in Remembrance the antient Amity that hath been always betwixt their Ancestors. For consideration whereof, ye shall assure him, that there shall not be any thing lacking on our Parts, but all readiness to observe and maintain the same. And so we wish to us all the Comfort of God's Spirit in all Adversities.

July 8. 1553.

Some Part  
of his last  
Will.

Of the King's last Will and Testament, whereby he excluded his two Sisters from the Crown, and preferred the Heirs of the Duke of *Suffolk*, enough is said in other Historians. But as to the other Points of his last Will, it may not be an unnecessary Search to enquire after them. Some Satisfaction may be had herein, from a certain Paper which I have seen, and here under inserted a Copy of, as I transcribed it from a Manuscript of Secretary *Peter's* own Hand, being a rough Draught taken by him from the King's Mouth, intituled,

To be contained in my last Will, as Parcel thereof:

MSS. G. P.  
Armig.

First, That during the young Years of any my Heirs or Successors, my Executors shall not agree to enter into any Wars, except upon occasion of Invasion to be made by Enemies: Nor, to the best of their Powers, shall suffer any Quarrels to be unjustly pyked by our Subjects, whereby any new War may ensue.

Seconde, Our said Executors shall not suffer any Piece of Religion to be altered. And they shall diligently travail to cause godly Ecclesiastical Laws to be made and set forth; such as may be agreeable with the Reformation of Religion received within our Realm. And that done, shall also cause the Canon Laws to be abolished.

Thirdly, Our said Executors shall not only follow the Devices already begun and agreed upon for the Payment of our Debts, but also by other good means devise for the speedy Payment of our said Debts.

Fourthly,



‘*Fourthly*, They shall consider to be discharged all superfluous Charges, both in the excessive Expences of our Household and Chamber, and in the over-great Number of Courts, by uniting the same according to the Statute provided in that behalf, and such other superfluous Charges. ANNO 1553.

‘*Fifthly*, My Will is, that my Sisters, *Mary* and *Elizabeth*, shall follow the Advice of my Executors, or the more Part of them, in their Marriages. And if they so do, and will be bound to live in quiet Order, according to our Appointment, and as by our said Executors shall be appointed, We will, that they, and either of them, shall have of our free Gift, 1000 Pounds yearly, by way of Annuity, out of our Coffers. And if they do marry by the Advice of our said Executors, or the more Part of them, that then We will, that either of them shall have towards their Marriages, of our Gift, 10000 Pounds, over and above the Money for the Marriages given by our Father’s Bequest.

‘*Sixthly*, Our Pleasure is, that our said Counsellors shall not agree to give any Lands or Tenements to any Person in Fee-simple, or Fee-tale, other than excheted Lands: Neither shall they grant any Lands in Fee-farm, nor Annuities, but only to such as have served us, or shall serve our Successors for the Time being, in some Place of special Trust: Nor any Leases in Reversion to any other than to the Servants of our Successors for the Time being.

‘All our Debts to be paid with as much Speed as can be.

‘All Injuries, if any have been done, to be recompenced; and the Parties, their Heirs, or Children, recompenced, according to Equity and good Justice.

‘The College of *S. John’s* in *Cambridge*, to have of our Gift in Land, 100 Pounds by Year, towards Maintenance of their Charges.\*

‘A new College to be erected, to be endowed in Lands, to the double yearly Rent of the said College of *S. John’s*: To be builded up, and made by discretion of our Executors, within the space of seven Years.

‘The Graunt made to the Maior and City of *London*, touching the *Savoy*, and Lands thereof, to be performed.

‘All such as have Graunts of us, of any Lands, Offices, or Fees, to enjoy our Graunts.

‘All such as have paid their Monies upon any Bargain for Lands, to have their Books and Bargains performed.

‘To be bestowed in High-ways, and to the Poor, by discretion of the Executors, the Sum of

‘The King my Father’s Tomb to be made up. All Monuments to be made of the Burials of *Edward IV.* and King *Henry VI.*

\* This was out of Good Will to *Cecil*, his Secretary, and *Cheke*, his Tutor, both of *S. John’s* College.

By which Parcel of the King’s Will, may be judged his Royal Wisdom and Prudence, his Religion and Justice, his Piety to his Ancestors, his Gratitude, Charity, and Liberality.

His Funerals were solemnized at *Westminster*, Aug. 8. Whereat were expressed, by all Sorts of People, such Signs of Sorrow for his Death, by Weepings and Lamentations, as the like was scarce ever seen or heard upon the like Occasion. The Solemnity was thus performed: First of all went a great Company of Children in their Surplices, and Clerks, and Priests, singing. Then his Father Bedeman. And then two Heralds. The King’s Funerals.



**ANNO** 1553. **Heralds.** Next, a Standard with a Dragon. Then a great number of his Servants in Black. Then another Standard, with a white Greyhound. After this a great number of his Officers. After them followed more **Heralds.** Then a Standard, with the Head Officers of his House. And then **Heralds.** Mr. *Norroy*, one of the Kings at Armes, bare the Helmet, and the Crest, on Horseback. And then the great Banner of Armes in Embroidery, with divers other Banners. Then came riding Mr. *Clarentieux*, another King of Armes, with his Target, his Garter, and his Sword, gorgeous and rich. And after, Mr. *Garter*, the third and chief King of Armes, with his Coat Armoury in Embroidery. Then more Banners of Armes. Then came the Chariot, with great Horses trapped with Velvet to the Ground; every Horse having a Man on his Back in Black, and every one bearing a Bannerol of divers of the King's Armes, and with Escutcheons on their Horses. The Chariot was covered with Cloth of Gold. And on the Body lay the *Effigies*, lying piteously, with a Crown of Gold, and a great Collar, his Scepter in his Hand, clothed with his Robes, and the Garter about his Leg, and a Coat in Embroidery of Gold. About the Corps were borne four Banners; a Banner of the Order, another of the Red Rose, another of Queen *Jane*, another of the Queen's Mother. After him went a goodly Horse, covered with Cloth of Gold unto the Ground, and the Master of the King's Horse leading him after the Corps: And another goodly Horse, with a Man of Armes in Armour: which, both Man and Horse, were offered. Then followed the Marquis of *Winchester*, being chief Mourner; and next, the twelve other Mourners, two and two, *viz.* six Earls, and six Barons; the Earls were, *Oxford, Shrewsbury, Worcester, Sussex, Bath, and Pembroke*; the Barons were, the Lords *Burgavenny, Windsor, Borough, Barkley, Stourton, and Cobham*. A Majesty was set up for him in the Chappel at *Whitehall*, and another in *Westminster Abby*, with three Standards, the Lyon, the Dragon, and the Greyhound, thirteen Banners, and a few other plainer Bannerols and Pensils, and hung about with Velvet. The whole Charge of the Funeral amounted to 475 Pounds 2 Shillings 2 Pence; too thrifty and penurious an Expence for the last Respects due to so brave a Prince. Dr. *Day*, late Bishop of *Chichester*, preached the Funeral Sermon, and Archbishop *Cranmer*, however now under a Cloud, celebrated his Burial after the Reformed Way, by the *English Service Book*, To which was joined a Communion, by him also administered, tho' after much Opposition, as we are told. Which was the last public Office, I suppose, that Archbishop performed.

**A Foreign-  
er's Character  
of the King.**

I shall not make any Reflections myself upon the Loss of this admirable Prince, but only repeat what a Foreigner observed, soon after his Death. For his Accomplishments and Virtues were known Abroad, as well as at Home. *Cælius Secundus Curio*, a Man of Learning and Eminence in the City of *Basil*, and Father in Law to *Hieronymus Zanchy*, (in his Epistle Dedicatory to Sir *Anthony Cook*, before Sir *John Croke's* Book Of the Pronunciation of Greek) hath these Words concerning the Hopefulness of this King, by the means of both their happy Instructions of him: *Vos communibus Potis, Consiliis, Industria, summa ac plane divina spei Regem formabatis. A vobis ille divinus Puer, &c.* That is, You by your united Prayers, Counsels, and Industry, formed a King



King of the highest, even of divine, Hopes. From you did the God-like Youth receive that Instruction, which neither *Cyrus*, nor *Achilles*, nor *Alexander*, nor any other King, ever received more polite, more holy. Which, had he lived to adult Years to make use of, and had come therewith to the Government of the Kingdom, nor had been snatched away before, by an immature Death; what Realm on Earth had been happier? What Nation had ever been more blessed? But God was minded only to shew him to the World, and suffer him no longer to abide in it. The *English* Nation would have seemed to have been too happy, &c.

And, if you please, take some further Character of him and his Tutors, from the Words of one in an Epistolary Address to him, when he presented him with a new Edition of Sir *Thomas Eliot's* Dictionary: What Subject endued with common Sense and Reason, doth not even now, in these your tender Years, perceive your godly Inclination, disposed so to Rule and Govern us in Virtue and true Religion, that of all Nations we may judge ourselves to be most happy and fortunate? For these Things chiefly, we are bound daily on our Knees, with lowly Hearts to give most humble Thanks to God; who pitying our State, of a singular Favour and Mercy towards this Realm of *England*, sent you to Reign over us. — Such, and so excellent Instructors were provided for your Highness, as scarcely the like in Virtue and Learning may in any Place be founden. Whose godly Instruction, and virtuous Counsels, how effectually they take place in your sacred Majesty's Breast, it doth right well appear to all them that attend upon your Royal Person, by the sage and godly Talk that proceedeth from your most gracious Mouth. We here abroad, by your most godly Proceedings evidently perceive, how your Grace willeth, that your dear Uncle, and other most honourable Counsellors and Ministers, should endeavour and apply themselves, first to set up true Religion, to God's Honour and Glory, to abolish Idolatry and Superstition; and then constantly to proceed forth to the Advancement of the Commonweal: That is, truly to administer Justice, to restrain Extortion and Oppression, to set up Tillage and good Husbandry, whereby the People may increase and be maintained. Your godly Heart would not have wild Beasts increase, and Men decay; Ground so inclosed up, that your People should lack Food and Sustenance; one Man by shutting in of Fields and Pastures to be made, and an Hundred thereby to be destroyed. Oh! godly Heart! Oh! Prince most worthy to reign, not over two or three Realms, but over the whole World. Such Talk hath seldom been heard of Princes of full Age, perfect Discretion, and long Reign.

Wherefore the unestimable Comfort and Joy that all your loving Subjects do take at this your wise and discreet devising and commending, and many other lovely Sparks, and certain Tokens of Virtue and Christian Regiment, cannot be sufficiently expressed. Yea, undoubtedly many *English* Hearts have conceived an unfeigned Hope, that your Majesty shewing yourself so sage, so grave, so prudent in your tender Youth, should, as very *Solomon*, by Wisdom bring the World from Tumult and Ruffling to restful Quietness, from War to Peace, from Hatred and Discord to Love and Amity, from contentious Sects and

Opinions,

ANNO  
1553.

The King  
commended  
by Cooper, the  
Schoolma-  
ster of Mag-  
dalen College,  
who was af-  
terwards Bi-  
shop of Lin-  
coln.

This Book is  
bound in  
the  
the  
the



ANNO 1553. Opinions to one Christian Unity, and true Religion. Surely, I say, many are fully persuaded, that the eternal Wisdom and secret Counsel of God hath ordained your Highness this to do, to his great Honour, your immortal Praise, and the Weal and Profit of your loving Subjects. These Words are sufficient to shew the Spirit and Temper, the Wisdom and Parts of his Youth, when he had not been above three or four Years King, even while his Uncle the Duke was alive, when this Address was made. And these were the mighty Expectations the honest and good Part of the Nation had of him. But his untimely Death prevented all.

His Latin Epistles and Declamations. The Learning of this young King, while he was Prince, did appear by divers Letters in *Latin*; which I have seen, fairly written by his own Hand. Whereby not only his Proficiency in that Language is shewn, but also his Ingenuity, Wit, Sweetness of Temper, Courtesy, and Sense of Religion, shined forth. Some of these Epistles were writ to his Royal Father the King, some to his Mother Queen *Katharine*, some to his Sisters, Lady *Mary*, and Lady *Elizabeth*, some to his Uncle the Protector, one to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, another to *Day Bishop of Chichester*, divers to Dr. *Cox*, his *Preceptor* and *Almoner*, as he stiled him. I have seen also some of his Scholastical Exercises in *Declamations*, or *Orations*, upon several Subjects; which do shew his Invention, handsome Style, his Reasoning, and his Reading too, especially in *Tully*. And all the abovesaid Letters writ in the Year 1546. when he was not ten Years old: and the *Orations* composed by him, when not fully twelve. A *Specimen* of these, both Epistles and *Orations*, will very acceptably entertain the Reader, to be found in the *Repository*: where I have exactly transcribed some of them from the Originals.

L

His Book in French against the Pope.

To which I must add, that he was not unacquainted with the *French* Tongue. In which he arrived to that Degree before he was twelve Years old, that he composed a Tract, consisting of thirty seven Leaves in *Quarto*, against the Papacy, and the Usurpations over the Christian Church, and the Idolatry and gross Errors brought in by Popes, and upholden by them. The Title he gave this his Book, written on the Top of the first Page, was, *L'encontre les Abus du Monde*: That is, *Against the Abuses of the World*. Meaning, the *Abuses* imposed upon the Faith and Worship of Christians by the Pope, whom he calleth *Antichrist*. It begins thus: NOUS pouvons tresbien voir & appercevoir par l'experience du monde, que la Nature humaine est prone [prompte, writ over by the French Master] a tous maux, & embrouillée de tous vices. Car quel pais y a il au monde, auquel n'y ait quelque Vice & Abus: Principalement au temps présent: Veu que maintenant le grand Empire de l'Antichrist est en vogue. Lequel est la source de tout mal & la Fontaine de toute Abomination, & vray filz de Diable. Pource que quand Dieu est envoye icy bas son filz unique pour nostre Infirmite, afin de reconcilier le Monde a soy par la mort d'yceluy, le Diable changea des lors les Institutions de Christ en Traditions humaines, & perverti les Escritures a son propos par le Pape, son Ministre, &c.



The Conclusion is in these Words: ' Conclusion, & cinquiesme partie. En la premiere Partie de nostre Livre nous avons déclaré, & prouué, comme *Pierre* n'estat pas le Primat de l'Eglise: confutans les Raisons Papistiques. En la seconde, nous avons prouué, quil ne peuvent apporter [aleguer, writ over by the Master] quelque vraye Tesmoignage, que *Pierre* ait esté a Rome. En la troisieme partie, nous avons prouué par leurs dictz mesmes, quilz ne devoient pas avoir la Primauté. En la quatrieme partie, nous avons demonstté les Prophetes portantes de l'Antichrist. Puis donques, que le Pape est le vray filz de Diable, Homme mauvais, un Antichrist, & Tyran.

' Prions tous Seigneur, qu'il conserve ceux, qui ont veu la Lumiere, en la Lumiere; & qu'il montre a ceux, qui sont en tenebres, la vraye, sincere & pure Lumiere. A celle fin, que tout le Monde en ceste vie glorifie Dieu; & en l'autre Monde soit participant du Royaume eternal, par *Jesus Christ* nostre Siegneur. Auquel avec le Pere & le Saint Esprit, soit Gloire, Honeur, Empire & Louange pour tout jamais. Amen.

This Book (which I speak of) contains the first Minutes of the King's Writing: and so hath here and there a Correction, sometimes of his French Master, and sometimes of his own. It hath in the Margin of every Page, various Quotations of proper Places of Scripture, for Proofs of his Purpose. Which shew how well versed he was in those holy Books.

The Dedication of this his Book, the King made to his Uncle, the Duke of Somerset. Which began thus:

' EDOUARD Sixiesme de ce Nom, par la Grace de Dieu, Roy d'Angleterre, France, & Irlande, Defendeur de la Foy, & en terre apres Dieu, Chef de l'Eglise d'Angleterre & Irlande: A son tres cher & bien ayne Oncle *Edouard*, Duc de Somerset, Gouverneur de sa Personne & Protecteur des ses Royaumes, Pais & Subjectz.

' Considerant (tres cher & tres bien aymé Oncle) la Vanité du Monde, la Mutabilité du temps, & le Changement de toutes Choses mondaines; comme des Richesses, Biens, Honneurs, Jeux, & Plaisirs: Considerant aussi, que telles semblables sont, &c.

And now at last, to prove all this Book was wholly his own, done *Proprio Marte*, and the Effect of his Parts, without any other Help, his French Master testified at the End of the Tract, under his own Hand, in these Words following:

' Tout ainsi qu'un bon Paintre peut représenter le Visage, Regard, Contenance & Corpulence d'un Prince: Ainsi par les Escritz, Parolles, & Actions d'un Prince, on peut facilement entendre quel Esprit est en luy, & aquoy il est adonné. Comme on peut veoir par les Escritz de ce jeune Roy: lequel compose & escrivit ce liure; n'ayant encores douze ans accomplis: Et sans l'ayde de parsonne viuant, excepte de Propos qu'il avoit ouys de plusieurs, & de sovenance qu'il avoit des liures qu'il avoit leuz. Car des ce qu'il commença a escrire le dict liure, & jusques a ce qu'il l'eust acheué, le dict liure a tous jours esté en ma garde, jusques a present. That is,

' Just as a good Painter can represent the Visage, Look, Countenance and Bulk of a Prince; so by the Writings, Words, and Actions of a Prince, one may easily understand, what Spirit is in him, and to what



ANNO 1553. he is addicted. As one may see by the Writings of this young King. Who composed and writ this Book, being not yet full twelve Years old; and without the Help of any Person living: except the Subject, which he had heard of many; and the Remembrance which he had of Books that he had read. For from the Time he began to write the said Book, and until he had finished it, the said Book was always in my keeping, even to this present.

He began this Book, according to the Date set down by Himself, Decemb. 13. 1548. and finished it March 14. following.

Another Book in French writ by the King. Hist. Reform. Vol. II. Coll. p. 68.

There is yet another Book in French, said to be of his writing, and kept in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge; consisting of Places of Scripture, which he had noted in his own English Bible: And afterwards, for his French Exercise, had put them all into French, with his own Hand, as he signified to the Protector, his Uncle: to whom he also dedicated this Work of his.

The Influence of the King's Learning.

I shall add one thing more concerning this King's Learning: It is this, That many taking Example by him, the Nation began strangely to addict itself to Arts and Diligence, and especially to Learning, for the public Safety and Benefit of the Kingdom. And many good Books were now set forth, for the Use of the Commonwealth, and Increase of useful Knowledge. This, Raphe Robynson, a Scholar, acknowledged, sharpened him, and set him on work to translate into English that excellent Description of a good Commonwealth set down by Sir Thomas More, before spoken of, as in his Epistle Dedicatory he signified in these Words: Seeing every sort and kind of People in their Vocation and Degree is busily occupied about the Commonwealth's Affairs, and especially learned Men, daily putting forth in Writing new Inventions and Devices, to the Furtherance of the same, I thought it my bounden Duty to God and my Country, to occupy and exercise myself in bestowing such spare Hours as I could conveniently win to myself, &c.

Bale and Bibliander of this King:

To conclude; Of this admirable Prince, thus writ Bale: He did vehemently love the Gospel: and to all learned Men he gave Harbour and Patronage, Germans, Italians, French, Scots, Spaniards, Poles, &c. Bibliander said of him, Many wise Men believed, that he, as another Solomon, did aspire to that Wisdom and Virtue that came from the Celestial Throne.

And For.

Of King Edward's excellent Endowments and Abilities more may be read in the ninth Book of the Acts and Monuments of the Church, at the Beginning.

And lastly, Sir Thomas Chaloner.

And so I take my leave of him, with the Verses that Sir Thomas Chaloner describes his Youth, in his Heroic Poem upon the Praises of King Henry, his Father:

Quis pueri EDWARDI suavissima Pectora, mores  
Ter suaves, pulchri Exemplar quod nullus Apelles  
Exprimat, & nullo describat Tullius ore,  
Condigne hic pergat non digno dicere versu?

And



And his Death, in his second Book *De Repub. Anglor. instauranda.* ANNO  
Where he thus bewails him, and sets forth his incomparable Virtues in  
Verses, worthy the noble Subject he treats of. 1553.

*Tandem (ebeu!) lentam invitatus surrexit in Iram,  
Omnia peccantis Populi Commissa rependens  
Unius ablatu Pueri, quem parca beatis  
Restituit coelo, quo lapsus, sedibus, & nos  
Destituit manifesta Dei presentia in illo.  
Quem si longa dies plures servasset in annos,  
Si non maturo Mors immatura negasset  
Exerere ulterius divine pignora Dotis,  
Tanta tibi, O EDCARDE, fuit tum gratia Forma,  
Indolis & tam rara usque ad Miracula Virtus,  
Ingenio docti curam superante Magistri,  
Tanta tibi & Morum Probitas, ubi mite sereni  
Principis effulsit specimen puerilibus annis  
Gratius, ingenio sacrum os ornante Pudore,  
Verbaque vel duras blandè penetrantia Cautes;  
Tanta, inquam, fuerant congesta hæc omnia in unum  
Dona Deum, ut merito post sæcla effæta creasse  
Delicium humani generis Natura putetur.  
Quo duce, Brittannis illa aurea Tempora rursus  
Lactæ amnes, & melle rubos signata redirent,  
Quando iterum nostris errarent Dij quoque sylvis,  
Dij faciles, lustrata novis Altaria Donis,  
Quique pias grato spectarent sydere Palmas,  
Et Gentì annuerent restaurato Ordine longum  
Relligione, Togæ Studijs florescere, & Armis.  
Dignus eras triplices canus qui vivere in annos  
Nestoris, ipse decem qui Nestoras unus obires,  
Cujus & Imperio totus se subderet Orbis.*





ANNO

1553.

## C H A P. XXIII.

*A View of the Manners of all Sorts of Men in these  
Times : Nobility : Gentry : Yeomanry : Judges :  
The Poor : The Clergy.*

The Manners  
of all sorts of  
Men in these  
days, naught.



ND now let us stay a little, and look back upon the Times in which this King reigned. How good soever he was, and what Care soever was taken for the bringing in the Knowledge of the Gospel, and restoring Christ's true Religion, the Manners of Men were very naught: especially of a great Sort of them.

The Nobility  
and Gentry,  
covetous.

Among the Grandees and Noblemen, many were insatiably covetous. Which appeared partly, in raising their old Rents. Which made *Latymer* use to call them *Step-Lords*, instead of *Land-Lords*. Which was done in this Proportion, that what had gone before for 20 or 30 Pounds a Year, (which was an honest Portion to be had in one Lordship, from other Mens Sweat and Labours) was now let for 50 or 100 Pounds a Year. And this caused that Dearth that continued for two or three Years in the Realm, or more, notwithstanding God sent plentifully the Fruits of the Earth. Provisions were unreasonably enhanced in their Prices, occasioned by this raising of Rent by the Landlords. For then the Tenants might reasonably, and did, raise the Prices of their Commodities, as Pigs, Geese, Bacon, Chickens, Eggs, &c. as well as Grain, and the Fruits of the Earth, and Cattel. Another Evil hereof was the impoverishing of the Yeomanry, which was the chief Stay of the Nation. For out of the Yeomen proceeded Soldiers for the King's Wars; Husbandmen, for improving Land for the producing Fruits and Corn; Seamen, for the King and the Merchants Ships; Supplies of People, for the Trades and Occupations of the City; and Scholars, to be sent to the Universities, to be bred up Clergymen, for the Services of the Church. But this Rank of Men, so serviceable to the Church and State, that used to be of good Wealth, and live in a plentiful Condition, was brought down to low and mean Circumstances by these racked Rents.

The Wealth  
of Yeomen  
formerly.

To give an Instance: *Latymer's* Father was a Yeoman of *Leicestershire*, and had no Land of his own: Only he had a Farm of three or four Pounds a Year at the utmost. And hereupon he tilled so much, as kept half a dozen Men. He had Walk for an hundred Sheep, and his Mother milked thirty Kine. He was able, and did find the King a Harness, with himself and his Horse, while he came to the Place that he should receive the King's Wages. *Latymer* remembered, how he buckled his Father's Harness, when he went to *Black-beath* Field. He kept this his Son at School, until he was fit for the University, and maintained him there. He married his Daughters with five Pounds, or twenty Nobles apiece. He kept Hospitality for his poor Neighbours; and some Alms he gave to the Poor. And all this he did out of the said Farm. Whereas he that had the same Farm in King *Edward's* Days,



Days, paid sixteen Pounds by the Year, or more, and was not able to do any thing for his Prince, for himself, nor for his Children, or give a Cup of Drink to the Poor. All this *Latymer* thought not amiss to say in one of his Court-Sermons, the more to expose this Evil of racked Rents.

ANNO  
1553.  
First Sermon  
before the  
King

Again, the Covetousness of the Gentry appeared, as in raising their Rents, so in oppressing the poorer Sort by Inclosures. Thereby taking away the Lands, where they had used, and their Forefathers, to feed their Cattel, for the Subsistence of their Families. Which was such an Oppression, that it caused them to break out into a Rebellion in the Year 1549.

Inclosures.

Another Way they had of oppressing their Inferiors, was, when these were forced to sue them at the Law for some Wrong they had done them, or for some Means, which they violently detained from them. For either they threatened the Judges, or bribed them, that they commonly favoured the Rich against the Poor, delayed their Causes, and made the Charges thereby more than they could bear. Oftentimes they went home with Tears, after having waited long at the Court, their Causes unheard. And they had a common Saying then, *Money is heard every where.* And if a Man were rich, he should soon have an End of his Matter.

No Redress  
at the Law  
for the Poor.

In fine, the Poor were so oppressed by these means, that *Latymer*, now aged, and a great Court-Precacher, and of Authority with the King, and many of the Great Men, was never almost without poor Suitors, that came to him to speak to the Great Men, that their Matters might be heard; complaining to him, at what great Costs and Charges they had laid, to their undoing. Inasmuch as being at the Archbishop of *Canterbury's* House, where he used often to reside, he had no Time, so much as to look in his Book, as he told the King in his Sermon. This countenancing of the Rich Men against the Poor, was occasioned partly from the Servants of the King's great Officers, who did use to commit the hearing and examining of Causes to them. Wherefore *Latymer* took the Confidence in one of his Sermons, to advise the King to hear Causes himself; and so he advised the Protector, and the Lord Chancellor, who left Matters to others, to hear and determine. He bad them, in God's behalf, to sit upon the Bench themselves, and not to put all to the hearing of *Velvet Coats*, and *Upskips*, as he termed them.

*Latymer*  
speaks for  
them to the  
King and  
Great Men.

For the Judges also, some of them at least were very corrupt, and would sell Justice for Money. A great Man kept certain Lands from a Gentlewoman, and would be her Tenant in spite of her Teeth. She tarried a whole Year in Town for a Hearing against him, and could get but one Day, when the Great Man brought a great Sight of Lawyers on his Side: the Woman had but one on her's, and he threatened and frowned upon by the Great Man. And when the Matter was to come to a Point, the Judge himself was a Meane to the Gentlewoman, that she would let the other have her Land. That she could have done at first, without all that Waiting and Charge, if she had seen it convenient for her so to have done. And this was all the Relief she could have, that her Judge became a Pleader on her Adversary's behalf. *Latymer* did more than once complain before the King of the Judges, and would himself give them many a Jerk in his Sermons. Once he said, That

The Judges.

if



ANNO 1553. if a Judge should ask him the Way to Hell, he would shew him this Way: First, let him be a covetous Man. Then, let him go a little further, and take Bribes: and lastly, pervert Judgment. There lacketh a fourth to make up the Mese, which, so God help me, if I were Judge, should be *Hangum tuum*, a Tyburn Tippet, to take with him, if it were the Judge of the King's Bench, the Lord Chief Justice of England; yea, if he be my Lord Chancellor himself. To Tyburn with him. I suppose he might in these Words glance at these Men, or some of them, as not clear in this Charge. And again, speaking of an evil Judge that took Bribes, 'He would wish, that of such a Judge in England now, we might have his Skin hanged up. It were a goodly Sight, the Sign of the Judge's Skin. It should be *Lot's Wife* to all Judges that follow after.'

Fifth Sermon before the King. The Miseries of the Poor. The Miseries also of the Poor, and the Wrongs and Hardships they endured, occasioned by the Covetousness of the Rich, were set forth by Bern. Gilpin's Sermon before the King. another Preacher in these Days, in a Sermon before the King. 'Look, saith he, in all Countries, how Lady Avarice hath set on work altogether mighty Men, Gentlemen, and all rich Men, to rob and spoil the Poor, to turn them from their Livings, and from their Right. And ever the Weakest go to the Walls. And being thus tormented, and put from their Right at home, they come to London a great Number, as to a Place where Justice should be had: And there they can have none. They are Suitors to Great Men; and cannot come to their Speech. Their Servants must have Bribes; and they no small ones. All love Bribes. But such as be dainty to hear the Poor, let them take heed lest God make it as strange to them, when they shall pray. *Who stoppeth his Ear at the crying of the Poor, he shall cry and not be heard*, Prov. xxi. God reproveth them, that it is so hard for the Poor to have Access to them; and coming into their Presence, are so astonished, and speechless, with terrible Looks. — Oh! with what glad Heart, and clear Consciences, might Noblemen go to Rest, when they had bestowed the whole Day in hearing Christ himself complain in his Members, and in redressing their Wrongs? But alas! what lack thereof? Poor People are driven to seek their Right among the Lawyers. And there, as the Prophet *Joel* saith, what the Catterpillar hath left in their Robbery and Oppression at home, all that do the greedy Locusts, the Lawyers, devour at London. They laugh with the Money which maketh others to weep. And thus are the Poor robbed on every Side without Redress; and that of such as seem to have Authority thereto.

Nor the Lawyers. When Christ suffered his Passion, there was one *Barabbas*, *S. Matthew* calls him *A notable Thief*, a Gentleman Thief, such as rob now adays in Velvet Coats. The other two obscure Thieves; and nothing famous, the rustical Thieves were hanged, and *Barabbas* was delivered. Even so now adays the little Thieves are hanged that steal for Necessity; but the great *Barabbasses* have free Liberty to rob and spoil without all measure in the midst of the City. — Alas! silly, poor Members of Christ, how you be shorn, oppressed, pulled, haled to and fro on every Side? Who cannot but lament, if his Heart be not Flint. There be a great Number every Term, and many continually which lamentably complain for lack of Justice; but all in vain. They



They spend that which they had left, and many times more. Whose  
ill Success here [at London] causeth Thousands to tarry at home Beg-  
gars, and lose their Right. And so it were better than here to sell  
their Coats. For this we see, such is the poor Man's Cause, tho' never  
so manifest a Truth, that the Rich shall for Money find six or seven  
Counsellors stand with Subtilties and Sophisms to cloak an ill Matter,  
and hide a known Truth. A piteous Case in a Commonwealth!

ANNO  
1553.

And again, concerning the great Oppression of Landlords towards their  
Tenants, by turning them out of all, to their utter Undoing, thus he  
spake: Now the Robberies, Extortions, and open Oppressions of co-  
vetous Cormorants have no End nor Limits, no Banks to keep in their  
Vileness. As for turning poor Men out of their Holds, they take it  
for no Offence, but say, their Land is their own. And so they turn  
them out of their Shrowds like Mice. Thousands in England thro'  
such, beg now from Door to Door, who have kept honest Houses.  
These, he added, had such quick smelling Hounds, that they  
could live at London, and turn Men out of their Farms and Tenements  
an hundred, some two hundred Miles off. Oh! Lord, what a Num-  
ber of such Oppressors, worse than Abab, are in England, which sell the  
Poor for a Pair of Shoes, Amos ii. Of whom, if God should serve but  
three or four as he did Abab, to make the Dogs lap the Blood of them,  
their Wives and Posterity, I think it would cause a great Number to  
beware of Extortion. And yet escaping temporal Punishments, they  
are sure, by God's Word, their Blood is reserved for Hell-hounds.  
England hath had alate some terrible Examples of God's Wrath, in  
sudden and strange Deaths of such as join Field to Field, and House  
to House. Great Pity they were not chronicled, to the Terror of  
others.

Oppressing  
Landlords.

But in the mean time, these mighty and great Men said, That the  
Commonalty lived too well at Ease: They grew every Day to be Gen-  
tlemen, and knew not themselves: Their Horns must be cut shorter,  
by raising their Rents, and by Fines, and by plucking away their  
Pastures.

Their Pre-  
tences.

And hereby the Commonalty came to hate the Gentry. For They  
murmured, and grudged, and said, that the Gentlemen had all; and  
there were never so many Gentlemen, and so little Gentleness. And  
by their natural Logic they would reason, how these two *Conjugata*,  
these Yoke-fellows, Gentlemen and Gentleness, should be banished so  
far asunder. And they laid all the Misery of the Commonwealth up-  
on the Gentlemens Shoulders.

The Gentry  
hated.

In fine, to this pass had *Covetousness* brought the Nation, that eve-  
ry Man scraped and pilled from other; every Man would suck the Blood  
of others; every Man encroached upon another. It cut away the large  
Wings of Charity, and plucked all to herself. She had chested all the  
old Gold in England, and much of the new. Which made the foresaid  
Preacher add, That she had brought it to pass, that there was never  
more Idolatry in England, than at that Day. But the Idols were hid,  
and came not abroad. Alas! noble Prince, said he, (turning his Speech  
to the King) that the Images of your Ancestors, graven in Gold, and  
yours also, contrary to your Mind, are worshipped as Gods: And all  
the

Gold hoard-  
ed.



ANNO 1553. ' the poor lively Images of Christ perish in the Streets through Hunger  
' and Cold.'

Murders.

Many *Murders* were in this Reign also committed; and the Murderers too often escaped, by the Favour and Affection of the Judges. One of the King's Searchers executing his Office, displeased a Merchant Man; insomuch, that when he was doing his Office, they were at Words. The Merchant Man threatened him. The Searcher said, the King should not lose his Custom. The Merchant goes home and sharpens his Woodknife, and comes again, and knocks him on the Head, and kills him. This was winked at. They looked thro' their Fingers, and would not see it. ' Whether, saith *Latymer*, according to his coarse ' Stile, it be taken up with a Pardon or no, I cannot tell; but this I am ' sure, and if ye bear with such Matters, the Devil shall bear you away ' to Hell.' But these Words of *Latymer* gave Offence, as reflecting upon the Merchant's Reputation, and his Friends, when this Searcher's Death, they said, was but a kind of Chance-medley. But he understanding this, the next *Lord's Day* took notice of it, and said, ' He intended not to empair any Man's Estimation or Honesty, and that they ' that enforced it to that, enforced it not to his Meaning: Considering, ' he said, he *heard* but of such a Thing: and according as he heard, so ' he took occasion to say, that no Man should bear with another, to the ' Maintenance of voluntary and premeditated Murder.' Of which sort, notwithstanding their mincing the matter into *Chance-medley*, he supposed the Fact was. ' He knew not, he said, what they called *Chance-medley* in the Law, for that was not his Study; but he knew what ' voluntary Murder was, before God. If I shall fall out with a Man, ' he is angry with me, and I with him, and lacking Opportunity and ' Place, we put it off for that Season. In the mean time I prepare my ' Weapon, and sharpen it against another Time; I swell and boil in this ' Passion towards him; I seek him, we meddle together. It is my ' Chance, by reason my Weapon is better than his, and so forth, to kill ' him. I give him his Death's Stroke, in my Vengeance and Anger. ' This call I *Voluntary Murder* by Scripture; what it is in the Law, ' I cannot tell.' And this, it seems, was the true State of the Case between the Merchant, and the Searcher.

More Murders.

Another there was, that slew a Man in a certain Township, and was attached upon the same, and twelve Men impanelled. The Man had Friends; the Sheriff laboured the Bench. The twelve Men stuck at it, and said, except they would disburse twelve Crowns, they would find him *Guilty*. Means were found, that the twelve Crowns were paid. The Quest came in, and said, *Not guilty*. But it was observed, that some of the Bench were afterwards hanged, as a Judgment of God upon them for perverting Justice. Another Murderer was a Woman, that brought forth three Bastard Children at a Birth. She wrung their Necks, and cast them into a Water, and so killed her Children. But being arraigned at the Bar for it, she was brought in, *Not guilty*, tho' her Neighbours, upon Suspicion, caused her to be examined, and she granted all. But the Judge was bribed. And yet at the same Sessions a poor Woman was hanged for stealing a few Rags off an Hedge, that were not worth a Crown. Another Time a Gentleman was indicted for Murder: this Man was a Professor of the Word of God, and fared, probably, the worse



worse for that. He was cast into Prison; but persisted in it, that he had no hand in that Murder. Yet he was arraigned at the Bar for it, and condemned. Suit was made for his Pardon, but it could not be gotten. The Sheriffs, or some others, bare him no good Will. And he died for it. Afterward *Latimer*, being in the *Tower*, and having leave to come to the Lieutenant's Table, heard him say, that a Man was hanged afterward, that killed the same Man, for whom this Gentleman was put to Death.

ANNO

1553.

The Nation now became scandalous also for the Frequency of *Divorces*. especially among the Richer Sort. Men would be divorced from their Wives, with whom they had lived many Years, and by whom they had Children; that they might satisfy their Lusts with other Women, whom they began to like better than their own present Wives. That which gave occasion also to these Divorces was, the Covetousness of the Nobility and Gentry, who used often to marry their Children when they were young, Boys and Girls; that they might join Land to Land, Possession to Possession, neither Learning, nor virtuous Education, nor Suitableness of Tempers and Dispositions, regarded. And so when the married Persons came afterwards to be grown up, they disliked many times each other, and then Separation and Divorce, and matching to others, that better liked them, followed; to the Breach of Espousals, and the Displeasure of God.

Divorces.

These Divorces, and *Whoredoms* (a great Cause of them) had especially stained the last Reign, and introduced themselves into this: And prevailed so much, that the Compilers of the Book of *Homilies* thought convenient to frame one Homily against Whoredom and Adultery. Which, how it spread, and what Sense was then generally had of it, may appear by the Beginning of that Homily: 'That tho' there were great Swarms of Vices worthy to be rebuked, yet above all other Vices, the outrageous Seas of Adultery, or breaking of Wedlock, Whoredom, Fornication and Uncleanneſs, have burst in, and overspread all the World: And that it was grown to such an height, that in a manner among some, it was counted no Sin at all, but rather a Pastime, a Dalliance; not rebuked, but winked at; not punished, but laughed at. Therefore the Homily was composed to declare the Greatness of this Sin; how odious and abominable before God, and all good Men; how grievously it hath been punished, both by the Law of God, and divers Princes: And to shew a certain Remedy to escape this detestable Sin.' In the second Part of this Homily, the Writer speaks of Divorces, that then were so common, and shewed the Occasion of them: 'Of this Vice [of Whoredom] cometh a great Part of the Divorces, which now adays be so common, accustomed, and used by Mens private Authority, to the great Displeasure of God, and the Breach of the most holy Knot and Band of Matrimony. For when this most detestable Sin is once so crept into the Breast of the Adulterer, so that he is intangled with unlawful and unchaste Love, straightway his true and lawful Wife is despised, her Presence is abhorred, her Company stinketh, and is loathsome, whatsoever she doth is dispraised: There is no Quietness in the House, so long as she is in Sight. Therefore to make short work, she must away, for her Husband can brook her no longer. Thus thro' Whoredom is the honest and harmless Wife put away, and a Harlot

Adulteries.



ANNO  
1553.

Contentions.

received in her Stead. And in like manner it happeneth many times in the Wife towards her Husband.

*Contention about Religion*, reading the Scripture, and maintaining Doctrines out of it, true or false, with the greatest Stiffness one against another, was another Vice in this Reign. Which was the Cause of framing another Homily, viz. against Contention and Brawling. For too many there were, as that Homily expresseth it, which upon the Ale-bench, or other Places, delighted to set forth certain Questions, not so much pertaining to Edification, as to Vainglory, and shewing forth their Cunning; and so unsoberly to reason and dispute, that when neither Part would give place to other, they fall to Chiding and Contention; and sometimes from hot Words to further Inconvenience.

Law Suits.

It was a contentious Age, and People seemed to quarrel for Trifles, and often would run to the Law to vex each other. One Law-suit was commenced upon this ridiculous Occasion: The Owner of an Horse told his Friend, that he should have him, if he would. The other asked the Price. He said, twenty Nobles. The other would give him but four Pounds. The Owner said, he should not have it then. But the other claimed the Horse, because he said, he should have it, if he would. This Bargain became a *Westminster* Matter. The Lawyers got twice the Value of the Horse: And when all came to all, two Fools made an end of the Matter, as *Latymer*, according to his manner of speaking, told the King in one of his Sermons.

The Clergy.

The Clergy also were now generally very bad, from the Bishops to the Curates. As to the Bishops, tho' some of them were learned and conscientious, yet the rest, and the greater Part were such, that there could be no good *Disciplin* exercised, for the Restraint of Sin, and for the due Correction of Swearing, Rioting, Neglect of God's Word, and other scandalous Vices. Of the need of *Disciplin*, and of the Danger or Insignificancy of committing it to the Bishops, the good King was very sensible; as appears by that wise Discourse of his, which he wrote,

Disciplin.

I suppose, in the Year 1552. Wherein he saith, 'That it were very good that *Disciplin* went forth,—so that those that should be the Executors of it were Men of tried Honesty, Wisdom, and Judgment. But because those Bishops, who should execute it, some for Papistry, some for Ignorance, some for Age, some for their ill Name, some for all these, are Men unable to execute *Disciplin*, it is therefore a thing unmeet for these Men. Wherefore it were necessary, that those that be appointed to be Bishops, were honest in Life, and learned in their Doctrin: that by rewarding such Men, others might be allured to follow their good Life.' Therefore for the present, he resolved to set up *Disciplin*, and yet to keep it out of the hands of ill Bishops. As one of this King's Memorials for Religion, wrote in *October*, 1552. assures us: wherein he made a *Memorandum* 'For Commissions to be granted to those Bishops that were Grave, Learned, Wise, Sober, and of good Religion, for the executing of *Disciplin*.' And the Bishops had exercised so much Dominion, and Rigor, and been such *Papalins*, that the very Name of *Bishop* grew odious among the People, and the Word *Superintendent* began to be affected, and come in the room; and the rather, perhaps, being a Word used in the Protestant Churches of *Germany*.

Bishops called  
Superintendents.

This



This the Papists made Sport with. But see what favourable Construc-  
tion one, who was a Bishop himself, put upon this Practice, and the  
Reason he assigned hereof: ANNO  
1553.

Who knoweth not that the Name *Bishop* hath been so abused, that  
when it was spoken, the People understood nothing else but a great  
Lord, that went in a white Rochet, with a wide shaven Crown, and  
that carried an Oil-box with him, wherewith he used once in seven  
Years, riding about, to *Confirm* Children, &c. Now to bring the  
People from this Abuse, what better means can be devised, than to  
teach the People their Error by another Word out of the Scripture of  
the same Signification. Which thing by the Term, *Superintendent*,  
would in Time have been well brought to pass: For the ordinary  
Pains of such as were called Superintendents, to understand the Duty  
of their Bishops, which the Papists would fain have hidden from them;  
and the Word *Superintendent* being a very *Latin* Word, made *English*  
by us, should in Time have taught the People, by the very Etymology  
and proper Signification, what thing was meant, when they heard that  
Name, which by this Term *Bishop*, could not so well be done: by  
reason that Bishops, in Time of Popery, were *Overseers* in Name, but  
not in Deed. I deny not, as that notable Man proceeded, That that  
Name *Bishop* may be well taken, but because the Evilness of the  
Abuse hath marred the Goodness of the Word, it cannot be denied  
but that it was not amiss to join for a Time another Word with it in  
his place, whereby to restore that abused Word to his right Significa-  
tion. And the Word, *Superintendent*, is such a Name, that the Pa-  
pists themselves, (saving such as lack both Learning and Wit) cannot  
find fault withal. And then he quoted *Peregrinus* the *Spaniard*, and an  
Arch Papist, out of whom *Martin* had stolen a great Part of his Book;  
who speaking of a Bishop, saith, '*Primum Episcopi munus nomen ipsum  
præ se fert, quod est Superintendere. Episcopus enim Superintendens  
interpretatur.*' So *Ponet*. To the same Purpose *Tindal* before him, And why.  
Ponet in An-  
swer to Dr.  
Martin.  
in his Notes upon that in *Timothy*, *He that desireth the Office of a Bishop,  
desireth a good Work*: '*Bishop*, saith he, is as much as to say, a *Seer*  
to, or a Taker heed to, or an *Overseer*; which, when he desireth, to  
feed Christ's Flock with the Food of Health, that is, with his holy  
Word, as the Bishops did in *Paul's* Time, desireth the good Work, and  
the very Office of a Bishop. But he that desireth Honour, gapeth for  
Lucre, thirsteth great Rents and Heart's Ease, Castles, Parks, Lord-  
ships, Earldoms, &c. desireth not a good Work, and is nothing less  
than a Bishop, as *S. Paul* here understands a Bishop.

The *Curates* were both ignorant, and scandalous for their ill Lives. Tindal's Ex-  
position of  
Bishop.  
The People in many Places did withhold their Tithes from them; and  
the Reason they gave was, because their Curates, some were ignorant,  
and some were idle, and took little Care and Pains in their Cures, and  
many of them so intolerably bad, lazy, and wicked, that the Parishon-  
ers oftentimes complained, and brought Informations against them to the  
Bishops of the Dioceses, nay, to the Council. They would ordinarily  
say, *Our Curate is naught, an Assbeard, a Dodipot, a Lack-Latine, and  
can do nothing. Shall I pay him Tith, that doth us no good, nor none  
will do?* The Fault of this lay much in Patrons: Many whereof would  
chuse such Curates for their Souls, as they might call Fools, rather than  
such



ANNO

1553.

Chauntry  
Priests.

such as would rebuke their Covetousness, Ambition, Unmercifulness, and Uncharitableness; that would be sober, discreet, apt to reprove, and resist the Gainsayers with the Word of God. Another Evil in the Clergy now adays was, that Chauntry Priests, out of good Husbandry, to save the King a little Money, were taken into Dignities and Places Ecclesiastical; who generally were Persons addicted to the old Superstitions, notwithstanding their outward Compliance. For these, when put out of their Places, had Pensions allowed them for their Subsistence. But as King *Henry*, to save his Pensions, preferred these Abbots and Priors of dissolved Monasteries to Bishoprics, and other good Places in the Church, however otherwise unqualified sometimes: So now under King *Edward*, there were Whisperings of saving much Money that way, which went out in Pensions to the Chauntry Priests, the Chauntries having been given by the Parliament to this King.

The Clergy  
take Secular  
Places.

The Clergy also were much cried out against, for thrusting themselves so much into secular Offices, to the great Neglect of their respective Cures. For as it was in King *Henry's* Days, so it continued in King *Edward's*, that many of the Prelates, and inferior Clergy, were constituted in secular Employments. Which the soberer Part of the Nation much disliked. Because by this means their Flocks were left without due Care of them. They lived in such high State, and in so much Grandeur, as did not become such as were devoted to God and the Church. Many occupied in the King's Affairs; some were Ambassadors; and some, of the Privy Council; and some furnished the Court; and some were Presidents, [so was *Lee*, Bishop of *Litchfield* and *Conventry*, President of *Wales*] and one, Comptroller of the Mint. Which

A Priest  
Comptroller  
of the Mint.

stuck so much in old *Latimer's* Crop, that in a Sermon preached in the Shrouds at *S. Paul's*, he exclaimed against them all, but especially against this Comptroller: 'Should we, said he, have Ministers of the Church to be Comptrollers of the Mint? Is this a meet Office for a Priest that hath Cure of Souls? I would here ask one Question, I would fain know, who comptrolleth the Devil at home in his Parish, while he comptrolleth the Mint? If the Apostle might not leave his Office of Preaching to be Deacon, shall one leave it for Minting? I cannot tell you, but the Saying is, that since Priests have been Minters, Money hath been worse than it was before; and they say, that the Illness of Money hath made all Things dearer.'

The Ignorance of the  
Nobility,  
made it necessary to  
prefer the  
Clergy.

But the Reason of this placing Religious Men in Secular Offices, was indeed, because the Laity, both Nobility and Gentry, were not fit for such Places. They were bred up in so much Ignorance and Idleness, that the King was forced to employ the Clergy, among whom was the Learning, and the best Abilities. And this made the foresaid good old Father again to upbraid *England* for their Nobility. '*England*, I speak it to thy Shame, is there never a Nobleman to be Lord President, but it must be a Prelate? Is there never a wise Man in the Realm to be Comptroller of the Mint?' Then he asketh this Question, 'Why are not the Noblemen and young Gentlemen of *England* brought up in a Knowledge of God, and in Learning, that they may be able to execute Offices in the Commonweal? He advised, That as the King had a great many *Wards*, that there might be a School

for



for the Wards, as well as there is a *Court* for their Lands. He was *ANNO*  
for their being set to School, and sent to Universities, that they might *1553.*  
be able to serve the King, when they came to Age. The Benefit of  
this would be, that the Gentry would not give themselves so much to  
Vanity; and the common People would be better. For they were  
bad by following them. Therefore he exhorted much to have Teach-  
ers and Schoolmasters set up and encouraged by Stipends worthy  
their Pains. He would have them brought up in *Logic*, in *Rhetoric*,  
in *Philosophy*, in the *Civil Law*, and especially in the Word of  
God.

Thus it was in the latter Part of the Reign of King *Henry*; but since King *Edward* came to the Crown, these Things began in a great mea-  
sure to be remedied. They began to be brought up in Learning and  
Godliness, to the great Joy and Comfort of *England*: So *Latymer*, in  
Place abovementioned, observed. 'So that there was now good Hopes,  
' he said, that we shall another Day have a flourishing Commonweal,  
' considering their godly Education. Yea, that there were already  
' Nobles enough, tho' not so many as he would wish, fit to be put into  
' Places of Trust.'

But to return to the Clergy again. Among the rest of whose Faults, The Habit  
must be added, their Affectation of going too costly in their Apparel. of the Cler-  
Some of them ware Velvet Shoes, and Velvet Slippers. 'Such Fel-  
lows, saith our old *Cato*, were more fit to dance the Morice Dance,  
' than to be admitted to preach.' We may conclude, the rest of their  
Habit was agreeable to that Piece of it.



CHAP.



ANNO

1553.

## C H A P. XXIV.

*Observations concerning Patrons; the Universities;  
the City and Court. Taxes in this Reign.*

HAVING taken some View of the Nobility, Gentry, and Clergy in these Times, let us proceed to make our Observations of Patrons, of the Universities, the City, the Court, and so make an End of this Book.

Patrons.

*Patrons* did shamefully abuse their Benefices, sometimes by selling them to such as would or could give Money for them, or other Consideration: Sometimes they would Fee-farm them. Inso much that when any afterward should have the Benefice, there was neither House to dwell in, nor Glebe-land to keep Hospitality. But the Curate was fain to take up his Chamber in an Ale-house, and there sit, and play at Tables all Day.

Universities.

Very ill also was the State of the *Universities* now. Here was a mighty Decay. *Latymer* conjectured, that there were Ten thousand Students less than there was within twenty Years before. The Reason whereof was, because the Revenues of the Church were gone away to Laymen, and so little Encouragement for the Students in Divinity. He prayed the King therefore, that he would take order, that Preaching might not decay. For that if it did, Ignorance and Brutishness would enter again. Those that were in *Cambridge*, very few of them studied Divinity: no more but just that Number that of Necessity must furnish the Colleges, according to the Statutes. And the Livings there were so small, and Victuals so dear, that they tarried not there, but went elsewhere to seek Livings. And only Great Men's Sons remained in the Colleges, whose Fathers intended them not for Preachers. So that the said Father feared, it would come to pass, that they should have nothing but a little *English* Divinity, and that the Realm would be brought into very Barbarousness, and utter Decay of Learning. And then he added, 'It is not that, I wish, that will keep out the Supremacy of the Bishop of Rome.' Upon this, he made a Suit to his Auditors, 'That they would bestow so much to the finding of Scholars of good Wits, being the Sons of poor Men, to exercise the Office of Salvation, [he means preaching God's Word] as they were wont to bestow in Pilgrimage-matters, in Trentals, in Masses, in Pardons, and Purgatory-matters.'

City of London.

But let us leave these Places of Learning, and go elsewhere, and look upon the great Metropolis of *England*, the City of *London*: Which was much degenerated, especially at the Beginning of this King's Reign. In Times past, the Citizens were full of Pity and Compassion; and when Churchmen died, they were wont to appoint some Share of their Estate in Exhibition, for the Maintenance of poor Scholars in the Universities, and for the Relief of the Poor. But now the Poor died in the Streets for Cold, and laid sick at their Doors, and perished for Hunger. And



And one Reason of this Plenty of miserable Objects in *London* was, the Destruction of Tillage in the Country, and the demolishing Cottages there. Whereby it came to pass, that the Poor had neither Work nor Harbour. And so having no Subsistence in the Countries, they were fain to come up to get Bread, or beg for it in the City. Which made *Thomas Lever*, a very grave Preacher, in a Sermon before a solemn Auditory, cry out, 'O merciful Lord! what a number of Poor, Feeble, Halt, Blind, Lame, Sickly, yea, with idle Vagabonds, and dissembing Caitiffs mixt among them, lie and creep begging in the miry Streets of *London* and *Westminster*? It is a common Custom with covetous Landlords, to let their Housing so decay, that the Farmer shall be fain for a small Regard, or none at all, to give up his Lease; that they taking the Grounds into their own Hands, may turn all to Pastures. So now old Fathers, poor Widows, and young Children, lie begging in the miry Streets.'

ANNO  
1553.  
Pestered  
with Beg-  
gars.

And when *Latymer* was so curious to make Inquiry, what Helps for poor Students were now distributed and sent to the Universities, he could hear of little or none; nor of such Gifts of Charity bequeathed by the Richer Sort at their Deaths, as was wont before to be. *London* also had enjoyed the Preaching of the Gospel in King *Henry's* Time, more than any other Place in the Nation, and there sprang up a great Harvest of Gospellers here. But the City shewed itself little addicted to Religion, and too much addicted to Superstition, to Pride, to Malice, to Cruelty, and Uncharitableness. The latter End of the Reign of King *Henry*, when the Papists swayed all, had a mighty Influence upon the City. So that there was a kind of Apostacy among the *Londoners*. Which made old *Latymer*, so often quoted before, in a Sermon preached at the Shrouds in *S. Paul's* before the Citizens, cry out, O *London*, *London*, Repent, Repent. And such was the Vanity, and Fickleness, and Pride of the Inhabitants, that another Preacher stiled them *Butterflies*, rather than *Burgessees*.

Decayed in  
their Charity.

But this made them clamour much against the Preachers, for disparaging them. *Latymer* came up not long after, and vindicated that Preacher; speaking thus: 'What ado there hath been in *London* against this Man, for what he said but too justly. And would God they were no worse than Butterflies. Butterflies do but their Nature. The Butterfly is not covetous, is not greedy of other Men's Goods, is not full of Envy and Hatred, is not malicious, is not cruel. [Meaning to charge all this upon the Citizens.] The Butterfly glorieth not in her own Works, nor preferreth the Traditions of Men before God's; committeth not Idolatry, nor worshippeth false Gods. But *London* cannot abide to be rebuked: Such is the Nature of Man, if they be pricked they will kick; if they be rubbed on the Gall, they will wince. *London* was never so evil as it is now.' And to the Scandal of the Reformation, there were more loose Houses in *London*, now in King *Edward's* Days, than ever were before. The Bank [in *Southwark*] when it stood, was never so common for Whoredom, as the City now. And it went unpunished. And so shameful and wicked were many grown, that some thought a wonder, that *London* did not sink, and the Earth gape and swallow it up.

The Citizens  
compared to  
Butterflies.



ANNO  
1553.

Loose Houses  
in London.

Shooting in  
the Bow.

The Court.

Some wrong  
the King.

This Uncleanneſs was chiefly confined unto certain Places, that were called *Privileged Places*, where Men might ſin with Impunity; that is, where the Lord Maior had nothing to do, and the Sheriffs could not meddle, and the Queſt did not make Inquiry. There Men brought their Whores, yea, and other Men's Wives. Here ſometimes was Blood ſhed, in Quarrels about Women. A *Spaniard* killed an *Engliſh* Man, by running him thro' with his Sword, about a Whore; but the *Spaniard* eſcaped hanging. Here alſo were Dicing-Houſes, where idle People uſed to play, and ſpend their Patrimony: And here many other Follies were committed. So that the manly Exerciſes that uſed to be among *Engliſh* Men without Doors and Abroad, began to be laid aſide, and turned into gloſing, gulling, and whoring within Doors. And particularly, that Exerciſe of Shooting, for which this Nation had been ſo famous. This Shooting was in Time paſt much eſteemed in this Realm. ' It is a Gift of God, ſaid *Latimer*, that he hath given us to excel all ' other Nations withal. It hath been God's Inſtrument, whereby he ' hath given us many Victories againſt our Enemies. And every Man ' in former Times, uſed to teach his Children the Practice of it, or to ' make them practice it; as the Law alſo enjoined this Shooting in the ' Bow. He ſpoke of his Father, that he was as diligent to teach him ' to ſhoot, as to learn him any other thing. He taught him how to ' draw, how to lay his Body in his Bow, and not to draw with Strength ' of Arms, as other Nations do, but with Strength of the Body. And ' he had his Bowes brought him according to his Age and Strength: ' and as he increaſed in them, ſo his Bowes were made bigger and bigger. For Men could never ſhoot well, except they were brought up ' to it. It is a goodly Art, ſaid he, a whoſome kind of Exerciſe, and ' much commended in Phyſic. And he urged the Magiſtrates, even ' from the Pulpit, and that in the Reverence of God, that a Proclamation might go forth, charging the Juſtices of Peace, that they ſaw ſuch ' Acts and Statutes kept, as were made for this Purpoſe.'

From the City let us repair to the *Court*. Here indeed was an excellent King, but he was a *Minor*; and ſo was too much impoſed upon by his Courtiers and Officers, who grew rich under him, while he grew poor. Inſomuch that he ran into Debt, and could not pay what he ought. Poor Artificers came for Money for the Works they had done for him, and went away without it. For the King's Officers did ſo rake and ſcrape to themſelves, that without liberal Gratifications, no Money would be parted with. Thoſe that had Accounts to make to the King for Monies received for the King's Uſe, uſed to defalcate a Part, and put it into their own Pockets: and thoſe that took their Accounts were gratified, and ſo they paſſed their Accounts, without any further Examination. Theſe things the King's Preacher (ſo often mentioned before) knowing well enough, by his Converſe with the beſt of the Court, plainly acquainted the King with, in his laſt Sermon before him, which was in the Year 1550. Where in his own Perſon he glanceth at ſome about the King. ' I will become the King's Officer for a while. I have to ' lay out for the King 2000 Pounds, or a great Sum, whatſoever it be. ' Well, when I have laid it out, and do bring in my Account, I muſt ' give 300 Mark to [have] my Bills warranted. If I have done truly ' and uprightly, what ſhould need me to give a Penny to my Bills warranted?'



‘ranted? Sinell you nothing in this? What needeth a Bribe-giving, ANNO  
 ‘except the Bills be false? Well, such Practice hath been in *England*; 1553.  
 ‘but beware; it will out one Day. Beware of God’s Proverb, *There is*  
 ‘*nothing bidden, that shall not be opened.* And here now I speak to you,  
 ‘my Master Minters, Augmentationers, Receivers, Surveyors, Audi-  
 ‘tors; I make a Petition to you, I beseech you all, be good to the King.  
 ‘He hath been good to you; therefore be ye good to him. Yea, be  
 ‘good to your own Souls. Ye are known well enough, what ye were  
 ‘afore ye came to your Offices, and what Lands ye had then, and what  
 ‘ye have purchased since, and what Buildings ye make daily. Well,  
 ‘I pray ye so build, that the King’s Workmen may be paid. They  
 ‘make their moans, that they can get no Money. The poor Labourers,  
 ‘Gun-makers, Powder-makers, Bow-makers, Arrow-makers, Smiths,  
 ‘Carpenters, Soldiers, and other Crafts, cry out for their Dues. They  
 ‘be unpaid some of them, three or four Months; yea, some of them  
 ‘half a Year; yea, and some of them put up Bills this Time Twelve-  
 ‘month for their Money, and cannot be paid yet. It seems illfavour-  
 ‘edly, that ye should have enough wherewith to build superfluously,  
 ‘and the King lack to pay his poor Labourers.’

Some of these Cozeners of the King in their Offices under him, were Some make  
the King’s  
Restitution.  
 so touched in Conscience, that they, privately some, and some openly,  
 made Restitution to him. And that, chiefly, upon occasion of a Sermon  
 preached by *Latymer* at the Court. About the Year 1548. in *Lent*, he  
 preached upon making *Restitution*: and that they who had wronged the  
 King, must make *Restitution*, or else *they would go to the Devil*, to use  
 his plain *English*. Some indeed, and I suppose the most Part, were an-  
 gry with him for his Sermon. ‘Let him preach Contrition, said they,  
 ‘and let Restitution alone. We can never make Restitution.’ But some  
 were better touched in Conscience. So that one came privately to him,  
 and acknowledged he had deceived the King, and sent *Latymer* that *Lent*  
 in Part of his Restitution, twenty Pounds, to be restored to the King’s  
 Use; and promised twenty Pounds more that *Lent*. But it came not;  
 but the *Lent* after, he sent the twenty Pounds, and three hundred Pounds  
 more with it. And *Latymer* paid it into the King’s Council. And the  
 third *Lent*, the same sent in an hundred and eighty Pounds ten Shillings  
 more. Which *Latymer* paid also into the King’s Council. And so, ac-  
 cording to his Judgment, he made a godly Restitution. The Council  
 asked him, who this was; but he concealed him. And *Latymer* con-  
 jectured, that if every one would make such Restitution, it would amount  
 to 20000 Pounds. Nay, said another, an whole 100000 Pounds. Ano-  
 ther, named *Sbarington*, came and made open Restitution. Whom there-  
 fore *Latymer* called, an honest Gentleman, and one that God loved. He  
 openly confessed, that he had deceived the King, and he made open Re-  
 stitution. This was Sir *William Sbarington*; of whom before.

*Money* was coined about the Year 1549. in Quantity less than the Corruption  
in Coinage.  
 current Money was before, and yet in Value the same. Herein again  
 was a great Cheat put upon the Subject by the Minters. Which made  
 old *Latymer* in the Pulpit (who would take that Opportunity to speak  
 his Mind to the King) give a Nip at this new coined Money. ‘We have  
 ‘now a pretty little Shilling; in very deed a pretty one. I have but  
 ‘one, I think, in my Purse, and the last Day I had put it away almost



**ANNO** ' for an old Groat, [that being as big as this new Shilling] and so, I  
**1553.** ' trust, some will take them. The Fineness of the Silver I cannot see,  
 ' [which was the Pretence, that the Shilling was less in Quantity] but  
 ' therein is printed a fine Sentence, [which was to make amends for the  
 ' Smallness of it] *Timor Domini fons Vitæ vel Sapientie.* Which was  
 the Motto of this Coin.

The King  
 wronged in  
 his Subsidies.

And when to help the King's Necessities, certain Taxes were laid up-  
 on the Subjects, they found out Shifts to cheat the King, and to save  
 their own Purfes: So that his Taxes fell much, of what was expected  
 to be brought in. About the Year 1549. or 1550. there was a Tax,  
 that every Man should pay the Fifteenth Part of his Goods to the King.  
 But when the Commissioners were sent abroad to take the Value of eve-  
 ry Man's Estate, each did exceedingly undervalue what he was truly  
 worth, and gave a false Estimate. And he that was worth in Cattel,  
 Corn, Sheep, and other Goods, 100 Marks, or 100 Pounds, would  
 give himself in to be worth 10 Pounds. Another, that was worth 200  
 Pounds, besides Money and Plate, and married his Daughter, and gave  
 with her 4 or 500 Marks, yet at the Valuation was set but at 20 Pounds.  
 Which, it seems, was an old Trick. For in the Cardinal's Time, for the  
 preventing of it, Men were put to their Oaths, to swear, what they were  
 worth. ' O Lord, saith *Latymer*, what Perjury was in *England* by  
 ' that Swearing? For, doubtless, many one wittingly and willingly  
 ' forswore themselves at that Time. Which Course that Father there-  
 ' fore called a *fore Thing*, and would not wish to be followed. He  
 knew it would tend more to the King's Advantage, and to the Safety of  
 his Subjects, to make them honest and true, than to administer to them  
 an Oath.

*Latymer's*  
 Sermon at  
 Stamford.

Bribery.

**Bribery** was also very rife, both for Ecclesiastical Benefices, and Civil  
 Offices and Places. Many indeed would seem to refuse any Gifts, when  
 brought to them; but some that were Dependents, would receive them  
 readily enough, for their Masters Use and Service. Judges Wives  
 would sometimes take Bribes. They had Servants *A Muneribus*, as *La-*  
*tymer* stiled them. Such a Servant would say, If you come to my Ma-  
 ster, and offer him a Yoke of Oxen, you shall speed never the worse;  
 but, I think, my Master will take none. When the Party had offered  
 something to the Master, and he denied to take it, then came another  
 Servant, and saith, If you will bring it to the Clerk of the Kitchen, you  
 shall be remembered the better. Which was like the Friars *Observant*,  
 that would be seen to receive no Bribes themselves, but had others to  
 receive them for them.

Abuses.

In short, in the Court they took Bribes: In the Country they op-  
 pressed the Poor, by raising their Rents, taking Usury, even to Forty  
*per Cent.* Landlords turned Graziers, and bought up the Grain, to sell  
 dear against a hard Time. In the City they bought up Wood and Coals.  
 Some Burgesses became Regrators also, and some Farmers regrated and  
 bought up all the Corn in the Markets, and laid it up in Store, to sell it  
 again at a higher Price, when they saw their Time. There was a Mer-  
 chant, that had travelled all the Days of his Life in the Trade of Mer-  
 chandize, and had got 3 or 4000 Pounds by buying and selling: But  
 in case he might have been licensed to practise *Regrating*, he would un-  
 dertake to get 1000 Pounds a Year, only by buying and selling Grain  
 here



here within the Realm. And in *London* there were some Aldermen, *ANNO*  
that became *Colliers* and *Woodmongers*. So that there could not a poor *1553.*  
Body buy a Sack of Coals, but it must come thro' their Hands. Which  
made our Preacher sue to King *Edward*, that there might be *Promoters*,  
such as were in King *Henry's* Days, to *promote* [that is, inform against]  
the King's own Officers, when they did amiss; and to promote all other  
Offenders: such as Rent-raisers, Oppressors of the Poor, Extortioners,  
Bribers, Usurers. But he would have them to be of godly Discretion,  
Wisdom, and Conscience.

One great Reason of all these Abuses, Corruptions, and gross Impie-  
ties, that reigned now in the Nation, was, the Neglect of *Ecclesiastical* Want of Di-  
*Disciplin*: which the Churchmen either could not, or would not, exe-  
cute against Immoralities. The Manners of Men were very bad. And  
upon occasion of the Sins of Uncleanness, (for which the Nation was  
very infamous, and especially *London*, and such Letchery as was used  
in none other Places of the World, and yet made but a matter of Sport)  
hereupon good Men wished, that the Law of *Moses* might be brought  
into force, for the Punishment of this Sin. And *Latimer* applied him-  
self to the King, to restore Disciplin unto the Church: 'That such as  
' were notable Offenders might be excommunicated, and put from the  
' Congregation, till they be confounded. Which would be a Means,  
' said he, to pacify God's Wrath and Indignation against us, and also  
' that less Abominations be practised than in Times past have been, and  
' are at this Day. Bring into the Church of *England* that open Disci-  
' plin of *Excommunication*, saith he, that open Sinners may be stricken  
' withal.'

And thus we have taken a Sight, how dissolute these Times were. These Times  
Not that these Days of King *Edward* were worse than the former; and the for-  
mer com-  
pared.  
but that now, upon the Light of the Gospel, these Wickednesses, that  
were not so much regarded before, were now more observed. So the  
Writer of the Epistle Dedicatory to *Erasmus's* Paraphrase in *English*:  
' Because it is in so great a manner amended, look where such Corrup-  
' tion still remaineth, there doth it better and more notably appear; as  
' strange Things are commonly more wondred at. For all good and  
' godly Folks do now wonder, that God's Word being spread abroad,  
' and being now almost in everybody's Hand and Mouth so common,  
' there should be any Creature, in whom any of the Enormities afore-  
' mentioned should reign.' For tho' these Times were bad, yet they  
were better than the Times before. So the aforesaid Writer, concerning  
the Beginning of King *Edward's* Reign: 'Of this young and green Foun-  
' dation, being yet very newly laid, thus much good Edifying hath al-  
' ready grown in all Persons Consciences, that Blasphemy, Perjury,  
' Theft, Whoredom, making of Affrayes, and other Abominations, are  
' more detested, than they were in the blind World, very late Years gone.'  
And again, 'A great many that have hated Matrimony, and yet have  
' not hated Fornication, Incest, Advontry, begin now to abhor, and  
' manifestly to fly these, and other like Pestilences, and exercise the  
' Contraries.'

The Taxes that happened in this King's Reign, and Monies given Taxes.  
him by Parliament, may not be improper to be here set down, for the  
letting in some farther Light into this History. And to do this, I shall  
but



ANNO but transcribe a brief Computation thereof, done to my Hand by Sir  
1553. *Walter Raleigh.*

Prerogative  
of Parlia-  
ments.

In the second Year of King *Edward VI.* the Parliament gave the King an Aid of twelve Pence the Pound, of Goods of his natural Subjects, and two Shillings the Pound, of Strangers. And this to continue for three Years. And by the Statute of the Second and Third of *Edw. VI.* it may appear, the same Parliament did also give a second Aid, as followeth; to wit, Of every Ewe, kept in several Pastures, three Pence; of every Weather, kept as aforesaid, two Pence; of every Sheep kept in the Common, three Halfpence. The House gave the King also eight Pence the Pound, of every Woolen Cloth made for the Sale throughout *England*, for three Years. In the Third and Fourth of the King, by reason of the troublesome gathering of the Pole-money upon Sheep, and the Tax upon Cloth, this Act of Subsidy was repealed, and other Relief given the King. And in the seventh Year, he had a Subsidy, and two Fifteenths.

The Expences  
of the  
Houhold.  
MSS. penes  
me.

I will add here, the Sum of the Charges of the King's Houhold for one Week, begining *Sunday, Decemb. 29.* in the third Year of his Reign. Which were as follow:

|                    | <i>l.</i> | <i>s.</i> | <i>d.</i> |
|--------------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|
| The Charges of the |           |           |           |
| Houhold on         |           |           |           |
| <i>Sunday,</i>     | 149       | 19        | 09 ob. q. |
| <i>Monday,</i>     | 131       | 01        | 08 ob. q. |
| <i>Tuesday,</i>    | 129       | 03        | 10 ob.    |
| <i>Wednesday,</i>  | 164       | 12        | 09 ob.    |
| <i>Thursday,</i>   | 151       | 16        | 03        |
| <i>Friday,</i>     | 126       | 17        | 06        |
| <i>Saturday,</i>   | 149       | 11        | 00        |

Sum total 1003 02 11 ob.

The Charges of the Houhold for one Week, begining *Sunday, March 16.* in the same third Year of the King, were as follow:

|                    | <i>l.</i> | <i>s.</i> | <i>d.</i> |
|--------------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|
| The Charges of the |           |           |           |
| Houhold on         |           |           |           |
| <i>Sunday,</i>     | 124       | 07        | 04        |
| <i>Monday,</i>     | 117       | 19        | 00 q.     |
| <i>Tuesday,</i>    | 112       | 00        | 06 ob.    |
| <i>Wednesday,</i>  | 114       | 19        | 03        |
| <i>Thursday,</i>   | 117       | 19        | 11 ob.    |
| <i>Friday,</i>     | 118       | 18        | 04        |
| <i>Saturday,</i>   | 122       | 01        | 07        |

Sum total 828 06 00 q.

I subjoin the Expences of the King's Houhold yearly; which were as follow:

The last half Year of King *Henry VIII.*

28080 *l.* 14 *s.* 2 *d.* ob.

And the first half Year of King *Edward VI.* 21107 *l.* 4 *s.* 6 *d.*

In all for one whole Year } 49187 18 08 ob.

The



|                                                     | l.     | s. | d.      | ANNO  |
|-----------------------------------------------------|--------|----|---------|-------|
| The second whole Year of King <i>Edward's</i> Reign | 46902  | 07 | 03      | 1553. |
| The third Year of his Reign - - - - -               | 46100  | 03 | 11ob.q. |       |
| The fourth Year of his Reign - - - - -              | 100578 | 16 | 04ob.   |       |
| The fifth Year of his Reign - - - - -               | 62863  | 09 | 01ob.q. |       |
| The sixth Year of his Reign - - - - -               | 65923  | 16 | 04 q.   |       |

During these three last Years of the King, his Prerogative [of taking up Provisions, I suppose, at an easy Rate] ceased. Which heightened the Account of his Household Expences.

To fill up this Work, and for a Conclusion of these Historical Collections, as I have hitherto endeavoured to give some Account of *Things* and *Matters* remarkable, so I shall set before the Reader the *Men*, whether in State or Church, of most Eminence for their Honours, Qualities, or Trusts committed to them: and that under several distinct Ranks and Orders, as follows:

## CHAP. XXV.

### Creations. The King's Counsellors. Courtiers, and great Officers.

**T**HIS Chapter shall shew what Creations of Noblemen happened in this Reign, and give a Catalogue of the Names of the King's Counsellors, Lords Lieutenants of the Counties, and most of the chief Officers of the Household, or otherwise.

I. For the Creations of Nobility by this King, I am beholden both to *Noblemen* a *Manuscript* of the Right Reverend Father *John*, late Lord Bishop of *Ely*, and likewise to the Office of Heralds. The Nobles created by him were Seventeen.

#### DUKES.

1. *Edward Seymor* Earl of *Hertford*, and Viscount *Beauchamp*. Created Duke of *Somerset*, Feb. 12. 1546. And had Issue *Edward* Earl of *Hertford*.

2. *Henry Grey* Marquis of *Dorset*, Lord *Ferrys* of *Groby*, *Harrington*, *Bonvyle*, and *Aystley*. Created Duke of *Suffolk*, Octob. 11. 1551. He had *Henry* Lord *Harrington*, who died without Issue, and three Daughters.

3. *John Dudley* Viscount *Lysle*, Baron of *Somerye*, *Basset*, and *Teyes*, and Lord *Dudley*. Created Duke of *Northumberland*, Octob. 11. 1551. Earl of *Warwic*, Feb. 17. 1546. Then made High Chamberlain of *England*. Made Earl Marshal of *England* in the 5th of *Edw. VI.* Apr. 20. Had Issue *Ambrose* Earl of *Warwic*, and *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*, and other Sons. He bore a Crescent for Distinction in his Armes.

MAR-



## MARQUISSES.

4. *William Par*, Lord *Par* of *Kendal*, *Marmyon*, and *S. Quimin*. Created Marquis of *Northampton* by King *Edward VI.* Feb. 17. 1546. And Earl of *Essex* by King *Henry VIII.* And died without Issue.

5. *William Paulet* Lord *S. John* of *Basing*. Created Marquis of *Winchester*, Octob. 11. 1551. And Earl of *Wilts.* Jan. 19. 1549. And after, made Lord Treasurer of *England*. Bore a Crescent in his Coat for Distinction. He left Issue *John*.

## E A R L S.

6. *Thomas Wriothesly*. Created Earl of *Southampton*, and Lord *Wriothesly* of *Titchfield*, Feb. 17. 1546. Of whom descended *Henry*, his Son, Earl of *Southampton*. [Dugdale makes this, and the other Creations about this Time, to be Feb. 16, that is, three Days before the Coronation. Which yet happened Feb. 20.]

7. *John Russel* Lord *Russel*. Created Earl of *Bedford*, Jan. 19. 1549. And after, made Lord Privy Seal. Had Issue *Francis* Earl of *Bedford*.

8. *William Herbert*. Created Baron *Herbert* of *Cardiff*, Octob. 10. 1551. and the next Day, Earl of *Pembroke*. Father to *Henry* Earl of *Pembroke*.

## VISCOUNTS.

9. *Walter Devoreux*, Lord *Ferris* of *Chartley*. Created Viscount *Hereford*, Feb. 2. 1549. Of whom descended *Walter Devoreux* Viscount *Hereford*, his Grandson, by Sir *Richard Devoreux*, his Son.

## B A R O N S.

10. *Gregory Cromwel*, Son of *Thomas Cromwel* Earl of *Essex*, was created Lord *Cromwel* of *Okeham*. And had Issue, the Lord *Cromwel*. [This is an Error. For this Creation happened not in this Reign, but Dec. 18. 37 of *Hen. VIII.* This Lord *Cromwel* died 5 *Edw. VI.*]

11. *Thomas Seymour*, Brother to *Edward Duke of Somerset*, was created Lord *Seymour* of *Sudley*, Feb. 17. 1546. And made Lord Admiral. And died without Issue.

12. *Richard Rich*, created Lord *Rich* of *Ligbes*, Feb. 17. 1546. And had Issue, *Richard* [Robert, according to *Dugdale*] Lord *Rich*.

13. *William Willoughby*, Heir Male to the Lord *Willoughby* of *Eresby*. [Mistaken; in truth Heir Male to Sir *Christopher Willoughby*] Created Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham*, Feb. 17. 1546. And had Issue, *Charles* Lord *Willoughby*.

15. *Edmund Sheffield*, created Lord *Sheffield* of *Butterwick*, Feb. 17. 1546. *John* Lord *Sheffield*, his Son and Heir.

15. *William Paget*, called by Writ to the Lord's House, Decemb. 3. Created Lord *Paget* of *Beaufort*, Jan. 19. 1549. And Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter. Who had Issue, *Henry* Lord *Paget*, that died without Issue.



16. *Thomas Darcy*, created April 5. 1551. Lord *Darcy* of *Chich*, and Knight of the noble Order of the Garter. Father to *John* Lord *Darcy*.

17. . . . . *Ogle*, created Lord *Ogle*. [This is erroneous. For his Creation was in the Reign of *Edward IV.* not of *Edward VI.*]

II..The Names of King *Edward's* Council, upon his first Access to the Crown, to assist the Protector, were as follow:

|                                                                                                             |                                                                                                 |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Thomas Cranmer</i> , Archbishop of <i>Canterbury</i> .                                                   | <i>Sir William Paget</i> , Knight of the Order, chief Secretary.                                |
| <i>William</i> Lord <i>Saint John</i> , Great Master of the King's Household, and President of the Council. | <i>Sir William Petre</i> , one of the two Principal Secretaries.                                |
| <i>John</i> Lord <i>Ruffel</i> , Keeper of the Privy Seal.                                                  | <i>Sir Ralph Sadleyr</i> , Master of the great Wardrobe.                                        |
| <i>William</i> Marquis of <i>Northampton</i> .                                                              | <i>Sir John Baker</i> , of the Augmentation Office.                                             |
| <i>John</i> Earl of <i>Warwic</i> , Great Chamberlain of <i>England</i> .                                   | <i>Dr. Wotton</i> , Dean of <i>Canterbury</i> and <i>Tork</i> .                                 |
| <i>Henry</i> Earl of <i>Arundel</i> , Lord Chamberlain.                                                     | <i>Sir Anthony Denny</i> , } Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber.                                    |
| <i>Thomas</i> Lord <i>Seymour</i> of <i>Sudley</i> , High Admiral of <i>England</i> .                       | <i>Sir William Herbert</i> , }                                                                  |
| <i>Cutbert</i> Bishop of <i>Durham</i> .                                                                    | <i>Sir Edward North</i> , Chancellor of the Courts of Augmentations, and Revenues of the Crown. |
| <i>Richard</i> Lord <i>Rich</i> .                                                                           | <i>Sir Edward Montague</i> , Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.                                 |
| <i>Sir Thomas Cheyney</i> , Knight of the Order, Treasurer of the Household.                                | <i>Sir Edward Wotton</i> .                                                                      |
| <i>Sir John Gate</i> , Knight of the Order, Comptroller of the Household.                                   | <i>Sir Edmund Peckham</i> , Cofferer of the Household.                                          |
| <i>Sir Anthony Browne</i> , Knight of the Order, Master of the Horses.                                      | <i>Sir Thomas Bromely</i> , one of the Justices of the Common Pleas.                            |
| <i>Sir Anthony Wyngfield</i> , Knight of the Order, Vice-chamberlain.                                       | <i>Sir Richard Southwel</i> .                                                                   |

The Names of the Privy Counsellors Anno 1552. were as follow:

|                                                       |                                                 |
|-------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Thomas</i> Archbishop of <i>Canterbury</i> .       | Lord Chamberlain, Lord <i>Darcy</i> .           |
| <i>Thomas</i> Bishop of <i>Ely</i> , Lord Chancellor. | Lord <i>Cobham</i> .                            |
| The Lord Treasurer, Marquis of <i>Winchester</i> .    | Lord <i>Rich</i> .                              |
| The Duke of <i>Northumberland</i> .                   | Mr. Comptroller, <i>Sir Anthony Wyngfield</i> . |
| Lord Privy Seal, Earl of <i>Bedford</i> .             | Mr. Treasurer, <i>Sir Thomas Cheyney</i> .      |
| The Duke of <i>Suffolk</i> .                          | Mr. Vice-chamberlain, <i>Sir John Gates</i> .   |
| The Marquis of <i>Northampton</i> .                   | Mr. Secretary <i>Petre</i> .                    |
| The Earl of <i>Shrewsbury</i> .                       | Mr. Secretary <i>Cecyl</i> .                    |
| The Earl of <i>Westmerland</i> .                      | <i>Sir Philip Hoby</i> .                        |
| The Earl of <i>Huntingdon</i> .                       | <i>Sir Robert Bowes</i> .                       |
| The Earl of <i>Pembroke</i> .                         | <i>Sir John Gage</i> , Constable of the Tower.  |
| Viscount <i>Hereford</i> .                            |                                                 |
| Lord Admiral, Lord <i>Clinton</i> .                   |                                                 |



Sir *John Mason*, Secretary for the French Tongue.  
 Sir *Ralph Sadleir*.  
 Sir *John Baker*, Chancellor of the Court of Augmentations.

Judge *Bromely*.  
 Judge *Mountague*.  
 Dr. *Wotton*.  
 Mr. *North*.

These that follow, were King *Edward's* Council in the North.

*Francis* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, Lord President.  
*Henry* Earl of *Westmerland*.  
*Henry* Earl of *Cumberland*.  
*Cuthbert* Bishop of *Durham*.  
*William* Lord *Dacres* of the North.  
*John* Lord *Conyers*.  
*Thomas* Lord *Wharton*.  
*John* Hind Kt. one of his Majesty's Justices of the Common Pleas.  
*Edmund* *Molineux* Kt. Serjeant at Law.  
*Henry* *Savyle* Kt.

*Robert* *Bowes* Kt.  
*Nicolas* *Fairfax* Kt.  
*George* *Conyers* Kt.  
*Leonard* *Berkwith* Kt.  
*William* *Babthorp* Kt.  
*Anthony* *Nevyl* Kt.  
*Thomas* *Gargrave* Kt.  
*Robert* *Mennel*, Serjeant at Law.  
*Anthony* *Bellasis* Esq;  
*John* *Rokeby*, Doctor of Law.  
*Robert* *Chaloner* Esq;  
*Richard* *Norton* Esq;  
*Thomas* *Eymis* Esq; Secretary.

The President and Council in the Marches of *Wales*, by a Commission from the King, Anno 1551. were as follow:

Sir *William* *Herbert*, President.  
 The Earl of *Worcester*.  
*Walter* Viscount *Hereford*.  
*Robert* Bishop of *S. Asaph*.  
*Edward* Lord *Powis*.  
 Sir *Robert* *Townsend*.  
 Sir *Thomas* *Bromely*.  
 Sir *John* *Packington*.  
 Sir *John* *Savage*.  
 Sir *Richard* *Cotton*.  
 Sir *Anthony* *Kingston*.  
 Sir *John* *Setlow*.  
 Sir *George* *Herbert*.  
 Sir *Richard* *Mauxel*.  
 Sir *Thomas* *Johns*.  
 Sir *Walter* *Denys*.

Sir *Edward* *Carno*.  
 Sir *Roland* *Hill*.  
 Sir *James* *Croft*.  
 Sir *Robert* *Atton*.  
 Sir *Nicolas* *Arnold*.  
 Sir *John* *Price*.  
 Sir *Adam* *Mitton*.  
*Griffith* *Leyson*.  
*John* *Pollard*.  
*Matthew* *Herbert*.  
*John* *Skidmore*.  
*Richard* *Hussal*.  
*William* *Shelden*.  
*John* *Basset*.  
*John* *Throgmerton*.

Lords Ju-  
 stices and  
 Lords Lieu-  
 tenants of  
 the Counties.

III. These were the King's Justices commissioned in May, 1552. and Lords Lieutenants of the Counties: Who were to inquire of all Treasons, Misprisions of Treasons, Insurrections, Rebellions, unlawful Assemblies, and Conventicles, unlawful speaking of Words, Confederacies, Conspiracies, false Allegations, Contempts, Falshood, Negligences, Concealments, Oppressions, Riots, Routs, Murders, Felonies, and all other evil Doings. And to appoint certain Days and Places for Inquiry thereof: And to be the King's Lieutenants for levying of Men, and to fight against the King's Enemies, and Rebels, and to execute upon them



the Marshal Law; and subdue all Invasions, Insurrections, &c. as should chance to be moved in any Place; as it ran in their Commissions:

The Duke of *Northumberland*, for the Counties of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, *Newcastle upon Tyne*, and *Barwic*.

The Earl of *Bedford*, for *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Devon*, and *Cornwal*.

The Earl of *Suffex*, Lord *Dudley*, Sir *William Fermour*, and Sir *John Robsert*, for *Norfolk*.

The Earl of *Shrewsbury*, for *Yorkshire*, and the City of *York*.

The Lord *Darcy*, the Lord *Wentworth*, and Sir *Anthony Wyngfield*, for *Suffolk*.

The Duke of *Northumberland*, and Viscount *Hereford*, for *Staffordshire*.

The Earl of *Darby*, for *Lancashire*.

The Lord Chancellor, for the Isle of *Ely*.

The Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, for the Counties of *Northampton*, *Bedford*, *Surrey*, *Hertford*, *Cambridge*, *Berks*, and *Oxon*.

The Lord Treasurer, for *Southampton* and the Isle of *Wight*.

The Lord *Clinton*, for *Lincolnshire*.

The Earl of *Oxford*, Lord *Darcy*, Lord *Rich*, and Sir *John Gates*, for *Essex*.

The Earl of *Westmerland*, for the Bishopric of *Durham*.

The Duke of *Northumberland*, and Earl of *Warwic*, for *Warwic*.

The Earl of *Pembroke*, for *Wilts*.

Sir *Robert Bowes*, for *Middlesex*.

The Duke of *Suffolk*, for *Leicesters*.

The Earl of *Huntingdon*, for *Darby* and *Rutland*.

The Lord Warden, for *Kent*, and *Canterbury*.

The Earl of *Rutland*, for *Nottingham*.

Sir *Robert Tyrwit*, and *Thomas Audley Esq*; for *Huntington*.

The Lord *Ruffel*, for *Bucks*.

The Lord *LaWare*, for *Suffex*.

The Earl of *Cumberland*, for *Westmerland*.

The Earl of *Pembroke*, for *Wales*, and the Marches thereof.

IV. Of Persons in Place and Office, and chief about the King, these were the most Eminent:

*Goodrick* Bishop of *Ely*, Lord Chancellor.

Lord Marquis of *Winchester*, Lord High Treasurer.

The Earl of *Bedford*, Lord Privy Seal.

The Duke of *Northumberland*, Lord Great Master.

The Marquis of *Northampton*, Lord High Chamberlain of *England*.

Lord *Darcy of Chicke*, Lord Chamberlain of the Household.

Lord *Clinton*, Lord High Admiral of *England*.

The Earl of *Warwic*, Master of the King's Horses.

Sir *Anth. Wyngfield*, } successively  
Sir *Richard Cotton*, } Comptrollers  
of the King's  
House.

Sir *John Gates*, Vice-chamberlain, and Chancellor of the Duchy.

Sir *John Williams*, Master of the Jewel-house.



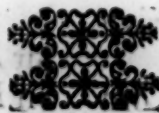
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           |                                                                                                                                                                                                              |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>The Lord <i>Strange</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>Philip Hoby</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>Thomas Wroth</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>Nic. Tbrogmorton</i>,<br/> <i>Barnaby Fitz-Patric</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>John Cbeke</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>Robert Dudley</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>Henry Nevyl</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>Henry Gates</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>Henry Sidney</i>,<br/>         Sir <i>William Stanley</i>,<br/>         And some others,<br/>         Sir <i>Ralph Sadleyr</i>, Master of the<br/>         Wardrobe.<br/>         Sir <i>William Cavendish</i>, Treasurer of<br/>         the Chamber.<br/>         Sir <i>William Petre</i>, } Principal Secre-<br/>         Sir <i>William Cecyl</i>, } taries of State.</p> | <p>Gentlemen<br/>         of the<br/>         King's Privy<br/>         Chamber:<br/>         Whereof<br/>         Four were<br/>         called <i>The</i><br/> <i>Principal</i><br/> <i>Gentlemen</i>.</p> | <p>Sir <i>John Mason</i>, Secretary for the<br/> <i>French Tongue</i>.<br/>         Sir <i>George Howard</i>, Master of the<br/>         King's Heuchmen.<br/>         Sir <i>John Gage</i>, Constable of the<br/>         Tower.<br/>         Sir <i>James Croft</i>, Lord Deputy of<br/>         Ireland.<br/>         Richard <i>Cecyl</i>, } Esqs; Yeomen of<br/>         Rob. <i>Robotham</i>, } the Robes.<br/>         Sir <i>Thomas Chaloner</i>,<br/>         Bernard <i>Hampton</i>,<br/>         Armagil <i>Waad</i>,<br/>         William <i>Thomas</i>,<br/>         William <i>Honnins</i>,<br/>         Cutbert <i>Vaughan</i>, Esq; Master of the<br/>         King's Bears, Bulls, and Dogs.</p> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

V. The Names of the High Sheriffs of *Essex* and *Hertfordshire*, were these:

|                                                                                                                                                                                                |                                                                                                                                                                                |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>Anno Reg. { 1. Edward B<sup>rocket</sup> of Hat-<br/>         field, Esq;<br/>         2. John Cock of Brokesburn, Esq;<br/>         3. Sir John Gates of Cbest-<br/>         bunt, Kt.</p> | <p>Anno Reg. { 4. Sir George Norton, Kt.<br/>         5. Sir Henry Tyrrel of He-<br/>         ran, Kt.<br/>         6. Sir Thomas Pope of Titten-<br/>         banger, Kt.</p> |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

VI. The Names of the King's Chief Captains, and Head Officers in *Calais* and *Guisnes*, and the Marches thereof, in the latter End of his Reign, were these:

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    |                                                                                                                                                                                      |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>The Lord <i>William Howard</i>.<br/>         The Lord <i>Grey</i>.<br/>         Sir <i>Anthony Aucher</i>.<br/>         Sir <i>Raynold Scot</i>.<br/>         Sir <i>Maurice Denys</i>.<br/>         John <i>Harleston</i>.</p> | <p>George <i>Brown</i>.<br/>         Edward <i>Grimston</i>.<br/>         Sir <i>Thomas Cotton</i>.<br/>         Nicolas <i>Alexander</i>.<br/>         Eustace <i>Abingdon</i>.</p> |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|



CHAP.



## C H A P. XXVI.

*A Catalogue of the Bishops in this King's Reign;  
with Remarks upon them.*

**A**ND as these were the chief of Quality and Honour among the Laity, so for those of that Figure among the Spirituality, I shall offer here the Names of the several Archbishops and Bishops, that governed the respective Sees under this King. Of whom were not above half a Score that heartily favoured and furthered the Reformation of Religion.

## ARCHBISHOPS.

**CRANMER.** A Privy Counsellor: *Memorials* of whom were some *Canterbury*. Years ago published. To him the Church of *England* oweth her excellent Reformation. He was a married Man: and left a Son, of his own Name; who was restored in Blood in the Fifth of Queen *Elizabeth*. This Archbishop was martyred by Fire at *Oxford*, under Queen *Mary*.

**HOLGATE.** A Favourer of the Reformation. The only wealthy *York*. Prelate in this Reign; and a married Man. He purchased of the King the Manour of *Scrowby* in *Nottinghamshire*; and after his own, and his Wife's Death, laid it to the Archbishopric of *York*. Upon the coming of Queen *Mary* to the Crown, he was cast into the *Tower*; spoiled of vast Treasure, Plate, and Jewels, and Household-stuff, at his Houses at *Cawood*, and at *Battersea* in *Surrey*, and other Places, where he sometimes resided.

## BISHOPS.

**BONER.** He was deposed under King *Edward's* Reign; but re-*London*. stored under Queen *Mary*, by Sentence of Dr. *John Tregonwel*. Commonly called *Bloody Boner*, for his Popish Zeal in sentencing so many Professors of the Gospel to the Flames. He was deprived again under Queen *Elizabeth*: and remained excommunicate several Years before his Death. Supposed to be base Son of one *Savage*, a Priest. He died in the *Marshalsea*.

**RIDLEY.** He succeeded, upon the Deprivation of *Boner*. A great Instrument, and Assistant to *Cranmer* in the Reformation of this Church. Very learned and pious. He was Chaplain to King *Henry VIII*. Before whom he once preached a notable Sermon, at the Marriage of the Lady *Cynton* to Sir *Anthony Browne*, Master of the Horse to that King. He was martyred by Fire under Queen *Mary*. And died unmarried.

**GARDINER.** Deprived under this King, and laid in the *Tower*. But *Winchester*. under Queen *Mary* restored, and advanced to be Lord Chancellor of *England*. He was Chancellor also of the University of *Cambridge*, and Master of *Trinity Hall* there. Which Place he held to his Death. He is supposed to be the base Son of *Woodvile*, Bishop of *Salisbury*. But he gave the Coat of



of the *Gardiners* of *Glemsford*, near *Ipswich* in *Suffolk*; which was, Azure, a Cross, Or, charged with a Cinquefoil, Gules, pierced: or rather, a Rose, (which, I suppose, was an Addition granted him by the King) between four Griffins Heads erased, Argent, Languid, Gules: As I observed from an antient Picture of this Prelate's, in the Possession of my worthy Friend, Sir *Richard Gibbs* of *Whetbam* in *Suffolk*, Kt. Upon the Frame is writ his Motto, *Vana Salus Hominis*. When that Picture was taken of him, he was Fifty three Years of Age. He is represented with a Surplice close at the Wrists, and a Scarfe over it, a square Cap on his Head, a Book in his Hand, two great stoned Rings upon his two Fore-fingers, the one a Ruby, and the other a Sapphire, and another small Ring upon the little Finger of his Left Hand. A severe, black Visage, shaven close, and his Eyebrows somewhat hanging over his Eyes.

**PONET.** Upon *Gardiner's* Deprivation, he succeeded. He had been Archbishop *Cranmer's* Chaplain. He had 2000 Marks a Year settled upon him: the rest of the Temporalties of this rich Bishopric was taken into the King's Hands; who bestowed most of the good Manors and Lands thereof, upon several of his Courtiers. This Bishop was one of that Order in this Reign, that cordially favoured Religion, and was an Exile under Queen *Mary*. *Bale* the Antiquary, and *Goodacre*, were at one Time this Bishop's Chaplains, and went both together into *Ireland*, one to be Bishop of *Offory*, and the other Archbishop of *Armagh*.

*Durham.*

**TONSTAL.** A Privy Counsellor, and long experienced in Matters of State. He went along with the Reformation for some Years, till at length he was laid in the *Tower* for Misprision of Treason, in concealing a Conspiracy in the North, and was Deprived. He was base born. Restored by Queen *Mary*; and died a very aged Man, about a Year after Q. *Elizabeth's* Access to the Crown. He wrote a Book *De Veritate Corporis & Sanguinis Domini nostri in Eucharistia*, in the Year 1551. And was then Seventy seven Years of Age. Archbishop *Parker* buried him in *Lambeth* Church, with the Respect due to his Character.

**HORN.** Dean of *Durham*, had the Grant of this Bishopric, but enjoyed it not, having no mind to it, *Tonstal* being alive. It was soon after, by some Resolves of Council, dissolved by Act of Parliament. Upon a Design of founding it anew, *Ridley* Bishop of *London* was nominated to it; but it went no further.

*Ely.*

**GOODRICK.** A Privy Counsellor: He was advanced to be Lord Chancellor, after the Resignation of the Lord *Rich*. Noted for his impartial Distribution of Justice: Gentle to his Enemies, but somewhat too harsh to his Friends and Dependents. Under him the Reformation succeeded well. He was employed much by King *Henry*, and King *Edward*, in Embassies and Matters of State. He was the Son of *Edward Goodrick* of *Kirby* in *Lincolnshire*, by *Jane* his Wife, Daughter and Heir of *Williamson* of *Boston* in the same County: And gave for his Coat, Argent, on a Fesse, Gules, between two Lions passant gardant, Sable, a Flower de Lys of the first, between two Crescents, Or.

*Lincoln.*

**HOLBECH.** A true Favourer of the Gospel, and made much use of in the Reforming and Settling of the Church. He was called sometimes *Henry Rands* of *Holbeck* in *Lincolnshire*. He had been Lord Prior of *Worcester*, and upon the new Establishment of the Cathedral Churches, was made the first Dean of *Worcester*. He was married, and left a Son, named



named *Thomas*. Thirty four rich Manors, belonging to this See of *Lincoln*, were alienated in his Time, tho' not by his Fault. The Sons of *Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*, were for some time educated under him at *Bugden*, and both died there, of the Sweating Sicknefs.

**TAYLOR.** A true Well-willer to the Reformation. Formerly Incumbent of *S. Peter's Cornhil* in *London*; more lately, Master of *S. John's* College in *Cambridge*, and Dean of *Lincoln*. Succeeding *Holbeck* in the Year 1552. He was married. And upon that Pretence, thrust out of the Parliament House in the First of *Queen Mary*. *Godwin* tells us, he died soon after, at *Ankerwick*; perhaps at *Sir Thomas Smith's* House there, formerly a Nunnery. For he and the Bishop seem to have been old Acquaintance at *Cambridge*.

**SAMPSON.** He was bred in *S. Clement's* Hostle, *Cambridge*. Tho' a Papist, yet he complied so far, that he continued Bishop throughout *King Edward's* Reign. In the Year 1551, he was appointed one of the Commissioners for the Limits of *Scotland*: And died under *Queen Mary*, Anno 1554. *Country and Litchfield.*

**SALCOT, alias CAPON.** A Papist, but made a shift to keep in all this King's Reign. He spoiled the Bishopric. So that *Jewel*, his Successor, found it so bare, that he complained he had no Benefices to maintain learned Men. He enriched himself, by making his Bishopric poor. *Salisbury.*

**KNIGHT.** Employed much in Embassies by *King Henry*. His House, by some Exchange, was the Nunnery without *Aldgate*, called *The Minories*. In a Chappel whereof, he was Consecrated. *Bath and Wells.*

**BARLOW.** A married Man, and real Friend to the Reformation. He made some Compliance in the Begining of *Queen Mary*, to save his Life. Afterwards got beyond Sea; and returned upon *Q. Elizabeth's* Access to the Crown; and was then made Bishop of *Hereford*. He left several Daughters; all married to Bishops.

**VOYSEY, or VEYSY, alias HARMAN.** He was Governour to the Lady *Mary*, when she had the Title of Princess of *Wales*, and kept a great Court. He was a brave Courtly Prelate, but made great Spoil of the Bishopric, by selling away many Lordships and Seats from it. He, upon Persuasion, and some good Terms made for himself, resigned. But took his Bishopric again under *Queen Mary*. He sold the Manor and Burge of *Paington* in *Devon*, and other Lands and Tenements, unto *Sir Thomas Speke* Kt. by Indenture bearing Date *Decemb. 21. 1549.* with the Assent of the Dean and Chapter. Which Estate, it seems, the King had some Pretence unto. Therefore there was made by the King a Confirmation, in *Novemb. 1551.* of the said Purchase to him, with a Release of all the King's Right thereto. The Earl of *Bedford* also, and others, of the Council of *King Edward*, purchased good Penyworths of him. For the assuring of whose Titles, a Letter was sent from the King and Council to the Bishop, *March 10. 1550.* to suffer the said Earl, and others of the Council, to procure the best Assurance for the Lands bought of him, appertaining to the Bishopric. For, it seems, he was not yet actually out of the Bishopric, tho' in *November* before, a Letter of Thanks was sent him for surrendring thereof: Which, I suppose, must be understood of his Promise to surrender. *Exeter.*



**COVERDALE.** He lived long in *Germany*, and *Denmark*: Where he had a Benefice, and married a sober Woman, named *Elizabeth*, born in those Parts. A grave, reverend, good Man, and a serious Promoter of the Reformation of this Church. He lived in Exile under *Queen Mary*: Returned home in *Queen Elizabeth's* Reign, and assisted at the Consecration of *Matthew Parker*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*. He lived privately in *London* for some Time: But in 1563. he was preferred to be Rector of *S. Magnus, London*; whose Poverty was such, that the Queen forgave him his First-Fruits. And such was the Esteem he bore, that he had no less Persons for his Intercessors with the Queen, than the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishop of *London*, the Earl of *Leicester*, and the Secretary of State. He was a diligent Corrector of the *English Bible* after *Tindal*: Which is commonly called *Coverdale's Translation*.

*Normich.*

**RUGGE, alias REPS.** He had his Name of *Reps*, from the Denomination of the Town where he was born, or where his Father lived, viz. *North Reps* in *Norfolk*. He was Abbot of *S. Benedict de Hulmo*.

**THIRLEBY.** He was of *Trinity Hall* in *Cambridge*, and kept under *Bilney's* Chamber; being then a Scholar, he used often to play upon his Recorder, for his Diversion. And then good *Bilney* would go to his Prayers. He was often sent Abroad, as Ambassador, by King *Henry*; who first preferred him to be Bishop of *Westminster*. He was Dean of the Chappel to King *Edward*, and by him sent to the Emperor. He became Bishop of *Ely* under *Queen Mary*: And under *Queen Elizabeth* was deprived; but lived and died, with much Freedom and good Usage, with Archbishop *Parker*: who gave him honourable Burial in *Lambeth Church*.

*Worcester.*

**HETHE.** He was deprived in the Year 1550. being of the Age of 49 Years. After his Deprivation, he lived with *Ridley* Bishop of *London*, during the Reign of King *Edward*. And under *Queen Mary* was advanced to be Archbishop of *York*, and Lord Chancellor of *England*. Deprived again under *Queen Elizabeth*, and lived many Years in great Plenty and Freedom, at his Manor of *Cobham* in *Surrey*.

**HOPER.** Once a Monk at *Glocester*. He lived long in *Germany*, especially in *Switzerland*; where he became well known to *Bullinger*. Under King *Edward*, he returned into *England*, and was Chaplain to the Duke of *Somerset*, and a great Preacher in and about *London*. He married a discreet Woman of the *Low Countries*, and had by her several Children. A zealous Favourer of pure Religion. And for that Cause, martyred under *Queen Mary*, very cruelly.

*Glocester.*

**WAKEMAN.** He was the last Abbot of *Teuxbury*, and the first Bishop of *Glocester*.

**HOPER.** In the Year 1552. this Diocese of *Glocester*, and that of *Worcester*, were united into one, by the King's Patents; and from thenceforth to be taken and reputed for one. And *Hoper* was constituted the first Bishop of the Diocese of *Worcester* and *Glocester*.

*Hereford.*

**SKYP.** He was once Chaplain to *Queen Anne Bolen*, and her Almoner. A forward Man once for Religion. He made away, by a long Lease of two hundred Years, his *London* House or Inne, belonging to the Bishops of *Hereford*, situate in the Parish of *S. Mary Mountbaw*, or *Mountbault*, to the Lord *Clinton*, Lord Admiral.

HARLEY.



**HARLEY.** An hearty Friend to the Reformation. Dr. *Laurence Humfrey*, President of *Magdalen*, and the King's Professor in Divinity, was his Scholar in *Magdalen College, Oxon.* In Queen *Mary's* Reign, he instructed his Flock in Woods and secret Places, and administered the Sacrament according to the Order of the *English Book*. Lurking up and down in the Nation; and died in the hard Reign of the said Queen: Yet living to the last Year of her Reign. Therefore it is an Error in *Mason's Book*, where he saith, that *Harley* assisted at the Consecration of Bishop *Grindal*. It is an Error also, that he makes those that assisted Archbishop *Cranmer* at the Consecration of *Harley*, to be the Suffragan of *Sydon*, and *Tayler* Bishop of *Lincoln*, when indeed neither of them did, but *Nicolas* Bishop of *London*, and *Robert* Bishop of *Carlisle*, as may appear by the Archbishop's Register. *De Minist. P. 393.*

**DAY.** He complied for some Years with King *Edward's* Proceedings. But afterwards, for refusing to take down the Altars in his Diocese, he was deprived. Yet restored under Queen *Mary*, being a zealous Papist. He told *Bradford* in Prison, who had charged him with departing from the Reformed Church in King *Edward's* Days, *That he was but a young Man, and then coming from the University, he went with the World, but it was always against his Conscience.* Under Queen *Mary*, he was one of the Commissioners for trying, judging, and sentencing the Protestant Divines, and other Professors of Religion. *Chichester.*

**SCORY.** An hearty Embracer and Furtherer of Religion: He had been Archbishop *Cranmer's* Chaplain, and one of the six Preachers in *Canterbury*. A married Man. He made some Compliances under Queen *Mary*: but afterwards fled Abroad, and was an Exile, till he returned under Queen *Elizabeth*, and was placed by her, not in *Chichester* again, but over the Diocese of *Hereford*.

**RIDLEY.** } Afterwards translated to other Dioceses, as above is *Rochester.*

**POYNET.** } shewn; and the Diocese remained void for near two

**SCORY.** } Years.

**KING.** He was first a Monk of *Rewly*, or *Royal-lieu*, near *Oxford*; *Oxford.* then Abbot of *Bruern* in *Oxfordshire*: After Abbot of *Thame*, and lastly, Abbot of *Osney*. Who surrendring those Religious Houses, or some of them, to King *Henry VIII.* was rewarded by being constituted the first Bishop of *Oxford*, having been Suffragan Bishop of *Reon*, and called commonly, Bishop of *Thame*, where he had been Abbot, and probably, lived. He passed thro' all the Changes under King *Henry*, King *Edward*, and Queen *Mary*, and died towards the latter End of her Reign.

**CHAMBRE.** There were two *John Chambres* contemporary, and *Peterburgh.* both eminent, and in Holy Orders: One a Doctor of Physic, bred in *Merton College, Oxon*, where he was successively Fellow and Warden; and one of King *Henry's* Physicians in Ordinary, and that signed a Letter, with five others of the said King's Physicians, writ to the Council, concerning the dangerous Condition of Queen *Jane*, after the Birth of Prince *Edward*; there stiling himself *Priest*. He was Dean of *S. Stephen's, Westminster*, Archdeacon of *Bedford*, and one of the famous Convocation, Anno 1536. when the Articles of Religion were framed, and then signed himself *Johannes Chambre Divi Stephani Decanus, & Bedford. Arch.* He died 1549. The other *John Chambre* was Bachelor in Divinity, a *Benedictin* Monk, bred up chiefly in *Cambridge*; after made



Abbot of *Peterburgh*; and having resigned the said Abby to the King, he was constituted the first Bishop thereof: And died 1556. It was *Godwin's Error*, (and an easy Error it was) to confound both these *Chambres*, supposing them to be one and the same Person. Which Mr. *Anthony A Wood* hath taken notice of.

*Bristol.*

**BUSH.** This Man also was Governor of a Religious House, and Provincial of the Order of Religious Men, called *Bonhommes*, and well skilled in Physic, as well as Divinity; and wrote learned Books. He was married, and therefore deprived under *Queen Mary*. He was forced, tho' he opposed it stiffly for a Time, to comply with the Iniquity of this Age, and to part with a good Manor belonging to the Bishopric, in Exchange with the King; namely, the Manor of *Leigh*. Which one *Norton* coveted, and obtained.

*Carlisle.*

**ALDRICH.** A Man of good Learning. A Complier throughout this Reign, tho' not well affected to the Reformation.

*Chester.*

**BIRD.** About the Year 1530. this Man was sent to *Bilney*, then in Prison, to confer and argue with him. He was then Provincial of the *White Friars*; and then, or after, a Suffragan in *Coventry*, where he was born. After, Suffragan of *Penrith*; after, Bishop of *Bangor*; and then of *Chester*. He was married, and therefore deprived under *Queen Mary*. But in her Reign, Suffragan to Bishop *Boner*, and Vicar of *Dunmow* in *Essex*.

*S. Davids.*

**BARLOW.** Of him somewhat before was said. He was the King's Chaplain. When *Stephen Gardiner*, in the Year 1528. then the King's Secretary, commonly called Dr. *Stephens*, was Ambassador at *Rome* with the Pope, the King dispatched this *Barlow*, then a Canon of *S. Oystons* in *Essex*, with Letters to him. He was preferred to the Priory of *Haverford West* by *Queen Anne Bolen*. When he was Bishop of *S. Davids*, in the Year 1537. he laboured with the Lord *Cromwel*, for the Translation of the See to *Carmarthen*, and the disposing of *Aberguilly* College to *Brecknock*, the principal Towns of *South Wales*; whereby Provision being made for Learning and Knowledge in the Scriptures, the *Welsh* Rudeness might have been framed into *English* Civility, and their gross Superstitions in Religious Worship rectified, and reformed. He wrote several Books against Popery. As, a Treatise of the *Burial of the Mass*: A Dialogue between the Gentleman and the Countryman: The climbing up of *Friers*, and *Religious Persons*, pourtraied, with Figures: A Description of *God's Word*, compared to the Light. Also a Dialogue, inveighing especially against *S. Thomas of Canterbury*. But this was never printed.

**FERRAR.** A real Professor and Friend to the Reformation, once a Chaplain to the Duke of *Somerset*. He was one of the King's Visitors in the first Year of his Reign, and one of the Preachers in that Visitation. A married Man. Unhappy in the Contest some of his Church raised against him, for their own Ends, to stop his Episcopal Visitation of them. Whereby he was the less able to take care of collecting and returning of the Tenth of his Clergy: and so was cast into Prison by the Council for the King's Debt. And under *Queen Mary*, who found him in the *Tower*, martyred in the Flames, for adhering to the Gospel. He left Children.

KITCHIN,



KITCHIN, *alias* DUNSTAN. This Man, according to the Pra-<sup>Landoff.</sup>rice of several others of the Popishly affected Bishops under King *Edward*, made a grievous Waste and Spoil of a very wealthy Bishopric. He was the only Bishop under Queen *Mary* that continued in his Bishopric, and complied with the Changes under Queen *Elizabeth*.

BULKLEY. He sat Bishop from the Year 1541. to the Year 1555: <sup>Bangor.</sup> that is, in three Princes Reigns. He was blind some Time before his Death. Being suddenly struck with Blindness, as tho' it had been some Judgment upon him for Sacrilege.

PARFEW, *alias* WARTON. Well affected to Popery. Once Ab-<sup>s. Asaph.</sup>bot of *Bermondsey* in *Southwark*. He made a Spoil of his Bishopric by long Leases. Under Queen *Mary*, he was translated to the See of *Hereford*.

## CHAP. XXVII.

*A Catalogue of divers Letters, Orders of Council, Commissions, &c. sent and given out in this Reign: Collected and preserved by John Fox.*

**F**OR the Conclusion of these Collections of this Reign, to let in some further sure Light thereinto, specially as to the Ecclesiastical State thereof, and to make up any Defects in some of the foregoing Relations, I shall here subjoin a Catalogue of Letters, Orders of Council, Commissions, and other authentic Records of this Time, exemplified by *Fox* in his ninth Book of *Acts and Monuments*. *Fox* is the Storehouse, I am only the *Index* to point thereunto.

1. A Letter Missive of *Boner*, Bishop of *London*, to the Bishop of *Westminster*, for the Tenor of the Archbishop's Letter, for abolishing of Candles, Ashes, Palms, and other Ceremonies. Dated *Jan. 28. 1548.*
2. A Letter of the Council, sent to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, for abolishing Images. Dated *Feb. 11. 1548.*
3. *Boner*, Bishop of *London*, his Letter sent with the Archbishop's Mandate to the Bishop of *Westminster*, for abolishing Images. Dated *Feb. 20. 1548.*
4. Letters missive from the Council to the Bishops of the Land, concerning the Communion to be ministered in both Kinds. Dated *Mar. 13. 1548.*
5. A Letter directed from the King's Council to *Boner*, Bishop of *London*, for abrogating private Masses, namely, the Apostles Mass, within the Church of *S. Paul's*, used under the Name of the Apostles Communion. Dated *June 24. 1549.*



6. A Letter of the said Bishop, to the Dean, and Canons, Residentiaries, Prebendaries, Sub-dean, and Ministers of the same Church, to the same Import. Dated *June 26. 1549.*

7. The Lord Chancellor *Rich* his Speech in the Star-chamber, to the Justices of the Peace, for the Advancement and setting forward of the King's godly Proceedings.

8. A Letter from the King and Council to *Boner*, Bishop of *London*, partly rebuking him of Negligence, and partly charging him to see to the better setting out of the Service Book within his Diocese. Dated *July 23. 1549.*

9. Bishop *Boner's* Letter to the Dean and Chapter of *S. Paul's*, in pursuance of the Letter abovesaid. Dated *July 26. 1549.*

10. Certain private Injunctions and Articles, in number Six, given *Aug. 11. 1549.* to Bishop *Boner* by the Council, to be followed and observed by him.

11. The Articles of the Commons of *Devonshire* and *Cornwal*, sent to the King, *Anno 1549.*

12. A Message sent by the King's Majesty to certain of the People, assembled in *Devonshire*. Given at *Richmond*, *July 8.* in the third of his Reign.

13. The Council to Sir *Anthony Cook*, and the rest of the Commissioners for the Visitation at *London*, concerning Bishop *Boner's* Recantation, made before them, of his Protestation at the receiving of the Injunctions and Homilies. Dated *Sept. 12. 1547.*

14. The Form of *Boner's* Recantation.

15. The Copy of the King's Commission sent down for the Examination of *Boner*, *Sept. 8. 1549.*

16. The Tenor and Form of *Boner's* Protestation, exhibited to the King's Commissioners at his first appearing.

17. A certain Declaration or Interpretation of the King, touching certain Points and Doubts in his former Commission, with License given to the Commissioners, as well to determine, as to hear, the Case of *Boner*. Dated *Sept. 17.*

18. *Boner's* Recusation of the Judgment of Sir *Thomas Smith*.

19. The first Appellation intimated by *Boner* Bishop of *London*.

20. The second Recusation made by the said Bishop.

21. Bishop *Boner's* Letter to the Lord Maior and Aldermen of *London*; charging them not to be abused with naughty Preachers at *Paul's*. Dated *Sept. 16. 1549.*

22. *Boner's* Declaration before the Commissioners.

23. His Supplication to the Lord Chancellor of *England*, with the rest of the Privy Council, from the *Marshalsea*, complaining of his Imprisonment by the Commissioners. Dated *Octob. 7. 1549.*

24. *Sententia Deprivationis lata contra Eadmund, London, Episcopum.*

25. *Boner's* Appeal in Words from the Sentence Definitive.

26. *Boner's* Supplication to the Lord Chancellor, and the rest of the Council, complaining of the Commissioners. Dated *Octob. 26. 1549.*

27. The Heads of another Supplication to the King from the said *Boner*, desiring his Majesty's Letter of *Supersedeas* against the Commissioners; and that the Matter might be heard before the Council.

28. The



28. The King and Council's Letter to *Nicolas* Bishop of *London*, for taking down of Altars in Churches. Dated *Nov. 24. 1550.* With certain Reasons, why the Lord's Board should rather be after the Form of a Table, than of an Altar.

29. The Lady *Mary* to the Protector, and the rest of the Council, concerning her Conformity to the King's Proceedings. Dated *June 22. 1549.*

30. A Remembrance of certain Matters appointed by the Council to be declared by Dr. *Hopton* to the Lady *Mary's* Grace, for Answer to her former Letter. Dated *June 14. [24.] 1549.*

31. The Lady *Mary* to the Lord Protector, and the rest of the Council. Dated *June 27. 1549.*

32. The King's Majesty's Letter to the Lady *Mary.* Dated *Jan. 24. 1550.*

33. The Lady *Mary* to the King's most excellent Majesty. Dated *Feb. 3.*

34. The Lady *Mary* to the Lords of the Council, *Dec. 4. 1550.*

35. The Council to the Lady *Mary,* *Dec. 25.*

36. The Lady *Mary* to the Lords of the Council, *May 2. 1551.*

37. The Council to the Lady *Mary,* *May 6. 1551.*

38. The Lady *Mary* to the Council, *May 11.*

39. The Council to the Lady *Mary,* *May 27. 1551.*

40. The Lady *Mary* to the Lords of the Council, *June 21. 1551.*

41. The Council to the Lady *Mary,* *June 24. 1551.*

42. The Lady *Mary* to the King's Majesty, *Aug. 19.*

43. The King to the Lady *Mary,* *Aug. 24.*

44. The King's Majesty's Instructions concerning their Message to the Lady *Mary,* given to the Lord Chancellor, Sir *Anthony Wyngfield,* and Sir *William Petre,* *Aug. 24.*

45. A Writ or Evidence touching the Order and Manner of the Misdemeanor of *Stephen* Bishop of *Winchester;* with Declaration of the Faults wherewith he was justly charged.

46. A Letter of the Bishop of *Winchester* to Mr. *Vaughan* of *Portsmouth,* concerning pulling down certain Images in that Town. Dated *May 3. 1547.*

47. Divers Letters of the Protector to that Bishop, and of that Bishop to the Protector, dated from *Southwark* and *Winchester,* *1547.*

48. The Bishop of *Winchester* to *Ridley,* containing Matter and Objections against a certain Sermon of his, made at Court.

49. The Tenor and Copy of a Letter sent from the Duke of *Somerset* to the Bishop of *Winchester,* touching such Points as the said Bishop should intreat of in his Sermon. Dated *June 28. 1548.*

50. A Letter sent to the Bishop of *Winchester,* signed by the King, and subscribed by the Council, together with certain Articles for him to subscribe. Dated *July 4. 1550.*

51. The Sequestration of the Bishop of *Winchester.*

52. The Appeal of the said Bishop before the Sentence Definitive.

53. The Sentence Definitive against him.

54. A Letter of the Lord Protector to the Lord *Russel,* Lord Privy Seal, concerning Troubles working against him. Dated *Oct. 6. 1549.*

55. The Lord Protector to the Council at *London,* *Octob. 7. 1549.*

56. The



56. The King's Letter to Sir *Henry Amcotts*, Lord Maior, and Sir *Rowland Hill*, Maior Elect, and to the Aldermen, and Citizens of *London*, to levy Men to attend upon him, and his Uncle the Protector. Dated *Octob. 6.* with the Protector's Name subscribed.

57. The Lords Letter to the Maior, Aldermen, and Citizens of *London*, for a Supportation of armed Men against the Protector. Dated also *Oct. 6. 1549.*

58. Articles objected against the Lord Protector.

59. An Epistle of young Prince *Edward* to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, his Godfather.

60. Another Epistle of the same to the same.

61. The Answer of the Archbishop to Prince *Edward's* Epistle.

62. Dr. *Cox*, the Prince's Schoolmaster, to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, concerning the Prince's Proficiency.

63. The Prayer of King *Edward* before his Death.

From all which may be collected, ample Matter for a further Illustration of the State of Affairs in this King's Reign.



## CHAP. XXVIII.

### *Animadversions upon Sir John Hayward's Life and Reign of King Edward VI.*

Posterity not to be imposed upon, nor the Dead to be misrepresented.



SI have in several Places of the foregoing History taken occasion to correct some Errors or Defects in Sir *John Hayward's* Book; so I cannot conclude my Collections of this King, without some few more Animadversions thereon: and that out of that private Love I bear to the Truth of History, and that public Concern that inspires me with a Care of Posterity; and that it be not (as it is too much) imposed upon with Falshood: And that those that are long since dead, be not represented quite different from what indeed they were; and that, too often, to the diminishing of their Reputation to Posterity.

*Hayward's Imperfections. Life of K. Edw. 4to. Pr. 1630. Pag. 141.*

*Hayward's* Stile and Language is good, and so is his Fancy too. Only he makes too much use of it for an Historian. Which puts him sometimes to make Speeches for others, which they never spake, nor perhaps thought on. There is one made for the King, upon his Reflection on the Loss of his Uncle the Duke of *Somerset*, too wise, and too deep for a Child-King to think, or utter. It is another Imperfection in our Author, that he shewed himself too partial, seldom speaking well of the Reformation, nor of the chief Reformers, especially those of the Clergy, as of *Goodrick*, Bishop of *Ely*, *Latymer*, sometime Bishop of *Worcester*, and *Cranmer*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*. Against the two last whereof especially, he shot out his Arrows, even bitter Words, and framed such Characters of them, as, if true, would have rendered them very evil Men. His Pen is, for the most part, dipped in Vinegar and Gall, giving sharp and ill Descriptions of Men generally, and making the Reign to run altogether



gether upon Intrigue, and ill Design: and that however plausibly things outwardly appeared, other Matters were drove at. And lastly, it is a Fault in him, that he wrote a History without any Chronology, and leaves his Reader to grope for the Knowledge of the Time, and the Months, and Years, wherein the respective Things fell out. The want of which, spoils the Beauty and Evidence of History, and makes the Notices of Things confused and uncertain.

The Authors he is beholden to for assisting him with the Materials of his History, are four especially. The first is *Patten's* Account of the Expedition into *Scotland* by the Duke of *Somerset*, in the first Year of the King: (which Author is transcribed into *Hollingshed*, whence, I suppose, he had it) and that is the reason he is so large and particular in that Affair. But that Author assists him no further than where that Expedition ended. His second Assistant is *Hollingshed's* History. Which he often transcribes, and sometimes mends the Speeches which he meets with there, by his own Fancy and Additions. His third Author is King *Edward* himself, in his excellent Journal. Which, it seems, he had the Perusal of, by the Favour of Sir *Robert Cotton*. And so he acknowledges. But this Journal containing but short and imperfect Notices of Things that fell out, our Author hath taken too much Liberty sometimes, to fill up and add unto them by his own mere Conjectures, confidently related as Matters of Truth; which yet sometimes prove Mistakes. And where the Journal is at an End, (for it concludes in *November, 1552.*) his History is well near ended too; tho' there were eight Months between that and the King's Death. The fourth Author he makes use of, is *Nicolas Sanders, De Schism. Anglicano*; A most profligate Fellow, a very Slave to the *Roman* See, and a sworn Enemy to his own Country, caring not what he writ, if it might but throw Reproach and Dirt enough upon the Reforming Kings and Princes, the Reformers, and the Reformation. From this Man he ventures to take some things that he sets down in his Book, scurrilous and false. But as for Records, Registers, Manuscript Letters, to improve or justify his History, and to present his Readers with some new things, and unknown before, he offers nothing thence.

This for the Faults of the History in general. I proceed now to make some particular Remarks and Observations upon some Passages in it. Yet prefacing this before I begin, That I do not this out of any Prejudice or Vain-glory, or Love of Contention or Contradiction, or any other ill End, (for I know mine own Imperfections) but for the sake of Truth only, and to contribute my poor Mite towards the maintaining of it.

*Pag. 1.* *Hayward* writes, King *Edward* was born the 17th Day of *October, 1537.* Whereas, according to *Cooper, Stow, Hollingshed*, the Lord *Herbert*, and the best Historians, the 12th, being the Eve of *S. Edward*, was the Day of his Birth.

*P. eadem.* He writes, That all Reports constantly ran, that his Mother's Body was opened for his Birth, and that she died of the Incision the fourth Day following. This, I make no question, was a Popish Invention at first, and the Report soon became current among that Party, out of Ill Will to *K. Henry*, to render him cruel, and the Prince his Son unluckily born. *Sanders*, as far as I can see, first gave out the Story; who writes, That when

The Authors  
by him used.

*Pag. 3.*

The Day of  
the King's  
Birth.  
First Edit.

Not cut out  
of his Mo-  
ther's Womb.



the Queen was in hard Labour, they asked the King, whose Life they should save, the Queen's, or the young Infant's; and he answered, *He could very easily have more Wives.* But neither *Cooper*, in his *Epitome of Chronicles*, nor *Hollingshed*, nor the Lord *Herbert*, say a Word of this. And Bishop *Burnet* mentions original Letters in the *Cotton Library*, that shew, how the Queen was well delivered of the Prince, and died in Childbed the next Day; or rather, two Days after, according to *Hollingshed*, and *Herbert*, and our other best Historians. Those Letters are exemplified by Dr. *Fuller* in his Church History: the one from the Queen herself, the other from her Physicians: both wrote to the Council.

Book VII.  
p. 421, 422.

Cox and Cbeke  
his Instru-  
ctors.

P. 3. He speaks of the Instructors of the young Prince; namely, Dr. *Cox*, and Mr. *Cbeke*.] But he leaves out Sir *Anthony Cook*; who was also a great Guide of his Learning and Manners in those early Years of his.

Moreover, of *Cox* and *Cbeke* he asserts, that they were of mean Birth, and that they might be well said to be born of themselves.] As for the former, I can say but little; only that one of both his Names, viz. *Richard Cox*, was an eminent Citizen and Skinner of *London*, and buried at *S. Austin's Church*, Anno 1467. where he had a Monument. As for *Cbeke*, his Family was antient, and of good Wealth. I find one *Margaret Cbeke* under King *Richard III.* who granted her a License to found a Chantry, with one Priest, in the Parish Church of *Long Ashton* nigh *Bristol*. Which bespake her a Woman of Quality and Wealth. This *Cbeke* was sprung from the *Cbekes* of the Isle of *Wight*. The Antiquity of which Family, is traced as far upward as King *Richard* the Second's Time, when a *Cbeke* married a Daughter of the Lord *Mountague's*. As Dr. *Fuller* teaches us, who also takes notice of this Error of our Author.

Ecclesiast. Hist.

Upon *Cbeke's* Learning also he casts a Blur, when he says, That for his other Sufficiencies, besides Skill in *Latin* and *Greek*, he was Pedantic enough, as appears by his Books.] I believe Sir *John Hayward* saw only three Books written by him, and scarcely them, (no more of his, I think, being ever published) viz. his Translation of two Orations of *S. Chrysostom*, that then first saw the Light; his Letters to Bishop *Gardiner*, concerning the true way of pronouncing *Greek*, wrote in *Latin*; and his *True Subject to the Rebel*, in *English*. Which no Man can depart from the reading of, but with very high Opinion of *Cbeke's* great Ingenuity and Learning. He was a Man of great Reading, an excellent Platonist and Philosopher; one of the first Restorers of good polite Learning in *Cambridge*. Dr. *Thomas Wylson*, Secretary of State to Queen *Elizabeth*, and his Contemporary in the University, who well knew him, called him, *That rare learned Man, and singular Ornament of the Land*. Much more might be said of the Worth of the Man, if this were a Place.

Epist. Dedic.  
to Sir Will.  
Cecyl, before  
his Translat  
of Demosth.  
Orat.

The Prince's  
Creation.  
p. 494.

P. 4. Great Preparations were made, after he was nine Years old, for the creating or declaring him Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwal*, and Count Palatine of *Chester*.] The Lord *Herbert* writes, This Prince was made so, six Days after his Birth. At which Time there was a Creation of two other Earls, viz. the Earls of *Hertford* and *Southampton*. But this, indeed, *Hayward* took out of the King's Journal, that speaks of the great Preparations for it, when he was about that Age.

But



But he, as doubting of the Prince's Creation now, added, *Or declaring him so to be.*

*Ibid.* The Earl of *Hertford*, and Sir *Anthony Brown*, were dispatched from the Council, to fetch the King, then lying at *Hertford*.] This likewise he had from the Journal. But *Hollingshed* makes the Place of the King's present Residence now to be, not *Hertford*, but *Hatfield*. The King whether at Hertford or Hatfield.

P. 6. A few Days after the King's Coronation, the Earl of *Southampton* was not only removed from his Office of Chancellor, but from his Place and Authority in Council.] This he hath *verbatim* from *Hollingshed*. But both he and his Author must be understood warily here; so as not to mean that he was removed from being a Privy Counsellor, but from that Authority he had at the Board before. For this Earl was not removed from being a Counsellor till the Fourth of the King, at *Candlemas*, when he and the Earl of *Arundel* were both put out, as *Hollingshed* P. 1061. himself writes. The Earl of Southampton discharged.

P. 7. He writes, that Archbishop *Cranmer* was violent with the King by Persuasions and Intreaties, to seal the Warrant for the Execution of *Joan Butcher*, an *Arian*: And by his Importunity prevailed with the King, who told the said Archbishop, he would lay the Charge thereof upon him before God. And then the Author adds his Conjecture hereupon, that it might be *Cranmer's* Importunity of Blood, whereby that Woman was burnt, that he himself afterwards felt the Smart of Fire.] This Passage, whether it be true or no, I cannot tell. The King mentioneth nothing of it in his Journal, only that she was burnt for her Obstinacy in her Heresy. And the Character is utterly disagreeing from *Cranmer's* Spirit. For none was more tender of Blood than he: None more pitiful and compassionate: Nor was he a Man for rigorous Methods, and violent Courses. Indeed *Fox* mentions, that the Council put *Cranmer* upon moving the King to sign this Warrant. Which was a Sign he had no great Forwardness to it himself. And in obedience to them he did labour with the King about it, and obtained it. And tho' he did this, it neither argued *Violence*, nor *Importunity for Blood*. For as he was not present at her Condemnation, as appears by the Council Book, so he may be concluded to have had no Desire of her Death, tho' the Warrant by his means was signed for her Execution. His Thoughts, I am apt to think, were, that this Fear of Death, which she saw so near, might serve to reclaim her from her Error, when his and other learned Men's Reasonings with her, being both ignorant and obstinate, were ineffectual. So that this you must look upon as another Strain of *Hayward's* Pen, and Goodwill to Churchmen. Archbishop Cranmer vindicated.

P. 15. He saith, the Duke of *Somerset* was a Man little esteemed, either for Wisdom, or Person, or Courage in Armes.] The Wrong this Author hath done the Name of this good Duke to Posterity, by this and such like Characters of him, interspersed thro' his Book, I have endeavoured to right in these *Collections*. And he that shall but read forward in the same Paragraph where these undervaluing Words are bestowed upon the Duke, will find the Author confuting himself. Duke of Somerset's Name wronged. See Chap. II. & III.

P. 43, 44. He blames the Counsils as unadvised, that were taken for Alterations, both in respect of Religion and Inclosures; because of the Danger thereof in the new Reign of the young King: And says, that some Respect should have been given to those green Times. And that



as to Religion, tho' King *Henry VIII.* passed the like Change before, yet that Example was not then to be followed, the King being not equal either in Spirit or Power.] These were the very Considerations that Bishop *Gardiner*, and the Papists in those Times, used with the Protector, and others of the Council, for the Continuance of the Popish Religion.

And Proclamation against Inclosures, disliked by *Hayward*;

He dislikes the Protector's Proclamation for laying down *Inclosures* by a certain Day. Which, he saith, being not obeyed, gave occasion to the Multitude to make Tumults.] In truth, the Inclosures themselves, whereby vast numbers of poor People had the Food taken out of their Mouths by the Rich, were the Causes of Tumults. The Proclamation was but just and reasonable, to redress such Wrongs done to the King's poor Subjects.

And the Injunctions.

P. 45. He seems to disapprove of the *Injunctions* that were set forth in the Beginning of the King's Reign, for removing Images out of the Churches, and for abolishing some Ceremonies: because the People stood so affected towards them.] If such regard were to be had to the pleasing of the People, why should they not be as well regarded in the Matter of Inclosures, which he expresses himself much for? But herein, whatsoever of a Politician our Author shewed himself, surely but an indifferent Protestant. If it were Ground sufficient, not to reform Religion, because it would give Distaste to the superstitious People, Religion must never be reformed. But in truth, vast were the Numbers of People, throughout this Land, especially the most civilized Parts of it, that at this Time of Day, did earnestly desire a Reformation in the Worship of Images, and the Use of superstitious Ceremonies.

Bishops committed; and why.

P. 46. He makes the Commitment of Bishop *Boner*, Bishop *Gardiner*, Bishop *Tonstal*, and Bishop *Hetbe*, to be all in the first Year of the King.] *Boner* indeed endured a short Restraint in the *Fleet* then, but that which may be truly called his Imprisonment, happened but in *September, 1549.* *Hetbe's* the same Year, *Tonstal's* not before the Year 1551. And only *Gardiner's* happened in the King's first Year, tho' he were put at Liberty again not long after. Nor was *Boner* put into Prison for refusing the King's Injunctions, as *Hayward* asserts, to make *Boner's* Merits look the greater, for he did receive them, tho' under a Protestation; but the true Reason was, because he did not publish in a Sermon the King's Authority during his Minority, as he was commanded. But hitherto, having recanted before the Council, for the ill manner of his receiving the Injunctions and Homilies from the King's Visitors, he went along with the King's Proceedings, swore Obedience to the King, professed his Assent and Consent touching the State of Religion then settled, directed out his Letters, according to the Archbishop's Precepts, for abolishing Images, Abrogation of the Mass, setting up Bibles in Churches, &c. Neither was *Gardiner's* Imprisonment this first Year of the King, as this Author asserts, because he preached that it were well these Changes in Religion should be stayed till the King were of Years, but for his Refractoriness to the King's Proceedings. His second Imprisonment indeed was occasioned by a Sermon which he preached on *S. Peter's Day*, in the second Year of the King; not for preaching that the Changes in Religion should be stayed, but for omitting to speak of several Matters committed to him in Writing, by Command of the Council: as, concerning the usurped



usurped Power of the Bishop of *Rome*, the Superstitions used towards *S. Nicolas*, and other Saints, concerning the Authority of the King in his Minority, concerning Auricular Confession, and some other things. *Hetbe* was committed for refusing to subscribe the new Book of Ordinations. Nor was *Hetbe* now Bishop of *Rocheſter*, as our Author names him, but of *Worceſter*. He leaves out *Day*, Bishop of *Chicheſter*, whom he might have mentioned among the reſt of the ſaid Biſhops committed.

P. 47. He holds the ſetting down Acts of Parliament in Hiſtory, to be fruitleſs, and improper for a *true carried Hiſtory*, as he expreſſes it; tho' he confeſſeth, a noble Writer eſteemed it a Maim in Hiſtory not to recite them.] And ſurely that noble Writer, whoever he were, was right. And this was the Practice of that noble Hiſtorian the Lord *Herbert*, and that complete Hiſtorian Mr. *Camden*. And certainly that muſt be but an imperfect Hiſtory, however *true carried* he fancies it, that ſhall take little or no notice of the great and public Tranſactions that paſs thro' the chief and high Council of the Nation, conſiſting of the Peers, and wiſeſt and wealthieſt of the Commons, aſſembled together in their Parliaments.

Reciting  
Acts of Par-  
liament,  
whether fit  
for Hiſtory.

P. 82. He ſuggeſts, that the Lord *Sudley* diſſented from his Brother the Duke of *Somerſet's* Opinions.] That is, in other Words, that he was a Papiſt. No ſuch thing appears in Hiſtory, but rather, that he was of the Religion now profeſſed and countenanced. For one of his laſt Requeſts, when he had the Meſſage ſent to him to prepare for Death, was, that his Daughter might be committed to the Care of the Duchefs of *Suffolk*, a faſt Proteſtant; and another was, that Mr. *Latymer* might be ſent to him, to aſſiſt him with his Counſel and Prayers; who would not have been a ghoully Father fit for his Turn, had he been a Papiſt.

L. Sudley,  
whether a  
Papiſt.

*Ibid.* He makes the firſt Cauſe of diſſolving the Knot of the two Brothers *Love*, viz. of the Duke, and the Lord Admiral, to proceed from the Duchefs: and that ſhe rubbed into the Duke's *dull Capacity*, as he unhandſomely reflects on that great Peer, that his Brother fought to take away his Life, and to attain his Place.] And,

His Fall.

P. 83. That the Duke at length yielding himſelf to her, did deviſe his Brother's Deſtruction. And that being condemned by Act of Parliament, within a few Days after, a Warrant was ſent under his Brother's Hand for his Execution. And laſtly, that the Accuſations againſt him conſiſted of frivolous or pitiful Matters.] By all this Account of this Lord's Fall, he is repreſented to have come unjuſtly by his Death, by the unnatural Acting of his Brother againſt him: and that he was ſet on to all this Miſchief, like a weak Man, by his Wife. This, if it were true, layeth a moſt heavy Imputation upon the Duke. But ſurely he was no ſuch Man, as he is here delivered down to be. He had better Morals, and more Religion than this came to. The Admiral was certainly an evil Man, turbulent, and full of ambitious Deſigns from the Beginning of this King's Reign. And his Brother the Duke did often adviſe him, and earneſtly diſſuade him from his dangerous Courſes, and uſed all the faireſt Means with him, pardoning what was paſt, and (that he might meet with his high Mind) gratifying him with Poſſeſſions, and the high and honourable Office of Lord Admiral. Yet was he continually practiſing after this; he raiſed Soldiers, and threatened *he would*

The Duke  
vindicated  
about it.



make the blackest Parliament that ever was in England. He is suspected to have poisoned his Wife, that excellent Woman, *Q. Katharine*, that being single, he might make his Addreses to the Lady *Elizabeth*, the King's Sister. So that, in fine, the Parliament did judge these things to be a traiterous aspiring to the Crown. And surely Sir *John Hayward* had never read the Act of Parliament, whereby that Lord was attainted, to term his Accusations to be *Frivolous or Pitiful Matters*. But I refer the Reader to the Fifteenth Chapter of these *Memorials*, for further Satisfaction about the Justice of this Lord's Death. Indeed it doth appear, that his Brother, with the rest of the Council, signed the Warrant for his Execution. But I am so far from believing that his Death was acceptable to him, that surely it was a thing went very near him, out of that natural Love and Affection that he ever shewed to have had for him.

And verily, all this is the less to be credited, *viz.* the Controversy between the two Wives for Precedency, and the Duchess of *Somerset's* setting her Husband upon this Mischief, because it is taken from lying *Sanders*, or at the best, from vulgar Report.

The Admiral's ill Life.

*Ibid.* He speaks of the Admiral's Protestation at the Point of his Death; and that the open Course and Carriage of his Life, cleared him in the Opinion of many.] What his Protestations were, I know not, nor do I know any History that relates them; any more than that *Stow* writ, that he took it on his Death, that he had never committed nor meant Treason to the King or Realm. The contrary to which, his Deeds declared: and he confessed himself in the *Tower*, that he would have had the Government of the King's Person. But the Course and Carriage of his Life, I am sure, could not clear him, having during all this Reign lived so known a turbulent and vicious Life.\*

Then follows another most vile Insinuation against the Protector, and the said reverend Father and Martyr, *Hugh Latymer*: *viz.* That he was set up by the said Protector, an Instrument to preach false Stories to the People, to take off the *Odium* of the Lord Admiral's Death, in these Words:

*Latymer slandered.*

P. 83. Dr. *Latymer* pretending all the Gravity and Sincerity of a professed Divine, yet content to be serviceable to Great Men's Ends, declared in a Sermon before the King, that while the Lord *Sudley* was a Prisoner in the *Tower*, he wrote to the Lady *Mary*, and the Lady *Elizabeth*, that they should revenge his Death. He adds, That *Latymer* cast forth many other Imputations, most doubted, many known to be untrue. And then from this Story the Author takes occasion to express his cankered Mind against Men in Holy Orders, in these Words: 'Some Theologians have been employed to defile Places erected only for Religion and Truth, by defending Oppressions and Faction: distaining their Profession, and the good Arts which they have learned, by publishing odious Untruths, upon Report and Credit of others.] As tho' they were a mercenary, base sort of Men, that, however Sacred their Office is, would be hired to be the Trumpets of other Men's lying Inventions, for the better deceiving of the People. This Author going thus out of his Road, that he might give a Lash to the *Theologians*, as he calls

\* Thus *Latymer* concerning him, in one of his Sermons before the King: 'That when the good Queen, his Wife, had daily Prayers before and after Noon in her House, the Admiral would get him out of the way. And that he was a Covetous, an Ambitious, a Seditious Man, and a Contemner of Common Prayer.'



calls them, shews his Goodwill to that Order of Men. But to return to *Latymer*.

Thus doth our Author what lay in his Power, to render that grave and good Man, and constant Martyr for Religion and Truth, to be a public Lyar in the Pulpit, to do a Piece of Service to the Duke. And he, that chose to die rather than to subscribe or acknowledge that to be true, which he thought to be false, is made such a profligate Wretch, wilfully and openly to promulgate before so solemn an Assembly, Uncertainties, and downright Lyes.

*Hayward* seems indeed to go Hand in Hand with *Sanders*, to defame this reverend Man; who, speaking of *Latymer*, gives him this broad Compliment, *His Apostleship consisted in Lying*; and then tells this Story of him, That after the Dukes had invented the Mischief against the Admiral, the Protector went and dealt with *Latymer*, that he should in his Sermon traduce him before the People, for a Traitor. And that accordingly *Latymer* readily undertook it, and soon after in the Pulpit told a Tale of, I know not what, Snares preparing against the King's Majesty by the Admiral; and therefore that he deserved Death. So that by this Account the Duke and the Divine are represented as a Couple of bloody Wretches, combining together to make an innocent Man seem guilty of Treason, and then cry out for Execution against him.

P. 85. The Author here begins the Relation of the Duke's first Troubles: Wherein he follows, almost Word for Word, *Hollingshed's* History: only framing two fine Speeches; one to be spoken by the Lord *Rich*, Lord Chancellor, to the Maior and Citizens of *London*, whereof we have not any Footsteps in History, as I can find; the other to be delivered by *George Stadlow*, a grave Citizen, to his Fellow Citizens. Whose Speech indeed we have in *Hollingshed*: But our Author is pleased to dress up and adorn it with much florid Language, and several Additions of his own. Which seems more proper for a Romance, than an History.

P. 94. Of Secretary *Petre* he gives this Character, *Who under Pretence of Gravity, covered much Untrustfulness of Heart*. An unfair Character of a very wise and honest Man, and long experienced in the public Affairs, without any Spot, that ever I could find; except that he did comply with the Changes of Religion, under the Princes in whose Reigns he served. Which was a Practice of a great Number more besides himself.

P. 101. Speaking of the Duke, after his Subscription to the Articles laid against him, and Acknowledgment of his Fault, and Desire of Pardon, our Author thus gives his Judgment: 'Assuredly he was a Man of a feeble Stomach, unable to concoct a great Fortune, prosperous or adverse: And that he should have lost his Life, to preserve his Honour: And that he cast away Life and Honour together: And that as he thirsted after his Brother's Blood, so others thirsted after his.] Would a Man of a cooler Temper than our Author, have presently judged the Duke so impotent and feeble, and unable to govern himself? Would he not rather have considered the Circumstances wherein he stood, and what powerful Enemies combined together against him, and thirsted for his Ruin. The Duke might perhaps have been somewhat too hasty, if Sir *John Hayward* had been his Counsellor, to have presently taken up

Armes,



Armes, and ventured Life and Honour together. And so might have lost both together, as in all Probability he would, being so inferior in Strength to his Adversaries, who were in effect all the Council, except one or two. The Duke undoubtedly considered this, and also the Danger the King was and would have been in, if this Broil had proceeded further; and the Danger of Religion too, to which many of the other Side had no great Favour; and who, upon the Condition of their Assistance, would have made their Terms. And it was not his Feebleness therefore, but rather his Caution and Wisdom, that made him submit as he did, and ask Pardon. As for his thirsting after his Brother's Blood, it was a Calumny, as I have mentioned before.

Sir John Mason.

P. 105. Sir John Mason Secretary of State.] He was not Secretary of State, but Secretary for the French Tongue.

The Duke of Suffolk.

P. 128. Having occasion to speak of the Marquis of Dorset, who was now raised to be Duke of Suffolk, according to his wont, he gives this disparaging Character of him, *A Man for his barmless Simplicity, neither misliked, nor much regarded.*] This Nobleman was a great Friend to the Reformation, and a Patron of learned Men. I have seen Letters of Bucer and Bullinger to him: And which is instead of all that can be said of him, he was the Father of a very admirable, tho' unfortunate Woman, the Lady Jane Grey. He was no such Domineerer or Boutefeu as Northumberland; but, surely, was never the worse for that.

Sir Robert Dudley.

*Ibid.* But of all the ill Characters our Author gives of Men, none exceeds that he bestows upon Sir Robert Dudley, the great Duke of Northumberland's Son. Whom he calls, 'The true Heir of his Father's Hate against Persons of Nobility, and of his Cunning to dissemble the same.' He was afterwards [he means under Q. Elizabeth, when he was Earl of Leicester] for Lust and Cruelty, a Monster of the Court, as apt to hate, so a most sure Executioner of his Hate, yet rather by Practice than by open dealing, as wanting rather Courage than Wit. And finally, he attributes the King's Death to him.] It is true, this Man was none of the best, but is represented commonly worse than he was, especially by Parsons, in his Book intituled, *Leicester's Commonwealth.* Out of which Hayward hath taken a Character for Dudley: When other more wary Men would hardly set down for Truth, what they read in that malicious Book, and wrote by so invenomed an Author. This Character must not be denied him, That he was a good Soldier, a gallant Courtier, and a Favourer of Learning.

Marquis of Northampton.

P. 136. Of the Marquis of Northampton he had but a mean Opinion too, and set an ill Mark upon him, as well as he did upon the rest of the Nobles of this King's Court. Of this Marquis he saith, That when he was crossed, or contentious with any, he never replied to any Answer: Which, he said, was a manifest Sign of no strong Spirit.] It was a manifest Sign indeed of no contentious Spirit, and that delighted not in fending and proving, as we say. But he means a Meanness and Lowness of Spirit and Courage. I think it not so manifest a Sign, because sometimes this Sparingness of Words, and Slowness of Replies, proceeds from Wisdom and Discretion. But where he met with this Account of the Marquis's Temper, I know not; he was certainly able enough to make Replies, if he had pleased, being of a very gay and florid Fancy and Wit.



P. 137. He writes not like an Historian, when he gives us so lame an Account of the Imprisonment of the Bishop of *Durham*. He saith, ' He was sent to the *Tower* for Concelement of I know not what Treason, written to him, I know not by whom, and not discovered until what shall I call the Party, did reveal it.] In the *Journal* our Author met with the Commitment of this Bishop for Concelement of Treason. And because he had read no more Particulars of it, he would hint as tho' his Imprisonment were unjust, and would cast the Imputation of it upon the State, as a Piece of Forgery and Oppression. Whereas by the Minutes in the Council Book, and the Book of *Warrants* to the Seal, the Particulars of this Matter appear.

Bishop of *Durham*, why committed.

*Ibid.* Concerning the Reason of the Lord *Rich*'s relinquishing the Chancellorship, and the ill Character given by our Author to the Bishop of *Ely*, that succeeded in that Office, I have spoken in the foregoing Book.

Lord *Rich*. Bishop of *Ely*.

P. 144. The Commission to Thirty two Persons for framing a Body of Ecclesiastical Laws, to be used in this Kingdom, he saith, took no Effect.] It took Effect so far, that a Book of Laws was drawn up, and completely finished, and wanted nothing but the King's Confirmation; which his Death, and some other Causes, unhappily prevented.

The Commission for framing Ecclesiastical Laws.

And the Reason he gives why this took no Effect, was, because of the Number of the Commissioners, and divers of them far remote, and others had great Offices, that they could not afford Meetings for so great a Business. Also their Differences of Professions and Ends necessarily raised Difference in Judgment.] But for remedying of all this, he might have known, that the King therefore issued out another Commission in *October*, 1551. to eight Persons only, leaving the Work in their Hands to finish. And the Archbishop of *Canterbury* being one of these Eight, knowing the great Usefulness of the thing, hastened it, and in Effect, himself completed it, as is shewn in the Memorials of Archbishop *Cranmer*. But indeed the true Reason why this excellent Book, with so much Study, and Care, and Consultation, well framed, had not Authority given to it, was because the Nation, especially the Great Men, could not endure Ecclesiastical Discipline. And so *Cox*, one of the eight Commissioners, wrote about this Time to *Bullinger*, in the course of his Correspondence, *We hate those bitter Institutions of Christian Discipline*.

P. 155. The King's Debts, he saith, were given forth to be at least 251000 Pounds.] The King's Debts *Anno* 1551. owing at Home and Abroad, were in all 241179 Pounds 14 Shillings 10 Pence, as they are particularly set down in a Paper of Secretary *Cecyl*'s, which may be seen before.

The King's Debts.

Chap. IX.

And in the Page before, he is setting down from the *Journal* an Account of what the King had paid of the Money he took up at Interest from Abroad, namely, 63000 Pounds *Flemish*, paid in *February*, and 24000 Pounds in *April*.] Whereas in the *Journal*, the last Sum is 14000 Pounds. Which two Sums came to 77000 Pounds together. And so it is set down in the *Journal*. From which he varies again: and instead of 77000 Pounds, writes 87000 Pounds wilfully, the better to cover his former Mistake.



Beaumont  
Master of  
the Rolls.

P. 156. He errs again from the King's Journal. From which now all along he does but copy, with some little Descants of his own. He writes, that *Beaumont*, Master of the Rolls, lent above 700 Pounds of the King's Money.] Whereas in the King's Journal it is 9000 Pounds.

P. 173. He saith, the Duke of *Northumberland* in the Contrivance of the Settlement of the Crown upon the Lady *Jane*, used the Advice of two Persons especially, viz. the Lord Chief Justice *Mountague*, who drew the Letters Patents, and Secretary *Cecyl*: both which furnished the Patents with divers Reasons, some of Law, and some of Policy in State.] Herein Sir *John Hayward* grossly wrongs the Memory of both these Gentlemen, out of what Design, I know not.

*Cecyl* assisted  
not in the  
new Settlement  
of the  
Crown;

First, As for *Cecyl*, he was so far from assisting and drawing up this Instrument of Settlement, that he opposed it as much as he could: (And so *Camden* expressly saith) tho' he signed with the rest. Moreover, I have seen an Apology of his own drawing up, about this Matter. Wherein he writ, how he refused to subscribe the Book, when none of the Council did refuse, whereby he incurred the Indignation of the Duke of *Northumberland*. That he refused to make a Proclamation, (which was for the proclaiming *Q. Jane*) and turned the Labour to *Throgmorton*. That he refused the writing of a Letter to send abroad in the Realm, for the shewing *Q. Jane's* Title. This he refused, because he would not write *Queen Mary, Bastard*. And the Duke wrote it himself. That he avoided being present at the drawing up of the Proclamation for the publishing of *Jane's* Title, tho' he were especially appointed thereunto. That he avoided answering of the Queen's Letters, which she wrote from *Kenninghal* to the Council, requiring their Obedience. That he avoided likewise writing all public Letters to the Realm, upon *Jane's* Access to the Crown. Moreover, that he practised with the Lord Treasurer to win the Lord Privy Seal, that he might by the Lord *Russel's* means cause *Windfor* Castle to serve the Queen: and they two to levy the West Parts for the Queen's Service. That he opened himself to the Lord Admiral, whom he found thereto disposed. That he did the like to the Lord *Darcy*. That he purposed to have stolen down to the Queen's Highness, and *Gosnold* offered to lead him thither, because he knew not the way: And he had his Horses ready at *Lambeth* for that Purpose. That when he heard of this Purpose first secretly, he disliked it, and fearing the Event, conveyed away his Lands, his Goods, and his Leases. All these things considered, who can think it true, that he furnished the Settlement with Articles taken from Policy? The most he did was, to sign with the rest. Which also he did as a Witness to King *Edward's* Hand, and not as an Abettor or Counsellor.

And *Mountague* fore-  
against his  
Will.

Church Hist.  
B. VIII. p. 1.

This for *Cecyl*. Then for Sir *Edward Mountague*, the Lord Chief Justice, how he stood affected, and what he did in this Affair, may be seen by an original Paper, drawn up by that Judge's own Hand, which his Great Grandchild, *Edward Lord Mountague* of *Broughton*, communicated unto Dr. *Fuller*. The Sum of which was, That he, and the rest of the Judges, told the King, that the Bill of Articles shewed to them, according to which they should frame a Book for the Settlement of the Crown in the Lady *Jane*, was directly against the Act of Succession. Which was, an Act of Parliament, and would be taken away by no such Device. But when it was the King's absolute Will, that a Book should



should be made according to those Articles, he took them. And the next Day, he and the rest concluded, to do nothing; but to report to the Lords, that not only the executing of this Device was Treason after the King's Death, but the making of this Device was presently Treason. And so they did report to the Council. And that the Duke of *Northumberland* upon it was in a great Fury, and called Sir *Edward*, Traitor. And so he departed home, without doing any thing more. Afterwards *Mountague* received another Letter from the Council, to come to the Court, he, and some other of the Judges, and Lawyers. And being come, they were brought to the King: who demanding, why they had not made the Book, *Mountague* told the King the Reason. And moreover, that if they had, it were of no Effect nor Force, but utterly void, when the King should decease. And that the Statute of Succession could not be taken away, but by the same Authority that made it, and that was a Parliament: and advised the King, that all might be deferred to a Parliament. The King said, they should make it, and afterwards it should be ratified by Parliament. That divers of the Lords then said, that if he and the rest refused now, they were Traitors. So that, what with the Duke's Anger the Day before, and the King's, and other Lords now, he was in the greatest Fear that ever he was in all his Life. And so at last, being an old Man, and for Safety of his Life, he told the King, that he had served his Father, and his Highness during his Life, and loth he would be to disobey his Commandment, and would for his own part obey it, so that he had his Highness License and Commission under the Great Seal for the doing of it, and when done, to have a general Pardon. Both which were granted him. And he and the rest made the Device, as he writ, with sorrowful Hearts, and weeping Eyes. And lastly, after he had done this, to shew how little he approved of putting by the true Succession, he sent his Son to serve and assist Queen *Mary* with twenty Men, with other Gentlemen of *Buckinghamshire*. By what is written sufficiently appears, our Author hath wronged the Memory of these two worthy Men, and wronged Posterity also in imposing upon their Belief matters of Falshood.

Sir *John Hayward* in his Life-time was esteemed for his Writings of *Hayward's English History*. Of which what his own Thoughts were, may appear in his Preface to a devout Treatise of his, named *David's Tears*, written when he was not far from the Conclusion of his Life, and printed Anno 1626. 'Of mine own Productions never any did fully content me: and the Approbation of others is no Warrant to my own Judgment, tender and severe in what I do. They [his Productions] may happily be sprinkled over, but thorowly died I conceive they are not. In case any thing is excusable in them, it is not in regard of themselves, but in Comparison with some other formless, unfinewy Writings. Whereto, notwithstanding, I find good Allowance to be given. Assuredly knowing mine own Ignorance and Defects, I wonder much at the constant Assurance of many others. But Modesty forbids us to speak good or evil of ourselves.' This is his own Sense of his Writings, which he calls his *Productions*. Wherein first, he declared, that he was not satisfied with them: Whether he were conscious of some wilful Mistakes, or Interpolations, or other Deficiencies in them, I know not. And perhaps he thought the best Quality in them was

*Hayward's Sense of his own Writings.*

*His Book called David's Tears.*



his Style and Language: which he seems to mean by their being *sprinkled over*, and his Partiality and Neglect of Truth, meant by his Phrase of their *not being thoroughly dyed*. But how imperfect soever they were, secondly, he valued them before other Men's. Which, however well thought on by other Readers, and by the Authors themselves, yet to his most accurate Eye, they were *formless and unsinewy*. And tho' in a seemingly modest Fit, he reckoned but meanly of his Productions, and knew his own Ignorance and Defects, yet his Judgment he valued sufficiently, stiling it, *Tender and severe in what he did*.

Some Character of this Writer.

Preface to David's Tears.

In truth, his Temper seemed not well qualified for an Historian, being touchy and morose, censorious, conceited, and too much aspiring. Which was the Cause, in Probability, that as he had Enemies, so he wanted Interest enough to overpower them that opposed him, and his Advancement, and that intercepted him in it. So that he fell short of his Expectation of some things he aimed at, and thought his Merit deserved. And so in his old Age he gave himself to Retirement in some Discontent, and there wrote his *David's Tears*. Which those Words of his do express: 'This is the Reason wherefore many well esteemed for Sufficiency, [meaning himself for one] whose Virtue forbids them to be base, hang under the Wheel, and cannot advance. Yea, sometimes it happeneth, that while they are most honestly busied, Men of scornful and beggarly Ignorance, separate from imitable Qualities or Endeavours, will be nimble to nip from them such small Matters as they have. I confess, I have been bitten by some such Vipers, [a just Punishment: as he had in his Censures bitten others] who think nothing sufficient that they have, nothing dishonest that they do. But I envy not the Gravel in any Man's Throat. It sufficeth for me, that I have attained a quiet contented Life, free either from Anguish in myself, or Envy at others, free either from wishing great Matters, or wanting some small.' And so we leave this Historian.



CHAP.



## C H A P. XXIX.

*Commissions and Proclamations issued from the King upon divers Occasions, in the Years 1550, 1551, 1552, and 1553.*

**B**ESIDES various Notices and Instructions which I have been furnished with from the Lord Chancellor *Goodrick's* Ledger Book, and King *Edward's* Book of *Warrants*, occasionally made use of by me in the foregoing History; there be many considerable Matters besides, remaining in those Manuscripts, which will serve notably to illustrate this Reign. And therefore I shall here insert them under divers Heads, for better Method, as precious REMAINS, viz. Commissions, and Proclamations, Gifts, Grants, Annuities, Pardons, Purchases, and Offices; Letters, Warrants, Licenses, and Passports; Collations, Presentations, and other Grants to Churchmen, and Universities; Schools founded; and lastly, particular Matters relating to the King's Household; commencing from the fourth Year of the King's Reign, and the Year of our Lord 1550.

## I. COMMISSIONS.

ANNO

1550.

A Commission to *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Nicolas* Bishop of *London*, *Thomas* Bishop of *Ely*, *Henry* Bishop of *Lincoln*, *Sir William Petre*, *Sir James Hales*, Knights, *Griffyn Leyson*, *John Olyver*, Doctors of Law, *Richard Goodrick* and *John Gosnal*, Esquires, or to nine, eight, seven, six, five, or four of them, whereof the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishop of *London*, the Bishop of *Ely*, the Bishop of *Lincoln*, and *Sir William Petre*, [and *Sir James Hales*, for he is added in the Commission itself] to be one: To call before them, at such Days, Times, and Places as they shall think convenient, *Stephen* Bishop of *Winchester*, and all others, whom they shall think good, and necessary to be called, for the Examination, Trial, Proof, and full Determination of such Matters as appertaineth unto him: And to require every such Process, Writing, and Escrip, as have passed in that Matter: And he being called esones [if he shall] refuse to conform himself according to the King's Majesty's Commandment, to proceed against him to Deprivation of his Bishopric, and removing of him from the same. Decemb. 1550. This full Commission at Length, is preserved by Mr. Fox, in his *Acts and Monuments*, first Edit. p. 776.

A Commission for the Trial of *Gardiner* Bishop of *Winton*.

A Commission to *Edward* Duke of *Somerset*, to *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Richard Rich* Kt. Lord *Rich*, &c. *William* Earl of *Wiltshire*, *John* Earl of *Warwic*, *John* Earl of *Bedford*, *William* Marquis of *Northampton*, *Edward* Lord *Clinton*, *Thomas* Lord *Wentworth*, *Cuthbert* Bishop of *Durham*, *William* Lord *Windsor*, and *William* Lord *Paget*, or to two of them, to prorogue the Parliament, that was adjourned to the 20th of *January* next, unto the second Day of *March* following.

A Commission to prorogue the Parliament.



ANNO  
1550.

For Anabap-  
tists, and irre-  
gular Mini-  
sters of the  
Sacraments.

A Commission to *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishops of *Ely*, *London*, *Lincoln*, *Norwich*, *Rocheſter*, *Nicolas Wotton* Dean of *Canterbury*, *William Petre*, *William Cecyl*, *Richard Cocks*, *Anthony Coke*, *James Hales*, *Thomas Smith*, *John Cheke*, *William May*, *John Taylor*, *Simon Haynes*, *Griffith Leyſon*, *John Redman*, *Hugh Latymer*, *Giles Eire*, *Matthew Parker*, *Miles Coverdale*, *John Olyver*, *Richard Liel*, *Roland Taylor*, *Chriſtopher Newinſon*, *Richard Goodrick*, *John Goſnold*, *Richard Wilks*, *Henry Sidal*, and *Nicolas Bullingham*, or to any thirty one, thirty, twenty nine, twenty eight, twenty ſeven, twenty ſix, — five, four, or three of them; whereof the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishop of *Norwich*, the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, *Nicolas Wotton*, *William Petre*, *William Cecyl*, *Richard Cox*, *James Hales*, and *William* [May, I ſuppoſe] to be one: To correct and puniſh all *Anabaptiſts*, and ſuch as do not duly miniſter the Sacraments according to the Book of Common Prayer, ſet forth by the King's Maſteſty. This was dated in *January*, 1550.

A Commiſ-  
ſion for pro-  
roguing the  
Parliament.

A Commission to *Edward* Duke of *Somerſet*, *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Richard Lord Rich*, Lord Chancellor, *William* Earl of *Wiltſhire*, *John* Earl of *Warwic*, *John* Earl of *Bedford*, *William* Marquis of *Northampton*, *Henry* Marquis of *Dorſet*, *Henry* Earl of *Arundel*, *Edward* Lord *Clinton*, *Thomas* Lord *Wentworth*, and divers more, or any two of them, to prorogue the Parliament to the 30th of *October* next. This bore date in *February*, 1550.

1551.

For Treaty  
with Scotland.

A Commission to *Thomas* Bishop of *Norwich*, *Sir Robert Bowes*, *Sir Leonard Beckwith*, and *Sir Thomas Chaloner*, or to three of them, to determine with the Queen of *Scots*, or her Commissioners, certain Controversies riſen between the King and her, ſince the late Treaty of Peace concluded betwixt the King's Maſteſty and the *French* King; as well of Limits and Confines, as of taking and delivering Captains and Pledges, and all manner of Spoils, Piracies, and other Attempts done by either of their Subjects. Dated *April 15*, 1551.

For Jersey.

A Commission to *Helier de Carteret*, *John Clerk*, *Clement Lemprier*, Eſquires, *Ninian Saunders* Gent. *Lewis Hampton* Clerk, *Charles Mabion* Clerk, *Richard Dinnarick*, *Nicolas Lemprier*, *Edward Denmarick*, *Laurence Hampton*, Jurats, *Hugh Perrin*, and *Nicolas Solomont*, Gentlemen, and to twelve, eleven, ten, nine, — or ſix of them, whereof *Helier de Carteret*, and *John Clerk*, or one of them at the leaſt, to be one: Giving them Power and Authority to call before them the Inhabitants of *Jerſey*, by the Advice of *Sir Henry Powlet* Kt. Captain there: and to aſſeſs every of them to be Contributoryes according to their Goods and Lands, towards the building of two Fortreſſes, to be edified, the one in the Ilet of *S. Helier*, and the other in the Ilet of *S. Ohyn* there: And alſo a perpetual Penſion to be gathered of their Lands, for the Charges of the ſa'e keeping of them: And to put their ſaid Order and Ceſſment in Writing, that it may remain for ever; with an Authority given them to appoint Officers to make all manner of Proviſion for the Edification of the ſaid Fortreſſes. This was dated in *May*.

To the Duke  
of Somerſet, to  
be the King's  
Juſtice in  
Bucks and  
Berks.

A Commission to *Edward* Duke of *Somerſet*, to be the King's Juſtice, to inquire of all Treasons, Miſpriſions of Treason, Inſurrections, Rebellions, unlawful Aſſemblies, and Conventicles, unlawful ſpeaking of Words, Confederacies, Conſpiracies, falſe Allegations, Contempts, Falſehoods,



hoods, Negligences, Concealments, Oppressions, Riots, Routs, Murders, Felonies, and other ill Deeds, whatsoever they be; and also all Accessaries of the same, in the Counties of *Bucks* and *Berks*: And to appoint certain Days and Places for the Inquiry thereof: And to be the King's Lieutenant within the said Counties, for levying of Men, and to fight against the King's Enemies, and Rebels, and to execute upon them the Martial Law; and to subdue all Invasions, Insurrections, &c. as shall chance to be moved in any Place, as he shall repair to the Limits of the said Shires; with a Commandment to all Officers to assist him. And that the said Commission be not prejudicial to the former Commissions of *Oyer* and *Terminer* within the said Counties.

ANNO  
1551.

A like Commission to the Earl of *Rutland*, and the Lord *Clinton*, for *Lincoln* and *Nottingham*.

The like for  
*Lincoln* and  
*Nottingham*.  
For *Norfolk*.

The like to the Earl of *Suffex*, Sir *Roger Townsend*, Sir *William Ferrimor*, and Sir *John Robertson* [*Robert* perhaps] for *Norfolk*.

The like Commission to the Earl of *Warwic*, the Viscount *Hereford*, and the Lord *Paget*, for *Staffordshire*.

For *Stafford*.

The like to the Earl of *Arundel*, and the Lord *La Ware*, for *Suffex*.

For *Suffex*.

The like to the Lord Chancellor [*Lord Rich*] the Earl of *Oxon*, the Lord *Darcy*, and Sir *John Gate*, for *Essex*.

For *Essex*.

The like to Sir *William Herbert*, for *Wiltshire*.

For *Wilt*.

The like to the Bishop of *Ely*, for the Isle of *Ely*.

For *Ely*.

The like to the Earl of *Warwic*, for *Warwic* and *Oxford*.

For *Warwic*

The like to the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, for *Surrey*.

and *Oxon*.

The like to the Lord *Cobham*, and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports [*Sir Thomas Cheney*] for *Kent* and *Canterbury*.

For *Surrey*.

The like to the Earl of *Huntingdon*, for *Leicester* and *Huntingdon*.

For *Leicester*

The like to the Earl of *Darby*, for *Lancashire*.

and *Huntingd*.

The like to the Earl of *Shretesbury*, for *Darby*.

For *Lancash*.

The like to Sir *William Herbert*, for the Principality and Marches of *Wales*.

For *Darby*.

The like to the Lord *Darcy*, Lord *Wentworth*, and Sir *Anthony Wyngfield*, for *Suffolk*.

For *Wales*.

The like to Sir *Robert Trewbit*, and Mr. *Thomas Audley*, for *Huntingdon*.

For *Suffolk*.

The like to the L. Marquis of *Northampton*, for *Northampton*, *Bedford*, *Hertford*, and *Cambridgeshire*.

For *Huntingd*.

The like to the Earl of *Bedford*, for *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Devon*, and *Cornwal*.

For *Northam*,  
*Bedf*, *Hertf*,  
and *Cambrid*.

The like to the Lord Treasurer [Earl of *Wiltshire*] for *Southampton*.

For *Dorset*,  
*Somerset*, *Devon*,  
and *Cornwal*.

The like to the Lord *Paget*, and Sir *Roger Cholmely*, for *Middlesex*.

For *Southamp*.

All these Commissions were dated in *May*.

For *Middlesex*.

A Commission to Sir *William Godolphin* Kt. *John Killigrew*, and *John Godolphin*, Esquires, personally to repair to the Isle of *Sulley* [*Scilley*] and to make a perfect diligent Survey of all the same Isle, and to set out the number of Acres of Land within the same; and to divide the same into so many Parts as may serve for Tenants, and Housholders of Husbandry, allowing them sufficient Land for tilling, and sufficient Pasture: And to grant the same for 21 Years, reserving to the King reasonable Rents. And for their better Instruction, the King hath sent there inclosed, certain Instructions. And that they signify in the Chancery, in distinct

A Commis-  
sion for *Scilly*.



ANNO  
1551.

distinct Writing in Parchment, under their Hands, within three Months after they shall accomplish the same Commission, their Doing therein. Dated in *May*.

For Mines in  
*Ireland*.

A Commission to *Robert Record* Esq; appointed Surveyor of all the Mines of Metal and Minerals in the Realm of *Ireland*; that he, during Pleasure, shall as well rule and order the Affairs and Works concerning the said Mines, and Provisions of the same, as to appoint and take all manner of Provision, Labours, and Carriages, both by Land and Water, as well in the Realm of *England* as *Ireland*. And that the Treasurer, Controulor, and Seymaster of the late erected Mints, and other Officers, in all their Alleys [Alloyes] Assays, Mixtures, Meltings, Blanchings, Sheerings, and other their Works, use the Counsel of the said Surveyor. Dated in *May*.

For fortify-  
ing *Scilly*.

A Commission to *John Killigrew*, to take up and provide all manner of Workmen, and Labourers of all sorts, and all such Stuff, of what kind soever it be, as shall be thought requisite and needful for Furtherrance and finishing of the new Fortification within the Isle of *Scilly*. Dated in *June*.

For a Di-  
vorce.

A Commission to the Bishop of *Chester*, *William Cliff*, *Richard Liel*, *Jeffrey Glyn*, and *Henry Harvey*, Doctors of the Law, and *George Wimesly*, Bachelor of Law, or any two of them; that upon the Proof of the manifold Adultery of *Elizabeth Atherton*, they separate and divorce her from *John Atherton* her Husband. Dated in *June*.

For a Di-  
vorce.

A Commission to Sir *William Petre*, Secretary, Sir *Richard Read*, &c. upon due Proof of the manifest Adultery of the Lady *Mary Luttrell*, to separate and divorce her from Sir *John Luttrell*, her Husband. Dated in *June*.

For proro-  
guing the  
Parliament.

A Commission, dated in *August*, to the Duke of *Somerset*, *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, &c. or any two of them, to prorogue the Parliament to the 4th of *November* next.

For visiting  
the *Savoy*.

A Commission to Sir *Roger Cholmely*, Sir *Richard Rede*, *Richard Goodric* Esq; *Broke*, [Dr. *Oliver*] and Dr. *Liel*, or to six, four, or three of them, to visit the House or Hospital, commonly called *The Savoy*: And to enquire and search, by all ways and means, not only how and in what sort, the Foundation, Statutes and Ordinances thereof have been, and be observed, and wherein the same doth agree with the common Order and Proceeding of the Realm in Causes of Religion: And how the Ministers, both Men and Women, give Attendance, and do their Duties in their several Offices; but also of the Life, Behaviour, and Conversation of all the Ministers aforefaid; and the State of their House, and Order of their Lands: And to call before them such Men as they shall think expedient, for the attaining of more Knowledge touching the Premises: And to advertise the King's Majesty, or his Privy Council, of their Proceedings. This was dated in *September*.

For Trial of  
the Bishops  
of *Worcester*  
and *Chichester*.

A Commission to Sir *Roger Cholmely* Kt. Sir *Richard Rede* Kt. *Rich. Goodrick* Esq; *John Gosnold* Esq; *John Oliver*, and *Richard Liel*, Doctors of the Law, or to six, five, or four of them; authorizing them, at such several Days, Times, and Places, and as often as they shall think good, to call before them the Bishops of *Worcester* and *Chichester*, and every of them, several and apart, and all other whom they shall think good and necessary, for the Examination, Trial, Proof, and full Determination

tion



tion of such Matters as be laid against them; and to require all Proceſs, Writings, and Eſcripts, either remaining with the Council, or otherwiſe: and finding that the ſaid Biſhops, and either of them, have not conformed themſelves according to the King's Pleaſure, Commandment, or Monitions given by the Council, by the King's Commandment, to proceed againſt them, and every of them, to Deprivation of their ſeveral Biſhoprics. This bore Date in September.

ANNO  
1551.

A Commiſſion, dated in October, to *Edward Duke of Somerſet, Thomas Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Richard Lord Rich, Lord Chancellor, William Marquis of Wincheſter, &c.* and to two of them, to prorogue the Parliament from the 2d of March until the 4th of November next.

For proro-  
guing the  
Parliament.

A Commiſſion, dated Octob. 22. to *Thomas Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Nicolas Biſhop of London, and Richard Cocks Almoner, Peter Martyr, Rowland Tayler of Hadley, Bartholomew Traheron, John Lucas, John Goſnold*: To conſider all the King's Eccleſiaſtical Laws, according to a Statute of Parliament made 3<sup>o</sup>. Reg. Edw. VI. wherein 32 Perſons were appointed for the ſame Uſe; and to gather and put in order in Writing all ſuch of them as they ſhall think convenient, and other Laws Eccleſiaſtical, as they ſhall think meet to be uſed within the Realm: and to deliver the ſame unto the King's Maſteſty, that they may be further conſidered according to his Statutes.

For framing  
Eccleſiaſtical  
Laws.

A Commiſſion, dated Octob. 26. to *John Beaumont Eſq; Sir William Portman, Sir James Hales, Sir Richard Rede, John Olyver, and William Cook*, and to five, four, or three of them, to hear and determine any manner of Matters before the King in his Chancery, between his Subjects, now hanging, or hereafter to be exhibited; with Authority to award out all manner of Proceſs that hath been accuſtomed therefore: and to puniſh all manner of Contempts, and do all other Circumſtances neceſſary for the ſame; with a Commandment to all the Officers to attend upon five, four, or three of them. And all things done by them to ſtand in like Force as if they were done by the Lord Chancellor. [The Lord Chancellor Rich was now ſick.]

For diſpatch-  
ing Chancery  
Matters.

A Commiſſion in November, to *Thomas Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Richard Lord Rich, Lord Chancellor, &c.* to prorogue the Parliament from the 4th of November to the 23d of January following.

To prorogue  
the Parlia-  
ment.

A Commiſſion in November to *Edward Lord Clinton*, to chriſten the French King's Child.

To chriſten  
the French  
King's Child.

A Commiſſion to the ſaid Lord Clinton, and *Sir William Pickering*, jointly and ſeverally, to hear all manner Matters with the French King: Concerning the Marriage between the King's Maſteſty and the Lady Elizabeth, the French King's Daughter, and the Confirmation thereof according to their Inſtructions, which they muſt receive by vertue of the ſame.

To treat of  
a Match  
with France.

A Commiſſion in November, to *Thomas Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Thomas Biſhop of Ely, Richard Cocks Almoner, Peter Martyr, William May, Rowland Tayler, John Lucas, and Richard Goodrick*, to confer together touching the Eccleſiaſtical Laws. [This Commiſſion ſuperſeded that made in October, in which three Perſons were nominated Commiſſioners, which it was thought convenient afterward to change, viz. the Biſhop of London, Barth. Traheron, and John Goſnold, for the Biſhop of Ely, William May, and Rich. Goodrick.]

For the Ec-  
cleſiaſtical  
Laws.

A Com-



ANNO

1551.

For Inquiry  
into the  
Dearth.

A Commission, dated in *December*, to *John Lord Mordaunt*, *Sir John Saint John*, *Sir Urian Bruerton*, Knights, *Nic. Luke*, *Francis Pygot*, and *Lewis Dives*, Esquires: To enquire by all ways and means, how the enhancing of Prices of Corn, Victuals, and other Things, contained in a Proclamation annexed to the said Commission, have grown, and daily grow, by the insatiable Greediness of divers covetous Persons in the County of *Bedford*; and to punish all such as shall disobey any thing contained in the same. And a Clause therein writ to make out 32 Commissions for like Effect, to others there named.

For Calais  
and Guisnes.

A Commission, dated in *December*, to *Sir Richard Cotton*, and *Sir Richard Bray*, Kts. To repair with certain Instructions to the Town of *Calais*, and Castle and County of *Guisnes*, and to the other Pieces on that Side the Seas: and there shewing their Commission, do hear the Opinions and Advice, as well of the Counsellors in each of the said Pieces, as of other Officers there, concerning the Works, Buildings, and Fortifications of the said Pieces.

For assisting  
in the Chan-  
cery.

A Commission in *January*, for Assistance in hearing and determining of the Causes of the Chancery, to the Master of the Rolls, *Sir William Portman*, *Sir James Hales*, *Sir Richard Rede*, *William May*, *Griffyn Leyson*, *John Olyver*, *Anthony Bellasis*, and *William Cook*. [The Bishop of *Ely* having the Great Seal lately delivered to him.]

For Inquiry  
into the  
King's  
Courts a-  
bout his Re-  
venues.

A Commission in *January* to the Lord Chancellor, *John Earl of Bedford*, *Sir John Gates*, *Sir William Petre*, &c. to call before them the Heads and inferior Ministers of the Court of Exchequer, the Court of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, the Court of Wards and Liveries, the Court of Augmentations, the Court of First-Fruits and Tenths: Charging and commanding them to make before them perfect and full Declaration in Writing under their Hands, of all the King's Revenues, Profits, and Casualties, within their several Charges and Offices, answerable in the said Courts before the Date of the said Commission, and of all Rents, Rerolutes, Fees, Annuities, Pensions, and other Deductions.

1552.

For the de-  
batable Land.

A Commission, in *March*, 1552. to *Henry Earl of Westmerland*, the Lord *Wharton*, *Sir Thomas Chaloner*, *Sir Thomas Palmer*, or to four, three, or two of them: To conclude with the *Scots* Queen's Ambassadors, or Commissioners, for and concerning a certain Parcel of Land, called, *The Debatable Land*, and of other Lands in the Marches of *Scotland*: and to make Division thereof.

To put Mar-  
tial Laws in  
execution.

A Commission, in the same Month, to *John Earl of Bedford*, *William Earl of Pembroke*, the Lord *Darcy*, *Sir William Petre*, *Sir John Baker*, *Sir Philip Hoby*, *Sir Robert Bows*, *Sir Thomas Wroth*, *Edward Griffyth*, *John Gosnold*, or to ten, nine, eight, seven, or six of them, to put in Execution all such Martial Laws, as shall be thought by their Discretions most necessary to be executed. Instructions given to them in nine Articles.

For Survey  
of the King's  
Courts.

A Commission, the same Month, to the Lord Chamberlain, the Bishop of *Norwich*, *Sir John Gates*, *Sir William Petre*, *Sir Robert Bows*, *Sir Thomas Wroth*, *Sir Richard Cotton*, *Sir Walter Mildmay*, and *John Gosnold*, or to nine, eight, seven, six, five, or four of them: To survey and peruse the State of all the King's Courts, erected or kept for the Custody of the King's Lands, and for the answering and Payment of any man-  
ner



ner of Rents and Revenues, &c. And Instructions given to them in ANNO  
five Articles.

A Commission the same Month to Sir *John Gates*, authorizing him, as well to keep the Privy and Great Seals of the Duchy still; as also to do all other things that shall concern the said Office, during the King's Pleasure, in as ample manner as the Lord *Paget* had it, with Authority to appoint a Vice-chancellor.

1552.  
For keeping  
the Seals of  
the Duchy.

Commissions in *May* for the Counties in *England*, to the Noblemen, and other great Men, to be the King's Justices: To inquire of all Treasons, Misprisions of Treason, Insurrections, Rebellions, unlawful Assemblies, and Conventicles, unlawful speaking of Words, Confederacies, Conspiracies, false Allegations, Contempts, Falshoods, Neglects, Concelements, Riots, Routs, Murders, Felonies, &c.

For the  
King's Ju-  
stices of the  
Counties.

A Commission in *June* for the Sale of Chantry Lands, directed to Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Robert Bows*, Sir *Richard Sackville*, Sir *Walter Mildmay*, Knights, *Richard Goodrick*, and *John Gosnold*, Esquires.

For Sale of  
Chantry  
Lands.

Divers Commissions and Instructions in *June*, to certain Persons within every Shire of the Realm: To view and survey the Bells, Plate, Jewels, Vestments, or Ornaments, belonging to every Church within the said Shire: and to take account, and seize into their Hands, to his Majesty's Use, such of the said Goods as have been at any time since or before the last Survey, embezzelled away.

To survey  
Bells, Plate,  
&c. belong-  
ing to Chur-  
ches.

A Commission to *Thomas Hawly*, alias *Clarentieux*, King of Armes, and principal Herald from the River of *Trent* Southward; to visit and oversee within his Province, the Armes, Devices, and Cognizances of all Noble and Gentlemen. And if any Fault be found in any their Coat Armours, Standards, Banners, &c. contrary to the Usage of this Realm, to give Knowledge thereof to the King's Majesty and his Council.

To *Claren-  
tieux*, for  
Survey of  
Armes.

A Commission in *September*, to Sir *Roger Cholmely*, Sir *Richard Rede*, *John Gosnold*, *Richard Goodrick*, *Robert Chidley*, Esquires, and *Richard Liel*, Doctor of Law, or to seven, six, or five of them; to examine and call before them, at such Times and Places as they shall think convenient, *Cutbert* Bishop of *Durham*, [and examine him] of all manner of Conventicles, Conspiracies, Contempts, and Concelements, or other Offences: And if he be found guilty, to deprive him of his Bishopric, and otherwise to do the Premises according to their Wisdoms, &c.

For Trial of  
the Bishop  
of *Durham*.

A Commission, dated in *October*, to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishop of *London*, and others, for Examination and Punishment of erroneous Opinions in Religion.

For Punish-  
ment of erro-  
neous Opi-  
nions.

A Commission in *December*, to *John* Duke of *Northumberland*, *John* Earl of *Bedford*, *Henry* Duke of *Suffolk*, the Marquis of *Northampton*, the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, the Earl of *Pembroke*, the Lord *Darcy*, Sir *Thomas Cheyney*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, Sir *Walter Mildmay*, and *Thomas Mildmay*, Esq; or to five of them, to call before them, at such Time and Place as they shall think meet, the Treasurer, Under-Treasurer, and Teller of the Exchequer, the Treasurer of the Court of Augmentations, the Treasurer of the Chamber, the Treasurer of the First-fruits, the Receiver General of the Wards, the Receiver General of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, the Treasurer of the Town and Marches

For Exami-  
nation of the  
Officers of  
the Treasu-  
ries.



**ANNO** of *Calais*, the Treasurer of the Town and Garrison of *Berwic*, and all other Treasurers, which now be, or heretofore have been, since the **1552.** 24th Year of the King's Majesty's Father's Reign, or their Heirs or Executors; or all and every Paymaster, Surveyor, Mustermaster, Purveyor, Victualler, and other Persons, which at any Time within the Time aforesaid, have received of the King's Majesty, or his said late Father, any Sum or Sums of Money, Treasure, Bullion, Victuals, Provision, or other Goods and Chattels, either to be employed in the Wars, Buildings, Fortifications, or other Affairs: Causing and compelling them which have not yet accounted for their several Charges and Receipts, to make and declare before them a full and perfect Account of all such Sums of Money, Obligations, Specialties, Treasures, Bullion, Victuals, Provisions, &c. as they, or any of them, received; and also of the Payment, and Disbursement, and Discharge of the same, and every Part thereof. And if any of them shall be found indebted to the King, to proceed for the due Satisfaction and Payment thereof.

To inquire into Lead, Bellmettal, Plate, &c. A Commission in the same Month, to the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Earl of *Bedford*, the Earl of *Huntingdon*, Lord *Darcy*, Lord *Clinton*, Sir *Richard Cotton*, Sir *Ralph Sadler*, Sir *Philip Hoby*, Sir *Walter Mildmay*, *Richard Goodrick*, *Thomas Mildmay*, or to four of them; not only to see how the King's Majesty is satisfied of all such Lead, Bellmettal, Plate, Jewels, Ornaments, Stock, and Store-Goods, as come and is due unto the King's Majesty by reason of divers Commissions and Visitations, and by reason of the Dissolution of divers Monastries, Priories, Colleges, Chantries, &c. and by Attainder of divers Persons; but also for divers Forfeits of Jewels, Silver, Bullion, Plate, Gold and Silver.

Commission for Inquiry into Monies due for Sales. A Commission in *January* to the Bishop of *Ely*, Lord Chancellor, the Bishop of *Norwich*, Sir *Richard Cotton*, &c. to examin, search, and try, as well by the Record of the Chancery, as by all other ways, what Sums of Money were at any time heretofore due unto the King or his Father, for the Sales of Lands, Possessions, sithence the 4th of *Feb. An. 27 H. 8.* and how the same was answered.

For Collection of Church-stuff. A Commission in the same Month, to Sir *Richard Cotton*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Robert Bowes*, Sir *John Mason*, Sir *John Baker*, Sir *Walter Mildmay*, *John Lucas*, *Thomas Mildmay*, Esquires, or to four of them; for the Collection of Church-stuff, Plate, Jewels, Ornaments, &c.

For determining a Matter between *Francis Chaloner*, &c. A Commission in *February*, to the Dean of *S. Paul's*, *Thomas Gawdy*, *Griffyn Leyson*, *William Staunford*, *William Cook*, and *Richard Catlyn*, or to three of them; for the understanding, hearing, and final determining of a Matter in Controversy between *Francis Chaloner*, and *Agnes* his Wife, Daughter to Sir *William Bowyer*, late Alderman of *London*, deceased, and the Executors and Overseers of his last Will and Testament.

For finding Gold and Silver Ore. A Commission, dated in the foresaid Month, to *Richard Stephen*, for the finding of Ores of Gold and Silver, and other Mettals, within the Counties of *Darby* and *Chester*, with License of the Owners.

To inquire into Church Goods. A Commission the same Month, to the Marquis of *Northampton*, the Lord *Bray*, Sir *John S. Johns*, Sir *Urian Bruerton*, *Richard Snow*, and *Lewis Dyve*; to make perfect Survey of all manner of Church Goods within the County of *Bedford*. And that the like Commissions be made out



out and directed to the Persons in the end of the said Commissions, for **ANNO**  
the Shires, Cities, and Towns therein declared.

A Commission, dated in *March*, to *Thomas* Bishop of *Norwich*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Philip Hoby*, &c. to sell for ready Money any of the King's Manors, Lands, Tenements, &c. to the yearly Value of 1000 Pounds. **1552.**  
To sell Lands to raise Money.

A Commission in *April*, 1553. to Sir *Richard Cotton*, Sir *Ralph Sadler*, Sir *Walter Mildmay*, Knights, and *Edmund Pigeon*, Clerk of the Wardrobes, or to three, or two of them, to take account of *Jane Cecyl*, and Sir *William Cecyl* Kt. Administrators of the Testimony of *Richard Cecyl*, [Yeoman of the Wardrobes deceased] for certain Robes, Apparel, and Jewels of the King, in the Custody of the said *Richard*. **1553.**  
To take account of the Apparel in the Wardrobe.

A Commission in *May*, to Sir *Richard Cotton*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Roger Cholmely*, &c. to call before them all Treasurers, Receivers, Bailiffs, Collectors, &c. or other Persons, that do demand Allowance for the Falls of any Sums of Money alledged to be lost, by reason of two Proclamations: and to consider the same in their Accounts. **1553.**  
To consider Receivers for the Fall of Money.

To these Commissions I add a few Proclamations.

## II. PROCLAMATIONS.

A Proclamation that none should melt any Testour or Shilling, Groat, Half-Groat, Penny, Halfpenny, or Farthing, or any other Coin of Silver, being current within the Realm; to make Vessel, Plate, or any other thing, upon Pain of Forfeiture of four times the Value of the Money so molten, and to suffer Imprisonment, and other Pains. Dated in *September*, 1551. **1551.**  
Against melting down the King's Coin.

A Proclamation declaring, That the King's Majesty hath ordered and established, to be made within his Mints these several Coins, as well of Silver, in Fineness of the Standard, as also of Gold, as hereafter ensueth: That is to say, One Piece of Silver Monies, which shall be current for Five Shillings, of the lawful Monies aforesaid; another Piece which shall be called, *The Piece of Two Shillings and Six Pence*, of the lawful Monies; the third Piece, which shall be called, *The Sterling Shilling*, current for Twelve Pence; the fourth Piece, which shall be half of the said Shilling, shall be current for Six Pence. Also the King's Majesty hath ordered, to have four Pieces of small Monies made likewise current: That is to say, The first Piece shall be called *A Penny*, with a double Rose, and shall be current for a Penny of the lawful Monies aforesaid; the second shall be called *An Halfpenny*, with a single Rose; and the third Piece *A Farthing*, with a Portcullice. [A fourth Piece is here wanting, whether it should be the Groat, or the Twopence, I know not.] **Declaring the several Values of Gold and Silver Coin.**

And of the Coins of Gold as here ensueth: That is to say, The old Sovereign of fine Gold, which shall be current for thirty Shillings of lawful Money of *England*: another Piece of fine Gold, called *The Angel*, shall be current for ten Shillings: the third Piece of fine Gold, which shall be called *The Aungelet*, half of the Angel, current for five Shillings. And further, a whole Sovereign of Crown Gold shall be current for twenty Shillings: the second Piece of Crown Gold, which shall be called *The Half Sovereign*, shall be current for ten Shillings: and the third



**ANNO 1551.** Piece of Crown Gold, which shall be called *A Crown*, current for five Shillings: the fourth Piece of Crown Gold, which shall be called, *The Half Crown*, shall be current for two Shillings six Pence of the lawful Monies aforesaid.

And the King's Majesty strictly chargeth and commandeth all manner of Persons within his Realms and Dominions, to receive and pay the said several Pieces of Money, as well of Silver as of Gold, at the several Rates before rehearsed, upon pain of the King's high Displeasure, and to be further punished, as his Highness shall think convenient.

And his expresse Commandment is, that all such base Monies which his Majesty did lately, by his several Proclamations, reduce to the Value of a lower Rate, shall pass and go current in Payment in like manner and sort as his Highness last Proclamation did declare, until such Time as his Majesty's Mints may with diligence convert the same into his said new Coins: which his Majesty mindeth to have done with all possible Expedition.

And his Majesty signifieth to all his loving Subjects, that if they do bring in a Quantity of Monies now current, into his Grace's Mint within the *Tower of London*, they shall have the same received there by Tale at the Value as they be now current upon Bills: And they shall, in as convenient Time as may, be repaid for the same Monies now current by Tale in other the King's Majesty's new Money afore declared. This came forth in *October, 1551.*

That the late  
Assessment  
of the Prices  
of Provisions  
should cease.

A Proclamation, set forth in *November, 1551.* declaring, That the King's Pleasure is, that the Proclamation set forth for the censing the Prices of Cattle, and other Victuals, and all Pains, Forfeitures, and Prices therein contained, shall from henceforth cease, and be put no further in Execution. [The Proclamation for assessing the Prices of Cattle and Provision, and to which this refers, came out *Anno 1549.* and may be read in the foregoing History.]

Against false  
Rumors of  
the King's  
new Coin.

A Proclamation in *December, 1551.* charging and commanding all the King's true Subjects not to credit such vain, false, and seditious Rumors concerning certain Pieces of his Highness Coin now made, which have been well stricken, that his Majesty's Armes do not appear in the same, &c. to be seditiously declared.

Against buy-  
ing and sell-  
ing of Coin.

A Proclamation the same Month and Year, prohibiting the buying and selling of Coin at other Prices than the same is current by the King's late Proclamation.

Against  
Frayes in  
Churches.

A Proclamation *Feb. 20. 1551.* prohibiting Frayes and Fightings in Cathedral Churches, and bringing in Horses and Moyles into the same.

**1552.**  
For all Per-  
sons infected  
to avoid the  
Court.

A Proclamation in *August, 1552.* to avoid all manner of Persons infected with Pestilence, or other outrageous Diseases; or having any Person in their Houses therewithal infected, from the Court, and other Places, whereunto the King's Majesty shall repair in this his Majesty's Progress: And also forbidding any of the Inhabitants of *Pole* or *Winburn Minster*, by reason of the Plague there, to resort to the Court at *Woodlands*, or *Canford*, during his Majesty's Abode there.

To put in  
Execution  
an Act for  
Tillage.

A Proclamation in *November, 1552.* Willing and charging all Justices of Peace diligently to have respect to the due Execution of a Statute made in the last Session of the Parliament for Tillage, to be used



as it was in any one Year since the first Year of the Reign of King ANNO Henry VIII.

A Proclamation in February, 1552. That no Person after the publishing hereof, having no License to eat Flesh, do willingly eat any manner of Flesh in Time of Lent, or other Fasting Days, upon the Pain and Penalty contained in a Statute in that behalf made.

1552.  
For keeping  
Lent.

A Proclamation the same Month and Year, That no Persons that sell Wine by Retail, sell above eight Pence a Gallon of Gascon Wine, four Pence a Pottle, and two Pence a Quart, and a Penny a Pint, upon Pain limited therefore.

For the Price  
of Gascon  
Wine.

CHAP. XXX.

*Divers Acts of the King's Grace and Favour; Shewed to his Courtiers, and others.*



E now proceed to set down various Rewards, Liberalities, Honorary and Beneficial Trusts, &c. conferred by the King upon divers Persons.

III. Gifts, Grants, Annuities, and Offices, Pardons and Purchases.

An Annuity of 100 Pounds to William Cecyl, one of the King's Secretaries, in consideration of his said Office, during the King's Pleasure: To be paid at the Augmentation from Michaelmas last, half yearly. Dated Octob. 1550.

1550.  
Annuity to  
Cecyl, Secre-  
tary.

A Grant to Arthur Champion, and John Chichester, of all the Clappers of the Bells commanded to be taken down within the Counties of Devon and Cornwall, with all the Iron, and other Furniture thereunto belonging. Dated in November.

Bell-clappers  
granted to  
Champion and  
Chichester.

A Grant, dated in November, unto John Lord Sheffield, Son and Heir to Edmund, late Lord Sheffield, deceased; to bestow himself in Marriage at his own free Election and Choice, without any Fine or Payment to be required in the Court of Wards and Liveries, or elsewhere, to the King's Use, for the Value of his Marriage, being in Minority: In consideration of the great Charge that his said Father sustained in the King's War at Norwich. [Where he was killed the last Year.]

To the Lord  
Sheffield, un-  
der Age, the  
Gift of his  
Marriage.

The Office of Steward of the Manor of Rising in the County of Norfolk, and the Constableship of the Castle there, to [Sir] John Robsart, and Sir Robert Dudley, [a Son of the Earl of Warwick, and that married the Daughter and Heir of the said Sir John] for Life, and to the longest Liver of them: With a Fee of 40 Shillings by the Year, for the Office of Stewardship, and for the Constableship 13 Pounds 8 Pence per Ann. And for the Office of Master of the Game, 4 Pounds 13 Shillings 3 Pence per

To Sir John  
Robsart, and  
Sir Rob. Dud-  
ley.

per



ANNO *per Ann.* And 53 Shillings 4 Pence for the Wages of two Forests: To be paid by the Receivers of the Premises. Dated in *December*.

1550.

*To John Beaumont Esq;* The Office of Master of the Rolls to *John Beaumont Esq;* for Life, with all Fees and Profits thereunto belonging, in as large and ample manner as *Sir Robert Southwell* lately had it. Dated in *Decemb.*

*To the Earl of Warwick, and L. Lisle.*

The Office of keeping the chief Messuage of the Manor of *Essex* in *Surrey*, and the keeping of the Gardens and Orchard there, with the Office of Lieutenant of the Chase of *Hampton Court*; to *John Earl of Warwick*, and *John Lord Lisle*, during their Lives, and the longest Liver. Dated in *Decemb.*

*To Nic. Bacon.*

An Annuity of 5 Pounds to *Nic. Bacon Esq;* with the Wardship and Marriage of *Edward Fox*, without Disparagement, during his Minority. And so from Heirs Male to Heirs Male. Dated in *January*.

*To Sir John Zouch.*

An Annuity of 200 Marks to *Sir John Zouch Kt.* for Life, after *Elizabeth Zouch's* Death, late Abbess of *Shaftsbury*: To be paid at the Augmentation quarterly. Dated in *January*.

*To Sir Martin Bowes.*

*Sir Martin Bowes*, Sub-Treasurer of the Money and Coin in the Mint of the *Tower of London*. Which Place he surrendered, and had an Annuity granted him therefore, dated the Month above. Besides the Annuity of 66 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence, granted him by the King his Majesty's Father, for his good Service done in the said Office.

*To the same.*

A Grant to the said *Sir Martin*, of the same Date, wherein he was found indebted to the King in the Sum of 10000 Pounds, upon his Account taken by *John Earl of Warwick*, *Sir William Herbert*, and *Sir Walter Mildmay*, Commissioners appointed to hear and determine all Accounts and Reckonings of the King's Mints within this Realm, That he shall pay and discharge the same as followeth; that is to say, in hand 3000 Pounds, and so at divers Payments the rest, allowing him Time.

*To the same.*

A Pardon to *Sir Martin Bowes*, of all Treasons, Trespases, Contempts, &c. done and committed by the said *Martin*, concerning the Money and Coin of the King's Majesty and his Father's, before the Date of these Presents; and of all unjust and false making of Money, and Payments of the same; and of all other Offences done contrary to the Effect of the Common Law, or contrary to any Statute, Act, Provision, Proclamation, &c. or contrary to any Prescription, Custom, &c. Dated as above.

*To Thomas Marsh.*

The Office of Clerk of the Council to *Thomas Marsh* for Life, after the Death of *Richard Eden* and *Thomas Eden*, with a Fee of 40 Marks *per Ann.* to be paid at the Exchequer quarterly. Dated in *March*.

*To the Earl of Warwick.*

A Gift to *John Earl of Warwick*, in consideration of the Manor of *Assher* and Park, granted by the King, of all the Manor of *Chelfsey*, and the chief Mansion House. To the yearly Value of 30 Pounds 3 Shillings 1 Penny Halfpenny Farthing. Dated in *March*.

*To John Leyland.*

The keeping of *John Layland [Leyland]* the younger, being mad, to *John Layland* the elder, with all his Lands, Tenements, Rents, &c. in as large and ample manner as the said *John* the younger, being in his right Mind, had the same. Dated in *March*.

1551.

*To Guillim Stretes.*

*Guillim Stretes*, the King's Painter, had paid him 50 Marks, for Recompence of three great Tables made by the said *Guillim*. Whereof two were the Pictures of his Highness, sent to *Sir Thomas Hoby*, and *Sir John Mason*, [Ambassadors Abroad] the third a Picture of the late Earl



Earl of *Surrey*, attainted: and by the Council's Commandment, fetched from the said *Guillim's* House. Dated in *March*, 1551. ANNO 1551.

To *Sebastian Cabote* [the great Seaman] 200 Pounds, by way of the King's Majesty's Reward. Dated in *March*, 1551. To Sebastian Cabote.

The Creation of Sir *Thomas Darcy*, and his Heirs Male of his Body, to the Title of Baron of *Chich* in *Essex*, by the Voice of the Parliament. Dated in *April*. To Sir Tho. Darcy.

A Gift to the said Sir *Thomas Darcy*, and to his Heirs Male, of the Reversion of the House and Seat of the late Monastery of *Chich S. Oystb*, with the Appartenances, in the County of *Essex*, with the House and Scite the Lady *Mary* hath during her Life, with divers other Lands, Tenements, &c. Together with a further Gift unto him in Fee simple, of the Manor of *Lufton*, alias *Loughton*; with divers other Lands in the County of *Devon*. All extending to the yearly Value of 467 Pounds 13 Shillings 1 Halfpeny Farthing. To hold the entailed Lands in *Capite* by one Knight's Fee; and the Land in Fee simple in *Capite*, by the half of one Knight's Fee. Dated in *April*. To the same.

A Privilege to *Laurence Torrentinus*, Printer to the Duke of *Florence*, for seven Years, to print the Book of *Digests* and *Pandeets* of the Civil Law of the *Romans*: And that none shall print the same Book during that Time, without his License. Dated in *April*. To Laurence Torrentinus.

The Office of High Marshal of *England* to *John* Earl of *Warwic*, for Life, in as ample manner as *John Mowbray*, and *Thomas* late Duke of *Norfolk*, had and enjoyed the same. The Patent dated in *April*. To the Earl of Warwic.

A Gift to the Lady *Elizabeth*, the King's Sister, for the Term of her Life, of all the Scite of the late Monastery of *Missenden* in the County of *Bucks*, with divers other Lands, &c. to the yearly Value of 3064 Pounds 17 Shillings 8 Pence. Which Lands before were given to her, and for divers Considerations now signed, the Month above. To the Lady Elizabeth.

A Privilege to *John Gipken* of *London*, [a *Dutchman*, lately made free] Bookseller, for ten Years, to print or cause to be printed, the Herbal in *English*, compiled by *W. Turner* Doctor in *Physic*: and that none other shall print the same. Dated in *April*. To John Gipken.

A Gift to *John Cheke* Esq; in Fee simple, in consideration of the surrendering of 100 Marks Rent granted him by Letters Patents dated at *Westminster*, Aug. 26. An. 2. Edw. VI. for 21 Years, if it should so long please the King, of all the Manor of *Stoke juxta Clare*, in the Counties of *Suffolk* and *Essex*, with divers other Lands, Tenements, &c. all to the yearly Value of 145 Pounds 19 Shillings 3 Pence: To hold all the Premises in *Capite*, by the fortieth part of a Knight's Fee. Except the Fuller Mill in *Stoke*, the Guild-hall House in *Stoke*, the Piftern Pasture, and other Premises in *Spalding*, and the Rectory of *Sandon*, and other Premises in *Sandon*; to be holden as of the Manor of *Greenwich*, by Fealty only. Paying yearly to the King for the Manor of *Stoke*, 4 Pounds 17 Shillings 7 Pence. Dated in *May*. To John Cheke Esq;

The Keeping and Governance of *Richard* and *Edward Dautry*, Ideots, to *John Fowler*, Groom of the Privy Chamber, during their Lives, and of all their Lands, &c. With a Grant to the said *John* of all the Revenues of the said Lands, &c. from the Death of Sir *John Dautry* Kt. their Father. Dated in *May*. To John Fowler.



ANNO  
1551.To E. Warw.  
To Will. Turk.

A Gift to *John* Earl of *Warwic* in Fee-simple, of *Oxford* in *Kent*, with divers other Lands, &c. Value yearly 49 Pounds 3 Shillings 8 Pence. Dated in *May*.

To John and  
Tho. Leonard.

A Grant to *William Turk*, Groom of the Privy Chamber, of all *William Rastal's* Leases, Goods, Movables, and Immovables, being forfeited to the King by the said *Rastal*, for going beyond the Seas without License, contrary to a Statute and Proclamation in that behalf. Dated in *May*.

To John and  
Tho. Leonard.

The Office of Protonotary, or Clerk of the Crown, to *John Leonard*, and *Thomas Leonard*, for Life, and the longest Liver, of the Counties of *Glamorgan*, *Monmouth*, *Brecknock*, and *Radnor*, in all Courts, Terms, Sessions, &c. with the making and entring of all manner of Writs, Processes, Declarations, &c. with all Fees and Profits thereunto belonging, without Account making. Which Office *John Leonard* surrendered, to have this joint Patency. [*Thomas*, probably, being his Son or Heir.]

To the Maier  
and Com-  
monalty of  
London.  
S. Thomas  
Hospital.

A Gift dated in *July*, to the Maier and Commonalty of the City of *London*, and their Successors, of all the House and Scite of the late Hospital of *Thomas Becket* in *Southwark*, commonly called, *St. Thomas Hospital* in *Surrey*, with divers other Lands, &c. Ornaments, Lead, and Goods belonging to the said Hospital, to the yearly Value of 154 Pounds 17 Shillings 1 Penny. To be holden all by Fealty only in Sockage, as of the Manor of *East Greenwich*. And to take the Profit from the *Annunciation* of our Lady last; with a new Erection of the said Hospital, and the Appropriation thereof to the said Maier and Commonalty, and their Successors. And that all the Profits of the said Land shall go to the finding of the Poor yearly, except such as shall go to the finding of two Masters, two Sisters, one Porter, and the Overseer of the said Hospital. And that the King shall appoint Commissioners from Time to Time to visit the said Hospital, and to see the same Lands to be spent and employed [according to the Intent of the Royal Donor.] And that the Officers thereof shall pay no First-fruits and Tenths.

To Sir John  
Gates.

A Gift to Sir *John Gates*, for Life, in consideration of surrendring the foresaid Hospital of *S. Thomas* into the King's hands, granted unto him by his Majesty's Father's Letters Patents, for Life, with all the Profits, and without Account rendring, of all the Manors of *Bradwel*, *Munden*, *Lawford*, in the County of *Essex*, and other Lands, &c. to the yearly Value of 208 Pounds 9 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpenny. Dated in *July*.

To the same.

The Office of keeping the Capital Messuage or Mansion, late of *Charles* Duke of *Suffolk*, in *Southwark*, and of the Garden, Orchard, and Park there, to Sir *John Gates*, for Life, with the Office of High Steward and Bailiff there, of all the Lands, Tenements, and Liberties of the same: and also of the Office of Steward and Bailiff of *Paris Garden*, and the Liberties thereof, with a Fee of 30 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence per Ann. Dated in *July*.

To Peter Os-  
born.

The Office of Clerk of the Faculties to *Peter Osborn*, for Life, with Fees accustomed. Dated in *July*.

These Parcels were given in *July* by the King, from the Bishopric of *Winton*:

To



To Sir *John Gates*, the Manors of *Sutton*, *Ropley*, &c. in the Counties of *Southampton* and *Surrey*, to the yearly Value of 145 Pounds 19 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpeny. ANNO 1551.

To Sir *Philip Hoby* the Manor of *Marden*, &c. in the County of *Southampton*, to the Value of 87 Pounds 18 Shillings 7 Pence per Ann. To Sir J. Gates.  
To Sir Philip Hoby.

To Sir *Andrew Dudley* the Manor of *Witney*, &c. to the Value of 180 Pounds 7 Pence Halfpeny Farthing. To Sir Andrew Dudley.

To Sir *Henry Seimour*, Lands to the yearly Value of 186 Pounds 4 Pence. To Sir Henry Seimour.

To *William Fitzwilliams*, the Manor of *High Clere*, &c. to the yearly Value of 84 Pounds 17 Shillings 3 Pence. To William Fitzwilliams.

To *Henry Nevyl*, the Manor of *Margrave*, &c. to the yearly Value of 114 Pounds 18 Shillings 10 Pence. To Henry Nevyl.

Annuities dated in *September*, to several *Frenchmen*, [Ministers, probably, and others, fled from their own Country for the Persecution:] viz. To several Frenchmen.

|                          | <i>l.</i> | <i>s.</i> | <i>d.</i> |                       | <i>l.</i> | <i>s.</i> | <i>d.</i> |
|--------------------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|-----------------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|
| <i>Francis de Bignon</i> | 37        | 10        | 00        | <i>Nic. Du Menir</i>  | 27        | 07        | 06        |
| <i>Abraham Parady</i>    | 27        | 07        | 06        | <i>Galliot Tassat</i> | 27        | 07        | 06        |
| <i>John De Len</i>       | 27        | 07        | 06        | <i>Collin Le Cout</i> | 18        | 05        | 00        |

to be paid from the first of *January* last.

The Office of Steward of the Lordship of *Sheriff Hutton*, and Constablenesship of the Castle of *Sheriff Hutton* in *Yorkshire*, to Sir *William Pickering* Kt. for Life, with all Fees and Profits thereunto accustomed, together with the Herbage and Pannage of the Park thereof; paying so much yearly as *Charles Brandon*, [late Brother to the Duke of *Suffolk*] deceased, did. Dated in *August*. To Sir Will. Pickering.

The Office of the King's Apothecary to *John Hemingway*, for Life: and a Fee of 40 Marks per Annum. Dated in *September*. To John Hemingway.

A Gift to *William Thomas* [Clerk of the Council] in Fee simple, of all the Manor of *Garway*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Hereford*; and divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 35 Pounds per Ann. to be held in *Capite*, by the fortieth part of a Knight's Fee, Dated in *September*. To William Thomas.

The Creation of Sir *William Herbert* Kt. and his Heirs male, to the Barony of *Cardiff* in *Glamorganshire*; and to be Lords of the Parliament, with the Name, Title, and State thereof. Dated in *October*. To Sir Will. Herbert.

His Creation to the Earldom of *Pembroke*, with the Name, Title, and State thereof. Dated as above, with 40 Pounds by Year, to be paid of the Customs of *Bristol*. To the same.

The Creation of *John* Earl of *Warwic*, and of his Heirs male, to the Dukedom of *Northumberland*, with 50 Marks by Year, to be paid of the Customs of *Newcastle*. Dated as above. To John Earl of Warwic.

The Creation of *Henry* Marquis of *Dorset*, and his Heirs male, to the Dukedom of *Suffolk*, with 50 Mark by Year, to be paid of the Customs of *Hippeswich*. Dated as above. To Henry Marquis of Dorset.

The Creation of *William* Earl of *Wiltshire* to the Marquessy of *Winton*, and his Heirs male, with 50 Mark by Year, out of the Fee-farms of *Winton*. Dated as above. To William Earl of Wilts.

To Sir *John Mason*, and the Lady *Elizabeth* his Wife, and their Heirs, of the Manor of *Apulford* in *Berks*, with divers other Lands, of To Sir John Mason.



ANNO the yearly Value of 104 Pounds 5 Shillings 6 Pence Halfpeny. Dated  
1551. in October.

To William  
Earl of Pem-  
broke.

A Gift to William Earl of Pembroke, and his Heirs, of 162 Pounds 3 Shillings 5 Pence. Being several Rents reserved of the House and Scite of the late Monastery of Wilton in Wilts, and divers other Lands: as also of the Manor of Bishopston, alias Eblesthorpe, in the same County, of yearly Value 43 Pounds 2 Shillings 7 Pence. Dated as above.

To the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.

The Office of General Warden, or Keeper of the Marches of England, towards the Parties of Scotland; that is to say, to the East March, the West March, and Middle March, nigh the King's Dominions of Scotland, to John Duke of Northumberland; with Authority to do and exercise all things appertaining to the same Office, in as large and ample manner, as by Authority of Richard II. Henry IV. Henry V. Henry VI. Edward IV. Richard III. Henry VII. Henry VIII. it hath been used: and to see the same well fortified with Weapons of War, for the Safeguard of the King's liege People, and the sure Defence of the Town and Castle of Berwic: And to appoint, ordain, and constitute under him a Subwarden: And to have the Pre-eminences, Liberties, and Commodities belonging to the same Office, to him and his Deputies, in as large and ample manner as any heretofore had the same. Dated in October.

To Sir Will.  
Cecyl.

A Gift to Sir William Cecyl, and Lady Mildred his Wife, and to the Heirs of the said William, of the Manor of Berehamstow and Deping, with the Appurtenances, in the County of Lincoln; and of the Manor of Thetford Hall in the same County; and also of the Reversion of the Manor of Barowdown, alias Wrangdike, with the Appurtenances, in the County of Rutland, granted to the Lady Elizabeth for Life, by the King's Letters Patents, dated at Westminster, An. 4. Reg. Also of the Reversion of the Manor of Liddington in the County of Rutland, granted to George [Gregory] Lord Crumwell, and Lady Elizabeth his Wife, during their Lives. Also the Moiety of the Rectory of Godstow, alias Walthamsted, with divers other Lands, to the Value of 152 Pounds 3 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpeny Farthing. To be holden in Capite, by the half part of a Knight's Fee. Dated in October.

To Sir Rob.  
Bows.

The Office of Master of the Hospital of the Savoy, in the Parish of S. Clement of Dacars, without the Bars of the New Temple, in the County of Middlesex, to Sir Robert Bows Kt. for Life, with all Manors, Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments to the same belonging. Dated in November.

To Sir John  
Mason, and  
Fr. Spilman.

The Office of Clerk of the Parliament granted to Sir John Mason Kt. and Francis Spilman, for their Lives, with the Fee of 40 Pounds by Year, to be paid by the Keeper of the Hamper of the Chancery, quarterly: And the old Letters Patents cancelled to this joint Patency.

To Goodric  
and Lucas.

Annuities of 100 Pounds to Richard Goodric, and John Lucas. [These were the King's Lawyers, employed by him in many Commissions.] Dated in December.

To the Lord  
Conyers.

The Office of Deputy Warden of the West Marches towards Scotland, to the Lord Conyers, with the Fee of 600 Marks per Ann. and for two Deputies, 10 Pounds per Ann. Dated in December.

To Sir Nic.  
Strelly.

The Office of Deputy Warden of the East Marches towards Scotland, to Sir Nic. Strelly, with the Fee of 700 Marks per Ann. With like Allowance for Deputies and Serjeants. Dated as before.

The



The Office of Deputy Warden of the Middle Marches, to the Lord Ogle, with the Fee of 500 Marks *per Annum*; with like Commission and Authority as the others have. Dated as before.

ANNO  
1551.

A Grant to Sir John Mason Kt. of the Lease and Farm of *Telingbery* and *Wormold* in the County of *Middlesex*, in the Parishes of *Telding* and *Fulham*, demised by the Bishop of *London* to the Duke of *Somerset*, being presently in the King's Disposition, as a Chattel of the said Duke's. Dated as before.

To L. Ogle.  
To Sir John  
Mason.

A Gift to Sir Thomas Wroth, as well in Consideration of his Service, as of surrendring into the King's Hand an Annuity of 100 Marks, of the Manor of *Lydiard* in the County of *Somerset*, and divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 84 Pounds 8 Shillings 11 Pence Halfpeny Farthing. To hold partly by Fealty only in Socage, and partly *in Capite*. Paying yearly for the Manor of *Thoyden Bois* 36 Shillings. For the Scite and Demean Lands of *Berden* [a late Priory] 47 Shillings. For the Scite and Demean of *Abendon* 11 Shillings. And for the Lands and Tenements in *Chulden* 10 Pence. And for the Manor of *Lydiard* 10 Pounds. And for the Manor of *Thoyden Bois* [mistaken by the Scribe for some other Place] 5 Pounds 18 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpeny. Dated as before.

To Sir Tho.  
Wroth.

A Gift dated in the said Month of *December*, to the Duke of *Northumberland*, being the Scite of the late Monastery of *Tinmouth* in the County of *Northumberland*, and a great number of Lordships and Manors more. And another Gift to him of the Towns of *Alnwick*, &c. in the same County. Dated as before.

To the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.

A Patent to *Rose Fisher*, being a Widow, of a Sistership within *S. Bartholomew's Hospital* in *Smithfield*. Dated 27 Septemb. [Decemb. it should be.]

To Rose Fisher.

A Gift of the King to the Marquis of *Northampton*, of all the Possessions and Goods belonging to the late Fraternities of our *Lady*, of *S. Peter* and *S. Paul*, of the *Trinity*, and of *S. George*, within the Town of *Boston* in *Lincolnshire*. With a License to him to erect an Hospital within the said Town of *Boston*: And to give for the Maintenance of the same, 50 Pounds of yearly Revenue for ever. Which Hospital shall be called, *The Hospital of the Foundation of William Marquis of Northampton*. Dated Jan. 13.

To the Mar-  
quis of Nor-  
thampton.

A Pardon granted to *Henry Nevyl*, Lord *Burgavenny*, for striking a Nobleman, [viz. the Earl of *Oxford*] in the King's Chamber of Presence. Dated April 6.

1552.  
To the Lord  
Burgavenny.

Clerks of the Council had these Fees granted them in April; viz. to *Bernard Hampton* Esq; 50 Marks; to *William Thomas* Esq; 40 Pounds; to *Armagil Wade* Esq; 50 Pounds; payable out of the Exchequer. Their Patents for these Fees bore date May 12. following.

To Hampton,  
Thomas, and  
Wade.

A Patent granted to the Duke of *Northumberland*, of the Offices of the chief Stewardship, as well of the *East Riding* in the County of *York*, as also of all the King's Lordships and Manors of *Holdernes* and *Cottingham*, with the Appurtenances, in the said *East Riding*; with the Grant of several Fees belonging to the said several High Stewardships: And also the Authority to name and appoint, by Writing under his Hand, all Offices of Under-stewards, Bailiffs, Escheators, Feudaries, Clerks of the Crown Courts, and other Officers, whatsoever they be, within the *East Riding*, and *Holdernes*, and *Nottingham*, when they shall chance to be void. And

To the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.



ANNO

1552.

also, that no particular Officer shall grant, by Copy of Court-Roll, or let to Farm, any Lands within the *East Riding* aforesaid, without the Consent of the Duke. And moreover, to have the keeping of the Manor and Park of *Scroby* in *Nottinghamshire*, with the Fee of 5 Pounds 5 Shillings 5 Pence Halfpeny, and to have the Barlage and Pannage of the said Park, for Term of Life, for the Rent of 6 Pounds, to be paid at the Court of Augmentations. Dated *April 23*.

To Sir Will.  
Sidney.

A Patent granted to Sir *William Sidney*, of the Honour of *Penshurst* in *Kent*, and of the Manors of *Ensfield* in *Cepham* and *Hawden* in the same County, lately Parcel of the Inheritance of Sir *Rauf Fane* Kt. attainted of Felony; and also free Warren in the Park, with all the Deer and Conies in the said Park, to him and his Heirs: And also to have all the Lands, Goods, Chattels, Lead, Utenfils, Vessels, Mares, Geldings, Mules, and other things, in and upon the said chief Mansion of *Penshurst*, or within the foresaid Manor of *Ensfield* and Park, which were the said *Fane's*, *Octob. 2.* last past, and came to the King's hands by his Attaint: And to have the Issues and Profits of all the Premises from the Day of the Attainder of the said *Rauf*. Dated *April 25*.

To Sir Henry  
Gates.

A Patent granted to Sir *Henry Gates* Kt. and of the King's Privy Chamber, of the chief Messuage in *Kew* in the Parish of *Mortlack* in the County of *Surrey*, with the Appurtenances, which came to the King's Majesty by the Attainder of Sir *Miles Partridge*, to him and his Heirs: as also of the Manor of *East Greenwich*, by Fealty in Socage, and not in Capite. And to have the Reversion of the Advouson of *Bernshaw*, after the Earl of *Pembroke*, if he shall fortune to decease without Heirs male, of his Body begotten. And to have all the Issue and Profits of the Premises from the Time of the Attainder of the said *Partridge*. Dated *April 26*.

To the same.

Another Patent to him of all the Goods and Chattels of Sir *Miles Partridge*, being at his House at *Kew* at the Time of his Attainder. Dated *April 20*.

To Egerton,  
Stanley, Bil-  
lingsley, and  
Munds.

The King appointed for his Mint *Thomas Egerton* Esq; Treasurer of the Mint of the *Tower*, *Thomas Stanley* Comptroller, *William Billingsley* Assay-master, *John Munds* Provost. Dated in *April*.

To the Earl  
of *Warwic*.

A Patent granted to the Earl of *Warwic*, [*Ambrose*, eldest Son to the Duke of *Northumberland*] to be Master of the King's Horses, upon Surrender of the King's Letters Patents of the same Office by the Earl of *Pembroke*, being of the Date of *Decemb. 2. 3<sup>o</sup> Reg.* for his Life. And for the Occupation of the said Office to have 100 Marks at the Receipt of the Exchequer. Dated *April 29*.

To Sir John  
Mason.

A Patent granted to Sir *John Mason* Kt. one of the Council, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, of the Fee-farm of all the Manor of *Wrotham* in *Kent*, with the Appurtenances, late parcel of the Possessions of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*; which be extended to the yearly Value of 40 Pounds 10 Shillings 6 Pence Halfpeny Farthing. Dated *May 3*.

To Sir John  
Godsalve.

An Annuity granted to Sir *John Godsalve* of 60 Pounds by the Year, upon the Surrender of the Office of Comptrolment of the Mint in the *Tower of London*, *durante vita*. Dated as before.

To Sir Edw.  
Bray.

A Patent granted to Sir *Edward Bray*, of the Constablenesship of the *Tower*, in Reversion after the Death of Sir *John Gage*, by the Fee of 50 Pounds per Ann. Dated *May 28*.

A Patent



A Patent granted to *John* Earl of *Bedford*, and Lord Privy Seal, of the Gift of *Covent Garden*, lying in the Parish of *S. Martin's in the Fields* next *Charing-cross*, with seven Acres called *Long Acre*, of the yearly Value of 6 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence, parcel of the Possessions of the late Duke of *Somerset*. To have to him and his Heirs, to be held in Soccage, and not in Capite. Dated in *May*.

ANNO  
1552.  
To the Earl  
of Bedford.

A Patent granted to *Christ's College* in *Cambridge*, of the Manor of *Burne* in *Cambridge*, and the Parsonage with the Advowson of the same, in the said *Burne*, late belonging to the Priory of *Barnwel* in the said County: Upon the Surrender of one Annuity of 20 Pounds, granted to the said College by King *Henry VIII.* to be levied yearly of the Manor of *Weting* in the County of *Norfolk*, in puram & perpetuam Eleemosynam.

To Christ's  
College,  
Cambridge.

A Grant to *Sir Roger Cholmely*, of the Office of Chief Justice. To *Henry Bradshaw*, of Chief Baron of the Exchequer. To *Edmund Griffith*, of the Office of Attorney General of all the Courts of Record within *England*. And to *John Gosnold*, of Solicitor General. Dated in *June*.

To Sir Roger  
Cholmely,  
Bradshaw,  
Griffith, and  
Gosnold.

A Grant of Master of the Buck-hounds to the Lord *Robert Dudley*, for Life, with the yearly Fee of 33 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence, upon Surrender of the same by the Earl of *Warwic* [his Brother.] Dated as before.

To the Lord  
Rob. Dudley.

Remission of a Debt owing to the King by the Duke of *Northumberland*, in sundry particular Sums, amounting to 2094 Pounds 17 Shillings 3 Pence. Dated as above.

To the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.

A Grant to divers Persons, Aliens, being born out of the King's Dominions, to detain every Sum of Money taxed on their Heads, for their Relief, as of the King's Gift. Dated as above.

To divers  
Aliens.

A Pardon granted to *Sir John York* Kt. Under-treasurer of the Coin, Money, and Mints within the *Tower of London*, and *Southwark*; to *Nic. Throgmorton* Esq; one of the Under-treasurers of the said Mints; to *Sir John Godsalve* Kt. Comptroller of the Mint within the *Tower*; to *Tho. Fletewood* Gent. Comptroller of the Mint within the *Tower*, and *Southwark*; to *William Knight* of *London*, Mercer, Assay-master of the said Mints; to *William Dunch* Auditor of the said Mints; to *William Billingsley* Assay-master of the said Mints; to *William Stanley* Goldsmith, Assay-master of the said Mints: For all, and all manner of Transgressions, Contempts, Abusions, and Offences, touching or concerning the said Mints of the *Tower* and *Southwark*. Dated *July 21*.

To Sir John  
York, Nic.  
Throgmorton,  
Sir John God-  
salve, &c.  
Officers of  
the Mints.

A Patent of License granted to *Sir John Cheke* Kt. one of the Gentlemen of the King's Privy Chamber, to license at all Times, one of his Household Servants, to shoot in the Cross-bow, Hand-gun, Hackbut, or Demy Hake, at certain Fowls or Deer, expressed in his Patent, notwithstanding the Statute made to the contrary, *Anno 33 Hen. VIII.* Dated at the King's Honour of *Petworth*, *July 23*.

To Sir John  
Cheke.

A Patent of Exchange of Lands, granted to *Sir Thomas Darcy*, Lord Chamberlain of *England*, for the Manors of *Lucton*, alias dict. *Lough-ton*, *Chingford Pauli*, and *Chingford Comitis*, in the County of *Essex*, with the Appurtenances; to have the Manor and Park of *Beddington* in the County of *Surrey*, and the Manor of *Ravesbury* in the same County, and divers other Manors and Lands there: which be extended to the clear yearly of 86 Pounds 12 Shillings 6 Pence,

To Sir Tho.  
Darcy.

A Gift



ANNO

1552.

To the Lady  
Anne Cleves.

A Gift to the Lady *Anne Cleves*, for Life, in consideration of the Surrender of the Monastery of *Bisham*, of all the Manors and Lordships of *Brokeford* and *Thwait* in the County of *Suffolk*, with divers other Lands, to the Value of 67 Pounds 17 Shillings 10 Pence. And to pay therefore yearly 7 Pounds 13 Shillings 6 Pence Halfpeny. Dated in August.

To Sir Tho.  
Wroth.

A Grant to Sir *Thomas Wroth*, of the Remain of certain Bedding, and other Stuff of the late Duke's of *Somerset*, being in the Hands of the same Sir *Thomas*. Which is valued by the Clerk of the Wardrobe of Beds, the Keeper of the Wardrobe at *Richmond*, and an Upholster at *London*, at 61 Pounds 7 Shillings 2 Pence. Dated in September.

To Sir Edw.  
Seimour.

A Patent to Sir *Edward Seimour* Kt. Son of *Edward* late Duke of *Somerset*, of all the Lordships and Manors of *Walton*, *Shedder*, and *Stowey*, and the Park of *Stowey*, and the Hundred of *Winterslock*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Somerset*, lately the Possession of his Father. Which are extended to the clear yearly Value of 113 Pounds 19 Shillings 7 Pence. To him and his Heirs for ever. To be held of the King in Capite. Rent reserved 13 Pounds 19 Shillings 8 Pence Halfpeny Farthing. Dated at *Ely*, Septemb. 6. [From his Father's Death to this Time, he had no Provision made for him.]

To John Sei-  
mour.

A Pardon granted to *John Seimour*, [perhaps the Duke's Brother] of all Treasons, &c. with all his Goods and Lands [restored.]

To the Mar-  
quis of Nor-  
thampton.

A Patent granted of Exchange by the King's Majesty, to the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, to have the Lordship and Manor of *Southwark*, sometimes the Bishop's of *Winchester*, for the chief or capital Mese of *Lambeth*, sometimes the Duke of *Norfolk's*, attainted of Treason.

To Sir John  
Cheke.

A Patent granted to Sir *John Cheke* Kt. one of the Privy Chamber, to be one of the Chamberlains of the Exchequer, or of the Receipt of the Exchequer. Which was once Sir *Anthony Wyngfeld's* Office, now dead. And also to appoint the Keeper of the Door of the said Receipt, when the Room shall fall; and the appointing of all other Officers belonging to the same, for Term of Life. Dated at *Sarum* about September.

To John Pe-  
ter.

A Patent granted to *John Peter* of *Exeter*, Gent. for the Sum of 120 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence, to enjoy the Mansion-house of the late College or Chauntry of *Slapton* in the County of *Devon*, parcel of the Possessions and Inheritance of Sir *Thomas Arundel* Kt. [executed for Felony] and also the Manor of *Norton* in the said County, and parcel of the foresaid College, and of the Possessions of the said *Arundel*. All which Premises are extended to the yearly Value of 6 Pounds 8 Pence. To him and his Heirs, from the Feast of the *Annunciation* last past. Signed Septemb. 18.

To Dr. Ni-  
cols.

A Patent of an Annuity of 10 Pounds, granted to Dr. *Nicols*; and License to take the Bodies of Prisoners, both Men and Women, after their Execution. [For dissecting. He was, I suppose, the King's Chirurgion or Physician.]

To James  
and William  
Moris.

An Annuity of 110 Pounds to *James Moris*, and *William Moris*, for their Lives. To be paid at the Augmentation from *Michaelmas*, An. 38 Reg. Hen. VIII. Dated in December.



A Patent granted to Sir Henry Nevyl Kt. of the Prebend of *South Cave* in the County of *York*, with the Parsonage and Advowson of the said *South Cave*, *Waddisworth*, and *Ottley*; which extend to 84 Pounds 2 Shillings 8 Pence. Dated in *January*. ANNO 1552.

To Sir Henry Nevyl.  
To the Duke of Suffolk.

A Patent granted to Henry Duke of Suffolk, of the chief Messuage and Mansion called, *The Minory House*, within the Precincts of the Monastery called, *The Minories* without *Aldgate*, *London*; and divers Houses in *London*, belonging to the same. Which extend to the clear yearly Value of 36 Pounds 11 Shillings 5 Pence Halfpeny. [So it is set down in Chancellor *Goodrick's* Book, but in the *Warrant Book* it is 37 Pounds 11 Shillings 5 Pence Halfpeny.] To hold in free Soccage, and the capital House in Capite: From the Feast of *S. Michael*. At *Westminster*. Dated *Jan. 13*.

A Patent granted to the Earl of *Darby*, to have in Exchange of *Darby Place* at *Paul's Wharf* in the Parish of *S. Benet's* in the City of *London*, now in the Tenure of Sir *Richard Sackvyle* Kt. and divers other Messuages and Hereditaments sold by the said Earl to the King's Majesty, by his Indenture bearing date *Novemb. 24. Anno Reg. 6.* certain Lands called *Leonard's Lands*, joining to the Earl's Parks, called *Knowsley Park* in the County of *Lancaster*, and lately belonging to the Monastery of *Brislow*, of the yearly Value of 20 Shillings; with other Lands, &c. to the Value of 4 Pounds 10 Shillings: and a Mese and a Grange called *Badley Grange*, of the Value of 42 Shillings, in *Cheshire*. All which amount to the Value of 7 Pounds 12 Shillings. Dated *Jan. 24*.

To the Earl of Darby.

An Allocate for the Duke of Suffolk for 40 Pounds a Year, given him by the King with the Erection of the Dukedom of Suffolk, directed to the Treasurer and Barons of the Exchequer, for Allowance of the same 40 Pounds per Annum. For the Duke of Suffolk.

An Annuity of 150 Pounds to *Barnaby Fitz-Patric*, one of the Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, during pleasure. A License granted to him for this, dated *Feb. 6*. To Barnaby Fitz-Patric.

An Annuity of 100 Pounds to Sir *Nic. Throgmorton*, in consideration as well of the Surrender of his Office of one of the Treasurers of the Coin of the Mint in the *Tower*, as for his faithful Service, during Life. Granted *Jan. 28*. The Patent bore date in *February*. To Sir Nic. Throgmorton.

A Gift to Sir *Andrew Dudley*, of the Manor of *Mynster Lovel*, and the Hundred of *Chadlington*, in the Counties of *Oxon* and *Glocester*, to the yearly Value of 54 Pounds 16 Shillings 1 Penny Farthing. Dated in the Month above. To Sir Andrew Dudley.

A Patent granted to the Lord *Robert Dudley*, of the Office *Capitalis Tranchiatoris*, i. e. of Chief Carver, upon the Surrender of the said Letters Patents of the Duke of *Northumberland*, his Father, granted to him by King *Henry VIII. Anno Regni sui xxxiv.* for Term of Life: which the King's Majesty hath had long in his Grace's hand: To have to the said Lord *Robert* for Term of Life, with the Fee of 50 Pounds to be received by the hands of the Treasurer and Chamberlain of the Exchequer. And because the said Lord hath exercised the said Office from the Feast of *S. Michael* hitherto, without Fee, the King hath granted to the same as many Pence as that Allowance came to, of his free Gift. Dated *Feb. 27*. To the Lord Rob. Dudley.

A Grant



ANNO

1552.

To the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.

A Grant to the Duke of *Northumberland*, of the Manor and Borough of *Stratford*, and *Old Stratford* in *Warwickshire*, with other Lands, to the yearly Value of 1000 Marks. And another Gift of the Lordship, Manor, and Castle of *Kenelworth*, in the same County, and other Lands, to the yearly Value of 40 Pounds 13 Shillings 1 Penny Halfpenny. And likewise the Manor and Town of *Wellington* in *Somersetshire*, with divers other Lands, of the yearly Value of 104 Pounds 15 Shillings 5 Pence Halfpenny. But for these he surrendered to the King the Castle and Manor of *Tunbridge*, and two Parks, called the *Postern*, and the *Cage*, and certain Lands and Chases of *North Frith*, &c. in *Kent*, *Oxford* in the same County, and *Chelworth* in *Wilts*. Dated in *February*.

To Geo Barns,  
Will Garret,  
John York, and  
Tho. Windham.

The King in the Month before said, lent a Ship called *The Primrose*, and a Pinace called *The Moon*, with all the Tackle and Apparel to them belonging, to *George Barns*, Maior of *London*, *William Garret*, one of the Sheriffs, *John York*, and *Thomas Windham*; they engaging themselves, and being bound to deliver to his Majesty's Use by *Midsummer*, 1554. another Ship and Pinace of like Goodness and Burden. [These Ships were set forth for the great Adventure into the East by the North Seas, by the Encouragement of *Sebastian Gabato*, a great Seaman. They set forth a Month or two after, being commanded by Sir *Hugh Willoughby*, who perished in the Adventure in the Northern Parts. But it had this Advantage, that hereby the Trade into *Russia* was discovered.]

To William  
Seres.

A Privilege granted to *William Seres*, Stationer and Bookseller, to print all Books of private Prayers, called *Primers*, as shall be agreeable to the Book of *Common Prayer* established in the Court of Parliament: and that none else do print the same, upon pain of Forfeiture of the same. Provided, that before the said *Seres* and his Assigns do begin to print the same, he shall present a Copy thereof to be allowed by the Lords of the Privy Council, or by the King's Chancellor for the Time being, or by the King's four Ordinary Chaplains, or two of them. And when the same is or shall be from Time to Time printed, that by the said Lords, and others of the said Privy Council, or by the Lord Chancellor, or with the Advice of the Wardens of the Occupation, the reasonable Price thereof to be set, as well in the Leaves, as being bound in Paste or Board, in like manner as is expressed in the End of our Book of *Common Prayer*.  
March 4. An. 7.

To Griffith  
Leyson.

A Patent to *Griffith Leyson*, LL. D. of a Manor called *Trefberket*, in *New Carmarthen*, lately belonging to the Priory of *Carmarthen*, with the Appurtenances, and other Lands, &c. Dated *March 9*. Paying yearly 39 Pounds 16 Shillings 10 Pence.

To Sir Phil.  
Hoby.

A Patent granted to Sir *Philip Hoby*, of the Monastery of *Bisbam* in *Berks*, with all the Grange within the said Monastery, and the Advowson and Right of Patronage to the Vicarage, &c. extending to the Value of 61 Pounds 19 Shillings 8 Pence. And that he may convert the fore-said Rectory, with its Appurtenances, Glebe and Profits to his own Use. Dated *March 6*.

To William  
Crowch.

A Purchase to *William Crowch* Esq; and *Susan* his Wife, for the Sum of 568 Pounds 4 Shillings 5 Pence, of all the Lordship and Manor of *Hampton*, and all the Hundred of *Hampton* in the County of *Somerset*, with all the Rights and Appurtenances whatsoever, late parcel of the  
Lands,



Lands, Revenues, and Possessions of the Bishop and Bishopric of *Bath* ANNO  
and *Wells*; And also all the Lands, Medows, Pastures, &c. called by 1552.  
the Name of *Cleves*; and all the Land, &c. called *Archers Meads*, &c. lately belonging to the Monastery of *Henton*. Dated *March 15*.

A Purchase to Sir *Roger Cholmely*, Lord Chief Justice of *England*, and Lady *Christine* his Wife, for the Sum of 246 Pounds of the Lordships and Manors of *East [Ham] West Ham*, and *Placy*, in the County of *Essex*; late parcel of the Possessions belonging to the late Monastery of *Stratford Langton*. Which are extended to the Sum of 12 Pounds 6 Shillings. *March 24*. To Sir Roger Cholmely.

A Grant to *William Lord Paget* of *Beaufort*, and to his Posterity for ever, to give in his Armes, Sables, a Cross engrailed between four Eaglets, Argent; upon the Cross five Lioncels passant Sable, armed and languid, Gules. And to his Crest, upon the Helm, a Demy Tiger, Sable, Rampant, Fashed, Toothed, with a Crown about the Neck, Argent, upon a Wreath, Argent and Sables, mantled of the same. Which Armes was given him before by a King of Armes that could not give it; and now confirmed by the King's Majesty. Dated *March 21*. To L. Paget.

A Wardship or Custody granted to the Earl of *Warwic*, of *Edward Seimour* Kt. with an Annuity of 510 Pounds 9 Shillings 6 Pence, growing and coming out of certain Manors in *Dorsetshire*, *Somerset*, and *Wilts*, for the Education of the said *Edward*. Which Lands were appointed and assigned out by the Master and Council of the Wards, by vertue of the King's Warrant. Dated *March 30*.

A Purchase granted to the Lady *Johan Denny*, Widow [of Sir *Anthony Denny* of King *Henry's* Privy Chamber] for the Sum of 3202 Pounds 7 Shillings Halfpeny Farthing, [so in Chancellor *Goodrick's* Ledger, but in the *Warrant Book* 4102 Pounds 7 Shillings] of the Lordships and Manors of *Waltham* and *Nasing*, with the Appurtenances, with a Fulling Mill and two Water Mills, late parcel of the dissolved Abby of *Waltham-Cross* in *Essex*, with the Parsonage and Church of *Mettingham*, and Advowson of the same; and the Parsonage and Church of *Sibton*, and Advowson of the same; late Parcel of the Possessions of the Duke of *Norfolk*, &c. extending unto the yearly Value of 103 Pounds 4 Shillings 8 Pence. To have to her and her Heirs the Manors in Capite, the Rectories in Soccage. Dated *April 16*. An. Reg. 7. 1553. To the Lady Denny.

A Pardon granted to the Earl of *Westmerland*, of all Treasons, as well greater as less, and Concelements of Treasons, Misprisions, Insurrections, Rebellions, Confederacies, Conspiracies, Imaginations, and Abettings, Procurations, Comfortations, unlawful uttering of Words, before the 20th Day of *March*: and all other Murders, Homicides, Accessories, and Flights for the same. And all Heresies, and Heretical Opinions, and undue uttering of Words against the King and his Counsellors. Dated *April 17*. To the Earl of Westmerland.

A Gift to Sir *Thomas Wroth* in Fee-simple, of all the Scite of the Monastery of *Abendon*, and *S. John's* Chappel, lying in *S. Michael's* Church in *Abendon* in *Berks*, with divers other Lands, &c. to the yearly Value of 5 Pounds 14 Shillings. Dated in *March*. To Sir Thomas Wroth.

An Exchange made between the King's Majesty and the Lord *Darcy* Lord Chamberlain. The King granting to the same Lord the Manor of *Clarkton*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Essex*, sometime parcel



**ANNO 1553.** parcel of the Bishopric of *London*; with the Lands called *Westwick*, and the Parks of *Alton* and *Clarkton*, with the Manor of *Weylecb*, with the free Warren of Deer in *Weyleche* Park: and all the Manor of *Canonsball*, with the Parishes of *Much Clackton*, *Little Clackton*, and *Little Holland*: and all those the Manors, Lordships, and Tenements of *Wiglarrow* in *Chiche*, with the Advouson of *Kenne* in the County of *Devon*, and *Churchton* in the County of *Stafford*. And the King's Majesty hath of the said Lord *Darcy*, all his Manors, or late Prebends of *Wollesgrove*, and *Towford*, *Henstue*, *Polecros*, with divers other Lands in the County of *Devon*, with the Manor of *Crediton*, with all the Lordship or Manor, Hundred and Borough, late part of the Bishopric of *Exeter*; and the Manor of *Weachton*, *Underwold*, in the County of *York*, with the Advouson and Parsonage of *Morchard Bishop*, called *Bishop's Morchard* in the County of *Devon*, &c.

To William Worthington.

A Pardon granted to *William Worthington*, being indebted to the King for and concerning the Office of Bailiff and Collector of the Rents and Revenues of all the Manors, Messuages, Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments within the City of *London*, and the County of *Middlesex*, which did belong to Colleges, Guilds, Fraternities, or Free Chappels, in the Sum of 392 Pounds 10 Shillings 3 Pence, as upon the Foot of his Account, made by the said *William* before *Thomas Mildmay*, Auditor of the said Revenues, manifestly in it doth appear: In consideration of his Service both in *France* and *Scotland*, and also his daily Service and Attendance, being one of the Ordinary Gentlemen and Pensioners; and for that Debt grew by the Unfaithfulness of his Servant, who ran away with the same. Granted in *March*, but the Patent signed in *April*.

To Sir Henry Sydney.

The Office of keeping the chief Mansion at *Oxford* to Sir *Henry Sydney* for Life, with the Fee of two Pence a Day: The Office of Steward of the Honor of *Oxford*, with the Fee of 6 Pounds 13 Shillings 3 Pence per Ann. And the keeping of the Woods there, with the Fee of two pence a Day: The Office of Bailiff of the Manor: The Office of Bailiff of the Manors of *Gravesend* and *Milton*: The keeping of the great Park there: The Office of Under-steward there: The Office of Steward of the Manor of *Swanscomb*: The keeping of the Manor of *Knol*, with the Garden and Orchard: The keeping of the Park at *Knol*: The keeping of the Woods there: The Office of Under-steward of the Manor of *Knol*, with the respective Fees. And a Lease to him of the little Park of *Oxford*. Dated in *April*.

To Sir Henry Seimour.

A Grant to Sir *Henry Seimour*, for Life, of the Manors of *Somerford* and *Hurn*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Southampton*; and divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 202 Pounds 6 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpeny Farthing, without account rendring, or paying any thing therefore. Dated as before.

To Sir Will. Cecyl.

The Office of Chancellor of the Order of the Garter to Sir *William Cecyl* Kt. with the Fee of 100 Marks per Ann. during his Life, to be paid at the Exchequer half yearly. Dated as above.

To S. Albans.

A Grant for the establishing of the Corporation of *S. Albans* in the County of *Hereford*, [*Hertford*] with certain Liberties therein mentioned; and for the Erection of a Free Grammar School there; with a Grant



a Grant of the late Abby Church to be their Parish Church Dated *ANNO*  
as above.

A Purchase to the Lady *Denny* in *April*, for 1102 Pounds 7 Shillings  
Halfpeny Farthing, of certain Manors, Lands, &c. in the Counties of  
*Essex* and *Suffolk*, of the yearly Value of 153 Pounds 4 Shillings 7 Pence  
Farthing. *To the Lady Denny.*

A Patent dated in *April*, for Augmentation of a Bordure of Lions  
Legs to the Lord *Wharton*'s antient Armes. *To the Lord Wharton.*

A Purchase to Sir *William Petre* Kt. of the Manor of *Shapwick*, *Mur-*  
*linch*, and *Asbcote*, and the Hundred of *Whittlegh* in the County of  
*Somerset*, and divers other Lands in *Devon*: for the Sum of 554 Pounds  
12 Shillings 1 Penny. Of the yearly Value of 77 Pounds 6 Shillings  
3 Pence Farthing. To him and his Heirs for ever. Bearing date *Apr. 3.*  
*To Sir Will. Petre.*

A Passport to the Archbishop of *Athens*, to pass thro' the Realm  
into *Scotland*, with twelve Persons in his Company. Dated in *April*.  
*To the Archbishop of Athens.*

The Erection of the County Palatine of *Durham*, to continue from  
henceforth in such manner and degree as is mentioned in the Letters  
Patents: Wherein shall be appointed such numbers of Judges, Officers,  
and Ministers as be requisite to supply the same; and a Great Seal and  
Privy Seal. And the same County Palatine shall be united to the Impe-  
rial Crown of *England*. Dated as before. *Durham made a County Pa-  
latine.*

A Gift to the Duke of *Northumberland*, and to his Heirs male, of the  
Castle, called *Bernards Castle*, within the Bishopric of *Durham*, [or] in  
the County of *Northumberland*, with divers Lands to the yearly Value  
of 229 Pounds 6 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpeny. Dated as before. *To the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.*

The Office of Steward of all the Honors, Castles, Manors, Lord-  
ships, Lands, &c. in the Counties of *Cumberland*, *Northumberland*,  
*Westmerland*, and *York*, or any otherwhere within the Bishopric of *Dur-*  
*ham*, to the said Duke of *Northumberland* for Life, with the several  
Fees of 50 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence, to the same Offices belonging:  
Dated in the said Month of *April*. *To the same.*

A Grant to Sir *John Mason* Kt. and to the Inhabitants of the Town  
of *Abendon* in *Berks*, that there shall be an Hospital in *Abendon*, called  
*Christ's Hospital*, to continue for ever, with twelve Governors; with a  
Gift to the same Governors, and to their Successors, of the Messuage  
and Tenement called *The Antelope* in *Abendon*, with divers other  
Lands, &c. to the yearly Value of 65 Pounds 11 Shillings 10 Pence.  
Dated in *May*. *To Sir John  
Mason.*

A Gift to Sir *John Gates*, of the Manor of *Hursbourn* in the County  
of *Southampton*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 203  
Pounds 10 Shillings and an Halfpeny: With a further Grant that there  
shall be for ever one Market and two Fairs at *Ringwood*. Dated in *May*. *To Sir John  
Gates.*

A Gift the same Month, to Sir *John Cheke*, and his Heirs male, of  
*Clare* in *Suffolk*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 100  
Pounds. *To Sir John  
Cheke.*

A Grant to the Maior and Burgeses of *Newcastle* upon *Tine*, of the  
Fee-farm of the Lordship, Mapor, Town and Borough of *Gateshead*,  
lately parcel of the Possessions of the Bishopric of *Durham*, with divers  
other Lands, to the yearly Value of 27 Pounds 8 Pence Halfpeny. To  
be holden in free Burgage. Dated in *May*. *To Newcastle.*



ANNO 1553. Many Lands and Manors passed away by Purchase from the King, this Month of May.

To the Lady Mary. A Grant in June, to the Lady Mary's Grace, during her Life, of the Castle and Manor of Hertford, the Manor of Hartingford-bury, the Parks of Hertford and Hartingford-bury, with the Appurtenances, in the County of Hertford; the Manor and Park of Wikes in Essex: To the yearly Value of 91 Pounds 2 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpeny.

To Cuthbert Vaughan. The Office of Master and Overseer of the King's Bears, Bulls, and Dogs, to Cuthbert Vaughan for Life, with all Profits to the same belonging: And to take up Mastiff Dogs, Bears, and Bulls, at reasonable Prices. Dated in June.

To L. Robert Dudley. A Gift to the Lord Robert Dudley, of the Manor of Corsy and Saxlingham in Norfolk, of the yearly Value of 149 Pounds 10 Shillings 4 Pence. Dated as above.

To the Duke of Northumberland. A Gift to the Duke of Northumberland, of the Manors of Feckenham, Bromesgrove, and King's Norton, in Worcestershire, of the yearly Value of 300 Pounds. Dated as above.

To Sir Will. Cecyl. A Purchase for 687 Pounds 6 Shillings 6 Pence, to Sir William Cecyl, of all the Lands, Medows, Pastures, Feedings, now or of late in the Tenure of William Broke, dying in Collyweston in Northampton; with other Lands, to the yearly Value of 30 Pounds 16 Shillings 5 Pence Halfpeny. Dated as above.

To Sir John Gates. The Office of keeping the House and Park at Eltham, to Sir John Gates, and the Park of Horn, and the Office of Steward of the Manor of Eltham. Dated as above.

To the Lord Clinton. The Lord Clinton appointed the chief Order, Rule, and safe Custody of the Tower of London, with such Numbers as are appointed by his Highness. Dated as above.

To the Earl of Arundel. A Pardon and Discharge to the Earl of Arundel for 10000 Marks, acknowledged by him to owe unto the King's Majesty by Recognizance, upon certain Considerations in the same expressed. Dated as above.

To Sir Will. Petre. A Purchase to Sir William Petre Kt. of certain Tenth, amounting to the yearly Value of 15 Pounds 7 Shillings 2 Pence Halfpeny, reserved to the King's Majesty out of the Manors of Engerston, Hendley, Cawondel, alias Thorowden, in Essex; the Manors of Teddenham and Sutton in the County of Gloucester; the Manor of Churchsto in the County of Devon. Paying for the same 707 Pounds 4 Shillings 2 Pence. To him and his Heirs. June 22.

To Peter Osborn. A Pardon granted to Peter Osborn, [Officer in the Exchequer] for all manner of Accounts and Reckonings, as well of such Sums of Money as he hath received of the Arrearages of the King's Majesty's Debts, as other Sums of Money received for his Highness special Affairs, and by Mr. Vicechamberlain's Appointment, to the Sum of 39,949 Pounds: which he hath issued out by sufficient Warrants, as in the Declaration of his Accounts appeared. Together with his Discharge for 106 Pounds taken away in the Chamber, where the King doth commonly hear the Sermons. Dated June 25.

To the Earl of Bedford. A Gift to John Earl of Bedford, and Edmund Downing Gent. of the Manor of Boiton on Barton de Bridge, with the Appurtenances, in the County of Cornwall, and other Manors in Wilts, and other Parcels of the Bishopric of Worcester, and divers other Manors in other Counties; extend-



extending to the full Value yearly of 78 Pounds 6 Shillings 7 Pence. ANNO  
To them and their Heirs: Paying yearly out of the Manor of *Boyton* 1553.  
4 Pounds 17 Shillings. And from *Lurgisbal*, 7 Pounds 6 Shillings 2 Pence.  
Dated June 19.

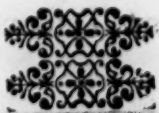
A Gift to the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, of the capital Messuage of *Cold- To the Earl*  
*harborow* in *Thames-street*, *London*, belonging lately to the Bishopric of *Shrews-*  
of *Durham*, with the Appurtenances to the same Messuage belonging: bury.  
And all those six Messuages and Tenements late in the Tenure of *Henry*  
*Polston*, and others, in the Parish of *S. Dunstan* in the *East* in *London*,  
with divers other Lands belonging to Sir *John Robert* of *Knaresborrow*,  
and the Priory of *Pomfret* in the County of *York*: To him and his  
Heirs: To the yearly Value of 66 Pounds 16 Shillings 1 Penny Half-  
penny. Dated June 30.

A Purchase made by *Anthony Brown* [of *South Weald* in *Essex*] Esq; To *Anthony*  
in Reversion of the Lady *Anne* of *Cleves*, the Manor of *Costed Hall*, with *Brown* Esq;  
the Appurtenances, in the County of *Essex*, with all the Fairs and  
Markets in *Brentwood*; which were part of the Possessions of *Thomas*  
*Crumwel* Kt. late Earl of *Essex*; and are extended to the yearly Value  
of 17 Pounds 3 Shillings 4 Pence. To have to the said *Anthony*, and  
his Wife *Johan*, and their Heirs for ever. Dated June 28.

A Purchase to *Edward Spainy*, and *John Baspole*, Gentlemen, for the To *Spainy*  
Sum of 436 Pounds 12 Shillings 7 Pence, of *Lemans* Manor in the and *Baspole*.  
County of *Norfolk*, and the Parsonage of *Tamstale*, of the late Possessi-  
ons of the House of *Synton* in the County of *Suffolk*; with certain other  
Lands and Tenements, extended to the clear yearly Value of 20 Pounds  
18 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpenny. To hold the said Manor of *Lemans*  
in *Capite*, of the fiftieth part of one Knight's Fee, and the Rectory in Soc-  
cage. Signed at *Westminster*, July 1.

The same 1st of July was granted them a Fee-farm, in Reversion of To the same.  
the Duchefs of *Richmond*, and Countefs of *Nottingham*, of the Scite of  
the late Monastery of *Westacre*, and the Lordship and Manor of *West-*  
*acre*, and *Ousthorp*; and the Parsonage of *Westacre*, and all the Appur-  
tenances, in the County of *Norfolk*; with two Warrens of Conies, which  
they call *Wycan Warren*, and the other *Ousthorp*, with a Mill, and a  
Meadow, called *Wills Meadow*, and the Parsonage and Church of *Ousthorp*  
and *Westacre*; and all the Lordship and Manor of *Great* and *Little Wal-*  
*singham*, with all the Lordships and Manors of *Betts* and *Hadshaws* in  
the County of *Norfolk*. Which are extended to the yearly Value of  
201 Pounds 14 Shillings 9 Pence Halfpenny. To have to them and their  
Heirs for ever. Paying thence yearly 52 Pounds 6 Shillings.

A Pardon granted to *John Towly* of *London*, Pultor: With Pardon To *John Tow-*  
of his Lands and Goods. Dated July 5. [This was but the Day be- ly.  
fore the King's Death, and, I suppose, the very last that ever he signed.]





ANNO  
1550.

## C H A P. XXXI.

*A Collection of various Letters, Warrants, and Licenses from the King, both to Foreigners and his Subjects.*



To give a further Insight into the Transactions of this Reign, I shall now set down other Matters that passed from the King and Council, viz.

## IV. Letters, Warrants, Licenses, and Passports.

- To Dr. Omphalius. A Passport to Dr. *James Omphalius*, Stranger, to go into *Flanders*, with three Servants, three Horses, three hundred Crowns, with all other Necessaries. Dated in *November*, 1550.
- To the Bp of Colen. A Letter to the Bishop of *Colen*, advertising him, that the King hath received his Letters sent unto his Highness by *James Omphalius*. Dated as before.
- To the Duke of Brunswic. A Letter of Answer to *Otto Duke of Brunswic*, That where he required of the King Money and Aid by his Letters, that his Highness would have been willing to have granted unto his Request, if for the Necessity of his Reign and Affairs to do the contrary he were not forced. Dated in *November*.
- To the Maior, Aldermen, &c. of London. A Letter to the Maior, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of *London*, in favour of *Henry Fisher*, that he may succeed *Thomas Hays* in the Room and Office of Chamberlain of the said City, void by the Death of the said *Thomas*. Dated as before.
- To the Lady Elizabeth. A Warrant to grant to my Lady *Elizabeth's* Grace, the Wardship and Marriage of *William Reyner*, during his Minority, with the keeping of the Manor of *Overton Longfield*, and the Advowson of the Church of *Overton Longfield* in *Huntingdonshire*, without Fine or Accounts making. Dated in *December*.
- To the Duchefs of Suffolk. A Warrant to grant to *Katharin Duchefs of Suffolk* the Wardship of *Henry Duke of Suffolk* [her Son] and *Agnes Woodbil*:\* Allowing her for the keeping of them 220 Pounds a Year. A Warrant afterwards, allowing 100 Pounds more for keeping the Duke, and 20 Pounds more for the said *Agnes*, during their Minority: And the Grant of the Wardship and Marriage of them to begin from *Michaelmas*, An. 1. Reg. Dated in *December*.
- To Jugg the Printer. A License to *Jugg*, Citizen and Stationer of *London*, and to his sufficient Deputies, to print the New Testament in *English*, as well in great Volumes

\* She seems to have been of the Noble Family of the *Woodvilles*, that were Earls *Rivers*; *Elizabeth* of that Name, *Edward IV.* made his Queen: And her Sister was married to *Henry Duke of Bucks*.



Volumes as in small, for the space of Years, next ensuing the ANNO  
Date hereof. Dated in January.

A Letter to *Margaret Birkenhead*, Widow, in favour of *Peter Aston*,  
that she will, at the Contemplation of the King's Letters, take in Mar-  
riage the said *Peter*. Dated as before.

1550.

To *Margaret  
Birkenhead.*

A Warrant to Sir *William Petre*, to pay to Sir *John Markham* [Lieutenant of the *Tower*] for the necessary Apparel of *William Courtney*,  
[a Prisoner in the *Tower* from his Childhood, Son and Heir of the  
Marquis of *Exeter*, beheaded] the Sum of 59 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence.  
And for his spending Money 50 Pounds. Payable at the Feasts of the  
*Annunciation* of our Lady, the *Nativity* of *S. John Baptist*, *S. Michael*,  
and *Christmas*. Dated in February.

To Sir *Will.  
Petre.*

A like Warrant to Sir *William Petre*, to pay Sir *John Markham*, for  
the necessary Apparel of the late Duke of *Norfolk* [a Prisoner] the Sum  
of 73 Pounds 5 Shillings 4 Pence. And for his spending Money 80  
Pounds. At the Feasts mentioned in the other Warrant. Dated in Fe-  
bruary.

To the same.

A Letter to the Earl of *Bedford*, Warden of the Stannery of *Devon*,  
to summon before him, or his Deputy, at a Place called *Crockrentor*  
within the said Stannery, four and twenty of the discreetest Tinn-  
ers of every Stannery; and to reform all such Laws and Customs as be amiss  
therein: And to set such good Laws and Orders as be requisite for the  
Preservation of the said Stannery. Dated in February.

To the Earl  
of *Bedford.*

A Letter undirected, in the Presence of Mr. Vice-chamberlain, and  
Sir *Anthony Aucher*, to take all manner of Garnishments, and Apparel  
of Silver and Gold, and to deliver it to the said Sir *Anthony*; and to  
deface and carry away out of the Library at *Westminster* all Books of  
Superstition. Dated as above.

To deface  
superstitious  
Books in  
*Westminster.*

A Letter undirected, in favour of *Edward Randolph*, Willing and  
Commanding him, in consideration of the faithful Service done by the  
said *Edward* to the King's Majesty, to make him a Lease in Reversion  
of the Demeans of the whole Possession of the Abby of *Connel* in the  
County of *Kildare* in the Realm of *Ireland*, for 21 Years, now in the  
Occupation of *Gerard Sutton*. Dated in March.

In favour of  
*Edward Ran-  
dolph.*

A License to *Rafe Hopton*, and his Wife, with two or three Guests,  
to eat Flesh in *Lent*, and other Fasting Days, during his Life. Dated  
in March.

To *Rafe  
Hopton.*

A License to Sir *Edward Warner*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, with two  
or three Guests, to eat Flesh and white Meats in *Lent*, and on other  
Fasting Days, during his Life. Dated as before.

To Sir *Edw.  
Warner.*

A Warrant undirected, to pay the Bishop of *Norwich* for his Diet,  
from the 10th of *April* last, until his Return [out of the North] 40 Shil-  
lings by the Day: And to Sir *Robert Bowes* 26 Shillings 8 Pence.  
Dated in March.

1551.

In behalf of  
the Bishop of  
*Norwich, &c.*

A Recognizance to Sir *Andrew Jud*, Maior of the City of *London*,  
and the Commonalty of the same, That the King shall discharge them,  
their Successors, Lands, Possessions, and Goods whatsoever, as well be-  
yond the Seas, as on this Side the same, for the Payment of certain  
Sums of Money *Flemish*, which they stand bound for to *Anthony Fug-  
ger*, and his Nephews, to be paid at *Antwerp*. Dated in April.

To Sir *An-  
drew Jud.*

A Let-



ANNO

1551.

To the Earl  
of Wilts.

A Letter to the Earl of *Wiltshire*, declaring, that the King's Pleasure is, that he call to him Sir *Walter Mildmay* Kt. and of such Treasure as remaineth in his hand in the *Tower of London*, to deliver to the Lord *Clinton* one Collar of Gold of the Order of the Garter, with a *George* thereunto appendent: Taking of him so much Gold of the same Fineness, as the same Collar shall amount unto, or the Value thereof: And that he deliver also to the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, one Garter, with a *George* of the best sort. The same Collar and Garter to be employed upon the *French King*. Dated in *April*.

To the French  
King.

A Letter to the *French King*, declaring, that the King's Majesty, with others of the Honourable Garter, hath elected and taken him into the same Order, the 24th of *April*, [being the Day following the Feast of *S. George*] according to the old and antient Custom. Dated in *May*.

To Sir Ralph  
Sadler.

A Warrant to Sir *Ralph Sadler*, to deliver to *Edward Lord Clinton*, Lord Admiral, who is now elect and chosen to be of the Right Honourable Order of the Garter, for his Livery of the same Order, 18 Yards of *Crimson Velvet*, for one Gown, Hood, and Tippet, and 10 Yards of white *Sarcenet* for the Lining of the same. Dated in *May*.

For William  
Thomas Esq;

A Warrant to Sir *William Cavendish*, to allow *William Thomas*, Clerk of the Council, going over into *France* in Quality of Ambassador, for his Diet 40 Shillings a Day; and to the Marquis of *Northampton* 10 Pounds a Day; and to Sir *Philip Hoby* 5 Marks a Day. Dated in *May*.

For Sir Gilb.  
Dethic Kt.

A Warrant to Sir *William Cavendish*, for Sir *Gilbert Dethic* Kt. alias Garter, principal King of Armes, attending the Lord Marquis of *Northampton* in his Ambassade to the *French King*, to have for his Diet 20 Shillings by the Day, from the 28th of *April* last, unto his Return to the King's Presence; and for his Reward 20 Shillings by the Day: And to allow for his Posting and Transporting, both outward and homeward, of him and his Train, and also for certain Robes of the Order, and other Things necessary, such Sums of Money as by his Bill subscribed he shall signify. And further, to allow him for the Diet of *Chester Herald* 5 Shillings by the Day, and 5 Shillings in Reward by the Day: And for the Diet of *Rouge Dragon Pursevant* 2 Shillings 6 Pence by the Day, and 2 Shillings 6 Pence Reward also by the Day: And also for their posting Money according to the Tenor aforesaid. Dated as afore.

For the same.

A Warrant to Sir *Ralph Sadler*, to deliver to Sir *Gilbert Dethic* three Yards of Cloth of Gold, two Yards of Cloth of Gold Tissue, and 16 Yards of blue Velvet: Which shall be for the Banner, for the Mantles of the Helmet, and the Lining of the same, for the Installation of the *French King*. Dated as afore.

For Sir Tho.  
Smith.

A Warrant to Sir *William Cavendish*, to pay to Sir *Thomas Smith*, sent into *France*, for his Diet, from the 29th of *April* last, unto his Return to the King's Presence, 3 Pounds by the Day: Defalking out of the same 100 Pounds, which he hath already received in Preft. Dated as afore.

To the Bi-  
shop of Ely.

A Passport to the Bishop of *Ely* to go into *France* in his Ambassade thither. Dated in *May*.

A War-



A Warrant undirected, to deliver to him 2000 *French* Crowns, taking of him sufficient Bond for the Repayment of the same in like Crowns, or other Gold of the same Fineness, and of that Value: And also to sundry other Noblemen and Gentlemen, as shall attend upon the Lord Marquis of *Northampton* in his Ambassade, 4000 *French* Crowns apiece, taking likewise of every of them Bonds of Repayment. Dated in *May*.

ANNO  
1551.

For lending  
2000 *French*  
Crowns.

A Warrant for Allowance of *John Olyver*, Doctor of the Civil Law, one of the two Lawyers [*Sir Thomas Smith* the other] appointed to go with the Marquis of *Northampton* into *France*, four Marks by the Day for his Diet. Dated as above.

For Dr. Oly-  
ver.

A Warrant to the Exchequer, where *John Forster* of *London* gave Information to the Officers, that *Andrew Cutler*, *Richard Westerfield*, *Roger Ireland*, *John Bound*, and *William Wright*, of *London*, by the space of 200 Days, in the Parish of *S. Benet* in *London*, did maintain a certain House of playing at Dice and Cards, contrary to the Law provided therefore, forthwith they have forfeited every one 40 Shillings: To surcease for ever of all Processes, Executions, Quarrels, and Demands. So that they be discharged of the Premises. Dated in *May*.

To cease Pro-  
secution of  
*Andrew Cut-*  
*ler, &c.*

A Warrant undirected, to pay to certain of the Lady *Anne* of *Cleve*'s Officers, viz. To the Chamberlain 26 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence: To her Receiver 20 Pounds: To her Cofferer 20 Pounds: To her Comptroller 13 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence: To Dr. *Cornelius* 46 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence: To *Chard* 20 Pounds: To *Hoven* 33 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence: To *Bronkehofen* 10 Pounds: To *Lodwic* 6 Pounds 13 Shillings 4 Pence: To *John Scholehornue*, and to some others, Footmen and others, &c. And to pay the same, whether the Officers be placed or displaced. Dated in *June*.

To pay the  
Lady *Anne* of  
*Cleve*'s Offi-  
cers.

A Letter undirected, where the King hath given to *Sir John Gates*, *Sir Philip Hoby*, *Sir Henry Seimour*, *Sir Andrew Dudley*, Kts. and *Henry Nevyl*, and *William Fitzwilliams*, Esquires, certain Manors, Lands, Tenements, &c. to them and their Heirs, parcel of the Castles, Lands, and Tenements, lately had of the Bishop of *Winchester*, that pertained to the Bishopric, with the Rents and Profits, &c. And where the King hath granted to *Sir Thomas Wroth* an Annuity of 100 Pounds going out of the Manor of *Taunton*, and out of other Lands, &c. belonging to the same Bishopric; his Majesty's pleasure is, that he account and pay to them all the said Rents, Issues, and Profits, coming and growing of the said Manors from *Michaelmas* last forwards: And the Annuity to *Sir Thomas Wroth* from the Death of *Sir Francis Brian*. Dated in *June*.

For *Sir John*  
*Gates*, *Sir Phi-*  
*Hoby*, *Sir Hen-*  
*Seimour*, &c.

A Letter undirected, for the Castle of *Dover* to be surveyed, and thereupon to be repaired sufficiently without delay. Dated as before.

For the Ca-  
stle of *Dover*.

A Letter to the Warden of the Stannery of *Cornwal*, to summon within the Town of *Loftwithiel* four and twenty of the most substantial and discrete Tinnors of every Stannery: and there to make, amend, and reform all such Laws, Customs, Enormities, and other things as are amiss, and needful to be redressed within the said Stannery, for the Quietness and good Government of the Tinnors there, the Preservation of the said Stannery, and for the Common Wealth of the Realm: And to put the said Order and Laws strictly in Execution. Dated in *June*.

To the War-  
den of the  
Stannery.

A License to *George Chidley*, to wear his Cap in the King's Presence, or elsewhere, without Let or Trouble of any Man. Dated in *July*.

To *George*  
*Chidley*.



ANNO  
1551.To the Earl  
of Darby.For Sir Will.  
Petre.For Sir Henry  
Sydney.To Sir Tho.  
Wroth.For the Lord  
Darcy.To Sir Phil.  
Hoby, Sir John  
Gates, &c.To Sir An-  
thony Cook.For Sir Edm.  
Peckham.To the Bp.  
of Rochester.To the Lord  
Chancellor.

A Letter to the Earl of *Darby*, declaring, the King's Majesty is well pleased with his Son the Lord *Strange*, that he shall solemnize Marriage with his Majesty's Kinswoman the Lady *Margaret*, Daughter to the Duke of *Somerset*, his Highness Uncle. Dated in *July*.

A Warrant to the Surveyor of *Essex*, to deliver to Sir *William Petre* twenty good Oaks, fit for Timber, within *Horsefritb* Park in the same County. Dated in *August*.

A Warrant to the Cofferer and Clerk of the Household, to pay *Henry Sydney*, admitted one of the chief Gentlemen of his Majesty's Privy Chamber in the Lord *Darcy's* Room, 100 Pounds a Year, payable quarterly.

A License to Sir *Thomas Wroth*, to give License to any one of his Servants from Time to Time, to shoot in any Cross-bow or Hand-gun at all kind of Fowls, and with license of the Owner, at all manner of Deer, red and fallow. Dated in *September*. [For in the 2d and 3d of the King, all such shooting Hailshot at any Fowl was forbidden to all under the Degree of a Lord of the Parliament.]

A Warrant to the Lord Marquis of *Dorset*, and Lord *Cobham*, to accept into the Order of the Garter, the Lord *Darcy*, and to give him his Oath, according to a Chapter holden at *Hampton* Court by the King and his Brethren, the 28th of *Septemb*. Dated in *October*.

Licenses to Sir *Philip Hoby*, Sir *John Gates*, *Edward Lord Clinton*, Sir *John Mason*, for Life, with as many as shall come to their Tables, to eat Flesh, and white Meats in *Lent*, and other Fasting Days.

A Warrant to the Master and Officers of the Court of Wards and Liveries, to deliver to Sir *Anthony Cook* eight Obligations, wherein he standeth bound for the Payment of 200 Pounds at several days, for the Wardship and Marriage of *William Shelly*. And also to discharge him of a yearly Rent of 47 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence, for the Manors of *Boxsted* and *Great Horsly* in the Counties of *Essex* and *Suffolk*; which the King hath forgiven him. Dated in *November*.

A Warrant dated in *November*, to the Duke of *Northumberland*, *William Earl of Pembroke*, &c. to discharge Sir *Edmund Peckham* [Treasurer of the Mint] in his Account which he presently yieldeth to them, the several Sums

|    | l.    | s. | d.  |
|----|-------|----|-----|
| Of | 4000  | 00 | 00  |
|    | 2333  | 06 | 08  |
|    | 10642 | 04 | 119 |
|    | 6790  | 00 | 00  |

which the King, for divers Considerations, hath forgiven him. [Sir *John York*, Sub-treasurer, and divers other Officers of the Mint, had these kind of Pardons in *December*.

A License to *John [Scory]* Bishop of *Rochester*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, to eat Flesh in *Lent*, and other Fasting Days, during his Life. Dated in *November*.

A Letter to the Lord Chancellor, to cause a sufficient Commission to be made, and sealed with the Great Seal of *England*, of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, to the Lord Marquis of *Winchester*, that he may thereby be the King's Seneschal *hac unica vice tantum*, for the hearing and determining of the Treasons and Felonies of the Duke of *Somerset*; giving the date



date of the said Commission the 28th of this Month [of November.] And also to cause a Commission of Oyer and Terminer to be directed to the two chief Justices, and to their Associates. So that the said Justices, and any other three of their Sociates, be of the Quorum of the said Commission: And the same to be dated the 29th of this Month; for the trying by the Order of the Laws, Sir Michael Stanhope, Sir Thomas Arundel, Sir Rafe Fane, and Sir Miles Partridge, Kts. John Nudigate, and John Seimour, indicted with the said Duke.

ANNO

1551.

Another Letter to the said Lord Chancellor, to cause the Commission of Oyer and Terminer, made to the chief Justices of both the King's Benches, for the Trial of the Treasons of Sir Michael Stanhop, and others, to be made again to the Earl of Bedford, Viscount Hereford, Lord Cobham, the Lord Chief Baron, and after appointed in the said Commission. Dated in November.

To the same.

A Warrant to Sir Anthony Darcy [who was now come into the room of Sir Arthur Markham] for the Diet of the Duke of Norfolk every Month sithence the 29th of October last, 20 Pounds. And for the Diet of his Man, every Month 26 Shillings 8 Pence. And for Wood, Coal, and Candle, 32 Shillings.

To Sir Anthony Darcy.

And for the Diet of Edward Courtney monthly, 5 Pounds 8 Shillings: accounting 28 Days to the Month: And 20 Shillings for his Servant; and 8 Shillings for Wood, Coal, and Candle. Dated in December.

A Warrant to the Chancellor of the Augmentation, and other Officers there, to pay to Thomas Bishop of Ely, to whom the King hath committed the Custody of the Great Seal, for his Wages, Diet, and Livery of himself, and his Ministers of the Chancery, in as large manner as the Lord Rich, or any other had, from the 22d of December, An. 5. Edw. VI.

To the Chancellor of the Augmentations.

Six Letters to being of one Import, signifying to them, that where the King's Majesty hath appointed the Bishop of Ely, the Earl of Bedford, Sir John Gates, Sir William Petre, Sir Rob. Bowes, and Sir Walter Mildmay, to be his Highness Commissioners, to peruse and consider the State of his Majesty's Courts, and to understand perfectly what Debts be due unto him within the same; his Majesty's Pleasure is, that every one of them shall from Time to Time be attendant upon the said Commissioners, giving unto them such Instructions, and doing such things, as the said Commissioners shall think good to require of them. Dated in Decemb.

For the Bishop of Ely, Earl of Bedford, &c.

A Letter to the Deputy and Council of Ireland, That in case they shall think it convenient, they do establish in the same Realm an Office for the sealing and measuring of Linen and Woolen Cloths, as like Offices be in this Realm; making reasonable Taxes for the same: And to grant a Lease thereof to John Colby, during the King's pleasure; reserving to the King such reasonable Rents as they shall think good. Dated in January.

To the Deputy and Council of Ireland.

A Warrant to the Bishop of Ely, to make out a Commission to the Lord Treasurer, to take the said [Bishop of Ely] Lord Chancellor's Oath.

To the Bishop of Ely.

A Pardon to Sir Thomas Palmer of London, of all manner of Treasons, &c. Dated in February.

To Sir Thomas Palmer.



ANNO  
1551.

For the Mar-  
quis of Nor-  
thampton.  
To the Lord  
Chancellor.

A Bill to be enacted for legitimating as well the Marriage of *William* Marquis of *Northampton*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, [his former Wife yet living, from whom he was divorced] as the Children born between them. Dated as above.

A Warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to make forth Writs of Execution of Sir *Rafe Vane*, *Miles Partridge*, *Thomas Arundel*, and *Michael Stanbop*, Kts. that is to say, for Heading of *Thomas Arundel* and *Michael Stanbop*, and hanging the rest. Dated as above.

For the La-  
zars of Mile-  
end.

A Protection to beg, granted to the poor Lazars of the House of our Saviour *Jesus Christ* and *Mary Magdalen* at *Mile-end*, [within the Parish] of *Stepenbuche* [*Stepney*] in the County of *Middlesex*: And *John Mills* appointed their Proctor. Sealed *Feb. 18*.

Protections  
to beg.

A Protection, or License to beg, granted to *Richard Pope* of the Parish of *Henly* in the County of *Hertford*, to beg within the County of *Hertford*: And the same to endure for one whole Year. *Feb. 16*. [These Protections, granted both to Hospitals, and necessitous Persons, were frequently practised; as appears by these following, besides those above, granted in *February*.]

A Protection granted to *Thomas Drauffield* in *Darby*, to beg within the Counties of *Tork* and *Leicester*, and the City of *Tork*, and not elsewhere, during one whole Year.

A Protection granted to the Lazars of the Hospital of *S. Peter* nigh *S. Edmund's-Bury*: And *George Hodgson*, Guide of the House, appointed their Proctor. To dure one Year.

A Protection granted to the Lazars of the House of *Mary Magdalen* and *S. Anthony* of *Becoles* in *Suffolk*: And *Edward Lydgate* appointed their Proctor.

A Protection granted to the Hospital of the Brethren without *Bishopsgate*, *London*: And *Thomas Haliday* appointed their Proctor.

A Protection granted to the Hospital of our *Lady* and *S. Katharine* at *Newington* in *Surrey*: *William Cleybroke* their Proctor. All these dated in *February*.

A Protection granted to the Hospital of *Bethlem* without *Bishopsgate*: *John Whitehead* their Proctor: To beg within the Counties of *Lincoln*, and *Cambridge*, the City of *London*, and Isle of *Ely*. To endure for a whole Year. *March 7*.

A License to beg, for *Nicolas Sandburne* of *Barkeham* in the County of *Berks*, in consideration of a Fire: To beg within the County of *Southampton*, the Isle of *Wight*, the Town of *Southampton*. To endure for one Year. Dated *March 22*. [Such Licenses, I find sometimes for Losses by Fire. But the Licenses extended not but to one County or two.]

For the Bi-  
shop of *Ely*.

A Warrant to the Chancellor of the Augmentation, and to the other Officers, to pay to *Thomas* Bishop of *Ely* and Lord Chancellor, for his Wages, Diet, and Livery of himself, and of the Masters of the Chancery; that is to say, after the Rate of 542 Pounds 15 Shillings by the Year, from the 19th of *January*, *An. 5. Reg. Edw. VI.* so long as he shall exercise the same Office: And for his Attendance in the Star-chamber, after the Rate of 50 Pounds every Term: And after the Rate of



of 300 Pounds by Year over and above his said Allowances quarterly. *ANNO*  
Dated in *March*.

A Letter of Thanks to *Albert* Marquis of *Brandenburg*, for Faulcons sent yearly unto the King by him. Dated in *March*, 1552.

1552.  
To the Marq.  
of *Brandenburg*.  
To *Henry*  
*Smith*.

A License to *Henry Smith* of *London*, Merchant, to bring into the Realm such Persons as he shall think meet, for making of Glasse, of like Fashion and Goodness to that which is called *Normandy*. Dated in *April*.

A Warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to make out several Writs, to *Robert Brook*, *James Dier*, *John Caril*, *Thomas Gawdy*, *Richard Catlyn*, *Rafe Rooksby*, *William Staunford*, and *William Dallison*, Esquires, That in consideration that his Majesty hath nominated and appointed them to be Serjeants at the Law, to prepare themselves for the Execution of the same, upon pain of Forfeiture of 1000 Pounds apiece accordingly. Dated in *June*.

To the Lord  
Chancellor.

A Letter to the Lady *Anne* of *Cleves*, requiring her to give Order for the going through with the Exchange for the Manor of *Bisbam*. Dated in *June*.

To the Lady  
*Anne* of  
*Cleves*.

A Patent of License granted to the Maior and Burgeesses of *Boston* in the County of *Lincoln*, that Sir *William Cecil* Kt. their Recorder, may make his Deputy in the said Office: Proviso, that the said Deputy be learned in the Law. Dated in *June*.

To the Mai-  
or of *Boston*.

A Warrant to the Lord Marquis of *Winchester*, Master of the Wards and Liveries, signifying, That whereas it is found, that the late Duke of *Somerset* alienated certain Lands which came unto him by *Katharin Fyol*, his first Wife, to the yearly Value of 67 Pounds 16 Shillings 8 Pence, which should have descended to *John Seimour* his eldest Son, that he, according to the late Act of Parliament for the Limitation of the said late Duke of *Somerset*'s Lands to the Heirs begotten of the Body of the Lady *Anne*, his second Wife, appoint unto him so much thereof as shall amount to the same Sum; and to award that he may have the same quietly. Dated in *July*.

To the Mar-  
quis of *Win-*  
*chester*, for  
*John Seimour*.

A License to *John Day* Printer, of *London*, to print a Catechism, both in *Latin* and *English*, which the King's Majesty hath caused to be set forth. Dated in *September*.

To *John Day*.

A Passport for two of the late *Scotch* King's Bastard Sons, to transport out of the Realm four dozen of Bows, twenty dozen of Arrows, and four grofs of Strings, and two Geldings. Dated in *October*.

For the *Scot*  
King's Ba-  
stard Sons.

A Warrant to the Treasury of the Chapter [of the Knights of the Garter] to allow from the 5th of *July* last unto the 7th of *October*, unto *Garter* King of Armes 10 Shillings by the Day; unto *Norroy* 6 Shillings 8 Pence by the Day; to *Clarentieux* 6 Shillings 8 Pence by the Day; to *Somerset* 4 Shillings by the Day; to *Rouge Dragon* 2 Shillings by the Day; to *Blue Mantle* 2 Shillings by the Day: and to allow to *Ulster* King of Armes, for his Diet only 6 Shillings 8 Pence by the Day. This for their Diet in their Attendance on his Majesty in this Time of his Progress. Dated in *October*.

For the Kings  
at Armes and  
Heralds.

A Letter to Sir *Andrew Dudley*, for his Revocation from the Captainship of *Guifnes*, to serve about his Majesty in the Place of one of the

To Sir *An-*  
*drew Dudley*.



ANNO the four principal Gentlemen of his Highness Privy Chamber. Dated  
1552. in the month above.

To Thomas  
Galtier. A License to *Thomas Galtier* of *London*, to print in *French* all such  
Books of the Church as shall be set forth. [As Common Prayer Books,  
Homilies, Injunctions, &c. for the Use of the Churches in *Calais*,  
*Guifnes*, the Isles of *Jersey*, *Guernsey*, &c.] Dated in *December*.

To Edward  
Prime, &c.  
of Bristol. A License to *Edward Prime*, *Thomas Hicks*, and *Robert Butler*, Mer-  
chants Adventurers of the City of *Bristol*, to chuse a Master of the said  
Myftery, and two Wardens thereof. And that it shall be a Corporation  
in itself for ever. Dated in *December*.

For Sir Phil.  
Hoby. A Warrant to the Keeper of *Mortymers Park*, and the little Park in the  
County of *Berks*, to deliver to *Sir Philip Hoby* thirty Timber Oaks,  
growing there. A like Warrant to the Keeper of *East Hemsted* in the  
said County, for the like Number. [To build him, it may be, an House  
at *Bisham*; the Monastery there being granted to him.] Dated in *Ja-  
nuary*.

To the Lord  
Chancellor. A Warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to cause to be made and directed  
forth Procefs for the calling and summoning of the Parliament at *West-  
minster*, against the 1st of *March*. Dated in *January*.

To Sir An-  
drew Dudley. A Warrant to *Sir Andrew Dudley*, to deliver to *John Bridges* ten  
Yards of Crimson Velvet, to make his Majesty a Kirtle and a Whode  
for his Parliament Robes. Dated in *January*.

To the Bi-  
shop of Pe-  
terburgh. A Letter to the Bishop of *Peterburgh*, licensing him to be absent from  
the next Parliament, so as he make out his sufficient Proxy to some  
discreet Personage of the State.

To John Har-  
wel, &c. A License granted to *John Harwel*, and other nine in the County of  
*Suffolk*, Clothiers, to make 500 coarse Cloths; so the same be made by  
*Michaelmas* next coming: and to sell the same to one *Richard Crag*  
of *London*, Draper, his Executors or Assigns; and to carry the same  
out of the Realm during the space of one Year after the Date hereof, in-  
to the Parts of *Danske* or *East Land*, upon Condition that he shall bring  
in, to the King's Majesty's Use, Cables, Cordage, and Oars, for the Fur-  
niture and Munition of the King's Ships. Commanding the Customers,  
Comptrollers, Searchers, to take of him sufficient Surety at the Time  
of the shipping, for the bringing in of the Cordage, and other marine  
Munition, to the Value of the same Cloths. Provided, that the fore-  
said Parties, after this number of Cloths so made, shall not make or  
continue their Trade. Dated *Feb. 10*.

To the Mar-  
quis of Win-  
chester. A Warrant to *William Marquis of Winchester*, Master of the Wards  
and Liveries, and to the Council of the same Court, to make such Books  
and Writings for the Assurance of the Wardship and Marriage of *Sir Ed-  
ward Seimour*, with the Keeping, Use, Order, and Receipt of certain  
Manors, Lands, Tenements, &c. to the yearly Value of 500 Pounds,  
and above, to the Earl of *Warwic*. Dated in *February*. The Patent  
was signed *March 30*. following.

To the Mar-  
quis of Bran-  
denburgh. A Letter of Gratulation to the Marquis of *Brandenburgh*. [For send-  
ing the King Faulcons, as he did yearly.] Dated in *February*.

For John Can-  
slare. A Letter to *Margaret Tayler*, Widow, to join in Marriage with *John  
Canflare*, Gentleman of the King's Chappel. Dated as before.

A License



A License to *William Seres*, for Years, to print the Books of *ANNO* private Prayers, [viz. such as were called *Primers*.] Dated as before. 1552.

A Warrant to Sir *Edmund Peckham*, to deliver to *Andrew Wise* 4000 Pounds, to be employed by him towards the Payment as well of the Charges of the Mines in *Ireland*, as otherwise, by Order of the Privy Council, for the King's Service. Dated in *March*.  
To *Will. Seres*.  
To Sir *Edm. Peckham*.

A Warrant to Sir *Edmund Peckham*, to deliver to *Benjamin Gonson*, Treasurer of the Admiralty, the Sum of 6000 Pounds, to be by him defrayed towards the Discharge of such Debts as are due within that Office, for the Marine Affairs. Dated in *March*.  
To the same.

A Warrant to deliver to *Benjamin Gonson*, Treasurer of the Admiralty, the Sum of 460 Pounds, about Victualling and Furniture of such Ships as are presently sent forth for the Apprehension of *Strangwick* the Pirate. Dated in *March*.  
For *Benjamin Gonson*.

A Warrant to deliver to Sir *Maurice Denys*, by way of Preft, 6000 Pounds, to be by himself defrayed about the King's Affairs in his Office and Charge. Dated as above.  
For Sir *Maurice Denys*.

Another Warrant to deliver to *Andrew Wise* 6000 Pounds, to be delivered by him to the Executors of *Martin Pirry*, late Treasurer of the Mines in *Ireland*. Dated as above.  
For *Andrew Wise*.

A Letter to the Commissioners of the Sales of Lands, to pass to the Earl of *Pembroke* certain Lands after the rate of twenty Years Purchase: and to pass to Sir *William Petre* certain Lands after the same rate; he paying two parts in hand, and a third at *Michaelmas*. Dated as above.  
For the Earl of *Pembroke*, and Sir *Will. Petre*.

A License of Privilege granted to *John Day* Printer, for printing of a Catechism in *English*, with the Brief of an *A B C*, thereunto annexed: and also the printing and reprinting of all such Works and Books, devised and compiled by the Right Reverend Father in God *John*, now Bishop of *Winton*, or by *Thomas Beacon*, Professor of Divinity: So that no such Book, nor any part of them, be in any wise repugnant to the holy Scriptures, or Proceedings in Religion, and the Laws of our Realm. Dated at *Westminster*, *March 25*. 1553.  
To *John Day*.

A Warrant to the Exchequer, to allow unto the Lord *Wharton* the Sum of 6127 Pounds 12 Shillings 7 Pence Farthing. Who being charged with the said Sum upon his Account, for his late Office of Warden of the West Marches against *Scotland*, and for the Office of General Receiver of certain Manors in the County of *Cumberland*, by the space of eleven Years, can produce Warrant and sufficient Authority for the Allowance of the said Sum before the Treasurer and Chamberlains of the Exchequer. Which Remission is granted to the same Lord *Wharton*, as well for the Consideration mentioned in the Book, as for his long and faithful Service. And in the said Remission the Lord *Dacre* and the Lord *Conyers* must be also allowed and discharged of their Petition and Demand touching the exercising of the said Offices for their Time; to be allowed by the said Treasurer and Chamberlains of the Exchequer. Dated in *March*.  
For the Lord *Wharton*.

A Warrant to *Peter Osborn*, to disburse to Sir *John Gates*, by way of Loan, the Sum of 400 Pounds, taking his Obligation for Payment thereof at *Whitsuntide*, 1554. Dated as before.  
To *Peter Osborn*.

A Pass-



ANNO  
1553.

For the Bi-  
shop of Nor-  
wich.

For the  
King's prin-  
cipal Gen-  
tlemen.

For the Lady  
Somerset.

To the Bi-  
shop of Wor-  
cester.

To Richard  
Totbel.

To L. Robert  
Dudley.

To the Lord  
Chancellor.

To the Lord  
Treasurer.

To Sir An-  
drew Dudley.

A Passeport for Sir *Hugh Willoughby* Kt. to go beyond the Seas with four Servants, Monies, and his Chain, &c. Dated as before.

A Warrant to deliver to the Bishop of *Norwich* the Sum of 200 Pounds, by way of Reward for his Attendance all the last Year hitherto about *London* in his Majesty's Service, being thereunto commanded. Dated as above.

A Warrant to deliver to the four principal Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, the Sum of 1000 Pounds, to be by them defrayed as out of his Majesty's Purse. Dated in *March*.

A Letter to the Chancellor of the Augmentations, to assign out of the Profits arising of the Lands of the late Duke of *Somerset* 100 Pounds, to be delivered to the Lieutenant of the *Tower* of *London*, for the Use of the Lady *Somerset*. Dated in *March*.

A Letter to the Bishop of *Worcester*, licensing him to repair to the *Tower* to the Lady Duchess of *Somerset*, in this Time of *Easter*. Dated in *April*.

A License to *Richard Totbel* Printer, to print all manner of Books of the Common Law of this Realm, for seven Years. So as the first Copies thereof be allowed by one of the Justices of the Law, or two Serjeants, or three Apprentices of the Law, whereof one to be a Reader in the Court, &c.

The Custody of *Thomas Philpot* Lunatic, [or *Idiot*, according to another Manuscript] to the Lord *Robert Dudley*, with all his Lands, Goods, &c. and the Fee of 100 Marks. Dated *April* 17.

A Warrant to the Lord Chancellor, authorizing him to name and appoint from Time to Time, Commissioners for Church Goods, in lieu of such as shall happen to die, to be sick, or otherwise occupied about the King's Affairs. Dated in *April*.

A Warrant to the Lord Treasurer, to deliver to Sir *Andrew Dudley* out of his Charge, certain Pieces of Coin of Gold of sundry Coins, to the Value of 1435 Pounds 9 Shillings 6 Pence, to be by him kept to the King's Majesty's Use; and for a Device of Gold like a Standing Cup, with divers Conclusions of Arithmetic, with certain Boxes, and in one of them 24 Counters of Gold, all weighing 108 Ounces: Two Flagons of Gold, with Chains of the same, weighing 165 Ounces, being sent by the Lord Admiral to the *French* Queen at the Christning of her Son: One Ring of Gold, set with a long Diamond, sent to the Lady *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *France*: One other Ring, set with a fair Table Diamond, given by his Majesty to the *Scots* Queen, at her being here: A Pearl pendent to a Chain enamelled, being set with Diamonds, Rubies, and Pearls, which was lost by his Majesty wearing the same: And for a *George* of Gold set with eight small Diamonds, which was the Earl of *Southampton's*, delivered to the said Lord Admiral. Dated in *April*. [This was a Discharge for these Jewels to Sir *Andrew Dudley*, who was Keeper of the Jewels.]

A Warrant to Sir *Andrew Dudley*, to deliver for the Furniture of the Wedding Apparel, to the Lord *Guilford*, Son to the Duke of *Northumberland*, and to the Lady *Jane*, Daughter to the Duke of *Suffolk*, certain parcels of Tissues, and Cloths of Gold and Silver, of the late Duke's and Duchess's of *Somerset*, as appears by the same. Dated in *April*.

A like



A like Warrant to him to take to himself, as of the King's Gift; and a Warrant to deliver to the Lord Chamberlain, each of them eighteen Yards of Crimson Velvet, for the Livery of the Order of the Garter. *ANNO 1553.*  
Dated as above. *To the same.*

Two like Warrants unto him, for ten Yards apiece of white Sarcenet or Taffaty, to line the same Liveries. Dated as above. *To the same.*

Three several Letters of Commendation, or safe Conduct or Passport, for the three Ships now going to the *Newfound Land*, written in *Latin* to all Kings, Princes, and other States. Three other of the same Effect written in *Hebrew*. Three others in *Chaldee* Tongue of the same Effect. Dated in *May*. *Passports for three Ships.*

Twenty Letters to signifying, that the King's Majesty hath sent unto every one of them certain Articles for an uniform Order to be observed within every Church within this Realm. Which Articles are gathered with great Study, and by the Advice of the greatest learned Men of the Bishops, &c. Dated in *May*. *Letters about the Articles for Uniformity and the Catechism.*

Fifty four Articles concerning the uniform Order to be observed in every Church of this Realm. A Catechism also to be taught to Scholars, as the Ground and Foundation of their Learning. Dated in *May*.

A Warrant to Sir *John Gates*, to cause a Book to be drawn of the Castle and Manor of *Hertford*, the Manor of *Hartingford-bury*, the Parks of *Hertford* and *Hartingford-bury*, with the Appurtenances, in the County of *Hertford*; and the Manor and Park of *Wikes* in *Essex*, to the Lady *Mary's* Grace. Dated in *May*. *To Sir John Gates.*

A License to the Earl of *Warwic*, to retain an hundred Men; and to the Lord *Robert Dudley*, to retain fifty Men. Dated as before. *To E. Warw. and L. Rob. Dudley.*

A Warrant of Discharge to Sir *John Williams*, for 16667 Pounds 7 Shillings 11 Pence Halfpenny Farthing, paid to *Peter Osborn*, as the Arrearages upon the Determination of the said Sir *John Williams's* Account of his late Office of Masterhip of the Jewel-house. Dated as above. *To Sir John Williams.*

A Warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to make out Writs for a Parliament, to be holden the 18th of *September* next. Dated in *June*. *To the Lord Chancellor.*

A Letter to the Lord Admiral, that it is the King's Pleasure, that he shall repair unto the *Tower of London*, and take the Charge thereof, there being committed to him the Order and Governance thereof. Dated in *July*. *To the Lord Admiral.*

A Letter to the Lieutenant of the *Tower*, to assist him in all such things, as shall by the said Admiral be declared to him or his; and to follow such Direction as he shall appoint. [This is the last Warrant set down in this *Warrant Book*.] *To the Lieutenant of the Tower.*





ANNO

1550.

## C H A P. XXXII.

## Collations, Presentations, Indulgences, and Permissions to Churchmen.



E go on now with another Rank of Things worthy observing, collected from the aforementioned Manuscripts, viz.

## V. Collations, Presentations, Grants, Letters, and Licenses to Men of the Church or University.

To Nic. Wotton.

A Lease to *Nicolas Wotton* Dean of *Canterbury*, for 21 Years, of the Manor of *Leigh*, with the Appurtenances, in *Sussex*, late parcel of the Possessions of *Sir Thomas Cheney* Kt. with divers other Lands, &c. paying therefore yearly 50 Pounds, to the Bailiff or Receiver of the Premises. Dated in *October*, 1550.

To the Bishop of Bath and Wells.

A License to the Bishop of *Bath and Wells*, to give, grant, and alien to *Edward* Duke of *Somerset* in Fee-simple, all the Scite, Circuit, and Precinct of the chief Mansion, called *The Palace of the Bishop of Bath and Wells*, with divers other Lands, &c. to the yearly Value of 62 Pounds 11 Pence, to be holden by Fealty only. Dated in *November*, the same Year.

To Nic. Daniel.

A License to preach to *Nicolas Daniel* M. A. Dated in *November*.

Spillesby Church and Vicarage.

A Grant that the Church of the late College or Chauntry of *Spillesby* in *Lincolnshire*, dissolved by Parliament holden *An. Reg. Edw. VI. 1<sup>o</sup>*. shall be the Parish Church of *Spillesby* again, together with the Churchyard. And that there shall be a Vicar endowed for ever. And he and his Successors shall have a Messuage, and two Barns, and one Horse-mill and Kilne-house, and one Acre of Land in *Spillesby* aforesaid, commonly called, in the Scite of the said College: And an Annuity of 10 Pounds out of all the King's Lands there, payable quarterly, to be holden in *Frank Almoyne*. Dated as above.

To John Bradford.

A License of preaching to *John Bradford*, Professor in Divinity. Dated in *December*.

To William Dawson.

A Grant to *William Dawson*, to be Vicar Preacher in the College of *Southwel* in *Nottinghamshire*, with the Fee of 20 Pounds *per Annum* during pleasure: To be paid by the Receiver of the same Shire. Dated as before.

For Nic. Wotton.

A Non-residence for *Nic. Wotton* Clerk, to take all the Profits of his Prebend in *Salisbury*, during his Life, altho' he be not resident. Dated as before.

To the Bp of Chester.

A Presentation to *John* Bishop of *Chester*, to admit *James Pilkington* to the Vicarage of *Kendal* in *Westmerland*. Dated as before.

A War-



A Warrant to Sir John Baker Kt. [Chancellor of the Court of Augmentations] to exonerate and discharge James Pilkington Clerk, and his Executors, of his First-fruits of the Vicarage of Kendal, whereunto he is presented; whereof the King hath pardoned him. Dated in December. ANNO 1550.  
To Sir John Baker.

A Presentation to the Bishop of Chester, to admit Henry Hkins Clerk, to the Parish Church of Bodal, void by the Death of Thomas Magnus, last Incumbent. Dated as before. To the Bp of Chester.

A Letter to the Dean and Chapter of Worcester; where the King did write to them in favour of Sir Robert Tyrwhit Kt. for a Lease in Reversion for 60 Years, of the Rectory of Wimbleton, that they will make the like Grant to Mr. Cecyl Secretary, and rather better; who hath the Interest of the said Sir Robert in the said Rectory by the old Lease. Dated in January. To the Dean and Chapter of Wigorn.

A Non-residence to Giles Eire, [the King's Chaplain] Professor of Divinity, during Life, to take the Profits of his two Prebends in Winton and Westminster, whether he be present or absent. Dated as above. To Giles Eire.

The Advouson of the next Canonship or Prebend that falleth void in the Cathedral Church of Canterbury, to Peter Alexander, [a learned Stranger, residing with the Archbishop of Canterbury.] Dated in February. For Peter Alexander.

A Letter to the Bishop, Dean, and Chapter of Salisbury, in favour of William Honning Esq; [who was one of the Clerks of the Council] where Guido Cavalcant, Incumbent of the Prebend of Cheping Faringdon in the County of Berks, is contented, upon request made unto him, to give and surrender all his Interest and Estate of the Possession of the said Prebend, to agree to his said Request, in such sort, as the same may take effect towards him in Fee-simple. Dated in February. To the Bishop, Dean, and Chapter of Sarum.

A License to the same Bishop, to grant the Premises in Fee-simple unto William Honning. Dated as above. To the Bp of Sarum.

A Warrant to Sir John Baker, and Sir William Petre, where the Reverend Father in God Thomas Bishop of Norwich, by five Writings obligatory, every of them bearing date the 10th of April, An. 4 Edw. VI. standeth bound to the King's Majesty in the Sum of 1000 Pounds, for the sure Payment of 583 Pounds 13 Shillings 10 Pence, to be paid for his First-fruits: To defalk, deduct, and allow to the said Reverend Father out of the said Sum 400 Pounds; and to deliver so many Obligations for Payment, as amounts to the said Sum: Which the King hath forgiven him. Dated as above. For the Bp of Norwich.

An Annuity of 9 Pounds 6 Shillings 8 Pence, to Richard Squire, Vicar of the Parish of Dovercourt in Essex, to be paid of the Tenths of the Parsonage of Dovercourt from Christmas, An. 4 Edw. VI. half yearly; in recompence of a Promise made to him thereof by the King's Majesty's Father. Dated as above. To Richard Squire.

A Presentation to the Bishop of Chester, to admit John Standish D.D. to the Parsonage of Wiggon in his Diocese, void by the Death of Mr. Herbert, late Incumbent. Dated in March. To the Bp of Chester.

A Warrant to John Ritber Cofferer, to pay William Bill D. D. an Annuity of 20 Pounds, from Michaelmas, An. 3 Reg. during the King's Pleasure. For Dr. Bill.



- ANNO 1550.** A Letter to the Bishop of *Exeter*, [*Voysey*] to suffer the Earl of *Bedford*, and others of the Council, to procure the best Assurance for certain Lands bought of him, appertaining to his Bishopric. Dated in *March*.
- To the Bp of Exon. A License of preaching to *Edmund Gest* B. D. The like to *Henry Ayland* B. D. and *Thomas Bernard* M. A. Dated as above.
- To Gest, Ayland, and Bernard. A Translation of *John Ponet* Bishop of *Rockester*, to the Bishopric of *Winchester*, during his Life, with all Lordships, Manors, Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments, and other Possessions, as well Spiritual as Temporal, with all other Commodities and Jurisdictions. Dated in *March*.
- To the same. The Translation of the said *John* Bishop of *Rockester*, to the Bishopric of *Winchester*, during his Life, with all the Lordships and Manors, &c. New signed, because his spiritual Jurisdictions, and Probate of Testaments, was not in the other. Dated in the same Month.
- To William Thynn. A License to *William Thynn*, Prebendary in the Cathedral Church of *Wells*, to grant and alienate to *Edward* Duke of *Somerset*, in Fee-simple, all the Manor of *Dulkingcote* and *Chilcote* in the County of *Somerset*, with the Appurtenances, belonging to his Prebend there, by Fine or Recovery: And also to the Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, and to the Dean and Chapter, to ratify and confirm the said Grant: And to the said Duke to grant and exchange therefore to the said *William Thynn*, and his Successors, the Manor of *Tyngerst*, alias *Pingurst*, in the County of *Bucks*. Dated as before.
- To J. Haddon, and Wilcock. A License for preaching to *James Haddon* M. A. of *Cambridge*; and to *John Wilcock* M. A. of *Cambridge*. Dated in *March*.
- To Dr. Turner. A Presentation to *William* Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, to admit *William Turner*, Doctor of Physic, [and who lived in the Duke of *Somerset*'s Family] to the Deanry of the Church of *Wells*, with all the Lands and Tenements thereunto belonging. Which the King hath given him, with the Prebend of *Currey*. Dated in *March*.
- 1551.** A Non-residence to *William Turner*, to be absent from his Deanry within the Church of *Wells*, and to take the Profits notwithstanding, during his Life. Dated in *March*.
- To the same. A Presentation to *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, to admit *William Marsh* to the Parsonage of *S. Peter*'s within the Marches of *Calais*, of *Turwyn* Diocese, void by the Resignation of *John Butler*, the late Incumbent. Dated in *March*.
- To Scory. A Collation to *John Scory* to the Bishopric of *Rockester*, with all Lordships, Manors, Lands, Tenements, &c. during his Life, from the Translation of *John*, now Bishop of *Winchester*. Dated in *April*.
- To the Dean and Chapter of Worcester. A Letter to the Dean and Chapter of *Worcester*: Where they have granted to *Sir Philip Hoby* the Parsonage of *Lenchwich* and *Norton* in the County of *Worcester*, and to *John Barnsley* the Farm and Parsonage of *Linrick*, for 21 Years, the King's Majesty's Pleasure is, altho' the Statutes of their House do not permit them to extend their Grants any further than for 21 Years, to dispense with their Statutes in that behalf; and desireth them to grant the same Leases to them for 60 Years apiece. Dated in *April*.
- To the Archbishop of Cant. A Presentation to *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, to admit *William Britten* to the Parish Church of *S. Dionys* in *Limestreet* in *London*: Which



Which *Thomas Pannel* hath resigned to the same *William*, by his Writing dated 13 Feb. An. 5 Edw. VI. Dated as before. ANNO 1551.

A Presentation to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, to admit *Christopher Asburn* B. A. to the Parsonage of *S. Michael's* in *Crooked-lane*, *London*. Dated in April. To the same.

A Letter to *Trinity* College in *Cambridge*, declaring the King is pleased to dispense with *Thomas Doval* B. D. and Vice-master of that College, for enjoying of his Fellowship and Vice-mastership, notwithstanding he be married. Dated in May. To Trinity College.

A Letter to the Bishop of *Carlisle*, that at the Contemplation thereof he would grant to the Lord *Clinton*, Lord Admiral, a Lease for 60 Years of the Manor of *Horncastle* in *Lincolnshire*, after the accustomed yearly Rent. Dated in May. To the Bp of Carlisle.

A License of preaching to the Bishop of *Winchester* within this Realm: And to appoint whom he shall judge meet, to preach within his Diocese; and to inhibit them whom he shall not think meet, within the same. Dated as before. To the Bp of Winchester.

A Warrant to take Bond of *John Scory* Bishop of *Roche- chester*, for the Payment of his First-fruits, to begin at the Annunciation of our Lady, Anno 1554. At which Day he shall pay 100 Marks. And so yearly at the same Feast 100 Marks, till the same be satisfied and paid. Dated as before. For Bp Scory.

A Letter to the Bishop of *Oxon*, that he will grant for reasonable Years and Rent to *William Higbam* and *William Holms*, the Parsonage of *Oughton*, alias *Overton on the Hill*, in the County of *Leicester*; which is presently in his Disposition. Dated in May. To the Bp of Oxon.

A Letter to that it is the King's Pleasure; that *Dr. Rowland Taylor* shall succeed in the Preacher's room of *Canterbury*, now void by promoting *Dr. Scory* to the Bishopric of *Roche- chester*, who last had the same. Dated as before. For Dr. Rowland Taylor.

A Letter to in favour of *John Calvely*, that they will grant a Lease in Reversion, under their Chapter Seal, for 50 Years, of the whole Lordship of *Stoughton*, alias *Sawton*, a piece of Land called *Church* in *Hethe* in *Cheshire*, with all Profits and Commodities thereunto belonging. [They had granted this before to *Calvely*, for as many Years as their Statutes would allow. But this Letter served to dispense with them for letting it for 50 Years.] Dated as before. For John Calvely.

A License to *John Clark*, to have, hold, and enjoy his Prebend in *Wells*, during his Life: And a License to him to marry. [As tho' he thought his Marriage without the King's License, might have shaken his Right and Title to his Prebend: But he did not seem well to consider the Act made in the second Year of this King, which took off all old Canons and Constitutions against Priests Marriage, and that all Forfeitures, Pains, and Penalties for the Breach of them should be of none Effect.] Dated in May. To John Clark.

A Non-residence to *George Carew*, during his Life, to have all Rents, Benefits, Fruits, &c. of his Prebends in the Churches of *Oxon* and *Wells*, notwithstanding his Absence. Dated in May. To George Carew.

A Presentation to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, to admit *Richard Kiffin* to the Parsonage of *Bonings* in the Marches of *Calais*, void by the Resignation of *Anthony Lisle*, last Incumbent. Which was delivered without



ANNO

1551.

For the Bishopric of Winton.

without preaching before the King, notwithstanding the Order taken. Dated as before.

A Warrant to the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Council, and to all other Officers of the Court of First-fruits and Tithes: Where the King's Majesty hath given to *John*, late Bishop of *Rocheſter*, the Bishopric of *Wincheſter*: And where it is agreed, that the ſaid Biſhop ſhould aſſure unto the King divers Manors, Lands, &c. of the ſaid Biſhopric, and the King granted to aſſure to the ſaid Biſhop divers of his Lands, Tenements, and Poſſeſſions, by reaſon whereof the ſaid Biſhopric ſhall be greatly diminifhed: The King is contented therefore, that the ſaid Biſhopric of *Wincheſter*, and the Revenues thereof, ſhall be rated, taxed, and charged to the King's Maſteſty at 2000 Marks for the Firſt-fruits, and not above, [whereas before it was valued in the King's Books at 3885 Pounds 3 Shillings 3 Pence Halfpenny Farthing] as often as the Firſt-fruits thereof ſhall be due and payable: And the ſame Biſhopric of *Wincheſter*, and the Poſſeſſions, and Revenues thereof, from henceforth ſhall be rated, taxed, and charged at 200 Marks yearly, and not above, for the yearly Tenthſ of the ſaid Biſhopric: And that he ſhall be diſcharged of all Sums of Money heretofore due, or uſed to be paid for the Firſt-fruits and Tenthſ of the ſaid Biſhopric. And further, the King hath liſenſed the ſaid Biſhop to enter into the ſame Biſhopric before the Payment of the ſaid Firſt-fruits; to take only the Bonds of the ſaid Biſhop, without Surety or Sureties to be bound with him, by ten ſeveral Obligations, for the ſure Payment of the ſaid 2000 Marks, for the Satisfaction of his Firſt-fruits, and of all other Sums of Money, in ten Years. And further, to deliver all Bonds and Writings touching the Firſt-fruits of the Biſhopric of *Rocheſter*, to the ſaid Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, which the King hath forgiven him. Dated in *May*.

To the Bp of Winton.

A Gift to the ſaid Biſhop, in conſideration of the Manors of *Marden*, *Twiford*, *Marwel*, *Waltham*, &c. in the County of *Southampton*, and of divers other Lands, Tenements, Rents, &c. of all the Rectory of *Bremmer*, and of the Chappel of *Charford* and *Hale*, and of the Rectory of *Rogborn* in the County of *Southampton*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 2000 Marks: To be holden in *Liberam Eleemoſynam*: And to take the Profits from *Michaelmas* laſt. Dated in *May*.

To the ſame.

A Liſenſe to the ſaid Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, to enter into the ſaid Biſhopric, and to take and perceive the Profits thereof, without paying any thing thereof, notwithstanding a Statute made in that behalf, in the 26th of the Reign of *Hen. VIII.* [*Anno Dom. 1534.*] with a Pardon to him of all Pains, Penalties, and Sums of Money that might be forfeited and due to the King, for entering into the Biſhopric of *Rocheſter* contrary to the ſaid Statute. Dated in *May*. [The ſaid Statute was, that every Biſhop, or other Spiritual Perſon, before any actual or real Poſſeſſion, or meddling with the Profits of the Biſhopric, or other Spiritual Promotion, ſhould ſatisfy, content, and pay, or compound and agree to pay to the King's Uſe, at reaſonable Days, upon good Sureties, the Firſt-fruits.]

To the Dean and Chapter of Winton.

A Letter to [the Dean and Chapter of *Winton*] to confirm the Grant of the ſaid Biſhop by their full Conſent, and Seal of the Chapter, as in that caſe by the Order of the Laws is requiſite and accuſtomed. Dated as before.

A Pre-



A Presentation to the Bishop of *Winton*, to admit *Leonard Bilson* M. A. ANNO  
to the Prebend in the Cathedral Church of *Winton*, void by the Death 1551.  
of *Thomas White*. Dated in *June*.

A Presentation of *John Asbdown* to *Asbtisford* [in *Kent*] which *Ponet*,  
when Bishop of *Rocheſter*, held with his Biſhopric. Dated in *June*.  
For L. Bilſon.  
For John Aſb-  
down.

A Liſenſe to *John* Biſhop of *Gloceſter*, and *Anne* his Wife, during his  
Life, with five or ſix Gueſts, to eat Fleſh and white Meats in *Lent*, and  
on other Faſting Days. Dated as before. To the Bp  
of Gloceſter,  
and his Wife.

A Presentation to the Biſhop of *Norwich*, to admit *Launcelot Thexton*  
to the Pariſh Church of *Great Bircham* in his Dioceſe. Dated in *June*. To the Bp  
of Norwich.

The Deanry of *Briſtow* to *John Whitbear* Clerk, for Life, after *John*  
*Snow*'s Death, or when it ſhall be void. Dated as before. To John  
Whitbear.

A Presentation to *Nicolas* Biſhop of *Worceſter*, to preſent *John Har-*  
*ley* M. A. to the Prebend of *Worceſter*, called the *Nineteenth Prebend*,  
void by *Webley*'s Death. Dated as before. For John  
Harley.

A Liſenſe of preaching to *Miles Wilſon* M. A. Student in Divinity  
in the Univerſity of *Cambridge*. Dated *May 7*. For Miles  
Wilſon.

A Letter to the Archbiſhop of *York*, in favour of Mr. *Rider*, Cofferer,  
for the Prebend of *Uſkel*, which *William Laighton* late had. Dated in  
*July*. To the Arch-  
bp of York.

The Collocation of the Biſhopric of *Exeter* to *Miles Coverdale*, with  
a Liſenſe of Entry into the ſaid Biſhopric, being of the yearly Value of  
500 Pounds now, and no more; where afore it was of 1565 Pounds  
13 Shillings 6 Pence Halfpeny Farthing. And that the yearly Tenth  
ſhall be but 50 Pounds hereafter: And to be diſcharged of this Year's  
Tenth, and all Arrearages in the old Biſhop's Time. Dated in *July*. To Miles Co-  
verdale.

A Grant to *John Veyſey*, late Biſhop of *Exeter*, upon his Reſignation  
of his ſaid Biſhopric, to enjoy all Annuities granted unto him out of the  
Lands of the Biſhopric, whereof he hath made a State in Fee-ſimple to  
others; And alſo to enjoy certain Rents granted out of the Biſhopric to  
certain Perſons, that be come to his Hands: And that the ſaid late Bi-  
ſhop may plead in any Court by the Name of *John Veyſey*. Dated in  
*July*. To Veyſey,  
late Biſhop  
of Exeter.

A Warrant to the Court of Firſt-fruits and Tenth, to diſcharge  
*Miles Coverdale*, alate made Biſhop of *Exeter*, of his Firſt-fruits. Dated  
in *Auguſt*. For Biſhop  
Coverdale.

A Letter to Sir *John Maſon* Kt. where the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*  
hath departed to the King's Maſtey certain Lands lately belonging to  
the See of *Wincheſter*; which Lands behoveth to be confirmed to his  
Highneſs, under the Chapter Seal of the Cathedral Church there, be-  
fore *Michaelmas* next; that he with convenient Speed repairing thither,  
and agreeing with the Biſhop to meet with them there at a Day certain,  
do cauſe all the Canons, Prebendaries, and others whom it concerneth,  
to aſſemble and come together in the Chapter-Houſe at *Wincheſter*, for  
confirming of the ſaid Lands before the Feaſt of *Michaelmas*; adviſing  
the Council the Day of their meeting, as Order may be given to the  
King's learned Council to be there at the ſame Time. Dated in *Auguſt*. To Sir John  
Maſon.

A Liſenſe of preaching to *Miles Coverdale* Biſhop of *Exeter*. Dated  
in *September*. To the Bp  
of Exeter.

A Liſenſe



- ANNO 1551.** A License to the said Bishop, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, during their Lives, with five or six at their Table, to eat Flesh and white Meats in *Lent*, and other Fasting Days. Dated in *September*.
- To the same. The Deanry within the Cathedral Church of *Chichester* in *Sussex*, given to *Bartholomew Traheron*, for Life, void by the Death of *Giles Aire*, late the King's Chaplain, with all the Profits thereto belonging. Dated as before.
- To the Dean and Chapter of *Worcester*. A Letter to the Dean and Chapter of *Worcester*, in favour of *William Huggon*, to grant him a Lease for 40 Years, of their Lordship of *Himbleton* in *Worcestershire*. Dated as above.
- To the Bishop of *Winchester*. A Presentation to the Bishop of *Winchester*, to admit *John Rud* B.D. to a Prebend in that Church, void by the Death of *Giles Eyre*. Dated in *September*.
- For *Bartholomew Traheron*. A Letter to the Prebend and Chapter of *Chichester*, to elect *Bartholomew Traheron* Dean thereof, and to do all other things thereunto requisite. Dated as above.
- To *Launcelot Thexton*. A License of preaching to *Launcelot Thexton* M. A. Dated in *October*.
- For Mr. *Lever*. A Letter to to elect Mr. *Lever* to be Master of [S. John's] College in *Cambridge*, now void by reason of the Preferment of him that was late Master there [viz. Dr. *Bill*] to another Promotion within the same University. Dated in *November*.
- To *Rob. Horne*. A Grant to *Robert Horne* of the Deanry within the Cathedral Church of *Durham*, with all and singular Pre-eminences, Jurisdictions, Lands, &c. for Term of his Life, in as large and ample manner as *Hugh Whitbed* had it. Dated as before.
- To *Will. Bill*. A Grant of the Mastership of *Trinity* College to *William Bill* D. D. for Life, void by the Death of *John Redman* Clerk, with all Manors, Mansions, &c. Dated in *November*.
- For *John Watson*. A Presentation to *John* Bishop of *Winchester*, to admit *John Watson* to a Prebend in that Church, void by the Death of *Anthony Barker*, late Incumbent. Dated in *November*.
- For *Tho. Rose*. A Presentation to the Bishop of *London*, to admit *Thomas Rose* to the Vicarage of *West Ham*, void by the Death of the said *Anthony*. Dated in *November*. But the Seal passed not till *Jan. 18.* following.
- For *Nic. Udal*. A Presentation to admit *Nicolas Udal* M. A. to a Prebend of *Windsor*, void by the Death of the said *Anthony*. Dated as before.
- For *Alexander Nowel*. A Presentation to admit *Alexander Nowel* to a Prebend in S. Peter's in *Westminster*, void by the Death of *John Redman*. Dated as before.
- For *Nicolas Ashton*. A Presentation to *John* Bishop of *Chester*, to admit *Nicolas Ashton* to the Vicarage of *Kirby* in *Kendal*, void by the Resignation of *James Pilkington*, late Incumbent. Dated as before.
- For *Tho. Kay*. A Letter to [the Fellows of *University* College in *Oxon*] to elect *Thomas Kay* to the Mastership of their College, void by the Resignation of the late Master there. Dated as above.
- To the Provost and Fellows of *King's* Coll. A Letter to the Provost [Sir *John Cheke*] and Fellows of *King's* College in *Cambridge*, that in chusing ordinary Officers, they use first the Order prescribed in the Statutes. And if, after due Form used, they cannot agree, that then he be taken for Officer, whom the said Provost shall appoint; whom the rest of the Fellows shall obey during the Time of his said Office, in all things that the Statute wills them, until further Order



Order be therein taken, either by the King's Majesty, or the Bishop of *ANNO*  
*Lincoln* [their Visitor.] Dated in *December*.

A License of preaching to *John Jewel*. A like License to *Thomas*  
*Sampson*. Dated in *December*. 1551.  
To Jewel and  
Sampson.

A License to *Nicolas* Bishop of *London*, to give to *Thomas Lord Went-*  
*worth*, and his Heirs, all his chief Messuage, with the Appurtenances,  
in the County of *Middlesex*, with divers other Lands, Tenements, &c.  
[the yearly Value not expressed] to be holden in Fealty only. Dated  
in *December*. To the Bp  
of London.

A Presentation to admit *Richard Turner* B. D. to a Prebend within  
the Chappel of *S. George the Martyr*, in the Castle of *Windsor*, void by  
the Death of *Simon Simons*. Dated in *December*. The Patents sealed  
*Decemb. 24*. For Richard  
Turner.

A License of preaching to *Adam Shepheard* B. D. Dated *Jan. 15*. To Shepheard.  
*Thomas Carew* made Archdeacon of *Norwich*, void by the Death of  
*Alexander Carew*. Dated in *February*. The Carew.

A Grant to *John Ellis* of a Canonship in the Church of *Rockester*,  
void by the Death of *William Harrison*. Dated in *February*. To J. Ellis.

A Letter to the Fellows of *Trinity Hall* in *Cambridge*, to receive for  
their Master *Dr. Haddon*, the King's principal Reader in the Civil Law.  
Dated in *February*. To Trinity  
Hall.

A License for preaching to *Nicolas Grimwald* M. A. Dated *Jan. 2*. To Grimwald.

A License of preaching to *Thomas Wylson*. Dated *Feb. 23*. To T. Wylson.

Annuities of 40 Pounds each, during Pleasure, to be made from *Mi-*  
*chaëlas* last, to *William Bill* D. D. *Mr. Grindal* B. D. *Mr. Perne* D. D.  
*Mr. Harley* B. D. the King's Ordinary Chaplains. Signed *March 13*.  
With a *Liberat dormant*. To the King's  
Chaplains.

A License of preaching to *Dr. Bill*. Dated *March 1*. To Dr. Bill.

A Presentation to *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, to admit *Wil-*  
*liam Britain* Doctor of Law, to *S. Denys Back-church*, void by the Re-  
signation of *William Ererb*. Dated in *March*. For William  
Britain.

A Presentation to *John* Bishop of *Lincoln*, to admit *Thomas Wilson*  
to the Parsonage of *Walsingham*, void by promoting the said *John*  
Bishop of *Lincoln*. Dated in *March*. For T. Wilson.

The Translation of *John [Scory]* Bishop of *Rockester*, to the Bishopric  
of *Chichester*, with all Lordships, Manors, Lands, &c. to the same Bi-  
shopric belonging, to him during his Life. Dated in *April*. 1552.  
Bp of Rockest.

Translation of *John [Hoper]* Bishop of *Glocester* to the Bishopric of  
*Worcester*, with all Lordships, Manors, &c. to the same belonging.  
Dated in *April*. Bp Hoper.

A Grant to *Roland Tayler* LL. D. for Life, of the Archdeaconry of  
*Exon*, with all Lordships, Manors, &c. to the same belonging. Dated  
in *April*. With the Pensions granted him by the Court of Augmenta-  
tions, in recompence of a Prebend and Synodals of the late dissolved  
College *Glasney*, and of the Abbies of *Bodmin*, *Tywardreth*, and *Luxam*,  
with the Discharge of his First-fruits, and the Arrearages of his Prede-  
cessors for their Tenths and Subsidies. Signed *May 3*.

A Pardon or Release to the Bishop of *Rockester*, of all manner of  
Debts, or Arrearages of Debts, due to the King for Tenths for his Bisho-  
prie, and First-fruits. Dated in *May*. To the Bp  
of Rockester.



ANNO  
1552.For the Bp  
of Lincoln  
To Taverner.  
For Barthe-  
Traheron.To the Dean  
and Chapter  
of Exon.

For Bp Hoper

To Grindal.  
To Clement  
Paston.For Matthew  
Parker.

For the same.

To the Bp  
of Lincoln.To the Bp  
of Chichester.To Dr. Stan-  
dish.For Tho. Har-  
ding.For Dr. Had-  
don.To the Bp  
of Bath and  
Wells.

A Warrant to take the Bonds of the new elected Bishop of *Lincoln*, for the Payment of his First-fruits and Tenths; The first Payment to begin at *Michaelmas*, 1553. after 100 Pounds by Year. Dated in *May*.

A License to *Richard Taverner* to preach. Dated as before.

A Letter to the Chancellor of the First-fruits, for the Remission of *Bartholomew Traheron* [Traheron] of 52 Pounds 12 Shillings 4 Pence, due for the First-fruits of the Deanry of *Chichester*. Dated as before.

A Letter to the Dean and Chapter of *Exeter*, for Continuance of the Divinity Lecture in the Cathedral Church there, as the King's late Vi-  
sitors appointed it. Dated as before.

A Warrant to the Officers of the Court of First-fruits, to discharge *John Hoper* Bishop of *Worcester* of all his First-fruits. Dated in *May*.

A License to *Edmund Grindal* B. D. to preach. Dated in *June*.

The Prebend of *Horton* in the County of *Glocester*, parcel of the Pos-  
sessions of the Duke of *Somerset*, leased to *Clement Paston* Esq. for 21  
Years, paying yearly for the same 65 Pounds 1 Shilling 7 Pence Half-  
peny. Dated in *June*.

A Presentation for *Matthew Parker*, for the Prebend of *Corringham* in  
the Church of *Lincoln*. Dated in *June*. Passed the Seal *June 21*.

A Letter also to the President and Chapter of the Church of *Lincoln*,  
to admit and chuse the said *Matthew Parker* D. D. to the Deanry of *Lin-*  
*coln*. Dated as before.

A License to the Bishop of *Lincoln* to preach, with Authority to him  
to forbid any to preach within his Diocese being unable, and not hav-  
ing the King's License. Dated as above.

A License to the Bishop of *Chichester*, both to preach himself, and  
also at his discretion to license or forbid any other within his Diocese.  
Dated in *June*.

A License to *Dr. Standish*, one of the King's Chaplains, to enjoy his  
Prebend in the Church of *Worcester*, as tho' he were resident. Dated  
as before.

A Letter in favour of *Thomas Harding*, [Chaplain to the Marquis  
of *Dorset*] that they will, at the Contemplation of his Majesty's Letter,  
accept and chuse him to be Master of their College, whensoever the  
same shall next become void. Dated as above.

A Letter requiring them, at the Contemplation thereof, to nominate  
and elect *Dr. [Walter] Haddon*, at *Michaelmas* next, to the Room that  
*Dr. Ogletorp* hath in their College, [which was the Presidentship of *Mag-*  
*dalen* College in *Oxon*] who is then willing to resign the same. Dated  
as before.

A Patent granted for Exchange of Lands, to the Right Reverend *Wil-*  
*liam* Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, viz. for the chief Mansion of the Deanry  
of *Wells*, with all the Lands within the Precincts of the same: And  
also the Manor of *Westoker*, with the Right of Patronage of the Par-  
sonage of *Westoker*, and the Borough of *Wellington* and *Stogursey* in the  
County of *Somerset*, to the yearly Value of 60 Pounds 2 Shillings  
11 Pence Halfpeny. And also of the Park of *Wedmore*: And for one  
Annuity of 16 Pounds coming yearly of the Manor of *Glastenbury* in  
the said County: [Which were made over to the King:] And the Bi-  
shop to have the chief Mansion belonging to the Bishop's See, commonly  
called



called *The Bishop of Bath and Wells Palace*, with all the Appurtenances within the Precincts of the said Palace, and the House in *Wells* appointed for the safe Custody of the Clerks convict, and all the Manors in *Wells* and *Westbury*: And all the Borough of *Wells*, and the Hundred of *Wells*, with all their Appurtenances; late parcel of the Possession and Inheritance of *Edward Duke of Somerset*, attainted of Felony, and sometime parcel of the Possessions of the Bishop of *Bath and Wells*. And also the Park called *Westbury Park*, parcel of the Possessions of the foresaid Duke: *Etiam Nativos, Nativas & Villanos cum eorum Sequeliis: Habend. eidem Episcopo & Successoribus suis in perpetuum tenend. de Domino Rege in perpetuam Eleemosynam*: With a Pardon for his First-fruits. The Indenture dated in *July*. The Patents dated at *Westminster*, Aug. 1. An. Reg. 6.

ANNO  
1552.

A License of preaching to *Edward Pilkington M. A.* And another to *Griffith Jones*. Dated in *July*. To *Pilkington and Jones*.

A Grant to *Edmund Grindal*, of a Prebend in the Church of *Westminster*, for Life, void by the Death of *Breton*. Dated in *July*. To *Grindal*.

A Letter to the Fellows of [*Magdalen College, Oxon*] to chuse next *Michaelmas* Dr. *Haddon* President thereof: And that the King is not pleased for the denying of his former Letters, nor for the Division that is between them. Dated as before. To *Magdalen College, Oxon*.

A Presentation to the Bishop of *London*, to admit *John Pullen B. D.* to the Parsonage of *S. Peter's in Cornwall*, void by the advancing of *John [Tayler]* Bishop of *Lincoln*, to that Bishopric. Dated in *July*. For *J. Pullen*.

A Grant to *Rafe Cavelare [Cavalerius]* Stranger, to be free Denison; and therein the Advowson of a Prebend [or, of the next Prebend or Deanry, as Chancellor *Goodrick's* Ledger Book sets it down] in the Church of *Canterbury*: In consideration of his reading the *Hebrew Lecture* freely in *Cambridge*. Dated in *Aug*. To *Rafe Cavelare*.

A Gift to *James Haddon B. A.* of the Prebend of *Westminster*, void by the Death of *Anthony Bellows LL. D.* and Master of Chancery. Dated in *Aug*. To *James Haddon*.

A License of Non-residence granted to Dr. *Standish*, a Prebendary in the Church of *Worcester*, being one of the King's ordinary Chaplains, to have the said Prebend, being in any other his Promotions; any Constitution or Act of Parliament that is, or shall be to the contrary notwithstanding. Dated at *Christchurch*, [where the King was in his Progress] Aug. 20. To Dr. *Standish*.

A Grant to *Edwin Sands D. D.* of a Prebend within the Church of *Carlisle*, void by the Death of *Ballace [Bellows]*. Dated in *Septemb*. To *Ed. Sands*.

A Presentation to the Bishop of *Worcester*, to admit *John Dee* to the Parsonage of *Upton*, void by the Promotion of *John Harley* to the Bishopric of *Hereford*. Dated in *Septemb*. For *John Dee*.

A Letter to the Bishop of *Bath and Wells*, signifying his Majesty's Contentation, that the Bishop having many fit Places within the Precinct of the House of *Wells*, to make an Hall of, and for his Hospitality, may (edifying one thereon) take down the great Hall now standing, and grant the same away: Commending unto him for that purpose Sir *Henry Gates*, upon Knowledge had of the Bishop's good Inclination towards him. Dated in *Septemb*. To the Bp of *Bath*.



- ANNO 1552.** A Letter to the Master and Fellows of S. John's College, Oxon, to place one *Alexander Smutches*, Stranger, in that place which *Johannes ab Ulmis*, lately departed hence, had. Dated as above.
- For Nic Uvedale. A Presentation to John Bishop of Winchester, to admit *Nicolas Uvedale* M. A. to the Parsonage of *Calborne* in the Isle of *Wight*, void by the promoting of *John Goodacre* to the Archbishopric of *Cashel* in *Ireland*. Dated in *Septemb.*
- To John Old. A Grant to *John Old* D. D. for Life, of the Canonship or Prebend in the Cathedral Church of *Hereford*, void by the Death of *Anthony Bellasis* [or *Bellows*] and in the King's Gift by Vacation of the said Bishopric. Dated in *Septemb.* Signed and sealed *Octob. 4.*
- To the Dean and Chapter of Worcester. The King's Letters to the Dean and Chapter of *Worcester*, to confirm under the Chapter Seal such Assurance as shall be devised for his Highness, for certain Lands and Hereditaments reserved of the old Possessions of the Bishopric of *Worcester*. Dated in *Septemb.*
- To the same. A Letter to the Bishop, Dean, and Chapter of *Worcester*, for the Surrender of the Bishopric of *Worcester*, to the Intent there may be a new Collation of the same, by the Name of the Bishopric of *Worcester* and *Glocester*. Dated in *Septemb.*
- For Nic Udal. A Letter in favour of *Nicolas Udal*, to the Dean and Chapter of *Windsor*, to have his Dividend, and other Commodities growing to him by the Prebend there, during the Time of his Absence thence: In consideration that he hath been occupied in preaching. Dated in *Septemb.*
- To the Bp of Hereford. A Letter to the Bishop of *Hereford*, for granting of *Hereford Place* in *London*, to the Lord Admiral in Fee-simple.
- To Andrew Perne. A Grant of a Prebend in *Westminster*, void by the Death of *Simon Heins*, to *Andrew Perne* the King's Chaplain. Dated in *October.*
- To James Haddon. A Grant of the Deanry of the Cathedral Church of *Exeter*, which *Simon Heins*, lately deceased, had, to *James Haddon* D. D. to have during Life. Dated in *October.* But the Patent not signed till *Jan. 8.* at *Westminster.*
- For Trinity College. Statutes signed by the King's Majesty for *Trinity College* in *Cambridge*. Dated in *October.*
- To George Burden. A Prebend granted to *George Burden* B. D. in the Cathedral Church of *Rochester*, now void by the Death of *Wilbore*: And that he shall have the daily Distributions, Dividends, &c. arising thence, whether he be absent or present; provided, that he make yearly Sermons of the Gospels in the aforesaid Church, either by himself, or some sufficient Minister. Dated in *Septemb.* But the Patent bore date *Novemb. 28.*
- To the Bp of Gloucester. A Patent and Grant made by the King to the Bishop of *Gloucester*, viz. uniting the Bishoprics of *Gloucester* and *Worcester* in one, and to be one from henceforth, of one Diocese, and so reputed and taken. The Patent dated *Decemb. 8.*
- To Richard Alvey. *Richard Alvey* B. L. a Donation to him of a Prebend in the Church of *Westminster*. Dated in *September.* But the Patent bore date *Decemb. 11.*
- To Barthol. Traheron. A Grant of a Prebend of *Windsor* to *Bartholomew Traheron*. Dated in *Septemb.*
- For John Bale. A Letter to the Deputy of *Ireland*, to place and receive *John Bale*, Professor of Divinity, as a Man commended by his Majesty, to the Bishopric of *Ossory* there. Dated in *Octob.*

A Let-



A Letter to the Lord Chancellor, to cause the Great Seal of England to be put to a Commission given to certain Commissioners, for the devising and making divers and sundry Statutes and Ordinances, to be observed in *Trinity College in Cambridge*. Dated in *Octob.* ANNO 1552.

For *Trinity College*.

A Presentation to the Bishop of *Chester*, to admit *Bernard Gilpin* to the Parsonage of *Thornton*. Dated in *Novemb.* For *Bernard Gilpin*.

*William Denison* B. D. presented to *S. Edmund's Lombard-street*, void by the Attainder of *John Percy*, late Incumbent. Dated in *Novemb.* For *William Denison*.

A Grant to *Robert Horn*, Professor of Divinity, of the Bishopric of *Durham*, with all Lordships, Manors, Lands, &c. to the same belonging, during his Life. Dated in *Novemb.* To *Rob. Horn*.

A Grant to *John Hooper*, of the Bishopric of *Worcester and Gloucester*: And a Gift to him, and his Successors for ever, of all the Lordships and Manors of *Alchurch, &c.* Dated in *Novemb.* To *Hooper*.

A Presentation to the Bishop of *Worcester*, to admit *Alexander Creek*, Clerk, to the Vicarage of *Kidderminster*, void by the Preferment of *John Harley*. Dated in *Decemb.* To the Bp of *Worcester*.

An Annuity of 40 Pounds to *John Knox*, until he be promoted to some Benefice; to be paid at the Augmentation quarterly. Dated in *Decemb.* For *John Knox*.

A Lease to *Edward Lord Clinton*, for 200 Years, of the Bishop of *Hereford's* House in *London*: Paying yearly 12 Pence. Now signed in *Decemb.* [as one was signed in the Month before] for that there wanted in the other the Rehearsal of certain former Leases. The Bp of *Hereford's* House.

A Grant of a Prebend in the Cathedral Church of *Worcester*, to *Arthur Dudley*. Dated in *Decemb.* To *Arthur Dudley*.

A Patent granted to the Dean of the Free Chappel of *S. George of Windsor*, and to his Successors, to be a Body Corporate, and to purchase Lands to the Value of 40 Pounds. And to have the Parsonage and Church of *Dunstable, Houghton*, with the Advowson of the Vicarage, in the County of *Bedford*; lately parcel of the Possessions of *S. Albani* in the County of *Hertford*; viz. the said Parsonage is granted to *William Franklyn*, now Dean there, and his Successors; and to convert the same to their own Use; rendring to the King 3 Pounds. Which Rectory and the Premises extend to the clear yearly Value of 41 Pounds. Dated *Decemb. 10.* To the Dean of *Windsor*.

A Letter to the Bishop of *Ely*, Lord Chancellor, to take order, that no Person do demand a Fee of the Bishop of *Worcester and Gloucester*. Dated in *Decemb.* For the Bp of *Worcester*.

A Letter to the Bishop of *Exeter*, that the King's Pleasure is, to dispense with *Dr. Haddon* for taking of any other Orders than he hath already. Dated in *Decemb.* [Perhaps he took Orders among the Protestants beyond Sea.] To the Bp of *Exeter*.

A Prebend of *Bristol* granted to *Tho. Bailly* B. D. Dated in *Decemb.* To *Tho. Bailly*.

A Grant of a Prebend of *Windsor* to *Barth. Traheron*. Dated in *Jan.* To *Traheron*.

A Presentation to the Bishop of *Bath*, to admit *Anthony Salvyn* to the Parish Church of *Higham*. Dated in *Jan.* For *Anthony Salvyn*.

A Letter to Sir *John Baker*, to discharge *Anthony Salvyn* of such Bonds as were made for the Payment of the First-fruits of the Master-ship of the Hospital of *Sherborn* in the Diocese of *Durham*: And to take



ANNO 1552. take Bond of Sir *Robert Rede* for Payment thereof; in respect of the Grant thereof unto him made. Dated as above.

To Sir Rob. Rede. The Office of Mastership of the Hospital of *S. Mary Magdalen* of *Sherborn* in the Bishopric of *Durham*, to Sir *Rob. Rede* Kt. for Life. Dated in *February*.

To Thomas Sampson. A Grant to *Thomas Sampson* D. D. for Life, of the Deanry of *Chichester*, with the Profits thereunto belonging, upon the Resignation of *Bartholomew Traheron* D. D. Dated in *Feb.*

To Gilpin. A License of preaching to *Bernard Gilpin* B. D. Dated in *Feb.*

To Madowel. A License for preaching to *John Madowel* B. D. Dated in *Feb.*

To A Lasco. A License to *John A Lasco*, during his Life, to eat Flesh in Lent, and other Fasting Days. Dated in *Feb.* But the Patent bore date *Mar. 11.*

To Harley. The Creation of *John Harley* D. D. one of his Majesty's Ordinary Chaplains, to the Bishopric of *Hereford*, for Life, with all the Lordships and Manors belonging to the same, except the Mansion called *The Bishop of Hereford's House*, lying in *Old Fish-street, London*, with the Gardens and Houses belonging to the same, [which the Lord *Clinton* had got from the See.] Granted in *Feb.* But the Patent bore date *March 28. 1553.*

1553. A special License granted to *Ormund Hill* Clerk, to obtain, purchase, or possess any manner of Parsonage, Vicarage, Lands, Tenements, or other Hereditaments whatsoever, to the Value of 20 Pounds, by Lease or otherwise, notwithstanding any Act to the contrary. Dated *Mar. 18.*

To Parkhurst. A License for preaching to *John Parkhurst* Clerk. Dated in *April.*

To Guy Eton. A like License to *Guy Eton* Clerk. Dated in *April.*

To Alexander Nowel. A like License to *Alexander Nowel*, Schoolmaster of *Westminster*. Dated as before.

To John Barlow. A Patent to *John Barlow* Clerk, Dean of the Church of *Worcester*, giving him by the same full Power and Authority to take and receive of the King, or of any of his Subjects whatsoever, Manors, Messuages, Lands, Parsonages, Tenements, &c. in Farm, to him, his Executors, or Assigns, being either of the Demission or Grant of the King, or any other Persons, for the Term of sixty Years, either more or less, as between them can be agreed. So the clear Value of the said Manors, Messuages, &c. so by the said *Barlow* taken and received to farm, do not exceed the clear Value yearly of 50 Pounds, without incurring any Forfeiture or Penalty of the Act made in the 21st of K. *Hen. VIII.* of the Statute of Lands and Tenements to let to farm to Clerks and Ecclesiastical Persons. [Which Statute actually forbade any spiritual Person to take to farm Manors, Lands, Tenements, &c. upon pain to forfeit 10 Pounds for every Month they shall occupy such Farm.] This Patent was dated *April 7.*

To the Dean of Chester. A License to the Dean of *Chester*, to grant by Deed indented, or otherwise, any of his Lands, Tenements, &c. to Sir *Rich. Cotton* Kt. of the yearly Rent of 603 Pounds 18 Shillings 10 Pence. Dated in *April.*

A License of preaching to *John Rud* B. D. Dated as before.

For a new Master in the Savoy. A Letter to to proceed to the Election and Nomination of a new Master of the *Savoy*, according to the Foundation and Statutes of the same House. Dated in *May.*

To Rafe Jackson. The Office of Master of the *Savoy* to *Rafe Jackson*, for Life, with all Fees. Dated in *June.*



Articles agreed on by the Bishops, and other learned Men, in the Synod at London, in the Year of our Lord 1552. for avoiding of Controversy in Opinions, and the Establishment of a godly Concord in certain Matters of Religion, published by the King's Majesty's Commandment in the Month of May, 1553.

ANNO 1553.

Articles of Religion.

A Book signed by the King's Majesty, containing the Articles aforesaid. The Book signed by the King. To W. Walby.

A Grant of the next Prebend in the Church of *Fridewide, Oxon*, to *William Walby*, Bachelor in Physic. Dated in June.

A License to the Bishop of *Peterburgh*, to give and grant to *David Vincent* all the Wood called *Thomas Wood*, and the Gift of the Parsonage of *Bernak* in *Northamptonshire*. Dated in June.

To David Vincent.

A Gift to *David Vincent*, in Fee-simple, of the Prebend of *Rothseune* in *Wiltshire*, with divers other Lands. Dated in June.

To the same.

A Letter to the Bishop of *Peterburgh* to assent to the Gift of the King of the square Tower adjoining to the Cathedral Church there, with the Bells, and other things thereto belonging, to *Christopher Perne*. Dated as before.

To Christoph. Perne.

A Presentation to the Bishop of *London*, to admit *John Rogers* in the Cathedral Church of *Paul's, London*. Dated as before. [To be Reader there.]

For J. Rogers.

CHAP. XXXIII.

A Catalogue of K. Edward's Free Grammar Schools. More private Matters concerning the King's Household.

THE next Rank of Things collected from the foresaid Manuscripts, is of

VI. Schools Founded by the King.

A Grant of a Free Grammar School at *S. Edmund's Bury* in *Suffolk*, liberally endowed with several Lands of dissolved Chauntries. Bearing date *An. 4<sup>o</sup> Regis*.

1550.

S. Edmund's Bury.

A Grant of a Grammar School at *Spillesby* in *Lincolnshire*, and for *Robert Latham* the first Schoolmaster thereof, for Life, Who shall have Succession for ever, and be incorporated by the Name of *Padagogus Padagogia de Spillesby*, of the King's Foundation: And that he and his Successors shall be able to take and purchase, and to give and grant Lands and Tenements, &c. and to plead and be impleaded by that Name: And that the said *Latham*, and his Successors, shall have the Parsonage of *Spillesby* for their Mansion and the School-house, with three Acres and an half of Land there, belonging to it, an Annuity of 12 Pounds 12 Shillings 8 Pence, out of the King's Lands in *Spillesby*, payable quarterly. With

At Spillesby.



ANNO 1550. With a Grant in it, that *Katharine* Duchefs of *Suffolk*, and *Charles Brandon*, and either of them, their Heirs and Assigns, shall have as well the Nomination and Appointment of the Schoolmaster of the said School, as the Visitation and Reformation of the same. Dated in *Novemb.* 1550.

At Chelmsford.

A Grant that there shall be a Free Grammar School in the Parish of *Chelmsford* in *Essex*: Whereof *Sir William Petre*, *Walter Mildmay*, *Henry Tirrel*, Kts. and *Tbo. Mildmay* Esq; and their Males of their Bodies begotten, shall have the Governace of all the Possessions and Goods, with a Gift of all the Chauntry, called *Hills Chauntry*, with the Appurtenances, in *Great Badow* in the said County: To the said Governours, and their Successors, for ever; with divers other Lands and Tenements, to the yearly Value of 20 Pounds 17 Shillings 10 Pence. Besides 40 Shillings yearly paid to the poor People of *Badow* aforesaid. Paying yearly therefore at *Michaelmas* 17 Shillings 10 Pence at the Augmentation: And Authority given to the said Governors to appoint the Schoolmaster and Usher thereof, and to provide other Necessaries for the said School, and to take the Profits of the said Lands; with a License to purchase of the King, or otherwise, Lands, Tenements, Rectories, Tenth, &c. to the yearly Value of 20 Pounds, besides the Premises. Dated in *March*.

At Sedbergh.

1551. A Grant unto the Inhabitants of the Town of *Sedbergh* in the County of *York*, that there shall be erected a Free Grammar School in *Sedbergh*, to be called, *King Edward the Sixth's Grammar School*: And that *James Ducket*, *Richard Middleton*, &c. be Governors of the same. With a further Grant unto the said Inhabitants, and their Successors, towards the Sustentation of the said School, of the Parsonage of *Weston* in the County of *York*, with divers other Lands, to the yearly Value of 20 Pounds 13 Shillings 10 Pence. Dated in *April*.

At Louth.

A Grant to the Inhabitants of the Town of *Lath*, [*Louth*] and their Successors, that their shall be a Free Grammar School there, called *King Edward's Free Grammar School*; and one Guardian, and six Assistants, of the same Town, one Schoolmaster, one Usher; with a Gift for the Sustentation of the same, of 67 Acres of Land in *Louth* in *Lincolnshire*; with divers other Lands, &c. to the yearly Value of 40 Pounds. Dated in *September*.

At Salop.

A Grant to the Bailiff, Burgesses, and Inhabitants of the Town of *Salop*, that there shall be a Free Grammar School, and one Master, and Usher, to teach Children. For the Sustentation whereof, the King gave them, and their Successors for ever, all the Tithes, coming and growing of the Towns, Fields, and Parishes of *Astley*, *Sensaw*, *Cliff-Letton*, and *Almon Park*, in the County of *Salop*. Dated in *November*. [But the Patent sealed in *February* following.]

At East Retford.

A Grant to the Bailiff and Burgesses of the Town of *East Retford* in the County of *Nottingham*, that there shall be a Grammar School there, which shall be called *King Edward's Free Grammar School*, and a Schoolmaster and Usher. To the Sustentation whereof, he gave the late Chauntry of *Sutton Loundale* in the Parish of *Lounde* in the said County: to the yearly Value of 15 Pounds 5 Shillings 3 Pence Farthing. Dated in *November*.

At Brymingham.

A Free Grammar School erected by the King at *Brymingham* [alias *Bramycham*] in the County of *Warwic*, called *King Edward the Sixth's Free Grammar School*, with a Schoolmaster and Usher. For the Sustentation



ration whereof, he gave all that his Barn, and four Messuages lying in *Dalend* in *Brimingham* in the said County: to the Value of 21 Pounds *per Ann.* rendring to the King, and his Successors, 20 Shillings yearly, at the Augmentations.

ANNO  
1551.

A Patent bearing dated *March 13.* at the Request of the Lord *Dacres*, granted to the Bailiff and Burgeses of *Morpeth* in *Northumberland*, for the erecting of a School there; a Schoolmaster, and Usher: With a Gift of two Chauntries in *Morpeth*, with divers other Lands, &c. yearly Value 20 Pounds 10 Shillings 8 Pence. And a License of Mortmain to purchase 20 Pounds by the Year, for Maintenance thereof.

At Morpeth.

Likewise the next Year, viz. 1552. were erected Grammar Schools at *Macclesfield*, at *Non-Eton*, at *Stourbridge* in *Worcestershire*. This last by the Grant to be called *King Edward's School*, and had a Gift of all the yearly Pensions and Portions of Tithes of *Markley* and *Suckley* in the same County; and divers other Lands. Likewise there were other Schools of his Founding, the same Year, at *Bath* and *Bedford*, and at *Guilford*. And in the last Year of the King, viz. 1553. other Schools, viz. at *Granbam*, at *Thorne*, and at *Giggleswick*. The Foundations and Endowments of all which abovementioned, are shewn in the Catalogue of Records, Book II. at the Letter I. And besides all those, yet other more are these that follow, not mentioned there.

1552.

At Macclesfield, &c.

1553.

A Grant for the establishing of the Corporation of the Town of *S. Albans* in the County of *Hertford*, with certain Liberties therein mentioned; and for the Erection of a Free Grammar School there; with a Grant of the late Abby Church to be their Parish Church. Dated in *April*.

At S. Albans.

A Grant to Sir *Andrew Jud* Kt. and Alderman of *London*, that there shall be a Free Grammar School in *Tunbridge* in *Kent*, called *King Edward the Sixth's Free Grammar School*, with a Schoolmaster, and Usher; with a License to the said *Andrew Jud* to take Lands and Possessions for the Sustainment of the same School, Dated in *April*.

At Tunbridge.

A Free Grammar School granted to the Maior and Burgeses of *Southampton*, with a Schoolmaster and Usher; and with a License to take Land to the yearly Value of 40 Pounds. Dated in *May*.

At Southampton.

A Grant to the Burgeses of *Stratford* upon *Avon* of a Free Grammar School, and Almes-House; with a Gift of certain Lands, to the Value yearly of 46 Pounds 3 Shillings 2 Pence Halfpeny. Dated in *June*. And this was the last this Prince founded.

At Stratford.

We may note, that the Endowments of these Schools were for the most part out of the Chauntry Lands, given to the King in the First of his Reign, according to the Intent of the Parliament therein: Which was, to convert them from superstitious Uses, unto more godly, as in erecting Grammar Schools, for the Education of Youth in Virtue and Godliness; for further augmenting the Universities, and better Provision for the Poor. And the King was so honest and just, to lay them out in a very considerable measure for these good Ends intended.

Schools endowed with Chauntry Lands: And why.

The last Things we are to give account of from our Manuscripts, are a few Matters relating to the King's Household and Servants: Which, tho' of a private nature, yet may be well worthy our Notice.



ANNO

1550.

Coats for  
the King's  
Footmen.

## VII. Matters of the Household.

A Warrant to Sir *Rafe Sadler* Kt. [belonging to the Wardrobe] to deliver to *John Ventrice*, *Roger Newport*, *Edward Broughtel*, and *Humphrey Colley*, the King's Majesty's Footmen, and to every of them, two Yards and an half of Crimson Velvet for a running Coat, and to pay for the Lining and Making thereof. Dated in *Octob. 1550.*

A Warrant to Sir *Edmund Peckham* Kt. [Treasurer, as I think, of the Chamber] to pay unto every one of the said four Footmen, for 26 Ounces of Silver Parcel gilt, at 8 Pence [8 Shillings perhaps] the Ounce, about their running Coats, for the third Year of the King's Reign. Dated as before.

License to  
the King's  
Factor for  
his Ward-  
robe.

*Bartholomew Compagni*, a *Florentine*, the King's Factor: A License to him, his Factors and Attorneys, appointed for Provision of such Things as be brought into the Realm, as followeth; that is to say, all manner of Cloth of Gold and Silver, all manner of Silks and Velvets, Damasks, Sattins, Taffaties, and Sarcenets; all manner of Works of *Venice* Gold and Silver, Damask Gold and Silver, and of Silk, as Passemain, Fringe, Ribband, and such other Work; all Gold and Silver, both *Venice* and Damask: All manner of Gold Work, Plate and Silver Vessels, Jewels, Pearls, precious Stones, as well set in Gold, and embroidered in Garments, as otherwise: All manner of Garments embroidered with Gold and Silver, Skins and Furs, Sables and Lufards; Cloths of Tapistry and Arras, mixed with Gold, Silver, or Silk; and all other things meet for the King's Majesty's Use and Purpose; without any manner of opening before it be brought to the Port of *London*, and there viewed and praised by the King's Officers thereunto admitted. Dated in *October.*

For the  
King's  
Chappel.

A Warrant to Sir *Rafe Sadler*, to deliver to *Robert Bassok*, Serjeant of the Vestry, threescore and two Surplices, for the Gentlemen of the Chappel; two Surplices with wrought Work for the Sub-dean of the Chappel; four and twenty Surplices for the Children of the Chappel; for the Table in the Chappel three Cloths; two Table-cloths for the Body of the Chappel; four Diaper Napkins for the Communion; six Albes for the Minister, Deacon, and Sub-deacon: Two hundred Hooks, one Hammer, a Pair of Pinsons, a little Pot, and a Guispin, a Pair of Tin Cruets, three Yards of green Cloth, to lay the Stuff upon. Dated in *November.*

Coats for  
the Kings at  
Armes, &c.

A Warrant to Sir *Rafe Sadler*, to deliver to the Officers of Armes; that is to say, to the three Kings of Armes, three Coats of Sattin, painted with Gold; to five Heralds, five of Damask, painted with Gold; and to eight Pursevents, eight of Sarcenet, painted with Gold. Dated in *Febru.*

Singing  
Children for  
the King's  
Use.

A Commission to *Philip Van Wilder*, Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, in any Churches or Chappels, or other Places within *England*, to take to the King's Use such, and as many singing Children or Choristers, as he or his Deputy shall think good. Dated in *February.*

For the  
King's  
Maundy.

A Warrant to Sir *Rafe Sadler*, to deliver to Mr. *Cecyl*, and Mr. *Robotham*, Yeomen of the Robes, all things as hath been accustomed for the King's Maundy, for the fifth Year of his Reign. [When he was to wash the poor Mens Feet.] Dated as above.

To



To Sir George Howard, for his Office of Master of the Henchmen, for one whole Year. He was appointed to attend upon the young Lords sent over the Sea as Hostages; whereof the Earl of Hertford was one. Dated in March.

ANNO 1551.

Master of the Henchmen. Spangles for Livery Coats.

A Warrant to the Exchequer, to deliver to Peter Richardson Goldsmith, 600 Pounds preft, to be employed in fine Silver, to make Spangles for the Livery Coats of the Guard, the Yeomen of the Tower of London, the Footmen and Messengers of the Chamber, for the fifth Year of the King's Reign. Dated in May.

A Warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to Edward Lord Clinton, Lord Admiral, which is now elect and chosen to be of the Right Honourable Order of the Garter, for his Livery of the same Order, 18 Yards of Crimson Velvet, for one Gown, Hood, and Tippet, and 10 Yards of white Sarcenet for the Lining of the same. Dated in May.

Crimson Velvet for the L. Clinton of the Order.

A Warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to pay to John Wheeler, whom the King hath taken into the room of Child of the Lease, the Wages of 40 Shillings by Year, during his Life, from the Death of Richard Balcon. Dated in September.

A Child of the Lease.

A Warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to the said John Wheeler yearly during his Life, these Parcels following, first, eight Yards of Motley for a Coat, at 3 Shillings 4 Pence the Yard, and for the making of the same Coat 14 Shillings: six Yards of Chamblet for two Doublets, at 3 Shillings 4 Pence the Yard; six Yards of Fustian, at 8 Pence the Yard; for Lining to the same; two Yards of Canvas to line the same, at 8 Pence the Yard. For making his said Doublets, 16 Pence a piece. Six Yards of Fustian, at 12 Pence the Yard, for two Doublets; and four Yards of Cotton, at 8 Pence the Yard, and two Yards of Canvas, at 4 Pence the Yard, for lining the same: For making the same, 2 Shillings. Eighteen Ells of Holland Cloth for six Shirts, at 12 Pence the Ell; and for making every Shirt 8 Pence. Four Yards of broad Cloth for a Gown, at 5 Shillings the Yard. A Fur of black Irish Lamb, price 30 Shillings. For fluting and making of the same, 3 Shillings 6 Pence. Three broad Yards of red woolen Cloth for a Coat, &c. Dated as before.

His Apparel.

and list of provisions of the household.

and list of provisions of the household.

A Warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to pay Sir Anthony Darcy his Fee or Wages of 100 Pounds by Year, for exercising the Room of Lieutenant of the Tower of London. Dated in December.

Wages paid to the Lieutenant of the Tower.

A Warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to pay to Philip Van Wilder yearly, the Allowance of 80 Pounds, for the finding of six singing Children of the Chamber. Dated as before.

Singing Children of the Chamber.

A Warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to Richard Cecyl, and Robert Robotham, Yeomen of the Robes, 15 Gowns of gray marble Cloth, 15 pair of fingle soled Shoes, and 45 Ells of Linnen Cloth, to be given to fifteen poor Men on Maundy Thursday. 1552.

For 15 poor Men at the Maundy.

A Warrant to Richard Cecyl Esq; to deliver to the Earl of Shrewsbury one of the King's Canes, having a Dial of Gold on the Top, and garnished with Gold; and having at the End a Viral [Ferula] of Gold; as of the King's Gift. Dated in April.

A Cane for the Earl of Shrewsbury.

Richard Gowre Master of the Children of the King's Chappel: A Letter to him, to take up from Time to Time, as many Children to serve in the Chappel as he should think fit. Dated in June.

Master of the Children of the King's Chappel.



**ANNO 1552.** The Office of Child of the Leashe to *John Strete*, for Life. [There was one *Strete* the King's Limner: this *John Strete* might be his Son.] With the Wages of 40 Shillings by Year, to be paid by the Treasurer of the Chamber quarterly. And a Warrant to *Sir Rafe Sadler*, to deliver yearly to the said *John Strete* certain Stuff for his Apparel, with Allowance for making. Dated in December.

Warrant to the Yeoman of the Robes.

A Warrant to *Sir Andrew Dudley*, to deliver to *Robert Robotham*, Yeoman of the Robes, to keep for the King one Furr of black Jennets, taken out of a Gown of Purple Cloth of Silver Tissue: Another Furr of black Jennets, taken out of a Purple Gown of Silver with Works. And to the Lord Chamberlain a Gown of Crimfon Sattin, embroidered with Gold, and furred with black Jennets. To *Sir Richard Cotton* a Crimfon Sattin Gown, furred with Squirrels, and faced with Sables, and ten Yards of black: and to himself a Gown of dark Crimfon Velvet, furred with Aglets, and Buttons thereto appertaining. And to *Sir Thomas Wroth*, ten Yards of black Velvet, which he wan of the King. Dated in December.

A Collar of the Order.

A Warrant to the Lord Treasurer, to deliver to *Sir Andrew Dudley* one Collar of Gold of the Order of the Garter, remaining in his Charge, containing 27 Roses of Gold enamelled red, with the Garter about them enamelled blue, and *Honi soit qui mal y pense* in it: and also 27 Knots of Gold enamelled, with a fair *George* pendant, with three very little short Chains at it, set with five Table Diamonds, and five pointed Diamonds enamelled black on the Backside. Dated in December.

To the Embroiderer.

A Warrant to the Receiver of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, to pay to *ibgrave*, Embroiderer, for embroidering 109 Coats for the Guard, and for four Messengers of the Chamber, for the seventh Year of the King's Reign, 41 Pounds 16 Shillings 8 Pence. Dated in March.

To another Embroiderer.

A like Warrant to him to pay *Gillan Brodlet*, for embroidering 122 Coats, 46 Pounds 2 Shillings 8 Pence. Dated as before.

For Spangles.

A like Warrant to him to pay *Peter Richardson* in preft, to be employed upon Spangles, 600 Pounds. Dated as before.

### The End of the Second Book.





---

A  
REPOSITORY  
OF

Divers LETTERS,

AND OTHER

Choice MONUMENTS,

From Authentic MSS.

TO WHICH

Reference is made in the foregoing History.

---



REPORT

DIRECTORIES

AND OTHER

CHOICE DOCUMENTS

FROM AMERICAN MSS.

TO WHICH

REFERENCE IS MADE IN THE FOLLOWING LIBRARY

OF THE AMERICAN ANTI-QUARIAN SOCIETY





A.

*The Ceremonies and Funeral Solemnities paid to the Corps of  
King Henry VIII.*



**A**FTER the Corps was cold, and seen by the Lords Ex Offic. Ar-  
mor. l. 11. of the Privy Council, and others the Nobility of  
the Realm, as appertained, Commandment was giv-  
en to the Apothecaries, Chirurgeons, Wax-Chand-  
lers and others, to do their Duties in Spurg-  
ing, Cleansing, Bowelling, Cering, Embalming, Furnish-  
ing, and Dressing with Spices the said Corps; and  
also for wrapping the same in Cerecloth of many Folds over the fine  
Cloth of Rains and Velvet, surely bound and trammel'd with Cords  
of Silk. Which was done and executed of them accordingly, as to  
the Dignity of such a mighty Prince it appertaineth: And a Wri-  
ting in great and small Letters annexed against the Breast, contain-  
ing his Name and Style, the Day and Year of his Death in like  
Manner. After this don, then was the Plummer and Carpenter ap-  
pointed to case him in Lead, and to chest him. Which being don,  
the said Chest was covered about with blew Velvet, and a Cross set  
upon the same.

And the Corps being thus ordained, the Entrails and Bowels were  
honorably buried in the Chappel within the said Place, with all  
manner of Ceremonies thereunto belonging; don by the Dean and  
Ministers of the same Chappel.

Then was the Corps in the Chest had into the Midds of the Privy  
Chamber, and set upon Tressels with a rich Pall of Cloth of Gold,  
and a Cross thereon, with all manner of Lights therto requisite, ha-  
ving Divine Service about him with Masses, Obsequies and Pray-  
ers; and continual Watch made by his Chaplains and Gentlemen  
of his Privy Chamber, to the number of Thirty Persons, besides  
the Chaplains, continually about him, in their Orders and Courses  
night and day, during the Time of his Abode there, which was five  
Days. And in the mean time all things in the Chappel, and for  
preparing of his Herse in the same, were continually a doing, as  
hereafter shal be declared.

First, The Chambers, Galleries, Hal, Chappel, and al other ne-  
cessary Places were hanged with Black, and garnished with Escutche-  
ons of his Armes, Descents and Mariages.

In the said Chappel was ordained a goodly formal Herse, with  
fourscore square Tapers; Every Light containing two Foot in  
length, pausing in the whole Eighteen Hundred Weight of Wax;  
[Another Account saith, by Estimation, 2000.] Garnished about 3. 14. p. 63.  
with Pensils and Escutcheons, Banners and Bannerols of Descents.  
And at the four Corners four Banners of Saints beaten in fine Gold upon



Damask; with a Majesty therover of rich Cloth of Tissue, and Val-  
lance of black Silk, and Fringe of black Silk and Gold. And the  
Barriers without the Herse, and the Sides and Floor of the said  
Chappel, covered with black Cloth, to the High Altar: and all the  
Sides and Ceiling of the said Chappel set with Banners and Stand-  
ards of St. George and others:

And at the Foot where the Corps should be reposed within the  
Herse, stood an Altar covered with black Velvet, adorned with al  
manner of Plate and Jewels of the Revestry. Upon which Altar  
there was said Mas continually during the Time, that the Corps  
was there remaining. And the High Altar very richly adorned  
with Plate and Jewels and other Ornaments.

And in the mean time Commandment was given to al manner of  
States, as wel Noble Men and Women, to whom it appertained, as  
to al of them of the King's House, to put apart their several Appa-  
rels, and put on them every man his Mourning Weeds. And War-  
rants directed out to the great Wardrobe, for the Serving of them,  
every Man and Woman, after the Rate and Proportion appointed  
to their Degrees. To the intent they might give their Attendance  
in such kind of Service as to them should be appointed. Which  
was accomplished of every Man against the day the Corps should be  
removed.

The Names of the Mourners appointed to give their Attendance  
upon the said Corps, as wel at the Herse, as in the Removing ther-  
of from Place to Place, hereafter follow.

#### CHIEF MOURNER.

*Henry Gray, Lord Marques of Dorset.*

#### TWELVE MOURNERS.

|                                           |   |                                       |
|-------------------------------------------|---|---------------------------------------|
| <i>L. St. Johns, L. Presid. of the C.</i> | } | <i>Henry Parker, Lord Morley.</i>     |
| <i>Henry Fitz Alleyn, Earl of Arun-</i>   |   | <i>Will. Dacre, Lord Dacre of the</i> |
| <i>del, Lord Chamberlain.</i>             |   | <i>North.</i>                         |
| <i>John Vere, Earl of Oxford.</i>         |   | <i>Walter Devereux, Lord Ferrers.</i> |
| <i>Francis Talbot, E. of Shrewsbury.</i>  |   | <i>Edward Fyenns, Lord Clinton.</i>   |
| <i>Edward Stanley, Earl of Derby.</i>     |   | <i>Edward Gray, Lord Gray.</i>        |
| <i>Henry Ratclyff, Earl of Suffex.</i>    |   | <i>John Scrope, Lord Scrope.</i>      |

These Noblemen prepared themselves in their Mourning Habits,  
as Hoods, Mantles, Gowns, and al other Apparels, according to their  
Degrees; and were in good Order and Readiness at the Court; to  
give their Attendance, when they should be called.

The Names of the Bishops and Prelates appointed as well for the  
Executing and Ministring Divine Service in the Chappel, as also to  
attend upon the Conduct of the said Corps, when it shall be removed.

*Steven*



|                                                    |   |                                   |
|----------------------------------------------------|---|-----------------------------------|
| Steven Gardiner, Bp. of Winchester, Chief Prelate. | } | Will. Barlow, Bp. of St. Davids.  |
| Cutbert Tunstal, Bp. of Durham.                    |   | Henry Holbeach, Bp. of Rochester. |
| Edmund Boner, Bp. of London.                       |   | John Wakeman, Bp. of Gloucester.  |
| Thomas Goodrich, Bp. of Ely.                       |   | Arthur Bulkley, Bp. of Bangor.    |
|                                                    |   | Paul Bush, Bp. of Bristow.        |

whereof the Bishop of Winchester was appointed to make the Sermon; and being Chief Prelate of the Order, to Execute.

These with al other Chaplains, and Men of the Church, were commanded to be ready in their Pontificalibus, and others for the Execution of Divine Service at the Time appointed, as followeth:

The Second day of the Month of February, being Wednesday, and Candlemas Day, betwixt 8 and 9 of the Clock at night, the Herse being Lighted, and all other things appointed and prepared, the said most Royal Corps was reverently taken, and removed from the Chambers, covered with a rich Pall of Cloth of Tissue, Crossed with white Tissue, and garnished with Escutcheons of his Arms; and so brought to the Chapel by the Lord Great Master, the Officers of Household, Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, Esquires for the Body, and other Noblemen and Gentlemen, both Spiritual and Temporal; Placed in their Degrees, and going before the Corps, and after, with Lights meet for the same. And there it was honorably set and placed within the said Herse, under a Pall of rich Cloth of Tissue, garnished with Escutcheons, and a rich Cloth of Gold set with precious Stones thereon.

And the Corps being so reposed in the Herse, the Dean of the Chappel, with all other Chaplains and Ministers therof set to their Oraisons and Suffrages.

After that, the Gentlemen Ushers with Officers of Arms, and others therto appointed, began their Watch in due Course and Order, as to them appertained, for that night. Which Order was also kept and continued honorably night and day, during the said Corps there being, with al Divine Service meet and convenient for the same.

So the Morrow after being Thursday, the 3d of February, between 9 and 10 before noon, the Mourners assembled themselves in the Pallet Chamber, in their Mourning Apparel, with their Hoods on their Heads: and from thence were conveyed to Chappel in Form following: That is to say, two and two in Order after their Degrees, next to the Chief: and then the Chief Mourner with his Train born after him, conducted with Officers of Arms, and Gentlemen Ushers, the Vicechamberlain and divers others following them, after their Degrees. And so proceeded til they came to the Herse, where they were placed, and kneeled about the Corps on either side, as they proceeded; and the Chief Mourners at the Head.

Then Norroy King of Arms, standing at the Quire door with his Face to the People, said with a loud Voice, *Of your Charity pray for the Soul of the High and most Mighty Prince, our late Sovereign Lord and King HENRY VIII.* Which he did daily at the beginning of al Masses and Diriges. Then from the Vestry of the said



saïd Chappel came out three Bishops in *Pontificalibus*, and began the *Requiem Mass* at the High Altar, the Chappel singing and saying the Ceremonies thereto appertaining, in most Solempn and goodly wise, to the Offertory.

Then was a Carpet and Quission laid, by the Gentlemen and Yeomen Huishers, for the Chief Mourner: Who immediately came up to the Offering, with the rest following after him in Order two and two, as aforesaid, conducted by Officers at Arms; and Gentlemen Huishers. Then the Chief Mourner, receiving the Offering of the Lord Chamberlain, did offer the same, assisted with al the rest, and none other offering but he. And so returned in like Order, leaving the Corps on the Right Hand, and placed themselves as they were before, within the Herse. And after the Mass was ended, the Prelates that executed came from the Altar down to the Herse; and they Censured the saïd Corps with al maner of Ceremonies thereto appertaining. And that don they returned to the Vestry. And the Mourners departed, conducted in order, as aforesaid, to the Chamber of Presence: where was prepared for them a Sumptuous Dinner: and the Chief Mourner served with Assays, and al other Service, saving the Estate, as if it had been the Kings Majesty personally present.

When the Divine Service was don, every man drew himself to his Lodging til Afternoon at the Hour appointed. And then they repaired again to the saïd Chamber, from whence they were had, and conducted in like maner to the Chappel, and placed about the Corps, kneeling within the Herse, as afore is mentioned. Then *Norroy* King at Arms came out and proclaimed his Style, Bidding the Prayers; and with that, the Prelates before named began the *Placebo* and *Dirige*. And at every Lesson *Norroy* went out and bad the Bede.

Thus the aforesaid Prelates, with the Dean and Chapter, continued in al maner of Service and Ceremonies, *Dirigies* and Masses, Censings, Watching, saying of Psalters, and al other Rites and Duties, as wel in the Forenoon as After, by Night and by Day during the Abode of the Corps within the Chappel; which was Twelve Days. In the mean time the Herse at *Sion* and *Windsor*, and al other kinds of Preparation, were doing: which was set forth, as hereafter followeth.

First, the Church of *Sion*, and the Choir with the House, Chambers and Lodgings, where the Ambassadors and Nobles should repair, were hung to the Ground with black Cloth, and garnished with Escotcheons of the Kings Armes in the Garter, and Mariages. In the midst of the Choir there was ordained a Royal and Stately Herse of nine Principals with double Stories, and a costly Majesty, a Vallance fringed with black Silk and Gold, and Hatchments garnished over al with Pencils, Escotcheons of Armes, Bannerols of Descents; and about the same double Barriers hanged with black Cloth, Escotcheons; and the Floor of the same Herse covered with black Cloth to the High Altar: which was al covered with black Velvet, and preciously adorned with al maner of Plate and Jewels of the Church,



Church, Silver, Gold and precious Stones, in the best wise. And the said Herse continued with al sorts of Lights in great number.

And at *Windsor*, the Ways of Passage from the Castle-bridge to the West door of the Colledg, were railed on both Sides the Way, and hanged with black Cloth to the Ground with Escutcheons of Arms and Mariages: and so were the Lodgings of the Ambassadors and Nobles within the Castle; and al the Church Peramble, and the Choir of the College hung and garnished as aforefaid: and the whole Floor of the Choir was spread with black Cloth. And the Herse standing in the midst of the said Choir was of a wonderful State and Proportion: That is to say, formed in compas of eight Panes, and thirteen Principals, double Storied, of 35 Foot high, curiously wrot, painted and gilded, having in it a wonderful sort of Lights amounting in price of Wax to the Sum of 4000 pound Weight, and garnished underneath with a rich Majesty, and a Doome double Vallanced: On the which on either side was written the Kings Word in beaten Gold upon Silk, and his Armes of Descents. And the whole Herse was richly fringed with double Fringes of black Silk and Gold on either Side, both within and without, very gorgous, and valiant beheld.

And above over al the Herse among the Lights, it was set and garnished with Pensils, Scutcheons of Arms and Mariages, with Hatchments of Silk and Gold, and divers Bannérols of Descents, depending in goodly Order round about the Herse. Also the double Barriers of the said Herse were hanged with black Cloth, and set with Escutcheons of the Kings Armes, and al the Floor overspread with black Cloth to the High Altar. Which Altar was hanged with Cloth of Gold, and adorned with all the precious Jewels of the Church, as Candlesticks, Crosses, Basins, Censers, Shipes and Images of Gold and Silver in great abundance. And another Altar set at the Foot where the Corps should ly within the Herse, covered with black Velvet, hanged also with the richest Ornaments and Plate, that in the best Form and Order might be devised.

Now while these Things were in hand, and continually working by Artificers, and others therto appointed, there was ordained for the Corps a sumptuous and valuable Chariot of Four Wheels, very long and large, with four Pillars overlaid al with Cloth of Gold at the four Corners, bearing a Pillow of rich Cloth of Gold and Tissue, fringed with a goodly deep Fringe of blew Silk and Gold: And underneath that turned towards the Chariot was a marvellous excellent Cloth of Majesty, having in it a Doom artificially wrought in fine Gold upon Oyl. And al the nether part of the said Chariot was hanged with blew Velvet down to the Ground between the Wheels, and al other Parts of the Chariot enclosed in like maner with blew Velvet.

Forthwith, were al other necessary things for the Conduct of the said Noble Corps with al speed devised and set forth, to be ready at the Day the same should be removed.

There was also order taken for the clearing and mending of all the High Ways between *Westminster* and *Windsor*, whereas the Corps should pas; and the noisome Boughs cut down of every side the Way,



Way, for prejudiceing of the Standards, Banners and Bannerols. And where the Ways were narrow, there were Hedges opened on either Side, so as the Footmen might have free Passage, without tarrying, or disturbing of their Orders.

*Item*, my Lord of *Worcester*, the Kings Almoner, with other his Ministers and Assistants, did dayly distribute to the Poor People, as wel about the Kings House at *Westminster*, as at *Leadenhal* in *London*, and divers other Places, great Plenty of Mony in Almesdeeds, both in open Doles, and by way of Proclamation; and especially in the Wards of *London* wheras Need was, to the great Relief and Comfort of the poor People.

There was also two Carts laden with Hatches and Escotcheons of Armes delivered to the said Almoner, to distribute them, with certain Mony to the Parishes along the Way. Which Carts went forth before the Removing with the Almoners Deputies, and delivered the same to the Curats and Clerks of the Churches here ensuing.

|                                     |                     |                         |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>Charing Crosse.</i>              | <i>Fulham.</i>      | <i>Aston.</i>           |
| <i>St. Margaret at Westminster.</i> | <i>Kensington.</i>  | <i>Terling.</i>         |
| <i>St. Giles in the Fields.</i>     | <i>S. Martin.</i>   | <i>Branforth.</i>       |
| <i>Chelfish.</i>                    | <i>Cheswick.</i>    | <i>Hanwel.</i>          |
| <i>Norwood.</i>                     | <i>Hammersmith.</i> | <i>New Branforth.</i>   |
| <i>Thwykenham.</i>                  | <i>Stough.</i>      | <i>Syon.</i>            |
| <i>Hounslow.</i>                    | <i>Graiford.</i>    | <i>Thistleworth.</i>    |
| <i>Northal.</i>                     | <i>Harlington.</i>  | <i>Hillington.</i>      |
| <i>Bedford.</i>                     | <i>Stanwel.</i>     | <i>Shewer.</i>          |
| <i>Colbrooke.</i>                   | <i>Eton.</i>        | <i>Iver.</i>            |
| <i>Heston.</i>                      | <i>Shipston.</i>    | <i>Langley.</i>         |
| <i>Stanes.</i>                      | <i>Docket.</i>      | <i>Farnham.</i>         |
| <i>Knightsbridg.</i>                | <i>Hais.</i>        | <i>Windsor.</i>         |
|                                     | <i>Drayton.</i>     | <i>Windsor College.</i> |

The Curats and Clerks of these Churches had Torches and Escotcheons and Money delivered them by the Kings Almoners. And when the Corps was coming, they stood in the Way in their best Ornaments, and honorably received the same, bidding their Oraisons and Prayers as appertained, and devoutly censured the Corps, as it proceeded. Which Order was kept al the long way between *Westminster* and *Windsor*, ever as the Corps removed.

These and other Things requisite to the Removing in maner afore declared, ordained and provided, on Sunday Morning the 13 day of *February*, at the High Altar of the Chappel, where the Corps remained, there were sung three Solemn Masses by Bishops in *Pontificalibus* in sundry Suits. The first of our Lady in White: The Second of the Trinity in Blew: The Third of *Requiem*, by the Right Reverend the Bishop of *Winchester* in Black. And at every Mas two Bishops Mitred, to Minister therto, as Epistolar and Gospeller. When the Chief Mourner, with al the rest of the Lords Mourners were set, and kneeled within the Herse, the Chappel and al the People keeping Silence, *Norroy King* at Armes began the Bedes in Form before expressed. And the Choir began the Office of



of the first Mas; and so proceeded solemnly with the Prelates executing to the Offertory of the Mas of *Requiem*. Then the Chief Mourner accompanied with al the rest of the Mourners offered for them al. So the Mas proceeded to the End. The Mas don, the Prelats as aforefaid censed the Corps, the Chappel singing *Libera me Domine*. That don they went into the Revelstry again. Immediately the Mourners with al other Prelats drew to the Chamber of Prefence to Dinner, as is aforefaid.

That same day was Proclamation made, that al Men allowed black Liveries of the King should give Attendance the next day at five of the Clock at *Charing Crosse*, for the Conduct of the said Corps to *Syon* that night. Item, that al such as had Cariage of their Masters should go before for troubling the Passage of the said Corps in the Way.

After Dinner they withdrew to their Chambers, and resorted to the Chappel in due Time, as is aforefaid. Where was *Dirige* with Censing of the Corps, al Suffrages and Duties therto appertaining. That done they went to Supper. But there was Solemn Watch about the Corps, with continual Prayer and Lights al that Night.

The next day early [the 14 February] the Chariot was brought to the Court Hal door; and the Corps with great Reverence brought from the Herse to the same by Mitred Prelats, and other Temporal Lords. In this wise went the Bishops two and two in Order, saying their Prayers, Torches plenty on every side the Corps, born by sixteen Yeomen of the Guard under a rich Canopy of blew Velvet fringed with Silk and Gold, which was holden up with six blew Staves and Knops of Gold; the six Staves were born by six Barons; *Viz.* The Lords *Burgaveny*, *Conyers*, *Latymer*, *Fitzwater*, *Bray* and *Cromwel*. Which Lords executed the said Office as oft as the said Corps was removed to and fro the Choir. Then followed the Chief Mourner and the rest of the Lords Mourners in order, with Torches Light, born on every side in great Numbers: and so was it reverently setled in the Bulk of the Chariot. Over the Coffin of the said Chair was cast a Pall of rich Cloth of Gold, and upon that a goodly Image like to the Kings Person in al Points, wonderful richly apparelled, with Velvet, Gold and precious Stones of al sorts; holding in his right Hand a Scepter of Gold; in his left Hand the Bal of the World with a Cross. Upon his Head a Crown Imperial of inestimable Value, a Collar of the Garter about his Neck, and a Garter of Gold about his Leg. Which thus being honorably conducted as aforefaid, was laid upon the said Coffin by the Gentlemen of his Privy Chamber upon rich Cushions of Cloth of Gold, and fast bound with silk Ribbands to the Pillars of the said Chariot, for removing. Then were set at the Head and Feet of the said Corps Sir *Anthony Denny*, and Sir *William Herbert*, two of the Chief of of his Privy Chamber; which kept their Rooms, and were caried in the Chariot with the Corps.

The Chariot with the Corps and Representation so disposed, was garnished about with fourteen Bannerols of Mariages and Descents, that is to say, six at either Side, and at each End one. And so it rested there with a great Number of Torches burning on either



side, with certain Noblemen and Gentlemen attending thereon, by the space of two Hours; til the Horses and all other Things necessary were seen, and set forward. So about eight of the Clock, the Weather being very fair, and the People very desirous to see the Sights, the Nobles mounted their Horses and marched forward with the Noble Corps.

First of all, rode two Porters of the Kings House [named *John Herd*, and *Thomas Mervyn*] with two black Staves in their Hands, to stay, that neither Cart, Horse, nor Man should trouble or cumber them in this Passage. Then came the Sergeant of the Vestry with his Verger, and after him the Cross, with the Children, Clerks and Priests of the Chappel with their Surplices on their Backs, singing in Order their Oraisons and Prayers. On each side of them from the Cross to the Dean, went the Number of two hundred and fifty Poor Men in long Mourning Gowns and Hoods, with Badges on their left Shoulders, the Red and White Cross in a Sun Shining, Crown Imperial over that. In each of their Hands a large Torch burning. And on each Hand of them went two Carts laden with Torches, to restore them always as the old wasted.

Then proceeded *Thomas A Bruges*, Esq; bearing the *Dragon* Standard; and on each side of him a Sergeant at Arms with his Mace.

Next, all manner of Messengers, Ambassadors Servants, being Gentlemen, Trumpets without Instruments, Gentile Strangers, Chaplains without Dignity, Esquires, Head-Officers of Household not being Knights, in their Degrees, the Better the neerer the Corps, and Pursuivants at Arms riding continually up and down between the Standards, to stay them, keep their Order.

Then the Standard of the *Greyhound*, born by Sir *Nicolas Sturley*, Kt. On each side of him another Sergeant as aforesaid. Next the Standard followed the Aldermen of *London*, to the number of Twelve. After them Knights Bannerets, Chaplains of Dignity, the Kings Head Officers, being Knights, and other notable Strangers, and two Heralds, and other Officers, riding from Standard to Standard, to conduct them.

Then came the Standard of the *Lion*, born by the Lord *Winsor* hooded, and trapped as the other aforesaid. And on each side of him a Sergeant at Arms with his Mace. Under the Standard all the Kings Council of the Law followed, and others, not being of the Privy Council, after their Degrees two and two in Order. Then all Lords or Barons, Viscounts, Earls and Bishops after their Degrees, two and two in Order. Then the Lords of the Council in their Places two and two. Then came all Noble Strangers, Ambassadors of divers Kingdoms, Nations and Towns, accompanied with such of the Lords as best could entertain them, and understand their Language. Then the Ambassador of the Emperor, and with him the Archbishop of *Canterbury*. And four Heralds riding about to see them keep Order.

Then came the Banner of the Kings Arms embroidered, born by the Lord *Talbot*, with his Hood on, and his Horse garnished and trapped. After him *Carlile* Herald of Arms, bearing the Helm and the Crest of the Kings Horse trapped and garnished. Then

*Norroy*



Norroy King at Armes, bare the Targe alone in like maner. Next, Clarentieux King at Arms bare the Sword. Then Garter Principal King of Armes bare the Kings rich Coat of Armes curiously embroidered. And on each side of these, Hatchments, Sergeants of Armes riding with their Maces.

Then the Twelve Banners of Descents were born, two in Order, as followeth. First, A Banner of the Kings and Q. Janes's Armes, born by *Geo. Harper*, Esq; Secondly, A Banner of the Kings and Q. Katharins Armes, born by *Leonard Chamberlain*, Esq; Thirdly, A Banner of *Richmond* and *Holland*, by *Sir William Barington*, Kt. Fourthly, A Banner of *March* and *Ulster*, by *Sir Edward Willoughby*. Fifthly, A Banner of *Somerset* and *Beauchamp*, by *Sir Philip Dragot*, Kt. Sixthly, A Banner of *Somerset* and *Richmond*, by *Sir Nicolas Poyngs*, Kt. Seventhly, A Banner of *Tork* with the Mariage, by *Sir Fulk Grevyl*, Kt. Eighthly, A Banner of King *Edward IV.* and his Mariage, by *Sir John Harcote*, Kt. Ninthly, A Banner of King *Henry VII.* and his Mariage, by *Sir Anthony Hungerford* Kt. Tenthly, A Banner of *S. Edmonds* Armes, by *Sir George Blount* Kt. Eleventhly, A Banner of *S. Edwards* Armes, by *Edward Littleton*, Esq; Twelfthly, A Banner of *Lancaster*, with the Mariage, by *Sir John Markham*, Kt.

These Banners went before the Chariot one against another, as they be rehersed. And at the Four Corners of the said Chariot went Four worthy Knights, with four Banners of four Saints, as after followeth. *Viz.* A Banner of *S. Edward*, by *Sir Thomas Clere* Kt. A Banner of King *Henry* the Saint, by *Sir William Woodhouse* Kt. At the two hinder Corners, a Banner of the Trinity, born by *Sir Michael Lylster*; the other of our Lady by *Sir Francis Dautre* Kt.

Then came the Chair with the Corps thereon, and the Representation before described, in the most noble wise that could be devised, with Grooms, Pages, from the first Horse Head to the Mourners, on either side going on foot with the Staff Torches brenning about the Chair, to the number of Sixty or more. The Chair drawn by seven great Horses wholly trapped in black Velvet down to the Pasterns, and garnished with Escutcheons of the Kings Armes: and on their Fronts Shaffrons of Armes. Upon the seven Horses rode seven Children of Honer al in Black, with their Hoods on their Heads: and in their Hands either of them holding a Bannerole of the Kings Dominions, and the antient Armes of *England*, led by seven Persons in Mourning Apparel.

On either side of the said Chariot rode Six Assistants to the same, Hooded, their Horses trapped in Black to the Ground, bearing nothing in their Hands, *Viz.* *Sir Thomas Hennage*, *Sir Thomas Paston*, *Sir Thomas S——*, [*Seamour* perhaps] *Sir John Gates*, *Sir Thomas Darcy*, *Sir Maurice Barkley*.

Next to the Chariot came the Chief Mourner alone, his Horse trapped al in Black Velvet. After him followed the other Twelve Mourners, two and two, the Horses trapped to the Ground. Next, the Mourners the Kings Chamberlain with his Staff, and his Hood on his Shoulder, as a chief Officer, and no Mourner. Next to them *Sir Anthony Brown*, Master of the Kings Horse, bare-headed, his



Horse trapped to the Ground. And he led the Kings spare Horse trapped al in Cloth of Gold down to the Ground.

Then followed nine Henchmen in Black and Hooded: their Horses trapped to the Ground, garnished with Escotcheons of Armes of *England* before the Conquest, and Shaffrons on their Horses Heads, holding in their Hands Bannerols of the same Arms that their Horses were trapped with, that is to say,

The Armes of

|                    |                   |                                      |
|--------------------|-------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>Brute</i>       | <i>Athelstane</i> | <i>Edward Exile</i>                  |
| <i>Belin</i>       | <i>Arthur</i>     | <i>S. Edward</i>                     |
| <i>Kadwellader</i> | <i>Edmond</i>     | <i>England alone without France.</i> |

The Henchmens Names were *John Sourton* [*Stourton* perhaps] *Edward Tcbingham*, *Thomas Le Strange*, *George Dennys*, *Richard Brown*, *Roger Armour*, *Thomas Brown*, *Richard Cotton*, and *Patrick Barnaby*.

Then followed Sir *Francis Brian* Master of the Henchmen alone. After him Sir *Anthony Wyngfield*, Captain of the Guard, and al the Guard in Black, three and three on foot, bearing each one a Halbard on his Shoulder, with the Point downward. After them al Noblemens Servants according to their Degrees of their Masters next after the Corps.

Thus they marched forward in goodly Order from the Court to *Charing Cross*, and so forth, to the great Admiration of them that beheld it, which was an innumerable People.

So in Time they came to *Brainford*; and shortly after to *Syon*. Where a little before, the Gentlemen, Esquires and Knights, Aldermen of *London*, and divers other Noblemen did stay themselves on Horseback, and furnished the Way on either Side in maner of a Lane; til such time as the Corps with the Company afore and after the same were entred into the Place of *Syon*. Which was about two of the Clock the same day afternoon. And so the Chariot was rested afor the West door of the Church of *Syon*. Immediately the Herse was light, and Tressels set for the Corps to be set on. Then was the Image of Representation taken from the said Chair, and carried under the Canopy to the Vestrey.

Forthwith in like maner the Corps was brought by the Bishops in *Pontificalibus*, (the Nobles and Ambassadors on either side standing) unto the Place appointed under the said Herse. Then was the Corps covered with a Pal of black Velvet with a white Cross, and the Helm and Crest at the Head, the Targe enclining therto. On the right Hand wherof was set the Sword, and the rich Coat embroidered at the Feet. On every side of the Herse along the Quire stood al the Banners and Standards that were born after the Corps, as aforefaid; and the four Banners of Saints holden at the four Corners, with many Torches brenning on either side the Quire, and the Body of the Church. And so rested a while, til the Lords had shifted themselves, and were ready to come to further Service.

After



After they had past an Hour, the Gentlemen and Officers of Armes and others giving their Attendance, the Mourners were honorably brought to the Church, every Man in a long Gown in Order, according to his Degree, with their Hoods on their Shoulders, save only the Mourners, and Officers at Armes, which had them on their Heads. So were the Mourners placed in the Herse as they were accustomed.

After the Bedes bidden by *Norroy* King at Armes at the Quire Door, the Bishop of *London* began the *Dirige*, assisted with others in *Pontificalibus*, and al the rest of the Kings Chaplains following the same. And at every Lesson the Prayers were bade by the King of Armes, as afore is mentioned.

The *Dirige* and Censings ended towards the Corps, and al other Things therto appertaining, the Mourners went in like Order to the Chamber of Prefence. From whence they departed every Man to his Lodging; where they had Chear abundantly, in al Degrees. And great plenty of Meat and Drink distributed to al that came. And al Men had supped by day-light, and then took them to rest. That Night the Lord Great Master charged the Watch about the Corps, which was don with great Reverence and Devotion.

About three of the Clock the next Morning every Man prepared himself to await upon the Mourners to the Divine Service. When they came to Church they took their Places in the Herse: And every man in his Degree. Where immediately were many Masses both sung and said at many Altars. Which don, and al the Funeral Ceremonies afore said, the said Corps was bestowed in the Chariot with like Reverence as is before exprest. And the Representation with the Bannerols and other Necessaries in the same maner set upon the Chariot, without any thing diminished, added or changed: and so remained without the Church a while.

And after the Lords had broken their Fast, every Man mounted on Horseback, and placed themselves in the same Order as they were the day before. And, about seven of the Clock they marched forth from Town to Town. Where they were received in Procession with the Priests and Clarks of every Parish on each side of the Way, Censing the Corps, as the Day before. And al the Bells rung in every Church against their coming. And so they proceded til they came to *Eton*.

Where along the Churchyard Wal, were the Bishop of *Carlile* [the Provost] in *Pontificalibus*, and al the Fellows and Masters of the said Church in their best Ornaments and Copes: And by them al the young Children Scholars of the College in their white Surplices, bare-headed, holding in the one Hand Tapers, and in the other Books, saying the seven Psalms: and as the Corps came by, kneeled and Censed it, bidding their *De Profundis*, and other Prayers. And so the Corps passed, til it came to the Town of *Windsor*.

Where at the Bridg Foot the Maior, and the most substantial Men stood on the one side, and on the other, the Priests and Clarks: And by them the Corps passed through to the Castle-gate at one of the Clock at Afternoon the same Day. Where the Bishop of *Winchester*, with the said College of *Windsor* received it, as the Bishop of *Carlile*.



*Carlile* and *Eton* College. Which don, the said Royal Corps was brought to the West Door of the said Church. Then every Man lighted from Horse, and went in the Order of their former Proceedings into the Body of the same Church; Where they stood on either side, attending the bringing up of the said Corps into the Herse.

In the mean time the said noble Herse of thirteen Principals was Lighted. And then the Representation and Corps were honorably removed from the Chair, with the Canopy born by six Lords afore-said: and with al due Solemnity and Honour was placed and set within the said Herse upon a Vyce purposely made for the same. Under which Vyce the Place of the Sepulture was before prepared. The Corps being covered with a great Pall of Black Velvet, white Crossed with Satin, and upon that another rich Pall of Cloth of Tissue. The Representation was laid upon the same, as afore is shewed. After certain Prayers made, every Man departed in due Order to counduct the Mourners to their Lodgings in the Castle. That don they shifted themselves from their riding Apparel, and came again in their Gowns, and Hoods on their Shoulders, attending on the chief Mourner, til the Prelates and the Quire were ready.

Then went they in order from the Castle to the West door of the Church in this maner. First Gentlemen, Esquires, Knights, Bannets, Barons, Viscounts, Earls, Ambassadors. Then the Archbishop of *Canterbury*. Then the Mourners with their Hoods on their Heads, two and two, the chief Mourner behind alone; with *Garter* after him in the Kings Coat; and his Train after him, born by the Vice-chamberlain: After him the Guard, Noblemens Servants and others, in Order went into the Church. Where the Mourners took their accustomed Places under the Herse.

At the High Altar the Bishop of *Winchester* chief Prelat of the Order, and chief Executor of Divine Service, with al the rest of the Bishops, stood in *Pontificalibus* on either side of the Altar.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, with the other the Kings Executors placed themselves upon Forms on either side the Quire beneath the Prelat.

The four Saints Banners were set at the four Corners of the Herse, in Order as afore-said. And at the Feet of the Herse a little behind the Altar stood the *L. Talbot* with the embroidered Banner: and before him the Standard of the Lion. And on the Right Hand the Dragon, and on the left Hand the Greyhound: and al other Banners and Bannerols placed accordingly; holden by Persons appointed, during the Time of al the Divine Service, with their Hoods.

On the right Hand of the High Altar was another Altar covered with Black: whereupon was set al the Hatchments, as Helm, Crest with Mantle, Sword, Targe, and the Kings broidered Coat of Arms.

And in the Queens Closet above stood the Queen, al the Noblemen, Ambassadors with other notable Strangers, to se the Divine Service, and the Royal Order of the Funeralls.

Then began the Prayers by *Norroy* King at Armes at the Quire Door, with a loud Voice, *Of your Charity Pray for the Soul, &c.* Immediately the chief Prelate began the *Dirige*. And at every Lesson



Lesson the said *Norroy* began the Bedes afore said. When *Dirige* with al other Service and Solemnity was don, every Man departed to Supper, in Order, to the said Castle as they came from the Church: And there they had very liberal and sumptuous Fare. Supper don every Man departed to his Lodging for that Night. Then was the Watch appointed about the Corps as afore said.

On the next day, being *Wednesday*, the 16 day of *February*, at 4 of the Clock in the Morning, when Lauds were made by the Priests that watched, every man attended upon the Mourners from the Castle to the Church, wher they had their accustomed Order, and the Bedes bidden.

Then the Bishop of *Ely* began the Mass of the Trinity. His Deacon and Subdeacon were two Bishops Mitred. Which Mass solemnely sung in Prick Song Descant, and Organ playing, to the Offertory. Then the chief Mourner assisted with the other Mourners, and conducted with Officers of Armes, as afore said, offered a piece of Gold for the Mass, and so departed to their Places again.

After that Mass was ended, began another, which the Bishop of *London* did celebrate, and two other Bishops in *Pontificalibus* for Deacon and Subdeacon: Sung in the same maner, with like Ceremonies at the Offertory; and so to the End. By that Time it was Day, fast upon six of the Clock, the Mourners went in order to the Deans Place, where Breakfast was prepared for them.

In the mean time al the Knights of the Garter there present came in their Mantles of their Order, to their Oblations, as they are bound to do by the Religion. That don they went into the Vestrey, and put off their Mantles, and went to the Mourners to hast them to Church.

Forthwith the Mourners returned to their Places. And al Persons hastened together, and gave their Attendance, with al the Nobility and Council in the Quire: the Emperors Ambassadors, and others of Foreign Nations stood aloft, and beheld the Execution of this Noble Interrment. And after the Prayer bidden, the Mass of *Requiem* began by the Bishop of *Winchester* chief Prelate in *Pontificalibus*, and the Bishops of *London* and *Ely*, Deacon and Subdeacon. Which proceeded unto the Offertory. Then the Lord Marques being chief Mourner, assisted with the other twelve Mourners, offered a Piece of Gold of Ten Shillings for the Mass-peny. And then returned again to the head of the Corps, within the Herse on the Right Hand. Then the Earls of *Arundel* and *Oxford*, the two next chief Mourners, received of *Garter* the Kings broidered Coat of Armes, and conducted by him to the Offering, with much Humility and Reverence offered the same to the Bishop: Who delivered the same to *Garter* again. And he bare it, and laid it reverently upon the Altar. The Earls of *Derby* and *Shrewsbury*, the next Mourners received of *Clarentieux* the Kings Target of Armes in the Garter, which was offered, *ut supra*. Likewise the Earl of *Suffex* and *Rutland* the next Mourners received of *Norroy* the Kings Sword, and offered it up in the same sort. The Earls of *Shrewsbury* and *Darby* again received of *Carlile* the Herald, the Helm and Crest, and used them as afore said. And with that the Man of Armes, which was *Chydiok Powlet*



*Powlet* Esq; came to the Quire Door upon his Horse in complete Harness, al save the Head-piece, and a Pole Ax in his Hand, with the Point downward. And there he alighted, and was received by the Lord *Morley*, and the Lord *Dacres* of the *North*: and was conducted by Officers of Armes to the Offering: And there he offered the Pole Axe to the Bishop with the Head downward. And the Bishop turning it upward delivered it to an Officer of Armes, who bare it to the Altar End. And then the Man of Armes was had unto the Vestry, and there unarmed.

Then *Richard Powlet* Esq; with the Gentlemen Ushers brought in the Palls: which *Gar*ter received, and delivered to the chief Mourner and others, standing in Order, as they were sorted in Couples under the Herse; the chief Mourner last. To whom *Gar*ter delivered four rich Palls of Cloth of Gold of Bawdkin, and to every Earl three, and every Baron two. So came the Fourth from either side the Herse without the Barriers to the Corps Feet; where *Gar*ter stood on one side, and *Clarentieux* on the other, &c. received the said Palls in Order, as they offered, and laid them at the Foot of the said Representation. The chief Mourner offered last.

Then came in four Gentlemen Ushers to the Head of the Corps, conducting the Emperors Ambassadors, and the Ambassadors of *France*, with the Ambassadors of *Scotland* and *Venice*: and they offered. Then the chief Mourner with the other twelve Mourners, without any Estate, went up and offered for themselves.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and al the rest of the Kings Executors there present offered, according to their Estates and Degrees. Then the Treasurer, Comptroler and other Head Officers of the Kings House. And after them al other Noblemen and Gentlemen came up and offered, as many as would.

Then was the Pulpit set directly before the High Altar, and the Bishop of *Winchester* began the Sermon: Whose Theme was, *Beati mortui qui in Domino moriuntur*. Where he declared the Frailty of Man, and Community of Death to the High and to the Low: and shewing the pittiful and dolorous Loss that al maner men had sustained by the Death of so gracious a King. Yet he recomforted them again by the Resurrection in the Life to come: and exhorted them al to rejoice, and give Thanks to Almighty God; having sent Us so toward and vertuous a Prince to Reign over us, as our only natural Friend, Lord and King at this time present. Desiring al men to continue in Obedience and Duty, with many other godly Exhortations very notably set forth, and with great Learning.

And after the Sermon don, the Mass proceeded to the End: and at *Verbum Caro factum est*, the Lord *Windsor* offered the Standard of the Lion; the Lord *Talbot* offered the Banner embroidered: And next to that were the Four Banners of Saints by the Bearers thereof, to the Bishops.

Then came the Dean of *Windsor* and Chaplains, and received the Palls from the Feet of the Representation, and conveyed them forthwith to the Vestry.

Then came six Knights and received the Representation; which was delivered to them by the Gentlemen Ushers; and so with Reverence



rence brought into the Vestry. Then was the rich Pall removed, and conveyed in like maner.

Then the three Bishops that did execute came down to the Herse: after whom followed the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and stood a little behind the Bishops with his Crosses. Then the Quire with one Voice did sing *Circumdederunt me*, with the rest of the Canticle Funeral; and the Bishops Censing the Corps, with other Ceremonies therunto appertaning.

Then was the Vault uncovered under the said Corps; and the Corps let down therein by the Vice, with help of sixteen tal Yeomen of the Guard appointed to the same.

Then proceded the Bishop of *Winton* in the Service of the Burial, standing at the Head of the said Vault, and about the same al the Officers of Household: that is to say, the Lord *St. John*, Lord Great Master, the Earl of *Arundel*, Lord Chamberlain, Sir *Thomas Cheyne* Treasurer, Sir *John Gage* Comptroller, *William Knevet* Sergeant Porter, and the Four Gentlemen Ushers Ordinary, standing about the Corps, with their Staves and Rods. Then when the Mold was brought and cast in the Grave by the Prelate Executing, at the Word *Pulverem Pulveri & Cinerem Cineri*, first the Lord Great Master, and after the Lord Chamberlain and al others aforesaid in Order, with heavy and dolorous Lamentation, brake their Staves in Shivers upon their Heads, and cast them after the Corps within the Pit. And then the Gentlemen Ushers in like maner brake their Rods, and threw them into the Vault with exceeding Sorrow and Heaviness, not without grievous Sighs and Tears, not only of them, but of many others, as wel of the meaner sort, as of the Nobility, very piteous and sorrowful to behold.

Then after this finished, and *De profundis* said, and the Grave covered again with the Planks, Garter stood in the Midst of the Quire accompanied with al them of his Office, in their Coats of Armes, and with a lowd Voice proclaimed the Kings Majesty stil now Living in this Form, *Almighty God of his infinite Goodnes give good Life and long to the most High and Mighty Prince, our Sovereign Lord King Edward VI. by the Grace of God King of England, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, and in Earth under God of the Church of England and Ireland, the Supreme Head, and Sovereign of the most Noble Order of the Garter.* And with that he cryed, *VIVE LE NOBLE ROY EDWARD.* And the rest of the Officers of Armes cryed the same three several Times after him.

Then the Trumpets sounded with great Melody and Courage, to the Comfort of al them that were there present. And al these things were don afore six of the Clock of the same Day. And then every Man departed to his Place appointed into the Castle. Where they went to their Dinners. And after Dinner the Lords dissevered themselves, and taking their Horses hasted them al to *London* that night. And thus were the Funeral Duties of Interment of this most Mighty and Redoubted Prince fully accomplished and ended. On whose Soul *Jesu* have mercy, *Amen.* J. S.



**B.**

*The Lord Protectors Prayer for Gods Assistance in the high Office of Protector and Governour, new committed to him.*

*E. MSS. Rev.  
Patr. D. Joh.  
Episc. Eliensis.*

**L**ORD God of Hosts! In whose only hand is Life and Death, Victory and Confusion, Rule and Subjection; Receive me thy humble Creature into thy Mercy, and direct me in my Requests, that I offend not thy high Majesty. O! my Lord, and my God, I am the Work of thy Hands: Thy Goodnes cannot reject me. I am the Price of thy Sons Death Jesu Christ; For thy Sons sake thou wilt not lese me. I am a Vessel for thy Mercy; Thy Justice will not condemn me. I [am recorded in] the Book of Life: I am written with the very Bloud of Jesus; Thy inestimable Love wil not cancell then my Name. For this Cause, Lord God, I am bold to speak to thy Majesty. Thou Lord, by thy Providence hast called me to Rule; Make me therefore able to follow thy Calling. Thou Lord, by thine Order hast committed an anointed King to my Governance: Direct me therefore with thy Hand, that I erre not from thy good Plesure. Finish in me, Lord, thy Beginning, and begin in me that thou wilt finish. By thee do Kings reign; and from thee al Power is derived. Govern me, Lord, as I shal govern: Rule me, as I shal rule. I am ready for thy Governance; Make thy People ready for mine. I seek thy only Honour in my Vocation: Amplify it, Lord, with thy Might. If it be thy Will I shal rule, make thy Congregation subject to my Rule. Give me Power, Lord, to suppress, whom thou wilt have obey.

I am by Appointment thy Minister for thy King, a Shepherd for thy People, a Sword-bearer for thy Justice: Prosper the King, Save thy People, Direct thy Justice. I am ready, Lord, to do that thou commandest; command that thou wilt. Remember, O God, thine old Mercies: Remember thy Benefits shewed heretofore. Remember, Lord, me thy Servant, and make me worthy to ask. Teach me what to ask, and then give me that I ask. None other I seek to, Lord, but thee; because none other can give it me. And that I seek is thine Honour and Glory. I ask Victory, but to shew thy Power upon the Wicked. I ask Prosperity; but for to rule in Peace thy Congregation. I ask Wisdom, but by my Counsil to set forth thy Cause. And as I ask for my self, so, Lord, pour thy Knowledg upon al them which shal counsil me. And Forgive them, that in their Offence I suffer not the Reward of their Evil. If I have erred, Lord, forgive me: For so thou hast promis'd me: If I shal not err, direct me: For that only is thy Property. Great things, O my God, hast thou begun in my Hand; Let me then, Lord, be thy Minister to defend them. Thus I conclude, Lord, by the Name of thy Son Jesus Christ. Faithfully I commit al my Cause to thy high Providence: and so rest to advance al humane Strength under the Standard of thy Omnipotency.

*The*



## C.

*The Lord Protector and the other Governours of the Kings Person; To the Justices of Peace in the County of Norfolk; when a new Commission of the Peace was sent them.*

To our very good Lord, the Earl of *Suffex*, and to our Loving Friends, Sir *Roger Townsend*, and Sir *William Paston* Knights; and to other Justices of Peace within the Countrey of *Norfolk*.

AFTER our right hartly Commendations: Where the most Noble King of famous Memory, our late Sovereign Lord and Master K. *Henry VIII.* (whom God pardon) upon the great Trust which his Majesty had in your vertuous Wisdoms and good Dispositions to the Commonwealth of this Realm, did especially Name and Appoint you among others, by his Commission under his Great Seal of *England*, to be Conservators and Justices of his Peace within this his County of *Norfolk*: Forasmuch as the said Commissions were dissolved by his Decease, it hath pleased the Kings Majesty our Sovereign Lord that now is, by the Advice, and Consent of us, the Lord Protector, and others, Executors of our said late Sovereign Lord, whose Names be underwritten, to whom with others the Government of his most Royal Person and the Order of his Affeyres is by his last Wil and Testament committed, til he should be of the full Age of Eighteen Years, to cause new Commissions ageyn to be made, for the Conservation of his Peace throughout this Realm: Wherof you shal by this Bearer receive one for that County: And for that the good and diligent Execution of the Charge committed to you and others by the same, shal be a notable surety to the King our Sovereign Lords Person that now is (to whom God give Encrease of Vertue, Honor and many Years) as a most certain Stay to the Commonwealth, which must needs prosper where Justice hath place and reigneth; WE shal desire you, and in his Majesties Name charge and command you upon the Recepte hereof, with al Diligence to assemble your selves together; And calling unto you al such others as be named in the said Commission, you shal first Cry and Cal to God to give you Grace to execute the Charge committed unto you with al Truth and Uprightnes according to your Oaths, which you shal endeavour your selves to do in al things appertaining to your Office accordingly, in such fort as al private Malice, Sloth, Negligence, Displeasure, Disdain, Corruption and Sinister Affections set apart, it may appear that you have God, and the Preservation of your Sovereign Lord and natural Country before your Eyes; and that you forget not, that by the same your selves, your Wives and your Children shal surely prosper, and be also preserved.

*Cott. Library  
Tit. B. 2.*



For the better doing wherof you shal at this your first Assembly make a Division of your selves into Hundreds or Wepentakes; that is to say, two at the least to have a special Ey and Regard to the good and Order of that or those Hundreds, to se the Peace duly kept, to se Vagabonds, and Perturbers of the Peace ponyshed; and that every Man apply himself to do as his Calling doth require; and in al things to keep good Order without Alteration, Innovation, or Contempt of any Thing, that by the Laws of our seid late Sovereign Lord is prescribed, and set forth unto us, for the better Direction and framing of our selves towards God and honest Policy. And if any Person or Persons, whom you shal think you cannot rule and order without Trouble to the Country shal presume to do the Contrary, upon your Information to us therof, We shal so aid and assist you in the Execution of Justice and Punishment of al such contemptuous Offenders, as the same shall be Example to others.

And further, his Majesties Plesure, by the Advice and Consent aforesaid, is that you shal take such Order among you as you fail not once in every six Weeks, til you shal be otherwise Comanded, to write unto us, the Lord Protector, and others of the Privy Council in what State that Shire standeth; and whether any notable things have happened, or were like to happen in those Parts, that you cannot redrefs, which would be speedily met withal and looked unto; or wherein you shal need any Advice or Counsil. To the intent we may put our hands to the Stay and Reformation of it in the Beginning, as appertaineth: Preying you al to take Order that every Commissioner in that Shire may have a Double or Copy of this Lettre, both for his owne better Instruction, and to shew to the Jentylmen and such others as inhabit in the Hundreds especially appointed to them. That every Man may the better conform himself to do Trouthe, and help to the advauncement of Justice according to their most bounden Duties, and as they wil answer for the Contrary. Thus fare you hartily wel. From the Tower of London the xii February.

Your Loving Friends,

*E. Hertford,*

*W. Seint John.*

*Edw. North.*

*T. Cantuarien. Tho. Wryotbesley Cancell.  
Job. Russel. Cutb. Duryfine. Anthou.  
Browne. Will. Paget. Antony Denny.  
Will. Herbert.*



D.

*Common Places of State : Drawn up by Will. Thomas, Esq;  
Clark of the Council. For King Edwards Use.*

I. *A Necessary Order which a Prince in Battayl must observe and keep, if he intend to subdue or pass through his Enemies Lands.*

**F**IRST, he must examin, whether hys Cause be lawful and just :  
For in a just Cause God shal assyst hym.

*E. Biblioth.  
R. D. Johann.  
Episc. Eliens.*

*Item,* He must provyde, that he have a sufficient number of Men and Money ready for them.

*Item,* He must counsaile wyth the most wyse and expert Men of hys Realm, of the weyght and daungers that may fall : so that, as far as Reason may lead hym, he be not ignoraunt what frute shal follow of hys Battail.

*Item,* He must provyde that hys Host lack no Vyttailes.

*Item,* He must see that he lack no Engine and other thyng requyred to defend hymself, or invade his Enemy.

*Item,* That he have Capytayns expert in Warrs, the which shal execute hys Commaundement.

*Item,* Let hym be assuryd of his own Cuntry or he invade hys Enemy ; and yf Case require set that quyet, or ells depart not.

*Item,* Let hym leve behynd hym sum Noble and Trusted Man to order, and, yf nede be, to subdew hys Enemyes in hys Absence and Order them.

*Item,* That the most strongest Fortresse be commytted to his most trusty Freyndes.

*Item,* That he oftentimes consult and counsaile with hys wyse and expert Counsaile ; that he may know what is most expedient to do, and let hym use theyr Counsaile.

*Item,* When he entreth his Enemies Lands, he shal call hys Host before hym, that he may know the number, and yf he fynde any unable to battail, to put hym away.

*Item,* That he have no superfluous Carriage. For therof groweth great Dyspleasure ; specially when a Prynce intendeth short Victory. And then let hys Vyttailes be hys moost Carryage. Wherin must be taken a good Order ; so that he have them wyth hym, or pass by such Places wher it may be had ; or els he washeth a Stone, that is to say, he laboureth in Vayne.

II. *How only by Customable Usage of Dedes of Armes, the Romans had the Victory of al other Nations.*

**T**HE old Custome to chose Knights at sixteen yere of age was to be perfect in theyr Age, and to the Custome of Warr.

Also a Prynce must dyligently consyder which be most princypal and most expert ; and over that, what every Man in hys Host is most apt unto.

For



For it is very peryllous to set an unexpert Man in Aucthoryte. For dyvers Men have dyvers Wytts; and as they be, they must be used. Some be able to Rewle an Host; some an hundred Fote-men; other an hundred Horsemen: some be good on Horse, some be good on Fote, other be good in Felde, or Battail, other to invade a Castel, other to defend it, other sodeynly on Horse to invade an Host, other swyfte on horseback to espy news, other in ryding to compass a Felde and to note theyr Number, other apt to chose a mete or apt Place for a Felde, other be expert in [the Theory of] Battaile, and naught when they be at it, whose Counsaile is not to be refused: other have no experience, howbeit they be Valyaunt when they be put therto, other be both expert and victorious, other be able neyther to counsaile, defend nor Invade, they be good at home. *Qua secta inutilis*: Other be good in Ingynes, other to make Bridges and Passages, other to espy theyr Enemies Secrets in dyssimulated Habyts, other to gyve Counsaile and dyscuss Ambassades, other mete for Execution of Justice, other mete to kepe a Princes Treasure, and other thyngs of Charge.

*Item*, The Foreward of the Battail must be strong as wel with Horsemen as with Footmen: And let there be put hys Capitains of the Valyauntest.

*Item*, He must consyder that hys Felde be set to an Advantage, and accordyng therto the Host must be ordered.

*Item*, That he provyde wher hys Host shal commodiously rest or he depart from whence he is; and diligently let hym note the Cuntry, whether it be plain, hilly, Mountaynes or ful of Waters, and what Straytes be therein.

*Item*, Yf he may, let hym have it trewly painted or he enter; so that the Daungiers may be known, and the horsemen may healpe the Footmen in tyme of War.

*Item*, Let hym provyde that hys Carriage trouble not hys Host, yf they be invaded: Wherefore let them be conveyed by the one syde, provyded that they be surely garded.

*Item*, There must be Provysion that al Artillery may be surely carryed. For the los of that is the peryl of the Host.

*Item*, That the Explorators be sent to espy the journeys of the Adversaries, and what Vyttailes they have, with al other thyngs by them intended.

*Item*, That he take deliberation, yf he may get the Friendship of any great Man of hys Enemys Counsaile, by corruption of Money or otherwyse; by whom he may know the purpose of hys said Enemys.

*Item*, That every day there be sent light Horsemen to the Adversaries Host to perceyve theyr Purpose, lest they be sodeynly invaded: and also to the intent he may invade them unprovdyed, yf the Case so requyred. *Requiruntur multi secreti & Fideles.*

*Item*, Yf he can perceyve that hys Adversary intend hasty Battayl, let him take hymself in a wayte, that he may provyde hym in takyng of hys Felde to his advantage, and put hymself shortly in order.

*Item*,



*Item,* Yf he knows any dangerous way betwene him and hys Enemyes, he shal by wysdom and dilygence procede toward that, until he come within three or four Bowshotes, and ther put hymself in order to invade hys Host.

*Item,* He must espy what Artillery hys Enemies use, and what order they take.

*Item,* Every country hath hys maner of Fyghting to theyr Advantage, and theyr Enemies confusion.

*Item,* He must beware of every hard and doweiful passage, except he have leasure to convaye hys Host, or except Necessite compel hym.

*Item,* It is better to abyde the comyng to a Battayl, then to invade: For the fyrst Commers commonly lack order.

*Item,* Yf the Enemyes ride out of order, and wander, invade them; for lack of order shal destroy them.

*Item,* Yf thyne Enemies draw to hostry of no strength, and disperse themselfe, then they be easyly taken.

*Item,* When the Host draweth neer to the Enemies, let the Wards come nygh together for their better Surcottes.

*Item,* That Footmen be on the one syde not myxt with Horsemen, *quod generaretur Confusio.*

*Item,* In every Ward must be some with hand gunns, Croſbowes and other manual Ingins; and likewise in the latter Ward, to put asyde the Light horsemen.

*Item,* Yf he may, let hym provyde that the Sun and Wynd be for hym, specially for dust, yf there be any.

*Item,* Yf he be horsed and stronger than hys Enemy, let hym provoke hym to open Battayle in the playne felde; and yf his Footmen be myghtier than hys Enemies horsemen, let hym take the advantage of a streyght place.

*Item,* When he invadeth hys Enemy, let hys Caryage be put in the one syde, and surely garded.

*Item,* He shal put hys Ingyns of battayl betwene him and his Enemyes, and wel defend them.

*Item,* Yf he be compelled to follow hys Enemy, and for default of Vittayl to invade therein; or yf he dread lest hys Host fortify his Company, so that he cannot escape, except he overcome his Host, let hym study to break hys Felde, that is to say, let hym vex them with Gonnes, and other poynts of Warr; so that they may disorder themselves.

*Item,* A Prynce must note the tyme, and use as it serveth hym.

*Item,* When he is actually entred Battayl, hys Host shal stand styl in a Cluster, and in no wyse remove from the place, whatsoever he se; though he se his Company partly flee and partly slayne; and also though he se hys Enemyes flee. For Order maketh and marreth al.

*Item,* When thou hast invaded thyne Enemies with the Fore and Hynder Ward, let the myddle stand styff and close to help both, as nede shal requyre. And when both Wards have wel fought, let the myddle Ward fyght; but for al that, let them not disorder themselfe, except Compulsyon.

*Item,*



*Item,* He must have provysion for passages of Waters.

*Item,* Before the Battayle, a Prynce must se the Order of his Host, and reform al thyngs myfordered: And thys may not be forgotten.

*Item,* He shal shew them, that he wyl lyve and dy with them that day: and that besydes theyr perpetual Honour he wyl never forget to honour and Reward them. And for this let him se couragious Prynces Orations, as *Alexander, Catalyne*, with other infinite, &c.

*Item,* He shal neyther magnify his Enemy, nor despise hym, but encourage hys Capytains to kepe theyr Order; and if that they so do, the Vyctory wyl follow.

*Item,* He shal practyse, that both hys Enemy and hys Host may alway thynk that more Strength is commyng to hym.

*Item,* That he se no Robbyng, and that he commaund hys Capytains to se that observed upon payne of Death.

*Item,* That he execute indifferently justice, and punish them that cause debates.

*Item,* When hys Enemies do treat of Peace, then let hymself leste awayt. *Propter pericula in hoc casu experta.*

*Item,* Let no man pass his Cuntry and invade another, without nede requyre; except he se how he may return with honour, or how he may surely abyde there. It is but symplenes to go up and down in a Cuntry, and to ryde far in it. And hard it is to be long sure in a Cuntry straunge, and to return with honour. For in the time of *Talbot*, XL Knyghts of *England* layd sege to the Town of *Roane*; and when they lacked that was necessary for theyr defence, therfore they lost it. And lyke thynges were done at *Britain*, at *Vans*, where they lost al.

*Item,* Yf any tydings come, forthwith let them be heard and follow them, as the Tyme shal serve.

*Item,* A Prynce must be keping hys promyse, ells no man shall Trust hym.

*Item,* He must study to have the favour of the best of the Country, and he must be just and egall.

*Item,* A Prince must study to have the Friendship of the Countries adjoyning: And let hym not have Battayl with divers at once, except he be compelled. For there is moche futtelty used.

*Item,* In the day of the Battayl he must have about hym a certen of the wyfest and most expert men, to kepe, follow and counsaile them.

*Item,* He must provyde that hys Enemyes espy not the number of hys Host and the order of the same.

*Item,* Yf it fortune hym to lese a battayl or two, or to lese hys Artillery, then policy [it] is to resort to some Fortres, and there to cal hys Host together, and to refresh them as nedeth, and to get new men, and to take peace yf he can. And in the mean tyme to make hys Fortres strong, tyl he be able by some means to make battail, and to have al thyngs redy therfore.

*Item,* He shal set hys Tents nygh to hys Enemyes host, that he may trouble and break theyr Array.

*Item,* He must beware that he be not beseged.

*Item,*



*Item,* He must beware, that after one Battail lost, he begyn <sup>not</sup> another forthwith, except Necessite compel hym. For after a Dystrage the Host cannot sodehly be apt to fyght. For Woun<sup>ds</sup> and Mournyngs shal let them; and theyr Enemies after Vyd<sup>o</sup>ry be more imbolded; howbeyt oftentymes men thynk upon dysp<sup>o</sup>cazure to be revenged; and so for lack of Polycy take fury rebuke. And in thys maner Charles Duke of Burgon was destroyed. Wherefore set Reason before Wyll, and begyn to thynk nothing hard o perfourme.

*Item,* Yf thou wynn a Battayl, or a Fortres of thyne E<sup>n</sup>emies, pursue hym graciously, and suffer hym neyther to rest, nor to restable hys Strength. Wysdom it is to follow the Advantag.

*Item,* Yf thou get a Cuntry, Committ it to some great man; and lykewyse of Fortresses. And let hym be wel entreated, and ack no money. For such men would be cherished.

### III. The Manner of besegying a Fortres.

**F**IRST, A Prynce must remembre, whether he have sufficient men to besege it in three dyvers Parties; and whether over that, he have men sufficient for hys own Defence, and Money both.

*Item,* He must provyde Artillery and Vittayls necessary, and let hym wel beware that hys Vittayl come not to hys Enemys hands, and this principal to be noted.

*Item,* He must espy, some man that knoweth the Strength of the Fortres, and theyr Counsayl must he use.

*Item,* He must espy, how it be most easily taken, and where hys Host may best set theyr felde for theyr Assurety.

*Item,* That done, set them in the foreward that were before sent to espy the Strength of the Fortres, wel furnyshed with Archers and Dyggers, and al other thyngs.

*Item,* Let them come as nygh to the Walls as they can; and so order them, that they may reject theyr Enemys Darts.

*Item,* Above al thyngs provyde, that nothing may pass out, or enter into the Fortres. For yf one Gate be open, it shal be never overcome.

*Item,* Let one Ward be ever ready to help the other, as Nede shal requyre.

*Item,* The fyrst day of besegying, the Felde must be Fortifyed.

*Item,* Men must be sent to every Place to espy, whether any rescue be intended, &c. And yf it so be, let hym consyder theyr Power; and if he see paryl, remove hys Host and his Artillery, lest he be invaded in both sydes, and voyde to some sure Fortres for the Tyme.

*Item,* Yf he se hys Enemies of smal Power, he may set some to fyght with them, and other to kepe the Sege.

*Item,* When the Walls be broken, Fortify hys Men, and make an Assawte; Provdyed that he leve behynd them both Horsemen and



Fotemen, to withstand hys back Enemyes. For that not doying, the Earl of *Arminac* lost *Bysander*, a Castel of *Lumbardy*.

*Item*, Yf he be put aback in the fyrst Conflict, let hym Invade as sone as the day followyng. For upon a Vyctory oftentimes the Oppidan is benegligent, trustyng not sodeynly to be invaded. By thys Provysion many Places and Fortresses hath ben obtained.

*Item*, Many other thyngs be requyred: Howbeit a Prynce must specially beware of Treason and Simulation.

#### IV. *How a Prynce beseged shal order hymself.*

**A**BOVE al thyng a Prynce must study as wel in tyme of Peace, as in Warr, to know hys Neyghbours mynds; and oftentimes to send Orators to them as wel to nouryshe Love, as to know theyr good Wyll.

*Item*, Yf he se by a Prynces Ordinaunce, that he intendeth Warr, let hym streyngthe hys Fortres toward that Contry.

*Item*, Let hym make some Friend in that Prynces House, by whom he may know what is intended.

*Item*, Yf he be assured, that the Prynce intendeth hym War, let hym prepare an Host of as myghty men as hys Money wil suffer hym to doo. And yf he thynk hym suffycient to overcom hym, let hym follow hys Fortune, and tarry hys Enemy in the Entry to hys Contry; or, yf he may, in hys Enemyes Contry.

*Item*, Yf he thynk hymself unsuffycient in Men and Money, let hym Fortyfy hys Hedde places next to hys Enemyes, and garde them with money.

*Item*, Yf there be moo Fortresses then he may furnysh, let them be take down; and al maner Vittayl be caryed from thens, and the Cuntry left bare.

*Item*, Let hym have good Capytayns in hys Fortresses; the which may do hys Enemyes dayly dyspleasure and dysperse hys Host; as it was done at *Metz* and other places.

*Item*, Horsemen must be provyded, as it shal be thought necessary, to take the Messengers, and then make provision with Order.

*Item*, Yf such Obstacles be purveyed for Enemies, they shal little prevayle.

#### V. *How a Fortres shal be kept: And how they that be beseged shal order theyrselke.*

**F**YRST, Dygge up the Erth to the heyght of the Wals, for Gons and other Ingyns.

*Item*, The Bulwarks must be Fortyfied: and he must beware, that the inner Buyl dyings joyn not to the Wals. For nygh to the Wal inwardly must be made a Trench to a good heyght: So that yf the Wal fayl, the Wal of Erth may help.

*Item*, He must have good Capytayns to order and visit hys Watch of the Wals, and men expert.

*Item*,



*Item*, Crosbows, Bumbards, Dykers, Physicians, Surgeons, Poti-  
caryes, with al other thyngs necessary.

*Item*, He must have one Capitayn to order hys Watches, as nede  
shal requyre.

*Item*, Every night the Walls must be sene, and an order set and  
kept for theyr sure Custody.

*Item*, There must be Watch kept nygh to the Walls, to help  
theyr Keepers, as nede shal requyre; and also to withstand inward  
Treason.

*Item*, Yf there be any Noyse, let every man go to theyr own  
place. For oftentyues such Noyse is made, to make men rounne to-  
gether, whyle their Enemies invade.

*Item*, Let it be taken heed theyrwhyles, that theyr Waters be  
not poysoned.

*Item*, When he shal invade, let hym wel counsayl, and hys Com-  
modities foresene.

*Item*, Yf the Wals be broken, let them be amended forthwith,  
for fear of Invasion: As it was at *Rhodes*, whyles the Lord was at  
Mafs.

*Item*, Let it ever be commoned, that more people shal come, to  
help to put them in better comfort.

*Item*, A Prince must beware that there be no murmur in the Host,  
and if there be, that they be openly punyshed.

*Item*, Yf the Capitain understand, that any Battail is lost, or For-  
trefs taken, unknown unto hys Host, let that be secret: And let  
hym ever shew hys Host thyngs of Comfort and Pleasure.

*Item*, In the principal parts must be set pryncipal men.

*Item*, He must have Guydes, that know the Cuntry.

*Item*, Yf any Message come, let hym ponder, and depely discusse  
it, and be not over lyght of credence.

*Item*, Yf it be a Cuntry of Hylls, Waters, or of Strayts, he  
must have the moo Footmen.

*Item*, When it is proceded in Battayl, some wyse men strong and  
sure, must be left behynd, lest they invade in the inner part of the  
Battayl.

*Item*, Let net new Locks of Gates oft be made for fear of coun-  
terfeyting: and it must be provyded of sure Keepers.

*Item*, In the Nyght there must be sure Watch about the Yates,  
for daungers that may fall: as it was don at *Arras*.

*Item*, There must be made Barrars, nygh unto the Fortrefs, for  
the defence of Footmen, and the savety of Horsemen, and dyvers  
other Confyderations.

*Item*, The Wals shal be strengthened with Thornes for shakyng.

*Item*, Prysoners must be wel entreated: And yf thou take hym  
that is not trew unto hys Prynce, punysh him forthwithall.

*Item*, Yf any Enemies treat of Delyverance of their Fortresses,  
hear it wel, but be not light of credence: For there be many  
Sotteltyes ymagined. And at *Betynam* many were by that mean de-  
stroyed.

*Item*, The Watch must be kept all nyght, and the Watchmen not  
depart, until every thyng be sure.



*Item,* When the Yates must be opened, there must be so many present as may withstand the secret Assault of theyr Enemyes. For by thys mean *Leyfloure* was taken. For when two or three had opened the Yates, theyr Enemyes secretly hydd, invaded them and flew them; and there was Treason within.

*Item,* There must be many Porters; For few may be soon slayne by Treason, &c.

*Item,* If any in the nyght Season cal to come in, the which by Name and Voyce be known, that notwithstanding lye Secret Espyes, that it be known what number there be of them. And when thou openest the utter Gates, se the inner Gate shytted. For *Frenchmen* by thys mean toke *Moëlam*. For four Traitors fayning that they had brought *Inglish* men from the battayl of *S. Denys*, they opened the Gates, and were deceyved.

*Item,* Many men wyl confyder and counsaile dyverse and great thyngs to be attempted: Be not swyft to follow theyr Counsaile.

*Item,* Some be ignoraunt, and dread no paryll.

*Item,* Some wyl perswade and counsaile great thyngs to be done, that they may be taken and thought couragious; the which in effect be of no Courage. *Hi in bello extremi.*

*Item,* Let hym beware, that none of hys Host have too great Famylyarite with hys Enemies, for fear of Treason.

*Item,* When he wyl Battayll, let it be secretly done, that the Guyders know it not, and let the Gates be fast shytted before he cause [hys] men to put them in Armes. Also, let men be set to kepe dilygently the Passages out of the City, that none may go unto theyr Enemyes to shew the Preparations that are made against them. Also, when he shal come unto the Felde with hys Enemyes to fyght, let hym take a way contrary unto that way which myght be thought he would take; and after he hath gon two or three myles in that way, let hym return unto the Way which was first thought, that he wold have taken. But let hym take good hede, that neyther the Guydes, nor other of hys Company know, whither he wyl go, unto the tyme that they be in the Feylde.

*Item,* Yf any of the Carriages or Guydes of the Waynes come into the Town, let it be sene that at their Comyng in, one of the Yates be shytted.

*Item,* Yf it fortune any of the Sowldyers to be hurte or wounded in battayll, or ells out of the Battayll, let the Princes, or theyr Ministers, se the Medycyne be minystred unto them in dew order. Let them be Visited and gently intreated with good and soft Words. And let them neyther lack Phyfician nor Surgeon. For these sayd thyngs do encourage and nourysh the hartes of Warryers, and make them strong and wylling to Fyght.

*Item,* It behoveth a Prynce to make good search and to know, which of hys Company be most Diligent, Valyaunt, and taught in Feats of War; and of them to make most, and to nourysh them with great Liberality accordyng to theyr Meryts. For the Liberality of a Prynce cawseth hys Company to be diligent, and also multiplyeth and encreaseth the same.

*Item,*



*Item*, It apperteyneth to a Prince to forbidd, that none of hys Company entend Conflyct, or to go out of hys Host without Lycence of theyr Capytayns.

*Item*, Manv other thyngs might be reherfed, whereby Enemyes might be constreyned and repressed: but take thys for a general Conclufyon, that the Effect of Battayl confysteth and standeth in three thyngs, that is to say, in Abundance of Money, in good Order put and kept, and in following the Counsaile and Advertyfement of wyse and expert Warryers.

#### VI. To Pacify the Sedition of Sowdiours.

**W**HEN *A. Manlius* Consul had perceyved, that hys Sowdiours grudged against the men of *Campania*, where they were now lodged, conspiryng togyther to flee theyr hostes, and after to take away theyr Goods; he spred abroad thys Rumour, that they shulde ly there styl al the Wynter. And thus they of theyr purpose let and dystrubed, he delyvered *Campania* from great peryll, and as Tyme and Occasyion served, punyshed them that were Caufers of that Sedition.

What Tymes the Legyons of the *Romayns* were furyously sent and bent on peryllous Sedytion, *Lucius Sylla* restored them from theyr Rage unto a Quyetness by thys Polycy; He commaunded that word shuld be brought hastily to the Host that theyr Enemyes were at hand, and that they should raise up a Cry, and cal them to harness, and blow up the Trumpets: wherby he brak off the Sedytion, they altogether uniting as nede requyred, agaynst their Enemyes.

What Tyme *Pompeius* Host had slayne the Senatours of *Millan*, for fear of trouble and busynes that myght have happened, yf he shuld have called the Offenders alone to Examination, he sent for them al togyther, as wel for the Faultles as the gyltie; so that they seemed to be sent for for some other purpose. And therefore appeared they that were faultie with less fear, bycause they came not alone. And they whose Conscience pleded them not gyltie gave good attendaunce to kepe them that were faultie, lest peradventure theyr Escape and Flyght myght have tourned them to displeasure.



## E.

*The Names of the Knights of the Bath, made by King Edward the Sixth Febr. 20. Shrove Sunday, being the day of his Coronation.*

*Ex Offic. Ar-  
mor. N. 1. 7.*

The Duke of *Suffolk*.  
The Earl of *Hertford*.  
The Lord *Matravers*.  
The Lord *Strange*.  
The Lord *Lysle*.  
The Lord *Cromwel*.  
The L. *Scrope's* Son and Heir.  
Sir *Francis Russel*.  
Sir *Anthony Browne*.  
Sir *John Gates*.  
Sir *Alex. Umpton* of *Oxfordshire*.  
Sir *Valentine Knightley*.  
Sir *Geo. Vernon* of the *Peak*.  
Sir *Thomas Houffelyn*.  
Sir *Edmund Mollineux*.  
\* Sir *William Baltrope*.  
Sir *Tho. Nevyl* of *Hold*.  
† Sir *Holcroft*.  
Sir *Henry Tyrrel*.  
Sir *Wymond Carew*.

\* Perhaps  
*Baltrope*.

† *Thomas* per-  
haps that was  
Kt. Marshal.

The Earl of *Oxford*.  
The Earl of *Ormonde*.  
The Lord *Talbot*.  
The Lord *Herbert*.  
The Lord *Charles Brandon*.  
The Lord *Hastings*.  
The Lord *Windsors* Son and Heir.  
Sir *Richard Devereux*.  
Sir *Henry Semour*.  
Sir *Anthony Cook* of *Essex*.  
Sir *George Norton*.  
Sir *Robert Lytton*.  
Sir *John Port* of *Darbyshire*.  
Sir *Christopher Barker*, Garter.  
Sir *James Hales*.  
Sir *Thomas Brycknal*.  
Sir *Amgel Mariam*.  
Sir *John Cutts* of *Essex*.  
Sir *William Scarington*.  
Sir *William Snathe*.

These Knights being Fourty in Number, being Nominated of the *Bath*, and made with so great Royalty, were commanded to pay the Duties of Mony double to the same payable by other Knights.

*The Knights of the Carpet dubbed by the King on Shrove Tuesday in the Morning; Viz. Some of them the same Day, and the rest at other Times, during the Utas of the abovesaid Noble Solemnization, being 55 in all.*

Sir { *John Radcliff*.  
      *Thomas Gray*.  
      *John Windham*.  
      *John Vaughan*.  
      *Anth. Hevingingham*.  
      *John Wentworth*.  
      *John Godsalve*.

Sir { *Thomas Guilford*.  
      *John Savage*.  
      *Walter Savage*.  
      *Humphrey Stafford*.  
      *George Pierpoint*.  
      *Thomas Fitz-Herbert*.  
      *Thomas Hanmar*.

Sir



|                                 |                      |
|---------------------------------|----------------------|
| George Brocket.                 | Thomas Dyer.         |
| John Horsey.                    | Barneston.           |
| John Salisbury.                 | Roger Guilford.      |
| William Hollers.                | Edward Rogers.       |
| William Rainsford.              | Roger Blewit.        |
| William Pickering.              | John Horsey.         |
| Hary Doyle.                     | Francis Inglesfield. |
| Drury.                          | John Spring.         |
| George Harp r.                  | John Grevil.         |
| John Norton.                    | Thomas Bell.         |
| Sir Thomas Nevyl.               | Sir Rice Gryffith.   |
| William Stanley.                | Thomas Gravener.     |
| John Butler of Gloucestershire. | Thomas Hollers.      |
| John Shelton of Suff.           | Thomas Wroth.        |
| Anthony Anger.                  | John Cary.           |
| John Mason.                     | Urien Brereton.      |
| Richard Cotton.                 | John Butler.         |
| Thomas Newman.                  | Thomas Kemp.         |
| Philip Calthorp.                | Robert Langley.      |
| Maurice Denis.                  | John A Ryce.         |
| Rowland Martin.                 |                      |

## F.

A BALLAD sung to K. Edward in Cheapside as he  
past through London to his Coronation.

Sing, Up Heart, Sing Up Heart, and sing no more Downe,  
But Joy in King Edward that weareth the Crowne.

*Ubi supra.*

Sir, Song in time past hath been Downe a Downe,  
And long it hath lasted in Tower and Towne,  
To have it much meeter, Downe hath been added;  
But Up is more Sweeter to make our Hearts gladded.  
Sing, Up Heart, &c.

King Edward Up Springeth from Puerilitie,  
And toward us bringeth Joy and Tranquillitie;  
Our Hearts may be light and merry chere.  
He shal be of such Might, that al the World may him fear.  
Sing, Up Heart, &c.

His Father late our Sovereign both day and also Houre,  
That in joy he might reign like a Prince of high Power,  
By Sea and Land hath provided for him eke,  
That never King of England had ever the leke.  
Sing, Up Heart, &c.

*He*



He hath gotten already Boleign that goodly Town,  
And biddeth sing speedily Up, Up, and not Downe.  
When he waxeth Wight, and to Manhood doth Spring,  
He shal be strait then of four Realms the King.  
Sing, Up Heart, &c.

Yee Children of England for the Honour of the same,  
Take Bow and Shaft in hand, Learn Shootage to frame.  
That you another day may so do your Parts,  
To serve your King as wel with Hands as with Hearts.  
Sing, Up Heart, &c.

Yee Children that be towards, Sing Up and not Downe,  
And never play the Cowards to him that weareth the Crowne:  
But alway do your Care his Plesure to fulfil.  
Then shal you keep right sure the Honour of England stil.  
Sing, Up Heart, &c.

## G.

Queen Katharine Parrs Letter in Latin, to the Lady Mary;  
Concerning her Translation of Erasmus Paraphrase upon  
the Gospel of S. John.

Vespasian F. 3.  
Cott. Libr.

**C**UM multa sint, Nobilissima ac Amantissima Domina, quæ me facile invitant hoc Tempore ad scribendum, nihil tamen perinde me movet atque Cura Valetudinis tuæ, quam, ut spero, esse optimam, ita de eadem certiore fieri, magnopere cupio. Quare mitto hunc Nuntium quem judico fore tibi gratissimum, tum propter Artem illam Musicæ, qua te simul ac me oppidò oblectari non ignoro; tum quod a me profectus tibi certissimè referre possit de omni statu ac Valetudine meâ. Atque sanè in animo fuit ante hunc diem iter ad Te fecisse, teque coram salutasse; verum Voluntati meæ non omnia responderunt. Nunc spero hac Hyeme, idque propediem, propius nos esse congressuras. Quo sane mihi nihil erit jucundum magis, aut magis volupe.

Cum autem, ut accepi, summa jam manus imposita sit per Maletum Operi Erasmi in Johannem (quod ad Translationem spectat) neque quicquam nunc restet, nisi ut justa quadam Vigilantia ac Cura adhibeatur in eodem corrigendo, Te obsecro, ut Opus hoc pulcherrimum atque utilissimum, jam emendatum per Maletum aut aliquem Tuorum, ad me transmitti cures; quo suo Tempore prelo dari possit: Atque porro significes, an sub tuo Nomine in Lucem felicissimè exire velis, an potius incerto Autore. Cui Operæ meæ sane Opinione injuriam facere videberis, si tui Nominis Autoritate etiam Posteris commendatum iri recusaveris: in quo accuratissimè transferendo tantos Labores summo Reip. Bono suscepisti; pluresque (ut satis notum est) susceptura, si Valetudo Corporis permisisset. Cum ergo in hac re abs te laboriosè admodum sudatum



*datum fuisse nemo non intelligat, cur quam omnes tibi merito deferant  
Laudem rejicias, non video. Attamen ego hanc rem omnem ita relin-  
quo Prudentia tua, ut quamcunque velis rationem inire, eam ego max-  
ime approbandam censuero.*

*Pro Cruena quam ad me dono misisti ingentis tibi gratias ago.  
Deum Opt. Max. precor, ut vera ac intaminata Felicitate perpetuo te  
beare dignetur. In quo etiam diutissime valeas. Ex Hanworthia 20.  
Septembris.*

*Tui Studiosissima ac Amantissima*

Katherina Regina KP.

~~~~~

H.

*Queen Katherine Par to K. Henry; Gone in his Expedition
against France.*

ALthowgh the dyscourse of Tyme and accompte of Days nether MSS. penes me
ys long nor many of your Majesties Absens, yet the want of
your Presens so much beloved and desired of me, maketh me, that I
cannot quyetly pleasur in any thyng, unt I I hear from your Ma-
jestye. The tyme therfor semeth to me very long wythe a great
desire to know how your Hyeghness hath done, syns your departyng
hens. Whos Prosperite and Helthe I prefer and desyre more than
myne own. And whereas I know your Majesties Absens ys never
wythout gret respects of thyngs moost convenyent and necessary,
yet Love and Affection compelleth me to desyre your Presens. And
again, the same Zele and Love forceth me also to be best content
wyth that whyche ys your Wyl and Pleasure. And thus Love
maketh me in al thynges to set apart myne own Commodite and Plea-
sure, and to embrace moost joyfully hys Wyl and Pleasure whom
I love. God, the Knower of Secrets, can Juge these Words not to
be only wrytten wyth Ynke, but moost truly impressed in the hart.
Muche more I omitt, lest I schuld seme to go about to prayse my
self, or crave a Thank. Whych thyng to do I mynde nothyng lesse,
but a playn symple relacyon of my Zele and Love towards your
Majestie, procedyng from the abundance of the herte. Wheryn I
must nedes confesse I deserve no worthy Commendatyon, havyng
such just occasion to do the same.

I make lyke accompte wythe your Majestie, as I do wythe God
for hys Benefyts and Gyftes heped upon me dayly: knowlegyng
my self always a gret Dettor unto hym, in that I do omitt my
Dutye towarde hym, not being able to recompence the laste of hys
benefyts. In whyche State I am certayne and sure to dy. But yet
I hope in his gracyous acceptation of my good Wyl. And even
such Confidence I have in your Majesties gentylnes. Knowyng my
self

self never to have done my duty, as wer requysite and mete to such a Noble and Worthy Prince; at whose hands I have founde and receyved so muche Love and Goodnes, that wyth Words I cannot expresse yt. Lest I should be to teduous unto your Majestye I fynysche thys my scrybeled Letter, Commyttyng you into the Governance of the Lord wyth long life and prosperous felicity here, and after thys lyf to enjoy the Kyngdom of hys Elect. From *Grenwyche*.

By your Majesties humble obedyent

Lovyng Wife and Servant

Kateryn the Quene KP.

~~~~~

# I.

A Poem, pretended to be writ against the Preachers; Intituled  
A PORE HELP.

The Bucklar and Defence of Mother holy Kyrke,  
And weapon to dryve hence Al that against her Wyrke.

I.

Biblioth. R. D.  
Joh. Ep. Elien.

**W**I L none in al this Land,  
Step forth and take in hand  
These Fellows to withstand,  
In number like the sand;  
That with the Gospel Melles,  
And wil do nothyng elles,  
But trattling Tales telles:  
Agaynst our holy Prelacie,  
And holy Churches Dignitie,  
Saying, it is but Papistrie,  
Tea, fained and hypocrisie,  
Erroneous and Heresie:  
And taketh their Authoritie  
Out of the holy Evangelie:  
Al Customes Ceremonial  
And Rites Ecclesiastical,  
Not grounded on Scripture,  
No longer to endure.  
And thus ye may be sure  
The People they allure,  
And draw them from your Lore,  
The which wil grieve you sore.  
Take hede I say therefore,  
Your nede was never more.

2.

But sens ye be so slacke  
It grieveth me Alacke,  
To beare behind your backe;  
How they wil carpe and cracke.  
And none of you that dare  
With one of them compare.  
Yet some there be that are  
So bold to shew there Ware.  
And is no Priest nor Deacon,  
That yet wil fire his Becon,  
Against such Fellows fraile,  
Make out with tobe and nayle,  
And hoiste up maine Saile,  
And manfully to fyght  
In holy Prelates Right,  
With Pen and Tynke and Paper,  
And like no trifling Japer,  
To touch these Fellows daper?

3.

And I indede am be,  
That wayteth for to se,  
Who dare so hardy be,  
To encounter here with me.

I



I stand here in defence  
 Of sum that be far hence,  
 And can both Blyffe and Cense,  
 And also undertake  
 Right holy thyngs to make,  
 Tea, God within a Cake;  
 And whoso that forsake,  
 His Bread shal be dowe bake.  
 I openly profess  
 The holy blissed Mefs  
 Of Strength to be no less,  
 Then it was, at the first.  
 But I would see who durst  
 Set that among the worst,  
 For he should be accurst,  
 With Boke and Bel and Candel:  
 And so I would him handel,  
 That he should right wel know  
 How to escape I trow,  
 So hardy on his head  
 Deprave our holy Bread:  
 Or else to prate or patter  
 Against our holy Water.  
 This is a playne Matter,  
 It nedeth not to flatter.

4.  
 They be such holy thinges,  
 As bath bene us'd with Kings.  
 And yet these leud Loselles  
 That bragg upon their Gospelles,  
 At Ceremonies Swelles,  
 And at our Christned Belles,  
 And at your long Gownes,  
 And at your Shaven Crownes,  
 And at your Tippetts fyne,  
 The Favells wil repyne.  
 They say, ye lead evil Lives  
 With other mennys Wyves,  
 And wil none of your owne.  
 And so your Sede is sowne  
 In other mennys grounde,  
 True Wedlock to confounde.  
 Thus do they rayle and rave,  
 Calling every Priest Knave,  
 That loveth Messe to say,  
 And after idel al day.  
 They would not have you play,  
 To drive the Time away:  
 But brabble on the Byble,  
 Which is but impossible

VOL. II.

To be lerned in al your Life:  
 Tet therein they be rife,  
 Which maketh al this Strife.  
 And also the Paraphrases,  
 Much differing from your Porteises,  
 They would have dayly used,  
 And Porteise clean refused.  
 But they shall be accused,  
 That have so far abused  
 Their Tongues against such Holiness  
 And holy Churches Busines.

5.  
 Many hundred yeres ago,  
 Great Clearcks affirmeth so,  
 And other many mo,  
 That searched to and fro  
 In Scripture for to fynd,  
 What they might leave behind,  
 For to be kept in mind,  
 Among the People blinde,  
 As wavering as the Winde;  
 And wrote therof such Bokes,  
 That whoso on them lokes,  
 Shal find them to be Clarkes,  
 As proveth by their Warkes.  
 And yet there be that barke,  
 And say they be but darke.  
 But Hark, ye Loulars, barke,  
 So wel we shal you marke,  
 That, if the World shal turn,  
 A sort of you shal burn.  
 Ye durst as wel, I saye  
 Within this two yeres day,  
 As sone to run away,  
 As such parts to play.  
 When Sum did Rule and Reyne,  
 And auncient things maintayn,  
 Which now be counted vayne,  
 And brought into disdayne.  
 Such men I say they were,  
 As loved not this Geare,  
 And kept you stil in feare,  
 To Burn or Faggots beare.  
 Then durst ye not be bold  
 (Against our Lerninges old,  
 Or Images ef Gold,  
 Which now be bought and Sold;  
 And were the Laymans Boke  
 Wheron they ought to loke)  
 One word to speake amisse;

\* E 2

No.



No, no, yee foles, I wyffe,  
A thing to playne it is.

6.

Then did these Clarke deuyne,  
Dayly themselves encline  
To prove and to defyne,  
That Christs Body above,  
Which suffered for our Love,  
And dyed for our Bebove,  
Is in the Sacrament,  
Flesh, Bloude and Bone present.  
And Bread and Wine away,  
As sone as they shal say  
The Words of Consecration  
In time of Celebracion,  
So must it be indede,  
Though it be not in the Crede.  
And yet these Fellows new  
Wil say, it is not true,  
Christs Body for to view  
With any bodyly eye,  
That do they playne deny,  
And stiffly stand thereby:  
And enterprise to write,  
And also to endight  
Bokes both great and smal  
Agaynst these Fathers al,  
And beresy it cal,  
That any man should teach,  
Or to the People Preach  
Such thyngs without their reach.  
And some there be that say,  
That Christ cannot al day  
Be kept within a Box,  
Nor yet set in the Stocks,  
Nor bidden like a Fox,  
Nor Prisoner under Locks,  
Nor clothed with powdered Armin,  
Nor bredeth stinking Vermin,  
Nor dwelleth in an Howse,  
Nor eatyn of a Mowse,  
Nor mould or be be spent,  
Nor yet in fire be brent,  
Nor can no more be slayne,  
Nor offered up agayne.  
Blessed Sacrament! for thy Passion,  
Hear and se our Exclamation  
Agaynst these men of new fashon,  
That strive agaynst the holy Nacion,  
And jest of them in Playes,

In Taverns and high Ways,  
And theyr good Acts disprays:  
And Martyrs would them make  
That brent were at a stake,  
And Sing Pipe merri annot,  
And play of Wilnot Cannot.  
And as for Cannot and Wilnot,  
Though they speke not of it, it  
skil not.

7.

For a nobler Clark of late,  
And worthy in Estate  
Hatb played with them Checkmate,  
Theyr Courage to abate,  
And tells them such a tale,  
As makes their Bonnets vail,  
And marreth clean the Sale  
Of al their whole pastime,  
And al is done in Rhime.  
Oh! what a man is thys,  
That if he could, I wyfs,  
Would mend that is amys.  
His meaning is indede,  
That if he might wel spede,  
And beare some rule agayne,  
It should be to their payne.  
I think they were but worthy,  
Because they be so sturdy  
To rayl agaynst the Wirke  
Of our Mother holy Kyrke.  
Yet some there be in fume,  
And proudly do presume,  
Unto this lerned man  
To answer and they can,  
And wene they had the grace  
His Balad to deface.

8.

And trowe you that wil be?  
Nay, nay, beleve ye me,  
I take my mark amys,  
If once he did not mys  
A very narrow Hys.  
Wel, if you come agen,  
May happen twelve men  
Shal do as they did then.  
Have you forgot the Bar,  
That ever ther you ware,  
And stode to make and mar  
By God and by the Contrey,

You



You had a narrow Entrey,  
 Take hede of Coram nobis,  
 We wil reckon with Vobis.  
 If you come agen,  
 We wil know who pulled the Hen.  
 For al your bold Courage,  
 You may pay for the Pottage.  
 And are you now so bragg  
 You may come to tagg,  
 Your hap may be to wagg  
 Upon a wooden Nagg.  
 Or els a fair Fyre  
 May happ to be your Hyre.  
 Take hede lest you tyre,  
 And ly downe in the myre.  
 Hold fast by the main;  
 By the Masse it is no game.  
 If my Lord wax not Lame,  
 You wil al be tame.  
 When you heare him next,  
 Mark wel his Text.  
 He hath bene cursly vext,  
 I fere me he be wext  
 A Popistant stout.  
 Surely al the Rout,  
 That beareth him shal doubt,  
 He wil be in and out,  
 Prowling round about,  
 To get forth the Snout.  
 If Prayer may do good,  
 All the whole Brood,  
 Skurvy, Skabbed and Skald,  
 Shaven, Shorn and Bald,  
 Pore Priests of Boal,  
 We pray for him al,  
 Unto the God of Bread.  
 For if he be dead,  
 We may go to bedd,  
 Blindfold and be ledd  
 Without ragg or shred.

9.

But I am sore adred  
 I se him loke so red,  
 Tet I durst ley my head,  
 As Doctor Fryer said,  
 He hath somewhat in store.  
 Wel, you shal know more,  
 Harken wel therfore,  
 Some shal pay the Skore.  
 He hath bene a Pardoner,

And also a Gardener.  
 He hath bene a Vitayler,  
 A Lordly Hospitelor,  
 A noble Teacher,  
 And sofo a Preacher.  
 Tho Germyn his man  
 Were hanged, what than?  
 Say worse and you can.  
 Best let him alone,  
 For Peter, James and John,  
 And Apostles every one,  
 (I give you playne Warning)  
 Had never no such Learnynge,  
 As hath this famous Clarke.  
 He is lerned beyond the mark.

10.

And also Mayster Huggarde,  
 Doth shew himself no sluggard,  
 Nor yet no drunken Drunkard,  
 But sharpeth up his Wyt,  
 And frameth it so fyt,  
 These Tonkers for to byt,  
 And wil not them permit  
 In Error styl to sit.  
 As it may wel appeare  
 By his clarkly Answer:  
 The which Intitled is,  
 Agaynst what meaneth this.  
 A man of old Sort,  
 And writeth not in sport,  
 And answereth earnestly,  
 Concluding Heresy.  
 And yet as I trowe,  
 Some bluster and blowe  
 And crake (as the Crowe.)  
 But Netts wil we lay,  
 To catch them, if we may.  
 For if I begin  
 I wil bring them in,  
 And fetch in my Cosyns  
 By the whole Dofens,  
 And call them Coram Nobis,  
 And teach them Dominus Vobis,  
 With Et cum spiritu tuo,  
 That holy be both Duo,  
 When they be said and songe  
 In holy Latine tongue.  
 And solemne Bells be rounge.  
 But these Babes be too yonge;  
 Perking upon their Pattins,

And



And fain would have the Mattins,  
 And Evening Song also,  
 In English to be do,  
 With Mariage and Baptising,  
 Burials and other thing,  
 In volgar Tongue to say and sing.  
 And so they do it newly,  
 In divers places truly;  
 Saying, they do but duely;  
 Maynteyning it in any wyse,  
 So should they do theyr Service.

## II.

Alas! who would not mone,  
 Or rather grypt or grone,  
 To se such Service gone,  
 Which saved many one  
 From deadly Sin and Shame,  
 And many a spot of blame;  
 From Purgatory payne,  
 And many shower of rayne.  
 Wel, yet I say agayn  
 Some honest men remayne,  
 And kepe their Customes stil,  
 And evermore wil.  
 Wherfore indede my Read is,  
 To take you to your Beadis,  
 Al men and women, I say,

That useth so to pray,  
 That such good Priestes may  
 Continue so alway,  
 Or els none other like,  
 But al lyeth in the Dyke.  
 And loke ye do not faynt,  
 But pray to some good Saynt,  
 That he may make restraynt  
 Of al these straunge Fashions,  
 And great Abominacions.  
 Because I may not tary,  
 I pray to swete Sir Harry,  
 A man that wil not vary,  
 And one that is no Skulker,  
 But Kna. Knyght of the Sepulchre,  
 That he may stand fast,  
 And be not overcast,  
 Or els to be the last  
 Of al them that do yelde  
 In City, Town or Fielde.  
 For if he stick therein,  
 No doubt he shal not blin  
 Tyl he come to Eternitie.  
 With al his whole Fraternitie.  
 Amen therfore, say ye,  
 That his partakers be.  
 Ye get no more of me.



K.

Queen Katharin Par to the University of Cambridg: Which had addressed to her to intercede with the King for them; Upon an Act, wherby the Parliament had given him al Colleges, Chauntries, and Free Chappels.

YOUR Letters I have receyved, presented on al your Behalfes MSS. penes 1708. by Mr. Doctour Smythe, your Discrete and Lernyd Advocate. And as they be Latynely wrytten (whych ys so signified unto me by those that be Lernyd in the *Latyne* Tongue) so I know you could have utteryd your Desyres and Opynions familiarly in our Vulgar Tonge, aptyst for my Intelligence. Albeyt you seme to have conceyved, rather Percyally then truly, a favorable Estimation both of my goyng forward and dedycation to Lernyng. Whych t'advance, or at the lest conserve, you by your Letters move me dyversly: Schewynge how agreable yt is to me, beyng in thys Worldly State, not onely for myne owne part to be Studyous, but also a Mayntener and Cheryscher of the Lernyd State, by beryng me in hand, that I am indued and perfeited with those Qualytes and Respects, which ought to be in a Person of my Vocation. Truely thys your discrete and Polytyke Document I as thankfully accept, as you desyre that I schuld imbrace yt. And for as muche as I do wel understand al kynde of Lernyng doth floryssche amongest you in thys Age, as yt dyd amongest the *Grekes* at *Athens* long ago, I requyre and desyre you al, not so to honger for the exquylite knowlege of prophane Lernyng, that yt may be thowght, the *Grekes* University was but transposyd, or now in *England* ageyne revyved, forgettyng our Chrystianity; Synce theyr excellencye only did atteyne to Moral and Natural thyngs: but rather I gentlyly exhort you to study and apply those Doctrynes, as means and apt degrees to the atteynyng and settynge forth the better Chrystes reverend and most Sacred Doctryne. That yt may not be layd ageynste you in Evydence at the Tribunal Seat of God, how ye ware asschamed of Christes Doctryne. For thys Latyne Lesson I am taught to say of Saynt Poule, *Non me pudet Evangelii*. The sincere settynge forthe wherof I trust universfally in al your Vocations and Mynysteries, you woll apply and confourme your sondry Gyftes, Arts and Studies, to such end and sort, that *Cambrige* may be accompted rather an Universitie of Divine Phylosophy, then of Natural or Moral, as *Athens* was.

Upon the Confydence of whych your Accomplyschment to my Expectation, Zele and Request, I accordyng to your desyres attempted my Lord, the Kings Majesty, for the stay of your Possessions. In whych notwythstanding hys Majesties Propertie and Intrest throwgh the Consent of the High Court of Parlement, hys Hyeghness, being such a Patron to good Lernyng, he woll rather advance and erect  
new



new occasion therfor, than confound those your Colleges. So that Lernyng may hereafter ascribe her very Oryginal, hole Conservation, and sure stay, to our Sovereyn Lord hys only Defence, and Worthy Ornament. The prosperous Estate and Pryncely government of whom long to preserve, I doubt not but every of you woll with dayly Invocacyon cal upon hym, who alone and only can dyspose al to every Creature.

L.

*Queen Katharine to the Lady Wriothesley; Comforting her for the loss of her only Son.*

*MSS. penes me.*

**G**OOD my Lady *Wresely*; Understandyng yt hath pleasyd God of late to dyfinheryte your Sonne of thys World, of intent he schuld become Partener and chosen Heyre of the everlastyng Inherytance; (which Callyng and happy Vocatyon ye may rejoyce) Yet when I Consyder, you are a Mother by flessche and nature, doubtyng how you can geve place quyetly to the same; In as much as Chrystes Mother, indued with al godly Vertues, dyd utter a sorrowful natural Passyon of her Sonis Dethe, whereby we have all obtayned everlastyngly to Lyve: Therfore amongst other dyscrete and godly Consolatyons gyven unto you, as wel by my Lord your husband, as other your wyfe Frendes, I have thowght with myne own hand to recommend unto you my symple Consel and Advyce: Desyryng you not so to utter your natural Affectyon by inordinate Sorow, that God have cause to take you as a Murmurer ageynst hys Appoyntments and Ordynances. For what is excessyfe Sorow but a pleyne Evidens ageynst you, that your inward mynd doth repyne ageynst Gods doyns, and a Declaratyon, that you are not contented, that God hath put your Son by Nature, but hys by Adoptyon, in possessyon of the heavenly Kingdom? Such as have doubtyd of the Everlastyng lif to come, doth Sorow and bewayle the Departure hens: But those whych be persuadyd, that to dy here ys lyf ageyne, do rather hunger for Death, and count yt a felicitye, than to bewayle yt, as an utter Destruction.

How much, Madam, are you to be counted godly wyfe, that wol and can prevent thorow your godly Wyfdome, Knowlege and humble Submyssyon, that thyng that Tyme wold at length fynysche. If you lament your Sons Death, you do him great wrong, and schew your self to sorow for the happyest thyng ther ever came to hym, beyng in the hands of his best Father. If you are sorry for your own Commodite, you schew your self to lyve to your self. And as of hys Towardnes you could but only hope, hys  
years



years war so yong; whych could perfourm nothyng, yt femyth that he was now a mete and pleasant Sacryfice for Chryft.

Wherfor, Good my Lady *Wreseley*, put away al immoderate and unjust hevynes, requyryng you with Thanksgyving to frame your hart, that the Father in Heven may thynk you are moost glad and best contendyd to make hym a Present of hys Spyr-  
tual and your only natural Son: Gloryfying hym more in that yt hath pleased hys Majesty to accept and able hym to hys Kyngdom, then that yt fyrst pleased hym to comfort you wyth such a Gyft. Who can at hys pleasur recompence your Losse with such a lyke juell, yf gladly and quyetly ye submyt and refer al to hys pleasur.



## M.

*A Proclamation concerning the irreverent Talkers of the Sacrament. Dated the 27th day of December, Anno Regni Reg. Edward. primo.*

**W**HERAS the Kyngs Highnes hath of late, with the as-  
sent and consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Penes Reg. D.  
Joh. Ep.  
Elien.  
the Commons in the Parliament held the day of in  
the first year of his most gracious Reign, made a good and Godly  
Act and Estatute against those who do contempn, despise, or with  
unfemely and ungodly words deprave and Revile the holy Sacrament  
of the Body and Bloud of our Lord, commonly called, the *Sacra-  
ment of the Altar*: And the said Estatute hath most prudently de-  
clared, by al the words and terms which Scripture speaketh of it,  
what is undoubtedly to be accepted, beleved, taken and spoken by,  
and of the said Sacrament: Yet this notwithstanding, his Majesty is  
advertised, that some of his Subjects, not contented with such words  
and terms as Scripture doth declare therof, nor with that Doctrine,  
which the holy Ghost by the Evangelists and *S. Paul* hath taught  
us, do not cease to move contentious and superfluous Questions of  
the said holy Sacrament, and Supper of the Lord; Entryng rashly  
into the discussing of the high Mystery therof, and go about in their  
Sermons or Talks, arrogantly to define the Maner, Nature, Fashion,  
Ways, Possibility or Impossibility, of those matters; which neither  
make to Edification, nor God hath by his holy Word opened.

Which Persons, not contented reverently and with obedient Faith  
t'accept that the said Sacrament according to the saying of *S. Paul*,  
*The Bread is the Communion*, or Partaking, of the Body of the Lord:  
*The Wine* likewise, the Partaking of the Bloud of Christ, by the Words  
Instituted and taught of Christ; and that the Body and Bloud of



*Jesu* Christ is there; which is our Comfort, Thanksgiving, Love-token of Christs Love towards us, and of ours, as his Members within our self; Search and Strive unreverently, whether the Body and Bloud aforesaid, is there Really or Figuratively, Locally or Circumscriptly, and having Quantity and Greatnes, or but Substantially and by Substance only, or els but in a Figure and maner of Speaking; whether his blessed Body be there, Head, Leggs, Armes, Toes and Nails, or any other ways, shape and maner, naked or clothed; whether he is broken or chewed, or he is always whole; whether the Bread there remaineth, as we se, or how it departeth; whether the Flesh be there alone, and the Bloud, or part, or ech in other, or in th'one both, in th'other but only Bloud; and what Bloud; that only which did flow out of the Side, or that which remained: With other such irreverent, superfluous and curious Questions, which, how and what, and by what means, and in what forme, may bring into them, which of human and corrupt Curiosity hath desire to search out such Mysteries as lyeth hid in the infinite and bottomless depth of the Wisdom and Glory of God; and to the which our humain Imbecillity cannot attain: and therefore oftymes turneth the same to their own and others destruction, by contention and arrogant rashnes; which simple and christian Affection reverently receiving, and obediently beleving, without further search, taketh and useth to most great comfort and profit.

For Reformation wherof, and to the intent that further Contention, Tumult and Question might not rise amonges the Kings Subjects, the Kings Highnes, by the advice of the Lord Protector, and other his Majesties Councel, fraitly Willeth and Commaundeth, that no maner person from henceforth do in any wise contentiously and openly argue, Dispute, Reason, Preach or Teach; affirming any more termes of the said Bl. Sacrament, than be expressly taught in the holy Scripture, and mentioned in the foresaid Act, nor deny none, which be therein contained and mentioned; until such tyme as the Kings Majesty, by the Advice of his Highnes Council, and the Clergy of this Realm, shal Define, Declare and set furthe an open Doctrin therof; and what Termes and Words may justly be spoken therby, other then be expressly in the Scripture contained in the Act before reherfed.

In the mean while the K. H. pleasure is, by the advice aforesaid, that every his Loving Subjects shal devoutly and reverently affirm and take that holy Bread to be Christs Body, and that Cup to be the Cup of his holy Bloud, according to the purport and effect of th'holy Scripture, contained in th' Act before expressed, and accommodate themselves rather to take the same Sacrament worthily, than rashly to entre into the discussyng of the high Mystery therof.

Yet the K. H. mindeth not hereby to let or stop the Ignorant and Willing to learn, reverently or privatly to demaund of those, whom he thynketh knoweth more, the further Instruction and Teaching in the said Bl. Sacrament: So that the same be not doen with Contention, nor in open Audience, with a Company gathered together about them, nor with Tumult: Nor doth prohibite any man hereby likewise so quietly, devoutly and reverently to teach or instruct the



the Weak and Unlearned, according to the more Talent and Learning, given to hym of God. But only, that al Contention, Strife and Tumult, and Irreverentness might be avoyded, and in open Audience and Preachyng nothing taught, but which may have the holy Scripture for Warrant.

Upon pain that whosoever shal openly, with Contention or Tumult, and in a Company gathered together, either in Churches, Alehouses, Markets, or elsewhere, contrary to the Fourm and Effect of this Proclamation, defend and maintein, or irreverently and contentiously demaund of any man, any of the Questions before reherfed, either on the one part, or of the other, or any such like, or do otherwise revile, contempne or despise the said Sacrament, by calling it an *Idol*, or other such vile Name; shal incurre the Kyngs high indignation, and suffre imprisonment; or to be otherwise grievously punished at his Majesties Wil and Pleasure.

Gevyng further in aucthority to al Justices of Peace within the Shires, where they dwel, to apprehend and take al such as contentiously and tumultuously, with Companies or Routs assembled about them, do Dispute, Argue or Reason, or stify mantein, or openly Preach and Define the Questions before reherfed, or any of them, or such like, either on the one part, or th'other; and to commit the same to prison, untill such tyme, as the K. M. pleasure herein be known; and that they immediately do Certify the Name or Names of the party so offendyng, and of them who were there at the same tyme present, makyng the Rout or Assemble to the K. H. Counsel: Willyng and Commaundyng the said Justices, with al diligence, to execute the Premisses, according to the Purport, effect, and true meanyng of the same, and their most bound Duties, as they tender his Highnes Wil and Pleasure, and wil answer to the contrary upon their Peril.

---



## N.

*A Proclamation for the Absteyning from Flesh in the Lent tyme. Dated the 16th day of January, An. Reg. prim.*

*E. Biblioth.  
Rev. Joh. Ep.  
Elien.*

THE Kings Highnes, by the Advice of his most entirely beloved Uncle, *Edward Duke of Somerset*, Governor of his Person, and Protector of al his Realms, Dominions and Subjects, and other of his Privy Council; Considering that his Highnes hath not only Cure and Charge of the Defence of his Realms and Dominions, as a King, but also, as a Christian King, and Supreme Hed of the Church of *England* and *Ireland*, a Desire, Wil and Charge to lead and instruct his People, to him committed of God, in such Rites, Ways and Customs, as might be acceptable to God, and to the further Encrease of good Living and Vertue, and that his Subjects now having a more perfect and clear Light of the Gospel, and true word of the Lord, thorow the infinite Clemency and Mercy of Almighty God by the hands of his Majesty, and his most noble Father of famous Memory, promulgate, shewed, declared and opened unto them, should and ought therby, in al good Works and Vertues increase, be more forward and diligent and plentiful: as in Fasting, Prayer and Almoſe deeds, in Love, Charity, Obedience, and other such good Works commaunded to us of God in his holy Scripture:

Yet his Highnes is advertised and informed, that diverse of his Subjects be not only to al these more slow and negligent, but rather Contempners and Despisers of such good and godly Acts and Deeds; to the which if they were of their own minds bended and inclined, they needed not by outward and Princely power, be appointed and commaunded. But forsomuch as at this time now alate, more then at any other tyme, a great part of his Subjects do break and contempne that Abstinence which of long tyme hath been used in this his Majesties Realm, upon the *Fridays* and *Saturdays*, and the tyme commonly called *Lent*, and other accustomed Tymes; his Highnes is constrained to ſe a convenient order herein ſet and appointed: Not mindyng therby that his Subjects should thynk any Difference to be in the Days or Meats, or that the one should be to God more holy, more pure, or more clean then the other; for al Days and al Meats be of one and equal Purity, Cleannes and Holines, that we should in them, and by them, live to the Glory of God, and at al Tymes, and for al Meats, geve thanks unto hym, of the which none can defile us at any Tyme, or make us unclene; being Christian men, to whom al things be holy and pure, ſo that they be not uſed in Diſobedience and Vice; But his Majesty hath allowed and approved the Days and Tymes before accustomed, to be continued and ſtil obſerved here in this Church of *England*; both that men should on thoſe Days abſtein and forbear their Pleaſures, and the Meats, wherein they have more delight; to the intent to ſubdue their



their Bodies unto the Soul and Spirit ; Unto the which to exhort and move men, is the Office of a good and godly Hedd and Ruler :

And also for worldly and civil Policy, certain Days in the yere to spare Flesh, and use Fish, for the benefit of the Commonwealth, and profit of this his Majesties Realm : whereof many be Fishers, and men using that Trade of Living, unto the which this Realm on every part environed with the Seas, and so plentiful of fresh waters, doth easily minister occasion ; to the great sustinaunce of this his Highnes people. So that hereby both the Nourishment of the Land might be encreased by saving Flesh, and specially at the spring tyme, when *Lent* doth commonly fall, and when the most common and plenteous breedyng of Flesh is. And also, divers of his Loving Subjects have good Lyvyngs, and get great Riches therby, in utteryng and selling such Meats, as the Sea and fresh Water doth Minister unto us ; And this his Majesties Realm hath more plenty of Ships, Boats, Crayes and other Vessels, by reason of those, which by hope of Lucre do follow that Trade of Livyng.

Wherefore his Majesty, having consideration, that where men of their own mynds do not geve themselves, so oft as they should do, to Fastyng, a common Abstinence may and should be by the Prince enjoyned and commaunded, and having an ey and mind to the Profit and Commodity of his Realm and Subjects, and to a common and civil Policy, Hath willed and commaunded, and by these Presents doth Wil and Commaund, by th'advice aforesaid ; al maner of Person and Persons, of what estate, degree or condition, he or they be, (other then such as already be, or hereafter shal be excused by Law, or Licensed or authorized sufficiently to the contrary) to observe and keep from hencefurth such Fastyng days, and the time commonly called *Lent*, in absteyning from al maner of Flesh, as heretofore in this Realm hath been most commonly used and accustomed : Upon pain that whosoever shal, upon any day heretofore wont to be fasted from Flesh, and not by the K. H. or his Predecessors abrogate and taken away, eat flesh contrary to this Proclamation, shal incurr the Kings high indignation, and shal suffre imprisonment, and be otherwise grievously punished, at his Majesties Wil and Pleasure.

And further the Kings Highnes, by the advice aforesaid, straitly chargeth and commaundeth al Maiors, Bailiffs and other Hed-officers, and Rulers of Cities and Townes, and al Justices of Peace in the Sheres where they be in Commission, to be attendant and diligent to the execution of this Proclamation ; in committing to prison the Offenders contrary to the Proclamation, upon sufficient proof therof by two sufficient Witnesses, before them had and made : There to remain during the Kings pleasure, according to the true purport, effect and meanyng of the same ; as they tender the K. M. wil and pleasure, and wil answer the contrary at their peril.

And where the late King of most famous memory, Father to his Highnes, hath given divers yeres licence to his Subjects in the tyme of *Lent*, to eat Butter, Chese, and other Meats, commonly called *White Meats*, the K. H. by th'advice aforesaid, considering the same to have been doen not without great Considerations,  
doth



doth geve likewise Licence and Aucthority to al his Loving Subjects from hencefurth freely for ever in the Tyme of *Lent*, or other prohibited tymes by Law or Custom, to eat Butter, Eggs, Chese and other White Meats, any Law, Statute, Act or Custome to the contrary notwithstanding.



## O.

*A Proclamation against such as innovate any Ceremony, or Preach without Licence. Dated the 6th of Febr. An. Reg. primo.*

*Ubi supra.*

THE K. H. by the advice of his most entirely beloved Uncle, the Duke of *Somerset*, Governor of his most Royal Person, and Protector of al his Realms, Dominions and Subjects, and others of his Council; Consideryng nothing so much to tend to the disquietyng of his Realm, as diversity of Opinions, and Variety of Rites and Ceremonies, concerning Religion and Worshiping Almighty God; and therefore studying al the ways and means which can be, to direct this Church, and the Cure committed to his Highnes, in one and most true Doctrine, Rite and Usage:

Yet it is advertised, that certain private Curats, Preachers and other Laymen, contrary to their bounden duties of Obedience, do rashly attempt, of their own and singular wytt and mynd, in some Parish Churches, and otherwise, not only to perswade the people from the old and accustomed Rites and Ceremonies, but also themselves bringeth in new and straunge Orders, every one in their Church, according to their Phantasies. The which, as it is an evident token of Pride and Arrogancy, so it tendeth both to confusion and disorder, and also to the high displeasure of Almighty God; who loveth nothing so much as Order and Obedience.

Wherefore his M. straitly chargeth and commaundeth, that no maner Person, of what Estate, Order or Degree soever he be, of his private mynd, Wil or Fantasy, do omyt, leave down, chaunge, alter or Innovate any Order, Rite or Ceremony, commonly used and frequented in the Church of *England*, and not commaunded to be left down at any tyme in the Reign of our late Sovereign Lord his Highnes Father; other then such as his H. by the advice aforesaid by his Majesties Visitors, Injunctions, Statuts or Proclamations, hath already, or hereafter shal commaund to be omitted, left, innovated, or chaunged: But that they be observed after that sort as before they were accustomed, or els now sith prescribed by the aucthority of his M. and by the means aforesaid: Upon pein, that whosoever shal offend contrary to this Proclamation, shal incurr his H. Indignation and suffre imprisonment, and other grevous punishments at his M. Wil and pleasure.

And



And to th'intent, that rash and seditious Preachers should not abuse his H. people, it is his M. pleasure, that whosoever shall take upon hym to preach openly in any Parish Church, Chappel, or any other open place, other than those which be Licensed by the K. M. or his H. Visitors, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, or the bp. of the Diocese, where he doth Preach (Except it be the Bishop, Person, Vicar, Dean or Provost, in his, or their own Cure) shall be forthwith, upon such attempt and Preaching contrary to this Proclamation, Committed to prison, and there remain; until such tyme as his M. by th'advice aforesaid, hath taken order for the further punishment of the same.

And that the Premisses should be more speedily and diligently done and performed, his H. geveth straitly in Commaundment to al Justices of Peace, Maiors, Sheriffs, Constables, Hed-borows, Churchwardens, and al other his M. Officers and Ministers, and Rulers of Towns, Parishes and Hamlets; that they be diligent and attendant, to the true and faithful execution of this Proclamation, and every part therof, according to the intent, purport and effect of the same. And that they of their Procedyngs herein, (or if any Offender be, after they have committed the same to prison) do certify his H. the Lord Protector, or his M. Council, with al speede, therof accordingly; as they tender his M. pleasure, the Wealth of the Realm, and wil answer the contrary at their uttermost perills.

~~~~~

P.

The Kings Commission for Redress of Inclosures.

EDWARD the Sixth, &c. to our Trusty and wel beloved, Sir *Frauncis Russel*, Kt. *Foulk Grevyl*, Kt. *John Hales*, *John Marshe*, *William Pynnocke*, and *Roger Amys*, Gretyng. Where, as wel in the Fourth Year of the Reign of the most noble Prince and our Graundfather, K. *Henry VII.* and in the Seventh, the Twenty fifth and Twenty seventh Years of the most excellent Prynce of famous Memory, and our most dearly beloved Father K. *Henry VIII.* Many good, wholsome and profitable Laws were by the Universal Consent of al the whole Realm made for Restitution, Preservation and Maintenance of the State and Policy of the same: and namely for the Maintenance and keeping up of Houses of Husbandry; for advoiding Destructions, and pulling down of Towns for Inclosures, and Converting of arable Ground into Pastures; for limiting what number of Sheep men should have and keep in their Possession at one Time; Against Plurality and keeping together of Farms; and for maintenance of Hospitality, Housekeeping and Tillage, on the Scytes and Precincts and Demeasnes of such Monasteries, Priories and Religious Houses, as were dissolved by Act of Parliament made in

in the said xxviiith year of the Reign of our said most dearly Beloved Father, as in the same Statutes it doth and may more at large appear: Which Statutes have not wrought th'effect that was hoped should follow: Partly for that the same, for fear of Displeasure, and chiefly through the Corruption and Infection of private Lucre grown universally among our Subjects, were not put in Execution: By reason wherof the Force and Puissance of this our Realm, which was wont to be greatly feared of al foreign Powers, is very much decayed; our People wonderfully abated, and those that remain grievously oppressed; the Price of al things exceedingly encreased, and the Common sort of our Subjects brought to and kept in extreme Misery and Poverty: To the great hindrance of the Glory of God, our Dishonour, and the Subversion, utter Undoing, and Decay of this our Realm, if speedy Remedy be not provided:

WE, coveting above al things the Glory of God, by whose Goodnes we be brought and maintained in this Royal Estate and Dignity, and the Wealth and Saveguard of our Realms and Subjects committed to our Charge: Having conceived a good Opinion, that you be men that love and fear God, and desire the Maintenance of our Honor and Savety, and tender the universal Wealth of this our Realm and Subjects; By th'advice and Consent of our most dearly beloved Uncle *Edward Duke of Somerset*, Governor of our Royal Person, and Protector of al our Realms, Dominions and Subjects, and the rest of our Counsellours; Have appointed and assigned you Six, Five, Four, Three or Two of you, our Commissioners: to Enquire by the Oaths of twelve good and leful men of our Counties of *Oxford, Bark, Warwick, Leycestre, Bedford, Buck and Northampton*, and every of them as wel within the Liberties as without; and by al other Ways and Means that you can devise, wherby the Truth may the better appear, of al and singular Transgressors, Breakers and Offenders of the said Statutes or any of them, or any Part or Parcel of them; And of al and singular Articles and Circumstances contained in the Instructions hereunto annexed.

And therefore We straitly charge you and every of you, as ye wil answer to us, God, and the Commonwealth of this our Realm, that you diligently attend and apply the Premisses, and execute the same earnestly and with effect.

WE also streitly Charge and Command our Sheriffs and Justices of our Peace, of our said Shires, Excheators, and al and singular other our Officers, Ministers and Subjects; That from time to time, and at al Times, they be attendaunt, aiding and assisting you in th'execution of the Premisses. And that the said Sheriffs from time to time do cause to come and appear before you Six, Five, Four, Three or Two of you, at such times and Places as you shal appoint, as many and such good and leful men of their Bailifwick, by whom the Truth may be the better known and come to light, in and concerning the Premises, as you shal think requisite and necessary. And we wol and command also, al and singular Keepers of our Records in al and every our Courts, and the Clerks and Ministers of the same Courts and every of them, that upon your, our said Commissioners, or two of your Letters to them directed, they
from

from time to time do make out in Writing, and deliver unto you with al Expedition, the Copies of al and singular such our Records, as ye or two of you shal think meet and requisite for the better Execution of this our Commission.

And further, We give unto you Six, Five, Four, Three or Two of you, ful Power and Authority to Commit to Ward al and singular Persons, whom ye shal find Rebellious, disobedient, stubborn, obstinate, hindring or letting by any means, the Execution of this our Commission; there to remain without Bail or Mainprize, til our Plesure be further known. And what ye shal do in the Premisses, We wol that ye certify us in our Court of Chancery indelayedly together with this our Commission: In Witnes wherof we have caused these our Letters to be made Patents. Witnes our self at *Westminster* the first day of *June* in the second Year of our Reign.

Q.

The Charge of Mr. John Hales, one of the Commissioners, at their Assembly for the Execution of the Commission for Redress of Inclosures.

LIKEWISE as when a Man is very sore sick, and in daunger ^{MSS. perit} of his Life, if he send for a Physician, who studieth and tak- ^{Amic.} eth great pains for his Health, and prepareth wholsome and healthful Medicins; yet if he do not receive them, they can do him no good; Even so good Brethren, when any Inconveniencies, Mischieves and Hurts happen in the Commonwealth, if the Kings Majesty, his Council, and the Parlament with their great Study, Toyl and Labour, prepare and make never so good Laws to resist and put them away; yet if they be not received, obeyed, nor put in Execution, they do not profit. Experience declareth the same to be most true. There have been many good Laws made for the Maintenaunce of Houses and Husbandry and Tillage, as in the 4th year of the Reign of K. Henry VII. and the 7th year of the Reign of the Kings Majesties Father, and in the 25th year of his Reign: That no man should keep upon his own Lands or Farms, or upon his Farms only, above the number of two Thousand Sheep. And in the same year, that no man should have and occupy any more than two Houses of Husbandry in one Town, Parish or Hamlet. And in the 27th year of his Graces Reign, that those that should have the Scites of any of the Monasteries that were suppressed by Act of Parlament, being under the yearly value of three hundred Marks, should keep honest and continual House and Household upon the same, and occupy as much of the Demeasnes in Tillage, as was occupied by any means with Tillage within twenty Years before the same Act. Yet because the same Laws were not reverently obeyed, and obediently observed,

we see they do little or no good. Towns, Villages and Parishes do daily decay in great Numbers: Houses of Husbandry and poor mens Habitations be utterly destroyed every where, and in no small Number; Husbandry and Tillage, which is the very Paunch of the Commonwealth, that is, that that nourisheth the whole Body of the Realm, greatly abated, and finally the Kings Subjects wonderfully diminished; as those can well declare that confer the new Books of the Musters with the Old, or with the Chronicles.

And al this groweth through the great Dropsy and the insatiable Desire of Riches of some Men, that be so much given to their own private Profit, that they pass nothing on the Commonwealth. They love themselves so much, that they forget their Neighbours and Christen Brethren. They remember not that we be members of one Body, and that, if every Member should pull and snatch from the other as much as he could, al the whole Body must needs perish. Surely, good People, if the Medicines that be prepared already, to resist, remove and heal this most hurtful Disease of the Commonwealth, *privat Profit*, I call it, that is to say, the Laws be not justly and truly put in execution; it is to be feared, yea, it is most certain, that within short time we shall have no Commonwealth, but rather for lack of People to defend us against our Enemies, we shall be a Prey for them. Is it not a pitiful Hearing, Good People, that Man which was ordained of God to be a Comfort for man, and as it were a *God* (as the Proverb is) that is to say, ordained to do good, is now clean changed, and is become a Wolf, a Devourer and Consumer of Men; One that cannot be contented that his Neighbours should live with him and by him?

Verily, Good People, if Men would consider by natural Reason, what Hurt followeth thereby, not only to others, but what at length shall chance to themselves, it is to be thought that they would not so much give themselves to self love and their own Profit. What shall it profit the Rich man to have his Chests full of Gold and Silver, if he lack Meat and Drink? This the poor Husbandman doth provide. What can his Riches avail, if his Enemies go about to assault or invade him? He must have other to help, or else he cannot resist: Which in this Realm hath always, til of late, been the Commons of the Realm. And by reason they be now greatly decayed and diminished, a great Occasion wherof hath been the Destruction of their Houses and Habitations, and the great Dearth and Prices of Victual without any just Cause, both the Kings Majesty that Dead is, and the Kings Majesty that now is, was and is forced to send for, and hire Strangers, *Almains*, *Italians* and *Spanyards*. This thing also caused the King that Dead is to make so many Castles and Bulwarks by the Sea side, as he did. And his Charges by these Means and Occasions waxing daily greater and greater, he was of necessity driven to ask and take so great Subsidies and Taxes of his Subjects, as he did. Which I doubt not but ye do and will consider. And whensoever the Kings Majesty shall have need of your Aid and Help, either with your Persons or with your Goods, ye will gladly like most faithful and loving Subjects declare the same. But what avail-

availeth the Richman to have his Felicity and Heaven in this World, and to have Infelicity and Hel in the World to come?

The Parable that is recited in the Gospel of the Rich Man and the poor Lazar, if we did wel consider of it, would make al men tremble, that be so given to the inordinate Desire of Riches. But it is to be feared that a great many think not that there is any other World. If they did, they would do otherwise than they do. Or else they think, as we were made to believe in time past, that if we live never so leudly, do never so much evil, they shal with Masses and other mens Prayers after their Death purchase Heaven. Which Persuasion and Doctrin, as it was most ungodly, and contrary to Gods Word, so it was most hurtful, and the Destruction of every Commonwealth. It is even the right way to let in al Vices, and to put out al Vertue. For Vices be more agreable with our corrupt nature, than Vertue. And surely, if men mark wel the Course of the World, they shal easily perceive, that this great Greedines is plagued here in this World, of God. We se a great many given to this filthy Desire of gathering together Goods, and yet God wil not suffer them to enjoy the Fruits therof, and to use it to their Commodity. Some be sick and wil scarce spend one Peny to recover their Healths. Some scarce once a Week wil refresh their Bodies with a good Morfel of Meat, if they shal pay for it themselves. And others spare, to thintent they would leave great Possessions to their Children, and make their Family noble. But we se, how *man purposeth and God disposeth*, as the old saying is. Many times such men have Children, that before their Fathers be scarce laid in the Grave, consume and wast away on Harlots, unthrifty Games and lewd Company, that the Father got before in long time, and with great Penury. Evil gotten, worse spent. It is no strange thing. Such evil Heirs be no black Swans or white Crows, but almost as common as white Swans, or black Crows. The just Plague of those that pas not how their Children be brought up, so they may leave them Goods and Lands enough.

For Gods sake, Good People, let us take heed; let us not provoke the Ire and Plague of God on us; but having received the knowledg of his Word, let us live accordingly. Let our good Living and Works appear to the World. Let our Love and Charity be abundant to our poor Neighbours. That other men may speak wel of us, and say no longer; that we be Talkers of Gods Word and no Followers. If we do not, no doubt but he wil take that his most holy Word from us, and give it to a People that shal bring forth the true Fruit of it. And then wil he plague us with Sword, Famine and Pestilence, as he hath promised those that do not Esteem, but contemne his Word. Let us begin, good People to strive who may do most good; and let us no longer study, how to do our Neighbours and our Country harm. Let us have this godly Opinion with us, that nothing can be profitable that is not godly and honest; nor nothing godly and honest, wherby our Neighbours and Christen Brethren, or the Commonwealth of our Country is hurted or harmed. Let us endeavour and give our selves to the Obedience and Observacion of good Laws, and no longer to the Imagination

and Practice, how to subvert and break good Laws. Let it appear that we desire and follow that that is good, for the Love that we bear to Good, and not for Fear of the Laws or Punishment.

Howbeit as we hear, there be a great many that now fall in Disputation, whether these Statuts be necessary or profitable for the Commonwealth; and so to make Controversy. But it becometh no honest Subject so to do, when Laws be made, we may not disobey them. If we should, and permit to every mans Judgment, what is good, what is evil, we should never be in Certeinty. But because there be some, that neither have the Fear of God before their Eyes, nor yet of the Laws, they be so drowned in Covetousnes, and this insatiable Desire of the vile Muck of this transitory World; not passing how they come by it, so they may have it; the Kings Majesty being the Life, Heart and Head of this Realm, and of us his Subjects, the Lord Protectors Grace and the Lords of the Council, considering that his Majesty is the Minister of God here in Earth, and hath the Sword, that is Authority given him of God to punish those that will not do willingly that that is good and godly, minding the Preservation and Wealth of this his Realm, and that his poor Subjects should not be oppressed by the Rich, and intending to set such an Order and Stay in the Commonwealth, as the Poor with the Rich, and one of us with another, may live together every man in his Degree and Vocation; Hath sent us here among you, and layd upon us a very great Burthen, to see his Commission diligently and earnestly executed, even as we will answer to God, his Highnes, and the Commonwealth of his Realm.

And by thauclority therof we have sent for to appear before us, and have Sworn you, not by *Al Saints*, but as ye trust to be saved by the Merits of Christs Passion; to make diligent Enquiry and true Presentment of such Things as we shal charge you with. Wherunto we require you al, specially you that be Sworn, to give diligent and attentive Ear, that ye may the better do your Office and Duty.

Then was read the Commission and Proclamation. And then Mr. Hales proteded, as follows.

Good People, by this Commission and Proclamation, ye may perceive the Zele and Love that the Kings Majestie, the L. Protectors Grace, and the rest of his most Honorable Council have to the Commonwealth of this his Realm, and Us his Subjects. By the same also ye may perceive generally the Cause of our Coming, and your Assemble here. And albeit it extendeth to five principal Points, that is, for the Decay of Towns, Villages, Houses of Husbandry, Converting arable Ground into Pasture, the Multitude of Sheep, the heaping together of Farmes, the not keeping Hospitality and Household on the Scites of the Monasteries and Religious Houses, that were dissolved by Statute made in the xxviith year of the Reign of the Kings Majesty that dead is, and Occupying of Tillage on the Demeans of the same Monasteries: Yet doth al together shoot but at one Mark, and prick but at one Prick; that is, to remove the Self
Love

Love that is in many Men, to take away the inordinate Desire of Riches wherewith many be cumbred, to expel and quench the insatiable Thirst of ungodly Greedines, wherewith they be diseased, and to plant brotherly Love among us, to encrease Love and godly Charity among us, to make us know and remember that we al, Poor and Rich, Noble and Ignoble, Gentlemen and Husbandmen, and al other of whatsoever State they be, be but Members of one Body Mystical of our Saviour Christ, and of the Body of the Realm.

For as by natural Experience we find it to be true, that if any one part of a Mans Body be grieved, or the Bloud by any maner of means be let, that it cannot come to it, it is a great Pain to al the whole Body; nor it is lusty and able to do his Office: so ought we to consider and remember in the State of the Body of the Realm; if the poorest sort of the People which be Members of the same Body as well as the Rich, be not provided and cherished in their Degree, it cannot be but a great Trouble of the Body and a Decay of the Strength of the Realm. Surely, Good People, methinketh that if men would know, how much this ungodly Desire of Worldly Things, and the unlesful getting and heaping together of Riches, were hated of God, how hurtful and dangerous for the Commonwealth of the Realm it is, and what a Vertue the Mean in al things is; these Laws, nor a great many more that be, needed not. Gods Word is ful of Threats and Curses against these kind of Greedines. 'Woe! be unto you, saith he, that cannot be contented that other men should live with you and by you; but put men from their Livings, join House to House, and couple Field to Field; What do you mean? Think ye to live alone in the midst of the Earth? No, no, the People be mine. I have a care and respect to them, I will not suffer them to be devoured at your hands. It is not your Policy; it is not your Craft; it is not your Riches, that is able to defend you against me. I have the Cure of the poor People; I am their Defender; I am their Ayder; and I will not suffer them to perish. If ye be not good to the Poor, I will not be good to you. If ye labour never so much, and have not my help, your Labour is but in vain. When ye look for Plenty, I will send Scarcity. For it is not your Labour, but it is my Blessing, which falleth on them that do my Commandments and Wil, that maketh Plenty of al things.

One of the Causes, why God plagued and burned the great City of *Sodom* was, the Greedines of the rich men, and the little Mercy, Pity, and Compassion they had to their poor Neighbours: They thought al too little for themselves. Therefore, good People, let us consider and remember it. Let us not willingly go about to provoke the Ire and Plague of God on us. Let us remember, that our Time in this World is but short. Let us use this short time to Gods Honor and Glory. It hath pleased him to send among us the Light of his Gospel, which doth teach us how we should love, honor, and trust in him; how we should and ought to love our Neighbours as our selves. Let us not go about to gather things together with the hurt of any other. For it is prohibited both by Gods Laws, the Law of Nature, and Mans Law. Let it not appear that we have received the Grace of God, and the Knowledg of his

Word

Word in vain; but let our Doings be so charitable, that al the World may se and perceive that as Gods Word doth teach us to be al one, so we be al one. Wherby we may provoke those that now hate Gods Word, to love and embrace the same, and to glorify God with us.

Thus have ye heard, Good People, how much God abhorreth this Greediness, and how he hath in time past and hereafter intendeth to punish the same. Now wil I tel you partly how hurtful it is to the Commonwealth. Likewise as it hath pleased God to make the Body of divers Parts and Members; and every Part and Member hath his distinct and proper Office, as to the Ey to se, the Nose to smell, the Ear to hear, the Tongue to speak, the Hand to feel, and the Feet to go; so hath it pleased God also to ordeine in the Commonwealth divers Degrees of People; some to be Governours, Rulers and Defenders of it, as the Kings Majesty, his Council, and Nobility and Gentlemen, and others to be his Victuallers and Purveyors of things necessary for the Use and Sustainence of Man, as Craftsmen and Husbandmen. And as if my Hand, or any other Member of the Body could by his Craft or Policy, as they cal it, find the Means to get the Bloud of al the rest of the Members to it, it should be an Occasion that al the whole Body should shortly perish; so likewise, when Men in a Commonwealth go about to gather as much as they can, and to get it they care not How; not considering whether by their Gain any Hurt should come to their Neighbours, or to the Commonwealth; not only others, but they themselves should shortly perish. What availeth a man to have his House ful of Gold, and be not able to keep it with his Force against his Enemies? So what shal al our Goods avail us, if we be not able to defend us from our Enemies?

The Force and Puissance of the Realm, consisteth not only in Riches, but chiefly in the Multitude of People. But it appeareth, Good People, that the People of this Realm, our native Country, is greatly decayed through the Greediness of a few Men in Comparison, and by this ungodly means of gathering together Goods, by pulling down of Towns and Houses, which we ought al to Lament; Where there were in few Years ten or twelve thousand People, there be now scarce four thousand. Where there were a Thousand, now scarce three hundred; and in many Places, where there were very many able to defend our Country from Landing of our Enemies, now almost none. Sheep and Cattle that were ordeined to be eaten of Men, hath eaten up the Men; not of their own nature, but by the help of Men. Is it not a pitiful Case, that there should be so little Charity among Men? Is it not a sorrowful Hearing, that one Englishman should be set to destroy his Countryman? The Places where poor Men dwelt, clearly destroyed: Lands improved to so great Rents, or so excessive Fines taken, that the poor Husbandmen cannot live. Al things at this present, saving Corn (which by reason that is in poor Mens hands who cannot keep it, is good cheap) be so dear as never they were: Victual and al other Things that be necessary for Mans Use. And yet, as it is said, there was never more Cattle, specially Sheep, than there is at this present. But the

the Cause of the Dearth is, that those have it, that may chose, whether they wil sel it or no; and wil not sel it, but at their own prizes. Al Corn would be likewise, if it were in their Hands, and might be wel kept.

Therefore the Kings Majesty by th'advice of my Lord Protectors Grace, and the rest of the Council, thinking, that if these Laws might be put in Execution, many things amiss in the Commonwealth should be reformed, hath sent his Commissioners into these Parties: Wherupon we have caused you to appear before us, and have sworn you, requiring to give good ear to your Charge.

Instructions given by the Kings Majesty to his Commissioners, appointed for the Execution of certain Statuts made in the Fourth year of the Reign of K. Henry VII. and the Seventh, the Twenty fifth and the Twenty seventh Years of the Reign of K. Henry VIII. to be enquired of in the Shires and Places in the Commission hereunto annexed, expressed.

First, ye shal Enquire what Towns, Villages and Hamlets have been decayed and laid down by Inclosures into Pastures, within the Shire contained in your Instructions, sith the Fourth year of the Reign of K. Henry VII.

Item, What Lands were then in Tillage at the Time of the said Inclosure, and what then in Pasture.

Item, How many Plows, by reason of the said Inclosure, be laid down.

Item, How many Meases, Cottages and Dwelling Houses be fallen in decay, and the Inhabitants of the same departed from their Habitation there, by reason of the same Inclosure: And how much Land belonged unto the said Tenants.

Item, By whom the said Inclosures were made, and how long agoe. And if they were made within the same Time: And of what yearly Rent and Profit they be.

Item, Who hath now the State of Inheritance, and the Profits of the same Inclosure; and of whom the Lands be holden.

Item, How many new Parks be now made, sith the said Time.

Item, What Arable Land at the Time of the making the said Parks, were imparked within the same.

Item, How many Ploughs, Houses and Inhabitations be decayed by imparking of the said Ground.

Item, How many Parks within the said Shire be enlarged, sith the said Time; and how much of the same Ground was then arable and put in Tillage.

Item, How many Ploughs, Houses and Inhabitations be decayed by reason of the said Imparking.

Item, If any Person hath or doth keep above the number of two Thousand Sheep, besides Lambs of one Years Age; and whether he hath kept the same upon his own Lands, or upon his Farm Lands, or upon both or otherwise by Covyn or Fraud: and how long he hath kept them:

Item;

Item, How many Sheep ye think have been necessary for the only Expences of such Persons Household for one Year.

Item, If any Person hath letten any Lands to farm, or by Copy of Court-rol reserving the Sheep Pasture of the same to himself: Or if any Person hath taken from his Tenants their Commons, whereby they be not able to breed and keep their Cattel and maintain their Husbandry, as they were in time past.

Item, If any Person hath had or occupied above the number of two Houses or Tenements of Husbandry lying in one Town, Village, Hamlet or Tithing; And how long he hath occupied the same.

Item, Whether such Person hath taken the same in Farm, for the Term of Life, Years at Wil, by Indenture or Copy of Court-rol or otherwise; sith the Feast of the Nativity of our Lord God *Millmo, Quingentesimo Tricesimo quinto*; And where such Person dwelleth.

Item, If every Person, Body Politic or Corporate, that hath, by Gift, Grant, Lease or Demise, the Scite or Precinct and Demeasnes of any Monastery, Priory or Religious House, dissolved by Vertue of the Act of Parliament made in the 27th year of the Reign of the King that dead is, do keep an honest continual House and Household in the same Scite or Precinct, and do occupy yearly as much of the same Demeasnes in Ploughing and Tillage of Husbandry, as was commonly used to be kept by the Governours, Abbots or Priors of the same Houses, Monasteries or Priories, or by their Farmour or Farmours occupying the same, within the Time of Twenty Years next before the making of the same Statute.

Item, That you, our said Commissioners, for your better Instructions, take with you the Copies of al such Offices as were found concerning the Premises in the ninth and tenth years of the Reign of our most Noble Father K. *Henry VIII.*

These be our Instructions, and the Articles of your Charge generally: Howbeit we think it very good to open it more specially. For as there be many good Men, that take great pains to study to devise good Laws for the Commonwealth; so be there a great many, that do with as great pains and study, labour to defeat them; and as the common saying is, to find Gapps and starting Holes. But first, to declare unto you what is meant by this Word, *Inclosures*. It is not taken where a Man doth enclose and hedge in his own proper Ground, where no Man hath Commons. For such Inclosure is very beneficial to the Commonwealth: It is a cause of great Encrease of Wood: But it is meant therby, when any Man hath taken away and enclosed any other mens Commons, or hath pulled down Houses of Husbandry, and converted the Lands from Tillage to Pasture. This is the meaning of this Word: and so we pray you to remember it.

To defeat these Statuts, as we be informed, some have not pulled down their Houses, but maintain them; howbeit no Person dwelleth therin; or if there be, it is but a Shepherd or a Milkmaid; and convert the Lands from Tillage to Pasture: And some about one hundred Acres of Ground, or more or less, make a furrow and sow that; and the rest they till not, but pasture with their Sheep.
And

And some take the Lands from their Houses, and occupy them in Husbandry; but let the Houses out to Beggars and old poor People. Some to colour the Multitude of their Sheep, father them on their Children, Kinsfolks, and Servants. All which be but only Crafts and Subtilties to defraud the Laws: Such as no good Man will use, but rather abhor. For every good Man will direct his Study to observe the Laws rather than break them, and say with himself thus; I know the Makers of these Laws meant good to the Commonwealth. Men be but men; they cannot see all things: They be no Gods; they cannot make things perfect. Therefore I will rather do that they meant, altho' without danger of the Law I might do otherwise, and I will withal my heart do good to my Country, albeit it be against my private Profit, rather than hurt it. And therefore if there be any such that use these Tricks, albeit they be not comprehended in the Letter of the Law, I pray you let us know him, and present you his Name.

Thus have we declared unto you the Causes of our Coming and your Assemble here. Which is only to Enquire of such Things as we have been charged with. If ye wil do your Office therein as becometh good Men, that is to say, without Partiality or Favour, accuse and present those that be to be accused and presented for offending of these Statuts: and in these Enormities, we doubt not but ye shal do God as great and as acceptable Sacrifice as may be. For hereby shal his Glory, and the Fruit of his Word, which is Charity and Love to our Neighbours, be published and set forth to the World: Ye shal do the King the greatest Service that can be devised. For hereby his People and Subjects (in the Multitude of whom his Honour and Safty consisteth) shal be encreased. And ye shal shew your selves good Members of the Body and the Commonwealth of the Realm, that covet and desire as much the Wealth and Commodities of your Christen Brethren and Neighbours, as ye do your own.

Besides, it is not unlike, but that these great Fines for Lands and Emprovement of Rents shal abate, and all things wax better cheap: xx and xxx Eggs for a peny, and the rest after the rate as hath been in times past; and the poor Craftsmen may live, and set their Wares at reasonable prices; And Noblemen and Gentlemen that have not emprowed nor Enhaunced their Rents, nor were Sheep-masters, nor Graffers, but lived like Noblemen and Gentlemen, shal be the better able to keep good Hospitality among you, and keep Servants about them, as they have done in time past. And that, sith ye shal thus serve God, the King and the Commonwealth, ye wil put away all Fear of any Person, Land Lord, Master or other. For God, the King and the Commonwealth, if ye serve them truly and faithfully, as they be able to defend you against the Devil, the World and private Profit; so may you be sure they wil suffer no Person to do you injury. And considering the manifold Benefits that may come by truly executing therof, we also require and advertise you, that for no Favour ye go about to excuse or leave unpresented, those that ye may know to have offended: You shal do your selves much Hurt by running into wilful perjury; and indeed nothing profit

them whom ye intend to gratify. For we our selves, if need shal require, wil take the Pains to view every thing particularly.

And therefore for Gods sake, Good people, do as becometh honest Men, declare the Truth, and nothing but the Truth. And on th'other side we require you on Gods behalf, Command you in the Kings Name, and exhort you as your Friends, that ye wil not abuse this the great Goodnes of God, the Kings Majesty and his high Council herein offered: that is to say, that ye make not this godly thing an Instrument of Malice to be revenged on any Man to whom ye bear displeasure. For things grounded on Malice, God wil never suffer to prosper. Besides, we charge you and Command you al, that be present on the Kings behalf, and that ye likewise Charge al your Neighbours, that be absent, that ye, nor none of them go about to take upon you to be Executors of the Statuts; to cut up mens hedges, and to put down their Enclosures, or by any ways to hurt them. For this is not your Office to do. Ye shal highly offend God, break the Kings Laws, and be an Occasion that that Good that might, and is like to follow, shal not take place, nor come to that good End that is desired. But let it appear to the World that ye desire a charitable and quiet Reformation by the Order only of the Law: Whereunto we ought and be bound to be obedient. Be ye not Breakers of the Law; while ye go about to have Vices reformed by the Law. Accuse and present you justly those that be Offenders of these Statuts. For this is only our Duty to wil you and yours to do: and let the Law work his effect, power and office afterward.

And by this means we trust in God, that as it hath pleased him to put into the Kings and his Councils Heads to begin this matter, so wil he give them Grace to finish and accomplish the same; and to do greater things to his Glory, the Kings Honor and Safty, and the universal Benefit of us al. And unles we wil shew our selves unkind, we cannot but honor God, and give him thanks, that it hath pleased him to send us such a King, such a Protector, and such a Council; that only be bent and enclined to do the People good. Doubtles, Good People, where the People love and honour God, favour and embrace his Word, and live accordingly, to them doth God send good and gracious Rulers. And on th'other side where they favour not, nor love his Word, to them he sendeth unpitiful and hard Rulers, such as only shal seek their own Plesures, Benefits and Commodities, not passing on their poor Subjects. And therefore, Good People, let us love, favour and embrace Gods Word, which thing only is the Cause that this godly Act is set forward. It is the general Comfort of al Christian men, and specially of the poor. It forbiddeth the Rich to oppress the Poor, and willeth and commandeth him to be merciful to him. It declareth us to be members of one Body, and biddeth us to love together like brother and brother. It teacheth the Magistrates their Offices towards their Inferiors, and commandeth al People to be obedient to their Superiors. It sheweth, how God rewardeth weldoers both here, and with everlasting Felicity, and punisheth Malefactors both in this World and with eternal Damnation. And therefore, Good People, let us not only love and embrace Gods Word, but alsoal such as be the Furtherers, Preachers and Teachers hereof. Thus I make an end, and God save the King.

R.

A Discourse made by William Thomas, Esq; for the Kings Use; Whether it be Expedient to vary with Time.

WHAT Time is; Solomon in the Third of Ecclesiastes doth doth sufficiently describe, including al things under the Sun within Time. And as Petrarch saith in the *Triumph of Time*, *Cott. Libr. Vespas. D. 18.*

*Passan votre grandezze, e vostre pompe,
Passan le Signorie, passano i regni:
Ogni cosa mortal tempo interrompe.*

Wherefore seing Time is both the Father, and Devourer of al things, and consequently that nothing is to man more precious than Time; it followeth, that he who in Time can take his Time is most happy in this World. But because we se the World to depend in maner altogether upon contraries, as Rest and Moving, Lack and Having, Light and Darknes, White and Black, Silence and Noise, Sweet and Sowre, Hot and Cold, Light and Heavy, Soft and Hard, Moist and Dry, with infinite others in such wise, as every thing hath his Contrary; therefore it seemeth a great Difficulty unto man, (as indeed it is) how among so many Discords he may gather any Profit of his Time.

For when al is reckoned; no man findeth thing in this World more joyful, nor more acceptable unto him than *Prosperity*: Which he esteemeth so much that he refuseth no Labour, nor in maner any peril to attain it. And yet hath this Prosperity proved such a Lye, Flatterer and Deceiver of men, that when they have most rejoyced and trusted in it, even the Prosperity it self hath been cause of their extreme Sorrow and Adversity: as by infinite Examples it is manifest. How suddenly was the Glory of *Balthazar*, in the Fifth of *Daniel*, plagued of God.

For indeed this Prosperity (or humane Felicity, as ye list to call it) is not esteemed Prosperity til it be at the highest; and then it seemeth of ordinary, that when we reckon to be most happy, suddenly some contrary happeneth. So that the esteemed Prosperity encreaseth the Adversity, and is rather a Beginning of Mishap than any Felicity indeed. Which th'Astronomers ascribe unto the Planets, because al things in Earth, as they say, are governed by the Motions of the Stars. And as when they be in a Sextile or Trine Aspect they are accounted prosperous, so in the Quadrate or Opposite they are unfortunate. And their Courtes being such as in a Moment they leap from one to the other, it is no mervail (say they) thomens Fortune do seemably vary.

Philip King of *Macedon*, when he had in one day gotten the Victory in the *Olympiades* Playes, and in the Battail both, prayed God to recompence that great Hap with some small Evil. Whereupon he

was by chance shot into the Eye with an Arrow : and so lost his Eye: Accounting himself happy in the midst of his Prosperity to encounter with a smal Misfortune. For as the Stone that is thrown into the Air falleth the more vehemently the higher he is thrown ; so most commonly it fareth by Mans Prosperity, the higher he seemeth to climb, the greater is his Overthrow. And if in Prosperity (to the which al Men covet to aspire) we find this difficulty or Peril, wherunto then shal man apply his Time?

Truly as the Musician useth sometime a Flat, and sometime a Sharp Note, sometime a Short, and sometime a Long, to make his Song perfect: So saith *Macchiavelli*, ought Man to frame his Proceedings unto his Time. And albeit that Man cannot so directly concord them, as to make them always agree, like the Musicians divers Notes, because some Men are led of Vehemence, and some of Respect and Fear ; in the one or other wherof al Men most commonly do err: Yet he is to be esteemed the wisest and happiest Man, that in proceeding maketh least Discords with Time. And as the Physician to the remedy of Sicknes ministreth unto his Patients both Medicines and Diets, other than they should receive, when they were whole ; so Man in his Affairs should procede according to his Time, altering as the Occasion requireth; and not to persevere obstinately in one Opinion, how good or how profitable soever it had proved in other Time before.

Fabius Maximus (of whom I have spoken heretofore) was for his Time a wonderful Captain, and the whole Preservation of the whole Commonwealth, because his Fortune was to spring in a Time conformable to his Nature. For *Annibal* being newly arrived in *Italy* with a courageous Army, and having obtained the Victory of sundry fore battails, was not any more to be foughten withal, as wel for the respect of his own encreased Strength, as for the weakness of his often abated Enemies. So that against him in that time there was none so meet a Captain as *Fabius*; Who with prolonging of Time decreased *Annibals* Treasure and Power, But afterwards when the *Romans* were at a better Stay, and hable as wel to offend as to defend, then was *Scipio* sent into *Afric* with an Army, to bring those Wars to an end: which his Time and Fortune served him to do. And yet was *Fabius* at that Time of opinion, that *Scipio* should not go, cleaving always to his own maner of Proceeding. So that if *Fabius* had then been Prince or Governor, in such sort as his Opinion must have had place, *Annibal* might for him have been yet in *Italy*. Wherin they do commonly err, that have before prospered in their Opinion. The hap wherof maketh them so to hope the like, that in maner it shal be impossible to dissuade them. Which indeed is one of the greatest Causes of the common Mishapp that followeth Prosperity. For when Men wil observe one direct, or (as I may cal it) obstinate Proceeding, if the Time come that shal require the contrary, it followeth their Proceeding must perish.

I mean not, that any Man should vary in Amity, turn from Vertue to Vice, or to alter in any such thing as requireth Constancy; but touching the other publick or private Doings, I think nothing more necessary, than to vary with the Time.

Alexander

Alexander the Lacedemonian, being a notable valiant Prince, used nevertheless in al his Doings more Policy than Force: Wherof his Familiars would sometimes reprove him, saying, that he degenerated from *Hercules*, of whom he was descended. But he smiling would answer, *That where he could not play the Lion, it was no shame to play the Fox*. Which of some Men is condemned as a vile and vicious thing. For *Quintus Curtius*, upon the Answer of *Alexander the Great*, unto *Parmenio*, maketh a great Discourse; Declaring how *Parmenio* counsilled *Alexander* to oppress his Enemy by Policy. Wherunto *Alexander* answered, that if he were *Parmenio* he would so do, but being *Alexander* it behoved him liberally to Fight, and justly to overcome.

Indeed, whensoever a Prince may openly without peril attain either the Victory over his Enemy, or his Purpose with them that be indifferent, his proceeding ought to have no Craft. But when either his Power serveth not, or that his Contrary practiseth subtilly (as most commonly Princes do at these Days) then, mee seemeth, Policy is no Vice. For al Men are not *Alexanders*. No, nor *Alexander* was not himself at length. Even as he was to be commended in the Vertuous overcoming of his Enemy, (if Vertue it may be called) when his Power served him therunto: So was he to be dispraised in the unnatural misusing of his Friends, when with them and by their Help he had passed so many perils. Wherfore at length his own Prosperity bred his own Destruction.

Philip De Comines writeth, that at the Treaty of the Peace beside *Conflans*, *Louys the XIth French King*, and the Conte *Charolois*, Son to the Duke of *Burgoyne*, met simply in the Fields: and walking together alone, in treating of the Matter, the King led the Earl into a Bulwark of his before *Paris*, or ever the Earl took heed: And nevertheless agreed with him, and sent him back again unto his Army, that then was wonderfully disturbed for his Absence and Danger. The Courtesy wherof as I believe encouraged the same French King afterwards to put himself in the Duke of *Burgoyne's* power at *Peronne*; where he found great Cause to repent him of his Folly. For whilest he lay in the Castle, the Duke was in a thousand Thoughts, whether he should retain him still, or do worse. And if the King had denyed any of his Requests, it had indeed proved evil with him.

Thus it appeareth that no Man ought with his own Nature to mesure the Nature of another Man; and especially of Princes, who are not reckoned Wise, when they lose either Time or Advantage. And therefore *Philip de Comines* alloweth them not to meet together, unles it be in Youth, when their Heads are given to Pleasures. But in cases of Treaty for Peace, in Time of War, or for Interest in time of Peace, when the Power of the one may be suspect to the other, let never Princes meet. No, the Jealousy of Estate is so great, that when a Prince may advoide any peril either by Foresight or by Policy; let him never tempt God, for Miracles are rare.

Isabell Queen of Naples, being expelled the Realm by the first *Alphonse*, then intituled King therof, made recourse unto *Eugen*, then Bishop of *Rome*, for aid to recover her Estate. Who in her favour sent

sent a Patriarch, called *Vitelesco*, with Men of War against *Alphonse*. And albeit the Patriarch for a while prospered; yet at length near unto *Salerno*, the King gate him in such a straight, as neither he nor his could escape. Then fell he to Treaty, and promised the King al his Request. Wherupon Truce was taken, and he let go. But immediately after, knowing the King upon Trust of the Truce to be void of Suspicion, he turned so suddenly upon him, that on *Christmas-day*, the King being at Mas, word came that the Patriarch was at hand, which notwithstanding, the King of Superstition would needs hear out his Mas; and so obstinately persevered, that the Patriarch came indeed, fought with the Kings Guard at the Church Door, slew divers of them, took al the Kings Plate and Cariages, and so hotly pursued the King himself, that with much ado he escaped to *Capua*.

Wherin like as the Patriarch shewed himself a true Member of the wicked Church, so did the King err in two ways. First, in suffering the Enemy to escape, when he had him at the Advantage: And after, in tempting God with a Trust that needed not. As *Cicero* saith, *Ne offeramus nos periculis sine causa*.

Wherefore among Princes, of al things the Time and Advantage is to be observed, in such sort as having the Enemy at an After-deal, either constrain him by Force to yield unto thy Profit, or deal with him so liberally, that he may both know what Case he is in, and how much Kindnes thou deservest of him. Which latter almost is not to be used; Because Princes have less Confines to their Wills, and less Amity to their Neighbours, than in time past hath been accustomed.

Titus Veturius Calvinus, and *Spurius Posthumus*, being Consuls of *Rome*, happened with both their Armies to arrive in a Vally called *Caudina*, where their Enemies, the *Samnites*, stopped the Straights in such sort, as *Livy* writeth, that the *Romans*, lamenting their Misfortune, said, *Ne Ferrum quidem ad bene moriendum oblaturus est Hostis: sedens bellum conficiebat*. In which Case the *Samnites* astonished with their unhoped Fortune, wist not what counsil to use. Wherefore *Caius Herennius* their Captain, sent home to his Father, *Herennius Pontius* an aged Wise Man, to hear his Opinion: Who understanding the Case, answered, they should freely let the *Romans* go; without offending them in any thing. Which Advice the *Samnites* liked not, and therefore sent to him again: Then he bad Cut them al to pieces, and let not one escape. These two answers so contrary, made them believe he doted, by reason of his Age. Wherefore they sent for him, and being come, asked what he meant. Mary, quoth he, if ye do the first, your Liberality shal establish a perfect Peace and Amity with a People more puissant than your self. And if ye do the Second, destroying these two Armies, ye abase their Power, so that in many years they shal not again be hable to annoy you. Other Council, quoth he, I know none. And being then demaunded, what he thought of a mean between these two Extremities, in letting them go upon such Covenants as are wont to be taken of Men overcome; He answered, so shall ye neither purchase Friends, nor rid you of Enemies. For ye preserve them that
ye

ye have offended; yea, and further provoke them with Shame. And it proved true indeed. For it had been better for the *Samnites* at that time to have been discomfited of the *Romans* in battail, than to have let them go as they did, with so shameful a Peace, as by the Proces of the History it appeareth.

In effect it fareth with Princes in this Case, as in Expences it fareth with the prodigal Man: Who of his Treasure gathereth but Thanks, and perchance Scorn; and when he hath all spent, his most Gain is miserable Pity. Wherefore the wise Prince loseth neither his Time nor Advantage; as *K. Edward III.* when he had lien a year before *Calais*, and was challenged by the *French King* to fight, answered, *No; I have lien here these twelve months to my great Charges. And if I should now put that in adventure that I am sure of, I should commit a great Folly.* Which Answer proceeded not of Cowardise. For before that time he refused not the Fight at *Vironfosse*, nor the Battails of *Cane*, *Blancketake*, nor *Cressy*: but he would loose neither the Time he had spent there, nor the Advantage of winning the Town, which within few days after was yielded unto him. And albeit that he varied from his Nature to refuse any Fight, yet because the Time required so, it was rather Honorable than otherwise.

Loose therefore neither Advantage nor Time, the Winning whereof is accounted the greatest matter among Princes; like as the loss is by Example proved to be of no less Moment. And let him not think to prosper in this World, that wil not vary in his Proceedings according to the Time. For as there is nothing more pleasant than the Concord of Musick, nor nothing more displeasing than the Discord thereof; so when Doings and Time agree, there is nothing more happy, nor when they Disagree, nothing more unhappy: having in them much more Variation than Tunes in Music have.

S.

A second Discourse made by the same Person, for the King's Use; Whether it be better for a Commonwealth, that the Power be in the Nobility, or in the Commonalty.

THE People of every Monarchy, or Realm, is divided in two Parts. Th'one *Nobility*, and the other *Commonalty*. In whom be two repugnant Desires. The one to Rule, and the other not to be Ruled. And because the Desire of them prevaieth in whom the Power consisteth; therefore our Question is, to whom the Power is most convenient for the Commonwealth.

Upon which Question dependeth this other; Whether is more prejudicial to the Commonwealth, the Nobleman that seeketh to main-

Cott. Libr. Vespasian, D. 18.

maintain his Estate, or the Unnoble that seeketh to attain Nobility. Or whose Desire is the greater, His that hath already, and feareth to loose, or His that hath not, and Coveteth to Gain.

In Effect it hath been proved, that the Desire of both is equal. For he that hath, thinketh he cannot safely enjoy his own, if he get no more; and he hath not, must of Necessity seek to have. And tho this Desire be equal in its self, yet are the Effects thereof unequal. For he that hath, may gain with Ease; whereas he that hath not, cannot wel gain without Travail. In which Travail consisteth the Ground of al Civil Policy.

For if the Needy might attain their Things without Travailing for them, or the Wealthy find none Ease in the Riches that they have travailed for, then should the World become Barbarous for lack of Travail.

Wherefore like as it is necessary to constrain the Needful to Travail, even so it is requisite to maintain him that by Travail hath deserved Rest, in power to Rest. For of Diligence and Travail Nobility is grown. And as long as either the Nobleman or the Unnoble seeketh to maintain, or attain by due means, so long is neither of them noisome to the Commonwealth. But whensoever either of them seeketh his Purpose by Power, and so grow into Parties; then is the Party of the *Commons* the more dangerous, for three especial Causes, that is to wit, their Inconstancy, Peril, and Ignorance.

First, That the Multitude is most Inconstant, it is evident. For among many Men, are many Opinions; which breedeth Confusion. And tho by persuation or Necessity they may agree, yet is it impossible their Agreement should long continue. As for Example.

In the beginning of the Third Book of the Third Decad of *Titus Livius*, I read, that after the Battail of *Trafimene*, when *Annibal* came before *Capua*, the Commons of that City had their Senators and Magistrats in such Contempt, that the Best of the Town feared to be Slain, and so the City to be yielded unto *Annibal*. Of which matter *Livy* beginneth on this wise. *Inde Capuam flectit iter, luxuriantem longa Felicitate atque Indulgentia Fortunæ; Maxime tamen inter corrupta omnia Licentia Plebis, sine modo Libertatem exercentis*. Inasmuch that *Pacuvius Calavius*, one of the Nobility there, to save both the Senate and the City, and to win, the People, devised this Subtilty. First he persuated the *Senators* to be ordered by him, and so locked them up togethers in the Senate House. Then he called the *Commons* unto him, making an Oration to this Effect, that he knew the just Hate they bear against their Rulers, which moved him to procure a mean, how they might without their own peril be avenged on them. Wherefore by his own Policy he had made them sure in the Senate, and would bring them forth to be punished at the Peoples judgment according to their Demerits. Wherof the People wonderfully rejoiced. But then he persuated them it was necessary to do two things at once. One to Dispatch the old Senate, and the other to choose a new Senator or ever they executed the old. Wherupon he caused the Senators Names to put into a Pot, and so taken out by one and one at Adventure.

The

The First Senator, whose Name happened to be drawn, was brought forth, and with an open Cry of the People condemned. Now, quoth *Pacuvius*, ye have judged him, choose one in his Place. Of which Election *Livy* writeth thus, *Primo, Silentium erat inopia Potioris subjiciundi. Deinde, cum aliquis, omissa Verecundia, quempiam nominasset, multo major extemplo Clamor oriebatur, cum alii negarent nosse, alii nunc probra, nunc humilitatem, sordidamque inopiam, & pudenda artis aut quasi genus objicerent. Hoc multo magis in secundo ac tertio Senatore factum est.* So that at length for want of better, they were contented to keep their old, and to stand to *Pacuvius* his discretion. And to this Effect infinite Examples may be alledged, that nothing is more inconstant than the Multitude.

Then for the *Peril*, none is to be compared to the Frenzy of the People. For like as if a mad Man get the Sword in his Hand, he is like not only to mischief other, but also himself; Even so fareth it by the Commons. If they once attain the Power, they destroy both the Nobility and themselves. Example of the *Jaquerie* that sprang in *Beauvoisine* and other Countries of *France*, the year 1358, Of whom *Froisard* in the 182 Chapter of his first Volume, saith these Words. 'These mischievous People thus assembled without Captain or Armure, robbed, brent and slew al Gentlemen that they could lay hands on, and forced and ravished Ladies and Damoisels, and did such shameful Deeds that no humane Creature ought to think on any such. Which Rage if they had prevailed in, they would at length have converted upon themselves, when the Gentlemen had been utterly destroyed.' I might bring a number of Examples, as wel of our own Nation as of others to this Effect, but none more cruel than the *Jaquerie*.

Thirdly, For *Ignorance*: The Multitude utterly knoweth nothing: And tho some Examples of good Succes may be alledged for the Popular Estates: Yet if they be wel sought, it shall appear they never proceeded of Wisdom, but of Necessity. And then comparing th'inconveniences that happened before the Necessity to the Successes that have followed, it shal be found that the Wisdom, learned of Necessity, is dearly bought. Even the *Swizzers* that destroyed their Gentlemen in a day, and that now glory most in their Popularity, both have had of late years, and must needs have shortly the like ill Fortune, that hath happened unto *Athens*, *Florence*, and such other.

Wherefore I determine, it is impossible any Estate should long prosper, where the Power is in the Commonalty. For like as it becometh neither the Man to be Governed of the Woman, nor the Master of the Servant, even so in al other Regiments it is not convenient the Inferior should have power to direct the Superior: Because that of Power procedeth Commandment, and of Commandment Execution.

It may be said, it hath been often seen by Experience that through the Covetousnes of the Nobility the Commons have been oppressed. So that for the disordinate Appetites of a Few the Multitude hath suffered. Which seemeth a greater Evil than that the Few should suffer for the Multitude. Wherefore if the Power were in the Commonalty, the Magistrates would always be the more careful

ful to bridle the Excesses of the Nobility, and to advance the Public Wealth. Which Argument indeed were very good in case they would always maintain their Civil Laws, and the Orders of their Magistrats inviolate. But what Popular Estate can be read that hath thirty yeárs together eschewed Sects, Sedition and Commotions, in such sort as once within thirty yeárs the whole Estate hath not been in danger of Subversion? And then must I ask, whether is more pestilent to the Commonwealth, the Tyranny of a Few, or the Subversion of the Estate?

I must confess there be two notable Evils that in manner grow of ordinary in the Nobility: With the one wherof the Commons are offended, and with the other grieved. The first is Ambition, and the second Tyranny, which are both so united, that lightly thone followeth thother.

Whensoever the Nobleman or Magistrate useth the Place of his Calling for himself, without regard to the Inferior sort, then waxeth he ambitious: the Maintenance wherof ingendreth Tyranny: that is to say, Practise of unlawful Gain, or cruel handling of his Inferiors.

Wherefore *Macchiavegli*, in his Discourses of the Liberty of a Commonwealth, determineth that in Cases of Extremity, where the Magistrats or Nobility use this Tyranny, the Commotions of the People are necessary; to mitigate the Excess of the great Mens Ambitions.

And in the greatest Extremities indeed, it seemeth to have some Reason: As in the Necessity of the poor *Athenians*, when *Solon* was made *Prætor*: or the like of the *Romans*, when they Rebelled, and went to the *Holy Hil*, where *Menenius Agrippa* appeased them. But otherwise the Ambition and Tyranny of the Nobility were much more tolerable, than the Insolence, Inconstancy, Peril and Ignorance of the Multitude. For these Faults of the Nobility are nothing comparable to those of the Commons: and especially in that the Estate remaineth with them always inviolate. Whereas if the Multitude prevail once in Power; al goeth to Confusion. The Estate is subverted, every Mans Property, his Possession and Goods are altered, and they themselves never return to Order, but by Necessity.

In the Monarchy or Estate of a Prince, if the Prince be good, like as he keepeth his Commons void of Power, even so he preserveth them from the Tyranny of the Nobility. For he is the same Bridle in Power over his Nobility, that the Nobility is over the Commons, and tendeth as wel to the Rule of the one, as to the Preservation of the other.

And tho he were a Tyrant, yet I say his Tyranny is more tolerable, than the Tyranny of the Nobility of the Estate of *Optimates*: Where instead of one, there be many Tyrants. For the Property of a Tyrant is, not to suffer within his Power any mo Tyrants than himself. And if the Tyranny of the Nobility, as I have said before, be more tolerable than th'insolence of the Multitude, much more tolerable then is the Princes Tyranny than the Commons Power.

Wher.

Wherefore I conclude, that it is better for the Commonwealth the Power be in the Nobility, than in the Commonalty.

Neither do I mean, that for the Dangers rehearsed, the Commons should be so kept down, as the wretched Commons of some other Countries be. But I would their Disciplin and Education should be such, that the only Name of their Prince should make them to tremble. Which they should never regard, if either the Power were in them, or that they feared not a Superior Power. For if they have but so much Liberty as to talk of the Princes Causes, and of the Reason of Laws, at once they shew their Desire not to be Ruled: Wherof groweth Contempt, and consequently Disobedience, the Mother of al Errors.

[illegible]

T.

*A Third Political Discourse made by William Thomas, Esq; for
the King's Study: Intitled, What Princes Amity is best.*

AMITY, or Friendship, (as *Cicero* defineth it) is the perfect
Concord of al divine and humane Things with Benevolence
and Charity. And he saith, that, Wisdome excepted, he knoweth
not whether the Immortal Gods have given unto Man any better
thing. For it maketh the prosperous things more resplendent, and
Adversities the more easy. And if it were possible for the Princes
of these days to use that Amity that some Princes have don, as we
read of *Massinissa* and *Scipio*, and of other, then it were no need to
talk of other Amity, than of that sweet private Amity that *Cicero* so
wel hath described. And without further question, that Princes A-
mity were best, in whose Heart those Rules were written. But the
perverse Nature of Men in this Time doth scarcely permit any per-
fect Amity. Wherefore to treat of the *Politic* Amity, that is to say,
the accustomable Amity that may be had; it is first to be conside-
red, to what end the Amity of foreign Princes doth serve, and what
need one Prince hath of the others Amity.

Truly, if it be wel considered, tho there be many Causes to be alledged, why it behoveth Princes to have Amity, yet al should tend but to one end, that is to say, to maintain their own. For the Fruit of the foreign Princes Amity consisteth in two Points.

One, in giving Aid to resist an Enemy, *Ut sine injuria in Pace vivatur*; And the other in relieving his Friends Country with those Commodities that it wanteth. Both which, as I have said, tend to that End that is reherſed before. And becauſe few Princes are of themſelves hable to maintain their own, if they want Friendſhip of other Princes, therefore it followeth, this Friendſhip to be very neceſſary. For it hath been often ſeen, that Princes and other Eſtates have been often brought to that Point for lack of Friends, that having to do with ſuch as were more Puiſſant than themſelves, they neither could maintain Peace, nor ſuſtain War. In which Caſe either

they must throw themselves into their Laps that shal help them, or must become a Prey to those that do assault them.

And this happeneth through lack of Foresight; when the Prince or Estate hath not mesured their Forces with their Doings. As *Livy* writeth of the *Latins* in the Eighth Book of his first Decad; *Jam Latio is status erat rerum, ut neque Pacem neque Bellum pati possent.* By reason that through lack of Friends to aid them, the Amity and the Inimity of the *Romans* was indifferent unto them. For if they had Peace, their Conditions were intolerable; and their Impotency in the War made them at length fall into Thralldome.

But leaving the Examples of People that had no Prince, we may read, as wel of our own Histories as of others, what Inconveniences have happened to them that have wanted foreign Friendship.

How often did the *Danes* in King *Egberts* Time invade this Realm, spoil it, and ransome it? How many doubtful and bloody Battails, were foughten between our Nation and them in the Fift year of *Alureds* Reign? What made King *Etheldred* flee into *Normandy*, leaving his Crown to the Possession of *Suono*, or *Suanus* a Dane? And had *William* Duke of *Normandy* been hable to expulse *Harold* King of *England*, and to enjoy the Crown, if *Harold* had had any strange Friend? If I should follow on with like Examples, where the Estates been utterly subverted and altered from one Nation to another (much through the lack of Friendship) I should be over tedious. But this I find, that tho there be many Causes to be alledged in the Subversion or Alteration of Estates; Yet one of the greatest is the lack of Princes Amity.

Wherefore determining that among the great Cares that Princes ought to have for the Preservation of themselves and their Estates, this Amity, spoken of before, should not be the least. We must now Examine what Princes Amity is best. In which behalf four things are worthy of Consideration; The Propinquity, the Antienty of Friendship, the Religion and the Nature of the Prince, whose Amity is sought.

First, for *Propinquity*. Albeit that it is both profitable and commendable to have the Amity of al Princes: Yet it is evident that the Neighbours Amity is to be preferred before the Strangers. And herein lyeth a Question, whose Amity is the better: His that may most annoy, or his that may most Assist. For a mean Prince that is a Neighbour, may annoy more than a puissant Prince that dwelleth far off. And such a puissant Prince again may by contrary means assist more than the mean Neighbour Prince.

In effect, it hath been ever proved that th'Amity of him which may most annoy is to be preferred. For by this Amity ye do not only advoid the daunger of that Annoyance that he may do, but ye also may have his Aid to joyn with yours; which, tho it were but mean in respect of the far Princes Power, must nevertheles be such an Help as may serve the Turn more readily. And the Amity of Far-Princes hath ever been proved so uncertain that a smal Power of the Neighbour hath been most commonly preferred before it. Wherefore like as th'Amity of a private Neighbour is unto every private Man, for his Domestick Affairs, more necessary than th'Amity of

a Stranger: Even so in Estate, th'Amity of the neereſt Prince is more convenient than of him that is diſtant.

For proof wherof, in the laſt Wars between the Emperor and French King, *Barbaroffa* the Turks Admiral with an Army of 8000 Turks Landed in *Provence*; being ſent at the French Kings request from the Turk to aid him againſt the Emperor. As for the Turks Puiſſance, I need not to reherſe it. And the French Kings Folly in this behalf declared itſelf. For when he thought the Emperor too ſtrong for him, he made account that matching himſelf with one of more Puiſſance, he ſhould the rather ſuppreſs his Enemy. But becauſe he conſidered not, that a ſtrange Prince upon an uncertain Hope would be loth to adventure any great Power of his ſo far from him, that their Return ſhould be either deſperate or doubtful, therefore he failed in his Imagination. For the Turks ſent him but a ſmal Power, more for a continuance of Amity than for Amity indeed. That Army travailed far, put the French King to great Charges, diſcovered his Country, and did him no Service. So that it was *magis Nomen quam Praſidium*.

The contrary wherof proved with the Emperor, who through the Amity of his Neighbour, the King of *England*, invaded *France*, and compelled the French King to conditions of Advantage.

For antient or long Continuance of Amity: What Prince ſoever abandoneth the antient Amity between him and another, or between his Family and another, putteth himſelf to great Adventure, and may be after a maner reſembled to *Eſops* Water Dog, that coveting the Shadow loſt the Fleſh. Becauſe that unto Amity there is none ſo great a Miniſter as Tyme. Which being once violated, without Time again cannot be recovered. And ſeeing that in Princes Affairs, many times a new Friendſhip one way engendreth Breach in old Amity another way, it cannot be choſen but the deſiling of that Amity muſt breed extreme Diſpleſure in the Prince that receiveth the Injury: Whereof followeth the mortal hatred of an antient aſſured Friend, for the uncertain Amity of a new reconciled Foe.

The Example wherof hath been wel ſeen in *Louis Sforza* late Duke of *Milain*. Who through his unkind Dealing with the *Venetians*, antient approved Friends unto his Family, fel into the hands of the laſt *Louis French King*. In whoſe priſon he finiſhed his miſerable days.

For Religion, it is neceſſary the Princes that will obſerve Amity be of one Opinion. Otherwiſe it is impoſſible the Amity ſhould longer continue than Neceſſity compelleth th'one or th'other to maintain it. For where are contrary Opinions of Religion, there can be no long Agreement. And there is no Prince, nor private Man ſo ſimple, as, if it lay in his Power, would not compel the whole World to believe as he doth.

Indeed the Turk within his Dominions compelleth no Man to alter his Religion: By reaſon wherof he is the more able peaceably to enjoy ſo large an Empire. But if he thought he might bring al Men to *Makomets* Law, (as he ſeeth the contrary) he would uſe that Rigor in Religion that he doth in other things. And there was never greater Folly imagined, than the French Kings Device of Amity with the Turk.

For

For if the *Turk* observe not Faith to the Princes of his own Religion, but destroyeth as many as come once under his Power, what Faith or Amity can he bear to a Christian Prince? So that if by the *Turks* means the *French* King might have extirpated the *Emperor*, (which was the end of this desired Amity) his own Destruction must have followed. For with the *Turk*, *Nulla Sancta Societas, nec Fides Regni est.*

Finally, for the Princes *Nature*; If he be a good Prince, his Amity must needs be preferred before the Amity of a Tyrant. Because th'one doth that willingly that the other never doth but of Necessity.

Wherefore I conclude th'Amity of that Prince to be best, who is neereſt Neighbour, moſt antient Friend, agreeable of Religion and good of Nature.

At the leaſt, if theſe Four cannot be found in one Prince, then I think his Amity beſt, who is endued with moſt of them.



V.

Mr. Thomas his Fourth Discourse to the King. Touching his Majesties outward Affairs.

WHAT Case your Majesties Estate is in I doubt not, but your self doth understand. And tho I know there be a number about your Highness hable both to care for the Remedy of that that is amiss, and also to prevent the imminent Perills necessary to be foreseen: Yet because, meeseemeth, some dul Effects prove in things that ought to have greater Life; therefore having discouraged somewhat on *Tyme*, my bounden Conscience provoketh me to utter mine Opinion in present things. Which I most humbly beseech your Majesty to accept, as offered not of any purpose, either to prefer mine Inventions before the Doings of wiser Men, or to accuse any for neglecting their Duties in these Cases; but only of the earnest Affection I have both unto our Commonwealth, and also unto your Highness, on whom our Wealth dependeth.

Time was, in the days of your Father of famous Memory, that this Estate, being dread of al our Neighbours, needed not to esteem any of them more than itself was esteemed. But now the Case is so altered, that because we are both hated and contemned of them al, We, for lack of our own Estimation, must either Esteem them or Redeem our Estimation, or els perish.

And because there be infinite Reasons that threaten us with War almost on every hand, therefore it is to be foreseen (as I have written in the Discourse of Princes Amity) that we fal not into such a War, as either we must be a Prey to th'enemy, or els throw our selves into the Lap of a dear Purchased Friend: th'one or other being

being equally prejudicial unto us. For the Remedy wherof one of two things must be won; Either Friendship to help us, or Time to make our selves strong.

As for Friendship, I see not which way any is to be gotten, without either our extreme Disadvantage, or the denying of our Faith: Neither of which is tolerable. And as I believe, it is impossible we should have any perfect Amity with any foreign Prince that dissenteth from us in Religion; So because we have no Neighbour of uniform Religion, I determine we can find no Friend, whose Amity is to be trusted.

Wherefore we must of force turn us unto *Time*, to see how much we may win therof, and what we may win withal. And because neither is our Force so ordered, that we may Trust thereby to win our *Time*, nor our Treasure such as may purchase it; therefore our extremest shift is to work by Policy.

We have two puissant Princes to deal withal; the *French* King, a doubtful Friend, and the Emperor a Dissembling Foe. The one hath don us already displeasure; and the other we are sure wil do it, if he can. For what Quarrel hath he to the *Germans*, but Religion? Wherin he hath sworn rather to spend his Life, than not to reduce it to his own maner. And when he shal have overcome those few that rest (which are of small account in respect of his Power) where shal he end his Fury, but against us?

I wot well some are of Opinion that *Maydelburgh*, with the Confederate Cities, shal keep him occupied a while. Some other add, that the *Germans* are not yet won to the Papistical Sect. And some other reckon upon the *Turks* comming into *Hungary*. Al which (say they) are Impediments sufficient to occupy the Emperors Mind from meddling with us. I like those reasons wel; beseeching God they may prove as true as they be spoken. But I am persuaded by Arguments of greater Efficacy, that the Emperor esteemeth this Matter of *Maydelburgh* very little, and much les the *German* Protestants, and least of al the *Turk*. The Reasons wherof are too long now to discourse. So that I fear me, he shal have sooner brought his Purposes those ways to pass, than we shal be wel advertised of it. Wherefore, think I, we have great Cause to mistrust both his Practises and himself.

On the other side, the *French* King is already in the Possession of *Scotland*, and practiseth in *Ireland* amongst a People that loveth Liberty; and that for every small hope of Gain wil be ready to Revolt. Wherin if he should prevail, we might reckon our selves besieged. So that, the one and other reckoned, we are not only abandoned of al Friends that may stand us instead, but in maner environned of Enemies.

Thus I have cast the Peril of the Worst, to the intent the Worst might be provided for. For the best will help it self.

And because the Time doth yet serve us to Practise, having no Enemy that hitherto hath taken his Sword in hand; therefore as we may now common to put them in hope of things that we mean not; and thereby win time both to provide us of Mony, and to order our Men: So when Time shal draw either of their Swords, and we unprovided

provided (as presently we are) then must we either perish, or be a Prey to th'one of them, or at the best receive intolerable Conditions. For say what Men wil, our Power without some Friendship is of smal Substance; yea, tho we were al as good Subjects as *Edward III.* had; wheras now I fear me, there be as wel hollow as whole Hearts to be found.

And albeit that our Quarrel is in God, and God our Quarrel, who never faileth them that trust in him; Yet forasmuch as Wickednes reigneth in the midst of us, like as we should not mistrust the Goodnes of God, so ought we neither to neglect that Policy that may help us, to advoid the like Captivity that for Wickednes happened to the Elect people of *Israel*.

And this is my Device,

Your Majesty shal either Write, or send some trusty Man with Credit to the Emperor, declaring unto him (as he knoweth already) in what fort the *French King* hath obtained *Scotland*, and how he practiseth in *Ireland*; purposing in your tender years to oppress the Realm and Subjects. And albeit ye mistrust not the Emperors perfect and sincere Amity, &c. yet to the end ye would join in a streit maner, ye would gladly know, what his Majesty would require of you; or Covenant, that if the *French King* should now break with your Highnes, ye might be sure, he would also break with *France* on his Part, and generally be Friends to Friends, and Enemies to Enemies.

No doubt, he would harken to such a Message; and with the first would demaund Alteration of Religion. Which I think should be the principal Point on the Treaty on his part. Wherefore, as the Time served, I would wish the Communication therof not to be refused, and the Matter to be dissembled, with such Practises of Delays as may best serve to the winning of Time. Wherof your Majesty shal gather two Commodities.

One, that by keeping the Emperor in hope of Alteration he may cease from working of that mischief towards you and your Realm, that the mean time he would surely go about.

And the other, the *French King* may have cause so to doubt this League, that I believe he shal not offer to disturb you; which indeed were a great Matter. By means wherof your Majesty should not only get time more and more to establish Religion within your Realm, but also to put your Subjects in a readines, and to provide you of Mony against the time of Hostility. And if the Time may so long be won, that the Emperor dy, whose Life cannot long endure, your Majesty shall not only be free of this Practise, but also free of *France*, who surely shal have enough to do that way.

As for the *French King* we have Peace with him, and no Cause of breach: but if he pick a quarrel to break, his hope of Gain shal be so great, that I se no reasonable Overture of our Part sufficient to appease him. And then it is necessary to threaten, that ye would rather yield in Conditions to the Emperor, than endure so unjust a War as he for Greedines shal begin. And if you doubt of that

that Aggreement stop him not, I cannot devise what should stay him, but our own Weapons.

For *Scotland*, I have no hope of good but one, that the Governor by our Comforts may be inticed to take the Crown upon him. If he, as he may be thereunto perswaded, we shal not only establish a puissant Friend to our selves, but also a perpetual Enemy to *France*. The compassing wherof had need to be handled both very secretly, and prudently.

For *Ireland*; if there be just Cause of Suspicion that any of those Lords should revolt, let some means be devised to cal them, or the chief of them, hither, as shortly as may be. And here let them be wel entreated, til the next Summer be spent. In which time their Troth shal be tryed. And beside that, their Entertainment may alter their Malice, if there be any; or at the least, establish their Allegiance.

For *Denmark*; Albeit the King is of our Religion, and the Country both, yet they were never our Friends. And unles we were more hable with money to hire them, than the *Emperor* or *French* King are, let us never hope good of them. For naturally they are given to the Gain; and of al Spoils, they desire the Spoil of our Nation. So that with little Mony they may be hired against us; where a great deal of our Mony shal scarcely cause them to sit still. Nevertheles I think it were not amiss to Practice with them, as long as it turn not to our Disadvantage.

Objections that may be argued to the Contrary.

To my Device of Practice with the *Emperor*, I may be Answered, that it is dangerous for three Causes.

One, that the knowledge of this Practice shal encourage the *Papists* of this Realm to be the more obstinate.

Another, if it be known to *Maydelburgh*, and the other Powers that presently defend our Religion, it shal be both a Discourage to to them, and a Slander to us.

And third, that when the *Emperor* shal perceive our Dalliance with him, it shal set him al on fire; where now he is but Warm.

To the First, I reply, that if we quailed in our Proceedings at home, the *Papists* might take Courage; but following earnestly as we have begun, let them hope what they wil, the End shal change their Minds. And the mean while, they shal neither do nor talk.

And to the Second, tho' we would, we are not able to aid *Maydelburgh*, and their Fellows, as well for the Distance, as for our own Necessity; having enough to do to save our selves. So that they can take no Discourage, where they can hope no Succour. And for Slander it can be none, unles the slanderous Effect follow; which shal be no part of our Meaning. And if we esteem the Worldly Fame, at the worst the greater Number (I mean the *Papists*) shal praise us for the time.

To the Third Point, the *Emperor* is already so warm, that if his Fire might kindle us, we should al Burn, and look for none other, but whensoever his Time seemeth, he will make us smoak indeed.

Wherefore if any thing be to be won of him, it is only Time. Which shal be evil handled, if it be not drawn one twelve or fifteen Months long. And if we begin not this Practice, or *Maydelburgh* be won, the Emperot wil afterward procede with us by a maner of Commandment, rather than by Treaty. For when the Sword is shaken over our Heads, then shal it be too late for us to talk: At the worst, what Hurt can we take by this Practice? Common as much as they list, as long as they be not able to compel us, so long we need not to yield in any thing unto them. And if they may compel, then there is no Boot. So that wheras Good may come to us of our Practice divers ways, I cannot se which way any Hurt may grow of it at all.

For *Scotland*, it may be said, what Peril were it, if the *French* King should know our Practice, and take Displeasure against us? I answer, the same Peril that he is in with us, for practising in *Ireland*, being such as ye may be sure shal be no Cause of War. Yea, it may happen to set such a Broyle between the Governor and him, as may bring them by the Ears indeed. And as for the Conquest of *Scotland*, let us never look for it. For if we were not able to Conquer it, when we had to do with it alone, much les able are we now, when we must either conquer *France*, or forbear *Scotland*.

Mary, for the *Irish* Lords there is peril, unles the Matter be so handled, that they may come by way of Treaty, devised upon persuasion of Amity. Which, if it may be brought to pas, shal serve much to the purpose. Otherwise it may be the Cause to make them Revolt, if they perceive themselves once to be suspected.

For the Realm withinwards.

Two things are principally to be applyed: The Readines of Men, and a Mas of Mony.

Preparation doth not only discourage the Enemy, but also encourage the Subject. Who sustaining a suddain War unlooked for, waxeth immediately timorous: where being warned he waxeth hardy.

A People in *Illyria*, called *Acarmani*, were threatned to be destroyed by their Neighbours the *Aetoli*: Infomuch that desperately they armed from the Age of Fifteen to Sixty, as many as could bear Armour, swearing never to return vanquisht: And did not only covenant, that if any fled from the battail, they should neither have Lodging nor Victual with any of the Nation at home; but also prayed their Neighbours, the *Epiroti*, that if they were slain in the Battail, they would bury them al in one Place with this Epitaph, *Hic siti sunt Acarnani, qui adversus vim atque injuriam Aetolorum pro Patria pugnantes, mortem occubuerunt*. By reason of which Determination, the *Aetoli* for al their Puissance gave them over, and suffered them to live in quiet. And so it fareth by them that in like Extremities do valiantly provide for the Worst.

Wherefore mine Opinion is, that your Majesty should immediately cause Muster to be taken throughout the Realm, to se first what every Man can make. And let nothing be undon that may serve to have Men ready in at Events, tho' ye should never need Man. At the

the worst this one Profit shal grow of it, those Subjects that have their Heads occupied with Civil Commotions, mistrusting some outward War shal the les think on their Mischief at home. And the outward Enemy shall have les mind to Offend, where he seeth preparation of Defence.

On the other side, let no way be omitted that may bring in Money, to make such a Mas as may serve the Need. And when ye have it, spend no Penny of that Proportion, whatsoever shift be made for your Ordinary Charges. This don, I think your Enemies shal either suffer your Majesty in Peace, or at the worst have smal Advantage of you in War.

I have said my foolish Opinion touching your Highnes exterior Affairs; I shal estones humbly beseech your Majesty, if I have spoken any thing imprudently, to take my simple meaning in good part. For as my Desire is to advaunce your Highnes Affairs, if it lay in my Power, so if on my Advice any contrary Succes should happen, my Meaning shal deserve no Blame.

There be things also in the present Civil Governance that in mine Opinion might be amended: Wherin if your Majesty command me, I shal gladly utter what I think.

W.

William Thomas, Esq; to the King: Touching the Reformation of the Coin.

To the Kings Majesty.

UON Friday last Mr. Throgmerton declared your Majesties Plesure unto me, and delivered me withal the Notes of certain Discourses. Which according to your Highnes Commaundment I shal most gladly apply to send you one every Week, if it be possible for me in so little time to Compas it. As in very Deed it were more than easy, if the daily Service of mine Office required not that great Travail and Diligence that it doth.

And because he told me your Majesty would first hear mine Opinion touching the Reformation of the Coin, albeit that I think my self both unmeet and unhable to give any Judgment in so great and weighty a Matter, without the Counsil and Advice of others, yet since it is your Highnes Plesure to have it secret, which I do much Commend, I am therefore the bolder to Enterprize the Declaration of my Fantasy; Trusting that upon this Ground better Devices and better Effect may ensue, than my Head alone can contrive.

And because Mr. Throgmerton is absent, I have delivered it thus sealed to Mr. Fitz-Williams to deliver unto your Majesty, as it

were a thing from the Council ; Assuring your Highnes that no Creature is, or shal be privy either to this, or to any of the rest, through me. Which I do keep so secret to this end, that your Majesty may utter these Matters as of your own Study : wherby it shal have the greater Credit with your Council.

As for the danger to be Author of a new thing (which when the Turn cometh I shal declare at length) I have a wonderful Confidence of Surety in your Goodnes. But at the worst, I esteem my Life les than the Service of my Prince and Country.

I need not to reherse the private respects that should move your Majesty to the Reformation of your Coin : But if there were no mo Reasons, meseemeth the necessary Satisfaction of your People in one kind is a sufficient Argument.

Plato in his Dialogue of *Hipparchus De Lucri Cupiditate*, affirmeth that al Men naturally desire Gain ; and after this maner he proveth it, *Omnes homines Bonum appetunt. Et quia Lucrum utile est, Utile vero Bonum, Omnes Natura Lucrum appetunt. Quodque hac Appetitio naturalis laudanda est.*

I wil not dispute of the Difference, Ordinate and Disordinate in this Desire. But it is manifest, that al men desire Gain ; and when they want the chiefeft thing they covet to gain, then their Desire kindleth, and becometh vitious : which engendreth infinite Inconveniences.

Now to prove that your Majesties Subjects want their most Desire, I think that no Man wil deny, that Gold and Silver are the sweetest Fruit of al Gain : Not for its self, but because the having and Use therof bringeth Man in maner to every thing that he desireth. And because there is no one thing can serve him to so many Purposes. Therefore of Consequence there is no one thing that he can so much desire.

If then your Subjects want both Gold and Silver, how can their Desire be quiet ? Perhaps it shal be answered, They want no Mony, They have Silver in a kind, yea, and Gold too, tho' they show it not.

To that I reply, First for the Mony, They esteem it so little, that they wil employ it to great Disadvantage rather than keep it. Which breedeth multitude of Bargains, and utter impoverishing of the Needy.

And for *Silver*, they have it indeed in such a kind, as they neither esteem it for Silver, nor can without great Los use it for Silver.

As for *Gold*, if there be any Quantity remaining (as some Men think but smal) it cannot come to Light. Because that like as the Value of our Mony doth daily decay, so doth the Gold encrease to such Value, that lying stil it amounteth above the Revenues of any Land. And he that shall live twelve Months shal se, that an old Angel shal in value and Estimation want little of twelve Shillings of our current Money ; if provision for redress of your Majesties Coin be not had the rather.

Thus in mine Opinion it appeareth, that the peoples chiefeft Desire shal kindle, (if it be not already) and at length must needs burn. For most commonly they feel not smart or they understand,

And

And the more Plague it is a great deal, by reason that not the mean people only, but the middle sort and the greatest do suffer for this; each man in his kind.

Conclude then, that of extreme Necessity this Coin must be reformed, and that without delay.

Your Majesties most bounden Servant,
William Thomas.

X.

William Thomas Esq; to the King: Apologizing for some Passages in his Discourse concerning the Amendment of the Coin, and in his other Discourses, writ by the Kings Commandment.

PLEASETH your Highnes, as I said at the first, tho' I do study these Discourses, and am right glad to write the best Opinions that I can gather, yet I meant not to be such a Director, as were not glad himself to Learn. Neither do I trust mine Authors so much, as not to mistrust contrary Successes, both to their Rules and their Examples. Nevertheless since that Providence which Men may attain in things, is had by Study of Rules and Examples, (for he buyeth it dear that hath it only by Experience) most happy is he in al Regiments, that knoweth most Arguments to choose the best in doubtful Cases. Wherefore I shal most humbly beseech your Highnes to take my study as a Pyke or a Quarrel to a deeper matter, and with my good Wil so to supply my Lack, that tho' I appear sometime too Vehement, or too much assured, yet that I be not therfore Condemned, since it is not I, but the Matter as I take it.

And where indeed I was somewhat earnest for the Reformation of the Coins, wherein it pleased your Majesty to Command my Opinion; truly my Zele to my Country did so prick me, that I could not forbear to exclaime against the Fault: Like as for the Redress I am not yet dissuaded from my Device. For tho' I understand there be other Arguments perchance better than mine, yet I like not his Opinion that in this Case groundeth himself on *Malum bene conditum ne moveas*. For *Malum* it is indeed, but *Conditum* it is not, and *Bene* it wil never be. Wherefore *Neceffe est moveri*. And this I dare stand to in Argument, that where I devised an Exaction of 12 *d.* in the Pound, if the Mony thus continue, your Majesty by reason of the Mints shal exact above 6 *sb.* of the Pound; and yet be undon your self at length, unles ye purchase Land withal.

And whether it hath made your Majesty rich or no, I cannot tel, but I am sure this Coinage since the first beginning hath exacted upon your Subjects already above 8 *sb.* in the Pound.

As for their frivole Reasons, that allege three parts of the Four through the Realm to fare the better for it, I will not say that either they understand little of Policy, or els they would be glad to become Commoners themselves; but this I dare avow, there is not one of a Hundred, no, not one of a Thousand, that is contented with this Coine.

Helas! Can we suffer neither Fault, nor Remedy? Neither War nor Peace?

Your Majesties most humble Servant,
William Thomas.

~~~~~

## Y.

*Sir Philip Hoby, the Kings Ambassador at the Emperors Court, to the Duke of Somerset. Concerning the Interim. From Augs-burgh.*

Cott. Libr.  
Tit. B. 2.

**I**T may please your Grace to understand, that the 28th day of the last month the Bishop of *Romes* Legate, that came last hither, had Audience of the Emperors Majesty, with whom he was a long while. And the same day both he and the old Legate dined with *Grandevela*; Where passed much familiarity and friendly entertainment on both parties. On *Friday* was *Sevenight* the *French* Ambassadors Brother came hither in Post. What news he bringeth I cannot learn: but the morrow after his Coming the Ambassador was with the Emperor, and had with his Majesty long Conference. Of these things had I no perfect knowledg until within these four days: And therefore could not advertise of them by my last Letters.

The Emperor, the Diet being now finished, converteth his whole study to the setting forth of the *Interim*: Which it is said he is earnestly bent to cause these People inviolably to observe. He useth to bring his purpose to pas sundry Ways. And attempteth first by fair means to allure them to follow his Wil. But if this way shal take no place, it is thought, as partly hath been already experienced, he wil not fail to use extremity. The fear wherof hath caused many to relent, that els would have hardly been brought to grant to the *Interim*. The Three Townes, *Constance*, *Argentine*, and *Lynda*, as in my last letters I wrot unto your Grace, have not yet granted unto the *Interim*. And namely *Lynda*: Which having first (as by my Letters of the 26 of the last month I adverted your Grace) utterly refused to grant thereto; being then by the Emperors Council, after they had wel laugh'd at them, willed under the pretence of Pity to take better Advice, and to consult together again, and make some wiser Answer, have now on *Wednesday* last, sent their Secretary hither. Who on the behalf of the whole Town hath declared unto the Emperors Council, that according to their commandment



ment they have eftones afsembled their whole Commonalty, and generally al their whole Town together. Where they have ripely confidered the Effects of the *Interim*, and taken Advice and Opinion of fundry wel learned and godly Men therin : and finally have perceived, that it is far difagreeable from the Word of God, whole Law and Commandments they are bound upon pain of Damnation to obferve. Which having a fpecial regard unto, and fearing more the Threatnings of God, and his juft Indignation towards the neglecters of his Wil and Scripture, than the Los of Goods, Life, or any other Temporal thing ; they have refolved in conclufion, not to accept or agree in any condition therunto. Which is their refolute Answer. But to the end the Emperors Majesty fhall not think this to procede of any Obftinacy or Difobedience towards him, (whom they do acknowledg to be their Prince and Superior) they wil not, they fay, refufe or refift whatfoever it fhall please him to difpofe of them. Their Gates fhall not be fhut to any of his Soldiers or Men, either *Spaniards* or *Italians* (with whom they have been oftentimes threatned) nor any other that it fhall like him to fend ; they wil not withftand, nor againftay his pleafure therin. Yea they are content he take, if he lift, their Goods and Lives from them. Which he fhall not need by ftrong hand to go about : It fhall fuffice him to command them, and they wil, they fay, gladly offer their Heads to the Block.

This Answer of fo fmal a corner was not a little wondred at of the Hearers, and their Boldnes and Conftancy had in much Admiration. *Grandevela* threatned the utter defolation of them and their Town. But yet I cannot hear of any thing hath been don to them. *Conftance* is not yet reconciled ; and therefore, as Enemy to the Emperor, have not hitherto been required to answer. And *Argentine*, being now lately commanded to declare their mind, have not yet brought in their Refolution.

The Duke of *Wirtimburgh*, having received from the Emperor the *Interim*, with commandment to fe it take place, and to be obferved throughout his Country, it is reported he did not then make any Countenance to difobey the Emperors Wil herein ; but received his Commiffion very reverently. And fhortly after fuffering the *Interim* to go abroad, and the Emperors Commiffioners appointed for that purpofe to fet it forth, as it liked them ; fuddenly without any mention made of the *Interim*, or as tho' he thought nothing therof, (as I hear fay he is a Man fomewhat aged and merry-conceited, when he lift) he caufed Proclamation to be made in his Country, that each Perfon, for every time they heard Mas, fhould pay unto him eight Duckats of Gold. He forbad not the Mas to be faid, but would have the Hearers pay him his Tribute. This thing, tho' it be commonly reported, I do not greatly credit : Yet to the intent your Grace may perceive the Imaginations and Fantazies of Men here, I have thought good among the reft to place this Report.

On Friday laft *Grandevela* dined with the old Duke of *Saxony*. Unto whom after Dinner he remembered the Emperors Clemency towards him ; how gently he had been, fince his coming to the Emperors power, ordered. Which his Majesty, he faid, did nothing

fore-



forethink, but thought the same right well bestowed, and would continue his Goodnes towards him, and do more for him than he was ware of, if he would now satisfy his request. And here *Grandevela* declared unto him the effect of the *Interim*, which, he said, the Emperor had, upon grounded Considerations, and for the Quietnes of al *Germany*, set forth; and the same for the like Respects, he said, was of al the Princes, and most of the Commonalty embraced and willingly received. He desired and willed him therefore on his Majesties behalf, that he also would shew himself conformable and grant therto; Which should he said be right acceptable to his Majesty, and not unprofitable to him. To this the Duke answered, that he was now in the Emperors power; his Majesty might do with him, and use his Carcas, as it liked him. He neither could nor would resist his pleasure therin; but humbly besought his Majesty, he would not press him to grant to this thing, which, he said, being as it is against the Word and Law of God, he would not agree unto, tho' he wist to dy for it.

With this Answer *Grandevela* went to the Emperor; Who having heard the Dukes mind was much moved therewith, and sent *Grandevela* back again to him. Who by the Emperors Order first commanded three hundred *Spanyards*, more than the accustomed Band, to be ready, and ward the Dukes Lodging. And then went he to the Duke and shewed him the Emperors pleasure, seing he so obstinately refused to grant to his Request, that the Order, which was prescribed at his Taking, should now be straitly observed, and no more Gentlenes and Courtely shewed unto him, seing it could so little prevail. And forthwith he caused al the Daggs and other Weapons, that the Dukes Servants had there in the House, to be sought out and brought unto him: Which he immediatly sent away. And wheras the Duke had then about him above Seventy Servants, he sent them al away, saving Twenty Seven. Which is the number allowed him by the Order appointed at his first Taking. He also sent from him his Preacher, whom he threatned with Fire, if he hasted not forth of this Country. His Cooks and other Officers were also commanded, upon pain of Burning, they should not from thenceforth prepare or drefs for him any Flesh upon the *Fridays* or *Saturdays*, or on other Fasting days, commanded by the *Romish* Church. In this Straitness remaineth the Duke now. Wherewith he seemeth to be so little moved, as there can be no Alteration perceived in him, either by Word or Countenance. But is even now as merry, and as content to the utter shew, as he was at any time of his most Prosperity.

*Grandevela's* Son, called *Monsieur de Shantonny*, who was sent to *Spain* to carry the news, and present the Conclusion of the Spousals between the Arch Duke of *Austriche*, Son to the King of the *Romans*, and the Emperors Daughter, is now four days past returned to this Court, with the Answer of the said Ladies Conformity, and Consent of the Estates of *Spain* herein. He was immediately dispatched in Post by the Emperor, to cary these News to the King of the *Romans*. Who, as by my last Letters I wrote unto your Grace, departed hence on *Monday* last.

This



This Town is stil ful of *Scottish Wars*, and of the *French Assistance* there, which I warrant you is bragged out to the uttermost. Wherunto I am not able to make any direct answer for want of Advertisement from thence. My hope is your Grace wil consider this my grief and help to relieve it. Herewith it may please your Grace to receive the Order of the Publication and Conclusion of this last Diet, and the Articles agreed upon in the same, which *John Bernardine* hath gotten. Thus Almighty God preserve your Grace, and send you most happy Succes in al your Affaires. From *Auspurge* the 9th day of *July*, Anno 1548.

Your Graces at Commandment,  
*Phelyp Hoby.*

## Z.

*The Confession of Sir William Sharrington concerning his Frauds  
in Coining the Kings Mony.*

*In the Tower, the Second of February, 1548.*

I Sir William Sharrington Knight, humbly acknowledg and confesse, MSS. penes me. that I have offended the King his Majestie, and his Laws. First, in that, contrary to the Prohibition sent unto me, and without Warrant, I coyned Testons in the Moneths of *May*, *June* and *July*, in the yere of our 1547. to a great Sum; but the Certenty therof I know not.

And also in the Clyppings or Shearings of the Mony I defrawded his Highnes veary moche, but how moche I cannot be certen; but I am sure it was above IIII M. Li. Wherby upon a desire of my own gayne I made the Money too light out of the Remedy.

I do also Confess, that when the Monethly Doings or Books were brought unto me, I did use every Moneth to strike out as moch as I thought good: and to th'entent I might the better do so, I falsified th'indentures of the Coynage, and burned al such bokes, Indentures and Writings, as might justly have charged me. But to what Sum I deceyved his Majesty by this meane, I am not able to express. But sure I am it amounteth to a notable Sum, moch more than al that I have will be able to pay.

For the which my said Offences, and al other, I submit my self wholly to his Highnes mercy, and acknowledg my self most worthy death and heynous punishment; and only trust of his Highnes Mercy and Perdon, by the goodnes of my L. Protector his Grace, who hath hitherto ben most merciful to al men.

Humbly, of my knees, and with a most woful hert, a man most ashamed of my Deads, of any man Lyving; Requiring not justice, to be executed towards me, but mercy. And what Fortune or Lyf God shal put into the Kings Majesty, my L. Protector his Grace,



and the Counsayles Minds to geve me; that must nedes be better then my deserts. And I shal take that thankfully, as of the benefit oonly, and dayly prey for ther Estate, with most herty preyer and request to Almighty God.

*F. Skrewsbury.*

*W. Sharington.*

*Thomas Southampton.*

*T. Smith.*

## ZZ.

*A Pious Prayer of Q. Katharin Parre; By her composed in short Ejaculations suited to her Condition.*

MSS. D. Sampson, M.D.

**M**OST benign Lord *Jesu*, Grant me thy grace, that it may alway work in me, and persevere with me unto the end.

Grant me, that I may ever desire and wil that which is most pleasant, and most acceptable unto thee.

Thy Wil be my Wil; and my Wil be to follow always thy Will.

Let there be alway in me one Wil and one Desire with thee, and that I have no desire to wil or not to wil, but as thou wilt.

Lord, thou knowest what thing is most profitable and most expedient for me.

Give me therefore what thou wilt, as much as thou wilt, and when thou wilt.

Do with me what thou wilt, as it shal please thee, and as shal be most to thine Honor.

Put me where thou wilt, and freely do with me in all things after thy Will.

Thy Creature I am, and in thy hands; Lead me and Turn me where thou wilt.

Lo! I am thy Servant, ready to al things that thou commandest. For I desire not to Live to my self, but to thee.

Lord *Jesu*! I pray thee grant me Grace, that I never set my Heart on the things of this World, but that al carnal and Worldly Affections may utterly dy and be mortified in me.

Grant me above al things, that I may rest in thee, and fully quiet and pacify my Heart in thee.

For thou, Lord, art the very true Peace of Heart, and the perfect Rest of the Soul; and without thee al things be grievous and unquiet.

My Lord *Jesu*, I beseech thee be with me in every Place, and at al Times; and let it be to me a special Solace, gladly for to love to lack all worldly Solace.

And if thou withdraw thy comfort from me at any time, keep me O Lord, from Separation, [Desperation,] and make me patiently to abide thy Will and Ordinance.



O Lord *Jesu*, thy Judgments be righteous, and thy Providence is much better for me than al that I can imagin or devise.

Wherefore do with me in al things as it shal please thee.

For it may not be but wel, al that thou dost.

If thou wilt that I be in Light, be thou Blessed; If thou wilt that I be in Darknes, be thou also Blessed.

If thou vouchsafe to comfort me, be thou highly blessed; and if thou wilt I ly in trouble, and without Comfort, be thou likewise ever Blessed.

Lord, give me grace gladly to suffer whatsoever thou wilt shal fal upon me, and patiently to take at thy hand Good and Bad, Bitter and Sweet, Joy and Sorrow: and for al things that shal befall unto me heartily to thank thee.

Keep me, Lord, from Sin, and I shal then dread neither Death nor Hell.

O! what Thanks ought I to give unto thee, which hast suffered the grievous Death of the Cross to deliver me from my Sins, and to obtain everlasting Life for me?

Thou gavest us most perfect Example of Patience, fulfilling and obeying the Wil of thy Father, even unto Death.

Make me, Wretched Sinner, obediently to use my self after thy Wil in al things, and patiently to bear the Burthen of this corrupt Life.

For tho' this Life be tedious, and as a heavy Burthen to my Soul, yet nevertheles through thy Grace and by Example of thee, it is now made much more easy, and comfortable, than it was before thy Incarnation and Passion.

Thy holy Life is our way to thee, and by following of that we walk to thee that art our Head and Saviour. And except thou hadst gon before and shewed us the way to everlasting Life, who would endeavour himself to follow thee, seeing we be yet so slow and dul; having the Light of thy blessed Example and holy Doctrin to lead and direct us?

O Lord *Jesu*, make that possible by Grace that is to me impossible by Nature.

Thou knowest wel, that I may little suffer, and that I am soon cast down, and overthrown with a little Adversity. Wherefore I beseech thee, O Lord, to strengthen me with thy Spirit, that I may willingly suffer for thy sake al maner of Troubles and Afflictions.

Lord, I wil knowledge unto thee al mine unrighteousnes, and I wil confes to thee al the unstableness of my Heart.

Oftentimes a very little thing troubleth me sore, and maketh me dul and slow to serve thee.

And sometimes I purpose to stand strongly; but when a little trouble cometh, it is to me great Anguish and Grief; and of a right little thing riseth a grievous Temptation to me.

Yea, when I think my self to be sure and strong, as it seemeth I have the upper hand, suddenly I feel my self ready to fal with a little blast of Temptation.



Behold therefore, Good Lord, my weakness, and consider my Frailnes, best known to thee.

Have mercy on me and deliver me from al Iniquity and Sin, that I be not intangled therewith.

Oftentimes it grieveth me fore, and in a maner confoundeth me, that I am so unstable, so weak and so frail in resisting sinful Motions.

Which altho' they draw me not away to consent, yet nevertheless their Assaults be very grievous unto me

And it is tedious to me to live in such Battail, albeit I perceive that such Battail is not unprofitable for me. For therby I know the better my self and mine own Infirmities, and that I must seek help only at thy Hands, &c.

It is to me an unpleasant Burthen, what Pleasure foeever the World offereth me here.

I desire to have inward Fruition in thee, but I cannot attain therto, &c. *And to a great length are these pious Breathings of the Soul of this excellent Queen, extended.*



## ZZZ.

An Account of the Kings Sales of Chauntries, Colleges, &c. in  
the Second year of his Reign.

| Chantry, College, Hof-<br>pital, Guild, &c.                                                                                                                                                          | Yearly Value.                                                      | Purchase.         | Purchaser. <small>K. Edw.<br/>Book of Sales.</small> |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------|------------------------------------------------------|
| The Chantry up-<br>on the Bridge of<br>great Totneys in the<br>County of Devon,<br>and other Lands.                                                                                                  | 21 : 0 : 0 ob.                                                     | 397 : 4 : 8 ob.   | John Peter,<br>and John Bo-<br>gan.                  |
| Chantry of St.<br>Maries within the<br>Parochial Church of<br>Chard, Count. So-<br>merfet, and other<br>Lands.                                                                                       | 44 : 8 : 0 q.<br>5 : 4 : 11                                        | 1417 : 19 : 9 ob. | John White-<br>horn, and<br>John Bayly.              |
| College of S. Job.<br>Baptist of Stoke, jux-<br>ta Clare in Com. Suf-<br>folk, &c.                                                                                                                   | 3 : 6 : 8<br>18 : 2 : 4<br>0 : 6 : 8<br>6 : 11 : 2 ob.             | 958 : 3 : 5 ob.   | John Cheke,<br>and Walter<br>Moyle.                  |
| Capital Messuage<br>and Tenement cal-<br>led Catford, lying<br>in Lewisham in Kent,<br>lately belonging to<br>the Coll. of Corpus<br>Christi, near the<br>Church of St. Laur.<br>Pountney, Lond, &c. | 98 : 0 : 6 ob.                                                     | 2034 : 14 : 10    | Hen. Polstede,<br>& Will. More.                      |
| Chantry in the<br>Parochial Church of<br>S. Mich. Costam, in<br>the City of Norw.<br>&c.                                                                                                             | 3 : 2 : 11<br>4 : 17 : 0<br>2 : 18 : 0<br>2 : 16 : 0<br>11 : 6 : 8 | 492 : 11 : 8      | Edw. Warner,<br>Kt. and Ric.<br>Catlin.              |
| The College of<br>the Name of Jesu,<br>in Bury S. Edm. Suff.<br>&c.                                                                                                                                  | 18 : 4 : 6<br>2 : 0 : 0                                            | 497 : 8 : 0       | Rich. Corbet.                                        |
| The Messuage and<br>House called the Tri-<br>nity Hal, otherwise<br>The Common Hal of<br>the Fraternity or                                                                                           | 18 : 16 : 0                                                        | Given.            | Will. Hawy,<br>alias Somers.<br><br>Guild            |



| Chauntry, Coll. Hof-<br>pit. Guild, &c.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | Yearly Value.            | Purchase.                       | Purchaser.                                                        |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Guild of the <i>Trinity</i><br>founded in the Ch.<br>of <i>S Botolph</i> with-<br>out <i>Aldersgate</i> . And<br>8 Meases commonly<br>called the <i>Trinity</i><br><i>Ally, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                      |                          |                                 |                                                                   |
| Three Messuages,<br>Tenements, &c. in<br><i>S. Mary Aldermay</i> ,<br><i>London</i> , belonging<br>to the Chantry at<br>the Altar of <i>S. Job.</i><br><i>Baptist</i> in the Chap-<br>pel near the Paro-<br>chial Church of <i>Ald-</i><br><i>dermay</i> aforesaid,<br>upon the Charnel<br>there, commonly cal-<br>led <i>Exportes Chaun-</i><br><i>try</i> , and divers other<br>Lands, &c. | 45 : 0 : 8<br>1 : 12 : 6 | 689 : 7 : 4                     | <i>Walter Young</i><br>and <i>Edward</i><br><i>Young.</i>         |
| All the Chaun-<br>try, called <i>Edmunds</i><br><i>Chauntry</i> in <i>Bar-</i><br><i>rington</i> in <i>Cambridg</i> ,<br>&c.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 69 : 6 : 2 q.            | 958 : 17 : 7 ob.                | <i>Thomas Wen-</i><br><i>dy</i> and <i>John</i><br><i>Barton.</i> |
| The Chauntry of<br><i>S. Job. Evangelist</i> ,<br>and <i>S. J. Baptist</i> , cal-<br>led <i>Farnacres Chaun-</i><br><i>try</i> , in the Parish of<br><i>Wickham</i> , <i>Comitat.</i><br><i>Durham.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                      | 17 : 19 : 6              | In consideration<br>of Service. | <i>Alex. Pringel.</i>                                             |
| The Chauntry of<br><i>Hedingham</i> , alias<br><i>Hedningham Sible</i> in<br><i>Comitat. Essex, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 8 : 14 : 5<br>2 : 15 : 4 | 324 : 6 : 0                     | <i>John Lucas,</i><br><i>Esq;</i>                                 |
| The Chauntry of<br><i>Coberley</i> in <i>Gloce-</i><br><i>stersh.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 8 : 12 : 0               | 206 : 8 : 0                     | <i>Wil. Bridges,</i><br><i>Kt.</i>                                |
| The free Chappel<br>in <i>Caster S. Trinity</i><br>in the County of<br><i>Norf. cum pertinen-</i><br><i>tiis.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 2 : 13 : 4               | 64 : 0 : 0                      | <i>Will. Paston,</i><br><i>Kt.</i>                                |
| Two Chauntries<br>in <i>Wivenboo</i> in <i>Essex</i> ,<br>and the Maner of                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   | 13 : 9 : 0<br>2 : 0 : 0  | 339 : 18 : 0                    | <i>Walter Cely.</i>                                               |



| Chauntry, Coll. Hospit. Guild, &c.                                                                                                                               | Tearly Value.                                                                                                | Purchase.     | Purchaser.                            |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------|---------------------------------------|
| <i>Albins</i> belong. thereto, &c.                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                              |               |                                       |
| A Messuage, Tenement and Burgage in the County of Dorset, belonging to the Chauntry of S. Maries founded within the Church of S. Trinity of Dorchester, &c.      | 6 : 7 : 2<br>8 : 7 : 2                                                                                       | 149 : 11 : 8  | Fraun. Samuel and John Byll.          |
| Al the Sept, Scite, Circuit and Precincts of the College of the New Work of Leic. commonly called the New Work College in the Town of Leic.                      | 21 : 10 : 4                                                                                                  | 453 : 6 : 4   | Job. Beaumont, Esq; and William Gyes. |
| The Chauntry of Harrow founded in the Church of Harrow upon the Hil in Middlesex; and divers others Lands, &c.                                                   | 9 : 6 : 0<br>10 : 18 : 8<br>0 : 12 : 0<br>10 : 10 : 10<br>1 : 9 : 4<br>2 : 18 : 0<br>1 : 12 : 0<br>1 : 6 : 0 | 742 : 8 : 6   | William Gyes, and Michael Puresey.    |
| Messuage and Tenement called The Bel, and other Houses and Tenements, &c. in the Parish of S. Katharin Creechurch, given to maintain a Priest to celebrate Mass. | 13 : 6 : 0                                                                                                   | 219 : 7 : 0   | Giles Harrison.                       |
| Coggeshal Chauntry in Great Badow in the County of Essex, &c.                                                                                                    | 16 : 6 : 8<br>8 : 17 : 8 ob.<br>0 : 9 : 2                                                                    | 562 : 12 : 1  | Will. Mildmay and John Mildmay.       |
| The Chauntry in the Parochial Church of Kirkeby in Comit. Lanc.                                                                                                  | 6 : 15 : 0                                                                                                   | 148 : 10 : 0  | Thomas Starley.                       |
| The Chauntry of Great Sampford in Essex, &c. and the Chauntry of Iselham in the County of Cambr.                                                                 | 12 : 10 : 8                                                                                                  | 314 : 19 : 10 | Thomas Tyrel.                         |



| <i>Chauntry Coll. Hospit. Guild, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                | <i>Tearly Value.</i>                                              | <i>Purchase.</i> | <i>Purchaser.</i>                                   |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|
| The Guild or Fraternity of S. Trinity and S. Job. Baptist, in the Parochial Ch. of <i>Skepton Mallet</i> in <i>Somerf.</i>                                                                                                                                  | 14 : 17 : 8                                                       | 357 : 4 : 0      | <i>John Horner.</i>                                 |
| The Messuage and Tenement and al Shops, Cellars, &c. situate within <i>Christs church</i> within <i>Newgate, Lond.</i> For the Suttentation of a Priest to Celebrate in the Church of <i>Hackney</i> in <i>Middlesex, &amp;c.</i>                           | 20 : 0 : 0<br>1 : 19 : 0<br>4 : 10 : 0<br>3 : 0 : 0<br>2 : 12 : 8 | 894 : 4 : 2      | <i>Tho. Perse,</i><br><i>and William Alexander.</i> |
| The Rectory and Free Chappel of S. <i>Leonards</i> in the Parish of <i>Hollington</i> in <i>Suffex</i> ; And the Chauntry of <i>Lewton</i> founded in <i>Awton Gifford</i> in <i>Devon, &amp;c.</i>                                                         | 17 : 1 : 11                                                       | 1154 : 15 : 0    | <i>Job. Keyme,</i><br><i>and Richard Keyme.</i>     |
| Messuages, Lands and Tenements, &c. situate in the Parishes of <i>Chrisale</i> in <i>Essex</i> , and <i>Edelme-ton</i> , lately belonging to the Chauntry of S. <i>George</i> the Martyr within the Cathedral Church of <i>Heref.</i> and divers other, &c. | 4 : 0 : 0<br>0 : 6 : 8<br>1 : 00 : 0<br>1 : 9 : 7<br>3 : 19 : 6   | 311 : 16 : 0     | <i>Tho. Crawley.</i>                                |
| Messuage and Tenements called <i>The Plough</i> , and other Lands, Houses, &c. lying in <i>Faiter Lane Lond.</i> belonging to the Fraternity of S. <i>Sitbe</i> in the Church of S. <i>Andrews Holborn.</i>                                                 | 31 : 15 : 6                                                       | 643 : 16 : 10    | <i>Thom. Bartlet and Rich. Modye.</i>               |
| The Chauntry of <i>Sprotton</i> in the Coun-                                                                                                                                                                                                                | 19 : 16 : 8                                                       | 448 : 7 : 4      | <i>Silvester Taverner, and J. Hynde.</i>            |



| Chauntry, Coll. Hospit.<br>Guild, &c.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | Yearly Value.                                                                               | Purchase.                         | Purchaser.                              |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| ty of Northampton,<br>and al the Messua-<br>ges, Mills, &c.                                                                                                                                                                                                           |                                                                                             |                                   |                                         |
| House in Bunbu-<br>ry in the County<br>of Chester, called<br>the Chauntry-house<br>belonging to the<br>Chauntry or Chaun-<br>tries of two Priests<br>or Clerks, lately foun-<br>ded in the Parochial<br>Church of Bunbury,<br>called Sir Rafe Eger-<br>tons Chauntry. | 12 : 15 : 4                                                                                 | 435 : 16 : 8                      | Tho. Brom-<br>ley, Kt.                  |
| Lands and Pastures<br>&c. lying in West-<br>ham in Essex, and<br>al that Land con-<br>taining by Estima-<br>tion an Acre and<br>half in Layton, Essex,<br>given to the Susten-<br>tation of an Anniver-<br>sary, &c.                                                  | 85 : 15 : 7 ob.<br>5 : 4 : 0                                                                | 1924 : 10 : 1                     | Tho. Golding<br>and Walter<br>Celye.    |
| A Chauntry in<br>Sevenoke in Kent,<br>and the Messuage<br>and Tenement cal-<br>led The Chauntry-<br>house, &c.                                                                                                                                                        | 39 : 8 : 8                                                                                  | 947 : 17 : 0                      | Will. Twis-<br>den and John<br>Brown.   |
| Mansion and Te-<br>nement, called The<br>Mansion House of<br>the College or New-<br>hal in the Mountrey<br>within the City of<br>Wells, &c.                                                                                                                           | 15 : 0 : 4<br>2 : 13 : 8<br>3 : 0 : 7<br>8 : 9 : 1<br>3 : 10 : 4<br>1 : 6 : 8<br>4 : 13 : 4 | 728 : 0 : 2                       | John Ayle-<br>worth and<br>Will. Lacye. |
| A ruinous Chap-<br>pel, called the Rood<br>Chappel of Green-<br>wich.                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 0 : 5 : 0                                                                                   | In confidera-<br>tion of Service. | Rob. Hocke-<br>land.                    |
| The College of<br>S. John Baptist, of<br>Shotesbroke in Berks,<br>&c.                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 28 : 9 : 2                                                                                  | 963 : 0 : 8                       | Thomas Wel-<br>don and Edw.<br>Weldon.  |
| Manor and Re-<br>story of Winkbourn<br>VOL. II.                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | 27 : 19 : 7                                                                                 | In confidera-<br>tion of the Re-  | Will. Burnel.<br>in                     |



| <i>Chauntry Coll. Hospit.<br/>Guild, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                                   | <i>Yearly Value.</i>                                                                                   | <i>Purchase.</i>                                                                                                           | <i>Purchaser.</i>                      |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------|
| in Nottingham. belonging to the Priory or Hospital of S. Johns of Jerusalem in England.                                                                                            |                                                                                                        | story of Eastbech and in performance of K. Henry VIII. his Will.                                                           |                                        |
| The Manor of Colbridge in Kent, belonging to the College of S. Ste. Westm. and divers, &c.                                                                                         | 23 : 2 : 6<br>5 : 1 : 11 ob.<br>2 : 16 : 4 ob.<br>1 : 18 : 0                                           | 749 : 17 : 1 ob.                                                                                                           | Edward Wotton, Kt.                     |
| The Manors of Awbery, Winterbourn, and Charleton in Wilts; parcel of the Possession and Rents of the College of S. Mary and Al-Saints of Fotheringhay in Northampt. &c.            | Non patet.                                                                                             | 2808 : 4 : 10 ob. and in consideration of an exchange of woods, Lands, &c. in Essex, and in performance of K. Henries Wil. | Wil. Sharington, Kt.                   |
| Messuages and Tenements called Boyes in Falcot and Tolef-hunt Knights, in Essex; Parcel of the Guild or Fraternity of S. George of the Parish of S. Mary the Virgin in Walden, &c. | 1 : 13 : 4<br>2 : 5 : 7<br>1 : 9 : 4<br>2 : 3 : 5<br>3 : 5 : 8<br>3 : 9 : 7<br>2 : 3 : 4<br>0 : 15 : 8 | 346 : 4 : 10                                                                                                               | John Wells.                            |
| Chauntry of Penshurst in Kent, &c.                                                                                                                                                 | 8 : 18 : 8 q.                                                                                          | 214 : 8 : 6                                                                                                                | Gerrge Harper, Kt. and Rich. Frye.     |
| All that Messuage or Tenement in Channon-row Westm. belonging to the College of S. Stephens, and divers other Lands, &c.                                                           | 9 : 0 : 0<br>57 : 3 : 4<br>5 : 3 : 4<br>1 : 15 : 1<br>3 : 4 : 5<br>5 : 0 : 0                           | 1477 : 15 : 8                                                                                                              | Sir Michael Stanhope, and John Bellowe |
| The free Chappel of Tilne in the Parish of Hayton in Nott. &c.                                                                                                                     | 25 : 3 : 0                                                                                             | 575 : 1 : 0                                                                                                                | Tho. Swifte, and William Swifte.       |
| The Chauntry or free Chappel of S. Mary of Watney, Ox. &c.                                                                                                                         | 7 : 3 : 6 q.<br>2 : 13 : 4<br>16 : 16 : 8                                                              | 427 : 19 : 9                                                                                                               | Will. Boxe.                            |
| The Fraternity or Guild of Luton in Bedf. and Hert. and                                                                                                                            | 23 : 11 : 9<br>7 : 16 : 11<br>4 : 0 : 0                                                                |                                                                                                                            |                                        |



Of Originals.

91

| Chantry, Coll. Hospit. Guild, &c.                                                                                                                                                                                | Tearly Value.                                                                                                                 | Purchase.        | Purchaser.                              |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| al the Guild in Hitchyn in Hertf. and the whole House and Mansion, commonly called the <i>Brotherbed House</i> , situate in Hitchyn, &c.                                                                         | 2 : 2 : 0<br>10 : 16 : 0                                                                                                      | 1036 : 14 : 4    | Ranul. Burgh and Rob. Beverley.         |
| The Chantry of Swynford in Leic. and al the Messuage called <i>The Chantry House</i> , &c.                                                                                                                       | 2 : 17 : 5<br>2 : 14 : 5<br>3 : 10 : 4<br>10 : 6 : 8                                                                          | 404 : 12 : 0     | William Parker.                         |
| The Capital House and Scite of the College of <i>Whittington</i> in the Parish of <i>S. Michaels Pater Noster</i> , London, &c.                                                                                  | 4 : 6 : 8                                                                                                                     | 92 : 2 : 0       | Armagil Wade.                           |
| The Chantry called <i>Barkeleys Chantry</i> , founded in the Parochial Church of <i>Meere</i> in Wilts, &c.                                                                                                      | 22 : 11 : 2<br>7 : 12 : 2 ob.<br>3 : 0 : 0<br>3 : 1 : 0<br>2 : 2 : 2<br>3 : 2 : 0<br>3 : 14 : 10<br>2 : 12 : 3<br>77 : 11 : 0 | 2731 : 8 : 9 ob. | John Tbyrne Kt. and Laurence Hyde Gent. |
| Manor of <i>Bettiscomb</i> in the County of <i>Dorset</i> , belonging to the College of <i>S. Stevens Westm.</i>                                                                                                 | 28 : 2 : 4 ob.                                                                                                                | 661 : 8 : 9      | Rich. Randal.                           |
| The Farm and Barton of <i>Eynston</i> in the Parish of <i>Henxstreet</i> in <i>Somers.</i> belonging to the Chantry of <i>S. Katharine</i> in <i>Ilminster</i> in the said County, &c.                           | 36 : 3 : 11<br>25 : 13 : 4                                                                                                    | 1297 : 10 : 0    | Thomas Bell, Kt. and Rich. Duke, Esq;   |
| Five Messuages in <i>Beverly</i> in the County of <i>York</i> , called <i>The Mansion Houses</i> of the late Prebendaries of the Prebends of <i>S. Peter</i> , <i>S. James</i> , <i>S. Stephen</i> ,<br>VOL. II. | 23 : 13 : 1 q.<br>4 : 1 : 8                                                                                                   | 506 : 9 : 11     | Mich. Stanhope Kt. and Job. Bellows.    |



| Chantry, College, Hospital, Guild, &c.                                                                                                                                           | Yearly Value.                                                                   | Purchase.     | Purchaser.                                   |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------|----------------------------------------------|
| S. Katharine, and S. Martin, founded in the late College of Beverly, and divers, &c.                                                                                             | 1 : 8 : 0                                                                       | 0 : 0 : 0     |                                              |
| The Messuage and Tenem. known by the Name of Holmes College in the Parish of S. Gregory Lond. and belonging to the Chantry commonly called Holmes Chantry.                       | 72 : 4 : 8<br>8 : 2 : 8                                                         | 1289 : 7 : 6  | John Hulson and Wil. Pendred.                |
| Three Cottages or Tenem. and three Gardens belonging thereunto, in East Kirby in the County of Linc. late in the Occupation of the Chanterists of the Chantry of East Kirby, &c. | 21 : 15 : 0                                                                     | 606 : 9 : 0   | Rich. Goodrick and Wil. Breton.              |
| Manor of Chedworth in the County of Glouc. and the Scite of the College of Penkrich in Staff. &c.                                                                                | 9 : 0 : 3<br>1 : 10 : 8<br>1 : 10 : 6<br>3 : 3 : 9<br>2 : 0 : 0<br>38 : 16 : 10 | 1286 : 5 : 7  | John Earl of Warwic, Ric. Forset and others. |
| Chantry of Aston in Aston neer Birmingham in Warw. and the House and Mansion of the Chantry; and the Manor of Tngton &c.                                                         | 5 : 7 : 7<br>17 : 1 : 8<br>72 : 14 : 8                                          | 1522 : 16 : 3 | Rich. Pallady and Francis Foxhal.            |
| Chantry called Hotofts Chantry in Orset in the County of Essex, &c.                                                                                                              | 3 : 7 : 7<br>2 : 17 : 10<br>1 : 14 : 4<br>18 : 0 : 5                            | 532 : 13 : 4  | Clement Cysley and John Leeds.               |
| Chantry of S. Mary Magdalen in Sprouston in the County of Norf. and divers other Lands, &c.                                                                                      | 9 : 0 : 6<br>2 : 19 : 6                                                         | 276 : 0 : 0   | Rob. Southwel, Kt. and John Corbet.          |



| Chauntry Col. Hospit. Guild,                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | Yearly Value.                                                                                              | Purchase.                                                                        | Purchaser.                                   |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| The free Chappel called <i>Milkhouse Chappel</i> , in the Parish of <i>Cranebroke</i> in <i>Kent</i> , and the whole Scite, Sept, Compas and Circuit of the said Chappel, &c.                                                                                            | 3 : 6 : 8<br>3 : 10 : 10<br>78 : 0 : 4 ob.                                                                 | 262 : 3 : 8                                                                      | <i>John Baker, Kt.</i>                       |
| House and Scite of the Priory of <i>Snellesbal</i> , in <i>Bucks</i> , and al the Manor of <i>Harlington</i> , &c.                                                                                                                                                       | 146 : 7 : 9 ob.                                                                                            | Partly in Exchange, and partly in fulfilling of the Will of <i>K. Hen. VIII.</i> | <i>Thomas Palmer, Kt.</i>                    |
| The Chauntry called <i>Batemans Chauntry</i> , in <i>Borough</i> in the County of <i>Camb.</i> and the Chauntry called <i>Jenet Childs</i> , alias the Chauntry of <i>S. Mary de Witherham</i> in <i>Essex</i> .                                                         | 11 : 11 : 0<br>9 : 12 : 5                                                                                  | 508 : 2 : 0                                                                      | <i>Gilbert Claydon and Rob. Barker.</i>      |
| The Chauntry of <i>S. Anne de la Gon</i> , in <i>Shafton</i> in <i>Dorset</i> , and the free Chappel of <i>Little Mayne</i> in <i>Dorf.</i> and the Chauntry of <i>Langton</i> , called <i>Gildon Chauntry</i> , founded in the Parochial Church of <i>Langton</i> , &c. | 2 : 19 : 4 ob.<br>4 : 0 : 0<br>3 : 0 : 0<br>3 : 6 : 8<br>1 : 10 : 0<br>7 : 0 : 0<br>0 : 4 : 0<br>2 : 5 : 0 | 569 : 2 : 10                                                                     | <i>Thomas Boxley and Rob. Reve.</i>          |
| Chauntry of <i>Peppingbury</i> in <i>Kent</i> , &c.                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | 11 : 9 : 0 diq.                                                                                            | 253 : 8 : 0                                                                      | <i>John Revers.</i>                          |
| The Church of <i>Bablack</i> in the City of <i>Coventry</i> , parcel of the Guild of the said City, called <i>Trinity Guild</i> .                                                                                                                                        | Non patet.                                                                                                 | Nihil.                                                                           | The City of <i>Coventry</i> .                |
| The Free Chappel called <i>S. Margarets Chappel</i> in <i>Tadingston</i> , <i>Suff.</i> and the Chauntry called <i>Depden</i> in <i>Kent</i> , &c.                                                                                                                       | 14 : 19 : 6 ob.                                                                                            | 342 : 2 : 2                                                                      | <i>John Earl of Oxford, and Tho. Almore.</i> |
| The Chauntry called <i>Our Lady Chaun-</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                            |                                                                                  | try                                          |



| Chauntry, Col. Hospit. Guild.                                                                                                                                                           | Yearly Value.                                                                                   | Purchase.      | Purchaser.                                             |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|--------------------------------------------------------|
| try in <i>Alton</i> in <i>Suff.</i> and the Manor of <i>Bowerhal</i> in <i>Essex</i> , belonging to <i>Mills Chauntry</i> in <i>Melford</i> in <i>Suff. &amp;c.</i>                     | 19 : 6 : 0<br>6 : 13 : 4                                                                        | 486 : 0 : 0    | <i>Thomas Paston, Kt.</i>                              |
| The Messuage Tenement and Inn, called <i>The Helmet</i> in <i>Kings-street Westm.</i> and an House of an Inkeeper within the said Messuage belonging to <i>S. Stephens Coll. Westm.</i> | 13 : 0 : 8<br>8 : 3 : 1<br>5 : 5 : 8<br>1 : 6 : 8                                               | 562 : 5 : 4    | <i>Rich. Audeley, and Job. Rede.</i>                   |
| The Chauntry of <i>Hatfield Broad Oak</i> in <i>Essex, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                      | 5 : 13 : 4<br>11 : 0 : 2<br>0 : 6 : 8<br>0 : 8 : 4<br>31 : 14 : 5                               | 821 : 11 : 9   | <i>Walter Farre, and Rafe Standish.</i>                |
| The Chauntry of <i>S. Mary Magdalen</i> in the Parochial Church of <i>Cross Thwaite</i> in <i>Cumberl. &amp;c.</i>                                                                      | 5 : 0 : 0<br>6 : 8 : 11<br>6 : 19 : 2<br>3 : 2 : 8 ob.<br>0 : 19 : 6<br>3 : 0 : 0<br>59 : 3 : 1 | 1696 : 14 : 10 | <i>Thom. Brende.</i>                                   |
| The Chappel and Scite of the Chappel of the <i>Assumption</i> of the <i>Bl. Virgin Mary</i> , upon the Bridge of the Town of <i>Bristol, &amp;c.</i>                                    | 1 : 0 : 0                                                                                       | 51 : 0 : 0     | The Maior and Commonalty of the City of <i>Bristol</i> |
| The Chauntry of <i>S. Mary</i> in <i>Alfreton</i> in the County of <i>Darb.</i> and the Scite of the Hospital of <i>Cassleton</i> in the said County, and divers other Lands, &c.       | 7 : 8 : 8<br>2 : 17 : 0<br>2 : 1 : 0<br>2 : 0 : 0                                               | 347 : 10 : 0   | <i>Thom Babington.</i>                                 |
| <i>Farnham Chauntry</i> in <i>Surrey, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                                       | 21 : 3 : 4                                                                                      | 407 : 4 : 0    | <i>John White, and Stev. Kyrt.</i>                     |
| The Chauntry called <i>Whaplodes</i> in the Parish of <i>Chalfouts S. Peters</i> in <i>Bucks.</i>                                                                                       | 10 : 17 : 6                                                                                     | 261 : 0 : 0    | <i>Robert Drury Kt.</i>                                |
| The free Chappel of <i>Arley Whiteknights</i> in <i>Sonnyng</i> in <i>Berks, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                | 1 : 13 : 4<br>0 : 10 : 0<br>1 : 3 : 4<br>1 : 16 : 0<br>12 : 18 : 10                             | 382 : 7 : 8    | <i>Henry Polsted, and William More.</i>                |
| Three Messuages in <i>Totehil-street, Westmin.</i> parcel of the Land of the Fraternity or Guild of <i>S. Mary</i> , founded in in the Church of <i>S. Margaret Westm. &amp;c.</i>      | 31 : 3 : 2                                                                                      | 674 : 3 : 6    | <i>Will. Chester, and Christo-pher Nedeham.</i>        |





## BOOK II. A A:

### Archbishop Cranmers Treatise of Unwritten Verities.

**I**N the day of *Pentecost*, whan the holy Ghoost descended upon the Apostles and Discyple of Chryst, they receyved <sup>MSS.D.Joli.</sup> <sup>D. Episc.</sup> <sup>Ellen.</sup> ~~such~~ Grace and goostly knowlege, that they had forthwith the Gyfte of the understandyng of Scrypture, to speak in the Tonges of al men: And also that upon whomsoever they layde theyr handes the holy Ghoost should descend upon them. And therupon they by theyr Preachyng and good Doctryne converted in short tyme great Multitudes of people unto the Fayth of Chryst. And after that, dyvers blessed Men in strength of the Fayth, wrote the lyfe, Miracles, Doctryne, Passion, Death and Resurrection of our Mayster *Chryst*: But four of those Writings were only receyved by al the whole Church of Chryst, that is to say, of *Matthew*, *Mark*, *Luke* and *John*. And they receyved them to be of such Auctoryty, that it should not be lawful to any man that would Confess Chryst, to deny them. And they were called *The four Gospels of Chryst*. And the Epytles of *Paul*, the *Acts* of the Apostles, the *Epistles* that be called *Canonyke*, and the *Apocalyps*, were receyved to be of lyke Auctoryty, as the Gospels were. And thus by Assent as wel of the People as of the Clergy, was the New Testament affirmed to be of such Auctoryty as it is now taken to be of, and as it is of indede. So that it is not lawful to deny any thyng that it affirmeth, ne to affirme any thyng that it denyeth. And it is no mervayle though it be taken to be of such strength. For it was auctorysed, whan the people that were newly converted to the Fayth were ful of Grace and of Devotion, replenished with Vertues, desyryng al way the lyfe to come, and the Helthe of theyr own Souls, and of theyr Neyghbours.

Than also were blessed Bishops, blessed Preeftes, and other blessed Persons of the Clargy. And what could such men ask of God ryght wisely, that sholde be denyed them? And who may thynk, but that they and al the People at the said Auctorizing of the Scrypture, prayed devoutly for the Assistaunce of the holy Gost, that they might have grace to Auctoryze such as shod be to his Honour, to the Encrease of his Fayth, and to the Helth of the Souls of al his People?

The *Time* also that thys Auctoryzing of the New Testament, and the gatheryng it togyder was made, was, as I suppose, the Tyme of the moost high and gracyous Sheddyng out of the Mercy of God into the World, that ever was from the begynnyng of the World unto thys day: And I mean the tyme that was from the Incarnation of Chryst unto [*i.e.* until] the sayd Auctorysng of the New Testament was accomplished. For in part of that Tyme our Lord was here himself in bodyly Presence, Preachyng and Teachyng hys Laws, Gatheryng and chusyng hys Apostels and Discyple, that sholde teach and preach hys Laws, whan he was gone:

Which



Which they did not only by Word, but also by good Examples, that yet remaine unto this day: So that al that Tyme may in maner be called *The Golden Tyme*. And not only the New Testament was than receyved, but also the Old Testament. And by preaching and Teaching of these Testaments, was the Fayth of Chryst mervaylously encreased in many Countrees.

After al this, by a common speaking among the People, the Byshops, Preefts, and other of the Clergy, which were as Lanternes unto the People, and the specyal Maynteyners of the Christen Fayth, were called *The Chyrche*, or men of the Chyrche: and under the colour of that name *Chyrche*, many of the Clergy in proces of tyme pretended, that they might make Expositions of Scripture, as the Universal Chyrche of Christ, that is to say, as the hole Congregation of Christen People, myght. And therupon whan Coveytyse and Pryde somewhat encreased in many of the Clergy, they expounded very favourably dyvers Texts of Scripture, that founded to the Mayntenaunce of theyr Honour, Power, Jurisdiction and Ryches: And over that, take upon them to affirme, that they were the *Chyrche* that myght not erre: and that Christ and his Apostells had spoken and taught many thyngs, that were not expressely in Scripture, and that the People were as wel bound to love them, and that under lyke payne, as if they had ben expressed in Scripture, and called them *Unwritten Verities*. Wherof I shal, as for an Example, recyte part.

Fyrst, That Christ after hys *Maundy*, and after he had washen the Fete of his Apostles, taught them to make holy Cream, for ministracion of the Sacraments: and that they have as ful Auctoryty to do the same, as yf it had been conteyned in Scripture, that Christ had gyven them power to do it.

That it is a Tradicion of the Apostles, that *Images* ought to be set up.

That the Apostles ordeyned that al Faithful People should resort to the Chyrch of *Rome*, as to the most hygh and principal Chyrch of al other: and yet it cannot be proved by Scripture, ne by any other sufficient Auctoryty, that they made any such Ordynaunce.

Also, that the *Creed*, which is commonly and universally used to be sayd by the common people, was made by the Twelve Apostles: and though the Articles therof are firmly and stedfastly to be beleved of every Christen man, as Artycles sufficiently proved by Scripture, yet that they were gathered togyder by the XII Apostles. And specially, that every one of the Apostles made one Artycle, as Paynters shew that they did, cannot be proved by Scripture; ne is it not necessary to be beleved for our Salvation. And though it were but a smal Offence in the people to beleve that it were an Article necessary to be beleved for our Salvation, because the Clergy, which be the Lanternes and Leders unto the people, do instruct them that it is so; And it is nether agaynst the Law of God, nor the Law of reason, but that it may be so; Yet it is a great Offence to the Clergy, to affirme for certayn the thyng that is to themself uncertayne. And therefore it would be reformed for eschewyng of Offences unto the Clergy.

Also,



Also, that the People shal pray into the *Est* it not proved by Scripture. And yet they say that by the Tradicion of the Apostles it is to be beleved.

Also, that our Lady was not born in Orygynal Synne.

That she was Assumpte into Heven, Body and Soule.

All these and many others, divers of the Clergy cal *Unwrytten Veryties*, left in the World by the Tradicion and Relacion of the Apostles, which, as they say, the People are bound to beleve as wel as Scripture, For they say, that syth no man were bound to beleve Scripture, but bycause the Chyrch sayth, This is Scripture, so they say, that in the thyngs before reherfed, the Chyrche wytnesseth them to be true; and that the People have assented to them many yeres: Wherefore it is not lawful to doubt at them, ne to denye them. To this Reason it may be answered, that yf it can be proved by as good and as hygh Auctoryte, that these thyngs were left in the World by the Tradicion and Relacion of the Apostles, as the Auctoryfing of Scripture was, that than they are to be beleved as veryly as Scripture: But yf they be wytnessed to be so by some Byshops and Priests, and some other of the Clergy only, or that they be wytnessed to be so by Decrees and Laws made by Byshops of *Rome*, and by the Clergy of *Rome*, or by opinion of Doctors onely; than no Man is bound to accept them, ne beleve them, as they are bound to beleve Scripture. For Scripture, as it is sayd before, was auctoryfed by the hole Chyrche of God, and in the most Elect and moost gracious Tyme, that of lykelyhode hath ben syth the begynnyng of Christs Chyrche. And yf it be sayd that many of the sayd Opyinions have ben affirmed and approved by General Councils, in whom no Error may be presumed, it may be answered, that that though the Chyrch gathered together in the holy Ghost may not erre in thyngs perteyning to the Fayth, that yet forasmoche as some General Councils have ben gathered, and not by the power of Kyngs and Princes, that be heads of the Chyrche, and that Laws have ben also made at such General Councils, of divers thyngs which have not perteyned to the Fayth, but to the mayntenance of the Auctoryte or Profyt of the Clergy, or of soch Artycles as ar before reherfed, that they cal *Unwrytten Veryties*, which undoubtedly perteyn not merly to the Fayth, that it may therfore be lawfully doubted, whether soch Councils were gathered in the holy Gooft, or not; and whether they erred in their Judgments or not. And it is no doubt, but that in some general Councils they have done so indede.

And I suppose that there be but few matters more necessary ne more expedyent for Kyngs and Princes to loke upon, than upon these Unwrytten Veryties, and of making of Laws by the Clergy. For yf they be suffered to mayntayn that there be any Verytyes, which the People are bound to beleve upon payn of Dampnacion besyde Scripture, it wyl perswade partly an Insufficiency in Scripture, and therupon myght follow great daungers many wayes. And yf it were admytted, that the Clergy myght be receaved to affirme that there be soch Verytyes beside Scripture, yet they could not prove them. For if they wold in prose therof say, that the Apostles



fyrst taught those Verities, and that they have so continued from one to another unto thys day, and shew none other Auctoryty therof but that, than al the saying may as lightly be denyed as it was affirmed, and with as hygh Auctoryty. And yf they wil ferther attempt to approve it by Laws made by the Bylhops of Rome, and by the Clergy at Rome, yea, or by Laws and Decrees made at General Councils; Yet these Laws and Decrees may be lawfully doubted at, as before appeareth. So that they cannot by reason therof dryve any necessitye of Belefe into any Person.

Wherefore Kyngs and Prynces, that have receaved of God the hygh Power and Charge over the People, are bound to prohybyte soch sayings upon great payns; and not to suffre a Belefe to be grounded upon thyngs uncertayne.

But yet yf some of the sayd Articles, that be called *Unwrytten Verities*, were suffered to contynue as thyngs that be more lyke to be true than otherwyse, and no necessitye of Belefe to be deryved therupon, I suppose verely it myght wel be suffered, that they shuld stand styl, not prohybyte: as it is of that Artycle, that the XII Apostles made the Crede: That it is good to pray into the *Eft*: That our Lady was not born in Original Sin: That she was assumed Body and Soul. And therefore yf it were ordeyned by Kyngs and Princes, that no Man, upon payne to be taken as a Breaker of the Quyetnes of the People, shuld deny any of the sayd Articles, it were wel done to kepe Unytie among the People. But divers Realms may ordre soch thyngs diversely, as they shal seme convenyent, after the dysposition of the People ther. For they be but thyngs indyfferent, to be beleved, or not beleved, and are nothyng lyke to Scripture, to the Artycles of the Fayth, the X Commaundements, ne to soch other moral Lernyngs, as are merely deryved out of Scripture. For they must of necessity be beleved and obeyed of every Christen Man. For after Saynt Paul *ad Ephes.* liii. there must be one God, one Fayth, and one Baptisme. But to suffre them to stand as *Unwrytten Verities*, that may not be denyed, and to have theyr Auctoryty onely by Laws made by the Clergy, it semeth daungerous. For it myght cause many of the Clergy to esteeme more power in the Clergy than ther is indede. And that myght lift many of them into a hygher Estimation of themself than they ought to have. Whereby myght follow great daunger unto the People. For as long as there be disorders in the Clergy, it wyl be hard to bryng the People to good Ordre.

And al this that I have touched before may be reformed without any Rebuke to the Clergy that now is. For the pretence of soch *Unwrytten Verities*, ne yet of making of Laws, to bynd Kyngs and Princes and theyr People, ne yet that both Powers, that is to say, Spiritual and Temporal, were in the Clergy; began not in the Clergy that now is, but in theyr Predecessours.

And as to the sayd other pretended *Unwrytten Verities*, that is to say, that al men shuld resort to Rome, as to the most high and principal Chyrche: And that it is a Tradycion and *Unwrytten Verity*, that Y-mages ought to be fet up; it were wel done, that they and soch other Opinions, wherby Pryde, Covetyse or Vain glory myght spring hereafter, were



were prohybyte by Auctorytie of the Parliament upon great paynes. And as to the sayd Unwrytten Verytie, That holy Creame shuld be made after the Maundie, it perteyneth onely to them that have auctortie to judge, whether it be an unwrytten Veritie, or not, and to judge also, what is the very Auctortie of makying of that Creame. And therefore I wyl no ferther speke of that matter at thys tyme.

~~~~~

B B.

Sir William Paget *Ambassador with the Emperor, His Letter to the L. Protector.*

SIR, After my most humble Commendations to your Grace, Albeit ye shal perceive by our common Letters the maner of our Proceeding with *Monf. D'Arras* and his Company, wherof we have deferred to advertise your Grace, upon trust to have had ere this time Answer of the Emperors Mind in certain Points touched in our Conference; Yet I have thought it my Part to render a Reason to your Grace of the Manner of my Proceeding, to the Intent, if your Grace like the same, I may perfect my Beginning therein; And if your Grace think good otherwise, that then you may inform me of your Plesure, which I wil not fail to follow accordingly.

*Cott. Libr.
Galba B. 12.*

And first, Sir, I consider that the chief Cause of my coming hither is to desciphre the Emperor: Which is divided into two Branches: The one, for the Confirmation of the old Treaty; And the other, to bring him with us into War against *France*: If he wil assent, as I suppose he wil, and we look hourly to know the Certainty.

To the Confirmation then, May it seem to your Grace, that notwithstanding any Practicé that hath been used to him by any other against you, and notwithstanding the Proceedings at home, he mindeth to entertain your Friendship. If he assent to the understanding of my Cause put to them, then is there a more hope of his Friendship. If he wil be content also to accept *Bologn* into Defence upon Reason reciproque, then by al likelihood, considering in what Doubtfulnes *Boloign* is at present to be assailed, hee wil not stick to enter Enimity with *France*: and also is determined (in my poor Opinion, under Correction of your Grace) to fal out with them in respect of his own Affairs, though you should not move the same. But if he wil agree to the first Point only, or to the first and second, then, Sir, you know whereto to Trust at his Hands, and must maintain your Affairs with *France* of your selves. And then in this Case to move him to joyn with you for Invasion

against *France* with an Army, and not to come to a lesser Point, which is the Mean to a greater, I think it shal but discover you too much, and hinder your Doings hereafter peradventure with *France*: And therefore rather to pas it over in Silence.

Now, Sir, if as I said he assent to the Third Point, *Viz.* To accept *Boloygn* into Defence, I think also it shal be best not to speak of the Common Invasion with Armies. For I am of Opinion, that tho' you bind not your self to a Common Invasion, yet wil he the next year Invade. And so need not you to do, except you list. And if you wil you may: Mary, at Liberty. And tho' he do enter into Invasion for his own Quarrels, or *France* with him, yet need you not to go further (except your Affairs lead you) than the Emperor hath and doth now with the *Scots*. So as I conclude upon this my blind Nibbling at the Matter, that you need not to have any mention made of Common Invasion. For you mean not but to bring him in; and this way for the Defence of *Bolign* serveth wel enough for the purpose, without entangling your self further in the War than you shal wel get out of it again, when you shal be weary of it. Neither, if they here shal move the Common Invasion, and wil not otherwise to accept the Defence of *Boloygn*; then rather to joyn in the Common Invasion, than to let slip the Anchor hold.

And thus far, Sir, I have shewed your Grace my simple Opinion in this Matter, beseeching your Grace, both to take the same in good Part, and also to signify to me your Pleasure therein, and whether you think it not good for the King, that I move the Points to be added to the Treaty, *Viz.* That he shall be Common Enemy (besides the Case of Invasion) that surprizeth any of the Kings and the Emperors Forts, in any the Places comprehended in the Treaties on both sides, or that now shal come into Comprehension. *Item*, That safe Conduct to traffic shal be neither given nor taken, either to your Common Enemy, or of your own Subjection. And your Graces Pleasure known in these Points, I think to make an End of the Matter shortly; and they here seem to look for the same.

As for the Matter of Mariage, seing it hath been broached there, and largely refreshed by us here, I desire also your Plesure, if they speak no more of it, whether we shal estones enter the same; for a thing I note, that hitherto they have given us leave to move al the Overtures in al Points, and they only give ear. Which I pray your Grace to consider, and to signify your Pleasure fully in every thing accordingly. And thus with my most humble Commendations to my Ladies Grace, I pray God send you both long Life and good Health, and as wel to do as I would mine own self: From *Brussels* the last of *June* 1549.

Will. Paget.

The

C C.

The Protectors and Councils Answer to Pagets Letters.

After our right hertty Commendations: We have seen your Letters *ubi supra* of the 25 of June, the Answer wherunto being deferred hitherto, We received yesterday your other Letters of the last of the same Month. And by them both do understand at good length your Proceedings hitherto both with the Emperor and his Council. Wherin like as you have laid a good Foundation, and wel entred the Matter, so have we no doubt but you wil in likewise procede to the rest, according to your accustomed good Wisdom and Foresight: and by the Answer to be made from the Emperor upon this your Conference with the Council, We think, ye shal se much of his Determination, and to what Effect this your Journey is like to grow. Wherupon we may also be occasioned to write further as shal be then thought good. In the mean time for Answer unto such Points, as by your further Letters to me, the Secretary, and sithence by your others you desire to be answered, we have thought good to signify, as followeth:

First, Where you would know, whether you shal forbear to enter any Treaty of that part of your Instructions touching a joynt Invasion or Enimty against *France*, til further knowledge of the *French* Proceedings; you shal understand, that from *France*, notwithstanding our sending, and their former Answers (as you know) we never heard any thing til yesterday. And by Letters from Mr. *Wotton* we were advertised, that the *French* King hath appointed for Commissioners on his Part *Monfr. De Rochepot*, *Monfr. De Chastillon*, and one *Monfr. De Mortier*, one of the Masters of the Requests; al Three of the Council. At the naming of whom, albeit the Constable gave our Ambassador very good Words, Yet for that the two chief of these Men be Officers upon their Frontiers, and named by them contrary to the Request made on our behalf, we doubt much what shal ensue of this Meeting, notwithstanding al their fair Words. And yet that notwithstanding we were of Opinion before the Receipt of your latter Letters, that it should be best for sundry Considerations, that you forbear to speak any thing of this joynt Hostility. In which Opinion these your Letters have more confirmed us. And therefore for that Matter we require you to forbear to speak any thing of it. But if the Matter shall upon any Occasion be set forth by the Emperors Council, you may give ear unto it: And shewing your selves, as of your selves, by some good general Words, not unwilling to hear of it. Entertain their Talk by such means, and after such sort as you shal think best, to feel and suck out their Disposition, and what they desire as much as you may.

And touching the Comprehension of *Buloign*, wherein it seemeth they make some Stay, We think good also, you forbear to require the same any more. We need not repeat unto you the Charges or dangerous Keeping, the smal Commodities and many Troubles the Kings Majesty hath with that Towne and the Members thereunto neer adjoyning. And

if

if at any time after this, upon some reasonable Recompence, or for any other just or honorable Ground, it should like the Kings Majesty to leave that Towne; then should his Majesty and the Realm be always without any Cause burthened with that Reciproque, which should be now received into this Comprehension for *Bulloyn*. And therefore, and for sundry other Causes, we think best you overslip that matter for Comprehension.

And where by the former Treaty with th'Eclarishment Joynt Hostility is not entred, but only for Invasion with 8000 Men, we would wish, if they may be brought to assent thereunto, that the Covenant be made that the joint Enimity shal be for any Invasion to be made by public Officers or Authority with the number of 500 [5000.] And that this joint Hostility should be not only for such an Invasion, but also for the surprizing of any Fort, now in the Possession of either of the said Princes within any of their Countries comprized in the said former Treaty.

Touching your desire to know, if they shal agree to the Confirmation of the Treaties after such, or like sort as you have proponed, within what Time you shal agree, that the Confirmation shal be made on both sides: For as much as you know the Ratification in that Case is to be made on the Kings Majesties behalf by Authority of Parliament, which cannot be assembled before *Allhallowntide* at the neereft, you must of force to take the larger Day, and may agree to *Candlemas*.

As for the Names of the Countries that shal confirm the said Treaty on the Emperors behalf, we think that the *Low-Countries* named in the former Treaty must ratify it by the same several Orders, by which they make Laws and Crdinances to bind their Successors, like as for the King, it is to be don by Parliament. But if they shal make strange to have the same so confirmed, you may conclude for the Ratification of it by the Emperors Majesty and the Prince only; and that within one Month or six Weeks after your Agreement and Conclusion of your Treaty.

Touching those Questions you require to be answered, what *Dote* shal be offered with the Lady *Mary*; we would you had not gon at the first so high, as to offer 100000 Crowns, which is the most may be granted; and yet the same to be moderated in respect of the Dower that shall be given by the Infant of *Portugal*. And as they shal offer les or more, so may you, as your self hath already said to them, offer more or les, not exceeding in any case the Offer of 100000 Crowns. The days of Payment may be agreed upon wel enough hereafter, as the Matter shal grow to more Ripenes. In the Treating and Debating wherof you wil, we doubt not, remember unto them, besides many other Circumstances, the Possibility the Lady *Mary* standeth in with us: Which albeit we trust in God shal never take effect, yet it is nevertheless to be laid as a very great Matter, by means she is of reason to be the more honorably provided for. And her Dower cannot in reason be les than 20000 Crowns a year. In this Matter of Mariage wherin, as you write, you have already largely spoken, if they shal speak no more of it, we would you should likewise pas over the same in Silence. For besides that, the Lady *Mary*, being the Woman, is rather to be sued for, than offered, we think that having so much been spoken in that Matter as there hath both here and there, it seemeth that they either look

to be much sued unto, or do not much like it. And therefore we can be wel contented, that it hath thus been once commoned of, and so leave it as before. Mary, if that Matter shal chance to come again in Communication, we have thought good that you as of your self did did cast forth a Word or two shortly touching *Boloign*, with the Members neer adjoyning, to feel their Disposition, and how they would like it, if you could obtain it to be released to the Emperor with this Mariage of my Lady *Mary*. You know there shal be due for it, and the rest, to the King two Millions of Gold. And besides that this Town might stand the Emperor in great sted, to make some Bargain for Exchange of it with some other Town. We mean not this a Matter here resolved to be offered, but for that we would begin to have their Minds feelled, what Desire the Emperor would have to have the same, or how he would harken to it. Which thing we would gladly have closely fished out by as good Policy and covert means as you can devise, either upon Talk of the Matter of this Mariage, or upon any other Occasion as you shall think best. And yet the Matter to be so handled, as they may by no means gather, that this procedeth from hence.

We do al like very wel your Motion, that it be added to the former Treaty, that where the joynt Hostility is or shal be, neither Prince shal grant any safe Conduct to any common Enemy, to traffic in his Realm, nor suffer any of his Subjects to Traffic with any such common Enemy. Wherin, and in the other Points before mentioned, you may treat and conclude with them accordingly. &c. So bidding you most heartily farewell; From *Richmond*, 4. July 1549.

Your assured Loving Friends,

E. Somerset.
R. Ryche, Cane.

W. Sent John.
W. Petre, S.
John Bakere.

To our very loving Friend, Sir *Will. Paget*, Comptroller of the Kings Majesties most Honorable Household, Presently Ambassador for his Highnes with the Emperor.

D D.

The Lord Privy Seal to the Council, concerning the Defeat of the Rebels in the West.

UPON *Friday* we marched from *Exeter* to *Kirton*, Seven Miles of the way was very cumberous. And on that Day went no further. On *Saturday* we Marched towards the Camp at *Sampford Courtney*: and by the way our Scouts and the Rebels Scouts encountred upon the *Sunday* on a sudden. And in a Skirmish between them was one *Maunder* taken,

Cott. Libr.
Galba B. 12.

taken, who was one of the Chief Captains. Order was given to my Lord *Gray* and Mr. *Herbert*, for the winning of Time, to take a good Part of our Army, and with the same to make with al diligence possible towards the said Camp, to view and se what Service might be don for the Invasion therof. They found the Enemy strongly encamped, as wel by the Seat of the Ground, as by the Intrench of the same. They kept them play with great Ordinance, til more convenient way was made by the Pioners. Which don, they were assaulted with good Courage on the one side with our Foot men, and on the other side with the *Italian* Harquebutters in such sort, as it was not long before they turned their Backs, and recovered the Town, which they before had fortified for al Events. While this was doing, and I yet behind with the Residue of the Army; conducting the Cariage, *Humfrey Arundel* with his whole Power came on the backs of our Foreward, being thus busied with the Assault of the Camp. The sudden Shew of whom wrought such Fear in the Hearts of our Men, as we wished our Power a great deal more, not without good Cause. For remedy wherof, the L. *Gray* was fain to leave Mr. *Herbert* at the Enterprize against the Camp, and to retyre to our last Horsemen and Footmen. Whom he caused to turn their Faces to the Enemy in shew of Battail against *Arundel*. There was nothing for an hour, but shooting of Ordinance to and fro. Mr. *Herbert* in this mean time followed the first Attempt, who pressing stil upon them never breathed, til he had driven them to a plain Fight. To the Chase came forth Horsemen and Footmen. In the which were slain Five or Six Hundred of the Rebels. And among them was slain one *Underhil*, who had the Charge of that Camp.

At the Retyre of our Men I arrived, and because it waxed late, I thought good to loose no time, but appointed Sir *Will. Herbert* and Mr. *Kyngston* with their Footmen and Horsemen, to set on the one Side, my L. *Gray* to set on their Face, and I with my Company to come on the other Side. Upon the sight whereof the Rebels Stomacks so fel from them, as without any Blow they fled. The Horsemen followed the Chase, and slew to the Number of 700. and took a far greater Number. Great Execution had followed, had not the Night came on so fast.

Al this Night we sat on Horseback; and in the Morning we had Word that *Arundel* was fled to *Launceston*. Who immediately began to practise with the Townsmen, and the Keepers of *Grenewald*, and other Gentlemen, for the Murder of them that Night. The Keepers so much abhorred this Cruelty, as they immediately set the Gentlemen at large, and gave them their Aid, with the help of the Town for the apprehension of *Arundel*. Whom with Four or Five Ringleaders they have imprisoned. I have sent incontinently both Mr. *Carews* [Sir *George* and Sir *Peter Carow*] with a good Band to keep the Town in a Stay. And this Morning I halt thither with the rest.

We have taken Fifteen Pieces of Ordinance, some Bras and som Iron. Of our Part there were many hurt, but not passing Ten or Twelve slain. The Lord *Gray* and Mr. *Herbert* have served notably. Every Gentleman and Captain did their part so wel, as I wot not wel whom first to commend. I have given Order to al the Ports, that none of the Rebels shal pas that way, &c.

The

E E.

The Duke of Somerset, L. Protector, to Sir Philip Hoby, Ambassador with the Emperor, imparting Intelligence of the Insurrections.

Knowing, that al such as be Embassadors abroad are desirous not only of News for the Love they bear to their Country, naturally desiring often to hear of the State of it; but also to Confirm or Confute such Rumours as be spred in the Parts where they live; We have thought good to Impart, what sith our last Letters hath chanced. The *Devonshire* Men, as wel Chastised as Appeased. Three others of their Captains have voluntarily come in, and simply submitted themselves to Sir *Tho. Pomery*, *Wise*, and *Harris*: who before were fled and could not be found. And the Country cometh in daily to my Lord Privy Seal by Hundreds and Thousands: to crave their Pardon, and to be put in some sure hope of Grace. *Burry*, and some one or two more of their blind Guides that escaped from the Sword, have attempted in the mean Season to stir up *Somersetshire*, and have gotten them a Band or Camp. But they are sent after, and we trust by this they have as they deserve.

The Earl of *Warwick* lyeth neer to the Rebels in *Norfolk*; Which fain now would have Grace gladly, so that al might be Pardoned. *Keate* [*Ket*] and the other Archtraitors in the number, upon that is [at] a Stay. And they daily shrink so fast away, that there is great hope that they wil leave their Captains destitute and alone to receive their worthy Reward. The which is the thing we most desire, to spare as much as may be the Effusion of Bloud, and namely, that of our own Nation.

In *Yorkshire* a Commotion was attempted the Week last past. But the Gentlemen were so soon upon them, and so forward, that it was suppressed, and with Weeping Eyes the rest upon their Knees: they wholly together desired the Gentlemen to obtain their Pardons. The which the Kings Majesty hath so granted unto them, as may stand with his Highnes Honour. So that for the inner Parts, Thanks be to Almighty God, the Case standeth in good Point.

The Causes and Pretences of their Uproars and Risings are divers and uncertain, and so ful of Variety almost in every Camp, as they cal them, that it is hard to Write, what it is; as ye know is like to be of People without Head and Rule, and would have that they wot not what. Some cry, Pluck down Inclosures and Parks: some for their Commons; Others pretend Religion; a Number would Rule and Direct things, as Gentlemen have don. And indeed al have conceived a wonderful Hate against Gentlemen, and take them al as their Enemies. The Ruffians among them and Soldiers cashiered, which be the chief Doers, look for Spoil. So that it seems no other thing, but a Plague and a Fury among the vilest and worst sort of Men. For except only

Devon and Cornwall, and there not past two or three, in al other Places not one Gentleman or Man of Reputation; was ever amongst them, but against their Wills, and as Prisoners. In *Norfolk*, Gentlemen, and al Serving men for their sakes, are as illy handled as may be. But this Broyl is wel asswaged, and in maner at a point shortly to be fully ended with the Grace of God, &c. Thus We bid you right heartily Farewel. Aug. 24.

F F.

The Duke of Somerset to Sir Philip Hoby; Concerning the Suppression of the Insurrections in the West, and in Norfolk.

Cott. Libr.
Galba B. 12.

AFTER our right hartty Commendations; We have hertofore advertised you of the troublesome Busines, Uproars and Tumults, practised in sundry Places of the Realm, by a number of leud, seditious, and il disposed Persons, to the great Disquietnes both of the Kings Majesty, and al other his Highnes quiet and loving Subjects. Which Tumults and Commotions, albeit at the beginning they were spread in many Parts of the Realm, yet in the end were wel Pacified and Quieted, saving *Devon and Cornwall*, and *Norfolk*. Where they continued their Rebellion so stubbornly, as the Kings Majesty was forced to send the Kings Highnes Lieutenant, with a Power both ways, the sooner to suppress them and bring them to their Duty; Viz. My Lord Privy Seal for *Devon and Cornwall*, and the Earl of *Warwick* into *Norfolk*. And like as we have heretofore signified unto you the Proceedings of my Lord Privy Seal in his Journey, which by his politic and wise Handling of the Matter, after the Slaughter of more than a Thousand of the Rebels, and Execution of some of the Ringleaders, he hath, Thanks be to God, so honorably atchieved and finished, as not only the Country remaineth presently in good Order, but also the Multitude so repent their former detestable and naughty Doings, as they abhor to hear themselves spoken of.

So you shal understand, that in *Norfolk*, the Living God hath so wrought by the Wisdom and Manlines of my Lord of *Warwick*, that they also are brought to Subjection by such means as insueth. The said Rebels, having travailed by the space of one Month or more, to allure to them such Numbers of light Persons as they might; and partly by that Means, and partly by Force and Violence, at the last had assembled together a great Number, did after encamp themselves neer the City of *Norwich*. Which City they had at their Commandment, and therein had placed their Viſuals and other Provisions, wherof they had gotten large Furniture. My Lord of *Warwick* coming to those Parts, after he had thorowly understood the State of the Rebels, knowing the better part of them to be such simple Persons, as were either constrained by Force, or otherwise seduced by those of the worser Sort, thought

thought best to use such Means for subduing of them, as might be with least Effusion of Bloud, and Punishment only of the Heads and Captains; And for this Cause travailing first to cut off their Victuals, did approach the City of *Norwich*; which within short Time he obtained; And at the getting of it, overthrew a great number of the Rebels. By which means he so bridled them, and cut off their Victuals, as they were faine to live three Days with Water for Drink, and eat their Meat without Bread. Whereupon *Thursday* last, issuing out of their Camps into a Plain neer adjoyning, they determined to Fight, and like mad and desperate Men ran upon the Sword. Where a Thousand of them being slain, the rest were content to crave their Pardon.

One *Ket a Tanner*, being from the beginning a chief Doer among them, fled, and the rest of the Rebels casting away their Weapons and Harnes, and asking Pardon on their Knees with weeping Eyes, were by the L. of *Warwick* dismissed home without Hurt, and pardoned, the Chief Heads, Ringleaders and Posts excepted. *Ket*, with three of his Brethren, with other three Chief Captains, al vile Persons, were also taken; who now remain in Hold, to receive that which they have deserved.

Thus are these vile Wretches, that have now of a long time troubled the Realm, and as much as in them lay gon about to destroy and utterly undo the same, come to Confusion. So that we trust verily that these Traitors, Mutiners, and Rebellions have now an End, Lauded be God, &c. And thus we bid you heartily wel to fare. *Sept. 1. 1549.*

G G.

Sir William Paget to the Lord Protector; upon his rough Usage of some Gentlemen. Writ May 8. 1549.

IF I loved not your Grace so deeply in my heart as it cannot be taken out, I could hold my peace, as some others do, and say little or nothing; but my love to your Grace, and good hope that you take my meaning wel, hath enforced me to signify unto your Grace, that unles your Grace do more quietly shew your pleasure in things wherein you wil debate with other Men, and hear them again graciously say their Opinions, when you do require it, that wil ensue wherof I would be right sory, and your Grace shal have first cause to repent: That is, that no man shal dare speak to you, what he thinks, though it were never so necessary; For you know it: Which in the end wil be dangerous unto you. For mine own self I must confess, or else I were to blame, that [being] one of the Council, you hear me speak very gently and graciously, Mary, I think for the most part I speak as one that have no experience, wherby your Grace seldom is moved to follow my Advice. But in Council, as I am more liberal to speak than others, (which if your Grace mislike, and take for a Fault, I wil most willingly amend it) so your Grace nipps me so sharply sometimes, as if I

knew not your Conditions wel, and were not assured of your Favour, I might many times ere this time, have been blanked for speaking frankly.

Now then, Sir, if other honest Men, not so wel acquainted with your Nature as I am, having to do with your Grace in the Kings Majesties Affair, and having occasion by your own appointment and wil to say their Opinions honestly and sincerely unto you, shal be snapped, God knows what los you shal have by it. By the Living God, if I knew not how much Men of Service be troubled withal, I would never write this much. Poor Sir *Richard Alte* this Afternoon, after your Grace had very fore, and too much more than needed, rebuked him, came to my Chamber weeping, and there complaining, as far as became him, of your handling of him, seemed almost out of his Wits, and out of heart. Your Grace to be sure have put him clean [out of countenance.] I know that like fashion of the King, that dead is, to him, had almost cost him his Life. Your Grace peradventure thinketh it nothing; but by God, Sir, if you would, as I wrot once to you, cal to your remembrance, how that as you speake sometimes to men, saying their Opinions contrary to that which you have conceived, if a King or Cardinal in times past should have spoken to you, it would have pricked you at the Stomac. You shal wel feel that Words spoken by the Lord Protector goeth to a Mans Heart.

Howsoever it cometh to pas I cannot tel, but of late your Grace is grown in great cholerick fashions, when soever you are contraried in that which you have conceived in your Head. A King, which shal give Men occasion of Discourage to say their Opinions frankly, receiveth thereby great hurt and peril to his Realm. But a Subject in great Authority, as your Grace is, using such Fashion is like to fal into great danger and peril of his own Person, beside that to the Commonwealth. Which for the very Love I bear to your Grace, I beseech you, and for Gods sake, consider and weigh wel. And also when the whole Council shall move you, or give you Advice in a Matter, like as they did of late for sending of Men to *Bullogn*, to follow the same, and to relent sometimes from your own Opinion. Your Surety shal be the more, and your Burden the less.

I trust your Grace will take this Letter in good part; for it proceedeth from a good heart towards you, as God can judge. To whom I pray daily for the same wel-doing to you that I wish to mine own self. And I beseech even now his Divine Majesty to give you his holy Spirit and Grace to do al things to his Glory, the Kings Majesties Honor, and your own Surety and Preservation. From my Chamber in the Court, &c.

W. P.

Sir

H H.

Sir William Paget, now Ambassador abroad, to the Lord Protector, upon the breaking out of the Rebellion in the West: The Letter bearing date July 7. 1549.

SIR, having heard here, what Men say of your Government at home, and knowing partly before my Coming forth, and partly sithence, how things go there, and in what Termes you stand at home, I am put into such Perplexities, as I wot not what to do. My Heart bleedeth, and mine Eyes, by God, distil down with weeping Tears at the Writing hereof. For I se at hand that coming which I have now feared of good Time, the Destruction of that goodly yong Child, my Sovereign Lord, the Subversion of the Noble Realm of *England*, and the Ruine of your Grace, to whom of long time I have given my Heart for the Service of the King; and whom I have loved for the honest good nature I have judged in you. I se, I say, this sorrowful Sight at hand, unles your Grace open your Eyes of Justice in this yong Age of the King: and that out of hand, out of hand, in al the hafts. If ever you have loved me, (as I believe you have, and do love me) if ever you think I have don your Grace any pleasure in times past, or Service sithence the King's Fathers Death, Pardon me now, and give me leave to write to your Grace what I think, and what my Conscience binds me to write from hence: where I am in as much care for the Proceeding at home, as if I were present with your Grace.

Remember, what you promised me in the Gallery at *Westminster*, before the breath was out of the Body of the King, that dead is. Remember, what you promised immediately after, devising with me concerning the Place which you now occupy, I trust, in the end to good purpose, howsoever things thwart now. And that was, to follow mine Advice in al your Proceedings, more than any other Mans. Which Promise I wish your Grace had kept. For then I am sure things had not gon altogether, as they go now. If your Grace remember, I wrot you a Letter upon either *Christmas* Day, or *Christmas* Even at night. Which Letter I would to God you had pleased to have considered, and followed; and to have kept me as Men of War use to keep their Espyes, til they se the Effects of their Advertisements; and therupon to have used me accordingly. I was a *Cassandra*, I told your Grace the Truth, and was not believed. Wel, now your Grace seeth it. What seeth your Grace over the Kings Subjects out of al Disciplin, out of Obedience, Caring neither for Protector nor King, and much les for any other mean Officer. And what is the Cause? Your own Lenity, your Softnes, your Opinion to be good to the Poor; the Opinion of such as saith to your Grace, Oh! Sir, there was never Man had the Hearts of the Poor as you have. Oh! the Commons pray for you, Sir, They say, God save your Life. I know your gentle Heart right wel, and that your meaning is good and godly, how ever some evil Men list to

prate

prate here, that you have some greater Enterprize in your Head that lean so much to the Multitude: I know, I say, your meaning and honest Vertue. But I say, Sir, it is great pity, as the common Proverb goeth, in a warm Summer, that ever warm Weather should do harm. It is pity, that your too much Gentlenes should be an occasion of so great an Evil as is now chanced in *England* by these Rebels; and that saving your Graces Honour, Knaves say, as a Knave *Spanyard* coming now very lately out of *England*, that he saw your Grace ride upon a fair goodly Horse, but he trembled. Mary, he was so strong and big made, that he caried both your Grace and al the Kings Council with you at once at a Burden upon his Back: If I may find the Gentleman (for I seek him) I may peradventure stop him a tyde.

Wel, Sir, things past cannot be undon, and howsoever the Success falleth, you meant wel: and therefore you must do now that they may be wel. Consider, I beseech you most humbly with al my heart, that Society in a Realm doth consist, and is maintained by means of Religion and Laws. And these Two or One wanting, Farewel al just Society, Farewel Kings, Government, Justice, al other Vertue. And in cometh Commonalty, Sensuality, Iniquity, and al other kinds of Vice and Mischief. Look wel, whether you have either Law or Religion at home, and I fear you shal find neither. The use of the old Religion is forbidden by a Law, and the use of the New is not yet printed: Printed in the Stomachs of eleven or twelve parts of the Realm, what Countenance soever Men make outwardly to please them in whom they se the Power resteth. Now say for the Law; where is it used in *England* at liberty? Almost no where. The Foot taketh upon him the part of the Head, and *Commons* [meaning the Commons] is become a King; a King appointing Conditions and Laws to the Governors, saying, Grant this and that, and we wil go home. Alas! Alas! that ever this day should be seen in this time. And would to God, that, at the first Stir you had followed the Matter hotly, and caused Justice to have been ministred in solemn fashion to the terror of others, and then to have granted a Pardon. But to have granted Pardons out of course (I beseech your Grace bear with my zeal) they did ever as mich good to the purpose which you meant, as the Bishop of *Romes* Pardons were wont to do. Which rather upon hope of a Pardon, gave Men occasion and Courage to Sin, than to amend their Faults. And so have your Pardons given evil Men a Boldnes to enterprize as they do, and cause them to think you dare not meddle with them, but are glad to please them. Be it right or wrong, they must have it. Victuals they say, Wools, Cloths, and every other thing is dear. They must have a new price at their pleasure. By and by the Commons must be pleased: You must take pity upon the poor Mens Children, and of the Conservation and Stay of this Realm. And put no more so many Irons in the Fire at once, as you have had within this Twelve month. War with *Scotland*, with *France*, tho' it be not so termed: Commissions out for this Matter; New Laws for this, Proclamation for another, One in anothers neck so thick, that they be not set by among the People.

What a good year, be the Inclosures lately made, that these People repine now at? Is Victuals and other things so dear in *England*, and no where else? Is the State wherein they live a new kind of Life put into them

them? If it be so, they have some cause to complain to the King. But Victuals and other things be so dear in other Realms as they be in *England*. Which they are indeed and so dear; and that I know and feel here right wel. For I spend twice as much as I did at my last being here; and yet I keep no greater Countenance. If they and their Fathers before them have lived quietly above these Sixty years, Pastures being enclosed, the most part of these Rufflers have the least cause to complain, the Matter being wel weighed. What is the Matter then troweth your Grace? By my Faith, Sir, even that which I said to your Grace in the Gallery at the *Tower* the next day after the Kings first coming there, Liberty, Liberty. And your Grace would have too much Gentleness, which might have been avoided, if your Grace would have followed my Advice. In giving wherof as I have been somewhat frank with your Grace apart, and seen little Fruit come of it, so have I been discouraged at your Graces hands in open Council to say mine Opinion, as much as ever Man was. But as for that, albeit the Matter had grieved me not a little, yet afterwards thinking of this Proverb, *A Man is boldest where he loveth best*, I have passed it over, and could have born much better, if any had seen your Grace relent to Council; I mean not of me alone. For when I give your Grace advice in a Matter which you shal perceive the rest of the Council to mislike, then take it for Folly, and follow it not. But when the whole Council shal joyn in a Matter, and your Grace travail to out-reason them in it, and wrast them by reason of your Authority to bow to it; or first shew your Opinion in a Matter, and then ask theirs; Alas! Sir, how can this Gear do wel? I know in this Matter of the Commons, every Man of the Council have misliked your Proceedings, and wished it otherwise. I know your Grace can say, no Man shal answer the King for these things, but I. Sir, I fear that if you take not another way betimes in these Matters of Tumult, neither you nor we shal come to Answering. And yet, Sir, I believe if any thing chance amiss, wherfore a Reckoning shal be asked by the King, (as I trust in God you wil foresee there shal not) that not only your Grace shal give the Account, which have Authority in your Hands, but also such as did first Consent and Accord to give you that Authority.

Methinketh, I se your Grace now reading of this Letter, and conceiving what you think of me for the same. For I know your Graces nature as wel as any Man Living. If you think as I deserve, you think me one of the truest Subjects that ever Prince had; and ever so I have been. And again, God judg it betwixt you and me, I have ever desired your Authority to be set forth, ever been careful of your Honor and Surety; both for now and for evermore, ever glad to please you, as ever was gentle Wife to please her Husband, and honest Man his Master, I wys. My good Lord, Alas! Be no more gentle, for it hath don hurt; the more pity. I have never been noysome to you or troublesome, if it hath not been in Matters of State, where your Honor or good Proceedings for the King hath come in place. And that I have don upon a good Wil and Zele of your Weldoing: and Wys whosoever sheweth himself most at your Wil, none shal be more readier to live and dy with you, than I am. And I believe verily that your Grace loveth me. Mary, peradventure you think me very bold with
you

to write in this Fashion. Alas! Sir, Pardon me, for my Zele and Duty to the King, the Realm, and your Grace enforceth me, and my Conscience also constraineth me, being (unworthy) a Counsellor.

I write this to your Grace alone, minding not to be more busy in Council, because I see you like it not: Seing I have commodity otherwise to say to your Grace mine Opinion. But if your Grace shal mislike also my private Advertisements of mine Opinion, then most humbly I beseech your Grace to discharge me of the Council, and my Conscience shal be satisfied. And then in respect of my Love to your Grace (which shal never fail) I wil fall to prayer only to God for you and your Welldoing in al things.

You wil now peradventure say unto me, that I have here made a long Declamation, and spoke of many things that I think might be amended, but I say nothing. How. And things being grown into such a dangerous Tumult, I write not what I think for mine Opinion meet to be don. Yes, Sir, that wil I do. First, your Grace must remember that Saying for the Name of a King, and that you must do al things in the Name of another. Your Grace is, during the Kings yong Age of Imperfection, to do his own things, as it were a King, and have his Majesties absolute Power. Then, Sir, for a King, do like a King, in this Matter especially. Take a Noble Courage to you for your Proceedings. Wherin take example at other Kings. And you need not seek further for the Matter, Go no further than to him which dyed last, of most Noble Memory K. *Henry VIII.* Kept not he his Subjects from the highest to the lowest in due Obedience? And how? By the only maintenance of Justice in due course; which now being brought out of Course cannot, for any thing I see, be brought to Reputation, and to an Establishment, but by Power or Force, which is a grievous hearing, if it might be otherwise. But it is better late than never, and now the sooner best of al. In *Germany*, when the very like Tumult to this began first, it might have been appeased with the loss of Twenty Men; and after with the Loss of an C. or CC. But it was thought nothing, and might easily be appeased; And also some spiced Consciences taking pity of the Poor, who indeed knew not what great Pity was, nor who were the Poor, thought it a sore matter to loose so many of their Even Christian [Country folks,] Saying they were simple Folk, and wist not what the Matter meant, and were of a godly knowledg. And after this sort, and by such womanly Pity and fond Persuasion, suffered the Matter to run so far, as it cost ere it was appeased, they say, a thousand or two thousand Mens lives. By St *Mary* better so than mo.

And therefore, Sir, go to. believe me; send for al the Council that be remaining unspent abroad. And for because there are a good many of the best absent, cal to your Grace to Counsil for this matter Six of the Gravest and most experienced Men of the Realm, and Consult what is best to be don; and follow their Advices. And for mine Opinion, if the Matter be so far spent, as you cannot without your Men of War help it, send for your *Almain* Horsemen, who ly at *Calais*, and may for a time be spared. They be in number little lack of Four Thousand Horsemen, a goodly Band as ever I saw for so many. Send for the Lord *Ferris*, and Sir *William Herbert* to bring you as many Horsemen as they may bring wel out of *Wales*, and such as they dare trust. Let the

the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, bring the like out of *Derbyshire*, *Salopshire*, *Stafford*, and *Nottinghamshire*, of his Servants, Keepers of Forests and Parks. Send your self for all your trusty Servants to come to you. Appoint the King to ly at *Winsor*, accompanied with al his Officers and Servants of his Household, the Pensioners, the Men at Armes, and the Guard; and go your self in Person, accompanied with the *Almain* Horsemen, and the said Noblemen and their Companies, first into *Barkshire*, Commanding al the Gentlemen to attend upon your Grace by such a day, at such a Place, with so many trusty Friends and Servants as they can make. And appoint the chief Justices of *England*, Three or Four of them, to resort with Commission of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, to that good Town which shal be next to the Place where your Grace shal remain, accompanied with certain of the Justices of the Peace of the same Shire. To whom your Grace must give Commandment to attach him and him, to the number of Twenty or Thirty, of the rankest Knaves of the Shire. If they come peaceably to Justice, let Six be hanged of the ripest of them without Redemption, in sundry places of the Shire; the rest remain in Prison. And if any Rich Men have been Favourers to them in this matter, let the Justices take good Sureties of his good bearing and appearance in the *Star Chamber* in the next Term, to abide a further Order. Let the Horsemen ly in such Towns and Villages as have been most busiest, taking enough for their Mony; that Rebels may feel the Smart of their Villany. Take the Liberty of such Towns, as have offended, into the Kings hands: You may restore them again at your plesure afterwards. If your Grace send some of the Doers away far from their Wives, to the North, or *Boloign*, to be Soldiers or Pioners, it would do wel. Give them no good Words, or make no promise in no wise. And thus from one Shire to another make a Progress this hot Weather, til you have perused al these Shires, that have offended sithence their Pardons.

By this means shal your Grace redub this Matter within the Realm, to your great Praise, Honour and Estimation in al Places abroad. Which, I assure your Grace by my Fidelity, is by reason hereof touched wonderfully, both here, and in al other Places of Christendom. Your Grace may say, I shal loose the Hearts of the People. Of the good People you shal not, and of the Evil it maketh no matter. By this means you shal be dread, which hitherto you are not, but of a very few that be honest Men. By this means you shal deliver the King an obedient Realm: And may in the mean time during your Office, be able for the Service of the King to Command what you list; and so shal be able to continue it, if you wil meddle no more with private Suits, but remit them to ordinary Courtes. If you reply, Shal I not hear poor Mens Cases? Why, Sir, when you send him to the Chancery, do you not hear him? So I do, saith your Grace, with a Letter. Yea Mary Sir, but this Letter marreth al. For it hath a Countenance of your Graces Favour in the Matter. And, Sir, where your Grace saith, that they be a Few that with Inclosures, &c. give this account, Hold your peace to your self, and at leisure in the Winter: * Let them be sent for one by one, and had in Confession, and let such of them as be Offenders smart for it. Wherby both the Kings Majesty may have a Profit, and the poor Men, if that be the sore, be relieved.

* Sense imperfect.

Lo! Sir, thus have I truly and frankly written to your Grace what I think; and believe verily, upon the knowledg of mine own Sincerity of Conscience, that you wil take it graciously. For I mean truly and lovingly to your Grace, God I take to witnes, whom I beseech with al my heart daily to send you as wel to do, as ever Man had wished to any other, &c.

W. P.

II.

A Letter sent from the Lord Paget concerning Bulloign, to the Earl of Warwick, then L. Great Master; the 22d of February, 1549.

MSS. pen. ms. **T**HESE *French Men*, ye se how lofty they are and haultain in al their Proceedings with us; and no mervail, for so they be of nature, and our Estate, (which cannot be hidden unto them) encreaseth their Courage not a little. They wil have *Bulloin*, they say, by fair means, or by foul. They wil no longer be Tributaries (as they terme yt.) And here they set furth the power of their King, and of ours as littil, as they list, with such bragging and braving termes and Countenances, as yf your Lordship had heard and seen *Rochepot*, ye would have judged hym a Man more mete to make of Peace a Warre than of Warre a Peace.

Debt they wil recognize none. For they say (though they say untruly) that you have made them spend, and have taken upon the Seas of theirs, ten times as much as the Debt comyth to. Nevertheles, say they, Let us have *Bulloine*, and wbye away al pretences, that you make to us, and aske a Reasonable Summe, and we wil make you a Reasonable Aunswer. Or yf ye wil not in respect of your Masters yong age, acquit his pretence, Let us have *Bulloin*, and we wyl agree with you for yt upon a Reasonable Summe, and reserve you to your Master the *Droits*, that he pretendeth, and we to ours his Defences for the same; and so to make a Peace. And yf ye afterwards demaund nothing of us, We demaund nothing of you. Kepe you within your Lymits, which God hath gyven you enclosed with the Seas (saying your *Calays*, wherunto ye have ben married theis two or three hundred yeres, and therfore God send you joy with it) and we our Lymitts upon the Land, and we shal lyve togyther in peace. And other Bargain than this, We wil not make.

To repete here what Reasons we made to enduce them to Reason, that shal not nede, though I for my own part could devise litil. Yet I assure your Lordship with the good help of theis Wise men, to whom I am assocyate, there was, I beleve, as much said, as wherby they ought

ought to have ben perswaded to agre to our Requests: But al would not serve.

By the consent of the Colleagues, I provoked a private Talk betwene *Mortier*, or *Chastillon*, and me, or some other of us, apart, thinking therby to have practised sumwhat; but it would not be. They would in no wise talk apart with any of us; but we wil have this, and wil have none other. We pray you of a short Aunswer, for We wil not tary: We wil not advertise our Master; for it nedyth not. We know his mynd fully. And yf he had mynded eny thing ells, then We know, no dowbt, but he wold have declared it unto us. And so after some Consultation, agreed at the last to tary, tyl we did advertise, and heard out of *England* again: Requiring us to send for any ample and determinate Resolution for every thing.

Lo! Sir, thus standeth the Case: and what is now to be don, in good faith, I cannot wel tel, and am at my Witts end. Their *Orguil* is intolerable, their Disputations be unreasonable, their Conditions to us dishonorable, and, which is worst of al, our Estate at home miserable. What then? Of many Evils let us chuse the least. Then first, We must knowledg (which we cannot denye) the evil Condition of our Estate at home. Which Recognisaunce is the first degree to Amendement. The next is, to know the Cause of the Evil; and that is Warre, supposed to be, yf not the only, at the least one of the Chiefest amongst many great. How many, how great occasions of Mischief the Warre hath engendred to *England*? Of yll Mony, wherby outward things be dearer? Of Conveying out of al kind of our Commodities to forrein Parts, under pretence of our Furniture of Men of Warre, wherby our inward things be dearer; Of breeding idlenes among the People, great Couraiges, Disposition to imagyne and invent Novelties, Grudgings, Devices to amend this and that, and an hundred Myscheves more: Which make my Hart sorry to thynk upon. And these be the frutes of Warre. Then yf the Disease wil not be taken away, but the Causes be taken away, also Warre (which is one Chief Cause) must be taken away. But that shal not be taken away (say the *French*) but upon this Condition, or that Condition, as before I have spoken of two. They wil have *Bulloin*, they say, and Quarels quite crossed, and gyve you a Somme of Money, and make peace, Leaving to each Prince his Pretences and Defences. But, thys, say we, may be the occasion of a new Warre another tyme. Demaund, say they, nothing of us no more, then we wil demaund of you; and then that shal be no new occasion.

Wel; What moverth us to stick? Mary, the leaving of *Bulloin*. Ye do consider, whyther we be hable to kepe yt *maulgre the French*. *Roche-pot* sayth, and braggeth, that their King is not a King *John*, but a *French* King, such as hath conquered *Rome*, and bene feared of the rest; and wil have *Bulloin* again, (whosoever sayeth, Nay) and telleth us, how we are in poverty and mutinies at home, beset al about with Enemies, having no Frinde to socour us; Destitute of Mony to furnish us; and so far in debt as hardly we can find any Credytors. Yf yt be not this, then *Roche-pot* lyeth. But yf yt be this, it is good to consider, whither yt be better to let them have *Bulloin* again, and to have sumwhat for yt, and to lyve in peace, tyl our Master come to a

more Age. leaving to hym some store of Mony to revenge hym (yf then he shal think he have cause reasonable,) to have good opportunitie for the stay of the things at home, and to put in good our Polycy; or els, for want and insufficiency, to lose *Bulloin* without any recompence, to lyve in Warre without synews; and for lack of good opportunitie to be forced to let things at home unredressed.

Yea, but the Pension is a gret matter. Wote you what the *French* Commissioners say? It is true, (they say) the Pension was grawnted, but the tyme is toured: Then was then, and now is now. Yt was grawnted by the *French* King, that dead is (they say) to the King of *England* that dead is, and to his Successors in the Crown of *England*. The King of *France* (they say) cannot by hys symple Grawnt, without Confyrmation of Parlyament, bind his Successors. And so, (say they) the same Treaty, where the Pensyon is grawnted, doth purport. And when (say they) was yt grawnted? Mary, when your Master saw tyme to make his Bargain best, though his Ministers toke not hede to knytt it surely up by Parlyament. And that Tyme was, when he had the Gages in his Hand; *Viz.* Our Master and themperour at onetyme, and so might make his Bargain hymself as he lyst. And we wil use yt as you did, when Tyme served you. For we know our Estate, and that you are not hable to war with us. With these and such other Comparysons the *French* face us.

Wel then, they wil, yt scmyth, pay us no Pension; now is it to be considered, Whither it be better to forbear our Pension, (for they are so good unto us (God yelde it them) as to reserve our pretence) to lose *Bulloin*, and to have nothing in recompence, and to lyve stil in warre, or els to lose *Bulloin*, to forbear our Pension, to have some recompence, to lyve in peace, &c. and to leave to our Master his Claim, yf he shal think yt good.

I am sorye I have not here the Copy of the Treaties of Peace made in *An.* 14. and 15. of our Lord: which was upon the first Warres of the King our late Master, of most worthy Memory. For yf I had, then could I write therof certainly. I pray your Lordship in any wyse to cause that to be furthwith looked up; for yt is to purpose. But, as I remember, yt shal appere that then our said Master, being left by the King his Father marvelous welthy, rich, wel obeyed of his Subjects, in Peace; furnished with friendship of *Spain*, *Flandres*, *Rome* and *Almaine*, entred the Warrs to recover his right of *France*. But in conclusion what Right gat he? Mary, made a Peace, and calculing certain old Debts to King *Edward* his Graundfather, and some to the King his Father, agreed with the *French* King upon a Mas of Ten hundred thousand Crowns, to be payd, as I remember, in yeres, without having any Pension, or other thing. Delivered afterward *Turwin* and *Turnaye*: having for *Turnyn* nothing, and for *Turnaye* (which had cost the keeping no smal sommes of Mony) Six hundred thousand Crownes. This being thus, as I take yt to be (praying your Lordship to let yt be looked up) the exemple is much to move the Peace.

Now comparing the Times, the Estates, and al other Circumstances of the Kings Majesty our Master, that now is, to the Tyme, Estates and Circumstances of the King his Father, being in his most flourishing Prosperitie, which yt may like you by your Wisdome to consider with the

the rest of the Wise Heddes there, and to take in good part my good meaning in this matter. Which is not to prejudice your Wifdomes, (knowing my self a Fool) but to lay before you the fondnes of my Imagination. Which yf you find fond in al degrees, lay that under the Feet (I pray you) and cover yt with a heap of my good wyl and desire. But that the Affairs shuld go wel forward, I could not chuse but open my fantasie: And the rather for that your Lordship, and sum others, that be my good Lords and Friends, have the mayninge of them: Beseeching God to give you the Grace to mayne and conduct them, as I do wish.

If you find any thing in it not fond, use yt as you like. It may please your good Lordship to move the rest, that yf ye shal think good to agree upon a Somme of Mony, then to advertise us in your common Letter the most and the least, the maner of the Payment in hand, or at dayes. If at any days (which under Correction I wish not, though yt be less) than what Dayes, and what Assurance for the Payment. *Item*, The lowest point you wil come to for Scotland. And thus with my humble and most hartie Commendations, &c.

K K.

The Prayer used at a Public Fast for a great Dearth.

As yt pleaseth God, so be yt:

OH! Eternal, everlastyng and Righteous God, before whose Hygh-
nes we, presentyng us this Day accordyng to our Dewtyes, and
Foure of thy Word, do Confess unto thee our Offences, Sinnes and
Wickednes, which thus have deservyd theys thy great Plagis and gre-
vous Punishments; For neglectyng thy Word, and brekyng thy Com-
maundments. And as thou hast commaundyd by Joel thy Propheet,
to proclayme a Fastyng, to call the Congregation, Gatheryng the Elders, and
Inhabytters of the Land, unto the House of God, and cry unto hym, sayeing,
*Alas! Alas! for this day: And why? the Lords day is at hand, and com-
myth as a Destroyer from the Almighty. The Sede shal perish in the grownd,
the Graners shal ly wast, the Floris shal be broken down. For the Corn shal
be destroyed. And bycaus, sayeth Aggeus, every man runne to his owne, the
Heavens is forboden to gyve eny Dew, the Earth is forboden to gyve you
encrease. I have callyd for a Drowght upon the Land and Moontayns, upon
Corn, upon Wyne, upon Oyl and every thing, that the Grownd bryngyth
furth, upon Men, upon Cattel, and upon al handy Labour. And also, O
Lord God, as thou hast sayd by Moses, that yf our harts deceyve us,
thow beyng wroth ageynst us, wouldest shut up the Heavens, that ther
be no rayne, and that the Land shuld not yeld furth byr Encrease. And
though we have deservyd, as in Abahs tyme Elias prayer prevaylyd,
that for the space of three yeris no rayne or Dew dyd fal, tyl al thyngs
was Consumyd, as now this day yt ys cum to pass: Yet, O Lord,
behold*

behold us with the *Ninivites*, our Humylyacion befor thy Maieftie, Apperyng thus this day, to cal on thee for mercy, which with *Solomon* pray unto thee, *ys that the Heaven be shut up, and that there be no Rayne, bycause that we have synnyd agynst thee; yet prayeng in this place, and knowledge to thy Name, and turne us from our synnes through thy skourging us, then heare thou us in Heaven, and be merciful to the synnys of thy Saruants and People, that thou shew us that good way, wherin for to walk, and gyve rayne on the Land, thou hast gyven us to enheryt.* Send, O Lord, thy sweet Dewes of thy heavenly grace, so to refresh and water the Plants of our harts, that we so repent, and so optayne thy marcy, as this our General Prayer may be acceptyd of thee. And as thou hast promysyd, *wher two or three be gatheryd together in thy Name to grawnt their requests,* behold here so many as callyth upon thee in Feyth and Humylyacion, Appealyng to thy Marcy; thou canst us not deny to grawnt us our Requests; lest the Ungodly boft against the Cause of our Religion? They wold deny thy favour unto us oft extendyd, they, seyng now thy Work in our Pericion grawntyng, may with us altogether prayse and worship thee with Thanks for this thy Marcy? To whom, O God our Father, the Son and holy Ghost, be al prayse and glory, for ever and everlastingly, *Amen.*

L L:

Bucer to ALasco, concerning the Controversy about wearing the Habits.

Amplissimo Dno. & Colendissimo Symmysta, Joanni ALasco.

*E. Biblioth.
D. Joh. D.
Episc. Elion.*

THE Lord graunt unto us, in these troublesome Times of the Church, to begin and finish al things, that Offences and Dangers be not encreased, *Amen.*

The more diligently I weigh and consider, both what Fruit we may gather by this Controversy of Vestures, and also what Satan goeth about therby to Work, I would have wished before the Lord, that it never once had been spoken of, but rather that al Men of our Function had agreably and stoutly gon forward, and continued in Teaching true Repentance, the wholsome Use of al things, yea, and commending and putting on the Apparel of Salvation. I se, not in a Few, alas! I say, I se mervailous Diligence in abolishing *Amalec*, concerning Stones, Stocks, Vestures, and those Things that be without us, when in their Deeds and whole Life they most stiffly maintain the whole *Amalec* stil. I know also some that help forward this Strife, so that in the mean time the chief and most necessary Points are les regarded and called upon; That is, Of removing sacrilegious Persons from spoiling of Churches, of providing fit Ministers for every Parish, of the restoring of Disciplin again.

As

As for my Part, if I thought Ceremonies and Vestures were impure of themselves, I would not take upon me in any wise the Office of a Bishop, till by ordinary Authority they were taken away, &c. But to the purpose, I think it not impertinent unto this Matter that we al be admonished to take heed of Satans accustomed Sights, wherby he leadeth us away from the Care of Necessary things, to Carefulness about those things which may be wel let pass, and from the searching out of the true Doctrin of Christ, to induce to use those things wherin few can Consent alike; and finally by the which he kindleth in divers Men a Zele to purge those things which are without us; therby to neglect our inward Deformities. And seeing whatsoever we do in Word or Deed both privately and publicly, we ought to do it in the Name of our Lord *Jesus* Christ, giving thanks by him to God the Father, surely it is our Duty no les circumspectly to beware, that we neither do, nor leave undon any thing, wherby we have not sure or certain Authority out of Gods Word, touching our Actions and Matters, Domestical and Ecclesiastical. It is alway and in all things Sin, whatsoever is not of Faith of the certain Word of God.

But to consider this Question in it self. I have according to my Gift weighed your Reasons; and yet I can perceive no other, but that the Use of al external things, as wel in holy Ceremonies as in private Matters, ought to be left free to the Churches of God. I cal that *Free Use* wherin Godly Men use things created of God without any Superstition, and to a certain Edifying of their Faith in Christ. I verily, as I have confessed unto you, and have declared indeed unto our Countrymen, had rather that no kind of Vesture which the Papists used were retained among us. And that both for the more ful Detestation of the Antichristian Priesthood, and also for plainer advouching of Christian Liberty; yea, and to be short, for the avoiding of dangerous Contentions among the Brethren. Tho' notwithstanding I would have the Ministers of Churches to use sage Vesture, and such wherby they might be discerned from other Men. But chiefly, I would have al the Disciplin of Christ to be in force among us. Yet I cannot be brought by any Scriptures, as far as I se hitherto, to deny, that the true Ministers of Christs Church may use without Superstition, and to a certain Edification of Faith in Christ, any of those Vestures, which the Antichristians abused. For what should let, but that the Churches may use that *White Vesture*, or more Vestures, to admonish us precisely of that divine Benefit, which he by the holy Ministry of the Church dealeth unto us: the Benefit, I say, of the Light and Dignity of that Heavenly Doctrin; And by the which also the Ministers themselves may be the more mindful of their Office. and had, both for it, and by the Admonishment of that outward Token, in greater Reverence of the Common People of the Church? Whether we wil or no, we are compelled to Confes, that the Ensignes of them that bear public Offices help somewhat to retain and encrease the Authority of Magistrates and public Powers, if other things want not, by the which the true Reverence is given unto them. For if these things be not joyned with *Ensignes*, they induce not a Veneration, but rather the singular Detestation of them, who unworthily use these Notes of Vertue. *Ensignes* indeed are Signes and not the Things: Yet how much they

they are able to Admonish and move the Mind, God giving the Increase, he that observeth wil wonder.

Wherefore, whereas otherwise the true Dignity of Ministers is evident, and if any particular Church by public Judgment do consent upon the retaining of certain Vestures, only for the commending unto us of the Gifts of God, which he giveth by the Ministry of the Church; and for to put the yonger and ruder Sort in mind without al Superstition, truly I cannot see, why such use of Vestures in such a Church may not serve to some Commendation of the holy Ministry, and so consequently to the Edification of Faith. For what Let is there, but that at this day they which are endued with the same Spirit of Faith, may use a few Signes as godly, as the antient holy Men have used many. They had, you wil say, expres Writing concerning the use of their Signes. I grant; and indeed it made much touching the true use of their Signes. But in that God did Command the Use of those and many other things, we certainly know, that the use of those Signes may serve, he giving Grace, to promote true Religion; and that it hath none Uncleanes in it self or Superstition, neither can be by the Abuse of the Wicked so polluted, that it cannot be healthful to Godly Men, using it godly. Now when as God by his Word hath sanctified al things by our Prayers, and hath made al things pure to the Pure, what Cause can we allege out of the Word of God to deny, that God wil not bless such use of Signes wherof we speak, that it should not be effectuous to that Church, to some Commendation of the Ministry, and therof also to some Edification of Faith? For how can it be, but that he which promised to bless al the Work of our Hands, which we take in his Name, wil deny his Blessing to these Signes, seeing he hath no where forbidden such an use of them as We have expounded, and hath made us Lords of his Sabbath, and al other things of this World?

But if we grant that these things which I have spoken concerning the use of such Signes, may be, it is certainly the part of brotherly Charity, commanded us by God, to leave such use of such Signes in such a Church, free to the Judgment and Conscience of that Congregation; Except we see an open Abuse either of Superstition, as if these things were used as containing in them some part of godly Worship of themselves; or of Contention, as if they displeased the greater and better part of the Church; or of getting of good Wil of some Men, whom in these things we ought not to gratify, because they thereby go about to bring a Servitude unworthy for Christian Men.

It is evident at *S. Pauls* time by the most clear Scriptures of God, that the use of Days, Meats, and al other particular Things were made free. And it was a sure Token of Infirmitie in Faith to doubt therof. Yet the Holy Ghost pronounceth, that such Weaklings ought to be received, not to the troubling of their Cogitations, and not to be condemned of the Stronger in Faith. And that in these things it might be granted to every one to be sure of his own Sense, seeing that the Lord hath received these Weaklings. Now if the Holy Ghost would have Men to yield so much to them which were in a manifest Error, in as much as they depended upon him in the chiefeft and necessary parts of sincere Religion, what ought to be granted to these concerning the

the free Use of external Things, which we cannot convict of any Error by Gods Word? For howsoever I expend and examine those your two Arguments, (that is, They are the Imitation of the *Aaronical* Priesthood, and the Marks of *Antichrists* Priesthood, and therefore ought to be eschued of them that love Christ) Yet that Thing which you would, is not hereby excluded. For to imitate *Aarons* Ceremonies is not of it self vitious, but only then when Men use them as necessary to Salvation, or to signify that Christ is yet for to come, to take flesh upon him. For if by no means it be lawful to use those things which were of *Aarons* Priesthood, or of the Gentils, then is it not lawful for us to have Churches, nor Holydays. For there is no express Commandment by Word. It is gathered notwithstanding from the Example of the old People, that they are profitable for us to the Encrease of Godlines.

Which thing also Experience proveth. For any thing to be a Note of Antichrist, is not in the nature of any Creature in it self (for to that end nothing was made of God) but it hangeth altogether of consenting to Antichrists Religion, and the professing therof. The which Consent and Profession being changed into the Consent and Profession of Christianity, there can stick in the things themselves no Note or Mark of Antichrists Religion. The use of Bells was a Mark of Antichristianity in our Churches, when the People by them was called to Masses, and when they were rung against Tempests; Now they are a Token of Christianity, when the People by them are gathered together to the Gospel of Christ, and other holy Actions. Why may it not then be, that the self same Garments may serve godly with Godly Men, that were of Wicked Signification with the Ungodly? Truly I know very many Ministers of Christ, most godly Men, who have used godly these Vestures, and at this day do yet use them. So that I dare not for this cause ascribe unto them any Fault at al, much les so hainous a Fault of communicating with Antichrist. For the which Fault we may utterly refuse to Communicate with them in Christ. The Priests of Devils did celebrate in their Sacrifices the Distribution of Bread and the Cup, as *Iustinus Martyr* and *Tertullian* make mention. What Let is there why we may not use the same Ceremonies also? You wil say, We have a Commandment of the Lord touching this Ceremony. Very wel: And by the self same it appeareth, 'same thing to serve among the Children of God to the Service of Christ, which the Wicked abused in the Service of Devils, if the Commandment of Christ be added therto. But it is the Commandment of Christ, that in our holy Actions we Institute and use al things, so as Comelines and Order be observed, that Faith may be Edified.

Now if any Church judge and have experience, (such as I doubt not there are many this day in *Germany*) that the use of such Vesture bringeth some Commendation to the holy Ministration; and thereby helpeth somewhat in the way of Comelines and Order to the Encrease of Faith; what I pray you can be brought out of the Scriptures, why that Church is not to be left to her own judgment in this Matter, neither therefore to be contemned, or to be called into Question for her judgment sake? That Church verily wil keep in these things a mean agreeable to the Cros of Christ, and wil diligently attend, that no Abuse

creep into it. If therefore you wil not admit such Liberty and Use of Vesture to this pure and holy Church, because they have no Commandment of the Lord, nor no Example of it, I do not se how you can grant to any Church, that it may Celebrate the Lords Supper in the Morning, and in an open Church especially consecrate to the Lord; that the Sacrament may be distributed to Men Kneeling or Standing, yea, to Women as well as to Men. For we have received of these things neither Commandment of the Lord, nor any Example; yea, rather the Lord gave a contrary Example. For in the Evening, and in a private House, he did make his Supper, and distribute the Sacrament, and that to Men only, and sitting at the Table.

But it wil be objected, that in *England* many use Vestures with manifest Superstition, and that they do nourish and confirm in the People Superstition. Even so, it may be answered, very many abuse al this whole Sacrament, as also Baptism, and al other Ceremonies. Therefore let us withstand this Mischief, and vanish it utterly. Wherunto, tho' it may be that the taking away of Vestures may help something, yet to drive away al this Mischief it wil not suffice. Nay, the Priests themselves must be first removed, and in their Rooms placed faithful Ministers in the Kingdom of Christ, such as be learned indeed, and godly affected. To this therefore, to this, I say, must we chiefly endeavour our selves, that the Hearts of the People may be purged by Faith. Which Faith is first encreased by the Hearing of the Word of God. This Hearing is brought by the Preachers of the Gospel.

Such therefore let us Pray for. And that there may be store of them, let us be earnest in our Reformation. Let there be a Visitation of the Universities, whence many fit Ministers for Churches may be gotten. Let us never cease to cry out against that Sacrilege, that the farrest Benefices are granted to unworthy Men, in respect of their Worldly Service; that the Parishes are so miserably undon through *Papistical* Sights and Violence. These, these, I say, are certain *Papistical* Facts. Against these ought we chiefly to bend our Force: But to be stout and earnest against Stones, Stocks, Vestures, and such other things, which of themselves neither bring Gain, Pleasure nor Honor, it is a very easy Matter to the Hearer and Speaker, especially those that be discharged from *Papistical* Superstition. For by the shaking off such things, great Mens Stomachs are not offended. But to remove Church robbers from the Spoils of Churches, and to do al things possible to this end and purpose, that every Parish may be provided of convenient Ministers, and that Curats may have sufficient for their Sustentation, and to aid them to the full Restitution of Christs Disciplin; This is a Thing of great Moment. This is a hard thing to al them which are not able to say with *S. Paul*, *For Christ is to me Life, and Death is to me Advantage.* And again, *God forbid that I should rejoyce, saving in the Cros of our Lord Jesus Christ, wherein the World is crucified to me, and I to the World.*

It pleaseth me right wel that al Antichrists Trash should be removed as far as might be. I mean not only his Ensignes and Marks, but al his Steps and Shadows, in what thing soever they seem to stand, whether it be in Stocks, Stones, Garments, or whatsoever other thing else it be. But let us endeavour our selves to banish first the Body and Substance of Antichrist; and then after, his Ensignes, Steps and Shadows.

dows. The Body and Substance of Antichrist consisteth in the wicked Destroyers and Spoilers of Churches. By whose Means not only Christs Disciplin, but also the whole Doctrin is opprest, and put out of place.

When I consider these things; and again look back, as I ought to do, towards the Precepts of the Lord, and his Examples, I wish with al my heart, that as many of us that wil be Christs followers indeed, even so we earnestly go about to restore his Kingdom. as the Lord himself went about to begin it, and that we seek it before al other things; and let the Preachers in al Doctrin and Disciplin instruct the People, and be such, who, for our Lord Christs sake, and the Preaching of the Gospel, wil be ready to leave al; and that by these Mens Ministry we bring the People to the Kingdom of Christ. And let us appoint to every Flock thereof faithful Shepherds, who may labour no les to cal again the true Notes and Marks of Christianity, as to abolish utterly the Marks and Notes of Antichristianity. Which I would so abolished, that there remained not so much as the Memory of them in any Mens Hearts. But seing that these things cannot be brought to pas without Christs Kingdom be fully received, I would wish that al We should to that end bestow al our Strength unto the which Work. Forasmuch as we need many Workfellows, I would wish, with al such as truly love the Lord Jesus, that we set apart all dissension, and joyn in one perfect Concord, to endeavour our selves to set upon the Common Adversary.

We se now, being taught by the Experience of so many Years. that the Lord granteth but to a few to depart from that Sentence which they have once fastened themselves in; especially if they have also contended for the same. So that we shal be enforced either to dissolve Christian Communion with many whom the Lord hath received, or else we must give place one to another: to the intent that either of them may rest in their own judgment, tho the other dissent. It is a very hard thing indeed, yea to most holy Men. to deny themselves; and he is seldome found among Men, which would not be content rather to yield in his Patrimony, than in the Opinion of his Wit. Now then, when as we see Almighty God bear this our Infirmary in us so mercifully, Fy on the Hardnes of our Hearts, if the Example of our Lord and God cannot encline and mollify our Hearts to the like Mercy and Patience.

Wherefore I conclude that we ought to take great diligent heed, first, that we take not upon us straitway to determine al Questions as they rise: Yea, let us stir none at al, which throughly tend not to the Kingdom of Christ. Let us acknowledg the Weaknes of our Wit and Judgment; Let us stand in fear of our natural Arrogancy, and our peevish self Wil in our own Inventions. Al things necessary unto Salvation are set unto us openly, clearly and plenteously in the holy Scriptures; and in the Study and Perfection thereof every one of us wanteth very much. Let us labour then to fulfill, and once to make up our Imperfections with godly Studies. Of al other Matters let us Dispute most warily, let us Define most slowly or never, let us Contend at no time. If at any time through Craft of Satan, or our own Negligence, Variance shal rise in these Things, let us betimes leave off

from the same, as soon as we can, by whatsoever way we may; or els let us make some Truce in them. Seldome is there any Victory obtained, yea, never whole Victory gotten.

Hereby, most godly Sir, you se undoubtedly what is best to be don, both in this Controversy of Vestures, as also of the Liberty of other Ceremonies. I had rather than much Goods this Question had never been moved. But now seeing it is moved, I wish it to be given over, and deferred to some other time. These your two Arguments, *It is a piece of Aarons Priesthood, and therefore contumelious towards Christ now Exhibited, as then glorious when he was to be exhibited.* Secondly, *These are Notes of Antichristianity, and therefore not to be used of Men given to Christianity.* These Reasons, I say, conclude not, in my judgment, that which you took in hand. For we borrow many things godly from the Order of *Aaron's Priesthood* to the Glory of Christ now exhibited. So many things which the Antichrists have made Marks of their Impiety, may be made Tokens of the Kingdom of Christ; as the Signes of Bread and Wine, the Water of Baptism, the Laying on of the Hands, Preachings, Churches, Holy Days, and many other Things. Also these Places of Scripture are of great Scope, *The Earth and the Fulnes therof is of the Lord*; Not of the Devil, Not of Antichrist, Not of the Wicked, Not against the Son of Man, Lord of his Sabbath. And, *the Sabbath is made for man and not man for the Sabbath.* And, *All things are pure to the Pure.* And, *Every Creature of God is good*, nor can be defiled by good Men, by the Abuse of Evil Men. The Word of God must be followed in al respects, as wel in our private Actions as public. For al things are to be don in the Name of the Lord *Jesus*, and to the Glory of God. Then such Liberty as we grant to our selves in our private use of external things, let us not deny in public. The true Spirit of Christ going about to overthrow Antichrist, overthroweth first those things which are chief and peculiar unto him. For first the Spirit of Christ endeavouring the Restitution of Christ's Kingdom, restoreth first Doctrin and Disciplin, which be the chief and peculiar Points of Christs Kingdom.

This colourable Craft of Satan also must be taken heed of, by the which he bringeth to pas oftentimes, that either we reckon those things Sins which are no Sins, and those that be Sins indeed, we seem not to regard them in our selves; or els, against those Sins which our Conscience defines to be Sins indeed, we use no such Severity as we ought.

The Lord grant that you, Right Worshipful Friend, may religiously weigh these things. I know you seek the Glory of Christ, and I have heard of you, wherein I rejoyce, that you are careful of your judgment, so that you dare not straitway reckon the same for sure and certain, tho' you seem to follow plainly the Word of God, thinking with your self that you are a Man, and that you may slide out of the Way. Therefore I desire and beseech you by the Cross of the Son of God, by the Salvation of the Churches, which are at this day overwhelmed with Calamities, by the desired Consent that we should seek to reign in al Churches, by the Peace that is in Christ *Jesus*: Again, I desire and beseech you, that you do nothing rashly in this Question of Ceremonies. You have seen weak Members in the Churches of Saxony;

Saxony; you have seen also many things, for the which you give God thanks. Let no Man therefore, except it be upon great Necessity, cast off those whom the Lord hath so notably taken to him. O! would to God the State of the Churches of *France, Italy, Poland*, were brought to this Point. Let us in this Realm take godly heed, that we suffer not unawares the Devils Intent; Who throweth in among us sundry Questions and Controversies; lest we should take in hand to hinder the Question of setting forward the Doctrin of the Gospel, and restoring of Disciplin: and therby to remove al Drones from Ecclesiastical and Scholastical Ministries; This Satan, when he cannot retain the Order of Bishops wholly in Service unto him, he goeth about utterly to abolish this Order; and by that Occasion so to spoil the Churches, that while due stipends want, the holy Ministry may be committed to the Vilest of the rascal People.

Let us take heed of these Cogitations of Satan, and let us withstand them as much as we can, by the Power of the Lord; and by no means unadvisedly to help them forward. For we are, who sincerely profess the Lord *Jesus*; and none of us there is, which is not oppressed with much Infirmary. Therefore let us receive one another as the Lord hath received us. Let us yield mutually one to another, as the Lord hath yielded to us. Which sincere and dutiful Love, if it bear stroke among us, we shal be able with one Spirit and one Mouth, and with our whole Might to discomfit the Body and Substance of Antichrist. And so afterward without any Offence of the Good, and with certain Edification of Faith among the Children of God, we may bring to pas the utter Defacing of al the Marks, Steps and Shadows of Antichrist.

Oh! Lord *Jesus*, Thou our only Peacemaker, as wel with the Father, as between our selves, Banish out of our Minds whatsoever draweth us insunder, whatsoever darkneth the Clearnes of Judgment among our selves, whatsoever by any way hindreth the absolute Concord in thy Ministers, in Defence of thy Kingdom, and in Destroying the Tyranny of Antichrist. Pour into our Minds thy holy Ghost, which may lead us into al Truth: Who grant us to se and take in hand al one thing; but first of al that which is chiefest. Wherby the Strength of thy Kingdom may be restored unto us, and al things pertaining to Antichrist may clearly be blotted out of al Mens Hearts and Memories. The Goodnes and Love of the Son of God, for his infinite Love sake towards us, vouchsafe to give us these Things, to the Glory of his Name, to the Salvation of the Elect, and that the Wicked say not stil, Where is their Christ? *Amen.*

Deditissimus tibi in Domino

Martinus Bucerus.

Hoper

M M.

Hoper to Martin Bucer, for his Judgment concerning wearing the Habits.

To Mr. *Martin Bucer*, D. D. his worthy Reader, and Master most Reverend, Grace and Peace from the Lord, &c.

*E. Biblioth.
Joh. D. Ep.
Elicn.*

FOR what Cause I am now in Trouble, Most Reverend, ye shal understand by this Messenger in Writing. I pray you that you would vouchsafe once to give it the reading. And if that you shal espy any Error therein, I desire you to signify it unto me by your Letters. If any thing hath been uttered too darkly, and with fewer Words than the Cause requireth, I pray you that you would set it out in the Margin with more Light and apter Words. If ye se the Cause just and meet for a godly Minister, Subscribe therunto in the end, I heartily pray you.

I send you al that I have written before, three years ago, upon the Ten Precepts: that your Worthines may know what my Judgment is in the case of *Divorfe*. I pray you, vouchsafe to read it, that if I have erred in this part by humane Oversight, I may be advertised by your Learning and fatherly Admonition, that I may Reform the same. I pray your Fatherhood therefore, and I doubt not but I shal soon obtain, that you would help the Church in her Conflict by the great and most notable Gifts of God undoubtedly bestowed upon you. I require the same of Mr. Doctor [*Peter*] *Martyr*. To whom, after your Sentence and prudent Judgment is known, this Messenger which I send, shal repair. The Lord *Jesus* long preserve your Worthines. At *London*, the 17 *Octob.* 1550.

Tours in Heart and Prayer al whole,

John Hoper.

N N.

Martin Bucer to John Hoper, In answer to the foregoing Letter.

Ubi supra.

GRACE and Peace from the Lord. Reverend Sir, I have diligently perused over your Letters and Writings concerning *Apparel*. And verily this Controversy which so grievously hindreth your Ministry and other, maketh me exceeding sorry. I could have wished to have given a great deal, that either it had not been moved at al, or els

els that it were speedily removed and taken away. For by these Lets and Stays, Satan prolongeth his full Banishment from among the People of God. How much I desire, Good Sir, to have all things reduced as well to the Apostolic Simplicity in external things, as also to the full and perfect Religion of advancing Gods Glory, not only in Matters Internal, but also External, I trust, you doubt nothing at all. For whosoever the Congregations have heard me speak, as at *Argentine, Ulma, Augusta, Casella*, and many other Places, I never procured to have a special kind of Apparel in the Administration of the Sacraments. And that Abuse which I see of these Garments remaining still in *England* in many places (the more pity) I would gladly suffer some great Torment in my Flesh that they were well taken away, not only with all the Marks and Badges of Antichrists Profession, but also with all the Sinews and peculiar Detriments which as yet in most horrible sort bear sway every where in *England*. For Church Robbers do still hold and spoil the chief Parish Churches, and commonly one Man hath Four, or Six, or more of them. And it is reported, that there are many which bestow two or three Benefices upon their Stewards or Huntsmen: And yet on that Condition, that they may reserve a good Portion of the Ecclesiastical Profits unto themselves alone; and cause Vicars to serve the Cures, such as they may hire best cheap, not such as are most fit for that Office. Both the Universities, out of which meet Persons ought to be taken, are miserably troubled by many, which either are Papists or Epicures.

Hereof it is that there are so few Gospellers, that ye shall have many Churches which in Five, Six, or more Years, have heard no godly Sermon. All divine Service is so coldly, disorderly, and blindly uttered of the Counterfeit Parish Priests or Vicars, that it is as well understood of the People, as if it were read in the *Afric* or *Indian* Tongue. *Baptism* is ministered in the Presence of a few light Women, that have more mind of Dallying. When *Mariages* are solemnized, they prattle and play. The *Lords Supper* in many Places celebrated as a Mas, from which the People know not that it any thing differeth, but that it is used in the Mother Tongue: and some one hired for Money receiveth the Sacraments. As for Christs Flock there is no due regard of it. They make no Conference of the *Catechism* with the ignorant Sort. There is no public nor private Admonition given to them which be slack in their Duty, or otherwise Offend; whereby the grievous Offenders might be bound to Repentance; and they which have done Penance might be Absolved: and they which stubbornly despise the Congregation, might be accounted for Infidels. How many of them knoweth that God hath so Commanded? They which have made no Confession of their Faith either in Word or Deed before the Congregation, are admitted to all Things belonging to Christ. They come with empty Hands before the Face of God into the holy Congregation. There is no due regard of the Poor. The Church hath no Patrimony. The Churches are common for ungodly Tales and Bargains; and at Service time the most part are trifling, or occupied with worldly Affairs. The Law of the H. Ghost concerning Apparel set forth by *Paul* and *Peter*, that our Women, (much rather Men) should be attired with comely Apparel, with Shamefastness and Modesty, not with broidred

broydred Hair, Gold, Pearls, &c. is not observed in the Churches, where the Gospel of Christ crucified is preached, and the Communion ministred. So where the *Disciplin* is neglected, yea rather it is unknown what the Church is, What the Communion of Saints is, What the Kingdom of Christ is; it cometh to pas that al Fear of God falleth out of the Hearts of Men. Hereof arise so many Complaints of Perjuries, of Adulteries, of Thefts, of Lyes, of divers and most impudent Deceits, and of Usuries most monstrous.

These Mischiefs which I have rcherfed we do know, Reverend Sir, that they are the chief Members of Antichrist, his Bones, Flesh, and Sinews, wherof he altogether consisteth. Which if we with mutual Force, with common and continual Travail, and with the Aid of the H. Ghost do seek to overthrow, the Abuse of Apparel and of al other things wil be utterly abandoned, and al the Badges and Shadows of Antichrist would vanish away. But if these principal Members of Antichrist, his Substance and whole Body be not cut off, and the Kingdom of Christ thorowly established, by restoring the pure Doctrin, and diligent Disciplin, by faithful and meet Ministers of Christ; in vain shal we labour to put the Marks and Shadows of Antichrist to flight.

My desire therefore is, Good Sir, that we following Christ our Saviour, and his Disciples, labour above al things that faithful and meet Pastors of the Lords Flock may speedily be appointed to every Parish, as neer as may be; that al Church Robbers be deprived, and that the People being instructed in Christ, the whole participation and Disciplin of Christ may be restored; even as is described, *Mat. 18. Joh. 20. Act. 2. 4, 5, 20. Rom. 12. 1 Cor. 12. Eph. 4. 1 Tim. 5.* and in such like places. Neither would I have any Ceremony either retained or newly ordained, unles it might be thought by the better part of the Congregation to further the holy and worthy Comelines and Order of those that glory in the Cros of our Lord *Jesus* Christ, and to the true Edification of Faith. And if any of the Churches would give ear to me, surely they should retain none of these Garments which the Papists have used in their supersticious Service. But this would I have for these Causes, that they might therby more plainly Confes and Declare, both that they had renounced al Fellowship with the *Romish* Antichrist, and also surely acknowledge the Liberty of external Things; and that herein they are occupied to restore those things, especially wherin the Disciplin of Christ doth chiefly consist, and which are Commanded us by God. For these Causes, I say, and also lest any occasion of Strife should remain among the Weaker, either for these things, or such like; and upon condition beside, that al those things which are any part of the Disciplin and Participation of Christ be received together, I could wish those Garments wherof we speak to be utterly removed.

But to say, that these Garments are so defiled by the Abuse of Antichrist, that no Church may use them, albeit how much soever some one of them worship their Saviour Christ, and know the Liberty of al things, I dare not be so bold; neither do I se any piece of Scripture, wherby I may defend this condemning of the good Creature of God. For the Scripture in al places saith, that every Creature of God is good unto

unto the Good, that is, to those which truly believe in Christ, and use his Creatures godly: And that it is good not only in respect of these Effects which we call natural, as Bread is good for his Operation of Feeding and Strengthening the Body, and Wine for his Effect of Drinking and Heating; but also they are good in respect of sundry Significations and Admonitions. For Godly Men stir up to themselves, and continue the Memory and Consideration of many of Gods Benefits, by occasion of all things, as they are Gods Creatures. Wherof come these Things which are in the Psalms and Songs of the Saints touching the Praise and Celebration of God, wherunto they allure all the Works of God.

That any Ceremony is wickedly *Aaronical* or *Antichristian*, standeth not in any Creature of God, in any Garment, in any Figure, in any Colour, or any Work of God, but in the Mind and Profession of those which abuse Gods good Creatures to wicked Significations. For what Scripture doth teach that the Devil or Wicked Men have the Power, that by their Abusing they can make any good Creature of God, and such a one as is good (to signify and Admonish simply) evil and Wicked? Wherfore nothing can be truly said to appertain to the Priesthood of *Aaron*, as touching that it is abolished, (for neither the holy Ministry of the Church, which is taught us by the Precepts of the Priesthood of *Aaron*, is yet abolished) but for that it is used with that Superstition, as tho' it were so necessary unto Salvation, now that Christ is reveled; or that it were profitable of it self; or that thereby occasion might be given to any Man to take this Superstition to himself, either to retain it, or to trouble the Unity of the Brethren. So then it cannot be called a Ceremony of Antichrist, unless some Profession or Participation of Antichrist thereby be shewed, or that serve for such Profession, or Participation.

Now who can deny, that the Lord granteth to many of his Elect, to take unto themselves only Significations and Admonitions out of all things, (beside the natural use of them) both of the Benefits of God, and also of their own Duties, but not of any evil thing? And so they should detest from the bottome of their Hearts all things which are contrary unto Christ, that no occasion at all may be given unto them by any thing, howsoever other Men have abused it, of any Superstition or Fellowship with Darkness, either disturbing of Brotherly Love. Now if such true Christians, (of whom there soon would be great plenty every where, if that with the pure Doctrine of Christ, his whole Communion and Discipline did flourish in their Churches) did think it would help somewhat to the setting forth of the holy Ministry among simple Men and Children, that Ministers should wear some special kind of Apparel in their Ministration; (yea, and that which the Papists have abused) truly I see not Scripture teach the contrary, why I should not leave such Christians to their own judgment. And why I ought so to do, I doubt not but it is clearly taught *Rom. 14. 1 Cor. 8 and 9.* And also in many other places we are taught concerning the Liberty and the good Use of Creatures, not of Meats only, but also of all other Things.

It is certain also that our Lord *Jesus* Christ prescribed unto us in his Words the Substance only of the holy Ministry of his Word and Sacraments,

craments, and to have granted to the Churches the Ordinance of al other things, which belong to the comely and profitable Administration of the Sacraments. Wheupon we neither celebrate the holy Supper at Evening, neither in a private House, neither sitting, nor with Men only. Some reckon among these things, which freely are left to the Ordinance of the Churches, to minister the Communion once a year only, thrice or four times, or oftner, and to stand at it, neither to be partaker of the Sacraments. But sure it is, that both of them are plaine Papistical. It is certain that the Apostles, and the Congregations of the Apostles, ministred the Lords Supper after the Institution of Christ, every Sabbath day, and as often as the Brethren assembled in greater Measures together, and al that were present were partakers according to the Word of the Lord, *Drink ye al of this*. Wherby it is plain enough, that he would have al eat of the offered Bread. Now in every holy Assembly of Brethren, we ought to celebrate the *Memory* of the Lord; for which the Lord also ordained his Supper, and so was continued by the Apostles we are sufficiently taught, *Acts* 4. and *1 Cor.* 11. Then these two things, to Celebrate the Lords Supper so seldom, and so few to receive it, I judge to be simply Papistical. For they disagree with the Word of God.

As for these things touching the *Place*, the *Time*, the *Apparel*, to minister or receive the holy Communion, of admitting Women to the Lords Table, of the Maner of Prayers and Hymnes unto God; so also of Apparel, and other things pertaining to outward Comelines, I doubt not but the Lord gave free Liberty to his Churches to appoint and ordain in these things that which every Church shal judge most available for the People, to maintain and encrease the Reverence towards al the divine Service of God. If then any Churches, by this Liberty of Christ, would have their Ministers wear some special Apparel in their holy Ministry to this End of Edifying the Flock of Christ; setting apart al Superstition, al Lightnes, and al Dissension among Brethren, that is, al Abuse; I se not who can condemn such Churches for this Matter, of any Sin, no, nor of any Fellowship with Antichrist. What if some Church, by the pure and holy Consent of themselves, should have that Custome, that every one should wear a White Garment at the holy Communion, as they sometimes did which newly were baptized? For if any wil strive that this Liberty is to be granted to no Church of Christ, he must needs confes one of these; either that nothing is to be permitted to the Churches, to be ordained about the Lords Supper, wherof I have no expres Commandment of Christ, (wherby al Churches shal be condemned of ungodly boldnes. For al do observe both Time and Place, and gesture of Body, in the Ministration of the holy Supper, and they admit Women to the Communion. Of al which things they not only have no Commandment of the Lord, but also a contrary Example. For the Lord held his Supper in the Evening, not in the Morning; in a private House, not in a public; sitting down with his Disciples and receiving the Pascal Lamb, not standing, and shewing this only Communion of himself. Moreover the Women were excluded, which yet were accounted most devout and holy among his Disciples.) Or els it cannot be, that there should be Churches, which the Lord so far forth delivereth from al Superstition and Abuse of his good Creatures

tures, that to the clean al the Creatures of God are good, and in use of Signification clean by true Faith in his Name, (Which whoſo faith, he truly thereby ſhal deny Chriſt our Lord to be the ſame unto al Men, which he promiſed to become, namely, a Deliverer from al Sin, and a Purger from al uncleannes) Or that the Wicked by their Abufe may ſo pollute the Creatures of God, which of themſelves are good, that they can ſerve no godly Man to a godly Uſe. Which is plainly contrary to the Teſtimonies of the Holy Ghoſt, *Rom. 14.* *1 Cor. 8,* and *9. 1 Tim. 4.* Or elſe truly it is not lawful for Chriſtians to entreat of every thing, both to warn them of their Creator, and Knowledge of themſelves, and of his Benefits towards us, and our Duties towards him. Which is contrary to that the Holy Ghoſt in al places teacheth, of the Acknowledging and Worſhipping of God in al his Works, and doing al things in the Name of our Lord *Jeſus Chriſt* to the Glory of the Father.

Al theſe Abſurdities muſt godly Minds eſchew. Neither is that Evil to be feared, which was wont to be objected; If ſo great a Liberty be granted to the Church, that they may put every thing to godly Significations and Admonitions, there are which wil bring into our Service al the Ceremonies, either of *Aaron*, or of the Antichriſt of *Rome*, or of the Gentils. For the Churches which I have deſcribed, and to whom I think cannot that Liberty be denied wherof I ſpeak, whatſoever Ceremonies or Apparel they take to their uſe, they wil order to ſerve the Goſpel of our Lord and Saviour *Jeſus Chriſt*; by ſetting it forth, not by darkning it. Even as among true Chriſtians the next end of al the outward Ceremonies, and expreſly commanded by the Lord, is the Commendation and Decking of the Miniſtry of the Goſpel; by which al Superſtition and Abufe of al things is put to flight. So that Will we, Nil we, we muſt needs confeſ the Differences of Apparel in them that bear Civil Office, to give cauſe unto Men wel affected of ſingular Reverence towards the Magiſtrates, What ſhould let, why the ſame ſhould not be in the Miniſtry of Religion? Every godly Motion of the Mind procedeth neceſſarily from the Holy Ghoſt; and it muſt needs be maintained by the Word of God. Notwithſtanding to this Spirit, and to the Word of God, al Creatures with the Godly do ſerve. And ſo much the more, if the things by public Ordinance be appointed to any godly Signification and Admonition. For unto the Good, God hath created al his Works for Good and ſundry Uſe. He preſerveth them, and if they uſe them in him, he delivereth them unto him. Let us conſider what the Holy Ghoſt teacheth touching the Signification of the Vail of a Woman, of the Covering of a Mans Head, *1 Cor. 11.* Alſo, why he made mention by Name of the ſhining Garments of *Aaron*. He doth nothing raiſhly, but in al things he procurerh the Salvation of his, which conſiſteth by Faith of the Goſpel. But herof I have written more at large to Maſter *Alaſco*.

The Lord knoweth, how I deſire to further your Study, but for the reſtoring of the whole Kingdom of Chriſt: And as I ſe the Abufe of that Apparel as yet to remain, I would buy it dearly that they were clean taken away. But to make it wicked of it ſelf to uſe them any ways, I ſe no Cauſe. Grant it to me. Whatſoever Scriptures you alledg againſt the *Traditions* of Men, you know, that al that is to be

understood of these things wherwith Men wil worship God by themselves, and overpassing the Commandments of God, eat Meat rather with washed Hands than unwashed. Whatsoever you speak of *beggaryly and weak Elements*, you know it pertaineth to Superstition: wherby these things were requisite, as necessary or profitable of themselves to Salvation, now that Christ is reveled. Whatsoever you se of the Abuse of these Garments, that is not in the Garments, but sticketh in unclean Minds. But can these things be so repugnant to the Word and Spirit of God, seing that al things are *clean to them*, even those which Antichrists most filthily have polluted?

If these things shal satisfy you. Reverend Sir, I wil rejoyce in the Lord. Otherwise I pray you, shew me those Scriptures in few Words, wherby I may se, that this my Opinion touching the Liberty of these things standeth not with the Word of God. And I pray God, that he so moderate, or else remove this Controversy, lest any way it hinder the necessary Clesing of the Church; and lest they be divided either in Opinion or in Ministracion, whom God in such sort hath coupled and joyned to set forward the Salvation of the People.

I wish you and your Wife, and al the Company of Brethren there with you, to live happily in al things, and I commend my Ministry unto your Prayers. In that I send back so late, and do send you your Writings again, I pray you bear with my earnest Busines, which these Days have let me for the Kingdom of Christs sake; and also because I lack trusty Messengers, to whom I might commit these to be brought unto you. The Grace of the Lord encrease always in you and us al, *Amen.*

Your most bounden in the Lord,

Martin Bucer.

OO.

Crowley's Epigramms, concerning Abuses.

I. Abbays.

E. Biblioth. R.
D. Johan.
Ep. Elicen.

AS I walked alone and mused on thyngs,
That have in my Time bene done by great Kings,
I bethought me of Abbays, that sometyne I saw,
Which are now Suppressed al by a Law.
O Lord, thought I then, what Occasion was here,
To provide for Learning, and make Poverty chere?
The Lands and the Jewels that hereby were hadd,
Would have found godly Prechers, which might wel have ladd
The People aright, that now go astray,
And have fed the Poor, that famish every day:

But

But as I thus thought, it came to my Mynde,
That the People wil not se, but delyghte to be blynde.
Wherefore they are not worthy good Preachers to have,
Nor yet be provyded for, but in vayne stil to crave.
Than sayd I, O Lord God, make this Tyme short,
For theyr only sake, that be thy chosen sort.

II. Alehouses.

N Edes must we have Places for Vitayls to be sold,
For such as be Syck, Pore, Feble and Old.
But, Lord, to how great Abuse they be grown,
In eche little Hamlet, Vyllage and Towne?
They are become Places of Wast and Excess,
An Herbour for such men, as lyve in Idleness.
And lyghtly in the Contry they be placed so,
That they stand in mens way, when they should to Church go:
And then such as love not to hear theyr Faults told
By the Minister that readeth the N. Testament and Old,
Do turn into the Alehouse, and let the Church go:
And men accompted Wise and Honest do so.
But London, God be praised, al men may Commend,
Which doth now this great Enormity Emende.
For in Servyce Tyme no Dore standeth upp,
Where such men are apt to fyl Can and Cupp,
Wold God in the Country they would do the same,
Either for Gods fear, or for Worldly shame.

III. Almes-Houses.

A Merchant that long Time had bene in straunge Landes,
Returned to his Contry which in Europe stands.
And in his Return his way laye to pass
By a Spittle House not far from wher his Dwelling was.
He loked for this Hospital, but none could be se,
For a Lordly House was built, where the Hospitall should be.
Good Lord (sayd this Merchant) is my Country so wealthy,
That the very Beggars Houses be built so gorgeously?
Than by the way syde hym chaunced to se
A pore man that craved of hym for Charitie.
Why? (quoth this Merchaunt) what meaneth this thing?
Do ye begg by the way, and have a House for a King?
Alas! Sir, (quod the pore man) we are al turned out,
And ly and dy in Corners here and thereabout.
Men of great Riches have bought our Dwelling place,
And whan we crave of them, they turn away their Face.
Lord God, (quod this Merchaunt) in Turkey have I bene,
Yet emong these Heathen none such Cruelty have I sene.

IV. Bailif

IV. Bailif Arrants.

A Bailif there was in the West Contrey,
 That did as they do in al Quarters, men seye.
 He served with one Wryt an whole Score or Tweyne,
 And toke in hand to excuse them, having Pence for bys payne:
 And when he should warn a Quest in Sessions to appear,
 He would surely warn them that would make hym no chere:
 And than take a Bribe to make Answer for them;
 But when he met his Friends, than would he say, Hem.
 But such as had no Chere, nor Mony to pay,
 Were sure to trudge to the Session alway.
 Ye must give hym some thyng to sow his Hadland,
 Or els ye can have no fauour at his hand.
 Some Puddings or Baken, or Chese for to Eat,
 A Bushel of Barly, some Malt or some Wheat.
 His Hadland is good ground and beareth al thyng,
 Be it Baken or Befe, Stockfyshe or Lynge.
 Thus pore men are pold and pild to the bare,
 By such as should serve them to kepe them from Care.

V. Bawds.

THE Bawds of the Stews be turned al out:
 But some think they inhabit al England througout;
 In Taverns and Typling Houses many might be found,
 If Officers would make Serch, but as they are bound.
 Well, let them take heed, I wyl say no more;
 But when God revengeth, he punisheth sore.

VI. Beggars.

I Heard of two Beggars that under an Hedg sate,
 Who did with long Talk their Matters debate.
 They had both sore Leggs most lothsome to se,
 Al raw from the Fote welmost to the Knee.
 My Legg, quod the One, I thank God, is fayre,
 So is myne, quod the other, in a cold ayre.
 For then it loketh raw, and as red as any bloud;
 I would not have it healed for any Worlds good.
 For were it once whole, my Lyving were gone,
 And for a sturdy Beggar, I should be take anone.
 No manne would pity me but for my sore Legg,
 Wherfore if it were whole, in vain I might begg.
 I should be constrained to Labour and sweat,
 And perhaps sometime with Scourges be beat.
 Wel, sayd the tother, let us take bede therfore,
 That we let them not heal, but kepe them styl sore.
 Another thyng I hear of a Beggar that was Lane,
 Much lyke one of these, if it were not the same:

Who

Who sytting by the Fyre with the Cupp in hys hand,
 Began to wonder whan he should turn good Husband.
 I shal never thryve, quod this Beggar, I wene,
 For I gate but xvi pence to day, and I have spent eyghtene.
 Wel, let the World wagg, we must needs have drink;
 Go, fyl me this quart pot ful to the brink.
 The Tongue must have bastynge, it wil the better wagg
 To pul a Goddes peny out of a Churles Bagg.

VII. Brawlers.

A Brawler that loveth to break the Kings Peace,
 And seke his own Sorowe his Fancy to please,
 Is like a Burr Dogg that setteth upon
 Eche Mastife and Hound that he may light on:
 He getteth hym Hatred of every manne,
 And meteth with his Master ever now and than.
 To hurt other menn he taketh great payne,
 He turneth no mann to profit or gayne;
 Except it be the Surgeon or the Armorer,
 The Baylife, the Constable, or the Fayler.

VIII. The Collier of Croyden.

It is said that in Croyden there did sometyne dwell
 A Collyer that did al other Collyers excel.
 For his Riches thys Collyer might have bene a Knight,
 But in the Order of Knighthood he had no delight.
 Would God al our Knights did mind Coling no more,
 Than thys Collyer did Knighting, as is sayd before.
 For when none but pore Collyers did with Coles mell,
 At a reasonable price they did their Coles sell.
 But synce our Knight Collyers have had the first Sale,
 We have payd much money, and had few Sacks to tale.
 A Lode that late yeres for a Royal was sold,
 Wyl cost now xvi shillings of Sylver or Gold.
 God graunt these men grace their polling to refrayne,
 Or els bryng them back to theyr old State agayne;
 And especially the Colliar that at Croyden doth sell;
 For men thynk he is Cosin to the Collyar of Hell.

IX. Double Beneficed Men.

THE Kyng of that Realme where Justice doth reign,
 Perused old Statutes that in Bokes remayne,
 And as he turned the Boke, hym chaunced to se,
 That such as have Benefices should Resident be;
 And have their Abyding, whyles theyr lyfe should endure,
 Among them over whom God hath geven them Cure.
 Then sayd he to himself, I thynk wel there is
 No Law in this Realm worse observed than this.

Yet can there nothing my Flock more decay,
 Then when Hyrelings suffer my Shepe go astray.
 Then called he his Council and told them his mind,
 And wylled that they should some Remedy find.
 Who with good Advyce agreed on this Thyng,
 That Visitours should be sent with the Power of the King,
 To punissh al such as herein dyd offend,
 Unles they were found thorow willing to amend.
 These Visitours found many stout Priests, but chiefly one
 Who had sundry Benefices, but would surrender none.
 Then was this stout Fellow brought to the Kyng,
 Who sayd unto hym, how chaunceth this Thyng?
 Wyl ye transgress my Laws, and than disobey
 Menne havynge my Power? Sir, What can you say?
 If it mai like your Grace (quod he) Lo! here is to see
 Your Seal at a Graunt of a Pluralitie.
 Wel, sayd the Kyng than, I repent me of al yll:
 But tel me Maister Doctour, Wil you have your Benefices stil?
 If your Grace do me ryght (quod he) I must have them my Life time.
 So shalt thou, sayd the Kyng, for to morrow by prime,
 God wylling, thy Body shal be divided and sent,
 To ech Benefice a piece, to make thee Resident.
 Away with hym, (quod the Kyng) and let al thyngs be done
 As I have geven Sentence by to morrow ere none,
 For syth thou art a stout Priest, an Example thou shalt be,
 That al stouburn Priests may take warnyng by thee.

X. Foretallers.

THE Fryses of Walys to Bristow are brought,
 But before they were woven, in Walys they are bought.
 So that now we do pay four Groats or els more,
 For the Fryse we have bought for eight pence heretofore.
 And some say, the Wool is bought ere it do grow,
 And the Corn long before it come in the Mowe.
 And one thyng there is that burteth most of al,
 Reversions of Farmes are bought long ere they fal.
 And ryght so are Benefices in every Coast:
 So that Persons and Vicars kepe neither Sodd nor Rost.
 The Pore of the Parish whom the Person should fede,
 Can have nought of our Tythis to succour theyr Nede.
 Reversions of Fermes are bought on ech syde,
 And the old Tenant must pay wel, if he wyl abyde:
 And where the Father payd a peny and a Capon or twayn,
 The Son must pay Ten pounds; which passeth my brayn.
 Wel, Let these Foretallers repent them by tyme,
 Lest the Clark of the Market be with them ere Prime.
 For he when he cometh wyl punysh them all,
 That do any nedeful thyng ingrose or forestal.

XI. Nice

XI. Nice Wives.

I Think the abominable Whores of the Stews
 Did never more whorelike Attirements use.
 The Capp on hyr head is lyke a Soves Marw,
 Such another Fashion, I thynk never Jew saw.
 Then fine Geare on the Forehead set after the new Tryck,
 Tho' it cost a Crown or two, what then? They may not styck.
 If theyr Heyr wyl not take Colour, then must they buy new,
 And lay it out in Tussocks; this thyng is too true.
 At eck syde a Tussock as bygg as a Ball,
 A very fayr Syght for a Fornicator bestiall.
 Hyr Face fayr paynted to make it shyne bryght,
 And hyr Bosome al bare in most whorelyke dight.
 Hyr Myddle braced in as smal as a Wand,
 And some buy Wasts of Wyre at the Pastwyfes hand.
 A Bumbe lyke a Barrel, with Whoops at the skyrte;
 Hyr Shoes of such Stuff that may touch no dyrte.
 Upon hyr whyte Fyngers many Ryngs of Gold
 With such maner Stones, as are most dearly sold.
 Of al theyr other Trifles I wyl say nothyng,
 Least I have but smal thanks for thys my Wryting.
 Al modest Matrons, I trust wil take my part;
 As for nice Whippets Words, shal not come ny my bert.

XII. Obstinate Papists.

A N obstinate Papist that was sometime a Frier,
 Had of hys Friers Cote so great a desire,
 That he stole out of England, and went to Lovayne,
 And gat hys Friers Cote on hys soles back agayne.
 A wilful Beggar this Papist wyl be,
 A Fole and a Fryer: And thus is one man thre.
 Would God al the Papists that he left behynd,
 Were with hym in Fryers Cotys according to theyr kynd.

XIII. Vayn Wryters, Vayn Talkers, Vayn Hearers.

O F late as I lay and lacked my rest;
 At such tyme as Titan drew fast to the East,
 Thys saying of Chrift came into my Mynde,
 Which certayn and true al maner men shal fynde;
 Of every idle Word ye shal geve a Reckonyng,
 Be it spoken by Mouth, or put in Wrytinge.
 O Lord, thought I then, what case be they in,
 That talk and write vaynly, and think it no syn?
 Then slombred I a little, and thought that I saw
 Three sorts of vayn menne condemned by Gods Law.

*The one was a Wryter of thyngs nought and vayne,
And another a Talker; And this was theyr payn:
The Wryter had the Crowne of hys Head opened;
Whose Brayns with a Styck the Talker styrred.
And he with both hands drew the Talkers Tongue
So that withowt hys Mouth it was an handful long:
The Third was an Herkener of Fables and Lyes,
Whose Ears were almost drawn up to hys Eyes.*

XIV. Unfatiable Purchasers.

AN unreasonable Rych Man dyd ryde by the way,
Who for lack of Men hadd with hym a Boy.
And as he past by a Pasture most pleasant to se,
Of late I have purchased thys Ground, Jack, quod he.
Mary Maister, quod the Boy, Men say over al,
That your Purchase is great, but your Household is smal.
Why, Jack, quod thys Riche man, what have they to do?
Would they have me to purchase, and kepe great house too?
I cannot tel, quod the Boy, what maketh them to brawle,
But they say, that ye purchase the Devil, his Dam and all.

XV. Usurers.

A Certain Man had Lands, little though it were,
And yet wold faine have lived lyke a Gentlemans Peer.
Of thys Land he made Sale, and toke ready Gold;
And let that for double Rent of the Land that was sold:
Then came there a Broker, and sayd if he would do
As he would advise hym, he should make of one Peny two.
Mary, that would I fain do, quod thys Usurer than,
I pray thee teach me the Feat, if thou can.
Thou shal, sayd thys Broker, lend but for a Months day;
And be sure of a sufficient Gage alway,
With a playn Bil of Sale; if the day be not kept,
And se that ye do no Causes accept.
Than must you be sure, that your Interest be
One peny for a Shilling, and three pence for Three.
So by the yeres end Twelve Months geve twelve Pence
For the Use of a Shillyng, Lo! I have told you al sence.
Than sayd thys Usurer, this Matter goeth wel,
For my Twenty Pound Land, that I chanced to sel,
I shal have four hundred pound Rent by the yere,
To lyve lyke a Lord, and make joly chere.

The

P P.

The Form of the Commission by the King to his Council, in his Minority.

E *EDWARD* the Sixth, &c. Whereas the late King, our most gracious Lord, and Loving Father, King *Henry VIII.* of most worthy Memory, perceiving in himself to draw towards the End of this vain and transitory Life, made his Will and Testament in such Maner and Form, as appeareth, enrolled in Our High Court of Chancery for Matter of Record; And considering at the making of the said last Will and Testament, that the Crown Imperial, and Kingly Regiment of so great and many Realms, Dominions, and Subjects, descending unto us by Right, Title and Succession after his Decease; We, for lack of Knowledg and Experience, which Our young and few Years at that Time could not so soon have conceived and gotten, should not of Our selves be so wel able to administer, direct and rule the Affairs of Our said Realms, Dominions and Subjects, as both to Our own Honour and Surety, and also to the Benefit and Preservation of Our own good Subjects should appertain; Did therefore, like a most prudent Prince, and a very kind and natural Loving Father, Choose, Elect, Name and Ordain to be Our Executors and Counsellors of Privy Council about Us, such Personages, as of whose Faithfulness, Wisedoms and Diligences he had received, by a long Time, good Proofs, and great Experience; that is to say, *A. B. &c.* Praying, Willing and Commanding them in as earnest Maner, and with as great Charge as he could devise, to take upon them the Offices of His Executors and Our Counsellors of Privy Council: Giving to them such Authority and Commission for the counsailling of Us, and the Government of Our Person, and the mayning and directing of Our Affairs, both Private and Public, as in his said last Will and Testament doth appear: Also Charging and Commanding Us, so far forth as a Father might charge and command his Son, to be ordered and ruled by the Advice and Council of his said Executors and Counsellors.

And whereas also upon a special Trust and Confidence, which Our said Father had in *A. B. &c.* He appointed them in his said last Will and Testament to be of Council, for the aiding and assisting of the forenamed Counsellors and Executors, when they or any of them should be called by his said Executors, or the more Part of the same: Like as first, We must and do, among many other Benefits given unto Us of God, knowledg his Gift unto Us of so prudent, careful, loving, kind and wise a Father, to be one of the greatest Gifts and Benefits unto Us, and thereafter render unto his Divine Majesty Our most humble, lowly and most hearty Thanks; so finding already, and knowing certainly how necessary, profitable and honorable the making, appointing and mayning by the said late King Our Father of his forenamed Executors and Counsellors for Assistance, and also th'Ordre, Charge,

Commission and Authority given to them by him ; and his Charge also to Us to be advised and counsilled by them ; hath been and is to Us, Our Realms, Dominions and Subjects.

WE do, of our certain Knowledg and mere Motion, approve, confirm, ratify, and take in most gracious, firm, stable, and thankful Part, al and every Deed and Deeds, Act and Acts, Thing and Things, of what Nature, Condition or Quality they, or any of them have been or be ; Which the aforesaid Executors and Counsillors of Privy Council, or the most Part of them assembled in Council, or the forenamed Executors and Counsillors of Privy Council, and Counsillors for Assistance, or the most Part of them assembled in Council, have treated, concluded, commanded, ordered, appointed, directed, advised, counsilled, written, said or don, at any time or time, or in any maner wise, or by any Maner mean, sithence the Disease of the said late King our Father, in, for, or concerning the Government of our Person, or the Order, Rule, Government, Direction or Mayning in any manerwise, with, of, or in our Affairs, private or public, inward or outward, of our Realms, Dominions or Subjects, or any of them.

And forasmuch as having but now lately accomplished the Age of Twelve Years, We do nevertheles, Thanks be to God, wel perceive and understand, how much unable yet for a Time we are, for want of perfect Knowledg and Experience, to take, unto our own mayning and direction, our Affairs, either public or private, such are the great Numbers and Variety of the same, occurring daily as wel at home in Our Dominions, as with foreign Parts. And considering also how convenient, needful, profitable and honorable it is, for every Prince, of what Estate or Age soever he be, to elect, and have about him grave and wise Counsillors, and to follow their Advice and Council, in al his Doings and Proceedings ; We therefore of our certain Knowledg, mere Motion, and very just Consideration, and for the good Proof which we have always had of *A. B. &c.* whom, the said late King, Our said Father, did Name and Order to be his Executors, and Counsillours to Us of our Privy Council ; and of the said *A. B. &c.* whom our said Father did appoint to be Counsillors for Assistance ; Do desire and pray, and nevertheles wil and command them to execute, use, exercise and take upon them the Offices and Places of Counsillors of our Privy Council, and Counsillors for Assistance, in such maner and form as Our said Father by his last will and Testament hath named and appointed them and every of them, for and concerning their Advice for Our Mariage ; for and concerning the Government of Our Person, the Ordering the Affairs of the Realm, both outward and inward, and also Our own private Affairs : So to continue in the said Rooms and Places during Our Plesure, the same Our Plesure to be declared to them, or any such of them, whom we shal upon occasion fortune hereafter to discharge from any the said Rooms or Places, by Our Letters Patents Signed with Our own Hand, and Scaled with the great Seal of *England*.

And for because the Variety and Number of Things, Affairs and Matters, are, and may be such, as we not knowing now beforehand the Names, Natures, Qualities or Certainties of them, cannot conveniently prescribe or set forth any certain Instructions, Rules or Orders, unto

unto Our said Counsellors, for their Behaviour and Proceedings in this Charge, which we have, and do now appoint unto them during Our Plesure, as aforesaid; We therefore for the special Trust and Confidence which We have in them, do give and grant full Power and Authority to them, or to the most Part of them, assembled together in Council, an in the Absence of any of them, to the most Part of them which shal be present and assembled together in Council; To make, devise, and ordain what Thing or Things soever they or the more Part of them, as aforesaid, shal from Time to Time, and at al Times during the Time they be our Counsellors, think necessary, meet or convenient, for the Benefit, Honor, Surety, Weal public, or Commoditie, of Us, Our Realms, Dominions or Subjects, or any of them: And the same Thing or Things so made or ordained by them, or the more part of them, as aforesaid, to do, execute, accomplish and set forth for Us, and in Our Name, or cause to be don, executed, accomplished and set forth for Us, and in Our Name, by their Discretions, or the Discretions of the more Part of them as aforesaid, in as large and ample Maner, as if We had or did Expres unto them in special Words, Articles, or Matters, or by more special Commission, the self same Manner of Doing or Proceeding, which they or the more part of them, as aforesaid, shal think meet from Time to Time to use or follow, or the self same particular Matter or Matters, Cause or Causes, that may chaunce or occur, the Time they be our Counsellors, as aforesaid, Willing and Commanding, &c.

~~~~~

## Q Q.

*Certain Orders set forth by the Justices of Cornwall, for the Accomplishment of the Kings Commandment, by his Highness's Letters to them directed; For the speedy Reformation of the unreasonable Prizes of Victuals in Markets, and for the Punishment of the Causers of the same.*

### CORNWALL.

**F**IRST, That the said Justices within their Circuits and Limits to them appointed, do treat with the best and most honest Personages of any Market-Towns within their said Limits; and to know of them the Names of those which were wont to serve the Markets, and such as now be hable to serve the same Markets of Grain; which of Butter and Cheese; which of Flesh: And whether they, or any of them, have withdrawn, or not. Titus B. 2.

*Item,* After that taken and entred in a Book, then to know of them what the Names of those were that have sold the same at excessive Prices, sithence the late Commandment.

*Item,*



*Item*, That every Justice in their Limits do send for the said Sellers, and to take their Answers, and the Proofs of the said Town-dwellers. And if it shal then appear they have offended, then to give them Day under Sureties to appear before them to receive their Deserts.

*Item*, If they accuse others that make Sale of the same to them at excessive Prices, that then those be sent for, and put under like Sureties.

*Item*, The Grain of every the Parishes to be surveyed by the said Justices, and likewise the of the same; to be likewise entered in a Book; who occupieth the same, and with what Stuff, and what Prices the same have been sold: Whether they were fat or lean; and to whom.

*Item*, That Victuallers be appointed to serve in the said Market-Towns, such as dwel nigh, or in the said Towns, and be no Graziers: And they to fetch Cattle for the same Markets with the said Graziers, by the Precept of the said Justices, or any of them, directed to the Constable of his Parish there: And such Constable is for their Warrant to deliver the same to his said Victualler, paying for the same at the Kings Majesties Price.

*Item*, Likewise that Grain be appointed to serve the said Markets by the said Surveyors at reasonable Prices, by them to be appointed, after the Quantity by those Persons there, as it shal appear it is by their Survey.

*Item*, Likewise of Butter and Cheese, that they that were accustomed to serve the Markets with Butter and Cheese, and other Victuals, do serve the same, if they have wherewith, at the Kings Price.

*Item*, That the Butcher, having Beefs, Muttons, and al other Victuals at his Graziers hands at the Kings price, shal be compelled to sel the same to the Kings People according to the Rate, by the Orders of the Mayors and chief Officers of the Market-Town, at the Commandment of the Justices.

*Item*, That if any Ambiguity rise betwixt the Butcher and the Grazier in making the Price, having regard to the Largeness of the Beast, that the same be appealed, and adjudged by the Justice of Peax next adjoyning.

*Item*, That every Victualler bring the Hide of every the Beasts that shal be killed weekly to the Markets, and there make Sale of them in open Market, at such prices as the Justices of Peax shal appoint.

*Item*, That henceforth no Fisher make Sale of any kind of Fish upon the Sea, nor elsewhere, but upon the Strand; and that the same remain upon the Strand during one whole Hour, to be sold to al Comers of the Country, at such Prices as one of the said Fishers and one of the Landmen wil appoint. And in case none of the Country be there to buy the said Fish, or any Part thereof, by the space of one Hour, that then the said Fishers shal be at Liberty to sel the same to any Jowtar, or other, to their most Advantage, as they and the Buyers may agree.

*Item*, When the Fisher or Jowtar bring any Fish to the Market, that then they sel the same at reasonable Prices, or els at such Prices as the Mayors and chief Officers of the same Town shal appoint.



A Table making Mention of certain Prizes made by the Kings Majesties Justices of all Kinds of Corn, and sundry other Necessaries.

## Cornwall.

| A Bushel of Wheat.                                |                                                                  | A Bushel of Barly.                              | A Bushel of Oats.                                           |
|---------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------|
| At { Stretton }<br>{ Launceston }<br>{ Saltashe } | 3 s. 4 d. { Memorand.<br>This is 12<br>Gallons to<br>the Bushel. | At { Bodmyn }<br>{ Lostuthiel }<br>{ Tregonye } | At { Bodmyn }<br>{ Padstow }<br>{ Lostuthiel }              |
| At { Lyskerde }<br>{ Lowe }                       | 4 s. 8 d. { 16 Gallons<br>to the Bush.                           | At { Trerewe }<br>{ St. Columbe }               | At { Leskyrd }<br>{ Low }<br>{ Saltashe }<br>{ Launceston } |
| At { Bodmyn }<br>{ Lostuthiel }<br>{ Tregonye }   | 5 s. 8 d. { 18 Gall. to<br>the Bushel.                           | At { Penryn }<br>{ Padstow }                    | 20 d.                                                       |
| At { Trerewe }<br>{ St. Columbe }                 |                                                                  | At { Helston }<br>{ Redruthye }                 |                                                             |
| At { Penryn }<br>{ Padstow }                      | 6 s. { This is a greater<br>Measure still.                       | At { Launceston }<br>{ Saltashe }               | 18 d.                                                       |
| At { Helston }<br>{ Redruthye }                   |                                                                  | At { Leskyrd }<br>{ Low }                       |                                                             |
|                                                   |                                                                  | At { Strotton }                                 | 12 d.                                                       |

Memorand. The Measure of Oats is great, and not at one Size, but in some Places more than in some.

|                |                      |                        |                                    |                          |
|----------------|----------------------|------------------------|------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Wine.          | A Gallon of the best | Ga/-                   | Shop Lea-                          | A Dyck of Lea-           |
| coin           | -                    | 6 d.                   | ther well                          | ther, Viz. Two           |
| Linnin         | { Dowlas             | 9 d.                   | tanned.                            | Hides at the least.      |
| Cloth          | { Lockeram           | 7 d.                   | A Foot of Clowte Leather           | 3 s.                     |
| Hides untanned | { Cow                | 4 s. 3 d. or 3 s. 4 d. | Shoes                              | { A pair of Mans Shoes   |
|                | { Ox                 | 6 s. 8 d.              |                                    | { -                      |
|                | { Stere              | 4 s. 4 d. or 3 s. 4 d. |                                    | { A pair of Womans Shoes |
|                | { Heiffer            | 3 s. 4 d. or 2 s. 8 d. | A pair of Boots the best 3 s. 4 d. |                          |

And if any Person be disobedient to any of the Orders before mentioned, that the same be brought to the next Justice of the Peace, by him to be committed to Ward, or else to be bound, at the Discretion of the said Justice, to appear before the Justices of Oyer and Terminer; there to receive worthy Punishment for their Offences.

Then follows a Table, making Mention of the Prizes of sundry kinds of Victuals, taxed and appointed by the Kings Majesties Proclamation. Which is Exemplified in the foregoing History.

For the Overselling. The Forfeiture for every of the greater Beasts, as of Oxen, and such like, 5 l. apiece: And of the Sheep 10 s. apiece.





## BOOK II.

### A.

*Scory, Bishop of Rochester, unto the Kings most Excellent Majesty: Putting him in mind of certain Suits made to him, in his Sermon before him last Lent.*

MSS. Guil.  
Petit, Armig.

**I** Give most humble thanks to God and to your Majesty, that it hath pleased you to judge me Faithful, in putting me in the Ministry. And although your Majesty hath a number of Faithful Subjects, that could accomplish this Office better than I, yet I wil through Gods Grace, and according to my Hability, wholly endeavour my self to serve God and your Majesty in my Ministry, both faithfully and diligently.

And now I most humbly beseech your Majesty, to remember and consider, among other, two of the Essential Suits that I made the last *Lent* in my Sermons unto your Majesty. The first was for the Restitution of the Ecclesiastical Discipline, wherby Virtue may have again her old and just Estimation, and Vice put to Shame and Confusion. The second was to banish greedy Avarice. The which hath by Inclosures and converting Tillage into Sheep-pastures, contrary to the wholesome Laws of this your Noble Realm, decayed your Villages, Townes and Cities, brought in an intolerable Scarcity and Dearth of al things, that your faithful Subjects should live by; diminished the Number of your People in the Country, and therby feebled and weakened your mighty Power and Strength, that your Noble Progenitors had, and your Majesty should and might have against the Enemy: And finally, if speedy Remedy be not provided by your Noble Majesty and prudent Counsellors, it wil bring your honorable State, and this your Realm, in time past most Worthy, unto utter Ruine and Desolation: The which God, for the Mercies of his Son Jesus Christ, save your Majesty and your Noble Realm from. Oh! what a lamentable thing is it to consider, that there are not at this Day Ten Plows, wheras were wont to be Forty or Fifty. Wheras your Majesties Progenitors had an hundred Men to serve them with reverend Obedience in the time of Peace, and in the time of Wars, with their Strength, Policy, Goods and Bodies, your Majesty have now scant half so many. And yet a great number of them are so pined and famished by the reason of the great Scarcity and Dearth of al kind of Victuals, that the great Sheep-Masters have brought into this Noble Realm, that they are become more like the Slavery and Paisantry of *France*, than the antient and godly Yeomandry of *England*. Oh! what a lamentable thing is it to behold that Ground, which at this time of the Year,

through



through Mens diligent Labour and Gods Blessing, was wont to be richly adorned with Corn, to be now through Gods Curse, that is fallen upon us for our Idlenes and greedy Avarice, replenished with May-weed, Thistles, Docks, and such like unprofitable Weeds? The Ground without controversy would be as fruitful as it hath been in times past, if it were, according to Gods Ordinance, and the wholesome Laws of this Realm, laboriously drest and tilled, as it was wont to be. But to trust to have as much upon one Acre as was wont to grow upon three, (for I think that the Tillage is not now above that Rate, if it be so much) is but a vain Expectation, and a wicked Tempting of God; Seeing that now God sending us seasonable Seasons, we are compelled, as the experience of this Year have declared, to seek relief of our scarcity and dearth of Corn at the hands of Strangers. Which was wont, having such seasonable times, to relieve them with all Kinds of Grains: What should we be compelled to do, if God should send us but one Year unseasonable Weathers? If we have Scarcity and Dearth by the reason the Ground is untilled and unsown, when God sendeth us Rain and seasonable Times, in what Misery and Calamity shal we be, when he shal send us the contrary?

Wherefore, most Noble King, and my most Dread Sovereign Lord, Consider and Ponder wel this Matter. And so I beseech God for Jesus Christ, to preserve your Royal Majesty, with your Honorable Council and your whole Realm.

Your Majesties most humble Subject,

John Scorey Bp. of Roch.

B.

Polydore Vergil to Secretary Cecyl, for his Warrant to receive the King's Gift.

**O**ptime Cecilli, S. Initium jungendæ amicitia tecum Occasio hæc MSS. Cecilli facit. Heri enim adivi ad Illustrem Northumbriæ Ducem, mei negotii causa, qui statim petiit, an accepissem Schedulam à Concilio Regio subscriptam de dono Majestatis Regiæ dato. Respondi intellexisse me à Dno. Privati sigilli custode, eam esse signatam. Tum ille inquit, Mane domi, ipse namq; ad te illam mox mittendam curabo, si non potueris commodo tuo antè habere. At ego ne immodestus viderer, hodie benè mane me ad Regiam contuli; quia etsi heri te convenire studui, uspiam tamen non potui; sed accidit, ut tu paulo ante de Cubiculo tuo exiveris. Quare nunc mitto ad te famulum meum Polydorum Rosse cum his Literis meis; Cui rogo, velis eam ipsam Schedulam ad me dare, quo possim tempore suo rem meam peragere. Siquid vero tibi tuisq; ministris inde debeatur, illud libenter persolvam. Vale, & me ama. Ex Aedibus nostris, X Novemb. 1551.

Tuus Polydorus Vergilius,  
Manu mea.



## C:

Thomas Gresham to the Duke of Northumberland from  
Antwerp; Concerning the Kings Debts.

To the Duke of Northumberlands Grace.

Cott. Libr.  
Galba B. 12.

IT may please your Grace to be advertised, that as the 20. of this Present I came unto this Town of *Antwerp* in safety: Wheras I found neither *Jasper Schetz*, nor the *Fuggers* Factor, being at *Brussels*, and looked for to morrow at the farthest, being the 21st day. With whom I shal Treat according to such Commission as the Kings Majesty hath given me: Wishing at this Time, that it may please God to send me such good Succes, as that the Kings Majesties Honor and Credit may be nothing touched. For that it shal be no smal Grief unto me that in my Time, being his Majesties Agent, any Merchant-Strangers should be forced to forbear their Mony against their Wills. Which Matter from henceforth must be otherwise foreseen, or els in the end the Dishonesty of this Matter shal hereafter be wholly laid upon my Neck, if any thing should chance of your Grace, or my L. of *Pembroke*, otherwise than wel; for that we be al Mortal. Which Matter I do not doubt, if God send you Life, you wil foresee in time. Wherin I wil advertise you my poor and simple Advice at large.

But ere that I do procede any further in this Matter, I shal most humbly desire your Grace to pardon me of my Writing; for that this Matter toucheth the Kings Majesties Honour and Credit; which I am bound by my Oath to maintain and keep: As also the very Love and Obedience I do owe unto you, putteth me clean out of Fear to write unto you this my ful Mind at large. For it may please your Grace to understand, that at my coming home I brought with me two Bargains, for to discharge the Kings Majesties Debt, due the 20th of *August*, amounting to the Sum of 56000 *l.* as also of an Overplus to remain in the Kings hands for the Service of a Year: And that was, I offered 52000 *l.* in ready Mony after the Rate of 12 *l.* upon the Hundred for a whole year. And therewith the Kings Majesty should have taken *Manuel Ryffis* Jewel; which I offered once to you for 8000 *l.* with another Diamont of the Value of 1000 *l.* Which Jewel I shewed to the Council at *Altham*, being there my Lord of *Wiltshire*, my Lord *Darcy*, my Lord Warden, Sir *John Gates*, and the there reckoning the Jewels to be worth nothing, were they never so perfect or Orient. Secondly, I offered them a Bargain from the *Fugger* for the Prolongation of 25000 *l.* and to have taken 5000 *l.* in *Fustians*: Which also did not like them; Saying that there was no other Remedy, but that the *Fugger* and the *Schetz* must forbear with the Kings Majesty at this Time; and that they would have them prolonged for another Year, without taking any Merchandize or Jewels. Which Matter did not a little abash me, considering how Things heretofore



tofore hath been used. For as your Grace doth right wel know, when the Kings Majesties Father did first begin here to take up Mony upon Interest, Master *Stephen Vaghan* being his Agent, he took his Fee-peny in Merchandize, either in Jewels, Copper, Gunpowder, or Fustians. And so the Matter hath past ever since in taking of Wares, when the Kings Majesty hath made any Prolongation, until the Charge therof was committed unto me. Wherin I travailed to the utmost of my Power, and by the means of my Friends, I found the means to serve the King with 20000 *l.* without taking any Jewels or Merchandize, as your Grace best knoweth. And to be plain with your Grace in this Matter, I was fain to give forth mine own [Word] that this Mony should be paid at the just day, or else the Kings Majesty could never have had it.

Since the which Time it is not unknown to your Grace, that the World is wonderfully altered here by reason of these Wars. For that the Emperor hath taken up the most part upon this Bourse of *Antwerp*; which hath made a mervailous scarcity of Mony. Wherin Consideration ought to be had; as also the formal Bargains heretofore made in taking the *Fourth Penny* inways. Which thing I wil insure your Grace I have utterly abhorred it. For that lay in my Power, having none other Shift at this present, nor could find none other ways at this present to serve the Kings Majesties turn. Which Offers did nothing like the Kings Majesties Council, saying, that there was none other Remedy but that the King must prolong the Debt of the *Fugger* and the *Schetz* for another Year, or for six Months at the least. Wherewith I declared before them of the Council, that this Matter touched the Kings Majesties Honor and Credit; and that hereafter if the Kings Majesty should have need of Mony, he should not find it, if they would thus Fish the Merchants against their Wills: Knowing that my Friends the *Schetz* had need of their Mony. Wherin your Grace must have a Consideration, and earnest Respect thereunto. For truly my poor Experience is, better it were for the Kings Majesty to leese as much Mony as he oweth, than his Credit should be touched in this Matter: Praying to the Living God, that I may never se that Day. And to be plain with your Grace in this Matter, according to my bounden Duty, Verily if there be not some other ways taken for the Payment of his Majesties Debts, but to force Men from Time to Time to prolong it, I say to you, the End therof shal neither be Honorable nor Profitable to his Highnes.

In Consideration wherof, if there be none other Ways taken forthwith, this is most humbly to beseech your Grace that I may be discharged of this Office of Agentship. For otherwise I se in the End, I shal receive Shame and Discredit therby, to my utter undoing for ever. Which is the smallest Matter of al, so that the Kings Majesties Credit be not spotted therby, and especially in a strange Country; whereas at this present his Credit is better than the Emperors. Which I pray to the Living God long to continue. For now the Emperor giveth 16 *per Cent.* and yet no Mony to be gotten, &c.

Also, this is to give your Grace to understand, that the Kings Grace hath given me another Commission, to common for the Prolongation of the Sum of 43000 *l.* and his Majesty is content to take 6000 *l.* in



Fustians at such Prizes as he hath heretofore taken them, upon Condition that his Majesty may transport and sel these Fustians, wheras he shal think good. For that heretofore in al his Bargains made with the *Fugger*, his Majesty was bound to sel them in *England*.

Further, I must Treat with *Jasper Schetz*, that so far forth as he is content to prolong the 10000 *l.* due to the 20th of *November* for six Month, that then the Kings Majesty would pay the 12000 *l.* due to the 20th of this present Month, betwixt this and the 20th of *November*, allowing them Interest for the same Time: So that they shal not so soon come to this Town, but I shal be in hand with the *Fugger* and the *Schetz*; and shal bring their Answer my self to the Kings Majesty and you with al the Expedition I can make: Praying to the Living God, I may bring this Prolongation according to the Expectation of the Kings Majesty, and his most honorable Council. And then I do not doubt, if that my poor simple Advice may be heard and take place, I do not mistrust, but in two Years to bring the Kings Majesty wholly out of Debt. Which I pray God send me Life to se that Day.

And for the Accomplishment of the same, my Request shal be to his Majesty and You, to appoint me out weekly 12 or 1300 *l.* to be secretly received at one Mans Hands; so that it may be kept secret, and that I may therunto Trust, and that I may make my Reconing therof assuredly. I shal so use this Matter here in this Town of *Antwerp*, that every Day I wil be seen to take up 2 or 300 *l.* Sterling by Exchange. And this doing, it shal not be perceived, nor it shal not be no occasion to make the Exchange fal. For that it shal be taken up in my Name. And by these means, in Working by Deliberation and Time, the Merchants Turn also shal be served. As also this should bring al Merchants out of such Suspicion, whom doubreth nothing to pay of the Kings Debts; and wil nor stick to say, that ere the Payments of the Kings Debts, it wil bring down the Exchange to 13 *s.* 4 *d.* which I trust never to se that Day.

So that by this you may perceive, if I do take up every day but 200 *l.* *per diem*, [it wil] amount in one Year to 72000 *l.* and the K. Majesty oweth here, at this present, an Hundred and eight Thousand Pound, with the Interest Mony that was prolonged after this Time: So that by these Means, in two Years Time wol be compassed according to my Purpose set forth; as also by this Means you shal neither trouble Merchant Adventurer, nor Stapler, nor Merchant Stranger, &c.

Also, there is another Matter, which I would were al in the Kings Hands, and that is *Lead*: Which now is worth here 8 *l.* *Flemish*. So that if it standeth with the Kings Majesties Plesure, for the which to make a Proclamation, or els to shut up his Custome house, thar no Man to convey out any Parcel of Lead Five years day, upon Forfeiture of Life and Goods, it shal not only cause the Merchants to sel their Lead there again good cheap, but it shal make it fal at the Peckes; wheras there be Fodders molten above 3 or 4000. as I found; and now selleth for 6 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.* the C. at *Hul*; which is a goodly Matter. Wherefore the King shal make a Staple therof; and he shal cause it to Rise, and to feed them here as they shal have need therof from time to time. Which thing must be don out of hand, so that there may be none sent hither by the Merchants that be of Merkers.

Which



Which wil be an occasion to make it fal here. And this doing the Kings Majesty shal be a great Profiter therby, as to you may appear.

And by these means your Grace shal receive much Honor, and al those that be now of the Council, in keeping his Mony within his Realms, as also in bringing him out of Debt, that his late Father, and the late Duke of *Somerset* brought him in: Which al the World doth right wel know therof. And also your Grace shal do his Majesty such Service as no Duke in *England*, to the Renown of your House for ever. For verily I say to your Grace, if this Mony shal be prolonged upon Interest, it wil be a marvelous great hindrance to his Majesty. Therefore it behoveth your Grace most earnestly to prevent this Matter in time, if it be possible.

Now and it please your Grace, if this Matter of *Lead* doth like you, this is most humbly to require, if there be any Restraint made according to my Writing, that it may please the Kings Majesty to grant me Passport to transport 300 Fodders of Lead, which I have bought of Mr. *Beaumont* and others, as your Grace right wel knoweth. Wherof as yet I have received but 40 Fodders of Mr. *Beaumont*. Wherin I shal desire you to move him in my behalf that I may have my Lead delivered me out of hand. For that it may please your Grace I have sold the aforefaid Lead to my Friend the *Schetz*, to convey it him at the Cost and Charge and Adventure at *Hamburgh*, at 14 s. the Ways: And Twelve Waye maketh a Fodder.

Certifying your Grace, that this day I have had perfect News from *Hamburgh*, that I have a Ship lost with an 100 Fodder of Lead, which cost me 1000 l. wherof I have assured 600 l. so I do leese clear 400 l. Most instantly requiring your Grace of your abundant Goodnes, to help me forthwith to the one Thousand Fifty two Pounds which the Kings Majesty hath ought me this eight Months, as your Grace best knoweth. For verily I am in great need therof. And partly at this Time my Honesty and Credit lyes thereon. So God help me, as at my coming home I shal declare to your Grace this my Necessity more at large.

*Then follow News out of Germany and France.*

Not mistrusting ere the Year goeth about to save the Kings Majesty 20000 l. in the Payment of his Debts, if I may be Credited. Wherin I shal not let to forsake my own Trade of Living, for the better Serving of his Majesty, as knoweth who preserve your Grace in Health with Encrease of Honor. From *Antwerp*, the 21. Aug. 1552.

*At Tour Graces Commandment during life,*

Thomas Gresham, Mercer.

It may please your Grace to do my  
most humble Commendations to  
my good Lord *Pembroke*.

Dr.



D.

Dr. Cox to Bullinger; Concerning the Review of the Book of  
Prayers and Sacraments.

— Charissimo in Christo Fratri D. Henrico Bullingero,  
Ecclesiæ Tigurinæ Antistiti, Ric. Cox.

Ex Archiv.  
Eccles. Tigu-  
rin.

**E**TSI nihil est alicujus momenti, Charissime in Christo Frater, quod ad te jam scribam, tamen Joannem hunc nostrum sine literis meis omnino dimittere nolui: id quod ipse quoque, agerrimè tulisset. Quod ad sinceræ Religionis Negotium attinet, benedictus Dominus Deus, cujus Fubar mirificè nobis indies affulget. Jam iterum publicarum Precum Ritus, atque etiam Sacramentorum ipsorum immutavimus; & ad Normam Verbi Dei expolivimus. Sed acerbis istas Christianæ Disciplina Institutiones, Cane pejus & Angue, odimus. Volumus esse Filii, quin & heredes etiam, sed Virgam exhorrescimus. Excita nos, id est, Optimates nostros, per spiritum qui datus est tibi, ad Disciplina studium, qua sine (dolens dico) auferetur à nobis Regnum Dei, & dabitur genti facienti fructum ejus.

Sed unum est, mi Bullingere, quod penitus edoceri percipio. Lego in Libro tuo De Cæna Domini, in quinta Decade, hæc Verba, Quoniam non est publicus vel generalis Cætus, quando quatuor vel quinque cum ægro communicant, nihil dicunt qui aiunt apud Ægros cænam instrui posse, si alii quoque simul cænent. Quod si coacto publico Cætu, tres, quatuor aut quinque tantum ex multis Centenariis (aliis omnibus recusantibus) percipere velint Sacramentum Eucharistia, annon aliis presentibus, aut è Templo discedentibus, id facere liceat? Cur ergo Ægrotus hoc beneficio fraudabitur? De hac re plenus instrui exopto, cum per otium tibi vacaverit. D. Jesus te nobis diutissime conservet incolumem ad Christi gloriam, & Ecclesiæ suæ Edificationem. Windesoræ Anglorum. V<sup>o</sup> Octobris 1552.

Tuus in Christo Frater

Ric. Cox.

Thomas



## E.

Thomas Barnabe a Merchant, to Sir William Cecyl, Secretary of State. Upon his great and large Experience, he propounds to him certain ways to distress the French.

To the Right Honorable and his special good Master Sir William Cecyl,  
Secretary to the Kings Majesty.

AFTER my most humblest Commendacions unto your Mastership, MSS. Cecil.  
yt shal please you to be advertysed, that I have been of late with the Commyssioners of *Fraunce*, that be here com, the which is *Monfr. Aubery*, Lieutenant Civil of *Parys*, and *Monfr. Du Val*, Advocate for the King, of *Newhaven*, *Honfleur*, and *Harfleur*: The which be right honest Gentlemen, and speke wel, and say, that they are not alonely sent to common with us, as the People maketh report of them, but to make restitution. And one of them also said unto me, that our People be very desirous here to have War with them, and that we should not synd the Realm of *Fraunce* after the sort that we did for sixscore yeres agoe, when we did conquere yt. For he said, that then the Duke of *Normandy* and the Duke of *Brytayne*, and the Duke of *Burgoigne*, were al three agaynst the *French* King, and now yt is knytt al to one Realme: And that we may se what great hurt we have don them with the Warrs, that my Lord of *Northfolk* and my Lord of *Suffolk*, and the Kings Majesty have don, and what Towne we can show, that we do hold. But only have spent out al our Riches, and destroyed a great nombre of Subjects, and left al our Mony in *Flanders*, *Heynou*, and *Artous*, to the utter destruction of our Realm. The which I answered hym agayn to my simple Witt, that I have had as moch experience in *France*, or in those Parties, as moch as any Man in the Realm of *England*, and was marryed there for xxxviii yeres agoe. And since I have had Save Conduits of the Kings Majesty; wherupon hath growen great Suits, and to my utter undoing. So that I dare be bold to say, that there is never a Port, Haven or Bay betwene *Bouloigne* and *Bordeaux*, but I know hym. And as for the Realm of *France* besyde, I ought to know yt: for I have ben xxviii Viages in *France* in post for the Kings Majesty; and contynuallie there al the while, that my Lord of *Winchester* and Master *Wallop* were there; And likewyse by my Lord of *London* and my Lord *Pachetts* days. And somewhat I gathered there amongst them. For I think there were few Men, that was sent so many tymes to the Council privily for by-Matters, as I was. For the Embassadours went never to the Corte but for the Kings privy Affaires, but always yt was my chance to be sent for every Mans Matters. Wherefore there was nother the Chancellor, nor the Cardynal of *Lorraine*, nor the Cardynal of *Parys*, nor the Admirall, nor the Cunstable, which hath continewed longest in favor, but I have knowen them al.

And



And as for the *Constable*, somewhat I can say of hym. I think he be one of the doblest and dissemblingst Gentlemen that is in the World. For there is no more Assurance of his Word, than to hold an Ele by the tayle; but wil speke fair, and promise fair, and work the contrary. And besyde al this, I promyse you of my sayth, he is as *Popish*, as I am *English*, and always hath been. For the which my Lord of *Winchester*, nor Mr. *Wallop* did not hate hym. For I do know yt. For I was sent divers Viages by my Lord *Crummel*, and perceiyed how the Matter went. For the which they sayd both of them, that I was my Lord *Crummel*'s Spy; and so I am assured that they told the *Constable* one day. But I cared not, for I had the King my Masters Proceedings hanging in myne Eyes. And as *Paul* sayeth, *I am that I am*.

God knoweth my poor Hart, how moch I do tender the Wealth and Prosperitie of myne own Nation, and that I am sory from the bottom of my hart, to think that they of *France* accept us to be gross-natured People and covetous. And they have sayed unto me or now, that yf Wee had never so rank or malicious War with them, they know how to buy us for Mony. The which methinketh were a strange thing. Howbeyt that was seen by my Lord Cardynals days: for he hymself toke iiii hundreth thousand Crownes, to make peace betwene the *Frenchmen* and us. The which then was not a lyttel spoken of in *France*.

I would wishe to God, that we did know our own Strength and Power, and what Ports, Bayes and Havens we have, that other Realms have not. It is not unknown but in al *France* be barred Havens, and yet by reason that they maintain their fishing and their theving, there is more Maryners in one Towne there, then is here from the Lands end to *S. Michels Mount*. I have sene come out at one tyde in *Diep* five hundred and five Botes, and in every Bote ten or twelve Men. The which was a marvelous matter to se, how they be maintayned by Fything, and what Riches they get by the Sea, and how they mayntain their Towns and Ports. And as for us, let us begin at *Sandwich* and go to *Dover*, *Hyde* and *Hastings*, and to *Winchelsea*, and se how they go down for lack of maintenance, and in a maner no Mariners in them. Which is for lack of good Policy to set them a Work. Which, Sir, yf yt please the Cowncel to understand those things that I wil shew you, they shal set 6 or 7000 Maryners a work more than there is, in that thing, that *France* can lyve no more without, than the Fysh without Water; that is to say, *Newcastle Coals*. Which without that they can neither make Stele-work, or Metal-work, nor Wyer-work, nor Goldsmith-work, nor Gunns, nor no maner of Thing that passeth the Fier. And as for them, ye shal se in peace tyme iii or iiii score Ships of *Normans* and *Brytons* at ones, as soon as theyr fishing is don; and as they be departed cometh as many moe. So that I occupying Save-Conduit in *France*, have bought Coles at *Newcastle* for two Shillings and two pence a Chauldron, and for thirteen Nobles have sold them again in *France*. Also the Vice-Admiral of *Normandy*, *Monfr. Du May*, and the Vicounte of *Diep*, have prayed me to bring in *Newcastle Coles*, and I should have any other maner of Commoditye, that they had within the Realm; whether yt were *Poldavis* for *Saylis*, or any other thing.

Now



Now may you see what a Commodity is this smal thing to this Realm. So that me semeth yf the Kings Majesty would take in these Coles into his own hands, and let no other Ships, but *English* Ships fetch them at *Newcastle*, and so to bring them into *Kent*, and make a Staple in such place as should be thought necessary, you should not only get a wonderful sort of Maryners a work, but also yt shal be a great Strength to the Realm, and specially to the Cuntry of *Kent*; the which is very lene of Men by the Sea syde, consydering the promysse aforefayd of the going down of the Towns. Also it is not unknowen but that the *French* King hath taken the Salt into his own hands, and hath Gruntiers in every Town to sel yt to his profyt. Now may you way, that the one ys Vittayll, and the other is Fuel. Also, it is but reason we should avance our own Commoditye as wel as they do theyrs, to maintain our own Subjects withal. Also, I would wysh, that there should nother Fuel nor Vittayl go out of the Realm, but upon *English* bottomes.

Moreover, I have sene go out at one Tyde out of *Rye*, together, 37 Hoyes laden with Wood and Tymber, and never an *English* Maryner amongst them. Which is a wonderful discommoditye to this Realm. I have great mervail that these things have bene so long forgotten; which is so necessary a thing to be spoken of.

And now, Sir, I pray you, speke we of the City of *London*. There be so many notable Merchants, and rich Halls of Lands. Some may spend viii hondred pound, some vi hondred, some less and some more; and a great Revenue come to them yerely for Quartrages and Forfeits; which riseth to no smal Som; and nothing don withal, but make great Feasts every Month, or six Weeks, at their Halls, and cause Vittayls to be dere. But yt might be turned to a more honorable use. Also, yt would be a great mayntaining to the Kings Subjects, for every Craft to have a Ship to cary their Merchandizes to and fro, to the great avancement of the Kings Honor, and to their own Commodities. And yf chance should fal, which God forbyd, that a Ship should be lost, the Halls might easily bear the Smarts therof. I think there is never a City in Christendom, having the occupying that this City hath, that is so slenderly provided of Ships, havying the Sea comyng to yt, as this hath.

I have hard of late moch complaining for *English* Ships to lade Goods into *Spain*, and other places, and there is none to be hadd. Yf this thing hadd ben thought on in tyme, happily this Worly Borly of our Ships shold not have chanced. For the *French* men do alledge, that that was the *Spaniards* Goods, and other of the Emperors Subjects. Wherefore I pray God, that this matter may be loked upon in tyme to come.

Now I come to your Mastership with another matter. Yf so be yt, that we should war with them, (as God defend, for there is no Man of God but he wil seek peace) I know a \* Town in *Normandy*, which *New haven.* yf yt were ours, we should kepe *France* and *Normandy* subject. Is yt possible to be beleved? Yea, as sure as the Living God lyveth. I have known within this xxxviii yere, there was but three Houses; two Houses to lay Cables and Ancres in, and the other a Vittailing House. And at this present day I think there be three Thousand. It is now a



second *Roan*? And it is the very Gulph, Gullet, and Mouth of the Sea, and a Make-peace, yf we had yt. Yt is al the *French Kings Joy*, and he calleth the Maryners of that Town *His Maryners*, *His Pylors*, and *His Theves*. They be maintayned, and take of us, of the *Portungales*, and of the *Spaniards*. Al is Fysh that cometh to Net; they wil have a pece of every Man. Now, Sir, wheras the chefe of the *French Kings Revenue* is levelled upon Salt, as aforefaid, yet can yt not be brought into *France* nor *Normandy*, but it must come in danger of that Town. For the Canel lieth of that syde of the Land betwene *Polhed* and that Haven. Nother no Merchandizes out of what Realm soever yt cometh, but yt must go by that way. And also there can nothing come out of *France*, nother Wyne of *Anfurois*, nor Wyne of *Bayon*, nor Wyne of *Orleans*, nor Wyne of *Parys*, nor any other Merchandizes, that is made in *Parys* or *Roan*, to go to any other Realm, being caryed by Water, but yt must nedes pas that way. Nother no Army, that the *French King* can send to *Scotland*, nor to Vittayl his Army to the Sea, but it is al set forth there. I cannot tel what I should write more of yt, for it is so commodious. There was one of the Wittiest Hedds in al Christendom of a Merchant, which showed me ones standing there together, that we neded non other Rod to scourge *Normandy* and *France*, but only that, yf we had yt. And I showed the same to my Lord *Crumwel*, and he sent me thither upon the Kings Cost; and I drew a Plack of yt, and brought yt to hym. The *French King* was there the same time, and the Admiral *Brian*, and the Cunstable that is now, were there nine days to view yt, and to cast its Ditches. And over that, they made a cry, that whatsoeve [whosoever] would come and build there at *Newhaven*, should have his Foundation, and cost hym nothing. And so after my coming home, my Lord *Crumwel* conferred the matter with me and my Lord *Fitz Williams*, that was then Lord Admiral, better than 3 or 4 Hours, perviewing the Placket; and said yf he lived, and that Warrs should happen, that should surely be remembred; for yt was worthy the heying. And so he put me to the King: and so [I] travailed in his Graces Affairs xxviii Viages both in *France*, *Spayne* and *Italy*, and found hym always good Lord unto me, or els I had ben a very poor Man.

For I had two Ships taken by the *French men* for xxvi yeres agon; and have had continual Sute with them, and never could bryng yt to an end, but was fain to leve yt, and follow the Kings Affayrs; and had things many tymes to say to my Lord of *Winchester*, concerning the Kings Proceedings, the which he might not wel away withal, nor *Jarmyn Gardener* his Secretary. And so whan any my Lord *Crumwel* died, I fered my Lord of *Winchester*, and so ceased, and fel to my Sute agayn in *France*. For I had many a hevy look for hym of Mr. *Wallop*, and he sayd, that my great God was gon, and that there was none longing to hym, but Spies and Hereticks. But as for me, I did those things that I was commanded to do by those days.

And now forasmouch as I do se the gloriousnes of the *Frenchmen*, and how they do rejoyce of their Roberies, I can do no les but certify your Masterhip that as I know. For yf we wil know our own Strength, their Courage shal be bated wel ynough. For kepe them from Filhing, and geve no Save Conduits, and kepe them from *New-castel*



*castel* Coles, and they are not able to lyve. Or yf the *Western* men have leve to go to Sea, and take what they can, and maintayn a lytel prety Ile, called *Oldernay*, wheras I have ben or now, and stand in the top of the Castel in a clere day, and sene a Man ryde a Horseback in *France*. And nother the *Brytons*, nor the *Gascons*, can convey any thing into *France* or in *Flanders*, but they must come betwixt the Shore and them. It is another manner of thing then it is taken. For I would wysh from the bottom of my hart that yt might be lokyd upon. Yt would make the very *Brytons* and the *Normans*, and the *Gascons* to stope.

I have, or now, advertysed al this to my Lord of *Somerset*, both by Wryting and by Mowth. And his Grace hath written me a Letter to come to hym and conferr certayn Matters with hym; and would have sent me into *Gascoin*, whan the Insurrection was there. The which yf I had gon, and the Cunstable had catched me, I had payed for my Comyng. And whan I declared his Grace my Mynd, I contentyd hym.

I do rejoyce from the bottom of my hart to think, how toward a Master we have: and again I rejoyce to se how Gods Word is trewly and syncerely set forth. There lacketh nothing but to fere God, and to be in obedience of our Prynce. I do rejoyce again, to se what godly provision here is for the Poor; the which would rejoyce any *English* heart to se. And also [wish] that these matters aforeseyd may be lokyd upon, and that the Ships and the Maryners may be maintayned. For the Vice Ameral of *France*, *Monfr. De Muy*, hath sayd unto me or now, that we had no Ships in the Realm of *Englond*, that were any thing worth, but the Kings: and that yf they had such Ports and Havens as we have, and such Commodityes longing to them, they would make themselves Berds of Gold.

I put no doubts but my Lord of *Northumberlands* Grace hath knowledg of these things; by reason that his Grace lay long in *Roan* of a long tyme. I am so bold to wryte half a dozen Words to his Grace; the which I would humbly desire you to deliver yt hym, and to read hym my Book. And this moost humbly I take my leave of you for this tyme. Written at *London*, the first day of *October*, By yours with his poor Sarvice duryng his lyfe,

Thomas Barnabe.

F.

Beaumont, Master of the Rolls, his acknowledgment of his Debt to the King.

FOR Satisfaction of the Kynges Majesties Dett charged upon me in his Graces Court of Wards and Lyveries, for redy Mony and Specialties, amountyng to the Some of Twenty thousand Eight hundred  
Vol. II. \* U 2 Paper Off.



dred Seventy one Pounds, Eighteen Shillings and Eight Pence, I am pleased and contented, and by this present Bil do acknowledg my self to be fully contented and agreed, that the Kings Majestie shal have al my Manors, Lands and Tenements, whatsoever they be, assured to him and his Heirs; And also al my Goods and Cattals, moveable and unmoveable, whatsoever they be, and in whose custodie soever they remayne; as shal be devysed by the Kyngs lerned Counsel, with the Issues and Profits of the same. Provided alwayes, that yf in case there be any just cause of allowance of any part of the aforesaid Dett, that then I shal be therof allowed. In wytnes wherof I have subscribed this Byl with my hand, and therunto set to my Seal the xxviii day of May, Anno vi Regis Ed. VI.

John Beaumont.

Beaumont's Submission and Surrender of his Place to the King.

XXVIII. Maii, Anno 1552.

*Ubi supra.*

I John Beaumont do most humbly surrendre and gyft into the hands of our Sovereigne Lord the Kynges Majestie, my Office of Master of the Rolls; Most humbly beseechyng hys Highnes to be merciful unto me, and al my Mysdemeynours and Contempts; and in especyall, for the Dett which I do owe unto his Grace, to have some dayes upon good Securities; and I am agreed to delyver my Patent to be Cancellid, unto the Lord Chancellor of *England*, or to any other, who shal pleyse his Highnes to appoynt to receive the same.

John Beaumont.

G.

The Duke of Northumberland, Earls of Huntingdon and Pembroke, and Secretary Cecill, to the Privy Council; Concerning Lands of Paget and Beaumont forfeited.

*Ubi supra.*

After our hartly Commendations unto your good Lordships. We have receyved your Loving Letters this xix of June, written at *Grenewich* the xviii therof: Conteyning thadvertisments of divers your Proceedings, and such other News as you have had by both the Embassadors of the Emperor and the French King. For the Participation wherof we most hartily thank you, having by the same (as it were) refreshing



freshing in our journeys this extreame whot Wether. Your Proceedings with the Lord *Paget* and Mr. *Beamont*, signified by your Letters, seemeth to us for our part very good and substantial. And upon the consideration of the Lands and Goods surrendered to the King by *Beamonts* Submission, We the rest, apart from the Erle of *Huntington*, most hartily require your Lordships to have in remembrance a reasonable Sute made by the said Erle, to have the Custody of *Gracedem*, the Parsonage of *Donnington*, the Manor of *Throughston* and *Swannington*, parcel of the said *Beamonts* Possessions, with al his Goods and Cattals in and upon the said House and Lands, to the Kings Majesties use; until his pleasure shal be further therin determyned. Which Sute we pray your Lordships, as opportunity serveth, may be forthered, though he be absent himself. Like as it comforteth us to receive some intelligencies of News from your Lordships, so having some more sent unto us in Papers than we cold understand for lack of Interpretation, we retourne the same to your Lordships, being certain *Doche* Letters sent to me, Secretary *Cecill*, out of *Almayn*. Where after Interpretation therof, you may use them as shal please you, eyther privately for your selves there, or in participation to us of the same, when they shal have lerned to speke *English*. And thus we most hartily wish contynual succes of prosperity there, that whersoever we go or ride, nothing shal seme paynful to us, laying the foundation of our Comfort upon your wel doings about his Majesty there, whom God long preserve. From Master *Cecills* House at *Bourleigh* besides *Stamford*, the xix of *Jnne*, 1552.

*Your assured Loving Friends:*

We have thought mete to pray your good Lordships to have in remembrance, that when any Order shal be taken for the Delivery of any Lands of the Lord *Paget* in Satisfaction of part of his Fine, our very good Lords, the Erle of *Huntington* and the Lord Chamberlayn, may not be forgotten. The one to have the Custody of the House at *Drayton*, and the other the House at *London*; wherof your good Lordships wel know their lack.

We pray your Lordships to be good Lords to the Berer hereof, Mr. *Tong*, in his reasonable Sute.

*Northumberland,*  
*Pembroke,*

*F. Huntingdon,*  
*W. Cecyll.*

The



## H.

The University of Rostoch, to King Edward : Recommending to him one Peristerus, a godly and learned Man of that University.

Paper Off.

**G**ratias agimus Deo aeterno, patri D'ni nostri Ihesu Christi, quod in R: M: V: terris tranquillum hospitium præbet Eccl'æ suæ et honestis studiis, quæ sunt præcipuum generis h'ni [humani] decus. Cum n. in o'ib. aliis regnis, aut prorsus publicum Eccl'æ ministerium et rarum studia deleta sint, aut Pontificum sæuitia & bellorum tumultibus, et opinionum dissidiis uastentur, ingens Dei be'fitium e'e agnoscimus, quod in R: M: V: Regno quietam sedem sanctissime constitutis Ecclesiis & Scholis tribuit. Quæ etiam R: M: V. sapientia, pietate, munificentia & auctoritate ita fouentur, ut et his ornamentis Angliæ regni longe antecellat o'ib. regnis totius orbis terrarum, Et R: M: V. merito titulum habeat nutritii eccl'æ Dei, quo nullum in terris preconium maius aut augustius dici potest. Nos quidem tantorum decorum admiratione et amore incensi, gratulamur inclyto Angliæ regno de hac foelicitate, et Deum oramus, ut eam perpetuo conseruet. Speramus etiam R: M: V. pro summa pietate & beneuolentia, qua omnes doctrinæ cælestis et optimarum artium amantes complectitur, clementer accepturam esse n'ras l'ras, quas huic honesto & docto viro M'gro Wolphgango Peristero Boruffo dedimus. Is enim in tantis bellorum tumultibus et Germaniæ perturbationibus, motus celeberrima fama de R: M: V. liberalitate et munificentia erga artium cultores per totam Europam passim sparsa, in inclytas et toto terrarum orbe celebratas R: M: V. Academiis iturus, spe qualiscunq; conditionis uel beneficii obtinendi, à nobis testimonium de suis studiis, moribus et gradu petiit. Vixit autem in Academia nostra aliquandiu magna cum laude modestiæ et diligentia in omni officio. Cumq; linguam Latinam & Græcam, et P'hicæ elementa, et doctrinam à Deo eccl'æ traditam recte didicisset, et mores essent honesti et integri, gradu Magisterii apud nos ornatus est.

Præbuit etiam eruditionis specimen in docenda lingua Græca, ac multi se ipsius labore & diligentia adiutos esse testantur. Cum autem reipublicæ expediat, ho'es modestos, et bonis, placidis, et moderatis ingeniis præditos, & eruditione excultos, ornare et prouehere ad ea loca ubi seruire Eccl'æ Dei possint, et hunc M. Wolphangum non dubitemus Eccl'æ Dei et Reip. in ueræ doctrinæ propagatione olim magno usui et ornamento futurum esse, reuerenter eum R: M: V. commendamus, Vt R: M: V. ea qua decet Regem Christianissimum beneuolentia hunc M. Wolffgangum complecti non dedignetur. Deum æternum Patrem D'ni. n'ri Ihesu Christi toto pectore precamur, Vt Regia' M: V. Eccl'æ suæ et piorum studiorum nutritiam, perpetuo seruet incolumem et florentem.

Datum



Datum ex Academia Rostochiensis, Anno D'ni 1552. ipso Diui Bartholomei festo.

R. M. V.

Obsequentiff.

Rector et Vniuersitas  
studii Rostochiensis.

Serenissimo Potentissimoq; Principi, ac D'no,  
Domino Eduardo Sexto, Angliæ, Fran-  
ciæ Hiberniæq; Regi, Fidei Defensori, ac  
in terris Angliæ Hiberniæq; Ecclesiæ su-  
premo sub Christo Capiti, Domino suo  
Clementissimo.

I.

A Catalogue of diuers Free-Schools; Founded by K. Edward VI:  
Within the Space of Sixteen Months. Viz.

A Grammar School at Bromycham in the County of Warwick. The K. Edw.  
Patent or Grant dated Decemb. 5. Sealed January the 7th, 1551. Warr. Book.  
Here he appointed Twenty of the most discreet and substantial Men  
of the Lordship of Bromycham over the said School. Who should be a  
Fraternity incorporate. And gave them Lands and Demesnes, to the  
Yearly Value of xx l. to them and their Successors, for the perpetual  
Use of the said King's School. Rendering to the King and his Succes-  
sors, xx Shillings Yearly, at his Court of Augmentations.

A Grant made to the Bailiffs and Burgesles of Shrewsbury, for the  
Erection of a School within the same Town: With his Gift of certain  
Tiths of Corn within the Parishes of Ashley, &c. belonging formerly  
to the College of our Lady in Salop: And Tiths in the Parish of Frank-  
wel, &c. formerly belonging to the College of S. Tedd: And al the  
Rents reserved upon any Lease of the Premises; in as ample maner as  
any Master or Prebendary [Prebendary] of the said Colleges lately dis-  
solved, had the same: To the Value of xx l. 8 Shill. With a further  
Licence to receive by Gift of any Man, or by Purchase, to the yearly  
Value of Twenty Pounds, as by Mortmain: For the better Maintenance  
of the same School, and Master, Usher, and others therunto belonging.  
The Patent bore Date February the 10th, 1551.

A Patent bearing Date March the 13th, 1551. at the Request of  
the L. Dacres, Granted to the Bailiff and Burgesles of Morpeth in Nor-  
thumberland; for the erecting of a School there: With a Licence of  
Mortmain, to purchase Twenty Pounds by the Year for the Mainte-  
nance thereof.

A Patent



A Patent granted *Per Billam Dni. Regis* to the Inhabitants of *Macclesfield* in *Cheshire*; Licencing them to erect a Grammar School there, to be called; *King Edward's Grammar School*. And Fourteen of the most Substantial of the same Town appointed to be Governours of the Possessions and Goods, to be given to the same School. Who shal be a Body Corporate, and of Capacity to purchase Lands, either of the King, or any other. For the which Intent, the King gave to the fore-said Governours certain Lands in the East part of *Cheshire*, and certain Lands there, called *The Prebends Lands*, late belonging to the College of *John the Baptist*, in the City of *Chester*; and all the Chauntry, called *The Peny Canon*, within the said City. With other Land, which be extended to the yearly Value of *xxi l. 5 Shil.* Dated *Apr. 25. 1552.* From the Kings Mannor of *East Greenwich*.

A Patent dated *May the 11th*, to the Inhabitants of the Town of *Nonne Eton* in *Warwickshire*: For the Erection of a School there: With the Gift of certain Lands in the City of *Coventree*; belonging lately to the Gilde of the *Trinity* in the said City, and of *Corpus Christi* there. Which said Land were of the Yearly Value of *40 l. 15 s. and 8 d.* To them and their Successors for ever. To be held in Socage: With a Licence of Mortmain, to purchase Twenty Pounds by the Year.

The Erection of a Grammar School was granted by the King to the Inhabitants of the Town of *Stourbridge*, and Parish of *Old Swinford*, in the County of *Worcester*. Endowing it with Lands to the Yearly Value of *18 l. 10 s. and 8 d.* with a Licence to purchase Twenty Pounds *per Ann.* And to have the Issues and Profits of the same, from the Feast of the *Annuntiation* last past. To be held of the Mannour of *East Greenwich* in Socage.

The Erection of a School was granted to the Maior and Citizens of *Bath*, with the Gift of certain Lands, lying in the said City and Suburbs of the same. Which be extended to the clear Yearly Value of Twenty five Pounds; to them and their Successors, for the Rent of X Pounds.

A Patent or Licence was granted to the Maior and Burgeffes of *Bedford*, to erect a Free Grammar School there: And to purchase Lands to the Value of Fourty Mark to that Use. And that the President of *Winchester College* shal appoint the Schoolmaster and the Usher.

A Patent dated *Jan. 27.* to the Maior and Towne of *GUILFORD* in the County of *Surrey*: To erect a Grammar School there. Whereunto the King gave one Annuity of *6 l. 13 s. and 4 d.* lately belonging to the Chauntry of *Stockaborn* in the County of *Surrey*: And one other Yearly Rent of *13 l. 6 s. and 8 d.* coming out of two Chauntries in *Southwel*, in the County of *Nottingham*. To be held to the Maior and honest Men of *Guilford*. And by the Advice of the Marques of *Northampton*, Keeper of the Kings Manour of *Guilford*, and of the Keepers of the same for the Time being; to name the Schoolmaster and Usher of the same School: And, by the Advice of the Bishop of *Winchester*, to make Statutes and Rules for the said School.

A Patent dated *March the 28th, 1553.* to the Alderman and Burgeffes of *Grantham* in the County of *Lincoln*: For the Erection of a Grammar School there: With the King's Gift of certain Lands there,

to



to the Value Yearly of 14 l. 3 s. and 3 d. To have to them and their Successors for ever. And to pay to the King and his Successors, yearly, 16 s. and 8 d. To be held in free Socage and Burgage of the same Town. And to allow to the Schoolmaster, to be well instructed in the *Latin* and *Greek* Tongues, Twelve Pounds *per Ann.* And to make all Statutes concerning the School, by the Advice of Sir *Will. Cecyl*, Kt. Secretary to the King, *Durante Vita*: And after his Decease, with the Advice of the Bishop of the Diocess: And after his Decease, by the Advice of the Master of *St. John's College* in *Cambridge*. And to purchase Lands to the Value of Ten Pounds Yearly, notwithstanding the Statute of Mortmain.

A Gift of the Church of *Thorne* in the County of *York*; Dated *May* the 21st. To stand for Perpetuity, with all things therein, the Ornaments and Gold and Silver excepted. Being a Corporation granted to divers Persons, by the Name of *Wardens of the Church of Thorne*. To purchase Twenty Pounds by Year of the King, or any other Person or Persons, for the Erection of a School.

A Free School granted to the Inhabitants of *Giggleswick* in *Craven*, in the County of *York*. Whereof *John Nowel*, Clerk, Vicar of *Giggleswick*, *William Cotterel*, *Henry Tenant*, and others, were appointed Governours: To make Statutes and Orders concerning the said School, with the Assent of the Bishop of the Diocess. And the King gave certain Lands, to the Value of Twenty Pounds *per Ann.* And also Licence to purchase other Lands, to the Value of Thirty Pounds *per Ann.* The Patent bearing Date *May* the 26th.

## K.

*The Duke of Northumberland to the Secretary; Blaming the Carelesnes of some Courtiers at that time; and giving account of good hopes of the King's Recovery.*

I Have receyved soche Lettres as came in your Packytt; for the which MSS. Cecil-  
lian. I hartelie thank you, Wishing yt might have byn so, as your Helthe wolde have permytted you to have delivered them your silffe. Yt was styll sayde here, that you had but a grudginge of an Ague; but now we heare the contrary, and that you have byn thies thre or four Fytts grevously handelyd: for which I am right sorye, trusting to God the worst ys past. Whereof I wolde be as gladde as any Man, both for your own Compforte, as also for the Advancement of the King's waightie Affayres. Your Companyon doth beare out the Burdeyn with as moche payne as any Man can do, so moche ys his good Wil towards the Service of his Master and his Countrie, that of a great deale of payne he maketh litle Appearance. Others we have, whos Sorte you are welacquaynted withal, that nether earnest Zeale, or Consideration of Tyme, can scarcely awake theym out of theyr wonted  
Vol. II. \* X Dreames,



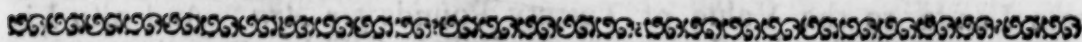
Dreames, and smothelie wynketh al Care from theyr Harts, how urgent or wayghtie soever our Causes ar. Which thinge I can so yvel beare, as indeed of late, but for my Duty to the State, my Harte colde skarsly endure the Mannour of yt, specially in thies mooste careful Dayes. Wel, I do herewith too much trouble you, and receyvyth no plessir with so often remembring the Forgetfulness, ( or, I sholde say, the Carelesnes ) of others.

But now I wil recompfort you with the joyful Comfort, which our Physicians hath thies two or three Mornings revyved my Spiritts withal; Which ys, that our Soveraine Lord doth begin very joyfully to Encrese and Amende, they havynge no doubt of the thorro Recoverye of his Highnes, the rather becaus his Majestie is fully bent to follow theyr Counsil and Advyce. And thus with my hartie Commendations, I wish you perfytt helthe. From *Grenewyche* this vii of *May*, 1553.

*Your assured Loving Frende,*

*Northumberland.*

*To my very loving Frend,  
Sir Wylliam Cycyll, Knight.*



## L:

Some *Original Letters*, and *Declamations* in *Latin*; being learned Exercises of King *EDWARD*, both before, and soon after his Access to the Crown.

I. *An Epistle to King HENRY his Father: Who had sent him a Buck.*

*Regie Majestati,*

**E**X Omnibus quæ me oblectabant, cum essem tecum, Rex Nobilissime, atq; Pater Illustrissime. nihil magis recreavit animum meum, quàm quod mihi copiam feceris videndi & observandi Majestatem Tuam. Amor enim meus in Te conspectu Tuo exercitatur: Tum quòd Natura id confirmat; tum quod Paterna tua Pietas magis ac magis quotidie erga me augefcit. Quamobrem ingentes Gratias Tibi ago. Et contendo etiam atque etiam ab Te, ut Te iterum visam, cum tibi libitum fuerit. Quod quo citius fuerit, hoc mihi gratius erit.

Deinde, ingentes tibi gratias ago pro Cervo quem ad me misisti. Quod Signum est, Te etiam mei absentis meminisse. Denique rogo Te, ut des mihi Benedictionem Tuam. Opto tibi multam Salutem.

Vale,



Vale, Rex Nobilissime, atq; Pater Illustrissime. *Hatfeldia*, quarto Septembris, An. 1546.

E. Princeps.

II. *Another Epistle to King HENRY: Who had sent the Prince a Newyears Gift.*

Regia Majestati,

CUM tot & tanta in me contuleris Beneficia, Rex Nobilissime, atq; Pater pientissime, quæ vix numerare queam, tum hæc Strena quam ad me postremum misisti, videtur mihi non solum præclara, verum etiam Paternæ Tuæ pietatis erga me plenissima. Ob quam ingentes tibi Gratias ago. Et cogito me, quanquam adnitar pro viribus omne tempus vitæ meæ, & laborem in omni genere Officiorum, tamen vix Magnitudinem beneficiorum tuorum attingere posse. Quare conabor, quod Natura & Officium postulat, Majestati tuæ placere, atq; esse optimi Patris bonus filius, ac sequi Exemplum Virtutis, Sapientiæ & Pietatis tuæ. Quam rem spero tibi futuram gratissimam. Atq; hoc melius præstabo, si pergas in Benevolentia Tua erga me: Et mihi quotidianam tantam Benedictionem impertias. Dom. *Iesus* Te servet incolumem. *Hertfordia*, decimo Januarii, An. 1546.

E. Princeps.

III. *Another Epistle of the Prince to the King: Upon Occasion of a Peace after his Wars with France.*

NIHIL ad Te Literarum dedi hoc longo tempore, Rex Illustrissime ac Pater Nobilissime: Non quod fui aliqua ex parte negligens, sed quod ego considerans Majestatem Tuam perturbari negotiis Bellicis, putavi me perturbaturum Majestatem Tuam his puerilibus Literis meis. Atq; ideo veniebat in mentem mihi Scrupulus quidam, num scriberem ad Te; annon. Sed nunc considerans, quod sicut quivis laboriosus post diuturnum Laborem, cupit recreare animum; sic spero, cum Majestas Tua longo intervallo habuerit Negotium, has pueriles Literas meas potius recreaturas animum tuum, quam perturbaturas.

Nam quia es amabilis & benignus mihi Pater, & spero me futurum obsequentissimum tibi filium; ideo judico Benevolentiam Tuam boni consulturam Literas meas, ex se indignas. Præterea, rogo Majestatem tuam, ut impertias mihi Benedictionem Tuam: Optoq; Tibi bonum Eventum in omnibus Negotiis Tuis. Vale, Pater Nobilissime, & Rex Illustrissime. *Hunsdonia*. Secundo Junii, An. 1546.

Edouardus Princeps.



IV. *An Epistle of the Prince to Queen Katharine. Thanks for her Newyears Gift, being the King and Queens Pictures.*

*Regina Catharinæ,*

**Q**UOD non ad Te diu scripserim, Regina Illustrissima atq; Mater Charissima, in causa fuit, non Negligentia, sed Studium: Non enim hoc feci, ut nunquam omnino scriberem. Quare spero Te futuram contentam, & gaviscuram, quod non scripserim. Tu enim velles me proficere in omni Honestate & Pietate. Quod est signum insignis & diuturni tui amoris erga me.

Atq; hunc Amorem multis Beneficiis mihi declarasti: & præcipue hac Strenâ, quam proximè ad me misisti. In qua Regiæ Majestatis & Tua Effigies ad vivum expressa continetur. Nam plurimum me delectat vestras Imagines absentium contemplari. Quas libentissimè videre cupio præsentibus: ac quibus maximè tum Natura tum Officio, devinctus sum. Quamobrem majores tibi Gratias ago ob hanc strenam, quàm si misisses ad me preciosas Vestes, aut aurum celatum, aut quidvis aliud eximium.

Deus Celsitudinem Tuam, quam me brevi visurum spero, servet incolumem. *Hartfordiæ. Decimo Januarii, 1546.*

*E. Princeps.*

V. *The Prince's Epistle to the Archbishop of Canterbury, his Godfather: Upon a golden Cup sent him for a Newyears Gift; with a Letter.*

*Cantuariensi Archiepiscopo,*

**D**UÆ res mihi Calcar addiderunt, ut ad te Literas scribam, Susceptor amantissime. Prima, ut tibi Gratias agam ob Calicem; Deinde, ob Literas tuas, quas ad me postremum misisti. Poculum tuum perhibet Testimonium, te mihi plurimos felicissimos annos optare, ac precari. Ex Literis autem tuis multum fructus accepi. Quod in illis me hortaris, atq; veluti stimulum mihi addis, ad perdiscendas bonas Literas, quæ mihi usui futuræ sint, cum ad virilem perveniam ætatem. Literæ vero bonæ, & Artes Liberales mihi discendæ sunt; quod *Aristippus* hoc dicere solet. *Disce, puer, qua tibi viro sunt usui futura.* Atq; etiam huic quadrat ille *Cicero*, eloquentissimus autor, narrans: *Literarum studia adolescentiam alunt, senectutem oblectant, Res secundas ornant, adversis perfugium ac Solatium præbent, Delectant domi, non impediunt foris: Pernoctant nobiscum, peregrinantur, rusticantur.*

Deniq; exoratum te volo, ut boni consulas Latinitatem meam, ipsa Barbarie barbariorem, cum tua Eloquentia sit excellentissima. Vale, Susceptor.



Susceptor amantissime, oculis meis mihi charior: Cui multum Felicitatis opto. *Hartfordie, 24<sup>o</sup> Januarii, An. 1546.*

*E. Princeps.*

VI. *The Prince to his Sister, the Lady Mary: Who had been Sick.*

*Sorori MARIÆ,*

**N**ON doleo tantum quod non scripseris ad me hoc longo tempore, Soror charissima, quantum gaudebam te recuperasse Valerudinem tuam. Nam etsi non scripseris ad me, scio tamen te non carere Benevolentia erga me: Valetudo autem tua lætificat me, quia amo te, & ægritudo tua facit me tristem eodem nomine. Gero autem amorem erga te, tum quod sis Soror mea, tum quod Natura facit me amare te. Quare cura Valetudinem tuam; & ne labores, ut scribas ad me, quando ægritudo tua non vult finire te. Benevolentia enim & amor tuus accipitur in bonam partem, etsi nihil Literarum des.

Deus det tibi Sapientiam *Hester.* Saluta quæso Dominam *Turwit,* Dominam *Herbard,* & Dom. *Lanam.* Vale, Soror charissima. *Hunsdonie. Vigesimo Martii, An. 1546.*

*E. Princeps.*

VII. *The Prince to his Sister, the Lady Elizabeth: Upon the Departure of her from him.*

*Sorori ELIZABETHÆ,*

**L**OCI quidem mutatio me non tantum angebat, Charissima Soror, quantum discessus tuus à me. Nunc autem nihil omnino mihi gratius accidere potest, quàm tuæ Literæ. Ac præcipue quod ad me prior dedisti Literas, ac me Literas scribere provocasti. Quare ingentes tibi Gratias ago, tum ob Benevolentiam tuam, tum ob celeritatem. Itaque adnitar pro viribus, te si non superare, saltem æquare Benevolentia, ac Studio. Hunc vero meum dolorem consolatur, quod spero me brevi visurum te, si nullus interim, neque apud me, neque apud te, casus interveniat; ut mihi retulit meus Camerarius. Vale, Soror Charissima. *Quinto Decembr. An. 1546.*

*E. Princeps.*

VIII. *The*



VIII. *The Prince to Dr. Cox, his Præceptor and Almoner. Shewing his Remembrance and Love of him by writing to him. And praying him to thank the Secretary for his Sand-Box, sent him.*

*Richardo Coxo,*

**Q**uemadmodum Officium meum postulat, scribo ad te Literas, Eleemosynarie charissime, ut scias me tui meminisse. Si enim non scriberem ad te, esset signum me tui oblivisci. Sed nunc cum scribam ad te est signum me te amare, & tui meminisse. Et quemadmodum qui scribit ad unum, non potest non meminisse illius, quia scribit illius Nomen in Supercriptione; sic ego cum scribo ad te, non possum oblivisci tui.

Præterea, hortor te, ut Literæ sint æque dulces tibi, ac Venatio & Aucupium delectant alios. Literæ enim sunt meliores Thesauris. Et quicunque tenet Literas, tenet magnum Thesaurum. Nam dicitur in Paradoxis *Ciceronis*, *Quod solus sapiens, dives.* Literæ enim sunt Divitiæ.

Saluta, quæso, Secretarium Regis, ac illi Gratias age pro Pixidicula arenaria. Nunc, optimè vale, mi Eleemosynarie ornatissime, ac amantissime. Deus ne sinat pedem tuum averti à justa via. *Hartfordiæ: Nono Aprilis, Anno 1546.*

*Tui amantissimus Discipulus,*

*E. Princeps.*

IX. *The Prince to Dr. Cox. In Commendation of Diligence and Learning: And thanking him for his correcting of an Error.*

**E**X Quo *Foulerus* abiit, Eleemosynarie charissime, non misi ad te Epistolam, quia cognovi neminem iterum ad te venire ab illo tempore hucusque. Quod autem non exaravi ad te Phrases, elegantes Sententias, & elegantia Verba, hujus rei Negligentiam expulsum spero. Si enim fuero tardus in conatis, Formicæ essent meliores me. Formicæ enim laborant; & ego essem negligens. Atque mihi videtur quadrare huic, quod ait *Hebraus* ille Sapiens, *Tarda manus facit pauperem; celeris autem divitem.* Ago tibi gratias etiam, quia narrasti mihi Erratum meum. Illi enim sunt amici mei, qui indicant mihi Culpam meam.

Deus Immortalis, & Exhilarator omnium afficiat te gaudio & servet te incolumem; & augeat Sapientiam tuam; atque det tibi Gratiam, ut consequaris Voluntatem ejus; ut post hanc Vitam vivas cum Christo in æterno regno ejus. Optimè valeas, Præceptor charissime. *Hunsdoniæ: Tertio Julii, An. 1546.*

*E. Princeps.*

X. *The*



X. *The Prince, now King, to Q. Katharine: Upon the Death of King Henry, his Father.*

*Regina Catharinæ,*

**P**lurimas tibi gratias ago ob Epistolam, quam ad me postremam misisti, Charissima Mater; Quæ sane est signum insignis tui, ac quotidiani amoris in me. Porro cum visum sit Deo, Optimo, Maximo, ut meus Pater, & tuus Coniunx, Rex Illustrissimus, hanc vitam finiret, nobis ambobus communis est Dolor. Hoc vero nobis Consolationem affert, quod jam sit in Cælo; atque quod ex hac vita misera profectus est in scælicem & æternam Beatitudinem. Quisquis enim hic felicem agit vitam, atq; Rempublicam rectè gubernat, sicut Nobilissimus meus Pater fecit, qui promovit omnem Pietatem, atq; expulit omnem Ignorantiam, habet certissimum iter in cælum. Quamvis vero Natura jubet dolere, ac Lachrymas effundere ob discessum ejus absentis, tamen Scriptura ac Prudentia jubet moderari Affectos istos, ne videamur nullam omnino spem habere Resurrectionis mortuorum, & vita defunctorum.

Præterea, cum tua Celsitudo in me tot Beneficia contulit, ego debeo quicquid commodi possum tibi afferre, præstare. Opto tuæ Celsitudini plurimam Salutem. Vale, Regina Veneranda. E Turri, Septimo Februarii, Anno 1546.

*E. Rex.*

XI. *The young King to his Sister, the Lady Mary: Upon the said sad Occasion.*

*Sorori Mariæ,*

**N**atura, non Sapientia, nobis Classicum canit ad lamentandum Patris nostri charissimi mortem. Natura enim putat se illum amisisse mortuum. At Sapientia credit, quod is qui vivit cum Deo, est in æterna Felicitate. Quare quum Deus miserit nobis talem Sapientiam, non debemus mortem illius lugere, cum ejus voluntas sit, qui omnia in bonum operatur.

Quod ad me autem pertinet, ero tibi charissimus Frater, & omni Benevolentia exuberans. Deus Opt. Max. te imbuat suis Donis. Vale. E Turri Londoniensi; Octavo Februarii, Anno 1546.

*E. Rex.*

XII. *Answer*



XII. *Another to his Sister, the Lady Elizabeth. Upon the said Death of the King, their Father.*

Sorori ELIZABETHÆ.

**M**Inime opus est mihi te consolari, Charissima Soror; quod Eruditione tua cognoscis, quod sit faciendum. Prudentia vero, & Pietate tua, quod Eruditio docuit te cognoscere, facto præstas. Non enim lugendus est Pater noster, quamvis nobis charissimus fuerit; quod jam sit in Cælo. Nec Mors ejus est deploranda, quæ est via ex hac vita misera ad longè feliciorē. Quare quisq; debet adniti pro viribus, ut Sapientia vincat Naturam, & Fortitudo moderetur Affectus, & Consilium gubernet judicium populi. Quisquis enim hoc facit, is verè Christianus appellatur. Ac si quis dicat, qui huic contrarium facit, Christianum, eum certè falso, atque illi indigno nomine, nuncupat.

Præterea, Literæ tuæ mihi admodum arridebant, tum quod in illis elegantes Sententiæ continentur, tum quod ex illis sentio te æquo consuluisse animo Mortem Patris nostri. Porro, si ullo modo possum tibi commodare, libenter præstabo. Optimè vale. E *Turri*; Octavo Februarii, Anno 1546.

E. Rex.

XIII. *A Declamation made by King Edward VI. June the 23d, 1549. being one of his Latin Exercises. The Theme was VIRTUS. And the Question declaimed upon, was, Whether the Act of Vertue, or the Habit, were more praiseworthy, and preferable.*

**O**MNES quidem, & Philosophi, Ethnici & Doctores Ecclesiastici concludunt, quod *Virtus* sit Affectus quidam, imitans decora, honesta & laudabilia: Vitans verò turpia, seu obscæna, & omnia illa quæ pugnant cum Norma Rationis. Hanc ob causam omnes viri docti in hoc mundo nihil prestantius, nihil pulchrius, nihil magis decorum judicaverunt, quàm illa *Virtus*. Si homo excellat cæteris animantibus, quia est Animal, & particeps Rationis, tum etiam illa res, quæ ab hac parte hominis procedit, est optima & pulcherrima. Quanquam enim hoc omnes univocè affirmant, *Virtutem esse summum bonum*, aut *magnum bonum*, & Doctissimi inter se disceptaverunt, quæ Pars Virtutis sit alteri præferenda: Ut

*An Actio Virtutis, vel Habitus, sit laudabilior, & præstantior.*

Hoc igitur est Thema, de quo jam tractabo. Ego autem in hac Questionē seu Controversiā has teneo partes, Habitum non esse præstantiorem



stantiorem Actione. Idq; per partes probabo. Sunt autem duo Virtutum genera: Quorum unum est Philosophicum; aliud Theologicum. Et quanquam omnes Philosophicæ sunt etiam Theologicæ, tamen plures in Theologia recitantur, quam in Philosophia. Philosophicæ enim sunt quatuor, Prudentia, Justitia, Fortitudo, & Temperantia. Quid! audetne Prudentia se comparare Justitiæ? Audetne Scientia se comparare Fortitudini ac Temperantiæ? Audetne Cognitio se æquiparare tam pulchro numero Virtutum clarissimarum? Rectè, rectè dictum est à *Cicerone* illo pulcherrimo Philosopho, *Omnis Laus Virtutis in Actione consistit*. Jam autem Justitiam esse præstantiorem Prudentiâ, multis modis præstabo.

Quod si enim ea Vita contigerit Sipienti, ut omnium rerum affluentibus Copiis ditetur; quamvis ibi possit rerum Ordinem secum considerare & perspicere; tamen si tanta sit Solitudo, ut hominem videre non possit, excedet e vita, potius quam hæc patietur. Igitur illæ Virtutes, quæ maximè hominum Societatem defendunt, sunt optimæ. Justitia autem & Fortitudo & Temperantia magis colunt hominum Societatem, & magis defendunt Remp. quam Prudentia: Quare sunt meliores Prudentia. Ita, nisi rerum Scientia & Cognitio ad se adjuvandum appellet Justitiam, solivaga erit Cognitio, & jejuna. Quam ob causam concluditur Justitiam esse potiorem Prudentiâ; & omne Officium, quod ad Conjunctionem Hominum, & ad Societatem tuendam valet, anteponendum est illi Officio, quod in rerum omnium Scientia, intelligentia & cognitione versatur, aut consistit.

Hanc meam Sententiam de Justitia & Prudentia tenet ille præstantissimus Philosophus & Orator, *M. T. Cicero*, & *Aristoteles*. *Cicero* autem in primo Libro *Officiorum*, non solum affirmat Justitiam esse præstantiorem Prudentiâ, sed etiam non paucas rationes addit. Hoc igitur jam à nobis probatum fuit, Actionem Virtutis Philosophicæ esse meliorem Habitu. In sacris vero Literis apparet, *Charitatem* esse meliorem *Fide*: *Paulus* vero ad *Corinth.* [Cap. 13.] dicit, Tres sunt Virtutes, *Fides*, *Spes* & *Charitas*. Sed optima horum, *Charitas*. Dicet autem quis, *Fides* justificat. Ergo *Fides* est melior operibus. Nego Argumentum. Non enim habet Consequentiam. *Fides* justificat. Ergo melior est *Charitate*. Si enim essent contradictoriæ Sententiæ, tum *Paulus* non affirmasset, & *Charitatem* esse meliorem *Fide*, & *Fidem* justificare. Hæc vero Ratio est, quare non sunt contradictoria hæc duo. Prima bona opera quæ facimus, non justificant. Primum vero opus Christiani, ordine naturæ, est effectus. Ergo *Fides* justificat. Sed prima opera non sunt semper optima. Ergo, non necesse sequi, & valere hoc Argumentum; *Fides* justificat; Ergo, est melior Operibus.

Cum igitur in omnibus, & Philosophicis & Theologicis Virtutibus, Actio sit melior, quam Habitus, tum in omni genere Virtutis Actio est melior, quam Habitus. Finis enim propositus uniuscujusq; rei est melior, quam res spectantes ad illum finem in bonis rebus. Sed finis omnis Habitus est Actio. Finis enim propositus omnis Prudentiæ est, ut Justitiam administremus, & piè vitam colamus, atq; in Societate humanæ totum Tempus vitæ, totum Honorum & Divitiarum Cumulum, totas deniq; opes & Facultates impendamus. Ergo illæ Virtutes, quæ versantur in Actione & Societate tuenda, meliores sunt quam quæ in



Habitu consistunt. Hæc vero ratio à firmis dictis sumitur. Et quomodo confutari possit, adhuc non video. Hoc igitur sequitur, quod Actio sit melior Habitu. Illæ enim Virtutes, quæ administrant, regunt & defendunt Respublicas, multo pulchrius negotium susceperunt, quam illæ quæ solum in rebus perspiciendis versantur.

Sed illæ primæ omnes in Actione, aliæ vero in Habitu. Ergo, illæ Virtutes quæ sunt in Actione, sunt meliores iis quæ sunt in Habitu.

Objicient fortasse Adversarii, quod Causa bonæ rei est melior Effectu: Sed Habitum esse Causam Actionis affirmabunt: Eamque ob Causam, meliorem Actione. Respondeo, me negare Consequentiam. Quia Major loquitur de Causa tota & perfecta. Minor vero de parte Causæ. Voluntas enim conjuncta animi Habitu est Causa Actionis, non solus Habitus. His ergo rationibus, in hanc Sententiam pedibus eo, quod Actio Virtutis sit melior & laudabilior Habitu. Dixi.

XIV. *Another Declamation of King Edward, June the 30th, 1549. Upon this Question, Whether the Fore-knowledge of Things be profitable to the Life of Man?*

*An Præscientia rerum sit utilis.*

OMNES Philosophi & Oratores, quanquam in multis rebus dissentiebant, tamen hoc omnes concluderunt, Hominem differre à cæteris animantibus. Quia est particeps Rationis. Animum enim cæterorum Animalium dicebant solum in se habere Affectus rapidos, & expertes rationis ac Intelligentiæ: Hujus vero animus non solum affectuum rapidorum participem, sed etiam rationis: in qua omnis Scientia continetur. Eas vero res quæ consistebant in parte experte Rationis, nulla laude dignas putabant. Contra vero eas Virtutes & Scientias quæ erant in parte partecipe Rationis, omni laude efferendas, judicabant.

Quare cum sit hæc Questio nobis proposita, Utrum Præscientia rerum futurarum sit utilis ad vitam, ego quidem intelligens, quod Præscientia sit quædam res consistens in illa parte animi quam vocant participem Rationis, videlicet Mente, puto & æstimo utilem ad vitam.

Omnia enim honesta & bona utilia sunt. Rectè enim dictum est à Cicerone illo sapientissimo Philosopho & Oratore, Quod omnia utilia sunt honesta; sed Præscientia rerum futurarum non est inhonesta. Quapropter honesta. Ex hac ratione rectè & argutè spectata licet intelligere, quod Præscientia rerum futurarum sit utilis ad Vitam. Omnis enim Notitia & Cognitio rerum est utilis, bona & honesta. Sed rerum Præscientia, seu præcognitio est intellectus, notitia aut Cognitio. Quare Præscientia rerum est utilis.

Videmus quidem in Universitate rerum multa futura, quæ nisi præscirentur, omnes malè suum Tempus in otio & tranquillitate, non in labore consumerent. Si enim servus non præsciret iram sui Domini, nisi & sibi commissa servaret, & mandatis parceret, cerrè nunquam suo Domino



Domino obediret, & pareret: sed totam vitam suam in otio & stultitia, & illa mala libertate & licentia tereret.

Nos omnes, qui sumus servi Dei, & filii sui Jesu Christi, nisi cognosceremus sibi displicere nostra peccata, in vitiorum cumulo & mole permaneremus. Nunc autem animi ejus iram præciamus, cum ejus vindictam intelligamus, & ejus minas præcognoscamus, primum veremur, ne si peccaremus, & vitiis potius faveremus, quam Virtuti, in hoc mundo nos affligat, prematq; molestiis, & ludibrio exponat. Deinde, si malefaciamus, perterrefimus hac cogitatione, Deum nos in æternum ignem conjecturos, Videlicet, in Infernum, locum omnis supplicii & pænæ; ubi erit Gemitus & Stridor dentium. Contra vero si beneficiamus, & rectè vitam in hoc mundo degamus, tum scimus Deum nos fortunaturum in nostris Actionibus, ut fortunavit *Abrahamum, Josephum, & Jacobum*, qui erant Patriarchæ; & omnes illos qui erant in cœtu & Ecclesia ejus.

Adhæc, vitam æternam expectamus, & Gaudium Solatiumq; in Deo. Utile quidem est, cognoscere nos morituros in hoc, ut nos præparemus ad mortem. Utile, præscire Tempus fluxus & refluxus maris, ut nos paremus ad navigationem. Utile est, præcognoscere tempus seminandi & arandi, ut paremus Aratrum & semen. Hæc omnia præscire est utile ad colendam vitam. Si enim præsciremus nihil, ad nihilum nos paratos redderemus. Illa verò quæ subito sine deliberatione & paratione rerum fiant, nunquam, aut paucissimis temporibus, rectè fiant.

Quamobrem Præscientia rerum est utilis, bona & honesta. Videmus enim & intelligimus multos, & Philosophos, & viros hoc tempore sanè eruditos censere, quod placatio animi sit Felicitas, seu Summum Bonum. Quicquid adjuvat ad Placationem animi est bonum, honestum & utile. Quid verò potest esse dulcius, quid placatius, quid suavius, quod admoveatur animo, quam Præscientia rerum futurarum? Ergo, est utilis ad vitam humanam. Humana enim Mens oblita quærit, & inventa semper mandat Memoriam. Nunquam desinet laborare, nunquam otiaur, nunquam quietem patitur. Semper agit, semper laborat, semper cogitat; & invenit abdita & secreta. Cum enim Corpus dormit & quietem habet, Animus cogitat & invenit, quomodo res sint peragenda. Hinc illa perpetuitas animi rectè cerni potest. Quicquid ergo ad hunc animum placandum pertinet, (non sentio partem expectem Rationis, sed partem participem) illud utile est ad vitam.

Cum autem jam ego legerim *Dialecticam*, in ea cerno, quod in naturalibus Causis, semper bonam sequuntur boni Effectus. Causæ vero naturales Præscientiæ, videlicet, Mens, & Voluntas ei consentiens, sunt bonæ. Ergo ipsa Præscientia est bona, & utilis ad Vitam.

Adhæc, Legimus in Sacris Literis utile fuisse multis, quod præsciverant Christum venturum. Ergo, aliqua Præscientia est utilis.

Præterea, nos duabus in rebus excellimus cæteris Animantibus, Præscientia, & rerum aliquarum ratione. Deus nobis in duabus rebus excellit, Præscientia rerum omnium, & Patientia. His ergo rationibus persuasus, teneo has partes, quod *Præscientia rerum sit utilis ad Vitam.*

Dixi.

F I N I S.







**TITLES** of the Original Papers as they stand in the  
REPOSITORY; being divers Letters and other choice Mo-  
numents, exemplified from Authentick MSS. relating to the  
MEMORIALS Historical in the Reign of King EDWARD VI.

- A. **T**HE Ceremonies and Funeral Solemnities, paid to the Corpse of King *Henry VIII.* Chap. 2.
- B. The Lord Protector's Prayer, for God's Assistance in the High Office of Protector and Governour, now committed to him.
- C. The Lord Protector, to the Justices of Peace in the County of *Norfolk*; when a new Commission of the Peace was sent them.
- D. Common Places of State, drawn up by *Will. Thomas, Esq;* Clerk of the Council. For King *Edward's* Use. Under Six Heads. Chap. 3.
- E. The Names of the Knights of the *Bath* made by King *Edward VI.* Feb. 20. *Shrove-Sunday*, being the Day of his Coronation. And of the Knights of the *Carpet* dubbed by him, during the Time of that Solemnization.
- F. A Ballad sung to King *Edward* in *Cheapside*, as he passed through *London* to his Coronation.
- G. Queen *Katharine Par* in *Latin*, to the Lady *Mary*; concerning her Translation of *Erasmus's* Paraphrase upon *St. John's* Gospel. Chap. 5.
- H. Queen *Katharine Par* to King *Henry*, gone in his Expedition against *France*.
- I. A Poem, pretended to be writ against the Preachers, intitled, *A POOR HE L P.* Chap. 7.
- K. Queen *Katharine Par* to the University of *Cambridge*. Which had addrested to her, to intercede to the King for them: Upon an Act, whereby the Parliament had given him all Colleges, Chauntries, and Free Chapels.
- L. Queen *Katharine* to the Lady *Wriothesly*: Comforting her for the Loss of her only Son.
- M. A Proclamation concerning the irreverent Talkers of the Sacrament. Dated the 27th Day of *December*, Anno Regni Regis *Edward. primo.* Chap. 11.
- N. A Proclamation for the abstaining from *Flesh* in the *Lent-Time*. Dated the 16th Day of *January*, Anno Reg. *primo.*
- O. A Proclamation against such as innovate any Ceremony, or preach without Licence. Dated the 6th of *February*, Anno Reg. *primo.*
- P. The King's Commission for Redress of *Enclosures*. Chap. 12.
- Q. The Charge of *Mr. John Hales*, one of the Commissioners, at their Assembly; for the Execution of the Commission for Redress of *Enclosures*.
- R. A Discourse made by *William Thomas, Esq;* for the King's Use, viz. *Whether it be expedient to vary with the Time.* Chap. 13.
- S. A Second Discourse made by the same Person for the King's Use: *Whether it be better for a Common-wealth, that the Power be in the Nobility, or in the Commonalty.*



- T. A Third Political Discourse made by *William Thomas*, for the King's Study; Intituled, *What Princes Amity is best*.
- V. Mr. *Thomas* his Fourth Discourse to the King, touching his Majesty's outward Affairs.
- W. *William Thomas*, Esq; to the King: Touching the Reformation of the Coin.
- X. *William Thomas*, Esq; to the King: Apologizing for some Passages in his Discourse, concerning the Coin; and in his other Discourses writ by the King's Commandment.
- Chap. 14. Y. Sir *Philip Hoby*, the King's Ambassador at the Emperor's Court, to the Duke of *Somerset*: Concerning the *Interim*. From *Augsburgh*.
- Chap. 16. Z. The Confession of Sir *William Sharrington*: Concerning his Frauds in coining the King's Money.
- ZZ. A pious Prayer of Queen *Katharine Par*, by her composed: In short Ejaculations suited to her Condition.
- ZZZ. An Account of the King's Sales of Chauntries, Colleges, &c. in the Second Year of his Reign.
- Chap. 17. A A. Archbishop *Cranmer*'s Treatise of *Unwritten Verities*.
- Chap. 19. B B. Sir *William Paget*, Ambassador with the Emperor: His Letter to the Lord Protector.
- Chap. 21. C C. The Protector's and Council's Answer to *Paget*'s Letters.
- D D. The Lord Privy Seal to the Council: Concerning the Defeat of the Rebels in the *West*.
- E E. The Duke of *Somerset*, Lord Protector, to Sir *Philip Hoby*, Ambassador with the Emperor: Imparting Intelligence of the Insurrections.
- F F. The Duke of *Somerset* to Sir *Philip Hoby*: Concerning the Suppression of the Insurrections in the *West*, and in *Norfolk*.
- Chap. 22. G G. Sir *William Paget* to the Lord Protector: Upon his rough Usage of some Gentlemen. Writ *May* the 8th, 1549.
- H H. Sir *William Paget*, now Ambassador abroad, to the Lord Protector: Upon the breaking out of the Rebellion in the *West*. The Letter bearing Date *July* the 7th, 1549.
- Chap. 23. I I. A Letter sent from the Lord *Paget*, concerning *Bulloign*. To the Earl of *Warwick*, then Lord Great Master. The 22d of *Febr.* 1549.
- Chap. 27. K K. The Prayer used at a publick Fast; for a great Dearth.
- Chap. 28. L L. *Bucer* to *A Lasco*: Concerning the Controversy about wearing the Habits.
- M M. *Hoper* to *Martin Bucer*; For his Judgment concerning wearing the Habits.
- N N. *Martin Bucer* to *John Hoper*. In Answer to the foregoing Letter.
- Chap. 32. O O. *Crowley*'s Epigrams: Concerning *Abuses*.
- Chap. 33. P P. The Form of the Commission by the King, to his Council, in his Minority.
- Q Q. Certain Orders set forth by the Justices of *Cornwal*: For the Accomplishment of the King's Commandment, by his Highness's Letter to them directed, for the speedy Reformation of the unreasonable Prices of Victuals in Markets: And for the Punishment of the Causes of the same.



---

---

## BOOK II.

A. *SCORY*, Bishop of *Rochester*, unto the King's most Excellent Majesty. Putting him in Mind of certain Matters he made to him in his Sermon, preached before him last *Lent*. Chap. 4.

B. *Polydore Vergil* to Secretary *Cecil*. For his Warrant to receive the King's Gift. Chap. 5.

C. *Thomas Gresham* to the Duke of *Northumberland*, from *Antwerp*. Concerning the King's Debts. Chap. 10.

D. Dr. *Cox* to *Bullinger*. Concerning the Review of the Book of Prayers and Sacraments. Chap. 15.

E. *Thomas Barnabe*, a Merchant, to Sir *William Cecil*, Secretary of State. Upon his great and long Experience, he propounds to him certain Ways to distress the *French*. Chap. 17.

F. *Beaumont*, Master of the *Rolls*; His Acknowledgment of his Debts to the King: With his Submission, and Surrender of his Place.

G. The Duke of *Northumberland*, the Earls of *Huntington* and *Pembroke*, and Secretary *Cecil*, to the Privy Council. Concerning the Lands of *Paget* and *Beaumont* forfeited.

H. The University of *Rostock* to King *Edward*: Recommending to him one *Perister*, a godly and learned Man of that University.

I. A Catalogue of divers Free-Schools; Founded by K. *Edward VI.* within the Space of Sixteen Months.

K. The Duke of *Northumberland* to the Secretary: Blaming the Carelessness of some of the Court at that Time; and giving good Hopes of the King's Recovery. Written *May* the 7th. Chap. 22.

L. Original Letters and Declamations in *Latin*: Being learned Exercises of this Prince, *Anno 1546.* both before and after his Access to the Crown.

---

## F I N I S.

---



BOOK II

A. COR. Bishop of Rochester, unto the King's most Excellent Chap. 4.  
Majesty. Putting him in Mind of certain Matters he made  
to him in his Sermon, preached before him last Year.  
B. Popham's Vindication to Secretary Cecil. For his Warrant to receive Chap. 5.  
the King's Gift.  
C. Thomas Graham, to the Duke of Northumberland, from Mr. Chap. 10.  
Atterp. Concerning the King's Debts.  
D. Dr. Cox to Bullinger. Concerning the Review of the Book of Chap. 15.  
Prayers and Sacraments.  
E. Thomas Barrow, a Merchant, to Sir William Cecil, Secretary Chap. 17.  
of State. Upon his great and long Experience, he propounds to him  
certain Ways to direct the Trade.  
F. Barrow, Master of the Rolls; his Acknowledgment of his  
Debts to the King; With his Surrender of his Place.  
G. The Duke of Northumberland's Hints of Huntington and  
Pembroke, and Secretary Cecil's Answer. Concerning  
the Lands of Poper and Poper's Son.  
H. The University of Oxford to King Edward VI. Recommending to  
him one Pory, a godly and learned Man of that University.  
I. A Catalogue of divers Free-Schools; Founded by King Edward VI.  
within the Space of sixteen Months.  
K. The Duke of Northumberland to the Secretary: Blaming the Chap. 22.  
Caretakers of some of the Court at that Time; and giving good  
Hopes of the King's Recovery. Written by the 23.  
J. Original Letters and Declarations in Latin: Being learned  
Exercises of this Prince; Anno 1546. both before and after his Ac-  
cess to the Crown.

F I W I S



